# Red String of Fate (Taekook AU) by BlairWitch91

**Category:** Fanfiction
**Genre:** action-romance, angstwithhappyending, bottomjk, bottomjungkook, bottomkook, boyxboyromance, btsfanfic, childhoodsweethearts, familyandfriends, fanfiction, fantasy-romance, kthxjjk, lovestory, magicpowers, maturelanguage, namjin, powerbottomkook, smutwarning, soulmates, taekook, toptae, toptaehyung, topv, vkook, yoonmin
**Language:** English
**Status:** In-Progress
**Published:** 2021-08-19
**Updated:** 2025-03-15
**Packaged:** 2026-04-26 19:36:09
**Rating:** Mature
**Chapters:** 77
**Publisher:** www.wattpad.com
**Summary:** From the very beggining of the universe the soul of Eadar-eisimeileach that appear in the world is bounded by the red string of fate with another soul. One of the soul is a Sealer- the person who's soul is holding a sacred weapon. The other soul is a Holder - the person who is able to unseal and use the weapon sealed in his soulmate. In the world where having a destined lover is common... Taehyung and Jungkook are special. ---------- Top Tae Bottom Kook Sideships: Namjin, Yoonmin, Hopejiu, Chanbeak, Minsung, Yeonbin, 2Yoo, JenKai, Woosan , others. ---------- All the medias that will appear in the story belongs to rightfull owners. ---------- THIS STORY IS COMPLETED. Schedule: 2023/2024 - Spin offs.
**Read Count:** 676,608

# Author's Note

COPYRIGHTS INFORMATION

Every word in this story is written by me (except from quotes and lyrics I mark).

As a rightfull owner I DO NOT PERMITT to copy this book, repost it on any other platforms, or social medias like You Tube, Twitter(X), Instagram, AO3 or others.

I do not permitt making videos out of it, copy the storyline or the ideas.

Plagiarism is a crime and I will treat it like that.

If you want to quote some lines from the story do it according to quotation rules with properly marked title, author and the source when it was published. Quatation means: few lines not the whole book, chapter and so on.

If anybody want to make promo videos, posters something what creatively shows your attachment to the story contact me and I will talk with you and authorize it.

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. STORY BELONGS TO BLAIRWITCH91.

THAT'S WHY THE COPYING OF LINES ARE BLOCKED ON WATTPAD.

If anybody will see similar storyline. Copied parts of this book or whole book anywhere, please inform me. If this story will be published anywhere else by ME. It will be marked here by me.

BlairWitch91

# Introduction: Interdependents

*Eadar-eisimeileach*

An ancient race of warriors, remaining hidden for thousands of years. Influencing the course of history of Babylon, Greece, Persia, Britain, China, the Aztecs, the Olmecs, the Romans.

Observing hundreds of years of wars of Europe, Asia, Africa, the Pacific and the Americas.

They had been walking among humans since the beginning of time and were only distinguished from them by the fact that each soul of the *Eadar-eisimeileach* was destined for another soul from the moment of creation and bound to it by the red string of destiny.

But the destiny even for them was unknown and the time of meeting with the other half of the soul - indefinite.

Each *Eadar-eisimeileach* was born with a birthmark. On the outside of the right hand, or above the heart. The souls of Eadar-eisimeileach after merging lived in an inseparable symbiosis. And the place of the mark defined which side of the symbiosis the one was.

The Sealers - those whose mark on the chest, sealed the sacred weapons, the messengers of death and power - were like living treasures whose true nature was sealed by their own soul.

The Holders - those whose hands were marked with a sign, fearless warriors and defenders, those who wielded weapons - were like keys opening the gates of souls.

For hundreds of years they lived among humans and no one knew of their existence.

Then the plague came.

The virus that emerged in 2030 decimated humanity worldwide, and the only people immune to it were the *Eadar-eisimeileach*.

It was not linked to their DNA. It was connected to their immunity... The combined souls of the *Eadar-eisimeileach* doubled their resistance and endurance.

To save humanity this time they did not participate in the war... This time they revealed themselves to help produce a vaccine.

Even modernity and science could not resist the charm of magic and the *Eadar-eisimeileach* connection. After many centuries, they finally ceased to be a mystery.

But it is impossible to ever satisfy the whole society. They were accepted by the half that saw them as nothing more than exceptional people.

However, the other half of society... , bitter and shattered after years of fighting the plague - jealous of their power, their strength and their different nature - regarded them as misfits.

The once modern world, recovering from its losses, referred to them as...

**Interdependents.**

---

Here is how to spell it :D but it is still hard:

*Eadar-eisimeileach* pronounciation:

eadar - ***ediaer***

*eisimeileach* - ***iseamealix***

BlairWitch

# Chapter 1: Little TaeTae

The car was steadily moving forward through the city. Jin and Namjoon were heading to the other side of Daegu, from their countryside house. The radio was playing quietly. Jin frowned hearing the interview with the guest and turned the volume up a little bit.

'We don't really know what Interdependents are capable of. We have known about them for just 20 years now... They appeared from nowhere immune to the virus that decimated ordinary people. We don't really know what other secrets they have...'

'What do you mean, professor?' the interviewer asked.

'Maybe they are immortal? Maybe they can't be dead! Maybe they are forever young? Who knows?! Their physics seems similar, but the fact that their blood in fact was the main ingredient of the vaccine indicates that they are not quite like other people.... Why did they appear now? What's their reason? Who knows?'

'Do you think they can be dangerous?'

'I'm just saying that the more we will know about them... the safer we will feel. If they don't have any bad intentions... Why are they hiding?'

'Thank you for visiting, profesor...'

Jin turned the radio off.

'That's the most stupid thing I've ever heard about myself...' he growled.

'Shhh... you will wake him up and he will be whiny...' Namjoon said, turning to the left.

Jin lowered his voice, but it was still full of anger.

'Have you heard this nonsense? Forever young?! Immortal?! What the hell... It's not like we can't die! We have slightly longer longevity, and maybe I will look like I'm still 30 when I will be 50, but if someone stabb me, I will fucking die!'

'Unfortunately, there are also people in academia who cannot be convinced by us...' Namjoon sighed. 'When our grandparents decided to appear to the world, they were ready for the society to react distrustful of something new. But after 20 years they should have already known that we are really not so different... Some of them are stirring drama. We can't help it, Jin...'

Jin snorted.

'Now it's just stupid! But stupidity leads to dangerous things... What if they will take us as a threat?'

'Don't think about it, Jin...You will get wrinkles. Till now they are just talking...'

Jin gasped.

'What did say? Wrinkles?! I'm 25 and I'm freaking beautiful!'

Namjoon giggled and peaked at Jin.

'You are. You always were...'

'You are trying to divert my attention...' Jin pouted cutely, crossing his arms over his chest.

'I'm just stating facts, Dr Kim...'

'You were always a cheesy guy...' Jin smiled, looking at Namjoon. Kim Namjoon, an academic teacher, was a gentle person. He had light brown eyes and peach colored hair, which made him look a bit like a golden retriever - Cute and friendly.

But even golden retrievers had sharp teeth and Namjoon for sure could be stern and dangerous as every Interdependent.

Jin looked at his right hand in a leather, brown glove without fingers. It became casual for Holders to wear one glove to hide their mark. Because it was always perfectly visible it would be dangerous to show it. It could lead to their mates - the Sealers - being in danger if someone would connect it.

He took the glove off from a moment to look at the mark.

He was beginning his career as a doctor, it was still funny for him how he didn't want to be a doctor at all until he met Namjoon at the University. But when he first unsealed the sacred treasure that Namjoon - the Sealer held inside him... he knew. It was a bandage. The special magical bandage that could not just heal people but also fix things.

The treasures inside the Sealers were casually called a *weapon*, but in fact it was so much more.

There were treasures like paintbrushes, who could create anything the Holder wanted. There were treasures that didn't have the material structure. Like their

friend - Hoseok, was a Sealer whose treasure was seven balls of lights. The balls could simply lighten up the darkness. But they could destroyed something as well, made explosions, set something on fire...

A lot depended on the soul itself. Namjoon's soul wanted to heal the world. And Jin, who was embracing his soul, loved it and devoted himself to it.

Seeing Jin's thoughtful face Namjoon squeezed his hand shortly.

'Hey... we are going to Hobi after so long... We should have fun. Don't think about it. Everything is alright.'

'I just want a safe future... for us...' he turned his head to look at the sleeping boy in the safety seat. 'And for him...'

One and half year-old baby had dark silver hair that was a bit curly. He was sleeping soundly with a cute pout.

Their little prince - Kim Taehyung - was Namjoon's and Jin's biological child.

In 2050 science allowed men to carry children, after in vitro. And Jin went through all of the medical conditions and c-section, because from the moment he and Namjoon met they wanted to have a child desperately. After the pandemy the population wasn't so large anymore and this practic has been promoted by governments to increase fertility.

And Taehyung was a full *Eadar-eisimeileach,* with their genes combined. But even if he wouldn't be, he was their little miracle.

'And his future will be safe and happy... We will take care of it...' Namjoon assured him, parking the car in the suburbs, in front of a small house.

Hoseok's car was on the driveway, but they knew he never used the garage, because he changed it for his dance studio.

They knew Hobi from Uni too, and as Namjoon he was a teacher. But he was working in highschool and taught physical education. But his main passion was dancing and he was known for his unpredictable and creative choreographies. He was working with idols, and professionals but he loved to teach children to express themselves by dance as well.

'Taehyung... we are here...' Namjoon called gently.

The boy squirmed slightly as he slowly opened his sleepy eyes. He closed them almost instantly wanting to sleep more and Jin laughed.

'Uncle Hobi is waiting...' he was tempting singingly, getting out of the car.

Namjoon took the bags with gifts and Taehyung's toys, and Jin took his son in his arms. The sleepy child embraced his neck tightly, trying to ignore his parents' calls.

Redhaired Hoseok opened the door invitingly, smiling widely.

'Jeeze! I thought you would never reach here!' he said. 'Hi, TaeTae... how is my godson doing?'

'M fine...' Taehyung mumbled.

'He just woke up...' Jin laughed, while embracing Hobi.

'How are you?' Namjoon asked, squeezing his friend's hand.

'Pretty good... but I'm a ball of nerves...' Hoseok said, giggling.

'It's normal...' Namjoon assured him. 'Later it will be much worse...' he added, laughing.

'Why are you trying to scare me?!' Hoseok whined.

'It's my responsibility as a guy who survived this...' Namjoon said, placing the bags on the table in the living room.

'Where is the lady of the house?' Jin asked.

'Minji is not feeling good lately...' Hoseok sighed. 'She needs to get any chance to sleep a bit... Nights are hard... But she is tough.'

'Your kid is this lively?' Jin laughed. 'Nice job, Hobi...'

'I'm sensing a professional runner...' the amused, female voice said.

Pale and deadly tired, but still naturally beautiful Minji, came downstairs slowly. Hoseok immediately helped her to get down and sit on the couch.

On her slim palm the Holder mark was visible. It was normal to not hide it between friends, at home and in safe circles. Just to the outside world it should have been hidden.

Two year old Taehyung in Jin's arms started to squirm and wiggle with his little legs.

'How are you?' Jin asked Minji, with compassion.

'The baby is kicking like crazy...' She shook her head, smiling. 'I don't think my internal organs are intact currently...'

'Tae, what's the matter? Are you hungry?' Jin tried to pacify him in his arms, rocking him, but the boy was screaming and wriggling like he was angry and in pain.

'Give him to me,' Namjoon took the boy and stretched his arms, lifting Taehyung above his head, which always made him laugh. But this time Taehyung just started to yell even louder, almost kicking Namjoon in the face.

Jin looked at them surprised and worried. Usually Taehyung was fast to calm dawn in his father's strong grip. Was he fussy after the nap?

'Maybe he wants to play?' Minji suggested.

'Just put him down and let him walk a bit. He have too much energy to spear... Come to uncle, Hobi!' Hoseok took Taehyung from Namjoon and stood him on his little wobbly feet. He grabbed his both hands and helped him to walk where he wanted. Taehyung screams stopped. 'See... he just wanted to straighten up his legs...'

Tae with determination walked to the couch and leaned on Minji's knee.

'Oh God, you are so cute...' she cooed.

He giggled, smiling at her with these few little teeth he had, and stretched his hands.

'What? Want to sit with me?' Minji smiled, and securing the child with her hands, she helped him to climb on the couch.

Taehyung kneeled next to her and put his little hands on her stomach. He giggled happily, massaging it. Then he leaned and pressed his cheek to her belly and started babbling cutely in the way only he could understand.

'Is he bothering you?' Jin asked, worried. 'I will take him...'

But Minji was looking at the little, covered in silver curls head of the boy. She stroked his hair gently, just the way his little hands were stroking her belly.

She raised her eyes on three men that were looking at her worried.

'The baby... calmed down...'

'I can see that...' Jin answered, frowning.

'No... **MY** baby calmed down... He was restless for the last few days. But he is calm now...'

Four people looked with worry and amazement in their eyes on the toddler that started to cutely mumble and began to hum incoherently and inaccurately the tune that Jin sang to him to sleep, hugging Minji's tummy.

And it was the cutest sound they all heard in their lives...

'Do you think it's his power?' Jin asked.

'Or something connected to it...' Namjoon said thoughtfully.

'Well I will make the tea...' Hoseok shrugged, seeing Minji dozing off. She was so exhausted. He could bet it was relaxing for her. She was holding Taehyung with her hand, stroking his back, making sure he wouldn't fall from the couch.

The rest went to the kitchen leaving the strange duo, well... trio..., content for now, to make dinner and catch up.

'Minji...' Jin called gently. 'Let me check on you, before dinner, ok?'

Minjin opened her eyes and instantly looked at Taehyung who, with his cheek pressed to her tummy, was lazyly watching cartoons on TV Hoseok turned on for him.

Jin was still amazed that they could keep this energetic child in one place for two hours.

'Oh God... I feel great...' Minji sighed.

'You took a good nap...' Jin smiled. 'Tae, auntie had to come with dad for a moment, ok?' he bent to lift him.

The tantrum Taehyung threw when they tried to separate him from Minji's belly was spectacular. He was like a little tiger with teeth and claws.

The Guiness Record type of tantrum... His screams made Hoseok and Namjoon ran to the living room, where Jin tried hard to hold Taehyung still.

'Taehyung! What's the matter with you?!' Jin wheezed.

Minji looked at Hoseok and beckoned him with her finger. He bent to her instantly, and her hand slipped under his shirt. He looked at her surprised, but he nodded.

She pressed her palm to his heart and when her hand appeared again, seven bubbles of light were dancing around it. She made them grow a bit and moving her fingers elegantly, she sent them flying around Taehyung.

They danced over his head and he focused on them. Jin put him to the ground and the happy boy plopped on the carpet and giggled, trying to catch one of them.

'Can he touch them?' Jin asked with concern.

'Yeah, they are dormant... They won't hurt him...' Minji calmed him down. She made one of the bubbles grow more and swallow Taehyung. He was caged in the transparent shield of gentle light. He looked amazed, playing with the rest of the balls. The fair light of hope calmed and relaxed him.

When his seal was broken Hoseok power was released and his skin started to glow, with the same light as bubbles, but he tamed it and hid it.

'Using the sacred treasure to play with a child...' Namjoon sighed and shook his head in pity.

'You sound like my father...' Minji glared at him. 'Tame him in another way, if you are brave enough, Kim.'

'No, thank you...' Namjoon chuckled. 'I will take advantage of your kindness...'

Jin took his medical bag and helped Minji to stand up.

'We should use this distraction wisely... Come, future mom, I will examine you...'

When they went to the other room, Jin pulled out his stethoscope and checked Minji's heartbeat and lungs. He measured the blood pressure, asking standard questions, before taking the blood sample to test.

'Is there anything going on besides sleep problems?'

'Not really... I just sometimes have some food cravings and I can't recognize them, so Hoseok has to run back and forth to the store...' she giggled.

'That's good. I want to see you eating at dinner...' he said sternly. 'You are too thin for the nineth month of pregnancy...'

'I will try...' Minji sighed.

They came back to the living room where Namjoon and Hoseok had already prepared the table for dinner.

Taehyung instantly looked at them, but seeing Minji and his dad all good, he returned to playing.

Minji looked at the delicious dishes Jin prepared and looked at him with puppy eyes.

'Everything smells wonderful...'

'Veggies... tuna... now' he pointed at the table, not having it.

Minji sighed. They started to eat, and Minji was frowning while playing with her food.

Taehyung was running to Jin, Namjoon or Hoseok from time to time, so they would share his food with him and munching happily, he was running after the lightballs. Finally he came back again, this time to Minji. He leaned on her side looking at her plate.

'What do you want, honey?' she asked.

Taehyung squirmed almost as much as she did at first and ran to the kitchen, almost tripping.

Jin sighed, shook his head and walked after him. He found his son, whimpering, unsteadily climbing on the chair. He secured him, helping him in the process.

'What do you want to now, little devil?' Jin asked.

Taehyung trying to reach the bowl with fruits on the kitchen table.

'Wanna...' with red from effort face, he stretched his short hands, and Jin moved the bowl closer, sure that Taehyung would choose orange or banana, because it was the only fruits he trusted, but to his surprise he chose avocado.

'Avocado? Sweetheart, you don't like avocados... Banana will be better...' he tried to take the green fruit from Tae's hand, but his son looked at him angrily.

'Mine!' he said, pressing avocado to his chest.

Jin rolled his eyes.

'Fine.' He helped him to get down from the chair. 'But it's not the ball. You can't

play with it... It's food... Come, dad, will give you a taste, and if you throw it at me, no strawberries for you for a month...'

Taehyung happily went back to the living room, and Jin walked behind him, informing:

'He wanted avocado...'

'Oh, yes, please!' Minji exclaimed, and her eyes sparkled.

Hoseok frowned.

'You don't like avocado...'

'But I want it now...' she lifted her eyebrow at him, making him giggle. Taehyung came to her and gave her the fruit.

'You are really something, TaeTae...' she said, cut the fruit and throw it into her salad. She gave him a piece on her fork with her chopsticks but he made a disgusted face, shaking his head. 'Well, your loss...' she shrugged, eating happily.

Namjoon observed his son.

'I think it's something connected to his power... Maybe his gift is a healing type like mine...'

'Well I will wait for test results, but I think you lack some vitamins... Avocados are full of them. Your body knows what it needs...' Jin said, taking Taehyung on his lap to make him eat some more.

'So? Have you received any messages from Chanyeol?' Hoseok asked Namjoon.

'They safely moved to Seoul. They found a nice house there. Baekhyun misses Daegu, but he said he will be fine and we should visit them as soon as possible.' Namjoon answered.

'And little Jiminie? How is their little mochi?'

'Cute and energetic... They sent us photos.' Jin showed Hoseok his phone, so he can look at the pictures of two year old, blond boy.

Namjoon looked at Minji.

'And what about your family?' he asked quietly.

Minji looked at him sternly.

It was a fragile topic. Minji's family was rich and well known in Interdepenedents

circles. Especially her father. He was one of a few people in Korea, who had a secret training camp for young Interdependents. It was located in the mountains, surrounded by forests.

Kwon Jiyong trained all of them in using their gifts and powers with tough hand. Namjoon, Hoseok and Jin too. He was especially kind to Namjoon, so when Hoseok met Minji and they discovered they are mates, he wasn't nice.

But Minji was just like her father. She wouldn't give a shit about others' opinions. She just packed her things and chose Hoseok after her father's first not-so-happy glare.

Minji was trained the best out of all of them from an early age. Everyone thought that she was an elegant, fragile lady. But in fact she was a black belt badass, trained in combat and shooting, just like her sister.

'Bora is fine...' she answered finally, confining herself to information about her sister. 'Siyeon is with her. And my father can go f...'

'Child present!' Jin stopped her immediately, making her giggle.

Minji looked at Hoseok.

'Start preparing yourself to stop me like that... Or our child's first word will be 'f' not 'dad'...'

'Don't worry, you will stop yourself instinctively...' Jin comforted, winking at her.

They decided to go back after breakfast on the next day, but Minji was tired and it was as well Taehyung's time to sleep. And he wanted to go with her, so Jin prepared him to sleep, brushed his teeth and let him go sleep with her.

Hoseok, Namjoon and Jin were talking, enjoying their drinks and quiet night.

'It seems my son has taken over your bed...' Namjoon chuckled.

'It's ok. I think Minji is sleeping calmly tonight...'

'Will the three of us end up again squeezed in one bed?' Jin made a sour face.

'Just like in Uni...' Hoseok raised his glass to him, smiling widely.

On the next morning they had to part. Jin instructed Hoseok and Minji to give him a call as soon as she would be admitted to the hospital.

But then the hell started...

When Namjoon took Taehyung in his arms to take him to the car, and the child realized he was being dragged away from his new favorite person - Aunt Minji - he started to cry, and scream, repeating 'Nonononono!!!' and stretching his hands over his father's shoulder.

Minji got over her pregnancy hormonal swing about three months ago, but right now, looking at the desperate, distraught child that was pulling out of Namjoon's embrace, she was ready to burst out crying again.

She had to calm him down.

She had to.

She walked to Namjoon and took Taehyung from him. She hugged the crying boy, placing him on her hip. The little hand instantly reached to her belly.

Taehyung was sobbing, and Jin with widened eyes looked at him.

'What on earth...'

'We will meet soon, honey, ok?' Minji purred. 'You will visit auntie right?'

Taehyung nodded eagerly with a trembling chin and lips. He was stroking her tummy, clenching his little fist on her shirt. When he calmed down a bit, Jin took him in his arms.

He wasn't screaming anymore, but the big drops of tears were rolling down his cheek.

Hoseok sighed.

'I'm not prepared for this...'

'Nobody is prepared...' Namjoon patted his back. 'See you soon...'

Namjoon got into the car and Jin put Taehyung into the child's car seat. When the engine started, Taehyung again began to cry loudly. Jin sighed, sat next to him, and patiently tried to calm him down. Whispering soothing words and singing

songs. Soon after, the tired toddler fell asleep.

~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~

On the 1st of September Jeon Minji gave birth to a boy and Jeon Hoseok became a father.

Two weeks after giving birth Minji was feeling perfect. Hoseok was even more in love with her then he was before. And his son was the description of perfection.

Jin and Namjoon offered to come and help them a little with cooking and cleaning. And the house where fresh-baked parents lived really needed it.

Namjoon almost forcefully put zombi-like-Hobi to sleep and began to clean the house while Jin stormed into the kitchen with groceries, ready to provide them with meals for the next two weeks.

He didn't need to worry about his little son, because Taehyung was standing near the cot, enchanted for the last hour. Usually it was taking a lot to keep him interested for more than 30 minutes.

Minji, looking at him, smiled and spread a soft baby mattress on the floor and covered it with a cozy blanket. Then she took the baby out of the crib and sat on the blanket.

'Come here, Tae...' she said softly.

Taehyung leaned on her shoulder looking at the baby like it was the most precious thing he could get.

'His name is Jungkook...'

'Jungo?' Taehyung looked at her for confirmation.

She giggled.

'Jung-kook' she repeated clearly. And Taehyung tried to say it.

He stretched his hand and softly touched the baby's cheek. Like it was a fragile glass he was afraid to break...

'Jun-o... Jun... koo... Koo... Koo!' he said and smiled happily, proud of himself.

Minji looked at the child's fingers, that were softly caressing the infant's skin, tenderly. Suddenly she frowned and her lips parted, when on Taehyung's palm a mark started to appear.
~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~

The Holder's mark.

With a shivering hand, she pulled the rompers from her son's chest and saw the same sparkling mark, forming on his little chest, over his heart.

Taehyung peeked at her smiling widely.

'Mine?' he said, nodding.

'Umm... Well... eee...' Minji couldn't actually find words to answer him.

Jin walked into the room with a cup of cocoa for her

'What?!' he asked worriedly, seeing her widened eyes and looked around looking for the any danger.

Then his gaze traveled to Taehyung, then to his hand, then to Jungkook and his jaw dropped.

'Oh... that actually explains quite a lot...' he choked out.

'I...' Minji couldn't snap out of her shock.

'Oh God... I need to order some pads...' Jin, brushed his hair back, desperately.

'What?' she looked at him, frowning.

'How do you expect me to drag Taehyung away from here from now on in another way?! I will be covered in bruises! And when he is mad - he bites!'

'Jin...' she looked at him with a literall expression of 'what the fuck, dude?!'

Taehyung was leaning over Jungkook's face, bubbling adorably.

'Minji, where do you have the cleaning...' Namjoon walked into the baby room and blinked. He understood the situation at the speed of lightning. He gulped. 'Well... it seems we will be a family sooner or later...' he said, trying to calm himself down.

Jin put the cup with cocoa on the night table and crouched down next to Taehyung and Minji.

He took the little hand of his son in his own and looked at the sign. Taehyung looked at him shortly, but then just ignored him and went back to the interesting conversation with his new still sleeping, adorable baby sweetheart.

Jin squeezed his son's hand.

'Dad will order you a handmade glove... Together with pads for himself...' he

mumbled.

The three adults looked at two babies, trying to process evyrything and predict what their life would look like from now on.

And the marks on the delicate skin of the two boys, which only a moment ago had been almost transparent, became darker, clearer, permanent and already irrevocable....

---

Welcome, welcome to another year in Hogwarts!

I'm kidding... 😂😂😂

I missed you guys!

And welcome new readers!👋

Any thoughts at the beggining? 👀

Darlings... if you thought that King's Pack's Taekook were clingy... prepare yourself for the whole new level...😎😎

BlairWitch 💙

## Chapter 2: Merry-go-round in Kim&Jeon households

**Christmas, December, 2051**

Almost 3 year old Taehyung was running around the Christmas Tree in Kim's house and Jungkook observed him, giggling while sitting on the carpet. He started to crawl through the floor with determination and with amazement tried to reach one of the sparking bubbles.

'Taehyung, it's dangerous...' Jin warned gently.

Taehyung looked at Jungkook and plopped next to him, stopping him from pulling the bubble from the tree.

'No...' he said, shaking his head.

Jungkook pouted, but sat down next to him patiently.

Minji ruffled Taehyung's hair, and gave Jungkook a biscuit.

'If any of us would try to stop him, we would have the flood already...' she laughed.

Hoseok entered the living room with the plate of kimbap and a Santa hat on his head.

'So you know, Tae... I'm still sulking that the first time Kookie giggled was not because I was behaving like a cheerleader standing on my head and doing back flips but simply because he heard your laughter...'

Taehyung looked at his uncle hearing his name, but didn't seem bothered by the fact that Hobi was jealous of him.

'Well I'm sulking because you were crying your eyes out for an hour after it...' Minji lifted her eyebrow.

'At least your child is not giving you bruises...' Namjoon sighed, showing his forearm, where the scratches from little nails were still visible. 'That's from last week when we tried to take him home from your place...'

'Don't worry, Joon-ah... I ordered pads for you too as a Christmas gift...' Jin patted his husband's shoulder.

'Will I need pads too?' Hoseok looked at Minji with puppy eyes.

'It's your son. Of course you will...' Minji nodded mercilessly. 'You don't expect me

to deal with him, right?'

'Love takes no prisoners...' he whined, sitting next to her by the table. He leaned to kiss her cheek. 'Good you are pretty...'

'Yeah, because that's totally the reason you love me...' she rolled her eyes.

'When I see the two of you in the lovely-dovey mood I am afraid...' Jin sighed.

'Why?' Minji laughed.

'Because you two are normal... They are not...' Jin pointed his head to their children. 'Imagine what will happen when they will learn how to talk and sneak out of the house...'

'Why do you think they are not normal?' Hoseok asked, frowning.

Namjoon looked at him and fixed his glasses.

'Well, according to my knowledge... The interdependents' souls are developing just like bodies. That's why usually soulmates can recognize each other around 6-7 year old, when their personality is slightly more mature.'

'What does that mean?' Minji frowned.

'I don't know yet...' Namjoon shrugged. 'Maybe a situation like that happened in the past. Just nobody ever mentioned it. I don't think there is a need to worry about it...'

'Yeah.' Jin nodded. 'They are just our pretty, lovely, mated babies...'

Four adults turned to look at the boys.

Jungkook just ate half of his biscuit and now stretched his hand to Taehyung with the rest, pressing it to his mouth, babbling happily.

Taehyung leaned his head and took a bite, but Jungkook wasn't satisfied until the whole biscuit disappeared.
Taehyung smiled at the younger and pointed at his own nose.

'Nose' he said.

'Ne...' Jungkook repeated, pressing his little finger to his own nose hard.

'Ears...' Taehyung grabbed his own ear.

Jungkook laughed and tried to do the same, saying:*Es!*

'Koo...' he pointed at Jungkook.

'Koo!!' Jungkook repeated happily, proud of himself.

'Tae' Taehyung pointed at himself.

'Te!' Jungkook leaned forward and pressed his plump palms to Taehyung's cheeks, making his mouth into fish shape. He burst out laughing and leaned over so much that he tipped completely and fell on the older boy. Taehyung let him do whatever he wanted. Jungkook shifted his body clumsily until his head rested on Taehyung's legs.

'Te...' he repeated, dozing off under the shiny Christmas tree's colorful lights.

Behind them Namjoon, Jin, Hoseok and Minji at once took out their phones and took pictures.

**Halloween, October 2052**

Hoseok just came back from the Halloween Dance Performance that his children group had in one of this year's school events.

He entered the kitchen in his house, with a huge smile, and funny glasses, ready to find his, happily stepping in his direction, son.

Instead he was met with an angry yelling 'NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO...' and a pudding that was thrown into his face from the spoon Jungkook was holding.

'What. On. Earth?' he asked, trying to wipe his face.

Minji making a coffee unbothered, without even turning to him, answered:

'Don't ask me. Ask him.'

After third day of Jungkook's tantrums, she reached the extreme level of not giving a fuck. Because apparently their child just wanted to be angry. No amount of pleads, bribes, questions, songs, toys, sweets could change Jungkook's madness.

He was going to sleep when he was too tired of his own whining and was waking up with a new energy to destroy his parents' sanity.

He wasn't nervous. Or anxious. He was just angry. He was angry at everything. At

the soft plushy he loved so much. At the animation that was playing his favorite cartoon. And finally at the chocolate pudding he would normally licked till the clean bowl.

Nothing could satisfy their 2 year old son.

It wasn't actually the first time he was behaving like that.

He usually was a sweet, cute, calm child. Lovely boy who loved them and was showing it with his smiles, hugs and sudden cuddles. He was singing them songs, even if he couldn't pronounce the words others then: 'mom', 'dad', 'Tae', 'uncle', 'bunny', 'no', 'yes', 'wanna', 'gimmie', 'banana' and 'milk'.

But then each month there were a few days like that in a row, when he was just a little monster.

It was the third day already with his tantrums and Minji was just letting him be angry, too tired to try to calm him down.

Hoseok leaned to Jungkook and smiled. He wanted to give Minji a bit of calmness and at least let her drink her coffee.

'Hey, Kookie... want to have a party with your plushies? We can dress them for halloween...'

'DADA!!! NO! DADA! NO!' Jungkook's face became angry.

Hoseok frowned and turned to Minji.

'Does two-year old boys have periods?' he asked.

She sent him a death glare.

'I will fuc.. ducking kill you, Jeon Hoseok... Or leave you here with him and go to SPA...'

Something in his pudding bowl had to be really sad, because suddenly Jungkook started to sob. And it was getting louder and louder. He was desperately catching his breath, swallowing tears, making heartbreaking sounds.

Minji looked at her boy with sadness.

'Time for stage two I think...' she sighed.

Junkook stretched his hands to Hoseok, and his father instantly picked him up. The child started to cling to him, crying desperately as if the whole world betrayed him.

It was the process they knew as well. After a few days of tantrums, Jungkook was changing his behavior to crying for the next few days. It was hard to watch. Usually cheerful boy was like a fountain of tears, stopping only for short whiles.

Three days later Hoseok and Minji stood in front of Kim's doors. Minji was holding quiet Jungkook. Too quiet for the two year old boy. It was the stage they hated the most. After being angry, and crying his soul out. The boy usually was getting quiet, and numb. He wasn't responding. He wasn't reacting to anything. He was totally numb.

Usually they calmed themselves that it would be ok. But this time Minji had enough. She needed a doctor. She wanted to know if her child is totally fine or should she be worried about his behavior.

Hoseok rang the bell and Namjoon with a gray face opened the door. He looked at the bags under his friends' eyes, at the blanket Minji covered Jungkook with and without a word let them in.

'Hard days?' he asked.

'Is Jin here?' Hoseok looked at Namjoon desperately.

'He is trying to make Taehyung eat something...' Namjoon sighed. 'He wasn't in a good mood lately.'

They heard sudden movement upstairs and Jin's yelling:

'TAEHYUNG!!'

The four year old boy ran downstairs like a wind, almost tripping on the steps. Namjoon moved to him immediately in case he would fall from the stairs, but Taehyung passed him, like a professional football player and reached Minji.

At the same time, till this moment, totally numb and blank Jungkook, lifted his head from his mother's shoulder.

He stretched his hands to Taehyung and Taehyung stretched his arms to him.

Minji put Jungkook on the ground and two boys hugged each other, at the same moment Jin showed up on top of the stairs.

He lifted his eyebrows.

'Ok, people... what's going on here?' he asked, when Taehyung and Jungkook finally smiled happily at their parents, and the older one pulled the little one's hand to the coffee table where sweets were placed.

As if nothing happened there became again two little, cute angels.

'Coffee... I need something to feed my brain with...' Namjoon said tiredly, walking to the kitchen.

Minji looked at Jin.

'I don't think, Jungkook has eaten anything since yesterday...' she said.

'Don't worry about it... I have Taehyung's whole, untouched dinner here. They can share.' Jin came downstairs and hugged her, then Hoseok.

After one hour of observing their kids, while finally eating something in peace, four adults, frowning, deep in their thoughts, sighed together.

Their children weren't bothered by their exhausted parents, feeding each other making it a perfect fun and then started to feed their favorite plushies as well, sitting on the floor.

Jungkook couldn't speak much, but Taehyung seemed to understand whatever he was bubbling about.

'So... you are saying... Jungkook has mood swings sometimes?' Jin asked finally.

'Yeah. Sometimes.' Hoseok nodded. 'Did Taehyung had it too?'

'Not for the first two years...' Jin answered heavily.

Namjoon was battling with himself internally. It was sooo... reckless to speak out loud about what he was thinking... He peeked at the other three and then his eyes fell on Taehyung and Jungkook.

It was a totally crazy and brave theory... but if it continues like that their sons will end up in the mental institution sooner than them...

'Ummm...' he started hesitantly.

Three pairs of eyes turned at him, waiting for the salvation and he gulped.

'You see...' he said, trying to find words. '...it strangely looks like...' He rubbed his forehead with the palm of his hand and ended whispering. '... the separation

syndrome...'

Minji, Jin and Hoseok blinked.

Then all of them started to laugh.

'Jeez! Joonie! I thought you would come up with a solution, not with a joke!' Hoseok patted his back. He wiped his teary eyes. 'I definitely needed a good laugh after these hell weeks...' he sighed.

'Ok. So you think it's funny?' Namjoon looked at them reluctantly. 'And no one but me noticed that their mood swings are usually at the same time?'

'They are not, hubby...' Jin shook his head. 'Taehyung was a devil till Halloween. Then he started to be a whiny tiger...And he hasn't had an appetite since yesterday.'

'Wait. What?' Minji looked at Jin. 'Since Halloween?'

'Yeah he was totally fine when we met in the middle of October. Then he started to be moody a week after...' Jin explained.

Hoseok gulped.

'So did Kookie...' he said.

Jin frowned and Namjoon looked at them with a satisfied expression on his face.

'Wait, wait a minute! Separation syndrome is easy to diagnose, right?' Hoseok said. 'Every Interdependent has it after separation with their soulmates...'

'Yes. But we are talking about two babies, and the separation syndrome doesn't work in such a short period of time.' Minji shook her head.

'Usually soulmates after years of being together have the heavy separation syndrome and it's showing after a month or so.' Jin added.

'But the rest is the same. First is the anger and irritation at everything. Then comes the sadness. And after two or three months passes the soulmates become numb and indifferent to their surroundings.' Namjoon explained. 'Taehyung and Jungkook are just children. They have the smaller endurance and they can't tame their feelings or recognize them as well as adults do...'

All four of them looked at two boys who were now happy bubbles of smiles and giggles.

'So...?' Jin started. 'I vote for meetings each second Sunday for our sanitys' sake...

Who is with me?'

'Me!'

'Me!'

'Me!'

'Okay... you've won again, brats...'

**June 2053**

Kims and Jeons worked out the perfect balance between making their kids happy and keeping their own mentality stable. They were meeting each second Sunday at one of their houses or somewhere in the city to entertain their children and let them recharge their needy little batteries.

Managing their schedules was easier with four people. They were their first call if one of the families couldn't find a babysitter or Jin's and Namjoon's schedules were clashing with each other. Minji and Hoseok were more than happy to take care of Taehyung. And when Hoseok were going to the other cities to practice with his befriended dance groups or one of the idols called him to hire him for a new choreographies, and Minji had an emergency direct meeting and couldn't solve it online, Jin and Namjoon were first to take care of their favorite little nephew.

Sometimes they even drop the childrens at the other's house to rest and have time only for each other. Being the parents of an energetic child required a lot of time and to go on a date and shower their own mates with love was a tough task.

So Kims and Jeons were exchanging favors without second thought, because in fact taking care of both boys was even easier than taking care of one of them separately.

Being together, Jungkook and Taehyung were little angels, having their own little world and in fact it was peaceful this way. They were happy, playing together or watching cartoons or even learning new stuff, letting their parents do things that had to be done in the households.

It was a peaceful Saturday. The day of Jungkook's 3rd birthday.

Jin was preparing lunch in the kitchen while Namjoon was checking his student's works in the living room.

'Taehyung!' Jin called his son who was playing in the garden. 'Lunch is ready!'

'Comin, dad!' The excited child left his toys on the lawn and ran to his house.

Taehyung knew what birthday was, but he for sure didn't know what today was. He was too small to memorize dates yet.

Namjoon came to the kitchen and lifted him up and sat him on the chair.

'What were you playing, honey?'

'I was saving Koo from the bad guys, who were hiding in the forest. Ummm... Their faces were blue, you know??'

'Blue? Like Stich? Or Sonic?'

Taehyung shook his head eagerly.

'Noooo... like you... but with a blue face...'

'Aliens?'

'NOOO... like...' Taehyung frowned, jumped off the seat and ran to the room to bring his coloring book. He found the picture where he coloured the boy's face blue. 'THIS!'

Namjoon looked at the picture.

'You mean they painted their faces?'

'YEAH!! Why would they paint their faces appa?' Taehyung asked, with big eyes. Returning to eat when Jin glared at him.

Namjoon frowned at the detailed description.

'Some ancient races like vikings, or Celts were painting their faces to scare their enemies during battles...' he explained.

'Woah! You are so smart, appa!' Taehyung exclaimed, swallowing his dumplings.

'Not so fast, honey, or your tummy will hurt...' Jin said softly, cutting the dish in small parts for Taehyung, who smiled at him with his cheeks full of food, making him look like a squirrel.

Namjoon was still looking at the picture frowning.

'How did you come up with an idea like that, TaeTae?' he asked, quietly.

'I dreamed...'

'I had a dream.' Jin corrected him.

'Yuup! I had a dream!' he smiled, nodding.

'Was it a scary dream?' Namjoon questioned him.

'Nuuuu... I was helping, Koo! He is my prince!' Taehyung showed his boxy smiled.

'He for sure is...' Jin mumbled under his nose, amused.

'Hmmm... but you haven't sneaked into the living room in the evening where we were watching movies, right Taehyung?' Namjoon asked sternly, lifting his eyebrow.

'No, appa! I am a GOOD BOY!' Taehyung exclaimed, offended.

'Okay, okay...' Namjoon laughed. 'You are our good boy... But still it amazes me how your little brain came up with this idea...'

'A dream...' Taehyung repeated, munching happily.

'Enough about the dreams...' Jin stopped them, before they could repeat all the conversation from the beginning. 'Tae... do you want to go to the funfair today?' he asked, leaning to his son.

'YES!!' Taehyung answered immediately, but then he frowned and looked at his plate. 'No... Tae don't wanna go to a funfair...' he mumbled a minute after.

Jin blinked surprised.

'Why not, honey?' Namjoon asked.

'Don't wanna go...' he repeated, quietly, playing with his food with a fork.

'Are you scared?'

Taehyung shook his head.

'I think I know what is going on...' Jin smiled.

Maybe Taehyung couldn't recognize which day of week it was, but he for sure knew when he was going to meet Jungkook. And he was afraid now that if he would go to a funfair he would lose the chance to see his sweetheart this week.

'Ok, Tae... Funfair or going to Jungkook?' he asked with a fake straight face.

'KOO!' Taehyung said immediately, just a bit sad he won't go to a funfair with his parents.

'But what if I tell you...' Jin said slowly. '...that Koo is going to a funfair too?'

Taehyung's lips parted. The stars appeared in his eyes.

'FUNFAIR WITH KOO!!! DAD! WANNA GO!! PLEASEEEEEE! PLEASEEEE!!' Taehyung jumped on Jin, making him laugh.

'Ok, ok... tiger... we are going with Jeons to a funfair sweety...'

'LOBEEE YOU! Gotta go!!!' he said and ran excitedly to his room.

'He wouldn't go without him...' Namjoon shook his head with a little smile on his lips.

'Nope. He wouldn't. Good that we planned it ahead...'

The funfair in the evening was full of fairy lights, colorful stalls, joyful music and laughter. Carousels for adults and children, roller coasters, mazes and haunted houses were full of people, enjoying the street food and sweets. The smell of popcorn and caramelized apples was filling the air. Above it all, a Ferris wheel towered, illuminating everything with changing colors of the rainbow.

Jin and Namjoon were walking through the alley with Taehyung between them, holding his hands. Namjoon saw Hoseok's red hair and lifted his hand to catch his attention.

Minji was pushing the stroller that Jungkook was sitting in, and her husband had his arm circled around her waist.

Taehyung raised his pleading eyes at Namjoon, and his father nodded, letting go of his hand. Taehyung ran in Jeons direction. He stopped abruptly in front of the stroller, looking at Jungkook with a frog headband, his eyes widened and his lips parted in awe.

'We have one for you too, honey...' Hoseok smiled and placed the second headband on Taehyung's head. 'Now you match...'

Jungkook giggled through a dummy, looking at Taehyung.

'TaeTae!!!' he mumbled. 'Frog!!!'

'I will let you go... but don't go too far okay, Kookie?' Hoseok said, letting Jungkook out of the stroller.

'Taehyung, watch over him. Don't let go of his hand and stay a few steps from us, ok?' Jin instructed.

Taehyung nodded and stretched his hand to Jungkook, who without even thinking squeezed it.

'Kookie... don't you want to give something back to me?' Minji asked sternly, looking at him with lifted eyebrow.

Jungkook frowned.

'Taehyung is watching...' she pointed out, cleverly.

Jungkook looked at the ground sadly, but took out his dummy and stretched his hand with it to his mom, with a little pout.

'You are a good boy!' Taehyung praised him, as his dads often did to him and Jungkook happily nodded, following the older.

'That was clever, baby...' Hoseok laughed, kissing Minji's temple.

'If Jungkook had been there at the time,  weaning Tae off the dummy and bottle would have been much easier....' Namjoon sighed.

'So much less bruises on my skin...' Jin nodded with regret.

They looked at the two boys with frog headbands. Jungkook's little feet were making slow steps, but Taehyung wasn't trying to pull him to walk faster. He was patiently matching his steps with the younger.

'Soo?! What are we trying first?' Hoseok asked, excitedly, looking around. 'But not the rollercoaster and not this hellish machine...' he pointed at the crazy high carousel. 'And that one is a 'no' too...' he shivered. 'Oh and that one looks scary...'

'Don't worry, Hobi... You are going for a merry-go-round with children...' Namjoon patted his back, chuckling.

'I made birthday cupcakes for everyone. We can grab some coffee and juices for boys and have a small picnic later...' Jin showed the basket he was carrying.

'We packed fruits and snacks too," Minji smiled. 'In an hour they will be tired so

we can rest then...'

Hoseok and Minji indeed were the ones who rode with the boys on the merry-go-round. Hoseok holding Taehyung in front of himself chose a black horse, while Minji, being the badass she was, took Jungkook to a huge chinese green dragon figure.

Jin and Namjoon took tons of pictures, saving the memories. Soon their sons will be riding carousels by themselves and they couldn't help but feel nostalgic about it.

Then it was Namjin's turn to join their babies on the small children's railway which went around the whole town on tracks. They let the boys sit beside each other, holding them from behind.

New photos were added to Kim&Jeons photo cloud, which already had thousands of those. Minji, Jin, Namjoon and Hoseok were devoted to saving special and casual moments of their children and themselves. Not just photos but recordings too. Of course more than half of them were memories of Taehyung and Jungkook together.

Somehow both families could see that both boys were more beautiful, shining internal light being together. Even their smiles were different then.

Jin won a big plushy tiger for Jungkook taking part in DanceDanceRevolution and Minji in return shot the cute plushy bunny for Taehyung.

After a bit more than an hour, happy children holding each other's hands and their toys, became tired.

They found the table in the resting area. Boys wanted to sit toghether so they sat them on the bench next to each other.

Jin placed a cupcake with a birthday candle in the shape of number 3 into Jungkook's cupcake.

Hoseok lightened it up.

'Make a wish, Jungkookie...' Namjoon said.

'TaeTae!' Jungkook exclaimed happily.

'I could have expected it will be your wish as always...' Hoseok shook his head, smiling. 'Blow the candle honey!'

Jungkook took a deep breath and the flame disappeared, he clapped his hands excitedly.

'Happy Birthday Baby!' Minji leaned and kissed his cheek.

'Happy Birthday Baby!' Taehyung repeated after her and kissed the other cheek of Jungkook, thinking it should be done like that, because everytime his parents, aunt and uncle were doing this to him or Jungkook on special occasions like that.

'Happy Birthday Baby!' Jungkook repeated after him and kissed Taehyung's cheek too, not understanding that it's his birthday not Tae's. He turned his head and kissed Minji's cheek. 'Happy Birthday Mom!! Happy Birthday Dad!! Happy Birthday Uncle Joonie!! Happy Birthday Uncle Jinnie!!'

They laughed together at his cuteness.

'Indeed it's a Happy Birthday for all of us...' Namjoon smiled. 'I will bring coffee. What do you want, boys?'

'Banana milk!!' Jungkook said eagerly.

'Strawberry juice, please...' Taehyung said, looking at his father pleadingly.

'Ok. Wait here... I'm gonna...'

Suddenly all the lights went out. The music fell silent. The carousels stopped. People who were on rides and other machines started to scream, confused what's going on. They were hanging sometimes with their heads upside down or being imprisoned in the Fairy Wheel.

'Appa?' Taehyung called anxiously, trying to see something in darkness. He immediately squeezed Jungkook's hand to make sure he was still close.

'Stay where you are boys...' Namjoon said with a deep calming voice.

The crowd started to scream.

'FIREEEEEE!!! Call the fire brigade!!! FIREEE!!!'

'On the left!' Hoseok said.

The fire was getting higher and higher under the Ferris Wheel. Electrical discharges were visible between the flames.

'It looks like the generator had a short circuit!' Namjoon said.

The four of them looked at the panic in the crowd and the electrical discharges that started covering the metal partes of the machines. The flames spread on the wooden stalls, lightening the four of them.

They looked at each other. Interdependents always had internal conflict when it was coming to exposing their powers. And still half of society didn't trust them.

'Fuck it!' Jin said, throwing off his glove. 'They will die at this point!'

Minji nodded and took her glove too.

'I will stay with the children', she said, sliding her hand under Hoseok's shirt. When her hand showed back she was holding seven bubbles of light. 'Your seal is unlocked...' she whispered, tiptoed and pecked Hobi's lips. 'Go!'

Hoseok nodded and started to shine like the bubbles.

'Taehyung, stay with Kookie and auntie!' Jin said and pressed his hand to Namjoon's heart. The white straps of bandage started to dance around him, completely obedient to the movements of his hands.

'I will help with the roller coaster and ferris wheel and you take care of the wounded...' Jin said.

'Be careful...' Namjoon said.

Jin nodded and ran. He grabbed one end of the bandage and the second end stretched to an enormous length and wrapped around one of the higher carousels and pulled Jin in the air like a spiderman.

'Dad!' Taehyung tried to jump off the bench, but Jungkook's hand stopped him. The younger's eyes were wide and worried.

'TaeTae...' he whispered.

Namjoon crouched down in front of Taehyung.

'Taehyung... stay with Jungkook, okay? Your job is to protect him. We will come back soon...'

Taehyung looked at Jungkook and then at his father and nodded.

'Okay...'

Namjoon looked at Minji, who inclined her head and one of the balls of light stretched and covered her and boys under the protective shield.

'Mom... am scared...' Jungkook whispered.

'Don't need to be... you are safe here.' Minji said calmly. 'Cuddle to Taehyung, ok? Mom needs to do something...'

Jungkook nodded and scott closer to Taehyung, who embraced him with his arm.

Minji walked closer to the shining light barrier and looked at the crowd who was running in panic. Lot of children who were tripping were between adults. They were almost trampled.

She exhaled and sent four bowls of light outside of the shield. Two of them multiplied into thousands of little lights and lightened the road like a runway.

The second ball of light painted the big arrow above the crowd showing the way to the exit and the last one scattered into words 'EXIT', so they will know where the arrows lead them.

She sent the fifth ball and picked children without supervision or protection out of the crowd. The bubbles of light were embracing them and placing them out of the way safely under the trees.

'It's okay...' Taehyung whispered, hugging Jungkook, looking at the light of hope that was leading the people. 'Our parents are here, Koo...'

Jin standing on the rooftop of the carousel looked at the ferris wheel. The flames started to melt cast iron bolts that were holding the machine together. It's started to tremble.

He looked at the ground where Hoseok was sending the waves of light to deal with the generator and secured the area with the rope of light that was keeping the people outside.

After his seal broke Namjoon could use his whole power, not just the healing. His body became hard as a rock and he accelerated his body movements. He was immune to the wounds and his body's ability became inhuman. He was climbing on the rollercoaster, jumping on it. He took the first hanging person in his arms and jumped to the ground with the woman screaming her lungs out. She put her gently on the ground and she instantly passed out. He shook his head and started the operation again to save another person.

'We will be all over the news...' Jin sighed and sent the straps of banadages through the flames. Namjoon's sacred treasure couldn't be destroyed until his death, because it was a part of his soul.

The bandage wrapped around the metal construction and started to fix it as it

would fix a human tissues. Jin usually used them to heal... but desperate times call for desperate measures.

The trembling of the ferris wheel stopped.

Hoseok spread the light power above the place so it was illuminated, and a big soft bubble of light started to grow from the ground until it covered the whole ferries wheel, making it a space without gravity, where everything was floating. Hoseok entered the space and jumped in the space reaching the highest cart.

'Come...' he said, stretching his head to the family inside.

'Are you insane dude!' the man yelled at him embracing his daughter.

Hoseok looked at the woman who was for sure terrified.

'You can stay here for next 4 hours until the fire brigade will save you or be on the ground in less than a minute...' he said sternly. 'I too have a child and he is scared right now and I really want to take him home...'

The little girl looked at the sparkly person in front of her and stretched her hand. Hoseok smiled at her.

'Want to fly a bit?' he said to her gently.

He embraced her and floated in front of the cart when she giggled. Her parents started to scream.

The straps Jin sent showed up next to Hoseok.

'Let them embrace you...' Hoseok said to the parents of the girl. 'They will take you to the ground! I will be waiting with her!'

'Don't you dare!!' the father screamed.

But the mother looked at the bandages and touched it gently. It circled around her waist and took her out of the car. Jin was controlling them until the woman's feet gently touched the ground outside the bubble.

'Here...' Hoseok gave the daughter to her and turned around to do the same with others. The father of the child didn't want to get out of the car or get any help of interdependents. He was stuck there, and honestly Hoseok didn't care.

The woman grabbed his arm. He looked at her.

'Thank you...' she whispered.

Hoseok nodded and jumped into the bubble again. He didn't waste time.

'Anyone who wants to be safe opens the cart's doors! Me or my friend will help you! If someone wants to be stuck here, waiting for the fire brigade who is on the way, I won't waste my time!' He looked at the father of the girl angrily.

He and Jin managed to save 20 people before the fire brigade showed up, and put down the rest of the remaining flames. Namjoon took care of the roller coaster riders that were in danger and left the rest for the services.

He looked for the people that needed healing. Most of them had burns on their skin from the flame or had asthma attacks. Namjoon's touch healed them easily, just as his sacred treasure would. Some of them didn't want to be healed by him waiting in the lines for the ambulance. The others eagerly were smiling at him, letting his gentle power embrace them.

When the enforcement officers appeared, Hoseok scattered light around the Ferris wheel. Jin stood next to him.

'We are going...' he pulled him. 'You know when the police come they will start questioning us...'

'Yup...' they started to move, disappearing in the crowd.

They passed the father of the girl Hoseok saved and he looked at him and spit under Hoseok's feet, saying:

'Fucking interdependents!'

'Watch your language!' Jin scolded him without a second thought. 'Your daughter is here!' He pulled Hoseok after himself.

'Few years ago it wasn't like that...' Hobi shook his head in disbelief.

'Few years ago, the memories about the pandemy were still fresh. They are forgetting good things fast. And they are looking for scapegoats... They don't understand we are just like them! They are jealous of our powers. And they blame us for everything they cannot do...'

'We need to protect our children from this...'

'And we will Hobi... we will...'

Namjoon joined them on their way.

When Minji saw them she scattered the lights and sent the bubbles back to Hoseok. Taehyung ran to Jin and Namjoon and Jungkook ran to Hoseok when

they saw them.

The fathers took their little boys in their arms.

'We are going!' Minji said. 'It will be a mess...'

'It's not the first time. They will be pissed or they will praise us depending on who will speak about it. If any of the journalists show up on our porches we will just calmly send him back... Our people will take care of it. If we wouldn't do anything they would turn it against us too.' Namjoon said, holding Taehyung who was embracing him like a koala.

Hoseok kissed Jungkook's temple, rocking him calmingly in his arms.

'I don't care, you know... I just want to put our babies to sleep now...'

Minji embraced his waist and they fastly walked to their cars, knowing that the next two weeks will be hard, but they will survive this.

Because sadly Interdependents were slowly getting used to a treatment like that ....

They reached Kim's house because it was closer.

'You go wash yourself, I will bath the boys...' Minji said, taking Jungkook in his arms and stretching her hand to Taehyung.

'We should let them sleep together...' Jin suggested. 'They will calm down after this like that...'

Minji nodded and took the boys. She prepared the bubble bath with toys for them and let them play a bit with bubbles together. She sat on the toilet enjoying their giggles. She tiredly closed her eyes and let the sounds of splashes and the bubbling of children bring the smile on her face back.

'Ok, boys, do you want to sleep toghether tonight?'

'Yesh mommy! Please!!' Jungkook stretched his hands to her.

'Ok then... Wait a second TaeTae...' she said and covered Jungkook with a fluffy towel to dry him. She fastly put Taehyung's too large pajamas on him and rolled his sleeves and pajama trousers legs, so he wouldn't trip. 'Now your turn handsome boy...' she said, taking out Taehyung. 'You are getting taller and taller, Tae... Soon

you will be taller than auntie...' She dryed his hair with a towel.

Jungkook sitting on the toilet was waving his legs, playing with his paws sleepily.

Taehyung looked at her and said seriously.

'I will protect Koo...'

She leaned and kissed his forehead.

'I know you will...' she smiled. 'And now we need to take Jungkookie to the bed before he will sleep here...'

Taehyung nodded.

'Can you all read a story to us?' he asked.

'Of course, honey...'

She put them to bed and covered them with a duvet. She pulled one of the old *Eadar-eisimeileach's* book with legends and stories. That is how childrens of *Eadar-eisimeileach* were learning about their traditions, powers and race history.

Jin, Namjoon and Hoseok entered the room. Hoseok sat on the armchair and Minji sat on his lap. Namjoon and Jin laid down on both sides of the babies, who were eagerly waiting for their bedtime story.

But the truth was they waited for their parents' soothing voices. Minji started to read. When she finished the first page she gave the book to Hoseok, who continued. Then Namjoon came to take the book and returned to bed to read the third page.

When Jin finished the fourth page their children were safely hidden in their dreamlands, cuddling to each other.

---

Hello! □□

I'm putting the years for you to easily follow how old they are. Jungkook was born in 2050 in this story, so 2053 means he is 3 and Taehyung is 5 and so on.

This will be a journey of their bond so even if it's boring for now, it's important and I hope you will be patient with the story.

The time will run faster a bit later <333

And this awsome beautiful cover was made by SnowFlake 3001. Thank you so

much dear!!

Enjoy!💙💙

Blair_Witch

# Chapter 3: Kims to the rescue

**November 2054**

Jin was sitting in the living room. He had three days of leave after 4 days of 24-hour duty in hospital.

It was the middle of the night and he was putting printed photos into the album. He was leaving short notes on the back and dates. It was something that was relaxing him after hard work and constant watching tragedies in the hospital. Seeing his family and friends happily spending time together, calmed him down.

He couldn't sleep either way after a few days of a changed schedule during which he slept when he could.

He sipped his tea and turned on the volume of tv, when on the news a replay of last days events started to be shown. He knew they would show Namjoon.

He sighed.

Things weren't going smoothly as they thought they would. Society was getting more distrustful towards interdependants year after year. The funfair event was just one of the thousands of incidents that was portrayed by half of the population as something Interdependents could prevent.

If somewhere in the world a military or humanitarian conflict was taking place the first question media were asking was: why Interdependants couldn't prevent it?

If a new disease was discovered - Why won't they deal with it?

Cancer? - Are they dying like normal people? If not, couldn't they stop it a long time ago?

They were shown as a cure to everything... And at the same time as a cause of everything bad.

Namjoon - a young, respectful University professor - who was known for his studies about world history (which was twisted as well by media as a "*Eadar-eisimeileach'* history*)* was dragged by ICI - International Council of Interdependents - to play a role in creating a peaceful image of *Eadar-eisimeileach.* To explain, to teach how it really is.

Minji being a part of MOI - Military Organization of Interdependents - was having a hard time too. They were trying to prevent a crisis that could occur if the moods in society wouldn't calm down. Her father was a respectful member of MOI even if

he wasn't actively participating in politics currently.

Namjoon flew to New York last week and Taehyung was with his grandparents till yesterday. He was peacefully sleeping in his bed right now. Jin was praying that it would stay like this. That his son will sleep peacefully till the rest of his life. It was one of the reasons Namjoon agreed to be dragged into a political swamp. To do anything he could for their son's future.

Jin knew his husband was currently in the air, flying home, but he saw him on the screen in a black suit and glasses, in front of the United Nations guests.

'I'm standing here today in front of you, simply as Kim Namjoon. You see me as an Interdependent. And I am one. But does this define me? No. It doesn't define even a bit of me as a person. I am a father. I am a husband. I am a teacher. I'm struggling to fulfill all of these roles the best way I can. And it is a real challenge. I'm struggling to explain to my son how the cosmos works. I'm struggling to comfort my husband when he comes back from hospital exhausted and depressed after seeing sick children, as any other doctor would. I'm struggling trying to decipher my students' handwriting... because honestly sometimes it's absolutely unreadable...'

Few laughs were heard in the audience. Namjoon smiled a bit.

'I'm not struggling being an Interdependent. Most of the time... I even forget about it. It doesn't change my daily life. The most relatable thing about interdependants that you can say is - they have just one significant other, a person designed for them. Don't look at them... don't look at US as at someone with super powers. Look at us as people connected to each other by the red string of fate. Every other thing is just an addition. It's a talent we can use, but don't need to. It's a talent like music, painting, dancing, taking photos, skating, gardening... If every talented person would be treated as a threat just because of it's talent how much music would stay hidden? How much art would be lost? How many sportsmen would never entertain us with their competitiveness and devotion?'

Namjoon made a long pause.

'I'm asking you to not see as heroes. We are simple humans just like you. Our children are struggling learning how to speak, walk, write... They are not geniuses from the moment they are born. They are crying the same tears as you. They are getting sick the same way as you. They are not super strong, nor are they super smart. They are just children. Don't label us. Don't label our children. We will fight arm in arm with you if needed. Because we are a part of this world just like you are.'

Namjoon bowed.

'Thank you...'

Jin took a deep breath and closed his eyes. He talked with Namjoon just before he boarded the plane, but right now he really wanted to be there with him. Standing close. Supporting him.

He wanted his soulmate to come back home and be just Joonie.

Jin opened his eyes suddenly, because he heard running on the stairs. He looked at his watch. 1 AM. Why was this boy not sleeping?

Taehyung ran downstairs and Jin blinked in shock, seeing his face full of tears. 6 year old boy jumped on him, hiding in his dad's arms.

'Tae? What happened? Hey, tell dad? What happened?' he said gently. 'Did you have a nightmare?'

'I don't know... My head hurts...'

Jin checked, but his son didn't have a fever. He started to gently massage his temple, but Taehyung was still trembling.

'Do you want medicine?'

'My tummy hurts too...'

'Ok, we will do something with this, honey... Stay here for a moment...' he kissed Taehyung's forehead.

Jin layed Taehyung on the couch and covered him with a blanket. He got up to get his doctor bag and fetch some medicine from the bathroom. He was preparing the glass with water when something clicked in his mind, when he heard his son quite sniffles and sobs - Taehyung wasn't the one to cry easily.

It was one in the morning, but he texted Hoseok.

**Jin: Hey! Is Kookie ok?**

He got the message instantly.

**Hobi: He has a fever. How did you know? We tried to give him medicine, but he is throwing up everything...**

**Jin: We are coming...**

He ran to his son's bedroom and took warm clothes and packed some into the bag. He went back to the living room and gently caressed Taehyung's cheek.

'Tae... Kookie is not feeling well. Do you want to see him?'

Taehyung nodded eagerly and jumped out of the couch, not minding his own pain.

Jin helped Taehyung put on the clothes. He took his phone, laptop and medical bag to the car and Taehyung climbed to his safety seat. Jin checked his safety belts and wiped the tears from his cheek with his thumb.

'Don't worry, honey... we will help him...'

Taehyung nodded, pouting and trying to wipe his tearing eyes with his fists.

The night streets were empty and quiet so they reached Hoseok's house half an hour later.

As soon as his father let him out of the car, Taehyung ran to the door.

Hoseok, hearing the car approaching, was already standing in the opened doors.

Taehyung stopped in front of him abruptly.

'Uncle! How is my Koo?' he asked, concerned, possessively.

Hoseok crouched down in front of him, and squeezed his arms.

'He is sleeping...' he said calmingly. 'But he has a high fever...'

Taehyung blinked and passed Hoseok running to Jungkook's bedroom. He rushed into the room like a hurricane, startling Minji, who was changing cooling pads on Jungkook's covered in sweat forehead.

'Tae...?' she greeted him softly, when he stood next to her, staring at the pale face of his Bunny. 'He is sick...'

'Did he get the medicine?' he asked, with eyes full of hope, almost tearing up.

'He did. But he couldn't hold it in his tummy, and didn't want to take it again after...' Minji said with a sigh.

'Can we try again?' he asked, pleading. 'Please...'

Minji blinked surprised, looking at the boy. Well after so many years she shouldn't be surprised right? These two were breaking all the rules known to the interdependents...

If there was a chance that she would succeed with Taehyung's help, she was totally fine with trying again.

'Will you help me?' she asked softly and Taehyung nodded.

Minji didn't even have a chance to instruct him, because he crawled on the bed and pressed his cold hands to Jungkook's hot cheeks.

'Koo... Koo...' Taehyung called quietly.

Jungkook raised his eyelids weekly. He tried to smile at Taehyung, but he failed and his lips only twisted.

'You need to take the medicine...' Taehyung said and Jungkook shook his head. 'You need to be a good boy, yeah? Please? We can sleep after... okay...?'

Jungkook shook his head slowly again, trying to open his trembling lips.

'We need to lift his head a bit...' Minji said gently, preparing the syringe with syrup.

She tried to pull Jungkook to sit, but the boy's head fell back, so Taehyung, being a clever boy, used the moment to slide behind the little one and embraced his waist. They were often sitting like that watching cartoons or listening to stories, so it was a position they were both comfortable with.

Jungkook's head instantly fell back and rested on the older one's chest.

Tae was whispering soothing words to Jungkook, stroking his tummy, as his father did with him, when he was sick.

Minji opened Jungkook's mouth and poured the medicine into it. She pressed his jaw together so he needed to swallow it. He started to tear up trying to pull away, but Taehyung was there, whispering some spells to him.

When the boy started to get green on his face, Minji prepared the bawl.

'Breath in, breathe out Kookie... Deep breaths....' she called him quietly.

It wasn't like Jungkook was conscious enough to understand what she wanted from here. But Taehyung took Jungkook's hand and pressed their combined fingers to the boy's chest. His second hand traveled to his stomach.

'Listen to mommy... Breath in...' Taehyung took a deep breath and automatically Jungkook's chest filled with air too. 'Breath out...'

Minji looked at them asstounded. What kind of magic was that?

Her child actually drank the medicine she was trying to give him for more than 6 hours... And didn't throw it up...

'C-cold...' Jungkook whispered weekly with white lips.

'Can you lay him down, Tae? I will cover him...' she said, taking another blanket from the armchair.

'Can I stay with him?' Taehyung looked at her with puppy eyes. 'Please, auntie... I want to stay...'

'But you will get sick too, honey...' she said with concern.

'Let him stay,' Jin said, standing in the door frame. 'There is no sickness Taehyung can't win with...'

Minji nodded hesitantly, when Jin walked in and checked Jungkook's forehead. He took out the stethoscope and checked his lungs.

'Bronchitis...' he informed. 'Show me what you have in your first aid kit... If there won't be anything suitable I will drive to the pharmacy to get an antibiotic... Namjoon is coming back tomorrow. If the fever won't die down, we will heal him, but I think it will be ok. He will raise his immunity in a natural way like that... We've never healed Taehyung from average sickness. And Jungkook is a strong, healthy boy... He will be fine...' he calmed Minji down, putting his palm on her shoulder. He looked at Taehyung. 'You can lay down...' he leaned to Jungkook, to fix his position.

Taehyung shuffled and Jin layed Jungkook on the pillow. He curled up on his side, shivering slightly.

Taehyung instantly laid down behind him. Hugging him like his favorite soft toy.

Minjin covered them both with duvet and blankets. Jin stood next to her looking at his son.

'How do you feel, TaeTae? Your head? Tummy?'

'Am fine, dad... I don't need medicine anymore...' Taehyung mumbled.

Minji stroked Jungkook's cheek and Taehyung's hair. The size difference between the two boys was endearing. Taehyung's whole figure could easily hide Jungkook's small body.

'Call me if you need something, Tae.' She smiled gently and left the doors open with the bedside lamp lightened up, before she and Jin walked out of the bedroom.

Minji leaned on the wall and sighed.

'How did you know? In the middle of the night?'

'I didn't know...' Jin shook his head. 'Taehyung did. I thought he was hurting. But he was crying too. And it's not like him. He wasn't hurt physically...'

'We really need to think about finding a house near you...' Minji shook her head.

'Well I'm only thinking that I will be a grandfather sooner than I expected... My world wide handsome face is not ready for it...' Jin pouted.

'Jin!' Minji looked at him not knowing if she should scold him or laugh.

'What?! They are cute babies now! But think what will happen when they will be fifteen and puberty will hit them?! I need to tell Namjoon to strengthen the beds in the house...'

'Stop it!! Don't talk about my four year old kid like that!!'

Jin, laughing, embraced her arm and led her to the kitchen where Hoseok was making hot chocolate for everyone.

'Think about the good things.... You for sure will like your son in law, and I for sure will love mine. Family gatherings will be normal hangouts just like now. And you won't need to worry about your son's in-laws being dicks to him...'

'I...' Minji frowned, trying to find any scolding words. In the end she just shook her head. ' Oh, shut up, Kim...'

'How is my baby?' Hoseok asked, putting three cups on the table.

'I'm fine...'

Hoseok opened his mouth as if he wanted to correct that he was asking about Jungkook, but consciously shut his mouth.

Minji smirked.

'And your son is fine too... Kims to the rescue as always!' she smiled at Jin.

'Well, it's actually pretty good, you know? I didn't feel like being alone tonight...' he sat on the chair and reached for the cup.

'Namjoon is coming back today?' Hoseok asked.

'Yeah... he should be in Seoul in a few hours. He should reach home in the evening...'

They fell silent for a moment.

'Things are calmer since he took care about the official meetings like that...' Minji noticed.

'Yeah. But he is not happy about it. He just wants to have time for us and his books. Being a world wide known leader is not what he wanted for himself...' Jin said sadly.

'If things will get going as they are, it will be over soon...' Hoseok rubbed Jin's back. 'I prepared the guest room for you... you should rest, Jinnie...'

Jin nodded.

'I will drink this, check the medicines you have here for Kookie and go to sleep... Minji, you should sleep too. And take Hobi with you.' he added.

'But...' Hoseok tried to protest.

'Don't worry... Taehyung will alarm us better than the electronic nanny if he will suspect something is wrong with his prince...'

Hoseok giggled.

'They are really something... You know that Jungkook is standing in front of the doors half an hour before your arrival? Even if we won't tell him you are coming?'

'We totally need to find a house closer to you, before driving back and forth will ruin our accounts...' Minji shook her head amused.

'Well, it would be reasonable... We could easily manage our schedule like that...' Jin smiled.

'Should we let our brats win again?' Minji lifted her eyebrow.

'Definitely not yet...' Jin shook his head.

'Ok, I will check if they fell asleep, and leave a drinks for them...' Hoseok stood up to prepare the juice in a sippy cup for Jungkook and took out the juice with a stroll for Taehyung from the cabinet.

'You just want to take more photos...' Minji looked right through him.

'Of course I do...' Hoseok answered proudly, and walked out of the kitchen. 'I will blackmail them when they will be older...'

**March 2055**

Taehyung was sleeping peacefully when he felt his bed bending. He hid his face in the pillow, but little hand shook his shoulder.

'TaeTae...' The urgent whispering was heard. 'TaeTae!'

He opened one of his eyes to look at Jungkook, who was kneeling on the bed.

'Can't you sleep, Kookie?' he mumbled, and pulled back the duvet, invitingly, so that the smaller boy could hide under it.

Jungkook shook his head.

'No, TaeTae... Get up!'

'Why?'

'Please...'

'It's still night, Koo... We should sleep...' he pulled the boy and covered him with a duvet, making him giggle, when he hugged him.

'Taeeeee!' Jungkook whined. 'Get up! I want to go outside!'

'Outside? It's dark and cold...'

'No. It's not dark...'

Taehyung opened his eyes again to look at the window. It was probably just before dawn, because the night sky was changing slowly into the warm bright colors.

'Why do you want to go outside?' Taehyung asked.

'To see the sun waking up...' Jungkook said with doe eyes, looking pleadingly at the older.

'But we watched yesterday when it was going to sleep...'

'Yeah, but I love the sun!' Jungkook said cutely, he moved, trying to get up.

'Why? You don't like it when it's day...'

'Sun is like you! I want to see the sun again!'

'Sun is like me?' Taehyung sat on the bed, looking at the younger, who was jumping on his knees on the bed. 'Why?'

'It's pretty! Warm and bright!' Jungkook said excitedly. 'Just like Tae!'

Taehyung blushed.

Jungkook tilted his head.

'Please?'

Taehyung smiled.

'Okay...' he whispered. 'But we need to be really quiet... And we need to wear coats and boots...'

Jungkook nodded seriously.

Taehyung slowly got up from the bed and walked to the second bed Jungkook was sleeping in. Well, more like he should, but usually he ended up in Taehyung's bed and nobody was surprised about it.

Jungkook was at Kim's place for the whole week under the care of Namjoon and Jin, because Hoseok was for a performance in Seoul and Minji was in Berlin, for an important meeting, connected to her job.

Namjoon or Jin was driving Jungkook to his preschool while dropping by Taehyung to school. They lived on the outskirts of the city in an almost countryside location and Jungkook loved their big garden, fresh air and a lot of places where he could play with Tae after school.

Minji noticed once that Jungkook is learning faster than the other children in his preschool group. Probably it was caused by his need to catch up with Taehyung. He wanted to understand and do the same things as the older one was doing. She and Hoseok were really seriously thinking about moving closer to Kims, so the both families could effectively help each other.

Not to mention that Taehyung wanted to learn how to dance with Hoseok and Minji was teaching him and Jungkook tai chi as a form of sport and meditation. Both boys really liked physical activities.

Taehyung took out Jungkook's hoodie and helped the younger one put it on, before choosing a blouse for himself. He took Jungkook's hand on his own and sneaked out of the room, pressing his finger to his lips.

Jungkook nodded obediently and stuck closely to Taehyung, when they were moving through the dark and silent house.

'Wait for me next to the backdoors in the kitchen, okay? I will bring our coats and shoes...' he whispered.

Jungkook slowly moved to the kitchen, and Taehyung ran to the hallway where the jackets were hanging. He fastly put on his shoes and coat, took Jungkook's welly boots and jacket and joined the younger one.

He helped Jungkook wear the coat and zipped it carefully. He kneeled on the floor and tied his shoes.

'Ok, we are ready... Don't scream. Dad will scold us...'

'I won't scream...' Jungkook stuck out his pinky, as a promise.

Taehyung smiled and joined his pinky with him. He took his hand again and unlocked the doors. He closed them quietly. They walked to the garden. The march ground was wet and still a bit frozen, but the early flowers and trees were waking up to live.

'When will the spring come, TaeTae?' Jungkook asked, squeezing the warm hand of the older boy.

'Ummm... soon...' Taehyung looked at the still dark sky.

'Tomorrow?'

'I don't think so, Kookie...' he giggled.

Taehyung wanted to go to the end of the garden, when the neighbor's field was starting and they could clearly see the sunrise.

But Jungkook stopped next to a cherry tree.

'Look, look... there is a bud there!' he said, pointing out to the small bud on the tree.

'Oh, I see... There is another one there...' he smiled. 'There will be flowers when the spring comes...'

'We need to hug it!' Jungkook said, pulling Taehyung to the cherry.

'Why?' Taehyung blinked surprised.

'It will be warm and the flowers will show their little heads as a thank you!' Jungkook informed him simply.

'Umm... dad told me the flowers need sun to bloom...' Taehyung said hesitantly.

'Tae is like the sun!' Jungkook smiled widely. 'And the tree is cold... we need to hug it!'

Jungkook hugged the tree. His little hands couldn't embrace more than a half of the trunk. Taehyung knew it wouldn't work, but he didn't want to disappoint the little one, so he embraced the three from the other side, putting his palms on Jungkook's.

After few minutes, Taehyung opened his mouth to tell Jungkook that it won't work, but the tree is for sure was happy they've hugged it. But before he could do it, from under their joined palms a purple light started to shine, and sunk into the tree bark.

Taehyung saw Jungkook pressing his forehead to the tree and whispering gently:

'You are warm now... Can you show us flowers, please, little tree...'

Taehyung lifted his head and his eyes widened when the buds they saw earlier bloomed opened slowly and bloomed into a flower.

'Look, Koo...' he whispered.

Jungkook jerked his head up and laughed gleefully.

'Tae! The flower!'

'Yaeh...' Taehyung smiled widely.

Jungkook clapped his hands and hugged Taehyung. His head could reach just the older one's chest, so he lifted his eyes at Taehyung.

'It says Thank you...'

Taehyung nodded, and looked at the sky, which was getting brighter and more colorful.

'We need to go. The sun is getting up...'

Jungkook gasped and they ran to the end of the garden, not knowing that Jin and Namjoon were observing them from the kitchen.

Jin, having light sleep from his night duties at the hospital, woke up hearing the squeaking of the hall floor, and Namjoon woke up as soon as he felt Jin wasn't next to him, so they followed their naughty brats, to check what they were up to.

But they didn't expect to see the interdependent's power showing without unsealing the seal. But it couldn't be anything else. There were cases when Sealers

could use a small amount of power in extreme situations, but not for something so simple and for sure not at such a young age.

Jungkook and Taehyung didn't know how to use their powers. Especially Taehyung didn't know anything about unsealing or using the sacred treasure. So it was Jungkook's doing. He made the flower bloom. But he did it because Taehyung was close...

Jin looked at Namjoon with shocked eyes.

'What are they?'

Namjoon gulped.

'I don't have the slightest idea...'

Taehyung and Jungkook standing at the end of the garden weren't worried about what happened like the adults were. They actually already forgot about it. It was just a small spring miracle for them.

Jungkook was looking excitedly at the horizon when the orange and pink spread, showing the first beams of sun. He squeezed Taehyung's hand.

Taehyung turned his head back to where the sky was still dark blue and was surprised to notice that the moon was still there.

He didn't know why, but he loved the moon. Its color was always so soothing and the moonlight was gentle. It reminded him of Jungkook's skin color.

When he was looking from his room at the moon he was always thinking about Jungkook. Moon was so magical. It could light up the darkness. And Jungkook was his own little moon.

When the rays of sunrise showered them with soft warm light, Jungkook smiled at Taehyung like a bunny and pulled Taehyung's palm.

'See! Tae is like sun!' he said when Taehyung's skin color matched with the soft light of the sunrise. Jungkook looked at Taehyung's hand. 'I love sun...' he whispered.

Taehyung blushed again.

'Ummm... look there... the moon is here too...' he said quietly and pointed at the sky on the other sky. 'You are like the moon, Koo...'

Jungkook gasped at another wonder he discovered with Taehyung.

'Moon is saying 'hello' to the sun!' he giggled. 'They are meeting like Tae and Koo!'

Taehyung nodded.

'Tae will always come to meet, Kookie...'

'Can we watch the sun again?' Jungkook asked when they were coming back.

'Yup... We can see the sun saying goodbye to the moon in the evening...' Taehyung promised.

'I don't like to say 'goodbye' to Tae...' Jungkook mumbled, looking at the ground.

'Don't worry, Kookie... We won't say 'goodbye' ever again, okay? We will say 'See you soon!' Taehyung smiled.

'See you soon!' Jungkook repeated. 'I like it! See you soon!'

Taehyung laughed and looked at the house. His laugh died down instantly.

Jin was standing in the kitchen doors with arms akimbo and Taehyung gulped and said the word he learned at school:

'Crap...'

---

An unexpected chapter for you before we will introduce other characers 😁

The Sun🌞 and the moon 🌝 Taekook theory 😈😈

Aren't they cute?

BlairWitch 💟

# Chapter 4: Meet the Parks

**July 2056**

Hoseok was driving after Kim's car while Minji was looking at her phone.

'Jin is asking if we want another bathroom break...' she said.

Hoseok looked in the rear view mirror at Jungkook sleeping in his safety seat in the back.

'We should let him sleep some more. He will want to go to the bathroom when he wakes up...'

'Ok, I will text him in then in an hour... We will have about an hour to reach Seoul after.' Minji said.

'Taehyung is waving to us...' Hobi said, looking at the boy who was moving his hand looking through the back window of the car.

Minji stuck out her hand through the open passenger window and waved back to the boy.

'We finally have holidays...' Hoseok sighed delightedly.

'Don't think you will rest...' she giggled. 'First week will be hectic...'

'We knew that looking for a house would be... Are we sure we want to move to Seoul? Big, loud city...' he frowned.

'We will just look for now... We can talk with Chanyeol and Baekhyun about it. But you know that it will be safer for Namjoon. He is too recognizable now. If we want to have a normal, free of attention life, we need to hide in the city that has more celebrities and events. Somewhere where the media won't be too interested in Namjoon, Jin will be able to work peacefully in some clinic and our children will stay out of it...'

'Joonie is feeling guilty... He thinks his situation forced us to change our life...' Hoseok sighed sadly.

'Do you feel like you are forced?' Minji asked.

'From the very beginning we knew that our main goal was to keep Jungkook happy. And he won't be happy away from Taehyung.'

Hoseok's eyes traveled again to his sleeping son.

'Boys aside... You and I and Namjoon and Jin... for the last six years have been depending on each other as if we are in one happy, reliable marriage. I don't think I could plan daily schedules without them now...' he giggled.

Minji didn't answer, she was typing fastly on her phone.

'What are you doing?' Hoseok frowned, expecting some kind of confirmation about his cute words.

'Texting Jin what you just said...' Minji smirked.

'Whaaa?! WOMAN! How dare you!'

'Shhh! You will wake him up...' Minji grinned at her husband.

'Ugh! I could prevent the moment you and Jin became besties...' he whined.

Minji peeked at him with a clever smile.

'Jin sends pink hearts and says he doesn't mind being our husband...'

'Sometimes I want to choke you so much...' Hoseok faked a cry.

'Oh I know that...' Minji smirked knowingly.

Hoseok gulped.

'Stop it. There is still half an hour till bathroom break...'

'The last bathroom break we took together was seven years ago so...' she moved her eyebrow teasingly.

'Fuck you...' Hoseok cursed quietly, trying to tame his wonderful wife.

'You really want me to reply to that?' A cat-like amused smile was painting Minji's lips.

Hoseok wanted to hit his head on the steering wheel but at the last moment he remembered that his driving and safety comes first.

'I need a voice of reason...' he said and dialed Namjoon's number, wanting to have a reasonable person who will help him stop Minji's and Jin's teasing.

Namjoon's voice was heard in the car's speaker, when he answered the call, saying:

'What's up, hubby?'

Hoseok groaned regretfully.

'You too?!'

'You are cute, Hobi,' Namjoon cooed, making Jin and Minji laugh.

'Stop bullying me or I will divorce all of you!' Hoseok threatened.

'What's a divorce?' Taehyung voice was heard.

'You don't need to know that, honey, it will never happen to you...' Jin calmed him down, amused.

'It's the opposite of marriage...' Namjoon explained to him simply. 'But Interdependants marriages are forever so there are no divorces between us, Tae.'

'Oh... so if I marry Jungkookie, we will be together forever?'

'That's right...' Jin confirmed.

'When can I marry Kookie?' Taehyung asked, interested.

'Umm...' Hoseok choked on his words.

'When you will be older...' Namjoon answered calmly, used to his son's constant questions.

'When you will know what contraception is...' Jin said at the same time.

'Jin!!' Minji laughed. 'What are you teaching your son!!?'

'Oh my God...' Hoseok gave up and hit his head on the wheel.

There was a long pause on the other side of the call and then Tae's voice was heard:

'Appa... what is contraception?'

'Have fun dealing with this, hubby...' Hoseok said teasingly hearing Jungkook's quiet whine and disconnected the call.

Minji turned to Jungkook who was moving anxiously in his sleep. She stretched her hand and touched his knee, shaking it gently.

'Kookie...' she called. 'Honey, wake up...'

Jungkook shook his head from side to side and jerked his body, groaning.

'Jungkook...' Minji called him again. 'You are having a bad dream... Mom is here... Open your eyes, sweetheart...'

The 6 year old boy slowly raised his eyelids and looked around confused.

'Mom? Dad?'

'We are here. We will stop in a few minutes... Do you want something to drink?' Minji asked.

Jungkook nodded his head.

'What were you dreaming about?' Hoseok asked.

Jungkook took the bottle with juice from Minji and frowned.

'I had a pony...' he said.

'A pony?'

'Yea... Tae had one too... There were a lot of ponies there... And sand... And people with strange hats...'

'What kind of hats?'

'They were shiny... and golden like coins... and have tails...'

'Hats had tails?'

'Mhmmm... Tails like pony's tails... And their clothes were shiny too... Like robots. It was loud... And the people had sticks with sharp ends... Everyone was yelling... And they hurt Tae's pony...' Jungkook teared up.

'Oh no...' Minji said sadly.

'I wanted to help him...'

'It was just a bad dream, honey...' Hoseok calmed him down.

Jungkook nodded.

'I was angry...' he said sadly.

'It's okay, Kookie. Sometimes when we are scared we get angry...' Minji stroked her son's knee.

Jungkook sipped his juice.

'Can I have a pony?' he asked, forgetting about his dream.

'No.' Hoseok answered sternly.

'Why?'

'Because ponies need a lot of space to run and we live in the city...'

'They wouldn't be happy in our small garden' Minji explained.

Jungkook nodded understandingly and his parents sighed with relief, glad that they avoided a longer discussion about having a horse...

Kim and Jeons checked into one of the hotels in Seoul in the evening. They decided they will rest after their journey on the next day and look through some real estate offers, to plan the week. They were going to visit their friend's house in the afternoon.

On the next day Minji, Namjoon and Jin were sitting under umbrellas by the poolside, looking for houses and reading about their surroundings.

It was lunchtime so there were not many people around.

Hoseok was standing near the pool for childrens watching over Taehyung and Jungkook who were playing in the water. He was holding his phone recording them having fun.

'I want ice cream...' Taehyung said. 'Do you want some too, Koo?'

The younger one shook his head, so Taehyung got out of the water and ran to Jin who was already stretching his hand with a towel for him.

Minji came with a bathrobe for Jungkook.

'Get out, Kookie. Your lips are blue...You can go again later...'

Jungkook got out of the pool. There was no fun without Taehyung so he didn't want to stay in the water. Minji wrapped him in the bathrobe and lifted.

Hoseok made a zoom at Jungkook.

'Who you love more, Kookie? Mom or dad?' he asked.

Jungkook pouted and looked at the ground shyly.

'TaeTae...' he mumbled quietly.

'And you lost again...' Minji laughed, seeing Hoseok's disappointed expression.

'You are no fun, Kook...' Hoseok stopped the recording.

Minji put Jungkook on the ground and they walked to the rest.

Jin looked around to see more people are coming to the poolside and he found a new, dry glove for Taehyung. He gave it to Taehyung who put it on without thinking.

Sometimes it made Jin sad that there was a part of them that they had to hide. Even being just kids. Taehyung never asked why he had to wear the glove in public places. Namjoon explained to him when he was young that it was for Kookie's safety. And it was enough for him. Jin knew that there will come a time when his son will be bothered by it. There will come anger and sadness that they can't be themselves openly.

He hoped that whatever Namjoon was doing would prevent it and create a better world for their children.

'Should we get going?' Namjoon asked, looking at his watch.

'Yeah, I'm hungry and Chanyeol promised me the best barbeque ever...' Jin said.

'How far are we going?' Minji asked.

'Oh, they live around half an hour from here,' Hoseok explained.

'Okay... we can change and take gifts from our room. Meeting in 20 in the hallway...' Namjoon decided.

They parted their ways in the corridor.

'See you soon, Tae!' Jungkook waved at the older boy who smiled.

'See you soon, Koo!'

Park Chanyeol and Park Baekhyun lived in a quiet, well-kept area of the city, ideal for raising children. They parked their cars near the driveway and Jin pressed the bell near the gate.

Beakhyun opened the gate remotely and stood in the doors, smiling.

'Finally!!' he exclaimed. 'I thought I won't see you ever again!'

'Don't be a drama queen!' Hoseok laughed, hugging him.

'But that's my superpower!' he said and shook his blond hair off of his forehead.

Jungkook came closer, gluing himself to Taehyung, looking anxiously at the new person. Taehyung peeked at him and took his hand.

When all the adults greeted each other, Beakhyun crouched down in front of the kids.

'Hi! This handsome guy is for sure Taehyung, right?' he ruffled the silver hair of the boy. 'And this cutie is no one other than Jungkookie...' Jungkook looked shyly at the ground, but nodded. 'I'm Baekhyun. You can call me uncle... Jiminie can't wait to meet you, boys...'

'Nice to meet you, uncle...' Taehyung said, seeing his dad lifted an eyebrow.

'How official...' Beakhyun laughed and stood up. 'Come, come! Go to the backyard, Chanyeol is there, trying to impress Jin with his grilling skills...' He leaned to Jin and whispered: 'Don't expect too much tho...'

They walked after him to the house, he led them to the backyard and yelled:

'Look who is finally here!! They are alive!'

'We started to think they put some impostors so we won't find out you ran out of the country...' Chanyeol laughed and left his place in front of the grill.

'Not like the road from Seoul to Daegu is the same like from Daegu to Seoul...' Namjoon teased him, patting his back.

'You and your smart mouth...' Chanyeol clicked his tongue. On his right palm the Holder's mark was visible.

He looked at Jungkook and Taehyung. 'Hi, boys!' he smiled and turned his head

after just to yell: 'JIMIN!!'

'WHAT?!!'

'BRING YOUR ASS HERE PARK JIMIN THIS INSTANT!!'

'I'M BUSY!!!'

'DO YOU WANT ME TO BLOCK YOUR GAMES?!'

'APPA!!!' They heard a loud whine.

A short boy ran from the other side of the backyard in their direction. He had blond hair just like Baekhyun and a petite body.

'Unfortunately he inherited Chan's foul mouth and not his height...' Baekhyun sighed.

Jimin dropped the frog he was holding, seeing people in front of the house.

'OMG!! THEY ARE HERE!!!' he looked angrily at his father. ' WHY HAVEN'T YOU CALLED ME EARLIER?!'

'I did but you were busy...' Chanyeol answered.

'Busy with what exactly?' Baekhyun asked, lifting his eyebrow and crossing his arms over his chest.

Jimin wiped his palms over his pants and smiled innocently.

'Nothing, dad...'

Before his fathers could question him more, he ran bouncing to Jungkook with a huge smile. Taehyung protectively stood in front of the younger and Jimin stopped abruptly not minding his sudden move.

'Hi! I'm Park Jimin. I'm almost 8. And I'm your hyung!'

Jungkook peeked out from behind Taehyung's back curiously.

'I'm Kim Taehyung and I am almost 8 too, so you are not my hyung...' Taehyung frowned.

'I have a birthday in 3 months...'

'And I have a birthday in 5...'

'So I am your hyung, but you don't need to call me that...' Jimin said kindly. 'Want to play?'

'I...' Taehyung hesitated and looked at Jungkook, who was eyeing the new person up and down.

Jimin tilted his head looking at the younger boy and smiled widely, squinting his eyes.

'You are, Jungkookie right?' he said.

Jungkook nodded and slowly stood next to Tae. The corners of his mouth lifted slightly.

'I'm 5.'

'Almost 6.' Taehyung corrected him. If all of them used their 'almost' age. Jungkook should too.

Jimin grabbed Jungkook's hand.

'Come! We should play! What do you like to play?' he said, pulling the boy through the lawn.

Jungkook instantly grabbed Taehyung's hand and pulled him after the energetic new friend.

'Be careful, Minnie!' Baekhyun warned.

'I KNOW!'

Baekhyun sighed.

'Don't worry...' Minji patted his shoulder. 'Taehyung has a black belt in watching over Jungkook.'

They sat by the garden table, under the cozy shade of trees, where Baekhyun brought refreshments.

'So how is Jiminie?' Hoseok asked.

'As you can see... energetic, sweet little shit...' Chanyeol shrugged.

'He is a Sealer...' Baekhyun added. 'His mark started to show up... Taehyung will surely get one too soon, right?' He looked at Jin and Namjoon.

Jin and Namjoon looked at each other.

The Interdependents kids usually get their marks when they were 8 or 9 even when they didn't know their soulmates.

Sometimes when the meeting of soulmates happened at a young age and one of them was around the age of 8-9, that could trigger the mark showing in the younger. But normally marks were not showing earlier than this.

'Taehyung has his mark already...' Jin said slowly.

'Oh? How long?'

'6 years...' Namjoon answered.

Baekhyun's jaw dropped.

'What? How?!'

'It showed up when he met Kookie for the first time...' Minji explained sipping her juice. 'They are soulmates.'

'What?! But...'

'Don't ask us... we still don't know how that works...' Namjoon sighed. 'They just felt they were soulmates from the first moment...'

'Or earlier...' Hoseok nodded.

'So Jungkook has his mark already?' Chanyeol's eyes widened.

'He is a Sealer... Taehyung is his Holder...'

'Wow... you have a nice carousel in your houses from the beginning, huh?'

'You don't have any idea...' Hoseok shook his head, smiling.

'So you are looking for the houses around?'

'Yeah... two houses, close to each other preferably...'

'Because of boys?' Chanyeol asked understandingly.

'Yeah... They are like Siamese twins...' Namjoon facepalmed.

'Cute...' Baekhyun laughed.

'Most of the time, unless they ally themselves against us...' Jin sighed.

'Well we advise you to look around in these neighborhoods. Schools are good here

and it's safe...' Chanyeol said drinkin his coke.

'Our neighbors will drop by in the evening. We befriended them. Nice people. They have a daughter...' Baekhyun said. 'We can ask them if they know about some real estates...'

'Are you hungry? The meat should be ready...' Chanyeol clapped his hands.

'Show me what you got, Park...' Jin smirked.

Jimin took the boys to the front yard.

'What do you want to play? I have all types of balls in the garage... Soccer? Basketball? Oh!!! Can we play basketball?! I often play with appa but he's huge like a tower so it sucks...'

'Ummm...' Taehyung was torn between wanting to play basketball and worried about Jungkook playing with a tough, hard ball.

Jimin followed his concerned sight and looked at the younger boy.

'Oh...Kookie, do you want to play basketball or something else?' he asked cutely.

'I dunno...'

'We can teach you...' Jimin offered, going for the ball. 'We can just try to place the ball in the basket.'

'Okay!' Jungkook smiled, and Jimin gave him the ball to start.

'You can throw it to Taehyung or me...' he instructed him.

Jungkook nodded, grabbed the heavy ball and clumsily threw it to Taehyung. Ball didn't reach the older one, who ran after it and threw it to Jimin, who tried to place it in the basket.

They were passing the ball to each other for a while, with Taehyung or Jimin trying to place it in the basket from time to time and Jungkook running happily to bring the ball when it rolled away.

Taehyung pass the ball to Jimin who this time jumped high enough and managed

to put it inside the basket.

'YAAY!! I DID IT!!' he screamed happily. 'Kookie!! To you!' he said, turning and passing the ball.

Taehyung looked at Jungkook, who just turned around, seeing the cat passing through the lawn and didn't see the ball coming in his direction.

'Watch out!' he yelled and ran to him. He stretched his hand and the ball hit his forearm bouncing back.

Jungkook glanced at him startled.

'OMG!! I'm so sorry...' Jimin ran to them.

'It's ok...' Taehyung shrugged and turned to Jungkook. 'You have to observe the ball, Koo... It could hit you...' he said gently.

'I'm sorry TaeTae... I saw a cat...'

'A cat?'

Jimin looked around.

'It's Bluemold... My cat...'

'Blue mold?' Taehyung squirmed with disgust.

'Yup... That's his name.' Jimin walked to the cat that was licking his paws in the sun.

'Why?' Taehyung frowned at the strange name.

'I had a dream about this...' Jimin explained taking a small, red kitty into his arms.

'About blue mold? Like on the bread or something...' he grimaced.

'Ewww! No... About the color... Hmm... the boy had a hair color like that... I don't know what exactly you can call it, but then I saw the mold on the lemon and that was the color...'

'But why did you name the cat like that?'

Jimin shrugged.

'The boy looked like one...' he rocked the pet in his arms.

'Can I play with Bluemold?' Jungkook asked.

'Yeah, he is lazy, sleeps a lot and doesn't do much, but you can pet him. He loves it...' Jimin put the cat on the ground and Jungkook crouched down next to him and started to stroke the little head, just to make the kitty purr in content and start to fawn over his legs.

Taehyung and Jimin looked at the absorbed boy and then at each other.

'One on one?' Taehyung asked.

'Sure.'

They started to play more seriously then before trying to steal the ball from each other and score points.

Jungkook was observing them, talking sweetly to the cat. He frowned when he saw Jimin holding Taehyung's arm to take the ball from him. But then he smiled when Taehyung threw the ball to the basket.

He stood up when he saw Jimin almost back hugging Taehyung and Taehyung tripping, losing the ball. Jimin, being smaller and faster, grabbed the ball under Taehyung's arm.

It was a totally normal situation but in Jungkook's eyes it looked dangerous. He made a hesitant step forward.

Taehyung had the ball and was running to the basket and Jimin tried to stop him, crossing his path, almost clashing with Taehyung, but Jungkook ran on the driveway, and pushed him forward, making him fall on the ground.

Jimin's knees and hands clashed with the hard driveway. Taehyung turned around seeing Jimin on the ground and Jungkook standing with his hands still in the air.

'JUNGKOOK!!' he yelled at him, running to Jimin.

Jungkook took a step back, tearing up. Teahyung never called him by his full name. And he had never yelled at him before.

Taehyung kneeled near Jimin, who had scratches and blood stains on his palms.

'It's nothing... really... don't worry...' he laughed, brushing the dirt from his hands over his shirt.

'I'm sorry... He didn't want to harm you... He got scared you will do something to me...' Taehyung said, helping Jimin to get up and brushed the dirt from his clothes.

'Jeeze... It's not a big deal Tae...' Jimin shook his head, smiling. 'I'm tripping all the

time!' Kookie, it's...' Jimin looked around. 'Where is he?'

Taehyung turned around and when he couldn't see Jungkook anywhere, he panicked.

'Oh, no! I yelled at him!' he grabbed his head.

'Don't worry... he couldn't go outside, everything is closed. He had to be at home or with parents in the garden...' Jimin grabbed Taehyung's arm and pulled him to the house.

They looked through the kitchen and garden, trying not to be seen by their parents. They finally came to the living room just to see Baekhyun and Minji crouching down behind the couch, where the quiet sniffles were coming from.

'What happened, darling?' Baekhyun asked. 'They didn't want to play with you?'

'N-no... I-I p-pushed J-jiminnnieee...' he cried out.

'You pushed Jimin?' Minji frowned.

'H-his hands are r-reeed...' Jungkook despaired. 'W-wiiil he d-diiee like the p-pony, m-mom?'

'Pony?' Baekhyun asked, confused.

'He had a bad dream recently...' Minji explained quietly to Baekhyun. 'Why did you push Jimin, Jungkook?'

'H-he w-wanted to p-puush T-Taee...'

'No, no, no, Kookie!!' Jimin ran to him, and kneeled next to him. 'I didn't want to push him. We were just playing the game!'

'What game?' Baekhyun asked.

'Basketball.'

'Couldn't you choose a less complicated game, Chim?' Baekhyun raised his eyebrow.

'It's not his fault, Baek... Kookie is not used to seeing Taehyung with other kids...' Minji calmed him down. She looked at her son. 'You need to say 'sorry', Kookie...'

Jungkook nodded eagerly and grabbed Jimin's hands.

'I'm soorr-rryy... sooorryyy....'

'It's okay!!' Jimin laughed. 'I'm fine, Jungkookie!'

Jungkook looked at Jimin's hands and burst out crying more.

'R-r-r-eeeeed...!!!'

Taehyung was looking at the crying boy with a pale face and uneasy expression. He was feeling pain in his chest and his eyes started to itch.

'It's just a scratch...' Jimin laughed again. 'It will disappear.'

'You know what, Kookie?' Baekhyun said to the boy. 'You can help me put bandaids on his hands, ok?'

Jungkook nodded.

'I wanna h-help...' he hiccuped. But then he remembered something and his cry came back with redoubled strength. 'T-TaeT-Tae h-haaates meeee... He -hates, K-Kooo....'

'It's not...' Jimin started, but Taehyung moved him and hugged the younger one.

'I'm sorry I yelled at you, Koo...' he said quietly.

Jungkook desperately glued himself to Taehyung.

'I didn't wanna h-hurt J-jimminie... I-I'm s-sorry... T-Taehyung...'

Taehyung moved away, shocked. Jungkook was struggling trying to say his full name for months now.

'You called me 'Taehyung'...' he said, amazed.

Jungkook nodded seriously.

'I practise with dad...' he explained sadly.

Taehyung hugged him and Jimin joined them on the spot.

'You are so cute, Kookie!' he giggled.

Beakhyun sighed.

'Enough of the drama, please... Come, we will treat Chim's hands and you can eat dinner.'

'Okay dad...' Jimin smiled, jumping on his feet.

Minji leaned on Jungkook, who was still protectively embraced by Taehyung.

'Are you feeling better now, honey?'

He nodded with his cheek still pressed to Taehyung's chest.

'You can't push other children, Jungkookie...'

'I-I won't, mom... Promise...'

'Ok. I believe you... Now, go help uncle Baek with Jimin's scratches...' She helped him to get up and Baekhyun took his hand so they could follow Jimin who was jumping on his way to the bathroom.

Taehyung looked at Minji. She stroked his hair.

'Don't feel guilty that you yelled at him, Taehyung... He is younger. He doesn't understand some things yet...'

'I know... He wanted to protect me...'

Minji smiled and nodded.

'Come...' she embraced him with her arm. 'I hid some strawberries for you...'

Taehyung smiled at her.

'Thanks auntie!'

After eating Jimin took Taehyung and Jungkook to his room.

'Board games or playstation?' he asked.

'Playstation!' Kookie exclaimed, clapping his hands.

'You can play?'

'With TaeTae!' he said, sitting on the carpet in front of tv.

'Oh, okay then... Three players or two players then?' he asked Taehyung.

'Two...' Taehyung said, scratching his head. 'Can I remove my glove?' he asked shyly.

'Sure! Dad never wears it at home, ' Jimin nodded, taking the pads, and giving one to Jungkook. He looked at Taehyung, who took off his glove and his eyes widened. 'Wow! You have your mark already?! I thought you just wore it to get used to it! I got mine a few weeks ago... Dad said it will get darker when I meet my soulmate...' Jimin, not minding the audience, pulled his shirt over his tummy to show the pale mark on his chest.

He looked closer at Taehyung's palm.

'Why is your mark so dark already?'

Taehyung shrugged.

'It was always this way... Jungkookie has it too, and it is black too...' Taehyung said, and sat behind Jungkook as always when they were playing video games. He took the pad and Jungkook put hands on Taehyung's.

The younger rested his back on the older's chest and giggled.

Jimin was still processing the information he just got.

The he gasped.

'OMG! THAT MEANS YOU ARE SOULMATES?!!!!!' he exclaimed excitedly.

Taehyung looked at him not knowing why he got so emotional over it.

'Yeah...'

Jimin sat next to them on the floor looking at them like a hawk.

'So you are soulmates like our parents?' he asked once again.

'Yes...' Taehyung again confirmed simply.

'Do you guys kiss?!' Jimin whispered-screaming, jumping on his butt on the floor.

'Yeah we are doing this all the time...' Taehyung said, looking at the screen, without noticing how Jimin's jaw dropped.

'Kiss!' Jungkook demanded.

'For luck...' Taehyung added, tilted his head and pecked Jungkook's cheek.

Jimin's face got a bit pink but he shook his head.

'Not like that...' He pressed his finger to his lips. 'On the lips...' he whispered shyly.

Taehyung's face became red as a strawberry and he shook his head.

In Jimin's eyes stars appeared.

'You should try it!' he whispered, excited.

Taehyung gulped and shook his head.

'Appa said it's for adults only...'

Jimin pouted.

'Fine... But you will do it someday...' he smirked and nudged Taehyung's arm with his shoulder teasingly.

Taehyung rolled his eyes, trying to hide his blushing face in Jungkook's hair.

'Can we play already?' Jungkook asked impatiently.

Jimin pressed the play forgetting about his new friends innocent relationship and the game started

Checking on the trio from time to time adults were spending peaceful time catching up with each other and talking about Seoul. In the evening new people appeared.

'Guys! Meet the other Kims! Kai and Jennie...' Baekhyun led a married couple to the garden.

'It's Jin, Namjoon, Hoseok and Minji!' He introduced everyone, and Kai and Jennie greeted everyone.

Chanyeol came closer and grabbed the six year old girl, who was holding her mother's hand, and lifted her in the air.

'And this little Princess is Yoohyeon!'

'Hi, uncle!' The girl smiled cutely. 'Where is Jimin oppa?'

'I will take you to him. You can meet new friends too...' Chanyeol said and took

her to Jimin's room.

'So you are looking for a house nearby?' Kai asked Namjoon, who gave him a can with coke.

'Yup. Actually two houses...' he said.

'I saw some offers lately. We can check them...' Jennie mentioned.

'We would be really grateful,' Hoseok smiled at them.

With the help of Parks and Kims, Kims and Jeons spend all week in Seoul looking for houses and having fun.

Two days before they wanted to come back to Daegu, Bakehyun sent them photos, address and details of the offers.

**Baekhyun: Look what Jennie found...**

**Baekhyun: Two identical houses. Next to each other. Three blocks away from us. Jimin's school is nearby...**

They opened their laptops and checked the details and more photos.

'I could make a dance studio using the space over the garage...' Hobi mumbled.

'We should see it inside, but the surroundings are nice...' Minji nodded.

'They are really close...' Namjoon noticed. 'It looks like they could have joined garden in the back...'

Two houses were almost joined by their side wall like twins.

Jin was looking at the photos and he cursed suddenly:

'Damn you, destiny!' he said, shaking his head.

'What, what?!' Hoseok asked.

Jin turned his laptop to them and showed one of the photos that was making a zoom at the space between two houses. The space was created because there were two balconies there.

One was belonging to the first house and the other to his identical twin. They weren't more than 5 feet apart.

The four adults whined.

'But they are really nice...' Hoseok noticed, already creating in his head the new dance studio.

'And the location is the best from all we saw...' Namjoon said, checking on the map.

Jin sighed and texted Baekhyun:

**Jin: We will see it...** 😓

**Baekhyun: I knew it!**😁

**Jin: You've done it on purpose!**😑

**Baekhyun: I just want to make your children happy...**😇

**Jin: You want to make me a grandfather earlier, bastard!**😱

**Baekhyun: You are always saying it but you know, you don't have to worry. It's not that simple. We both went through it to have Taehyung and Jimin...**

**Jin: Yeah... But I don't want to hear the bed squizing noise all the time!**

**Baekhyun: You at least will know who is there, right? I will never know who my son will sneak into his bedroom...** 😱😱

**Jin: Serves you right!** 😏

**Baekhyun: Love you too...**❤

The four adults walked to the room in the apartment where Taehyung and Jungkook were watching cartoons. Jungkook was sitting with parted lips looking at the screen and Taehyung was dozing off with his head on Jungkook's lap.

This picture made them calm about the changes they wanted to make in their lives.

Namjoon quietly closed the door, leaving the children alone and said philosophically:

'Well... we wanted to have houses closer... Next time we just need to be careful what we are wishing for...'

---

Our future squad is starting to come up toghether! 😬

I updated today because lives hates me and I need to work on Sunday... 😓

I hope you had fun reading...

BlairWitch💝

# Chapter 5: Genesis

**December 2056**

Jin was preparing dishes for Christmas standing near the kitchen counter and checking from time to time through the window at Jungkook who was playing in the snow in the garden.

Minji dropped him by and Jin sent her for grocery shopping. Hoseok was at the meeting of the Pedagogical Council at school and he would take Taehyung from his school on his way back. Namjoon closed himself in his home office checking some papers.

It was just before Christmas that they wanted to spend time at Kims place. It was actually the last time they would spend Christmas together here.

They bought the houses in Seoul which were currently under renovation. They decided that as soon as Taehyung's semester will be over in March they will move to Seoul, so the kids could start the new year at a new place with a fresh account. Jungkook would start his first year at Elementary School and Taehyung would join the third grade with Jimin.

Jin knew he would miss this house that held so many memories...

Their first night as a married couple when they slept on the floor in sleeping bags too excited to wait for furniture...

Their first microwave - before somehow Namjoon made it explode...

Every time Namjoon held him in his arms, crying, when he was exhausted from studying and taking night shifts at the hospital...

He and Namjoon painting walls of the baby room...

Taehyung's first steps...

Kookie's and Tae's first Christmas together...

But they were safely placed in his heart... In every photo they took, in every video they recorded...

And the new place was waiting to fill it with new memories of their growing up children.

Suddenly his phone rang and Jin frowned, seeing the school calling.

'Kim Seokjin speaking...' he picked up the call. His eyes widened when he was listening to the principal secretary's words. 'WHAT?! IS HE ALRIGHT?!' he listened to the next words and his jaw dropped. 'WHAT?!! Yes, yes of course... I will be there in half an hour...'

He fastly disconnected and opened the door to the kitchen.

'Kookie! Come home fast!'

Jungkook was spacing out, looking at the horizon.

'Jungkook!?'

'Coming!' he ran to Jin.

'I will go pick up Taehyung from school, ok?'

'Can I go with you?'

'No this time, honey... Take your coloring books and go to uncle Joonie's office, ok?'

Jungkook spaced out again, looking Jin fastly putting on his coat. His thoughtful face was a bit unusual. As if he wanted to grasp something but couldn't.

'You will bring Tae?' he asked with big puppy eyes.

'Yes, I will.'

Jungkook nodded obediently and took off his shoes, jacket and hat, leaving it on the kitchen chair. Jin helped him collect the crayons and coloring books and led him to Namjoon's office. He gave him fluffy headphones and his ipod.

'Uncle is working, so listen to music and try to be quiet but if something happens just call him, ok?'

Jungkook nodded.

'I will be a good boy, just bring my Tae home...'

'Ok, honey...' Jin fastly kissed his head and stood in front of the door a bit hesitant to knock. Should he tell Namjoon what happened? He closed his eyes. Not yet... He had to know more about the situation. He entered the office.

Namjoon was on the phone, he looked at Jin who sat Jungkook on the floor near the coffee table so he could use it.

Jin pressed his finger to his lips and Jungkook did the same. He took the crayons

and kneeled next to the table.

Jin walked to the desk and scribbled on the paper:

*"I'm going to get Taehyung. Will be back in an hour. Watch over Kookie..."*

Namjoon, still speaking through the phone, read the message, took Jin's hand and kissed it without a word. Jin squeezed his fingers in response and walked out.

Taehyung was sitting in the passenger front seat next to his silent father.

Jin hadn't said a word since he talked with the school principal and took Taehyung from school. His fingers were white circled around the steering wheel.

Taehyung was looking at his lap. His hands were placed on his knees. His palms were hurting but he was too scared to complain about it. He had never seen his father so mad at him.

When Jin parked the car next to the house and killed the engine they were sitting still in silence until he spoke:

'Go change and come to the living room.' he said with emotionless voice.

'Dad...'

'I said something.'

Taehyung sighed and got out of the car.

When he dissapeared in the house, Jin hit his head on the wheel.

No good... the situation was no good. Actually it was terrible. It wouldn't be that bad if Namjoon wasn't who he was...

But how will it be portrayed when the son of the person, who was constantly trying to convince the society that Interdependents and humans are totally the same and they are not dangerous, beat up a normal boy in his school, broke his nose and caused his ankle sprain?

After talking to the principal Jin already knew how the school was looking at this incident. If it would involve two normal boys, the school wouldn't even blink, but

when it came to the Interdependent's child and a normal boy? They've already said Taehyung should be checked by child's psychologist...

Jin offered to heal the boy to the parents but they yelled at him that they don't want someone like him coming closer to their child.

How will Namjoon react to this?

Jin sighed and walked to the house. He took his time to take off his coat and gloves and walked to the living room where Taehyung was already sitting on the couch, still looking at the floor without a word.

Jin crossed his arms over his chest.

'Why have you beat up that boy?' he asked, trying to stay calm.

Taehyung's lips trembled, but he stubbornly didn't want to answer.

'ANSWER ME!' Jin raised his voice. 'DO YOU KNOW HOW HARD YOUR FATHER IS WORKING TO PREVENT SITUATION LIKE THAT?!'

Taehyung shivered.

'You broke his nose! His ankle is sprained! You have bruises all over your hands! What was the reason, Taehyung!!?'

Jungkook shyly took off his headphones not wanting to disturb his uncle, but he had to go to the bathroom. Namjoon had head set himself talking through having the online meeting this time. Jungkook stood up and moved his legs anxiously.

Namjoon peeked at him and seeing his state, smiled lightly and nodded, so Jungkook walked to the doors.

When the 6 year old boy opened the door he heard the yelling from the living room. The screams were rare in their households. None of the boys were used to them so confused, shocked and a bit scared he ran there, just to see extremely pissed Jin standing in the middle of the room and yelling at Taehyung, who was stubbornly looking at the floor, not answering.

Jungkook didn't think much, he just ran there and stood between Jin and Taehyung spreading his arms protectively.

'Why are you yelling, uncle?!' he asked, trying to hold back his tears, caused by fear.

Jin looked at him.

'Not this time Jungkook! This time you won't protect him! He was a really bad boy!'

'TaeTae is not a bad boy! He is an angel! ' Jungkook screamed with tears in his eyes.

'This time he was a bad, bad boy. He shouldn't have done that! He hurt another boy! And he injured himself!'

Jungkook gulped and hesitantly turned to look at Taehyung, who tightened his grip on his lap. He walked over to him.

Taehyung was looking down, probably holding his tears with all his might.

Jungkook cupped Taehyung's face in his hands and forced him to face him.

'TaeTae... What happened...?' he asked gently.

Jin froze. He realized that, being so shocked by the whole situation, he didn't ask this one simple question. He just knew the version portrayed by the principal and parent's of the beaten up boy.

Taehyung's eyes filled with tears, when he threw his arms around Jungkook's neck, cuddling to him. Seeking comfort. After a moment, with hiccups and stammering, he explained what happened.

Namjoon, worried why Jungkook wasn't coming back so long, came to the living room just to hear the whole story.

'We had a break... We were on the school playground. Throwing snowballs, playing war... And there was this girl... She threw the snowball at that boy... She is younger... Small... That boy and his friends started to bully her. Pulled her hair, grabbed her hands... She was calling for her older brother but... he didn't come... She was screaming 'oppa' all the time... My classmates were looking for a teacher but he wasn't around... They started to call her bad names... A witch... They tripped her and said she for sure has the stigma...'

'Stigma?' Jin frowned.

'The mark...' Namjoon whispered. 'Some assholes are calling it like that...'

'They started to pull her clothes to see it...' Taehyung squeezed Jungkook tighther.

'I just screamed to leave her alone, because she was crying... One of the boys grabbed my glove and took it off... and they said I am a sorcerer too and... I will burn them if... they won't stop me... He pulled my clothes and I pushed him. The rest ran away but he was still fighting with me... and I punched him... we fell... I'm sorry, dad...'

Jin sighed and gently touched Jungkook's shoulder to move him. He crouched down in front of Taehyung.

'I didn't want to make trouble for appa...' Taehyung hiccuped.

Jin shook his head.

'I was wrong, Taehyung. I'm sorry too... Protecting something it's not the same as picking a fight...'

Namjoon came closer and took Jin's hand. He placed it on his chest and Jin unseal his power. The soft bandage appeared and wrapped around Taehyung's injured hands.

'Are you hurt anywhere else?' Namjoon asked gently.

Taehyung shook his head.

'We will talk about this later, ok? Now take Kookie to your room and take a nap, ok? It was a stressful day...'

Jungkook took Taehyung's hand and pulled it gently. The older boy obediently went after him. When they went to Taehyung's room, Taehyung sat heavily on the bed still shaken.

Jungkook fell on his knees and took off Taehyung's shoes.

'I can do this, Koo...'

Jungkook ignored him, fighting with Taehyung's shoe lace. Finally he took off the shoes and threw them behind him.

'Do you think I'm bad?' Taehyung asked.

Jungkook shook his head fiercely, he lifted his head and sent Taehyung a bunny smile.

'You are an angel...' he said simply, without a doubt.

Taehyung wanted to cry, but he stopped himself. He was 8. He shouldn't cry like a baby...

He simply laid down on his side on the bed, turning to the window.

He felt the bed bending and small arms embraced him from behind.

'Won't you get a cold?' he asked.

'Tae is sun. It's warm...' Jungkook mumbled, pressing his face to Taehyung's back.

Taehyung smiled a bit. Even if he felt like swimming in the pitch black night sea of sadness and regret... He was swimming through the surface following the gentle, guiding moonlight.

His own little moon, who wasn't afraid to embrace the sun.

When the children went upstairs from Namjoon's eyes, all gentleness disappeared. He turned to Jin.

'What happened exactly?'

Jin explained to him the call and the meeting at the principal office. The way he described it, not mentioning the girl and the behavior of the parents of the other boy.

Namjoon's fingers clenched into fists and he went to grab his clothes from the hall.

'Where are you going?' Jin asked.

'To school.'

'Joonie... I don't think you should get involved...'

'Oh, I totally should...' Namjoon said coldly.

'What about the...'

'Do you think I care?! Do you think I'm fighting for something like this?! That a little girl is called witch and abused, because parents of that boy can't keep their mouths shut around their child?! The kid didn't come up with all of this by himself! And this fucking principal is responsible for not protecting that girl and FOR MY CHILD FORCED TO PROTECT SOMETHING HE DOESN'T EVEN UNDERSTAND FULLY!'

Namjoon shut the doors after himself with a loud noise, making his husband jumped on his feet.

Jin, feeling totally useless, went to check on the boys.

He slid into the bedroom quietly and looking at them sleeping peacefully, he fetched a blanket to cover them. He texted Hoseok that Taehyung is already home and laid down next to his boys, thinking that he should thank Minji he started to teach boys a bit of self defense during their tai chi practice.

He hoped it wouldn't be necessary in the future but somewhere deep down in his heart he knew...

...some wishes will always remain just wishes.

Namjoon stormed to the school with his dark coat looking like the avenger from the worst nightmare, ignored the secretary, who tried to stop him and went into the principal's office directly.

The man a bit older than him raised his eyes, in glasses at him.

'Mr Kim... I thought I explained the situation to your husband already...' he said coldly.

'Since when does explaining anything mean selectively choosing convenient information?!' Namjoon said enraged.

'It's words against words, Mr Kim...'

'And you choose to believe the ones without listening to others! What about the girl!? Is she guilty in your eyes too?!'

'The mentioned student ran away without explaining anything...' Principal said calmly.

'What kind of Principal are you, if you didn't even check if she is alright?!'

'The other boys said she started...'

'And you believed them?!'

Before the Principal could spit out another sentence that would push Namjoon to the edge another enraged man stormed the office. He didn't bother to stop. He threw himself through the desk, grabbed the Principal's jacket and shook him.

'Explain why my daughter came back home crying, bruised and with thorn clothes asshole or I will freaking kill you!'

'Sir!!' Principal tried to shake the man's hands off of himself. 'I will have to call the security!'

'Call them! Maybe they have something to say about my little girl being abused on the school grounds!!'

'The Interdependents are crazy!' Principal groaned in pain being thrown on the chair, when the man stepped back.

'I AM A FATHER! Not an Interdependent!' the man hissed and Namjoon could feel these words in his soul like his own.

The men looked at the Principal with disgust.

'I'm taking my kids from this school and all the financial support my company provides you with, together with them.'

The man fixed his coat and walked out of the office.

Namjoon looked at the Principal who got pale, probably because of the mention of finance and not the little girl situation, and straightened up.

'My financial support will be stopped as well asap. Taehyung won't be back to this school. I think it solves our discussion... ' he said and walked away from the office.

When get out of the school he met the same man from earlier standing on the stairs to the main entrance and smoking a cigarette nervously. He stopped next to him.

'Want some?' the man offered, stretching his hand with a pack of cigarettes.

'I don't smoke...' Namjoon shook his head.

'Me neither...' the man chuckled. He greedily took a drag. 'Sorry for disturbing your meeting...'

'No need to... I was here for the same purpose...'

The man looked at him, surprised. Then blinked.

'You are Kim Namjoon...'

'Yeah. Nice to meet you... How is your daughter?'

'She is shocked...' the man shook his head. 'Wait... How do you know about it?'

'My son told me...'

'Your kid is the one that helped her?!'

Namjoon nodded.

'Gahyeon told me about the boy that let her escape from the bullies... Thank you so much, man! I'm Min Jaehyun...'

Namjoon shook Jaehyun's hand.

'So your kid is going to this school too?' Jaehyun asked.

'Not anymore...'

'That's a good decision... I admire everything you are doing but... then something like this happened and I think we should have separate schools for kids where they could be safe...' Jaehyun sighed.

'I don't think we should put all the people in one basket...' Namjoon answered.

'When the basket is full of rotten apples you still can find the good apples there, but it won't change the ones that are already rotten...' Jaehyun said bitterly. 'My daughter is seven. My son is ten till my last breath. I will try to create a safe place for them...'

Namjoon hadn't answered. They were doing the same and wanting the same but have different points of view. And he realized he already heard the name of Min Jaehyun. He was well known in Daegu, really rich businessman.

'My son, Yoongi, was in his class when that happened... If your son wasn't there... I don't want to even think about it...' man sighed. He took out his businessman card and handed it to Namjoon. 'In case I could help with something, don't hesitate to call me...'

'We are moving to Seoul soon...'

'Oh, that's a shame. I hoped my kids would finally get some decent friends... But even with some business related matters just give me a call. I would gladly support your case...'

'Thank you. And Merry Christmas...'

'Yeah... I need to go shopping. My kids deserve some extra gifts...' Jaehyun smiled. 'Thank your son from me.'

'Yeah... I will buy him an extra gift too.' Namjoon chuckled.

'Oh... here...' the man fetched the gift card for one of the expensive shops. 'Buy him something from me too.'

'Oh no, there is no need for this...'

'Please... From the thankful father...'

Namjoon shook his head with a smile.

'Fine. He will be glad hearing your daughter is fine.'

'She is not. But she will be. I will take care of it...' The man  put out his cigarette in the snow. 'It was nice to meet you, Namjoon-ssi.'

'Same, Jaehyun-ssi. Maybe we will meet again.'

'I would really like that...' Jaehyun waved his hand and walked to his car.

Namjoon looked at the snow and sighed. He would be able to get some extra gifts before the shops closing. He called Hoseok.

'Do you have time now? Shopping... Yeah just the two of us... Yeah, something happened. I need a drink... I don't think Jin will be pissed if we go for a drink... No, not this time... Call it a Christmas Miracle...'

**2057**

Kims and Jeons moved to Seoul at the beginning of the year. First Hoseok and Minji with Jungkook at the end of January because Jungkook could easily be taken out from preschool. So they went ahead to check if everything in the houses was ready and arranged the rest.

Namjoon, Jin and Taehyung joined them in February. Namjoon took care of Taehyung's learning to help him finish the year and submit all needed assignments without going to school for anything but tests.

They were glad they managed to fix everything before Taehyung and Jungkook started destroying everything on their way because of the separation syndrome...

Namjoon got the post Seoul National University. Well, more like he chose this one when all Universities in the Capital started to fight over him...

Jin opened the private practice knowing it will be much easier to deal with all the schedules. And signed a contract with one of the hospitals for a limited number of hours.

Minji was just delegated by the company she worked for in Daegu to Seoul, but her work for MOI could be much more effective close to the most of the events.

Hoseok did not return to work at the school. He decided to concentrate on his dance studio, teaching different age groups and choregraphies for idols.

Because they couldn't live closer, unless they would live together, some things had to change...

So before school started in both households a schedule appeared for the boys. Their parents knew exactly that there was no way of keeping them apart so to prevent their injuries when accidently sneaking out, they came up with clear rules.

Taehyung was sleeping at Jeons' place on Tuesdays. And Jungkook was sleeping at Kims' place on Thursdays. Weekdays were family time. And on Mondays they have the Dance practice with Hoseok's children group (that Jimin and Yoohyeon gladly joined).

On Wednesdays Namjoon was giving them extra English and Japanese lessons or they had obligatory cleaning and cooking lessons with Jin.

Jin couldn't let their childrens not be independent. The basics were the basics. They had to know how to take care of themselves and the house!

On Fridays Minji was teaching them the combination of aikido, self defense, calenistics and tai chi, usually making it a lot of fun for kids. They were training their moves not even knowing one day the moves will become as natural for them as breathing.

It was easy to keep the kids in place like that. They've studied hard and behaved well, so as not to lose their privileges.

The worst punishment that could appear in their lives, in boys' minds, was "No Jungkook! or "No Taehyung! for a day!!".

In March kids went to their new school. Jungkook started his first grade and Taehyung his 3rd.

Jimin was more than delighted to have them in his school. Behaving like the hyung he was and acting like the King of the Elementary School (again - like he was), took care of them and helped his friends get used to the typical Capital school.

Taehyung joined the class with Jimin and Jungkook started his first class together with little Kim Yoohyeon.

Neither them, nor their parents could have any idea at this point of their life that the four of them will be the fundament of the strongest Interdependants Team in history, known as the Red String.

**September 2058**

Namjoon was enjoying his drink and celebration of his birthday. He just came back from Dublin. There were a lot of people who were pestering him about making it an official banquet to support their cause but he refused. After being abroad for two weeks he just wanted to be with his family and friends. So Chanyeol, Baekhyun, Kai and Jennie joined him, Jin, Hoseok and Minji in Kims' house with their children.

Chanyeol brought his guitar and 8 year old Jungkook took great interest in it, so he was sitting next to him until Chanyeol handed him the instrument and started to show him how to play.

Namjoon looked at Taehyung who was goofing around with Jimin and Yoohyeon, but his eyes more than frequently were traveling to his sweetheart. Even being only ten year old, Taehyung was extremely possessive over Jungkook. The only people allowed next to him, when he wasn't around were their parents, his sassy friend - Jimin and cute Yoohyeon who he treated like a younger sister.

It was funny how from the very beginning neither him nor Jin weren't calling Jungkook in their heads "Taehyung's friend" but "Taehyung's sweetheart". They simply knew they were so much more...

Namjoon's eyes traveled to the mark on his son's palm and he sighed heavily. With the knowledge he gained recently, Namjoon was at the same thrilled and terrified.

His sudden change of mood made Hoseok look at him.

'What's up?'

Namjoon looked around at Jin and Minji who were immersed in the conversation with Baekyun and mumbled quietly:

'Do you have a minute?'

'Now you are scaring me...' Hoseok frowned.

Namjoon put his glass on the table, saying:

'Come with me...'

When Hoseok closed the doors to Namjoon's office after himself, he asked:

'What's going on, Joon?'

Namjoon without a word took a little key from the drawer of his desk and went to the closed library. Hoseok was thinking why would he close his books, but then Namjoon moved some of them and fetched something covered in linen from behind them. He carefully unwrapped it and placed the old book on the desk.

Hoseok came closer and looked at it. It was a really old book. Its covers were made out of leather and the pages were moving freely, torn out from years.

'Genesis?' Hoseok read the title.

'Have you ever read it?' Namjoon asked seriously.

'When I was a kid, yeah... My parents forced me.'

Namjoon shook his head.

'That was just a book for kids. Made out of this one. This is the original. One and unique copy.'

'Where did you get it?'

'I stole it...'

'YOU STOLE IT?!' Hoseok couldn't help but laugh imagining Namjoon stealing anything. 'Why the hell would you steal an old book?' he asked amused.

'To protect the children...'

All the laughter and amusement disappeared from Hoseok's face at once.

All the laughter and amusement disappeared from Hoseok's face at once.

'What...?' he gulped, suddenly tensed.

'Hobi...Their mark... It's not the standard mark...'

'What? How do you know that? Every pair is unique...'

'There is one pair that is not unique...'

Namjoon gently moved the pages of the book until it reached an old drawing in the middle. The drawing was faded and indistinct, but there was no denying that it unnaturally resembled the marks on the boys' bodies.

Hoseok gulped and moved a few pages.

'Do you know what is written here? It's some old language...'

'It's gaelic... I had a hard time translating it... There is nothing new written here. Most of it we know from children's books about the beginnings of *Eadar-eisimeileach*. It's the drawings that make me shiver...'

There was a figure standing in some kind of lake, surrounded by a dark aura and light. Maybe the age of the drawing made it that way but Hoseok could almost see the red flames in the figure's eyes.

'Check the next one...' Namjoon said and Hoseok, with slightly trembling fingers, turned the page.

This time the icon showed four scenes with two people. One was still standing in the water, the second one was on the shore, reaching its hand to the other's chest.

The next one showed the Holder pulling out an enormous sword from the other's chest. But it looked almost gentle... as if he was kissing it with his hand.

In the third picture two figures were shown, standing on the pile of bodies. One still with a sword in its hand. The second one was surrounded by the strings and waves of power.

The forth picture showed them embraced by the lake under the starry sky.

Namjoon pointed at the words above the pictures.

Hoseok's heart started to race when he noticed the marks that the words were decorated with. The same mark he could see on his son's chest from when he was born.

'What does that mean?' he asked, raising his worried eyes at Namjoon.

'*Leannanan* means *Lovers*.'

Hoseok felt a relief floating on him.

'We knew they will be one sooner or later, Joonie...' he said, giggling nervously.

But Namjoon was still serious. He shook his head.

'Hoseok... do something for me... read the children's book...'

'What? Why?'

'To tell me I'm wrong... Because if I'm right... We are in a deep shit...'

Hoseok walked to Jungkook's room to whis him and Tae goodnight. It was the weekend, but Tae was here mainly because Minji and Hoseok planned a night for Namjin, as a gift for Namjoon. He expected to find the boys in bed, but it was empty. Instead he saw blankets on the floors and stretched between the furniture, covering almost half of the room.

He bent and peaked under the blankets to see the bed light lightened up there and a lot of pillows boys probably stole from the other rooms.

'Excuse me... can I enter your fort?'

Jungkook and Taehyung looked at each other and nodded.

'I allow.' Taehyung said kindly.

'But not without the book!' Jungkook said. 'You need to read us story, if you want to enter the fort!'

'Whoa... so demanding...' Hoseok shook his head, playing hurt. 'My own son...'

'Please, dad!' Jungkook hugged the pillow and Taehyung sat behind him to make room for Hoseok.

Hobi moved to the shelf with books and wanted to pick up a random one when his hand stopped and slowly moved to the children's book with legends.

It was just legends...

Right?

He took the book and sat on the floor to look at the children.

'Oh I think I should stay here for the sake of your fort...' he said amused, when the blankets dangerously sunk.

'Here...' Jungkook crawled to him and handed him a pillow, before he went back to Taehyung.

They covered themselves with a duvet and looked impatiently at Hoseok, who took the pillow and placed it behind his back before leaning on the bed. He opened one of the legends he was looking for and started to read:

*'The Island of Erv, has earned its name, because of cliffs as high as mountains and fresh waters blue as the sky. People lived peacefully there, surrounded by nature and keeping it in balance. Treating the Earth with love, that it's deserved for giving them fruits and grain.*

*It was a happy Island with happy People. Everyone lived in harmony, far away from the jealousy, threasons, war. There was no money, no weapons on the island. People were exchanging goods they could make by themselves.*

*The reason for their peaceful life was that they believed they all were connected by the Red String of Fate. The destiny that was leading them to their soulmates. They didn't need to search or check who is right and who is wrong for them, so there wasn't a need for conflicts that are often caused by someone's selfish feelings. There were no heartbreaks, nor separations caused by family matters, because in the end nobody could stand against Fate.*

*In one of the villages, by the sea shore, a 17 year old boy named Jaryn lived with his parents and 5 sisters. He was the oldest child so he often helped his mother and father in the field or took care of his little sisters. But he loved the rare moments of freedom when he could just run to the forests and enjoy the sound of birds and wind.*

*One time, when he and his father went to the market to exchange grown vegetables for some meat, Jaryn noticed the old woman, who tripped and ran to help her. It was a really old lady. Her head was covered with a scarf and she was breathing heavily as if she was fighting for every breath. She looked at Jaryn and whispered:*

*'The Lake of Emerich... It holds... a great power...Red Thread in the Water...'*

*Jaryn was surprised. Everybody knew about the Lake of Emerich. It was hidden deep in the forest but a lot of villagers were visiting it in the summer to swim. And nobody ever was harmed there.*

*'You need water...' he said, looking around for someone who could help him, but the old*

*lady grabbed his shirt and repeated:*

*'Red Thread in the Water!'*

*Jaryn got a bit scared of the old woman, but before he could calm her down, she passed away as if she was falling asleep...*

*Soon after, Jaryn forgot about this, too busy with the harvest and all his duties. Just sometimes when he was roaming around the forest his feet were leading him by the dark waters of the lake.*

*The years were passing by and the Island was peaceful as always, but one night a ship from the outside world had crashed off the cliffs of Erv, during the storm.*

*The Kindhearted Islanders helped the survivors heal and when they did they built the new ship for them so they could sail back home.*

*23 year old Jaryn was beautiful as the full moon with the starlight fading away in front of his beauty. His skin was as fair as the moonlight and his smile was making everyone around him happy. On the night of Samhain - the celebration which Islanders held dear, because they believed the souls can hear each other even being far away - Jaryn looked at the sunset and prayed to Fate to send his soulmate to him soon.*

*And Fate granted his wish...*

*Taeghan came to the village to learn from local carpenters how they build boats. He was looking for a place to stay for the night, but there was no place at the local tavern, but the kind landlady told him to ask in the village if someone had a free bed.*

*'You can sleep in the barn... It's warm there and we don't need anything in return...' he heard a cheerful voice that sounded like a little bells. 'I'm Jaryn...'*

*Taeghan turned around to see the most beautiful man he had ever seen and Jaryn smiled at him.*

*Taeghan was too handsome in such a sinful way, even the mated villagers wanted to have him around, just to look at him some more.*

*'You can take my room!' one of the villagers said eagerly.*

*'I have one free too...!' the other offered.*

*But Taeghan didn't hear them. The barn sounds like a Palace to him at this moment, when he heard Jaryn's giggles and he saw how he shook his head amused by the people' behavior.*

*'I'm Taeghan. I will gladly take your offer...' he said, stretching his hand.*

*'Just don't make my sisters fall for you...' Jaryn grinned and shook his hand.*

*The moment their hands touched their smiles disappeared and their eyes widened. They felt the pulling, the red thread deep inside their hearts, connecting them to each other. It was the feeling the elders were talking about. The recognition that shook his beings, being the gentle caress at the same time.*

*They couldn't take their eyes off of each other.*

*'So you are stealing this handsome guy Jeryn?' The landlady called the young man.*

*'It seems he is mine, Kate, so yeah... I will keep him...' he giggled and he ran out of the tavern, pulling Taeghan after himself.*

*Taeghan and Jeryn found each other on the ordinary day and became best friends and a couple soon after.*

*On one of the summer nights under the moonlight, by the lake Taeghan was singing to Jeryn one of the ballads he wrote for him. The beautiful words made Jeryn feel happy and loved.*

*They went into the dark waters of the Emerich lake to swear eternal love to each other and pray to Fate to never separate them...'*

Yeah, riiiiight... Hoseok thought ironically. They were P.R.A.Y.I.N.G. He knew exactly what they were doing in the night, in the lake after this golden-tongued bastard Taeghan seduced Jeryn with his sweet words... Maybe they did something on their knees but it wasn't praying for sure...

Well it was the book for children afterall...

Hoseok peeked at the boys who were already dozing off and continued reading.

*Jeryn and Taeghan got married and had a small house in the forest. Jeryn was still working on his family farm, while Taegan became a carpenter, building beautiful boats.*

*But the Islanders' life was disturbed by the sudden catastrophe. The people they once helped, when their ship crashed on their shore, came back with an army, jealous of the beautiful people that were living on the Island and fertile land they had, the enemies*

*stormed the once peaceful place.*

*They were merciless like beasts, killing men, raping and abusing women, burning village after village.*

*Jeryn and Taeghan desperately tried to reach Jeryn's family, but when they came to the farm it was burnt to the ground. His whole family was killed. Seeing his youngest sister's body torn apart Jeryn went into despair.*

Hoseok could feel that the description has been toned down to be suitable for children. Because he could imagine the cruelty the attackers treated the women, men and children with.

*The Islandars didn't have weapons. They weren't using swords or spears. They were simple people. Taeghan, hearing the enemies approaching, took his husband into his arms and started to run to hide in the forest. They reached Emerich Lake which was surrounded by trees and high rocks. Jeryn, distraught, slipped from the rock and fell to the dark, cold water, hearing Taeghan screaming his name.*

*The last thing he saw was the fire reflexes between the trees. The air left his lungs, when he desperately tried to swim above the water but the November waters were ice cold and his limbs became numb.*

*He was fighting, screaming in his mind that he won't die until he will avenge his family and save the Island.*

*Taeghan jumped after Jeryn to the water, but at the moment his body touched the lake surface the lake exploded, showering everything with the sparking in moonlight water. He was thrown by the unknown power on the shore, screaming the one beloved name...*

*When suddenly...*

*... the water stopped in the air and started gently getting back to the lake. He stood up looking at the suddenly too peaceful surface, that wasn't moved even by the strongest blow of the wind.*

*He fell on his knees thinking his husband was lost. When he noticed the red thread wrapped around his little finger. He pulled it...*

*It was leading to the water.*

*He pulled more of it. The lake surface wrinkled as if the light pulling of the thread*

*stirred it. Taeghan pulled once more and the head appeared above the lake surface.*

*Jeryn was walking to him slowly, he was surrounded by the dark, demonic aura. His eyes were red. He looked like a devil. And on his naked chest a dark mark was visible.*

*But when he reached the shore and stood in front of Taeghan, he was recognized.*

*'I am the weapon... Use me...' he said, taking Taeghan's hand, pressing to his own chest. At that one moment Taeghan felt his hand burning and the mark was carved on his hand.*

*His hand reached inside Jeryn's soul and he grabbed the sword as black as the aura around Jeryn. And as light as the light beaming from his soul.*

*Taeghan felt the enormous power coming from the sword and Jeryn and his eyes became black as well.*

*Jeryn spread his power and at once all enemies in the forest were defeated. He and Teaghan flew through the whole Island without rest for days, after there was no one left from the abusers.*

*After that Taeghan and Jeryn shared the secret about the Emerich Lake to other Islanders so not even one of them would ever be defenseless.*

*This is the story of the first Sealer and the first Holder, known as the Lovers...*

Hoseok closed the book.

Taehyung and Jungkook were already deep in their sleep.

He actually did not remember this story from his childhood. The "Genesis" was boring for children. But he remembered the other stories...

The stories that mentioned "The Lovers" in different times. As if they were appearing when the *Eadar-eisimeileach* were in danger... dealing with wars all over the world in all the different centuries.

Jeryn - Taeghan

Jungkook - Taehyung

Interdependants had this one great flaw - they didn't believe in coincidence...

This thought made him gulp.

It's a legend...

But every legend has the seed of truth...

Namjoon read the original story and he was terrified... and as much as Hoseok wanted he couldn't deny that Namjoon's instincts were whispering the same thing as his.

Hoseok threw his head backwards, looking at the ceiling and his glance fell on Minji, who was leaning on the doorframe with her arms crossed over her chest. She was pale and Hoseok knew it was his own nerves effect, rubbing on her. The story shook him more than he wanted to admit.

'Hope...' she said quietly, using his nickname from Uni. It was his secret code name. Almost every Interdependent had one. He didn't hear it for years...

Minji looked at the book in his hands, at his confused eyes.

'Hope... what's going on?'

On the next night when the children were asleep, four parents burnt the pages with drawings that had hundreds of years, for their children's safety.

—----------—----------—----------
—----------

Hellooooo....

I'm in my writing trance so here is another chapter for you.

And yeah maybe it doesn't feel like it with the baby Taekook cutness but in fact this is an action book. Just wanted to remind you a bit about it ...

And yeah I wrote a whole legend for you xD.

In Gaelic/Celtic language:
Taeghan means Little Poet
Jeryn means A cry of joy
Emerich means something with great power.

It is 4 a.m. and I have work at 8 a.m. so I will check the mistakes later.

Hope you enjoyed it!

BlairWitch🤍

## Chapter 6: Min's Manifest

🎶Music tip: *Inner child* by BTS V🎶

**May 2059**

'I won again!' a cheerful scream was heard in Park's house.

'Yaaa! What a disrespect!' Jimin made a bitter face. 'How many times I have to tell you that I'm your hyung, Kook!?'

'Oh... I'm sorry...' Jungkook said with a mischievous smile. 'I won again, HYUNG!'

'Tae! Change with this brat! If I won't win at least once I will throw hands...' Jimin turned his head to Taehyung who was lying on his belly on his bed.

'Fine... I will play. But sorry to break it to you... but you won't win this time either...' Taehyung slid off the bed.

'Oh? And why is that?'

Taehyung sat behind Jungkook on the floor and took the pad from his hands, embracing him in the process. Jungkook shuffled a bit, so Tae would have a clear view on the screen.

'Because me and Kookie are always in one team, Chim...' he explained with a smug smile.

11 year old Jimin pretended to throw up.

'If that's so?... Then I will beat up both of your asses.' Jimin said with determination, squinting his eyes, fixing the settings on his account.

But he smiled internally, peeking at his friends. Since he met them three years ago they all have changed a bit. Jungkook wasn't so shy anymore. Around people he knew he was becoming a little demanding, possessive, protective and talkative devil. He tended to get shy and quiet around new people, but in fact he wasn't. Especially in their little circle of friends.

First of all being most of the time with older boys like Jimin and Taehyung and their colleagues from school he desperately tried to behave like them and do things that they were doing. Putting in a lot of effort he was the youngest boy who was in their elementary school basketball team with Taehyung and Jimin. He was trained by Minji in aikido just like Taehyung and Jimin, but he was practicing on his own whenever he had a time between doing homeworks. And their dancing group, managed by Hoseok, won the tournament last year.

He was a golden child, yeah, but in fact the effort he was putting in everything he touched was much greater then the natural talent he had.

Second of all, he was in one class with Kim Yoohyeon. And he had this brother-like instinct for her like all three of them. But it was Jungkook who was mainly in school with her so he was protecting his sister whenever he felt something was not good for her.

Taehyung's change wasn't so visible. He was still a cheerful social butterfly, overly protective of everyone - especially his Koo. But Jimin's influence made him a bit more reckless, so he wasn't so careful about everything anymore and he let his best friend pull him into troubles a lot.

If Jimin was a hurricane creating shenanigans on the spot, Taehyung was the side of the coin who was making sure that their mischief wouldn't end up in disaster...

He had too much to lose. The sacred rule 'No Jungkook for a day' was still the best collar his parents could give him. So he could enjoy being an 11 year old trouble maker, being at the same time a guardian angel.

Jimin on the other hand was a leader of their little gang. Raised in the big city from the very beginning he had a... flexible... way of considering what he should and what he shouldn't do.

In fact Taehyung was the only one who could tame him, when he was coming up with another crazy idea like: "We should jump to the river!", "We should freed the puppies from the animal shelter because they should be free!'; "We should have a pet duck!'; "Kookie climb on this three I want an apple!", "What will happen if we throw mentos to pepsi?'.

Maybe Jimin was a brat most of the time, but at the same time he was the one that was always making sure they had their lunch, they had water during their practices and sent a message to Taehyung if he had done all homeworks for the next day or did he remember about the test.

Because even being a troublemaker he was the Class President with the highest grades in school.

And when it was coming to Yoohyeon he was extremely protective. He knew her from when she was a toddler and if Yoohyeon had someone she could call a brother - it was Jimin. And his protectiveness over the girl was what was influencing Jungkook too.

But there were some things that didn't change.

Jimin remembered the moment they played for the first time. And Taehyung was

sitting just like now with Jungkook, leaning on his chest, sitting comfortably between his legs. And Jimin's clever mind knew that if he would say the magical word "kiss" his best friend's face would change into a beautiful cherry color, just like 3 years ago. Sometimes he randomly was saying things like that to see the panic expression on Taehyung's face. Taehyung was sooooo innocent sometimes... And Jimin being a total opposite of him in this matter couldn't help but tease him.

It's not like they were old enough to do these things and Jimin knew that he would meet with the spanking of a lifetime if he would trick them into something like that and his fathers would get to know about this later...

And Baekhyun's slipper was something he was afraid of the most.

But Taehyung's reactions were just so amusing he couldn't help himself. And when Kookie was asking "Why is your face so red, Tae?' made it all even better.

Because as much as Taehyung was glad Jungkook was joining them with all their activities, troubles and shenanigans, he was sternly protecting his innocence from Jimin's naughty influence.

Jimin let out an angry whine, and threw himself on the ground, when he lost again.

'Unbelievable!!!' he said fake crying.

Yoohyeon walked to the room with the trace of snacks she prepared with Baekhyun in the kitchen.

Jimin raised his eyes at her, rolled to his belly and crawled to her feet.

'Yoohyeonie... Taekook are bullying me...' he whined, hugging her ankles dramatically.

'You lost again, oppa?' she said, shaking her head, regretfully.

'Oh, no...' Jungkook whispered. 'She is here...'

Yoohyeon raised her eyebrow.

'You made my oppa lose his precious points... I will avenge him...' she announced, squinting her eyes.

She put the trace on the floor next to Jimin, who instantly, blindly reached his hand to the popcorn bowl and stuffed his mouth.

'I am sending the deputy to kick your asses...' he said, between chewing. 'Destroy them, sis!'

Yoohyeon sat on the floor and took abandoned by Jimin pad. With a focused face she changed every setting Jimin did.

Jungkook looked at her with a pout.

'Have mercy...' he pleaded and she snorted in response.

'Don't give up, Koo! We got it!' Taehyung said encouragingly.

'No we don't... She will pass through us like a plague and leave us bleeding to death...' he said dramatically.

Kim Yoohyeon was the master of the games. She was born with a pad in her hands. And it wasn't an overstatement because Kim Kai, her father, was a game designer. She could use the pad earlier than she could use the spoon.

'Unless...' Jungkook frowned, thinking about something and he turned his head to whisper something to Taehyung's ear.

'Oh, that's good...' Taehyung nodded and changed some settings.

Yoohyeon smirked under her nose.

'Dream on...' she mumbled and pressed start.

'LEFT! GO LEFT, TAE!!' Jungkook was screaming.

'KICK HIM, YOO! KICK HIM!' Jimin was cheering as loud and as excitedly as Jungkook.

'What on earth!' Chanyeol stormed the room. 'Do you have any idea what hour it is?!'

'Not now appa! She is winning, she is winning!' Jimin jumped on his feet standing behind Yoohyeon.

'One day I will sew your mouth shut, son...' Chanyeol squinted his eyes.

Jimin smiled at him with a thousand volts smile, that resembled Bakhyun's smile and Chanyeol was week for it.

'You would miss my angelic voice appa...'

Chanyeol rolled his eyes at the same time Taehyung and Jungkook let out a loud whine full of regret.

'Ha!' Yoohyeon looked at them with a self-satisfied smile. 'To the next time, losers...' she bowed ironically.

'It's 10 p.m. kids. Your mom came to pick you up, Yoohyeonie...'

'Ok, uncle!' she said obediently as a good girl she was, as if she didn't a minute ago mercilessly made Taehyung and Jungkook regret their lives decisions...

'Are we taking bikes to school on Monday?' Jungkook asked.

'Yeah' Jimin confirmed and looked at Yoohyeon. 'Be careful on your way here...'

'I live 5 minutes from here... I don't think the aliens will kidnap me, oppa...' she giggled.

'Jimin is right, be careful Yoo...' Taehyung said.

Yoohyeon and Jungkook looked at each other knowingly. The older ones were always so protective...

Chanyeol ruffled her hair and glared at the boys.

'You have 10 minutes to brush your teeth and change into your pajamas. I will check. If you won't be in bed - no sleepovers for a year...' he threatened and embraced Yoohyeon with his shoulder to walk her to Jennie.

It was a good motivation for the boys, so they all ran at the same time to the bathroom and washed their teeth together, fighting over the space over the sink.

When they came back to Jimin's room they were in their sleepovers already. Taehyung looked at the thin shirt with short sleeves Jungkook was wearing. He was shaking slightly. The nights weren't that warm yet.

He sighed and walked to the younger. He took off his hoodie and pulled it through Jungkook's head.

'Sleep in it...' he said.

'But...'

'No but, Koo... You will catch a cold. We are sleeping on the floor.'

'What if you catch a cold?' Jungkook frowned, worried.

'I won't. I will be in the middle...' Taehyung calmed him down.

They couldn't possibly sleep together in Jimin's single bed, so they always slept on the floor during sleepovers at Parks' place. They spread the blankets and duvets on the floor, making it soft, threw all the pillows there and Jimin brought three sleeping bags

They laid down on their improvised bed with Taehyung in the middle.

Chanyeol peeked inside.

'I'm turning off the light. No talking...' he said sternly.

'You will need to sew my mouth in the end then, appa...' Jimin said.

'You are testing my patience today, Chim.'

'I saved and hid your favorite shirt, before dad threw it to the rags... And this is how you return the favor? ' Jimin pouted cleverly, playing hurt.

'You mean my old, limited edition League of Legends shirt?' Chanyeol gasped.

'That is exactly the shirt I'm talking about...' Jimin confirmed.

Chanyeol was battling inside himself between wanting to save his favorite shirt that was older than Jimin and his parental instinct. He knew that if Baekhyun would find that shirt, next time he would see it it would be used as a rag to clean the floor...

'One hour.' he said finally, turned off the light and closed the door.

In the darkness of the room three boys were looking at the black ceiling, until Jimin finally said, satisfied:

'I knew he wouldn't sacrifice that old rag...'

All three started to giggle and soon after it changed into a loud laughter, they tried to muffle. Jungkook hid his face in Taehyung's shoulder, and Taehyung was pressing both of his hands to his mouth, while Jimin was biting his palm to not let out a sound.

Bluemold walked to them and laid between Taehyung and Jimin purring loudly.

Exhausted by laughter Jungkook was fast asleep pressed to Taehyung's shoulder. Taehyung checked if he was covered properly and fixed his hoodie.

Jimin turned on the side to look at Taehyung's profile. He caressed the fur of the cat.

'How is it? Knowing your soulmate?' he whispered.

'I don't know how it is not knowing him, so... I don't know...' Taehyung whispered back.

'Are all Holders as protective over their Sealers as you?'

Jimin was curious. He was a Sealer. He was wondering if his soulmate was somewhere out there and if he would be like Taehyung. Yoohyeon was a Sealer as well and she didn't meet her soulmate either. So he couldn't ask her. And he knew his father, Jin and Minji were Holders too but they were married adults. He didn't want to ask them...

Taehyung was thinking about how to answer.

'I don't think only the Holders are protective... I know Jungkook is too. He is just younger so... I guess it's a bit of that too...'

'I wonder when I will meet my soulmate. I'm sure she or he is amazing!' Jimin said, smiling widely.

'I bet he or she is a savage badass...' Taehyung giggled.

'Whoaa?! Why?!' Jimin felt offended over his unknown mate.

'Because only a savage badass wouldn't be afraid to unseal the soul of Satan Mochi...' he said calmly.

'Yah! You pabo!' Jimin hit his shoulder and Bluemold hissed, protesting against disturbing his sleep.

Jimin pouted and fell silent. It was not like him and Taehyung felt a bit uneasy now thinking he made him sad.

'Chim... I was joking... I'm sure it will be a great person...'

'Mhmm... I just hope I don't meet them when I am 40 and ugly...'

'You are an *Eadar-eisimeileach,* even when you will be 40, you will look like 20.'

'Oh, that's true... I will still be fu... freaking beautiful.' Jimin nodded to himself satisfied and hid his face inside Bluemold's furr. 'Sometimes... I have dreams about a boy...' he whispered. 'Do you think it can be him?'

'The bluemold haired guy?'

'Mhm...'

'Maybe. I too have dreams...'

'About Kookie?'

'Yes and no. More like... I know it's him, but he doesn't look like him...'

'That doesn't make sense, bro...'

Taehyung didn't know how to explain it. His dreams were equally pleasant and unpleasant. Sometimes he was just seeing a glimpse of a moment, like holding hands or lips with a bunny smile on it. And sometimes it was nightmares like a movie with words and scenes.

Thinking about it, his eyelids become heavy.

'Even if Koo doesn't look like Koo... I know it's him...' he mumbled. 'Or more like... my soul knows his soul.'

Jimin half asleep nodded, agreeing with him, even if he didn't really understand that. He let a dream embrace him, to meet a bluemold haired boy with a gummy smile.

**January 2060**

It was a cold afternoon when to Kims house Kai and Jennie stormed through the front door.

'Where is Namjoon?' Kai asked, when Jin opened the door for them.

'Whaaaa? Umm... in his office?'

'Have you seen the news?!' Jennie asked running to tv in the living room.

Namjoon walked out of his office lured out by the loud noises.

'Did you know about that?' Kai asked.

'About what?' Namjoon asked, not understanding.

Jennie turned up the volume at the news station.

'*Shocking news from the south of the country*' the presenter announced. '*Interdependents are dividing the Korean society, by insinuating that they are attacked by common people without any reason.'*

'What?' Namjoon's eyes widened.

'*The Organization from Deagu known as 3EO, led by the powerful Mins family, organized the summit which was shocking for everyone. That's what one of their leaders, Min Jaehyun, said during the meeting...*'

Standing on the podium in black suit, the man that Namjoon once met, raised his hand to calm down the applauding crowd.

'*Few years ago I believed that we can all live in harmony as we lived for thousands of years before, to help the world, we uncovered ourselves. We, Interdependents, were always here, living between ordinary people, without their knowledge. But we wanted to help. We wanted to support them. Safe them...*'

The crowd started to nod their heads in agreement, before the heavy statement left Jaehyun's mouth:

'*It was our mistake*.'

'FUCK!' Namjoon cursed.

*'We offered them a helping hand and they repaid us with distrust... hate... demands. We tried to show them our good side. Many of the best of us explained, pleaded, taught them countless times about us, trying to prevent misunderstandings...'*

'He is talking about you...' Jin said to Namjoon.

*'But did they listen?... No... Did they start to look at us at something more than just the marks on our palms and chests?... No... Did they treat us equally?... No... Did they protect our children as they protect theirs?... The answer for us is always a "NO".'*

'He is talking in a way that I can't even disagree with him...' Kai sighed heavily.

'He is talking about US and THEM. He already drew a thick line here... And an individual's sense of belonging is one of the elements that create society. We can identify with many ethnic groups and at the same time be part of a larger whole, but talking about them and us... is dangerous. It creates in us an image that leads to racism, xenophobia, feelings of superiority and incomprehension.... It's a damage that will be hard to fix...' Namjoon said with racing thoughts.

'It's dangerous because we all have thoughts like that... In moments of frustration

and grief we all once thought like that.' Jin admitted. 'You know he will get a lot of Interdependents on his side...'

'And he will use our protective instincts, using the children...' Namjoon said heavily, hearing Jaehyun's next words.

'*When my daughter was 7 year old, she didn't have any power, she still doesn't have it, because she is still a child without her soulmate. She is just an ordinary little girl. But she was attacked. Called a witch and abused at the place that should protect her. At school. And what did school do? Nothing. If another Interdependent child wasn't there at that time she would get hurt more! At the place we all are sending our children, convinced that they are safe there!*'

Jaehyun's voice got angry and powerful.

'*Imagine how shocked I was, knowing how many cases like that happened in a span of the last three years! I talked with parents. I talked with teenagers. I talked with young people at Universities! In each elementary school there are no more than 2-3 Interdependent children. At some high schools the same age soulmates are separated in different classes by school rules, because they are considered a threat! In other schools and children sports organizations and at some Universities the ordinary children have the priority in the selections! How many times do we need to ask them to treat us equally?!*'

Namjoon closed his eyes, trying to hold his emotions.

'*My family found a 3EO - Eadar-eisimeileach Equality Organization - with one aim. To create a safe future for our children. A future when they can be treated EQUALLY!*'

The crowd in the hall stood up, clapping loudly.

'*And our first step will be to create a safe place where they will be able to study and spend their childhood safely, without being insulted and attacked. 3EO, declare the establishment of a school which only the children of the Interdependents will be able to attend. Let my beautiful wife, Min Handong, The Headmaster of the school, explain the details to you...*'

On the podium an elegant lady stood next to Jaehyun. She was assisted by the 14 year old boy with blue hair and an 11 year old red haired girl.

'What a show...' Jin shook his head, looking at the boy, who was visibly uncomfortable in a suit and was sticking protectively to his sister.

'*Our school will provide children education from preschool to high school. Every employee will be an Interdependent. We have already signed the contracts with the government about the destinations and we are starting to prepare the direct promotions*

*to selected Universities.*' Handong said, looking at the papers. '*The school program won't be different from the national education program... Our children won't have different grades or won't be taught different subjects. Our sole purpose is to provide them with equal education in a safe environment. Nothing less, nothing more. We are taking under consideration allowing ordinary children to enter the school after getting the letters of recommendation from Interdependents families. We don't try to separate our children from society. Everybody will be welcomed as long as they will honour our principles and treat us equally...*'

'And then what?' Namjoon asked bitterly. 'They will enter society after high school and meet with even greater lack of understanding... They are trying to treat the gunshot with the patch...'

'Most of the Interdependents won't look at the long run...' Jennie shook her head. 'If someone would offer you a private school where your child is safe, has accepting friends and high quality teaching, you won't look at the prospect of the next 12 years...'

The sound of the phone was heard in the house.

Jin looked at Namjoon.

'It's starting...'

'Yeah...' he said tiredly.

'I will make you a coffee...' Jin said gently and looked at Kai and Jennie. 'Wants some?'

Jennie shook her head.

'Thanks, but no. We will take Yoohyeonie from Jeons and try to explain what is happening to her... I think they finished their dance practice already.'

Jin felt the vibration of his phone, took it out and saw a message from Minji.

**Minji: Pack Taehyung's things for tomorrow. Hoseok will take the boys to Chanbeak for the night. We need to talk...**

**Jin: You saw the news?**

**Minji: Yeah, but that's not all. I will be there in two hours. How is Joonie?**

**Jin: Devastated but trying to hide it.**

**Minji: I will buy food on my way...**

**Jin: Don't bother. I need to calm myself...**
**I**

**feel like chopping, mashing and roasting something...**

Kai and Jennie bid goodbye and at that moment sweaty Taehyung ran to the house.

'Dad can I really sleep at Jimin's today?' It was a huge case... The boys weren't allowed to have sleepovers in the middle of the week.

'How many times did I tell you to put on the hat and jacket after practice?' Jin said sternly.

'Oh... I forgot...' Taehyung looked at himself in only a sweater. 'So can I?'

'Yeah. But do your homework with Jimin and check on Kook's too. And behave! I will pack your clothes and toiletries.'

'I can do that, dad... Don't worry...' Taehyung smiled widely and moved to the stairs direction.

Jin looked at his back.

'Taehyung...' he called him quietly.

'Yeah?' Taehyung turned to him.

Jin walked to him and hugged him tightly.

'I love you...' he said, hiding his face in Taehyung's hair.

Taehyung blushed. He was 12 now. He was torn between embarrassment and a warm feeling created by his fathers broad, warm shoulders.

'Love you too, dad...' he mumbled shyly. But he was an intelligent and smart kid. He sometimes noticed too much. 'Something happened?'

'No...' Jin shook his head, inhaling the innocent smell of Taehyung's shampoo. He kissed his head and patted his back. 'Go, Hobi will drive you to Parks.'

'Okay!'

Jin took a deep breath to calm himself and went to the kitchen to chop, mash and roast.

Hoseok parked next to Parks' house.

'Thanks uncle!' Jimin said cheerfully. 'The practice was dope today!'

'That's great! See you next time, ChimChim!' Hoseok answered cheerfully as well. He got out of the car and looked at Jungkook, who was taking out his bag.

Jungkook hugged him, embracing his waist.

'Sleep well, dad!' he said, smiling at him.

'You too, little one...' Hoseok squeezed him tightly, until Jungkook started to groan painfully.

'That was a bear hug!' he giggled.

'It for sure was. You didn't forget your PE shoes?'

'Nope. I have them.'

'Good boy...'

Taehyung standing next to them smiled lightly, when Jungkook went to Jimin who was waiting next to the gate. Hoseok looked at Taehyung and ruffled his hair.

'Want a bear hug too?'

'Sure!'

Hoseok hugged him hard, lifting him above the ground in the process.

When Taehyung was on the ground again he looked at Hoseok attentively.

'Somethings wrong, uncle?'

'No...' Hobi smiled and kissed his forehead lightly.

Taehyung nodded and slowly went to Jungkook and Jimin, looking at the ground thoughtfully. Because he could feel that the 'no' Hoseok and Jin told him, strangely sounded like 'yes'.

Hoseok walked to Jin's kitchen and instantly helped him to chop vegetables.

'Have you seen it already?'

'I checked the internet after dropping the boys... Everywhere there are news about "Min's Manifest".

'Min's Manifest? That's how they call it?' Jin snorted. 'They didn't consider that they are putting the children that won't go to that.. school... in danger.'

'Oh... I think they did.' Hoseok said darkly. 'People will panic thinking like that and will try to put their children in Min's school no matter the costs.'

'Minji said something?'

'No. She just said she has to show us something.'

'Perfect...' Jin said bitterly. 'I just need more drama now...'

'Namjoon is in his office?'

'Yeah. The phone went crazy an hour ago... He hasn't come out since.'

'It will be a hard time for him...'

'It will be a hard time for all of us...' Jin sighed.

Namjoon finished another call with his colleagues from the International Council of Interdependents and looked at his desk. He didn't know what to do...

6 years of his work to portray the Interdependands as equal to ordinary people was threw to the garbage in the span of an hour.

He looked at the photo in the frame that was standing on his desk, that Chanyeol took of him, Jin, Minji, Hoseok, Taehyung and Jungkook when they moved to Seoul. They were happily embracing each other in front of their new houses. Taehyung and Jungkook were looking at each other smiling widely. He was

looking at their children's faces.

It was so normal to him... There was no "his son" and "Hoseok's son" there was always "their children". And he knew Jin, Minji and Hoseok had the same way of thinking.

Maybe it was so simple for them because they were dealing from the begining with one soul in two bodies...

And now... their peaceful life was shadowed by anxiety.

He hesitantly opened the drawer and took the business card from it. He looked at the name and phone number. He took a deep breath and dialed the number.

'Min Jaehyun speaking...' he heard on the other side of the line.

'Jaehyun-ssi... It's Kim Namjoon.'

'Oh! Namjoon-ssi! Nice to hear you!'

'Jeahyun-ssi... What are you doing?' Namjoon asked tiredly.

Silence fell on the other side of the line. Jeahyun sighed deeply.

'Namjoon... Can I call you that?' When he didn't hear the denying, he continued. 'Namjoon, did I lie? You know I didn't... Have you seen the reports from ICI? Do you know how many cases of attacks on Interdependens were registered? And we don't even know how many didn't... Are you ready to risk that next time it will be your son? Call me a coward, because I am not.'

'You are throwing a rock in the ocean that will cause a tsunami, Jaehyun...'

'I created a private school, not a military organization...' Jaehyun answered amused.

'You created a private school...' Namjoon agreed. 'And what will be next?'

'What do you mean?'

'Action and reaction. The first reaction I see is creating schools only for ordinary children. Then what? Cafes and restaurants only for Interdependents and non-Interdependents. The shops that would provide services only for a selected group? Maybe we will start to wear white clothes and the rest will wear black ones so we can instantly know who is who?'

'Don't be such a pessimist...' Jaehyun answered hesitantly.

'I'm not a pessimist. I'm a realist. The Second World War started because of prejudices and the belief that some are better than others...'

'I won't allow it, Namjoon... I'm talking about equality. Not about Interdependents being a superior group...'

'You can't create equality by selection, Jaehyun...'

'When our children will be safe we can start to work on making the world understand us. I will support you, Namjoon. I believe in you and I agree with you. But my children come first and I won't allow anyone to touch them.'

'What about my children then? What about all the children outside of your school? Do you know how they will be treated now? We can't predict how society will react.'

'You can send them here...' Jaehyun offered.

'My children won't go to your school, Jaehyun.' Namjoon laughed bitterly.

'Why?'

'Because I want them to learn how to coexist in this world. I want them to understand that the most beautiful thing in this world is that we can all be different and still treat each other with kindness and respect... I won't close them in the golden cage.'

Jaehyun was silent for a long time, but he finally asked, quietly:

'What if something happened and you will regret your decision later?'

'That's the burden I have to take on myself. That's what parents do.'

'Well... I am not strong enough to take it.' Jaehyun gulped. 'Namjoon... I will support you and ICI in everything you are doing, but I won't back away.'

Namjoon sighed.

'Can you promise me... you won't take this further?'

'Further than creating the school and talking about equality? Of course. I don't intend to create rebellion!'

'I will take you up on that then...'

'Sure. How is your son?'

'The joy of my life...'

'Same. What's his name?'

'Taehyung.'

'Maybe Yoongi and Taehyung will meet one day...'

'Maybe they will...'

'I'm glad you called me. Sometimes I need someone to talk to... Sometimes I don't know what to do, you know?'

'Yeah, I know...' Namjoon said, throwing his head on the backrest of the armchair and looking at the ceiling. He knew Jaehyun was a good guy. Really good guy. He had a vision he wanted to make come true.

His vision was the same as Namjoon's... just that, their methods weren't. The problem was that... the world wasn't black and white. It had all tones of gray depending on the point of view.

'You have a husband right? How is he?'

'Currently really pissed...'

'Because of me?' Jaehyun chuckled. 'Sorry, bro...'

'Yeah...' Namjoon smiled to himself. Then the smile died on his lips. 'I hope you are right Jaehyun. I hope you won't regret this...'

'Namjoon... I'm praying every night to not regret this. But I feel so useless sometimes... I couldn't protect my baby... It's still haunting me down... I hope you will protect your son... No. Let me rephrase it... I hope there won't ever be a necessity when you will need to protect him.'

What if you will be a cause there will be a necessity like that, Namjoon thought to himself, but answered:

'I hope that too. I need to go...' he said, hearing the knocking.

'Call me sometimes. I will help with anything...'

'Thank you. Good night.'

Namjoon finished the call with a head full of thoughts that didn't have an easy answer.

'It's open!' he called out.

Minji stormed the office.

'I talked with Jaehyun...' he said, when Jin and Hoseok joined them.

'What did he say?' Jin asked.

'It's complicated...'

'No shit...' Minji snorted. 'Doesn't matter now. The damage is done! We will deal with this day by day, praying that it won't change into something we won't be able to stop...'

'If you think like that, what's the emergency...' Hoseok asked.

Minji walked to Namjoon's desk and stood behind his chair.

'Check their website...'

'The website?'

'Yeah, the website of 3EO.'

'They have a website?' Jin frowned.

'Yeah. Not a new one it seems... There are a lot of materials there. Interviews with abused Interdependants. Stories where Interdependents were the victims. Pictures of hurt people and children. Then of course the equality agenda, description of the founders, their mission. The cases the organization supports and all the other medial shit...'

Hoseok and Jin stood next to Minji, when Namjoon opened the website of 3EO.

'Go to the Gallery.' she ordered, nervously. 'Find their logo...'

Surprised Namjoon did as he was told.

When he looked at the picture his heart stopped. Jin's legs gave way. Hoseok became pale and he grabbed Minji's hand instantly.

The symbol they thought they would never see again, anywhere beside their children's soft skin, was a part of the logo of 3EO.

Namjoon clicked the description of the logo. Red circle symbolized the Red String of Fate. And the mark in the middle was described as the mark of first Interdependants. And it wasn't a lie in fact. But how did they know that?

When he stole the book from the Library in Trinity College in Dublin he thought it's the only source that could lead anyone to their children. But he was too full of himself. Of course they had to be other texts, other old books or even drawings.

Maybe not in "Genesis" but this mark did appear in history more than once. Who knows? Maybe it was carved in some wall in pyramids or some ancient jewelry was shaped like that.

Minji said what each of them was thinking.

'Their mark is viral now... What are we going to do?'

---

Here is the new chapter for you. ☺

Our boys are growing up... And the situation are getting darker.

Hope you didn't get bored on the way.

New friends are coming next time... 😁

BlairWitch💙

# Chapter 7: Dragon

**January 2060**

Two cars were moving through the mountain road one after the other. Minji was silent. Too silent. She wasn't happy about what they had to do and what they needed to do. But she threw away her stubbornness and pride for Jungkook and Taehyung.

Hoseok looked at her, worried. They were alone in the car.

After they talked with boys two days ago, they were glued to each other more than ever.

They didn't let them go to school till the week, so as not to risk even a bit, that their marks will be shown to others. And they let them share the car with Jin and Namjoon, to keep them together when they needed it and when Minji was ready to breathe fire.

Hoseok let her be silent and pissed. He knew she would get over it when it would be time and she didn't have to hold back in front of him.

He sighed and recollected all the things that happened two days ago.

After the Min's Manifest happened and they discovered the logo of 3EO, they discussed whether they should panic or not.

First of all, not many ordinary people would understand what the marks mean. But on the other hand even one person that would recognize it, knowing the history behind it, would be a threat. The children would be pulled into a political swamp, where every one would try to use them, expect something from them or treat them like some kind of gods they weren't. They were just children. And considering what was happening in Daegu, they would end up in a crossfire between ICI and 3EO.

So they had to find a way to hide their marks better than just under Taehyung's glove and Jungkook's clothes. It was too easy to pull the glove off even just by accident and all that took for Jungkook to go to the swimming pool or change into the locker room before PE classes or basketball practice, and his chest would be exposed.

If they would overlook simple things like that now, and one of their school colleagues would remember it in the future they would be in danger later on.

When Minji came up with a solution, all agreed to it. But all of them felt heavy when Namjoon said this one sentence:

'We need to explain this to boys... We can't force them to change their marks, without explaining...'

'I don't think Taehyung will understand this... He will be fiercely against it...' Jin sighed.

'He will agree to it...' Hoseok said calmly. 'We have an argument he won't ever go against...' when the rest looked at him, he explained: 'Jungkook's safety.'

Jin nodded and closed his eyes.

'I know... but... I'm so pissed. We are using their bond. And it's not something we should ever do...'

'We are doing this for them. We can predict the consequences... I believe him, when Jaehyun is saying he won't go further, but he is not alone in 3EO... He is intelligent, but the thoughts he has can be used by others to be more ortodox...'

'We need to explain the situation to them as gently as we can... Nothing more we can do.' Hoseok said, looking at 3EO's logo.

Hoseok texted Baekhyun to tell the boys they won't go to school tomorrow and sent them back home. Not one of them slept peacefully that night.

When the boys arrived the next morning, Jin had already prepared breakfast for them. When they all sat by the kitchen table. Taehyung and Jungkook didn't even look at their plates. They didn't stop looking at their parents' fake-calm expressions.

'Are we in trouble?' Jungkook finally broke the silence, trying to think which of their actions could have caused their parents to assemble like that.

'No...' Hoseok shook his head gently, and caressed his hair calmingly.

'Something happened...' Taehyung stated, reading Namjoon's face like an open book.

Namjoon looked him in the eyes and nodded slowly.

Four parents almost awwed at the way both boys instantly shuffled on their chairs just to get rid of the few inches they were apart.

'Remember the legend I read to you some time ago?' Hoseok asked. 'About Jeryn and Taeghan?'

Jungkook blinked surprised.

'Oh? I fell asleep before the end... Was it important? I'm sorry dad...'

'No... it's ok... don't worry. You see...' Hoseok took a deep breath and ruffled his hair.

'Jeryn and Taeghan are considered to be the first Interdependants' Namjoon explained.

'Okay...' Taehyung shrugged, not really interested.

'In some other books there are pictures of their marks... That resembles your mark.'

Taehyung looked at the mark on his right hand and frowned.

'Really?' Jungkook asked excitedly. 'How so?'

They decided they won't burden the children with everything they suspected, so Namjoon brushed the topic away saying:

'It's just look the same as yours. And we think we need to hide it, boys...

'Hide it?' Taehyung's eyes became cold. 'We're already hiding it. I wear gloves all the time, as you told me.'

'I know, I know...' Namjoon said calmingly, and reached for Taehyung's hand. 'But there are people out there who can misinterpret your mark and put you in danger...'

'How?' Taehyung asked.

'You will be dragged into their mess, because they will think you have so extraordinary power as first interdependents...'

Taehyung was looking at his father angrily.

'You said it's just similar, not the same. What would anybody want from us because of it?'

Jin looked at Hoseok with uneasy expression and said, making his voice a bit cold:

'If you want to risk putting Jungkook and yourself in danger... don't blame us after.'

Taehyung's eyes widened when he looked at Jin. Then his eyes filled with angry tears.

'But that's our mark, dad... We have had it since childhood... What do you want to do with it?'

'We will just change it a little bit...' Minji explained softly. 'It won't change the connection between the two of you or the way you can sense each other... It won't change the fact that you are soulmates...'

Taehyung's face twisted with sadness, anger and unfairness. He looked at Jungkook, who was silent.

All eyes fell on Jungkook, who was looking at Taehyung's right palm calmly.

'Kookie?' Hoseok touched his almost 10 year old son's shoulder. 'What are you thinking about?'

Jungkook raised his serious gaze at his father.

'I don't care.' he said, making everybody gasp in shock. He looked at Taehyung with the same strong expression in his eyes. 'I. Don't. Care.' he repeated. 'As long as I have the same mark as Taehyung, I don't care what it looks like.'

Taehyung's lips parted.

In the end all arguments the adults prepared were meaningless. Because Jungkook wasn't going to play around.

'For me? You can paint a Hello Kitty on Tae's hand and my chest... I don't care. If it means they will leave Taehyung alone I'm ok with it...'

Taehyung stood up and his chair fell back.

'Fine! Don't give a damn about it! he hissed and ran to his room.

Jungkook looked at his back calmly.

Namjoon sighed deeply.

'I will talk with him...'

'No need, uncle... He is just sulking.' Jungkook said. He shook his head and stood up. He fixed the chair Taehyung threw on the ground and mumbled: 'Idiot...'

Then he left after the Older one, leaving surprised adults in the kitchen.

'I will go to them...' Jin shook his head, but Minji stopped him and smirked:

'Let Kookie handle this...'

Jungkook went into Taehyung's room without bothering to knock. It was almost like his second room so...

Taehyung glared at him angrily from the bed he was sitting on. Jungkook did not spare him a glance. He went straight to the desk and took a black marker from the cup with pencils. He went to the bed and kneeled on it. He pulled Taehyung's hand, but Taehyung tried to snatch it.

Jungkook held his wrist forcefully, opened the marker with his teeth and started to scribble on Taehyung's palm.

'What are you doing!!' Taehyung yelled, still trying to take his hand back.

Jungkook let go of his hand and looked at him with raised eyebrow.

'That's how you look like right now... Stupid, screaming blockhead...'

Taehyung looked at his palm. His mark was changed into a person saying "blablablabla".

'What have you done!?' Taehyung angrily tried to wipe the marker from his hand.

'TAE!' Jungkook grabbed his face and forced him to face him. 'STOP IT! It doesn't matter!'

'Why are you saying this!?'

'Because I'm mad you think it does!' Jungkook said angrily.

Taehyung stopped trying to free himself.

Jungkook was never mad at him. Never. He was easily getting angry when he was losing or when Jimin was teasing him, but whatever Tae did, he was just letting it slide.

Taehyung frowned.

Jungkook let go of his face and his lips quivered, when he looked at the bed.

'They could erase it. And you will still be Tae...' he whispered.

'I know but...'

'I'm mad.' Jungkook interrupted him harshly, shaking his head. 'Would you change without this picture on your hand? Wouldn't you care about me anymore?'

'No! Of course not!'

Jungkook slid from bed, not looking at Taehyung.

'Then why are you behaving like it's the only thing that connects us? I don't get it...' he whined sadly. 'Jerk...'

Taehyung got up from the bed and wanted to hug Jungkook, but Jungkook moved away.

'Leave me alone. You just care about this stupid mark...' he pouted.

'Don't be like that, Koo...' Taehyung whined and grabbed the younger's waist sitting on the edge of the bed with him between his legs. 'I just hate when I need to hide anything about me and you. What's wrong with our marks? What's wrong with us being soulmates from childhood?'

'Nothing is wrong with it... But if parents say it's dangerous - it's dangerous. I have a mark under my clothes. But you have yours in a visible place. Don't want something to happen to you...'

Taehyung sulking pressed his cheek to Jungkook's shoulder.

'I still hate it... But ok. You win.'

'As always.' Jungkook smirked.

'Cheeky much... We will see in the next one on one basketball match...' Taehyung warned him.

'Sure. Bring it on. You can tie my eyes if it will help you...' Jungkook said cheekily.

Taehyung's hands started to tickle Jungkook's sides.

'Tae! Stop it! Stop it!' Jungkook burst out laughing.

'Jimin is right! We need to teach you how to respect your hyungs!'

'Dream on! Maknae on top!' Jungkook tried to run away from Taehyung's fingers, giggling like a madman.

The knocking to the door disturbed their bickering. Jin and Hoseok peaked inside the room. They looked at Taehyung with concern.

'Can I come in?' Jin asked.

'Yeah, dad... It's ok...' Taehyung said, letting go of Jungkook.

'Tae... I know you don't want to do this, but...'

Taehyung stopped his words, showing him his palm with Jungkook's painting.

'It seems I don't care anymore either...'

Jungkook looked at Jin with a proud smirk on his lips.

Hoseok shook his head with amusement.

'I can't keep up with you, boys...'

So now they were going deep inside the mountain forest to seek help and Minji wasn't happy about it. Four of them knowing about Jungkook and Taehyung was enough. She didn't want to involve anybody else. Especially - her father.

They passed the maple tree without leaves, hidden between pines and Minji said, plainly:

'Turn right...'

Hoseok remembered the road, but he just followed Minji's words and turned into the forest path. They were driving for the next few minutes, when she suddenly said:

'Stop.' She looked around attentively. 'It's here.'

'It was further a few years ago...'

'He changed it, it seems...' she said and opened the car window. 'DRAGON! I'M HERE! OPEN THIS FUCKING GATE!' she screamed.

'Hey, hey...' Hoseok grabbed Minji's shoulder and made her look at him. He cupped her face. 'We are here to ask for help... It was years ago, Minji...' he said calmingly.

'He tried to separate me from you. And I vowed to not cross the borders of his land until he will apologize for it!'

'Minji... he didn't like me. He didn't approve of me. But he didn't try to separate us... He is too smart for it. He never had tried to separate anyone. He is not a monster. He just... You are his oldest daughter. First child. I don't think he would consider anybody as good enough for you... But both of you are so full of pride none of you want to back away...' Hoseok said, calmingly stroking her shoulders. 'We are doing this for boys...'

Minji pressed her forehead to Hoseok's chest.

'I know you miss your dad, baby...' he whispered. 'I know you want Jungkook to know his grandfather... You know how much he likes you mom... You don't need to be so protective of me anymore. We are unshakable...'

Minji nodded and pressed his lips to Hoseok's in a short, sweet kiss.

She took a deep breath and looked through the front window and whispered:

'Father... I'm home. Open the gate. Please.'

Suddenly the trees in front of them started to vanish, as if someone erased them with an eraser. The forest path changed into a driveway that led through the forest to the big house, built in Korean style.

Hoseok remembered. The house. The garden. The training fields in the backyards. They drove to the main entrance where a single figure was standing.

Minji and her father glared at each other. She got out of the car dressed in an elegant suit. Her father respected strength and she was going to show him strength. All of them were.

Hoseok got out after her, and put on his jacket, looking sternly at his father-in-law. The same person that didn't even attend his daughter's wedding.

Two of them stood in front of one and only Kwan Jiyong. He was looking at them with his head held high. He was dressed in traditional hanbok. He was fifty but as every interdependant he looked like thirty.

'You finally decided to come back home, brat?' he said slowly.

'You said You don't want to see me here...'

'Does a child need permission to come back home?' he said and his voice shivered a bit.

'Does a father need permission to visit his daughter?' Minji answered with the same voice.

They were looking angrily at each other. The first one to breake the staring contest was the father.

'For fucks sake, Minji! It was 12 years!'

'Not my fault that you are a stubborn old goat!' she screamed, when her lips started to shiver.

'I am stubborn?! I am stubborn?!' he asked with disbelief. 'You always had a foul mouth, young lady!'

'Yaaaah! And whose fault is that?!' she replied angrily. 'Minji do that! Minji do this! If I wouldn't start to talk back you would work me to death, old man!'

Their heated childish argument was disturbed by the loud noise of a facepalm. Hoseok shook his head. Covering his forehead with his hand.

'You both are unbelievable... If I knew... I would bring her here earlier...' he sighed.

'Don't get his side, Hobi!!' Minji whined.

'Babe... your dad missed you...' he said gently.

'Who missed this little hag?! Pffff!' Jiyong crossed his arms over his chest.

Hoseok rolled his eyes.

'Yeah, yeah... I know this tone. She is talking like that when she is overwhelmed...'

Jiyong checked Hoseok out from head to toe.

'I judged you wrong. I thought you were a weak fellow...' he admitted reluctantly. 'We won't talk about it...' he decided blantly.

'You mean you won't say sorry...' Minji said maliciously.

Jiyong gasped.

'Oh! I will!' He turned to Hoseok. 'I'm SORRY I left you with this unholy child for 12 years Jeon!'

'Unholy?! Who do you call unholy?!' Minji yelled ouraged.

'I admire that you still don't have gray hair because of her! Indeed I should admire your patience!'

Hoseok's sunshine-like laugh filled the air. He gestured to Jin and Namjoon to come out from their car.

Namjoon and Jin came to them with Jungkook and Taehyung who were sticking to each other like siamese twins.

Jiyong looked at Jungkook with parted lips, then at Minji. He was seeing his grandson for the first time in his life.

'Can I?' he asked, with a bit of weakness in his voice.

'It's your grandson...' Minji shrugged. 'Jungkook... come here, honey...' she stretched her hand to her son. Then she stretched the second one: 'Taehyung...'

Boys took her hands and stood on both sides of Minji.

'Meet our kids....' Hoseok said, placing his hand on Jiyong's shoulder. 'Jeon Jungkook and his soulmate Kim Taehyung...'

Jiyong's eyes widened. He looked at Jin and Namjoon and then at Taehyung.

He crouched down in front of his daughter and two boys.

'I'm your grandfather...' he said simply and smiled. 'Nice to finally meet you, boys...'

'Nice to meet you, grandpa...' Jungkook said quietly.

'Nice to meet you, sir...' Taehyung mumbled officially.

Jiyong shook his head.

'Call me 'grandpa', Taehyung... You are Jungkook's soulmate. We will be a family sooner or later. No doubt about it...'

Taehyung smiled shyly and nodded.

Jiyong looked softly at Jungkook's hair that resembled Minji's when she was young. He raised his eyes at her daughter. She had a bittersweet emotions in her eyes.

He stood up and touched her hair.

'I'm glad you are back, firefly...'

She leaned and pressed her head to his chest.

'Thanks, dad...' she whispered, holding back her tears. 'I need help.'

'Than you are in the right place...' he patted her head lightly. He looked at all of them. 'Come inside... We will solve your problem whatever it is.'

'Where is mom, Siyeon and Bora?' Minji asked her father, looking through the house.

'Your sister and her wife went shopping. Don't ask me when they will come back. I don't know...' Jiyong answered lazyly. 'Your mother is painting. You know how she gets when she is painting. She won't hear or see anything around her until she will want... What do you want guys? Coke? Sprite? Juice? Milk?' he asked excitedly of Jungkook and Taehyung who were pretty silent with the new person around.

'We can help...' Taehyung offered.

'Yeah we will help...' Jungkook nodded.

'Oh? Aren't you well behaved?'

'Only when they want...' Namjoon laughed.

'Just let them do it Dragon-ssi...' Jin shrugged. 'They know how...'

He trained all of them and they always called him by his interdependent nickname - Dragon.

'And we can talk in the meantime in the living room...' Hoseok added. 'Because we indeed have a request...'

Jin looked at Taehyung and nodded.

Taehyung sighed and glanced at his glove. Jungkook's eyes instantly traveled to him. He took a step and gently removed Taehyung's glove from his hand, exposing their mark.

'Doesn't matter, right?' He smiled trying to calm Tae down.

'Yeah... Doesn't matter...' Taehyung admitted with a heavy heart and stretched his

hand showing the front of it to Jiyoung.

Minji's father's eyes widened.

He looked at all the adults in the room.

'You have a lot to tell me, kids...'

They left the boys to do the tea. Jungkook and Taehyung were slacking off doing it slowly, checking every cupboard and drawer. They knew what they were talking about, and they weren't interested to hear it again. But they were interested in the mysterious house, the garden and the swords they caught a glimpse of on the wall in the corridor.

It took them more than half an hour to remember that they actually should prepare the tea... They started to do it, when a woman came into the kitchen. She gasped.

'Jungkookie?! What are you doing here! Don't tell me you ran out of the house!!' she ran to him to hug the hell out of him. 'TaeTae!' She stretched her hand to pull him to the hug. 'Boys! What are you doing here!?'

They knew her. She was visiting Jungkook from time to time with Siyeon and Bora at their house.

'Ma!' Jungkook said, smiling widely. 'I finally visited you! Are you happy?'

'Of course I am! But what are you doing here alone?!' Hwasa asked her grandsons.

'Tea...' Taehyung pointed at the pot. 'But we don't actually know what kind of tea grandpa likes...'

'He knows you are here?!'

'Yeah... he let us in.' Jungkook shrugged. 'Mom yelled at him, but I think they are fine now...'

'Your mother is here too?!' Hwasa was shocked. 'This selfish asshole!! JIYONG!' She walked to the living room. Then they heard her excited screams. 'Minji! Hobi, my baby! You are here too?! Jinnie, Joonie! What haven't You called me! You stupid old selfish bastard!!!!'

'Ma is funny when she is mad...' Taehyung giggled.

Taehyung and Jungkook were called to the living room where Jiyong and Hwasa, surrounded by their parents, patted the space on the couch between each other.

Hwasa took out the paint brush that was stuck into the bun on her head. On her hand the mark was visible. The Holders mark.

'This is the Sacred Treasure of Jiyong... it can paint anything that the holder wants and make it real and material for a long time.' she explained. 'It's unsealed most of the time, because Jiyong is creating everything around with his power. The trees that blocked your way. The illusions in the forest that leads here... The safety barrier. It's the power of imagination...'

Jungkook's and Taehyung's lips parted.

'Woah...' Jungkook looked at his grandfather.

Jiyong smiled and with his fingers he drew something in the air. The room was filled with blue butterflies that flew to the ceiling and disappeared after they reached there.

Minji smiled. She loved her father's trick.

'That's awesome...' Taehyung whispered.

'I can create anything I want...' Hwasa said slowly.' So I will make a tattoo for the two of you. The tattoo that won't fade away for a year. It will not be able to be erased, nor will anyone recognise that it is a tattoo and not a mark...'

'It won't change the way your power will work when it will be the time for it. It won't block it in any way.' Jiyong added. 'The elements we will draw on your skin will be just a painting and your mark is not. It's something that is carved on your soul and your skin is just an exposition for it...'

Hwasa took Taehyung's hand and looked at the original mark.

'I think we won't need to change it a lot... Just a bit will be enough...' She used her finger to explain what she was planning. 'Here we will paint a line that will make a T... like Taehyung and here we will add 3 lines that will make a J... like Jungkook. We won't erase anything... It will be a totally different mark, being the same at the same time. What do you think?' she asked, looking at the boys.

Taehyung smiled a bit.

'I like the idea...'

'Okay then...' she took the brush between her fingers. 'It will tickle a bit...' She started to draw the lines on Taehyung's palm. It was done sooner than expected.

Taehyung looked at his mark. He could see that the part of T is making J. And he could still see the orginal mark. And he liked it very much.

'Thank you...' he said, quietly.

'Now... we will make a copy for Jungkookie...' Jiyong smiled and traced the mark with his fingers. Then he made a move as if he would pull a material and the copy of mark went into the air. He pressed his hands to Jungkook's chest and the immaterial mark went through it, and glued to his skin.

'Now... the tattoo will dissapear in a year and we will need to repeat it.' Jiyong explained.

'Thank you, ma! Thank you grandpa...' Jungkook smiled.

Suddenly they heard the car approaching.

Minji smirked.

'They are back...'

In the next moment Siyeon and Bora run to the room.

'I can't believe my own eyes!!!' Siyeon screamed. 'They all are here!'

Bora ran to Minji to hug her.

'OMG! You brought your ass here?! Finally bish!'

'Yeah, yeah!' Minji giggled. 'I did...'

Siyeon ruffled Jungkook's and Taehyung's hair.

'Our boys are here too!'

Hoseok laughed and hugged his sisters-in-law.

'What are you doing here, guys?' Siyeon squeezed Jin.

'A long story...' Namjoon smiled lightly.

'It's because of this shitty situation in Daegu?' Bora asked, frowning.

The silence that fell in the room was deafening.

Taehyung and Jungkook looked at each other and rolled their eyes. They knew when the adults wanted to talk.

'Can we go see the garden?' Jungkook asked.

'Yes, of course...'  Hwasa smiled. 'It's safe there...'

Taehyung and Jungkook were roaming in the garden when adults were talking and preparing the dinner. They found all the training facilities, all the different types of weapons that they really wanted to touch and check but were scared of the adults' anger.

In the far corner of the garden they found two swings, hanging from the huge branch of the big, old tree.

'Oh! Mom told me about this! It's her and Aunt Bora's swings.' Jungkook immediately sat on one of them and Taehyung for a moment observed when he swung.

Then he slowly sat on the other swing and they looked at the dark January's sky, filled with stars.

'Look. The moon.' Taehyung said, watching the crescent moon rising above the rooftop of the house.

The snow slowly started to fall, covering everything under the cold duvet.

Some of the snowflakes fell on Jungkook's stretched palm.

'They look almost like the cherry petals!' he said, excited. 'Sooo big!'

Taehyung pressed his temple to the chain of the swing looking at smiling Kookie, softly.

'Koo...?' he called him.

Jungkook looked at him.

'You were right... The shape of our mark doesn't change the fact that you are you

and I am me...'

'I know... You were dumb.' Jungkook smirked.

Taehyung squinted his eyes.

'I have plenty of snow around to make you regret those words...' he said, fastly stopping Jungkook's swing and making him fall on his face in the pile of snow.

Jungkook gasped and they started to roll in the snow, screaming and laughing, trying to throw the snow under each other collars.

After a while both of their jackets became wet from melting snow and their faces were red from cold and fun. They laid down on the snow to look at the sky, breathing heavily.

'I was worried too, you know...' Jungkook said. 'Maybe that's why I got mad... You and Jimin will leave me... I don't like it...'

Taehyung frowned.

'What? We won't leave you...'

'You are starting Middle School. And I'm stuck in Elementary school...' Jungkook pouted.

'Us going to the Middle School won't mean we are leaving you, Koo. And our schools are close. We can still take our road to school together most of the time...'

'You will be busy...'

'Don't worry about it. We almost live together. We can still practice together as always and study together if you want...'

'Okay...' Jungkook said in tiny.

Taehyung looked at the moon that was now above their heads between stars. He found Jungkook's hand in a fluffy glove and squeezed it.

'The moon is pretty right?'

'Yeah... But I miss watching the sunrise... and sunset...'

'We can watch it anytime...'

'Waking you up is almost impossible, Tae...' Jungkook whined. 'And sunsets are rare to see in the city...'

'I will try to wake up and we can go to the viewing platform one day... Maybe in the summer?'

'Fine.' Jungkook smiled a bit.

They were lying, head next to head, looking at the moon.

'I love the moon...' Taehyung said, enchanted by the gentle white light.

'I know...' Jungkook giggled.

But he didn't know why did he blushed...

---

I'm going to publish next chapter in the evening or tomorrow. □□

Almost every scene from Taekook's childhood I'm writing will be important later on, even if it feels lika a filler chapter now. □□

BlairWitch ＜3

# Chapter 8: Young souls

**March 2061**

12 year old Min Gahyeon barged into her brother's room without knocking.

15 year old Min Yoongi sitting on his bed slowly raised his head, from above the manhwa book he was reading.

'How many times do I need to remind you to knock?' he said quietly, raising his eyebrow.

'Mom said I should check if you are dressed... And I see that you are not, oppa...' she crossed her arms over her chest.

'I'm not going...' Yoongi said calmly and focused again on the book.

Gahyeon gasped.

'But it's your birthday!'

'It's just a shitshow uncle Kyung made dad organized to gain more followers...' Yoongi said, shaking his head. 'Tell Taeil he can take my place... I'm not a clown that will entertain all those rich investors...'

'It's not Taeil's birthday but yours.' Gahyeon whined, laying on the bed next to her brother. 'And you know how many people from school will be here. And you are Student Council President...'

'What our dear cousin, Taeil, didn't forgive me for till this day...' Yoongi said mockingly.

'Taeil is just Taeil. If he would be a Student Council President he would just throw all of his work on someone else...'

'So he can just do what he is good at... flexing about other's achievements...'

'Yoooongiiii... mom will be disappointed...' Gahyeon whined.

Yoongi rolled his eyes.

'Just tell her I'm sick...'

'She will come here like a wind if I say that...'

'Then let her come.' Yoongi shrugged.

Gahyeon made puppy eyes.

'Don't make me go there alone oppa...'

Yoongi sighed. His little sister was actually one and only person for which he could threw away his non-fucks-given attidude.

'I will think about it...' he finally said.

'Thanks. Your outfit hangs in your dressing room...' she smiled and jumped off from bed.

'The sacrifices I make for you...' he shook his head miserably, when she disappeared. He glared at the outfit in the dressing room and pretended to throw up...

The notification on his phone made him look at the screen. He opened his account on DailyDiaryApp. It was an app where he sometimes published his thoughts, short sentences he thought about or lyrics he tried to write. Sometimes he couldn't find the right words and the comments and suggestions were helping him a lot.

But sometimes the words were flowing and the appreciation he could receive when someone understood what he wanted to say even if he tried to hide it under the heavy layers of metaphors was making him a bit less lonely in his world.

He posted this thought some time ago...

***SUGA: Stay innocent, be naive. But still dream big. Dream big to the point that it is beyond your ability and endeavor to achieve it. So dream big and don't lose your innocence.***

And today someone actually commented on it:

***CHIMISLOVE:*** *You comforted me not even knowing about it. Thanks.*

Yoongi smiled a bit, but he usually was interested in the story behind, so he typed:

***SUGA:*** *How so?*

***CHIMSLOVE:*** *I'm a troublemaker. But it doesn't mean I'm not innocent. And I am naive and want to stay like that. Believing always in the best outcome.*

***SUGA:*** *It's hard to find people that will say: just try even if it seems impossible. You usually hear: It will be hard. Just focus on something more possible.*

***CHIMSLOVE:*** *Woah! That's so wise. How old are you girl?!*

***SUGA:*** Wth? I'm a guy...

***CHIMISLOVE:*** *Really? Sorry. I came to the wrong conclusion because of your nickname... Important note to myself: don't jump to conclusions, Chim, because you are stupid...*

Yoongi frowned.

***SUGA:*** *Don't call yourself stupid... There are people out there that will call you like that more than once, why agree with them?*

***CHIMISLOVE:*** *I... Honestly, dude! How old are you! I'm scared!*

Yoongi chuckled.

***SUGA:*** *My age doesn't matter you know? Why do you think only old people can say wise things?*

***CHIMISLOVE:*** *Fair point. So you just said you are not old... That's great. My best friend won't freak out thinking I'm talking with some kind of old pervert...*

Yoongi's lips parted. This guy was sharp...

***SUGA:*** *It's not a dating app. It's a quotes app... You can read the thoughts of people that died hundreds of years ago and someone just published it here...*

***CHIMSLOVE:*** *But you are not dead, right? Or am I talking with your ghost's ass?*

***SUGA:*** *You are not "talking". You are "texting".*

***CHIMISLOVE:*** *OMG! How petty of you...*

Yoongi leaned on the pillow with a malicious smirk.

***SUGA:*** *It's the app where you use words. So use proper ones...*

***CHIMISLOVE:*** *... I can't decide if you are old in the end or just young and nasty...*

***SUGA:*** *Have fun guessing...*

Yoongi was curious if the person will respond, but his mother knocked and walked to the room, so he hide his phone under the pillow.

'Gahyeon told me you are not happy about going to the party...' Handong sat on the edge of the bed.

'It's not my party mom... But I will go.'

'I know you don't like this...

'You asked me what I want for my birthday and I told you. Yet you and father refused...' he said bitterly.

'We said we will think about it...'

'Yeah. And it usually means you will wait until I give up...'

'Yoonie...' Handong sighed. 'You are too smart for your age... Try to understand us...'

'I understand. I just don't agree with you.'

'It's your last year in Middle School. Going to another High School is not... wise...'

'I asked you to let me go to the music school when I will be 16. What's wrong about it?'

'You are safe here...'

'Yeah, sure. Because out there I will be in constant danger...' Yoongi's voice was soaked in irony.

'We will hire the best music teacher for you...'

'It's still a music teacher. And music classes in your school. Not a music school when you can learn different types of music. Share it and exchange it with other musicians to grow up as an artist...'

'Yoongi... '

'Just stop.' he shook his head. 'I know your answer already. I will learn things I want to learn by myself.'

'Your dad have a wonderful gift for you... please, just... give it a chance ok?'

'Yeah. No problem.' he said plainly.

Handong stroked her son's hair.

'Gahyeon needs you...'

'Don't use her like that.' he looked at his mother sternly. 'I already said it's okay.'

'Is the school your father created so bad?' she asked gently.

'Maybe it's good for others. But I don't need protection. I need freedom.'

'Sometimes freedom can prove very costly...'

'And sometimes we need to be ready to pay the praise...' he answered getting up from the bed. 'I will be downstairs in a few minutes...'

Handong sighed, looking at the bathroom's door, that Yoongi disappeared behind. He was always a calm, very smart and intelligent kid. He could easily make her and Jaehyun feel guilty with his reasoning.

She hoped that the new music studio Jaehyun created for him in their mension would give him a bit of the freedom he was so desperately longing for.

**May 2061**

Jungkook drove on his bicycle to Park house after his classes. May's evenings were pretty warm and he wanted to spend his free time with Jimin. Taehyung texted him that they will be playing basketball after school at Jimin's place.

Jimin and Taehyung started their Middle School two months ago so their schedules didn't match with Jungkook's as well as before.

He and Taehyung were seeing each other daily but besides their road to school and dance practices with his dad and combat training with his mom, Jimin was devoted to his studies and activities so he didn't have so much time anymore.

Jungkook didn't like that.

He didn't like changes at all.

So he wasn't really happy when he parked his bicycle in Park's front yard and saw new people next to Taehyung and Jimin.

He walked to them slowly.

'Oh? Who is the new kid?' one of the boys asks, noticing him.

Taehyung turned around and smiled seeing him.

'Kookie!' Jimin happily jumped to him. 'You are finally here!'

'Yeah... I had late classes today...' Jungkook answered quietly.

'These are some of the members from our Middle School Basketball team. Hyunsik is the captain.' Jimin pointed at the older guy who spoke first.

'Aren't you a bit too short to play with olders?' Hyunsik asked, putting his elbow on Jungkook's head. Four other boys chuckled.

Jungkook poked his cheek with his tongue.

'We will see...' he said, moving away from the guy he already didn't like. He hated to be reminded that he is younger.

'And these are our classmates... Lee Yubin,' A girl with black-blue hair nodded at him with her head. '... and Choi Yeonjun.' Jimin introduced the last two people and a boy with pink hair waved at him.

'How will we divide the teams?' Hyunsik asked. 'Me and Dami? As she is the only girl here?'

'If you are brave enough...' the girl shrugged.

'You have a big mouth for a freshman...' he said, squinting his eyes. 'But fair enough... You can start then.'

She threw the ball at Jungkook, who caught it easily.

'I want the kid...'

'Rookies mistakes...' Hyunsik smirked, shaking his head. 'Taehyung.'

'Yeonjun.'

'Yonghee'

'Jimin.'

'Howon.'

'The tall guy...' Dami pointed at the guy next to Hyunsik.

'My name is Sanha' the guy looked at her.

'Maybe I will remember one day.' Dami shrugged.

The last guy went to Hyunsik's team.

Yeonjun, Jimin and Sanha walked to Dami.

Jungkook looked at Taehyung who went to Hyunsik, with dark eyes, and holding the ball stood next to the new girl.

'Call me Dami...' she informed him shortly.

'Don't call me kid...' he replied.

Dami smirked, and nodded.

'You look badass... Can you take down Taehyung?'

'Kookie and Tae always play in one team so it can be a missed tactic...' Jimin giggled.

'I will take Hyunsik...' Jungkook informed her simply.

Sanha snorted.

'Sure. We already lost then.'

'Kookie...' Jimin started, but Dami looked at Jungkook and slowly a dangerous smile painted her lips.

'Fine for me...'

Sanha shook his head with irritation.

'Great. A girl and a kid will decide on a tactic...'

'If you are as good as you think you are you will be able to score as many points as them. But if you don't want to play with us. Join them.' Dami shrugged.

'Yaaa, guys! It's just a friendly game, don't treat it like an eliminations or something...' Yeonjun sighed and Jimin rolled his eyes.

'Fine. I will start then.' Sanha gritted his teeth and Jungkook passed him the ball.

'We are ready!' Hyunsik screamed.

Taehyung and Sanha went to the middle of the yard and stood in front of each other.

Taehyung was a little bit shorter than Sanha who was older but he managed to jump high enough to snach the ball, but before Hyunsik could grab it, Jungkook

was already there. He took the ball and dribbling, he ran to the basket, he passed it to Jimin when Howon blocked his way. Sanha took the ball next and placed it in the basket.

Taehyung ran there to snach the ball and passed it to Hyunsik, who tried to score for three points, but again Jungkook blocked him. He lost the ball that Dami grabbed and passed to Yeonjun.

Yonghee took over the ball from him and passed it to Taehyung who scored the first points for the other team.

Dami went under the basket for the ball and Hyunsik blocked her so she passed the ball to the far away end where Jimin was.

'JK!' he screamed and Jungkook was ready to take the ball, but Taehyung appeared out of nowhere to snach it.

'Great, Tae!' Hyunsik screamed and Taehyung passed him the ball.

Jungkook passed Taehyung running after the ball and he jumped high to match Hyunsik's height. He grabbed the ball with the tips of his fingers.

'What the hell!' Hyunsik yelled, surprised, when Jungkook and Yeonjun ran to the basket passing the ball between each other.

Jungkook had the ball, but Dami was blocked by Yonghee and Jimin was covered by Howon. So he jumped and scored 3 points placing the ball from a far in the basket.

The first part ended with 11 points for Dami's team and 8 points for Hyunsik's team.

Dami and Jungkook high fived each other and the rest.

Hyunsik was looking at Jungkook, surprised and walked to talk with his team.

'The kid is good...' Howon said, wiping the sweat from his forehead with the sleeve of his shirt.

'Don't call him "kid"... he doesn't like it...' Taehyung said with a warning in his voice.

'He blocked me each freaking time!' Hyunsik said with anger.

'Oh? Haven't I told you? Jungkook has been the captain of the elementary school basketball team since I graduated...' Taehyung smirked.

'Ok. So you can take him down then. Cover him.' Hyunsik said to Taehyung harshly. 'We won't lose to them!'

'Dude, it's just a friendly match...' Taehyung said. 'Chill...'

'Don't tell me you are playing for fun and not to win. Because they are playing to win.' Hyunsik pointed with his thumb to the opposite team.

Taehyung looked at Jungkook and Jimin who were discussing something fiercely. Jungkook looked at Taehyung. He had a dark, thoughtful expression.

Taehyung knew Jungkook was competitive. But what was he mad about now?

This time Yeonjun and Yonghee started the second half. Yonghee got the ball and passed it to Hyunsik who passed everyone and scored the point, jumping high before Jimin could block him.

Jungkook snached the ball and wanted to pass it to Sanha, but Taehyung stood in his way. He jumped to pass it above Taehyung's head but Taehyung jumped together with him. So he used the older's height to sneak under his arm and passed the ball to Dami, who threw the ball to Jimin, who managed to place it in the net.

Hyunsik took the ball and ran with it to the end of the field. He passed it to Howon, who was placed on the left. Yeonjun was there too and he managed to take over the ball and passed it to Jungkook, who was under the basket. Taehyung and Jungkook again jumped at the same time, with Taehyung almost embracing Jungkook in the process of stealing the ball. So Jungkook again passed to Jimin. He didn't see Hyunsik who was already there and grabbed the ball before Jimin could take it.

Sanha tried to disturbed him, but not really effectively. So it was Jungkook who spinned, releasing himself from under Taehyung's watch, stole the ball that was on its way to the basket and threw it to Dami, falling hard to the ground.

'Jungkook! Be careful!' Taehyung exclaimed.

'Yeah. Be careful...' Hyunsik added unnecessarily with a mocked tone. 'We don't want you to get injured...'

Jungkook just glared at him, when Yeonjun stretched his hands and helped him to stand up.

They were walking to their starting positions, when Taehyung asked:

'Are you ok?'

"M fine.' Jungkook answered shortly.

The second half ended with Hyunsik's team winnin 8 to 5. They were blocking each other so eagerly that neither of the teams managed to score more points.

'Tie.' Jimin informed, taking the ball, after the match ended.

'I can't believe it...' Hyunsik shook his head but smiled. 'Two non-players and a kid and we still didn't win.' He looked at Yeonjun and Dami. 'Nice one guys...'

Jungkook gritted his teeth, and crouched down to tie his shoes. One more time someone will call him a kid and he will lose it...

Dami sat next to him on the ground.

'I like you k...' she grinned when he glared at her. 'How should I call you?'

'JK. Jungkook. Whatever besides the "kid"...' he barked.

'Aren't you a brat.' she chuckled.

'Not that you are just two years older...' he said sarcastically.

Her head fell back when she laughed.

'Fair point.'

Yeonjun sat next to them.

'So you are Jungkook? The same Jungkook, Taehyung and Jimin constantly are talking about?'

'He for sure is.' Jimin ruffled Jungkook's hair. 'Our cute maknae...'

'Stop it hyung...' Jungkook smacked his hand, looking at Taehyung who was discussing with the rest the tactic for the next match in their school. Few minutes later he waved at them, when they went to the gate.

Baekhyun stood in the front door of the house.

'Jimin, can you go to Kims? Jennie prepared too much lasagne and she asked if we want some... I don't want Yoohyeon to walk around so late...'

'Sure dad! I will walk Dami and Yeonjun halfway to their place and drop by to Yoo on my way!'

'Do you want something to drink guys?' Baekhyun asked.

'No, thank you! But can I wash my hands?' Dami stood up, taking off her glove.

'Sure, darling. Come in...'

Jimin and Dami went to the house and Taehyung came to Jungkook and Yeonjun.

Jungkook stood up and Taehyung wanted to backhugged him but he was a bit shy with Yeonjun standing in front of them. So he just placed his hand on Jungkook's nape and started to play with it.

Yeonjun looked at Jungkook's hand without a glove.

'You are not a Holder?' he asked, surprised.

Jungkook opened his mouth, but Taehyung was faster to replied:

'He is my Sealer.'

Jungkook blushed a little.

Yeonjun's lips parted a bit.

'Awesome... I wonder when my Holder will appear.' he smiled, patting his chest.

'We are ready.' Jimin said, walking out of the house with Dami. 'Yeonjun you are living nearby, right?'

'I'm living in the same apartment complex as Dami's family. So we can go together.' he shrugged.

'Great! See you tomorrow, guys!'

They parted their ways. Jimin, Dami and Yeonjun went left and Jungkook and Taehyung went right.

Jungkook led his bicycle, leveling his steps with Tae. He was silent.

'Are you ok?' Taehyung asked. 'It looked painful...'

'Told you I'm fine...' Jungkook mumbled. 'Stop asking about it...'

'Isn't your elbow...'

'Taehyung.' Jungkook said warningly.

Taehyung frowned and stopped him, placing his hand on his wrist. He looked at Jungkook seriously.

'Why are you mad?'

'I'm not.'

'You are.'

'I'm not.'

'You are!'

'I'M NOT!'

Taehyung crossed his arms over his chest.

'You are...' he said.

Jungkook rolled his eyes.

'I don't like your new team. I don't like Hyunsik. I don't like when they call me "kid". I don't like you being in another school. And you haven't told me you invited all of them. I thought there would be only three of us there as always... But no... You and Jimin had to drag others.' he sulked and started to walk again.

Taehyung stood on his way, grabbing the bicycle to stop Jungkook.

'What's wrong with all of it?' he asked. He wasn't mad. He was curious.

Jungkook looked at the ground and shrugged.

'I don't know...' he said quietly. 'Well... Dami and Yeonjun hyung aren't bad... I just...' he shrugged again and whispered. 'I wish to be your age...'

'Well I prefer you being younger...' Taehyung smiled with a huge boxy smile.

'What? Why?' Jungkook frowned.

'Because you are cute this way...' Taehyung flicked Jungkook's chin upwards with his fingers.

'S-shut up!' Jungkook mumbled, blushing.

'Soooooo cuuteee...' Taehyung was teasing him, bending to catch Jungkook's gaze.

'Stop it!'

'The cutest!'

'Taeeeee!' Jungkook whined.

Taehyung giggled. He walked around Jungkook and sat on the bicycle rack.

'Now take me home, peasant! I'm beat!'

Jungkook snorted and sat on the bike.

'What a Princess you are sometimes, Tae...'

Taehyung embraced Jungkook's waist.

'Less talking more pedalling.' Taehyung ordered. 'I will think about rewarding you with an ice cream...'

'Chocolate?'

'Maybe...'

'Okay.' Jungkook moved his legs fast, making the wind blow their hairs.

Taehyung laughed.

'You are so easy to bribe, Koo...'

They were home in no time. Taehyung helped Jungkook to hide his bike and received a message from Jimin.

**Jimin: I'm deaf...**

**Tae: Why?**

**Jimin: From Yoohyeon scream... She broke my ear...**

**Tae: What happened?!**

**Jimin: She met Dami...**

**Tae: And what?**

Jimin sent him a picture.

**Jimin: They are soulmates.**

---

A short cute chapter about these Young souls and some new friends. 😈👿

Hoped you enjoyed 

And yeah. I didn't plan to show Yoongi until the half of the book so in a long time,

but well. Don't want you all to sulk and indeed I change the conception to make you feel the connection with him even if he is not directly involve.

And these meme is showing how we all are: 😁□□□□😒

BlairWitch💙

# Chapter 9: Samhain

**October 2062**

'I don't think it's a good idea...' Min Jaehyun said, looking at his brother, from his place beside his desk in Min's company.

'Why not? We have our traditions. Why shouldn't we celebrate them openly?' Min Kyung answered, raising his eyebrow.

'We can celebrate them in peace as always...'

'Samhain is the sacred holiday for Interdependents. Equality we want is not just half-assed permission to exist.'

Jaehyun rolled his eyes.

'Samhain is a sacred holiday that is always celebrated quietly with nature around. And you want to make some kind of shitshow out of it...'

Kyung sighed.

'I'm tired of hiding. Aren't you, Jae? We are not doing anything wrong!'

'I agree, but we don't need to shove our traditions into everyone's face! How anybody is dealing with their religions, culture and beliefs is their individual thing!'

'Yet Halloween is all over the world even if most of the people don't even know how it started!' Kyung said mockingly. 'We closed our children in a school, but they will graduate one day, you know? And what next? We will force them to hide? How will you explain to them that they can't be who they are after years, when your school was constantly teaching them that they should be proud of who they are!?'

Jaehyun sighed, looking through the window.

'But the press? Why do you want them? It's not a freaking 4th of July!'

'To show the world what we are doing openly! We will selectively choose who will attend, so we can control what and how they will show us... They can see how happy we are when we are celebrating and cherishing the souls of ancestors... It's a way to show our respect...' Kyung persuaded his older brother.

Jaehyun was playing with his pen, tapping it on the desk.

'Our children deserve this... Even the society can be so cruel to twist our Sacred Holiday seeing children around...'

Jaehyun sighed, looking thoughtfully at Kyung.

'I have condition...' he gave up in the end. He looked sternly at his brother. 'Keep Yoongi out of this. I don't want to have another argument with him. Taeil can take his place...'

'Fine. But I don't understand how you can let your son not support you... Our people see this. And they will start talking...'

'I don't care. How I deal with my children is my own business. Yoongi is my son and he can think whatever he wants just like you and me. 3EO is an organization not an army... We are having discussions, not orders...'

Kyung shrugged.

'Taeil will gladly fulfill his duties then. Gahyeon will be there?'

'If she will want...'

'You are unbelievable...' Kyung shook his head.

'Kyunie... I started 3EO to make them safe. Not unhappy.'

'Ok. As you wish. I will take care of the preparations with Handong...'

Min Kyung walked out. The room was silent for a moment.

'You can come out...'

Yoongi slipped from behind the furniture slowly with a dark expression.

'Thanks, dad...' he said, sitting in front of his father's desk.

'No need. I don't like this as much as you do... I wish things could be simpler...' Jaehyun pressed his head to the backrest of his armchair tiredly. '50 years ago you would be just a kid with a birthmark on your palm and nobody would be bothered by it. Nobody would know what this mark means. We all could live normal lives... in the shadows. Being just ourselves... Exposing Interdependants was the worst decision our ancestors could make and now we need to somehow clean their mess...'

'Dad...' Yoongi said quietly. 'I would really want to stand next to you... but not like

that. Not being a puppet... Not when things get worse instead of getting better...'

Jaehyun looked at his 16 year old son and frowned.

'What do you see when you are at school, Yoongi?' he asked seriously.

Yoongi was looking through the window for a long time.

'Things are changing...' he said cautiously.

'In what way?'

'The Holders... are getting more... protective... in a not so good way...' he finally said and slowly looked at his father.

'What are you talking about Yoongs?' Jaehyun leaned forward, concerned.

'You know... I know mom and Gahyeon and some other Sealers... but I've never thought about them as... weaker... then Holders...'

'Of course not! Sealers are Sealers because they are actually stronger...'

'I'm just saying... that... there are some circles... that think like that... and act like that... And I don't know why...'

Jaehyun had a sudden need to smoke.

'Is it bad?'

'Not yet...' Yoongi's short reply left a lot to think about.

Jaehyun stood up and put his hand on Yoongi's shoulder.

'Observe.' he said quietly. 'Don't tell anybody about it...'

Yoongi nodded.

Jaehyun smiled suddenly.

'Driving lessons in the evening?'

Yoongi's eyes widened.

'B-but I shouldn't... I'm not 18...'

Jaehyun smirked.

'I don't have the personal phone number of the Chief of Police and a garage full of

cars for nothing, you know?'

Yoongi showed him a devilish smile.

'Fine with me then.'

**31st of October 2062**

Jin and Namjoon parked their car on the forest road and 14 year old Taehyung jumped out of it. He looked at the car that stopped next to him and smiled when Jungkook got out of it. Taehyung knew the younger one was really excited. He was finally 12 and as every 12 year old *Eadar-eisimeileach* he could finally join the celebration of Samhain.

It was a simple celebration made in a few places close to nature around Seoul. Taehyung celebrated it twice already. But it was the first time Jungkook was here too.

Usually there was a fireplace and some old people were talking about souls and how they are grateful they can rejoin with their ancestors on this one night when the curtain between the material and immaterial world was the thinnest. They were talking about restoring the balance of cosmic energy and nature.

Taehyung usually didn't listen to them. He just enjoyed the magical moment of being so late at night in the forest, under the stars, with the fireplace.

Chanyeol parked his car behind Hoseok and Jimin jumped out of it.

'Finally we all can be here!' he said excitedly and grabbed Jungkook's and Taehyung's wrists to pull them deeper into the path. 'Come Kookie! You need to see this!'

'Jimin...' Baekhyun started, holding Jimin's hat in his hand, but his son was already gone. He facepalmed. 'This child...' he sighed.

The adults followed their kids slowly walking through the path that was lightened for them by Minji's light bubbles.

'Did you see the news?' Chanyeol asked Namjoon.

'Yeah...' Namjoon sighed. 'At this point I don't know if what they are doing is good or not...'

'Well, it depends on the tv station you watch...' Hoseok said. 'In some they are excited they can peek under the secrets of Interdependents and in others they are portraying it like some kind of religious cult celebration...'

'It's stupid.' Jin cut them without a doubt. 'Samhain is a quiet festival. Festival of the Dead. We should keep it low and respectful.'

'The shitshow they are doing won't do them any good...' Minji agreed with him.

They saw the flames between the trees and more people around it.

Minji waved to her parents and Siyeon and Bora, who joined them. Soon after Kai and Jennie found them in the crowd.

Jennie was looking at Yoohyeon who was glued like a puppy to Dami's shoulder.

'My daughter is behaving as she didn't talk with her soulmate for 3 hours on facecall today...'

'I like Dami. She has balls...' Kai smirked.

'Well technically she doesn't...' Minji nudged him with her shoulder.

'Oh, shut up! She does. She has these huge ass balls like you...'

'KAI!' Jennie shook her head. 'Behave like an adult, please!'

'Why do men think we need to have balls to be badass?' Minj didn't leave the topic.

'MINJI!' Jennie whined.

'True...' Hwasa embraced Minji's shoulder proudly.

'Don't encourage her!' Hoseok and Jiyong exclaimed at once.

'Ok, ok... Jinnie to the rescue...' Jin barged between them and grabbed Minji's shoulder. 'Come we will collect the little devils so they won't have stupid ideas...'

Jungkook, Taehyung, Yeonjun, Yoohyeon and Dami were talking excitedly. Each of them took out the small, thin white candles their parents gave them.

'Will you wish for your soulmate to appear, hyung?' Jungkook asked Yeonjun.

'No. I only wish for them to be happy and come to me at the right time...' Yeonjun answered. 'That's how the red string works, right? No matter when or where some meetings were meant to be.'

'Wise.' Jimin nodded. 'But they say sometimes you can feel the other soul at midnight during Samhain. Even being far away... So I hope I will feel it.'

'What if you won't? Maybe he or she hasn't been born yet?' Dami smirked.

'Don't say things like that!' Jimin exclaimed, terrified. '14 years age gap!? Now way in hell!'

'That was a good one, noo...' Jungkook stopped himself. He dared to call Dami 'noona' just once and she smacked his head so hard, he saw stars.

Taehyung wasn't happy about it...

But Dami, Jimin and Yeonjun were the trio that he allowed to be a bit closer with Jungkook. They often hang out together. Played games. Watched movies, had sleepovers.

'Ok, brats! It's midnight in 10. Come here...' Jin called them and they stood in front of the adults.

Minji lightened up the candles the kids were holding.

'No talking.' she reminded them. 'Listen to the wind and flames. Feel the air.'

Five children were standing in the line. Looking at the flames of their candles.

They couldn't see the middle of the meadow, where the fireplace was because of the crowd. But their families were there. And the silence that fell on the forest just before midnight was almost touchable.

'We are celebrating the festival of the dead... Rebirth of souls. And spiritual connection between what once was and what is.' someone said with a calm, steady voice, but still on the silent meadow the voice was perfectly heard. 'On Samhain the doors to the spiritual world are open. So we can appreciate what was before and hope for what will come. Let the flames guide the souls...'

There were five minutes of total silence.

Jungkook was looking at the flame and started to be a bit bored. He looked at Taehyung with the corner of his eyes wondering if he was too. But the older one wasn't looking at the flame. He had his head thrown back and was looking at the

sky, lit up by the moon. Jungkook looked at the moon too and at the same moment his electronic watch beeped for the full hour.

Two little flames over two candles...

...one held by Taehyung, second held by Jungkook...

went out.

Jimin was enchanted by the way the candle flame was moving in the darkness when he heard a death thud nearby. He looked shocked at Taehyung's and Jungkook's falling bodies that hit the ground.

His friends started to shake in some kind of attack.

Jin and Hoseok instantly fell to their knees next to the boys trying to wake them up. Hold them, do anything. Namjoon and Minji leaned on them looking terrified at the state the boys were in.

Jin lifted Taehyung's eyelids just to see his eyeballs moving left and right fast.

The commotion was rising. People started to look around to see what's happening.

'What's going on!?' Dami grabbed Jimin's shoulder.

'Dunno...' Jimin whispered terrfied.

Both unconscious bodies started to wriggle. Their limbs were moving and trembling.

'Jin!?' Minji urged.

'I don't know...' he said with a pale face. He fetched the little flashlight from his pocket and lightened Taehyung's pupils. But they didn't react to the light. 'Namjoon...'

Namjoon started to unzip his jacket to expose his chest, but then Jungkook's chaotically moving arm fell on Taehyung's hand. The trembling of their bodies stopped.

They intertwined their fingers together tightly.

They looked like they fell asleep... But suddenly the tears started to roll down their cheeks just to disappear in their hair.

Minji, Namjoon, Jin and Hoseok looked at each other. Jimin saw the worried look at their faces, thoughtful and concerned and turned to Dami, Yoohyeon and Yeonjun fast.

'Pretend to pass out!' he whispered fast.

'What?' Yeonjun asked.

'Just do it! Something is wrong!'

Hoseok looked at him, hearing his voice and nodded slightly.

Jimin fell to the ground. Dami, Yoohyeon and Yeonjun followed his lead.

Jennie almost ran to Yoohyeon, not knowing what they were doing, but Baekhyun stopped her and whispered to her ear:

'They are just pretending...'

'What's the hell?' Kai screamed-whispering.

'Something happened with Jungkook and Taehyung...' Baekhyun said. 'We shouldn't bring attention to them...'

Baekhyun, Chanyeol, Jennie, Kai, Sieyon and Bora fastly surrounded the children to keep the strangers' eyes away from them.

The crowd started to be more interested in what was going on and Minji with wide eyes looked at her father.

Jiyong stood in front of the whole scene and said calmingly:

'It's their first Samhain... It happened... The children are just overwhelmed...'

Hwasa stood next to him smiling calmingly.

'It's ok, we will take care of them...'

'Enjoy the night... Nothing to worry about...' Jiyong added.

In the meantime Jin pressed his ear to Taehyung's chest to hear the heartbeat but it was steady. As a human heartbeat during deep sleep...

Hoseok looked at the boys' joined fingers and gulped. They had to take them from here... He gently separated them looking at Jungkook's pale face. His son's body instantly arched in pain. But he didn't wake up.

Namjoon took Taehyung in his arms and Hoseok took Jungkook.

Chanyeol lifted Jimin, even though he knew his son was perfectly conscious right now. But he was a proud father at the moment. The way Jimin reacted to protect his friends without hesitation, made him proud.

Jin took Yeonjun from the ground. Baekhyun lifted Yoohyeon's slim body and Kai did the same with Dami.

They silently walked away from the crowd where Jiyong and Hwasa were still calming the people telling them that it happens with young children and it's nothing new. Siyeon and Bora stayed to help them.

Jennie embraced Minji when they followed the rest.

As soon as they entered the empty path Jimin opened his eyes.

'You can put me down, appa...' he said urgently.

Dami, Yoohyeon and Yeonjun jumped to the ground from the adults' arms that were holding them.

Jennie looked at Dami and Yeonjun.

'Call your parents... Ask them if you can sleep at Yoohyeon's. Nicely!'

Jimin looked at Jin and Minji.

'What happened to them?' he asked, worried sick.

'I don't know yet...' Jin said, looking at the backs of Namjoon and Hoseok, who were moving in the cars direction. He stroked Jimin's hair. 'Go home. I promise I will text you when they wake up...'

'Will they be okay?!' he asked angrily.

'I...' Jin gulped.

'Yeah, they will.' Minji said instead of him. 'Chimmy, we will take care of them.' she grabbed Jin's shoulder and looked at Kai, Baekhyun, Jennie and Chanyeol. 'We

will explain later!' She pulled Jin after her when they started to run through the forest.

'What the hell is going on!?' Jimin stomped his foot.

Chanyeol put a hand on his shoulder.

'I would like to know that too, son...'

'For now we can only wait...' Baekhyun stood next to them. 'Don't worry Jimin... Namjoon and Jin won't let anything happen to them. They are healers.'

Jimin was looking at the dark forest in front of him.

'They looked like they were in pain...' he whispered and wiped his eyes with the paws of his coat.

Jin ran to his house.

'Taehyung to his bedroom! Jungkook to ours!' he ordered.

'Not together?' Hoseok asked, surprised.

'Taehyung celebrated Samhain twice already. It happened because they were together this time...' Namjoon explained.

Minji nodded and she and Hoseok took Jungkook to the bedroom on the first floor.

Namjoon and Jin went upstairs with Taehyung.

Namjoon laid down Taehyung on his bed.

Jin fastly unsealed Namjoon's seal to take the bandages out and let Namjoon use his power. He took them and ran downstairs to Jungkook.

Namjoon pressed his warm hands to his son's head, then to his chest and belly. He was examining his state for a long time.

Everything was perfectly fine. He was in a deep sleep...

Hoseok stood in the door frame.

'Jin said that everything is ok. That Jungkook is just sleeping. How is Taehyung?'

'Same.' Namjoon leaned and kissed his son's forehead, which was covered in sweat. He covered him in a blanket. 'It's not a coma. It's just normal sleep...'

Taehyung cried out in his sleep, moving anxiously on the bed. He started to shake his head and mumble something.

Namjoon stroked Taehyung's hair calmingly.

'It's ok, Tae... Dad is here...'

Jin and Minji stayed with Jungkook while Hoseok and Namjoon were beside Taehyung. It took two hours for both boys to stop dreaming nightmares they couldn't wake them up from.

Jiyong, Hwasa, Siyeon and Bora were waiting in the living room, when the four tired, worried parents came there.

'Have anyone got any idea... What the hell happened?' Jin asked, sitting on the couch.

'We know who they are...' Jiyong said. When everybody looked at him, he explained. 'Old souls... We don't know how many lifetimes they had. We don't know what they've been through... and on the night of Samhain the curtain between material and spiritual worlds is lifted... Maybe they went to sleep because of the flashbacks...'

Jin hid his face in hands trying to hold his tears. Namjoon sat next to him, turned him and pressed his face to his own shoulder.

'It's too much for them...' he whispered.

Hoseok looked at the ground and sniffed. He turned to wipe his tears, but Minji was already next to him, joining her forehead with him.

The sudden knocking made all of them jump.

'It's 3 AM... what the hell?' Bora frowned and walked to the doors. She opened them and blinked surprised, seeing four pretty pissed teenagers.

And four pretty tired adults.

'We couldn't stop them...' Baekhyun explained.

'And honestly we didn't try...' Kai added.

'They are sleeping...' Bora said, letting them in.

'Then I will wake them up...' Jimin gritted his teeth.

'I think we all should sit down...' Namjoon sighed.

The rest nodded but Yoohyeon was looking inside the corridor that led to Taehyung's parents' bedroom.

'Kookie...' she whispered, when she saw a figure, walking slowly.

'Jungkook!' Jimin wanted to run to him but Jiyong grabbed him in half.

'Wait. Look at him...'

Jungkook looked confused as if he didn't recognize the place or the people around. His eyes were jumping from face to face, but he couldn't find what he was looking for.

He tilted his head and Jimin realized his eyes were green, not dark brown as always.

'Tariq...' he whispered.

He slowly turned to the stairs and looked at the top of it where Taehyung was standing.

Everybody held their breath when two boys were looking at each other.

From Taehyung's eyes tears were streaming down constantly.

'Tariq...' Jungkook whispered the unknown name again.

Taehyung made a step.

'You left me...' he said with grief.

Jungkook shook his head furiously.

'I didn't!'

Taehyung took another few slow steps downstairs.

'You left me... in hell... that was a life without you... Jiyan...' Taehyung said through teeth.

'That's not true!' Jungkook cried out, choking on his tears. 'I would never leave you!'

'Yet you did...'

Jungkook fell on his knees hiding his face in his hands.

'I didn't! Your father sold me...' Jungkook cried out. 'I tried to come back... I tried!'

Taehyung stopped his moves, shocked.

'Year after year I tried to come back to you, Tariq... No matter how much they punished me for trying to run away... Until they told me... It's my fault you killed yourself... And I didn't care anymore what they would do to me...'

Taehyung took the last few steps and kneeled in front of Jungkook.

'W-what?'

'I didn't leave you... I would never leave you...' Jungkook pressed his forehead to Taehyung's chest, crying his heart out. 'But you left me... in that world full of pain...'

Taehyung embraced him tightly.

'I didn't kill myself. I was looking for you Jiyan... Even after they've told me you betrayed me and left me. I was looking for you...'

Jungkook and Taehyung joined their foreheads.

'I was looking for you... till my last breath when I was an old man... I'm sorry that there was a part of me that hated you for so long, my beautiful Moon...' he whispered.

'I'm sorry I didn't come back in the end... my beautiful Morning Star...' Jungkook whispered, closing his eyes.

Their noses and lips brushed and Taehyung closed his eyes too.

Suddenly Jungkook blinked fast.

'T-Tae?'

Taehyung opened his eyes and blinked surprised too. He frowned, and cupped Jungkook's face.

'Why are you crying?!' he asked worried. 'What happened to you?!'

'Y-you... are crying too...' Jungkook gulped.

They realized how close their faces were and jumped away from each other blushing madly.

'W-what were you doing?' Jungkook asked in panick.

'What were YOU doing!?' Taehyung asked, getting up. He stretched his hand to help Jungkook to get up.

'I...' Jungkook frowned. 'I don't know...' he realized.

'We don't know either...' They heard Jimin's confused voice and turned around.

Their eyes widened seeing so many people staring at them with parted lips and dropped jaws.

'I actually have a question...' Dami raised her hand as if she was at school totally dumbfounded. 'Who the fuck is Tariq?'

'And who the fuck is Jiyan...' Kai said as dumbfounded as the 14 year old girl next to him.

'Language Young Man!' Hwasa smacked Kai's head.

'Why only me?!' he whined, massaging his scalp.

'Because as an adult you should be smarter!'

'Tariq?' Jungkook frowned, confused.

'Jiyan? Is he in our school or something?' Taehyung asked looking at Jimin questioningly.

Jimin was still hanging in half in Jiyong's grip looking like a sack of potatoes so he just looked at Tae with an 'are you kidding me dude' expression on his face.

Taehyung looked at Jungkook.

'Wait a minute! Weren't we in the forest?'

'We were!' the crowd in the living room answered unisono.

'And now we are here?'

'We are!'

Jungkook squinted his eyes.

'It's not funny! Stop bullying us!'

'Yeah! Tell us what happened!' Taehyung crossed his arms over his chest.

Jiyong chuckled and put Jimin down on his feet. He walked to the boys and put his hands on their shoulders.

'It seems you let go of some part of the pain that your souls were carrying... It's ok... ' he hugged them. 'It was just a memory...'

---

Helloooo!

Happy Taekook's Day! 💝💝🎊🎉❤❤

How was the chapter? Scary? Sad? Good? Bad?

A bit of knowledge for you:

Samhain - is a festival marking the end of the season and beginning of winter. According to Irish mythology, Samhain (like Bealtaine) was a time when the 'doorways' to the Otherworld opened, allowing supernatural beings and the souls of the dead to come into our world; while Bealtaine was a summer festival for the living, Samhain "was essentially a festival for the dead". Samhain is seen by some Wiccans as a time to celebrate the lives of those who have died, and it often involves paying respect to ancestors, family members, elders of the faith, friends, pets and other loved ones who have died. In some rituals the spirits of the dead are invited to attend the festivities.

Celebration of Halloween was influenced from Samhain.

The name **Tariq** is primarily a male name of Arabic origin that means ***Morning Star.***🌠

The name **Jiyan** in Arabic means: ***Name Of Moon; Reborn***. 👌

So we are sticking to our cute Teakook sun and moon theory.

I know Venus is normally called a morning star. But sun is a star and it shows up in the morning. Fight my logic xD. 😁

BlairWitch 💝

# Chapter 10: The Shadow of Samhain

**31st of October / 1st of November 2062, Seoul**

'It was just a memory...'

Taehyung blinked. Jungkook frowned.

'A memory?' they asked together, confused.

'You... don't remember?' Jiyong looked at them surprised.

They both shook their heads.

Jin, Namjoon, Hoseok and Minji looked at each other. They were relieved. So much pain was in their voices when they were in that strange state of mind they didn't want their sons to feel the pain from centuries ago, that two different people suffered enough already from.

'People it's 3 a.m. can anybody explain what is going on?' Chanyeol asked.

'We probably should...' Namjoon sighed, pressing his fingers to his eyes. 'Sit down everybody. Kookie, Tae you too...'

Something in his voice alerted Taehyung so he immediately made sure Jungkook wouldn't go an inch away from him. He pulled him to the armchair and they squeezed each other there.

'So first things first...' Namjoon looked at Jungkook and Taehyung. 'You two were always a little bit special even in Interdependents measure... You could recognize each other's souls instantly, when it's common to be able to do it when the person is around 5 or 6. Your mark is special too. Normally the marks are unique and as we told you it's similar to the first interdependents' - Taegan and Jeryn - mark...'

'Well it's not really similar...' Hoseok said, stroking Jungkook's hair. 'It's the same.'

'What does that mean?' Taehyung asked, looking at his palm with his reshaped at the moment mark.

'Probably that your power is really strong...' Jiyong explained simply.

'And that's why you sometimes can have dreams or flashbacks of the previous holders and sealers who worn this mark.' Jin added gently. 'That's what we suspect at least...'

Jungkook's eyes widened and he looked worried at his mom.

'Don't worry, Kookie, it doesn't mean that you are not you. You didn't inherit the characteristics, features or feelings they had. That only belongs to you... as an individual human being...' Minji smiled calmingly.

'Maybe some really meaningful or painful events from the past were carved out in your souls, so sometimes in dreams or on Samhain nights like yesterday, when your minds are wandering away from reality, these parts can surface, but nothing is wrong with that it won't affect who you are. Maybe just help you to understand each other more...' Namjoon said with a deep, steady voice, the boys knew they could trust.

So they nodded slowly, peeking at each other with corners of their eyes.

'But what actually happened today?' Jungkook asked.

'You passed out, out of nowhere! I got gray hair because of you!!' Jimin pointed at his shining blond head.

'Jimin.' Baekhyun's stern voice told him to shut up and let the adults explain in some kind of gentle way, so the kids won't get scared.

Jimin pouted and crossed his arms over his chest.

'As you know... Samhain is special event... it connects the souls from all the times.' Jin said slowly.

'When I was 17,' Siyeon started. '...during Samhain, I closed my eyes and I saw a girl in my mind. I saw her so real, trying to hide her giggles, with the other girl. Some years later I met Bora. And I knew it was her at that time. I didn't know her. Never saw her. But at that one night she was so real to me... as she is today... '

'You've never told me about this!' Bora gasped.

Siyeon shrugged.

'I forgot... But my point is... Samhain nights are different from the other nights of the year. Everything material is pushed back and everything connected to spirits is pulled forward.'

'That's right...' Jin nodded. 'So you fell asleep. And when you woke up - spirits from the past took over your body for a moment...'

They described to the boys what happened to them and told them about Tariq and Jiyan.

'I WAS POSSESSED?!' Taehyung screamed terrified.

'Dude you were talking like adults... With a strange accent...' Dami informed him.

'Jungkookie's eyes were green too...' Yoohyeon added.

'What?! I don't want to be possessed on every Samhain!' Jungkook panicked.

'Okay, okay! Calm down...' Hoseok raised his hands.

'Well, I can't guarantee it won't happen again one day...' Jiyong said. 'But let me ask you: how do you feel now?'

'I'm worried I will jump from the rooftop possessed by some asshole! How do you think I can feel like, grandpa!' Jungkook asked in a high pitched voice.

Jiyong giggled.

'Well... I think you feel happy... calm... When all the noises will die down around you, you will realize this...'

'I doubt it!' Taehyung crossed his arms over his chest.

'Oh?' Jiyong raised his eyebrow. 'So imagine this... You and Jungkook are separated, tortured each of you in other, cruel way. You don't know why you were separated. You don't know anything. You are dying with thoughts full of hate, guilt, regret, injustice and pain. Hating this one person you shouldn't ever hate. Oblivious to the hell the other is going through. You are leaving this world with your soul filled with lies and misunderstandings. And your spirit can never rest in peace. And then you have this one chance. Only one - to clear everything and get this peace your spirit was robbed off... wouldn't you take it?'

'Dad...' Minji growled warningly.

But Taehyung was looking at Jiyong with a thoughtful face. Dragon smiled.

'You see? You helped some part of your soul to let go of the pain and hate you weren't aware of. Doesn't it make you happy and calm?'

'I-... I guess...' Taehyung whispered. 'But I would never hate Koo!'

'Yeah! And I wouldn't just give up. I would just kick their asses!' Jungkook gritted his teeth. 'Mom taught me how!'

'That's right boys... that is proof that you are totally different people. You are not Tariq and Jiyan. Their circumstances, we don't know about, were different, their surroundings and people that shaped their characters were different as well... You

are not and never will be the copy of the previous owners of your mark.' Namjoon smiled.

'That's too much for my head at 4 a.m.' Kai sighed.

'Yeah, totally we should go to sleep...' Chanyeol sighed. 'Yeonjun is almost dozing off...'

'I'm not!' Yeonjun jumped on his feet, blinking fast. He looked at Jungkook and Taehyung. 'You are ok right?'

'I am...' Jungkook shrugged.

'Me too...' Taehyung nodded.

'So can I get the pillow, blanket and some part of the floor I won't disturb laying on?' Yeonjun asked with hope.

Beakhyun laughed and embraced him with his arm.

'You can even get the part of the floor on which Jimin's bed is standing... Come Yeonie...'

'Guys...' Jin said with concern.

All of them looked at him when they noticed worry in Jin's and Minji's eyes.

Jennie patted Jin's shoulder.

'Don't worry... We will be silent as the grave...'

'Yup...' Dami shrugged. 'Nothing special about it when you think of it... It's not like this will make them glued to each other more than they already are, because it is impossible...'

'DAMI!' Taehyung screamed and Jungkook's face was covered in red.

She chuckled maliciously walking out after Kai, Jennie and Yoohyeon.

'I will come in a minute appa...' Jimin said to Chanyeol looking at his besties.

The adults dispersed around the house leaving the boys alone.

Jungkook and Taehyung walked Jimin to the front doors where he looked at them seriously.

Without a word he slowly lifted his hand and connected his thumb and index finger together.

'This close...' he said with a low, dangerous voice. Then on his lips a smirk appeared and he exclaimed. 'Your lips were this close!'

He ran outside before Taehyung, with a beetroot color face, could grab him to beat the shit out of him. He fastly sat in his parents car yelling:

'Love you, lovelies!'

Taehyung shut the door with a loud bang, not able to look at Jungkook, whose cheeks were pink as rose petals.

'H-he was joking...' he stammered.

'Y-yeah...' Jungkook pressed his palms to his warm cheeks.

'I... I-I... wouldn't...'

'Y-You wouldn't?'

'I-I... m-mean...'

'Y-yeah...' Jungkook gulped.

The salvation from the embarrassment came in Hwasa, who walked out from the kitchen.

'It's time to sleep, boys! Go to bed fast!'

'Yes Ma!' Taehyung and Jungkook immediately agreed, without a blink.

Jungkook ran to his house waiting for his parents to come back from Kims' house and Taehyung ran upstairs to hide his head under the pillow.

When they were laying in their beds in quiet houses, when the Morning Star appeared in the night sky to say hello to the Moon, they felt some kind of happiness, calmness and relief that lulled them to sleep.

**31st of October 2062, Daegu**

Yoongi wore his black jacket, put a black mask on his face and pulled the hood over his eyes. He wanted to join the Samhain celebration, so he just hid in the crowd present on school's ground.

Min's School was located in the west side of Daegu city center, in the huge park his parents created, heavily guarded by security 24/7. So when his family drove there, he got out of the house and took the bus to school. The security was under his uncle's commands, and he didn't want anybody to be informed about his present, so he just went to the back of the grounds where the guards had a rare round, climbed the fence and jumped over it.

He looked at the center of the park and mixed with other people, the celebration was indeed kept with low profile and in respect as always. He was glad they didn't make it a shitshow... His family was standing in the front. His father started to talk just before midnight. There were no prayers as being an Interdependent was not a religion. Just one of the people was starting to talk about tradition and souls of ancestors.

Some old lady looked at Yoongi, smiled and fetched something from her pocket. Yoongi blinked seeing, she was offering him a slim white candle to hold.

He took it hesitantly and she lightened his candle from her own.

'Let the light of flames guide the souls...' the granny smiled at him and patted his wrist before closing her eyes.

'Thank you...' he whispered, smiling bashfully under his mask.

He closed his eyes.

To make it more dramatic Kyung brought the old clock that was announcing 12 dongs at the full hour.

Yoongi's heartbeat matched the sound of the clock. When suddenly under his eyelids he saw a small hand holding the candle, looking at the candle. He didn't see the face, just the little hands. But he heard the voice in his mind singing "*Just let me looooveee youuuuu...*". The voice was so clear and beautiful. It was just a phrase as if the person absend-mindendly hummed it in their mind. But it brought something like a wave of comfort to Yoongi. It was such a beautiful voice...

12 beats of the clock ended

He opened his eyes not knowing how his gaze softened when he looked at the flame of the candle he was holding.

The main part of the event was over. People started to mix with each other. Samhain was only event were lot of interdependents were in one place so they share their thoughts in small groups, talk about past, their memories, their powers.

It wasn't fancy. Just a quiet casual talk with people that could understand each other, even not knowing each other personally.

Yoongi was roaming around eavesdropping on some conversation. Some smart words. Some silly ones.

The night was a bit chilly so he put his hands in his pockets. He saw his parents talking with the press calmly and Gahyeon with Taeil that were smiling talking with some other people at school and reporters were taking pictures of them.

Everything seemed okay so he turned his steps to leave the place. He was almost on the path to the back of the school, when with the corner of his eyes he saw a light flying through the fence and reaching inside the crowd. Next one was a bottle filled with alcohol and fire that exploded between the people.

He ran back looking for Gahyeon. The people started to panic.

The sound of the car leaving with screeching of tires was heard along with the offenses.

'GO TO HELL INTERDEPENDENTS!!'

Yoongi saw Taeil pulling Gahyeon, running outside the panicked crowd. His eyes searched for his parents, who were trying to deal with the panic, screaming calming words.

His uncle Kyung, took the lead:

'We need someone who can use water!!' he screamed and immediately two couples ran to him, holding their weapons and ready to use their power.

The press went crazy getting the unexpected material, talking about the attack and how the interdependents dealt with it. How, present at the event, even only 12 year old children were enraged and scared.

Yoongi reached Gahyeon and grabbed her shoulder.

'Are you okay?!' he asked.

She screamed unexpectedly, not recognizing him at first, under the hood and in a mask.

'It's me!' he shook her, grabbing her arms, and looking for any injuries. She had dirt on her face and the sleeve of her jacket was dark from ashes.

'Oppa!' Gahyeon sighed with relief and hugged him.

'Oh, look who decided to show up...' Taeil said coldly.

Taeil was taller than Yoongi and a year older. He was his hyung, but he and

Yoongi were more like friends from childhood so he didn't bother to call him with titles.

'Shut up! I'm taking her home!'

'Yeah sure! Hide when we will be dealing with this mess!' Taeil growled. 'They fucking attacked us! Aren't you bothered by it?!'

'Gahyeon's safety comes first...' Yoongi answered calmly, pulling his sister after himself.

'We should tell mom...' Gahyeon said.

Yoongi looked at his parents who were approached by his uncle and his wife - Chorong. He turned his steps to them hearing, Kyung's yelling:

'Am going after them! These bastards Jaehyun!'

'Don't do anything reckless Kyung! You brought the press here so deal with them!'

'You will just let it slide like that?!'

'No, but we need to calm people down first. They were here on our invitation with their children! We guaranteed their safety!'

'That's what I'm talking about! We should haunt this assholes down to show that they can't do something like that without a punishment!'

'And what kind of punishment you are talking about!' Jaehyun asked with rage.

'STOP IT!' Handong stopped the yelling between the two brothers. 'Jae, he has a point we can't just leave them like that. We need to show that we will deal with it rightfully according to the country law...'

'The police should do it...' Jaehyun insisted.

'I won't harm them. I will just hand them to the police intact.' Kyung said calmly. 'But we need to do something...'

'It will look good if we will show that after what they've done we still act calm and just brought them to the court...' Chorong agreed with her husband.

'Dad...' Yoongi moved closer to them with Gahyeon.

Jaehyun's eyes fell on his little girl - scared, with dirty clothes and burnt jacket sleeves, and his eyes became cold. He looked at Kyung.

'Ok. Do it. But take some willing people with you and do it quietly...' he said.

'Of course... Taeil will help you deal with the press...' Kyung nodded and Chorong moved into the crowd.

'Are you okay sweetheart?' Jaehyun embraced his daughter.

'Yes, dad... Taeil protected me.'

'Good.' he kissed her forehead.

'I'm taking Gahyeon home...' Yoongi informed his parents.

'It's too dangerous...' Handong protested.

'It's more dangerous here than on the streets now, mom...'

'No. I will call the driver. He will take you home.' Handong said sternly, without leaving the place for argument.

'Fine. We will wait near the gate.' Yoongi nodded.

He squeezed Gahyeon's hand and pulled her to the exit. Few minutes later the limousine approche the gate and they hide inside.

Yoongi was silent, looking through the dimmed glass of the car windows at the quiet streets.

'It was scary...' Gahyeon said.

'Sorry I wasn't there... Again.' he said with grief in his voice. 'I won't make the same mistake next time...'

'It's ok. I know you don't like to be in the spotlight...'

'I don't like even more, seeing you scared...' he answered gently.

'Do you think these people will be punished?'

'I hope so.' he said with a cold voice.

Sometimes he didn't like his uncle's way of dealing with things. But he agreed with him this time. They shouldn't let it slide just like that. They were innocent and attacked without a reason. Just like Gahyeon years back...

And one thing he knew for sure... putting his family in danger was unacceptable.

**1st of November 2062, Seoul**

Namjoon slept like 3 hours after all the night events when the phone woke him up. He looked at the phone and frowned seeing the President of the International Council of Interdependants calling him.

He answered the call from Bang Yongguk.

'Yes?'

'Namjoon... 3EO members and their guests were attacked during Samhain...'

Namjoon jumped on the bed, waking Jin up.

'WHAT?!'

'Yeah... They are all over the news...'

Namjoon got up off the bed and ran to the living room, to turn on the tv, pressing the home to his ear.

*'The events that took place on the night of 31 October to 1 November shocked the whole country. The festival of Samhain celebrated in silence by Interdepents was disrupted by riots. Fire flares and Molotov cocktails were used. The crowd of people, including school children, was shocked by the sudden attack. Reports also indicate that windows were smashed in several houses belonging to Interdependents. Let's take a look at the coverage of the events...'*

'What are we going to do?' Namjoon asked.

'We can't leave it like that... They are our people too. And this is the dealbreaker...'

'We need to at least show the government that ICI is on 3EO's side in this case...'

'Exactly... It's just Daegu now... What if it will spread to the whole country? Seoul is safe for now, because from the beginning it was the city of knowledge and enlightenment.'

'We need to be really careful. We are balancing between not wanting to start a civil war and protecting Interdependents...'

'Will you fly to Daegu?'

Namjoon sighed.

'I will...'

'You should take Jin with you... In any case.'

'I...'

'Holders and Sealers can use their powers being toghether. I won't sent you there without a backup...'

Namjoon turned around to see hi husband looking at him knowingly.

'Yeah. We will go togheter...'

---

Hiiii...😊

Sorry I'm so late. I had work the whole weekend. 😔😔😔

I will publish next chapter sooner than it's scheduled and it will be a cute one.☺□□□

BlairWitch💙💙

# Chapter 11: New Friend

**December 2062**

Namjoon and Jin visited Daegu and met with Jeahyun and Handong. Namjoon, as the representative of ICI standing next to Jaehyun at the press conference clearly said that ICI won't stay silent in front of direct attacks at Interdependants and they will make sure that the law will treat everyone equally and any ambush on Interdependents will be judged by the court exactly the same way as it should for any other citizens.

Jaehyun, Namjoon, Jin and Handong talked a lot about the situation and the way to calm the moods of society down.

Kyung found the people responsible for the attack during Samhain and as he promised he turned them intact to the local police.

Namjoon promised to visit Daegu during their process to keep an eye on the court. The threat of the representative of ICI present as an observer was a huge deal. Any judge that would try to keep the judgment mild would have a great problem on his head.

But now they were back in Seoul. The snow was falling outside the windows and both Kim's and Jeons' houses were decorated for Christmas with lights and garlands.

Jin and Hoseok were in the kitchen while Minji and Namjoon were keeping an eye on the boys who were decorating the Christmas tree.

'The angel or the star on top?' Taehyung asked, looking in the box filled with bubbles and colorful chains.

'Angel.' Jungkook decided without a doubt.

'Why?' Taehyung frowned, picking up the star he liked more.

'Tae on top.'

'What?' He looked at Jungkook with a dumbfounded face.

'You are an angel.' Jungkook said, standing on the chair to put the angel on top of the tree.

'I thought I was the sun...'

'You are a sun yeah... but you are an angel too...'

Taehyung chuckled.

'You don't make sense, Koo...' he shook his head. 'Why are you calling me an angel?'

'Because you are one...' Jungkook said stubbornly.

Taehyung sighed with a smile and just let it slide. He put another bubble on the tree, feeling a lightly tickling feeling inside his stomach.

'Then you are a bunny...' Taehyung smirked teasingly. 'Do we have a bunny figure?'

Jungkook glared at him.

'I'm not!'

'You are...'

'I'm not!'

'Bunny!'

'Bear!'

'Baby bunny!'

'Baby bear!'

'Lil bunny bun!'

'Taeeeee!' Jungkook whined, glaring at him.

'Koooo!' Taehyung mocked him, smiling widely.

'Hyung!!'

Taehyung gasped.

'Don't you dare play the 'hyung' card Jeon Jungkook!'

Jungkook smirked.

'Why not? You are my hyung, right?'

Taehyung smacked his head.

'Call me 'hyung' one more time and I won't talk to you...' Taehyung pouted.

Jungkook looked at him with widened eyes.

'B-but...'

'What an interesting conversation boys...' Namjoon shook his head in amusement. 'And he should call you 'hyung' at least at school and outside the house, Tae...'

Taehyung snorted, but under the stern gaze of his father he rolled his eyes.

'Fine. There are some exceptions then...'

Jungkook sighed with relief.

Minji put Santa hats on everyone's heads. She herself was a cute elf with fake ears.

'Go, help Jin and Hobi, bring the dinner from the kitchen, boys...' she said, putting the plates on the table.

Teahyung instinctively grabbed Jungkook's waist to help him jump off the chair, as he had done many times before, but somehow... it made the tickling sensation in his stomach more intense this times.

He grunted, taking his hands away fast.

Jungkook tilted his head with a bunny smile.

'Thank you, angel!'

Taehyung squinted his eyes.

'You little...'

'Don't start again. I beg you!' Minji stopped them.

And Taehyung had to finish the bickering with a pinch on Jungkook's arm before running to the kitchen, chased by the angry bunny.

After they ate dinner and facetime with Minji's parents and Parks and messaging wishes to Yoohyeon, Dami and Yeonjun, Hoseok clapping his hands excitedly ran upstairs screaming:

'I will bring the gifts!'

'I think Hobi was a Santa in his previous life...' Jin giggled. 'He is always so excited...'

'That would make Minji Miss Santa...' Namjoon laughed.

'What's so funny? I would be a badass Santa's wife! I would train all elves to be my little assassins...' Minji nodded to herself, probably planning in her head her assassins squad...

'I...' Jin gulped. 'That's quite scary...'

Hoseok ran downstairs. His head wasn't visible from all the packages and bags he was holding in his arms.

He put everything on the couch and beckoned them with his hands.

'Open up! Open up!' He handed the package to Jungkook and then next one to Taehyung. 'These are from all of us...'

Taehyung and Jungkook opened their gifts excitedly but each in a quite unique way. Taehyung carefully untied the ribbon and took the colorful paper. Jungkook on the other hand tore the paper fast with his fingers and gasped.

Both boys blinked at two cameras they were holding.

'Now you can take pictures and do your own recordings as much as you want...' Jin smiled gently at two boys that were enchanted by the expensive gifts.

Jungkook jumped on Hoseok.

'Thank you! Thank you so much! It's amazing!'

'You are welcome...' Hoseok giggled when Jungkook ran to kiss Minji's cheek.

Taehyung hugged Namjoon and Jin saying quiet 'thank yous' more times than it was needed.

All of them unpacked the rest of the gifts, but boys were soon back to their cameras, taking pictures of everyone and everything, and checking different settings.

Jin brought hot choco for everyone and they were drinking while watching the christmas special shows on tv when Jungkook asked.

'Can we go outside to check how to take night photos?' he asked, looking at Hoseok with pleading eyes.

'I...' Hoseok was weak for those eyes and nobody could actually blame him. 'I guess...'

Jin sighed.

'15 minutes in the garden. Hats and gloves included.'

'Thanks dad!' Taehyung smiled widely, running to fetch his jacket.

Jungkook and Taehyung went outside and looked at the starry sky. It was so cold their breath changed into steam, but they weren't bothered by it trying to catch good light.

Jungkook put down his new camera and let it hang from his neck on the belt.

He looked at Taehyung, who was still pressing the camera to his face trying to get a good picture of the stars.

Jungkook gulped and was glad it's so cold. He could always say his cheeks were red from the frost.

'Tae...'

Taehyung looked at him with a boxy smile.

'It's amazing, right?!'

'Yeah...' Jungkook nodded and put his hand into the pocket of his jacket. 'I... actually have something for you...' he said, proud of himself he didn't stammer.

'Oh?' Taehyung let his camera down too.

'It's nothing special. It's just... We did during the art classes and... Well... Don't expect much... I just...' Jungkook pushed a small object into Taehyung's hand.

Taehyung looked at it and gasped. His eyes widened.

'You did it by yourself?!' he exclaimed, impressed.

'Y-yeah...' Jungkook looked at the ground while Taehyung with excitement shook his gift and giggled when the fake snow in the snowball started to fall on two little bears.

Taehyung hugged Jungkook tightly.

'You are squeezing me!' Jungkook laughed.

'Because I'm cold...' Taehyung answered, squeezing Jungkook even more.

Jungkook a bit shyly embraced Taehyung too.

'Thank you, Koo...' Taehyung said quietly. 'It's beautiful...'

'You're welcome...'

Taehyung let him go after a while.

'I put something for you on your desk...' Taehyung scratched his nape embarrassed. 'I actually did that too in my arts classes...'

'Oh... really?!' Jungkook jumped on his feet wanting to go to his room as soon as possible.

'I don't know if it's good tho...'

'It sure is!' Jungkook didn't have any doubt.

'15 minutes, boys!!' Minji called through the window.

'Coming!' they both yelled at the same time, looked at each other and giggled, scrunching their noses.

When Kims got back to their house and his parents went to sleep, Jungkook reached his bedroom excitedly and ran to his desk. His eyes widened. There was a small glass ball with floral carnations inside. It smelled wonderfully. The flowers were purple, pink and red. Taehyung left the little bottle of scented oil next to it so Jungkook figured that the scent came from the oil and he could use it for a long time.

It was really thoughtful of him, as he knew how sensitive to scents Jungkook is.

Jungkook touched the fake flowers that looked and were soft like real ones, gently. He held the glass in his hands and walked to his balcony doors. He saw the little lamp was still turned on in Taehyung's room on the opposite side.

Taehyung was looking at the snowglobe, shaking it from time to time. He raised his eyes at Jungkook and smiled.

Jungkook lifted the floral carnation with a bashful smile and showed a fingersheart to Taehyung.

Taehyung nodded and showed him the fingersheart too, just before he turned off his light.

Jungkook stuck his nose to the glass bowl and inhaled the gentle scent of white flowers, as was written on the etiquette of the oil.

He put the gift on his night table and changed into pajamas. He turned to his side

and was looking at the purple flowers until his eyes became too heavy to stay open.

**March 2063**

Jungkook was more than happy. It was March. Freaking finally!

March means he is starting his Middle School. The same school Taehyung and Jimin were in. He had a whole year in front of him, before they would start their High School.

So he was more than delighted walking to school with Taehyung, Jimin and Yoohyeon, with their usual bickering every day.

They waved at Dami and Yeonjun waiting for them at the school entrance.

'Bathroom.' Yoohyeon grabbed Dami's arms and disappeared inside.

Boys rolled their eyes. Taehyung nudged Jungkook with his shoulder.

'See you at lunch...' he said and he, Jimin and Yeonjun walked to the seniors' classes. Jungkook walked to his own classroom and unpacked his things, waiting for Yoohyeon. He checked if he had everything needed for the eliminations for new basketball teams players. He sighed with relief when everything was there.

The classes almost started and Yoohyeon wasn't there yet so he started to worry, when she barged in fast, pulling a wrist of a boy. She brought the new guy to Jungkook, smiling happily.

'I found a lost puppy!' she informed.

Jungkook looked at the new person, who was probably even more shy than he. The boy had sparkling blue hair and was looking at the ground not knowing what to do and how to react.

'Yoo... you can't call others 'puppies'...' Jungkook facepalm.

'But he is so cute...' Yoohyeon pouted. 'His hair color is almost like Dami's...'

'Umm...' Bluehaired boy gulped and blushed.

'Oh, I didn't ask about your name...' Yoohyeon smiled. 'Who are you?'

'You just kidnapped him from the corridor?' Jungkook chuckled.

'Well, he was looking for our class so I brought him here...' Yoohyeon shrugged.

'I'm... Choi Soobin... I was sick so I couldn't start school with everybody two weeks ago...'

Oh, hi! I'm Kim Yoohyeon and this is Jeon Jungkook. Nice to meet you!' Yoohyeon said cheerfully.

Jungkook stood up.

'Sit here with Yoohyeon, she is good at english and you feel better with someone you already know...'

'Oh no... It's not...'

'It's ok.' Jungkook assured him and smirked. 'She is talking non stop during classes and putting me into trouble so have fun dealing with her...'

'How dare you, Kookie!!' Yoohyeon whined. 'I will tell Dami!'

Jungkook calculated quickly was teasing Yoohyeon worth his hair being pulled out from his head and decided it was not...

'She always gives tips during exams too so sitting with her is actually priceless...' Jungkook smiled and Yoohyeon beamed with happiness.

'But it's your seat...'

'I will just sit in the back by the window...'

Jungkook did what he said, peeking at how Soobin was fast to relax with outgoing, cheerful Yoohyeon. He wasn't so talkative and open aaaand... he smiled internally when he sat next to the window that had the perfect view on the other part of the school building that Taehyung's classroom was. If he will be lucky he would be able to spot him in the corridor or in the classroom.

He smiled to himself. Being in the same school again was truly the best and he wanted to get anything he could from it.

Yoohyeon and Jungkook practically adopted Soobin. During the lunch break they were going to the school canteen, dragging him with each other. He tried to protest out of politeness, hearing they are going to meet their friends, but Yoohyeon brushed him off, saying: *don't be stupid, Binnie! You will love them!*

Jungkook glared at Soobin when he stood next to him. This guy was tall. As tall as most of the seniors...

'Do you play basketball?' he asked, a bit worried about his elimination to the team.

Soobin shook his head.

'I'm not really good at sports...' he said shyly, scratching his nape. 'I started to grow fast last year and still don't have good coordination...'

'Oh?' Jungkook felt a bit guilty. ' You should try it! Basketball. Volleyball! Your height would be a great advantage!'

'I will pass...' Soobin giggled.

'Do you have your own lunch or do you want to buy something?' Yoohyeon asked.

'Umm... buy. I was so nervous, I forgot half of the things...' Soobin blushed.

'Ok. Come with me then!' Yoohyeon pulled Soobin to the line.

Jungkook was looking at them, shaking his head with amusement and looked around to find the rest of their pack after.

He saw Dami's hair and noticed she was talking with Jimin. He looked around but he couldn't find Taehyung anywhere, so he moved to them, pouting a bit when someone embraced him.

'How were the classes?' Taehyung asked.

'Boring...' Jungkook answered, feeling the tingling sensation in his abdomen. 'We are at school, Tae...' he whispered a bit hesitantly, looking at the floor.

'So? I had an unexpected test. I need to recharge my batteries before I will burst out crying...' Taehyung squeezed him tighter.

Jungkook brushed his thumb over Taehyung's palm that was placed on his chest, a bit happy and shy.

'Do you have your lunch?' Jungkook asked.

'Mhm... I made it by myself because dad had a night shift...'

'Is it eatable?' Jungkook giggled.

'Hey! I can make a sandwich!'

'I know, I know... Wanna change?'

'Nope. We can share both...'

'Okay...'

'You change your seat in the classroom right? I saw you...'

'Oh?' Yeah... We have a new boy in our class and me and Yoo adopted him...'

Taehyung frowned.

New guy? And Jungkook "adopted" him...

His shy, not so ready to meet new people, Jungkookie brought a new guy to their pack? Saying Taehyung was not happy about it was an understatement...

'See... They are there...' Jungkook pointed to Yoohyeon and the new boy that was probably as tall as Tae who was two years older.

'Hmmm...' Taehyung mumbled. 'Is he one of us?'

'I didn't ask...' Jungkook replied, shrugging. 'But he had gloves...'

They walked to the table where Jimin and Dami were already sitting.

Jungkook took out his lunch, and shortly after Yoohyeon came with Soobin.

'Everyone! Meet Choi Soobin...' she said cheerfuly. 'Here is Dami - my Queen,' she started to introduce everyone. 'Jiminie - my oppa, You already know Jungkookie and this guy is Kim Taehyung.'

She sat next to Dami as always and Soobin shyly said 'Hi...'.

'You can sit with us...' Jimin smiled. 'Tae, move your bag...'

'What about Yeonjun?' Taehyung asked, not really keen on taking his bag from the last free chair.

'Who is Yeonjun?' Soobin asked.

'I am Yeonjun...'

The unexpected voice from behind his back made Soobin jump on his feet. He

turned around fast to greet the new person but the trace in his hands faltered and the glass with water fell directly on Yeonjun's school, white shirt.

'Cold!!' Yeonjun exclaimed.

Soobin went pale as the sheet.

'Oh my GOD!!! I'M SO SO SO SORRY!!!' SO SORRY!!'

'What have you done!' one of Yeonjun's classmates yelled at Soobin. She looked at the wet front of Yeonjun's shirt and glared at Soobin.

'I-I'm sorry...' Soobin crouched down to get the broken glass from the floor.

Dami, Jimin and Taehyung looked at their classmate warningly.

'He didn't do it on purpose, Yewon.' Dami said dangerously.

'Yeah, Yeonjun scared him...' Jimin pointed out.

'For someone so tall, he gets scared easily...' She mocked Soobin, whose ears got red.

'You don't make sense for real...' Taehyung glared at her.

She fetched the handcarechief from her bag and stretched it to Yeonjun, who shook his head.

'No need, thanks...' he brushed her off and cranched down next to Soobin.

'I'm really sorry, hyung...' Soobin said almost in tears, getting the glass from the floor. It was his first day and he already messed up.

'Hey... it's totally fine!' Yeonjun said, smiling lightly, trying to catch the gaze that was looking stubbornly at the floor.

Yewon snorted, turned around and walked away.

Taehyung, feeling guilty about his mean behavior from earlier, patted Soobin's shoulder.

'Don't worry. I will lend him my spare shirt. I have it in my locker.'

'It's not a big deal... It's just water... it will dry...' Yeonjun said amused.

Soobin grabbed the piece of glass and hissed.

'Oh my god! Be careful...' Jimin instantly ran to him. 'You hurt yourself! Just let

me do the rest...'

'I have band aids...' Dami, fetched a box from her bag. She threw it to Yeonjun, who caught it swiftly.

'Can I remove your glove?' Yeonjun asked, taking the band aid from the box.

Soobin hesitantly raised his eyes, not knowing what to do. His glove was torn and stained with blood. He looked at Yeonjun's wet shirt that was perfectly seen through now and his eyes widened.

When Yeonjun reached for his hand he grabbed his own wrist to prevent him from taking the glove off.

'Soobin, are you perhaps passing out when you see blood?' Jungkook asked, concerned.

'No, no.. I just... I will deal with it myself...' Soobin stammered, wanting to get up.

'Don't be ridiculous... We all are Interdependents here...' Jimin rolled his eyes and just took the glove of Soobin's palm.

'No!' he protested, but when the glove was off, he just turned his head to not look at Yeonjun with his face being pale and his cheeks covered in pink.

*Perfect!* He thought to himself. *Just fucking perfect! You just spilled water at him, clumsily hurt yourself and didn't even look him in the eyes! How more humiliating the situation can get?!*

Clenching his eyelids, Soobin was waiting for any reaction.

But he didn't expect to hear the soft giggles.

'I knew you would come to me at the right time...' Yeonjun said and touched the mark on Soobin's hand.

Soobin looked at him hesitantly.

Yeonjun smiled and bumped their foreheads together.

'Hi, Holder!'

Soobin blinked and shyly smiled.

'H-hi...'

Jungkook and Taehyung had to forcefully separate Soobin and Yeonjun after the

break was over. Yeonjun was trying to convince Soobin to skip the afternoon period, to talk, but Jimin sternly said 'You are not skipping classes, Choi Yeonjun!' and Jungkook and Yoohyeon managed to drag Soobin to their own class. He wasn't talking much during their lunch, he was just staring at Yeonjun and listening to what he was blabbering about.

After the classes were over Jungkook was fast to pack his things.

'I'm heading to basketball eliminations. See you tomorrow!'

'Will Yeonjun-hyung be there?' Soobin asked Yoohyeon shyly.

'Don't think so. He is not in the team. He prefers skateboarding...'

'Oh...' Soobin held his head.

'Don't be sad. Dami texted me, they are waiting for us...'

'For us?'

'Mhm! We are going home together as much as we can... But Jimin, Taehyung and Jungkook have basketball training so they won't join us today.'

Jungkook was fast to change into his sportswear and went to the gym a bit nervous. Jimin and Taehyung were on the team and there was also a captain the same age as them. And some reserve players from the second year. He really wanted to be in the same team with them again.

When he walked to the sports hall Jimin waved to him, but Taehyung, who was talking with the captain, just glanced at him. He didn't even smile as always.

Jungkook frowned. Did he make him mad?

He took a deep breath and sat on the bench next to other freshmans.

'Ok, my name is Park Serim, we are playing 5 against 5.' The captain informed them. 'Taehyung and Jimin will be leading the teams. I will observe.'

Jimin and Taehyung played rock, paper scissors to decide who will start. Taehyung was first.

And as fast as he said the first name, Jungkook's heart squeezed painfully in

anxiety. He was suspected to be chosen by Taehyung. But instead he heard Jimin's voice.

'Jungkook.'

He felt angry.

*What kind of anime betrayal the fuck was that?* he thought, walking to Jimin. He fastly regained his composure focusing on one thing: winning against Taehyung's team.

And he did. He was taking the ball from Taehyung every time he got the chance. And he scored or helped to score as many points as he was able to in 40 minutes of the tiring game.

When he heard the whistle he threw the ball on the ground and looked at the captain.

'Ok, people! It was a nice game! Leave the contact details to Jimin. I will contact you with the results.'

Jungkook nodded and bowed before going out to the changing room. He fastly took a shower and packed his bag.

'I think you did great, Kookie!' Jimin screamed from the other cabin. 'We will for sure be in one team soon! Am excited!'

'Thanks, hyung...' Jungkook mumbled, not really in a good mood.

'Maybe we will drop by the skatepark on our way? Or arcade?'

'Sure...'

'Wait for me!' Taehyung screamed, running under the shower.

'We wouldn't go without you, TaeTae...' Jimin giggled.

They were in an arcade for an hour playing different games when Taehyung felt something was odd. And by something he meant someone...

Jungkook hadn't looked at him even once. He was playing only with Jimin with the games that required two players and he was answering him with short replies only when he had too.

So when they were playing darts, it was Jimin's turn and both of them were standing, waiting for their turn. Taehyung took a few steps and stood behind Jungkook so close, his chest almost touched the younger's back.

'Are you mad at me?' he whispered, anxiously.

Jungkook didn't answer. He just moved a bit forward.

Taehyung gulped.

'Koo... what did I do?'

Jungkook poked his inner cheek with his tongue.

'Hey...' Taehyung felt a slight panic. Jungkook was never ignoring him. Sometimes he got mad, but not like that. 'Tell me...'

Jungkook looked at the floor. He was sulking hard and he didn't actuall want to stop... But Taehyung's insecure voice won with his attitude.

'If you are going to ignore me for the whole year like that, then I don't want to be on the same team...' Jungkook whispered.

Taehyung's eyes widened at his words, but before he could say anything, Jungkook went to take the darts from Jimin.

'Ha! Try to beat me!' Jimin said happily, patting Taehyung's back. Then he looked at his pale face and frowned. 'Whoa?! What the heck!? What's wrong Tae...'

'He is mad at me...' Tae mumbled, shocked. 'Or more like... I hurt him...'

'Whaaa?!' Jimin looked at Jungkook, who was focused on aiming. 'How? You know what? Nevermind. Just fix it, dumbass, because you will start to cry in a second and you know if you will start to cry I will start too! So get a grip, bish! There are other people from school here!' Jimin grabbed his bag. 'I'm leaving you alone! Fix! It!'

Taehyung looked after Jimin, but his bestie was fast disappearing. Jungkook finished his turn and handed him the darts, without looking at him.

'Your turn...'

'I don't want to play anymore...' Taehyung put the darts in the dartboard.

'Where is Jimin?' Jungkook asked, looking around.

'He went home...'

'Oh...' Jungkook took his jacket and bag. 'We should go too then...'

'Yeah.' Taehyung grabbed Jungkook's wrist and pulled him to the exit.

'Tae? What the hell? Stop pulling me!'

'No. You will ranaway.'

'I won't you freaking moron. Where would I?'

'To your room to sulk more.'

Jungkook would never admit that it was exactly what he was planning to do...

Taehyung pulled him to the park on the other side of the street and made him sit on the bench.

'Koo... I didn't ignore you...' he said out of breath.

'You always forget about the world when your older friends surround you...' Jungkook mumbled and threw his head back to look at the trees that were still not covered with leaves. Sadly it reminded him of the cherry tree in Daegu.

'I... I didn't ignore you I swear! It's just that the Captain is really strict. If he would suspect I would go easy on you, he wouldn't treat you equally with others or even wouldn't take you to the team just because of me. I'm sorry. I didn't want to hurt you... I should've told you this earlier...'

'Yeah. That would be nice...' Jungkook said quietly but started to blush. He was such a fragile drama queen when Taehyung was involved. He felt so vulnerable when anybody was around Taehyung as if he could be stolen from him. He grunted and frowned looking at his hands. 'Sorry... Taehyung...'

Taehyung crouch down in front of Jungkook.

'Koo...' he said, squeezing Jungkook's fingers in his warm hand. 'Even if I'm not with you all the time. Even when we are in different places or with different people. You are always on my mind. I never not think about you...'

Jungkook with bug puppy, fragile eyes, leaned forward and hugged Taehyung's neck. He stayed like that for a while, before whispering:

'See... that's why I call you an angel...'

---

Hellooo!

As I promised! Faster update 🍙🍙🍙

I hoped you got a bit of sweetness out from it. □□□

And some of the moments were inspired thanks to the story _V prince_ told me. Thank you dear <3.

BlairWitch 💟

# Chapter 12: Night at School

**September 2063**

The second semester of Taehyung's last year of middle school started. Jungkook's 13 birthday passed with all of their pack, containing now 7 people, enjoying their time in the Funfair.

Soobin got used to being the part of their loud group of friends. Not being so quiet anymore. Yoohyeon took care of it and Yeonjun was whipped as fuck making Taehyung amused most of the times.

Taehyung hadn't realized that his best friend, Jimin, had exactly the same reaction when it came to him and Jungkook.

Jimin knew one thing... Jungkook had huge, untreatable crush on Taehyung. And he couldn't actually hide it. His eyes were so expressive they were screaming his feelings out loud, when he shyly didn't even say a word.

His eyes were like programmed to find Taehyung wherever he was.

In Jimin's opinion Taehyung was either a bit dense in this matter... or... he was hiding very well. Because on the other hand Taehyung was this kind of responsible guy, programmed from early childhood to protect his little sweetheart Koo and maybe it was hard for him to get out of this type of shell.

So Jimin either enjoyed their mutual embarrassment when they tried to hide the stolen glances at each other, or he was facepalming whenever Taehyung tried to be the "responsible" one between them.

Jimin could understand that knowing your soulmate from early childhood, as well as yourself and developing the feelings you knew will come sooner or later and deal with them at the point of being just a brat was probably hard for both of them.

Taehyung's 15 year old mind, heart and body started to react differently to a lot of -previously - innocent things and he was a bit afraid that Jungkook could sense it.

Jungkook being the little jelly bean with a complex of being younger had to deal with a lot of anger taming or full of insecurity, moments.

Jimin could predict soooo many future incidents when his two besties would circling around each other like too anxious, shy, head-over-hills-for-each-other-but-too-dense-to-admitt-it, would be tripping over their own feelings. And his little

devilish side couldn't wait for it.

But well... that's why they had him for! He will smack them to reality if he gets tired of their mating dance...

Because Young Master Park Jimin was the master of checking the parts of Internet he was not allowed to check and he was pretty well educated in all the love, romance and sex matters. Reading mature sexy stories was his main source of enterntainment...

And, oh, one of his favourite memory from their third year of Middle School was Taehyung's pricless face expression during sex education classes...

But most of the time they all were just young teenagers doing stupid things, going to school, playing, practicing dance, combat or whatever they came up with.

In the first week of September the Student Council, including of course Yoohyeon, Jimin and Yeonjun, came up with the idea to organize an event in school.

The School Sleepover!

Instead of an integration excursion they came up with a plan for a bonding event at school. All classes were allowed to attend and the main purpose was to know your classmates more. And for the teachers to trust the newly chosen class presidents. The teachers agreed to the idea, but they of course were supervising the behavior, safety and responsibility of the students. They were checking the classes and corridors from time to time.

The event started on Friday after classes, when the students started to reshuffle the things in the classroom to make space for sleeping bags. Every student was responsible for bringing some food and snacks and each class organized some games. Students could roam around their parts of the school - freshmen on the ground floor in the left wing, juniors in the third floor and seniors in the second floor of the right wing.

After 9 p.m. all classmates should stay only in their classrooms and nobody should be on the corridors beside short bathroom breaks.

Taehyung knew Jungkook was excited as they all were, but he was also a bit sulky because they were separated. But as long as he had Yoohyeon and Soobin beside,

he could enjoy the event. Taehyung was texting him if something funny happened and Jungkook sent him a few videos from his own classmates' games.

But as much as Jungkook was sulking, Taehyung was glad. 3rd years had a bit different definitions of games than 1st years... His own classmates played the challenge game, the bottle, the flirting game, the truth or dare... And he really didn't want Jungkook to be there.

He was taking part in the games, but just once his classmate and captain of the volleyball team, Inseong, dared him to not blush while one of the girls will kiss his cheek.

Taehyung's glance at him once with murderous intent.

It was enough for the guy to giggled nervously and wanted to change the dare, but the rest of the classmates started to clap and whistle.

Jimin and Yeonjun nervously looked at each other.

The girls wanted to choose which one would do it, giggling like crazy, not realizing Taehyung was ready to push them out of the window.

'Hey... guys...' Yeonjun said nervously. 'Keep it together, will you? What kind of fucked up dare is this?'

'Oh, come on! Don't spoil the fun! It's nothing hard!' Kikyun, their other classmate, said.

'Well, for interdependents it can be...' Yewon rolled her eyes. 'As they are chained to one person...'

'Chained?' Jimin asked, lowering his voice. 'We are not chained. We are not prisoners. And you will never understand it...'

'So what's the problem then?' she looked at him challengingly.

'Jeeeeezz...'

Dami tiptoed and kissed Taehyung cheek for less then a second.

'Done. Now, stop it you all...' she said coldly.

Taehyung didn't even notice it, still glaring at Kikyun and Yewon.

'He didn't b-blush s-soo...' Inseong said, scared to the bone under Taehyung's gaze. 'Who's next Taehyung?'

A creepy smile appeared on Taehyung's face and Damil hid her smirk, looking at the floor.

'So, if it is not a big deal for non-interdependents then ok... Yewon, you kiss Kikyun then lips on lips...'

'WHAT?! YOU CAN'T DO THAT!' Yewon blushed madly. 'That's too much!'

'That's too much for you?' Normally cheerful and warm Taehyung was a cold motherfucker when someone pissed him off. 'So who are you to decide what's too much for me then?'

'Well! She did it and you didn't die!' Yewon pointed at Dami, who glared at her in response.

'She is my friend. She had done it, cause she know I would fucking kill anybody else that would come to me with their mouth...'

'You are totally overreacting!' Kikyun hissed. 'Are you 10 or what?'

'Are you? You said it's not a big deal, right? What's the problem then? Or are you giving up?' Taehyung teased them with a cold smirk on his lips.

'I won't do it! I give up!' Yewon said, and walked away stomping angrily to her friends.

Kikyun rolled his eyes.

'Fine. You won.' he said to Taehyung and walked to grab the snacks unbothered.

Inseong looked at Taehyung with sorry eyes.

'I'm sorry, Taehyung... I haven't thought...'

'Yeah...'

'Really... I know it's important for you all...'

'It's ok...' Jimin patted his back. 'But keep dares like that for High School... and preferably don't ever do it again with us...'

'Sure thing...' Inseong smiled, tensed and walked to his best friend.

Taehyung gulped.

'Thanks...' he mumbled to Dami.

She shrugged.

'I knew you were going to refuse and I wanted you to give them a lesson...' she said simply.

'Come, I brought great japchae my mom made...' Yeonjun grabbed Taehyung's shoulder and pulled him to the table with food.

Jimin looked at Dami.

'Nice save...'

'Don't tell Jungkook...' she said feeling nervous for the first time now.

'What about Yoo?'

'She will understand. She would do the same... But JK...'

'Yeah, I know. Don't worry...' Jimin looked at Taehyung's back and smirked. 'Wanna lift our angry bear mood?'

Dami's eyes sparked with mischievous flames.

'What the Satan Mochi's mind plotted, huh?'

Jungkook, Soobin and Yoohyeon were playing the singing game with their classmates, when someone started a song verse and the other person had to find the word that matched the lyric to enter the song and start their own song.

Yoohyeon came up with the game for the school sleepover for their classmates after watching *Pitch Perfect* for the nth time...

The three of them were pretty good at the game fastly remembering the melodies and the words of songs.

They won singing *My Universe* because when they started the whole class somehow joined them forgetting about the game.

They came to get the juice from the table beside the window, when a hand popped out and they heard the knocking.

Jungkook frowned and opened the window just to look at Dami and Jimin.

'What are you doing here?!' Jungkook whispered-screamed, leaning towards them.

'We are lucky your class is on the first floor...' Jimin giggled. 'We heard you sing... Partying hard?'

'It was a game...' Yoohyeon said, looking at Dami with a huge smile.

Soobin's head popped out to look above Jungkook's and Yoohyeon's heads.

'Wanna come with us?' Jimin smirked.

Jungkook's eyes sparked.

'To third year's classroom?'

Jimin nodded.

'Come... just a bit. We will walk you back later on...' Dami said, stretching her hand to Yoohyeon.

Soobin looked behind to see if anybody was observing them.

Jungkook helped Yoohyeon climb on the windowsill and Jimin and Dami helped her to jump to the ground first.

'Soobin, your turn...'

'But... what if someone will notice?'

Jungkook looked around and grabbed a ping pong ball prepared for one of the games.

'Be fast...' he said. And threw the ball aiming at the light switch.

When the light turned off, and their classmates started to yell and look for the switch, Soobin slid outside and Jungkook swiftly jumped out after him. The five of them crouched down under the window, giggling to each other, when the light from the classroom lightened the school ground.

It was almost 10 p.m. so they had to be careful to not get caught by teachers that were randomly checking the corridors. But they managed to enter the classroom with triumphant smiles.

Yeonjun at once picked out Soobin's blue hair from the crowd and ran to them.

'Hi, Binnie...'

'Hi... we managed to sneak out...' Soobin said shyly.

'Great!' Yeonjun smiled.

'Where is Taehyung?' Jimin asked. 'He suspects something?'

'Naah... I told him you went to steal some snacks from other 3rd year classrooms... He is in the bathroom...'

'Okay! We brought UNO. We can play... We have our things there...' Jimin pointed to the corner of the classroom where they left their sleeping bags and backpacks. 'I will bring the cards...'

Dami pulled Yoohyeon in that direction. Yeonjun, Soobin and Jungkook walked their slowly when Kikyun standing in the middle of the classroom screamed at them.

'Who brought the kids?'

Dami stopped and turned around.

'Me. Have a problem with that?'

'Nah. I'm into circus entertainment...' he laughed teasingly.

Jungkook squinted his eyes and before Yeonjun could grab him, he made a step and did three flips, making everybody gasp at his body movements. He stopped in front of Kikyun, so close that their shoes touched.

'Enough entertainment for you?' he asked with a quiet, dangerous tone.

Kikyun gulped, but looked at the younger one from above.

'Chill, kid... You are a guest here...'

'So treat me like a guest...'

'Watch your mouth...'

'Or what?'

'Kikyun, will you finally stop it today?' Yeonjun snapped, getting closer.

'I'm not doing anything... yet...'

Jungkook and Kikyun were glaring at each other angrily, when suddenly Kikyun wanted to push Jungkook, who just smirked at the attack and blocked his hands, before they reached him.

'Jungkook!' Yeonjun grabbed Jungkook hoodie. 'Stop it...'

'He started...'

'I know but you are stronger so just... let it go...'

'What have you said?' Kikyun frowned. 'This brat... stronger?'

'Wanna check?' Jungkook smirked.

'Please, stop it...' Yeonjun whined. 'Taehyung will kill me...'

It was a mistake... because as soon as Kikyun heard Taehyung's name and realized who Jungkook was, he saw a perfect way to take revenge for earlier.

Taehyung walked to the classroom just to see how Yeonjun grabbed Jungkook's hoodie. Jimin was checking the cards, only now realizing what's going on, but before he reached Taehyung and calmed him down, Taehyung was already on his way to the center of the classroom.

He saw Kikyun clumsily raising his fist to Jungkok's stomach. He knew Jungkook would respond. He just knew it. So he rushed in between them, and a fist hit his stomach.

He took a sharp breath and said to Kikyun:

'You punched someone. Satisfied?'

'Tae!!' Jungkook exclaimed shocked, and made a move to Kikyun in anger.

Taehyung grabbed his wrist.

'You are going back...' he growled and pulled him to the door.

'Yeah. Take your annoying lil bro if he can;t behave around his hyungs...' Kikyun said and it triggered Jungkook more than anything. He wanted to turn around but Taehyung squeezed his wrist more.

Dami and Yeonjun took care of Kikyun, washing his head of and Soobin and Yoohyeon run after Jungkook and Taehyung.

They were almost by the door when Jungkook broke free from Taehyung's grip.

'Stop it!'

Taehyung turned around.

'What are you even doing here?!'

'I brought him...' Jimin said, standing bravely next to Jungkook.

Taehyung glared at his friend.

'For what?! Not enough entertainment for you tonight?! I told you earlier, I'm glad he is not here!'

Jimin looked at the ground.

Taehyung looked at Jungkook sternly.

'You are going back!' Then Soobin and Yoohyeon. 'The two of you too!'

'No they are not...' Dami said standing next to Yoohyeon.

'They are staying with us...' Yeonjun confirmed, standing next to Soobin.

Taehyung glared at them.

'Fine. Do whatever you want! But Jungkook is going back.

Jungkook looked at him challengingly.

'First of all... I'm not an entertainment...' he said quietly. He knew exactly what Taehyung was thinking. He knew how protective he was. He didn't want to make the same mistake as last time and misunderstood something... but feeling unwanted like that... was a feeling Jungkook didn't know earlier. And he didn't like it. At all... 'And second of all...who are you to tell me what to do?'

Taehyung's eyes widened. He gulped. So many people were looking at them right now.

'I'm your friend,' he replied quietly.

'Yeah... you are...' Jungkook said bitterly. 'Just as them...' he pointed with his hand to Jimin and the rest.

'I'm sorry I caused you problems, hyung...' he bowed.

Taehyung's heart sped up. Something was wrong. Something was really, really wrong...

No, no, no, no... It couldn't be happening again... He didn't do anything wrong. Why did he feel as if he hurt Jungkook again?

Jungkook turned around to the rest of Taehyung's classmates and looked at Kikyun and bowed again.

'I'm sorry, hyungs and noonas. It won't happen again...' he apologized.

Kikyun opened his mouth but Inseong stepped on his feet harshly.

Jungkook looked at Soobin and Yoohyeon.

'Stay. I'm going back...'

'I will...' Jimin started, but Jungkook stopped him.

'No. I'm capable of finding my class on my own...'

He passed Taehyung without looking at him.

When Taehyung heard the silent click of the door's locking he clenched his teeth and closed his eyes.

What other thing could he have said?

Jungkook wasn't his brother... He wasn't his boyfriend either... yet - as they were too young for this.

And saying "soulmate" in the class full of non-interdependents was just a meaningless word. It was the word that belonged to the world of *Eadar-eisimeileach* that had such a meaning, it was a profanity to say it somewhere where it would cause laughter...

Jungkook was just Jungkook. This one person there was no Taehyung without.

He opened his eyes at his friend who was looking at him with stern and pitiful gazes.

Jimin rolled his eyes.

'Seriously, Tae?'

'It was mainly Kikyun's fault...' Yeonjun said quietly. 'He called him an entertainment the moment he walked in...'

'You could just let Jungkook punch him a few times. Maybe he would breed some brain cells...' Dami sighed.

Soobin and Yoohyeon looked at each other.

'We should go...' Soobin said.

'I came because Dami wanted me here...' Yoohyeon said coldly. 'Jungkook has a short temper. But you too, you know? Well I hope it is the case, cause if you said you are glad he is not here willingly then... fuck you, oppa...' she mumbled. She was not the one to swear.

Taehyung was looking at the ground, frowning, thinking fast.

'Stay here.' he said finally.

'Are you going to bring him back?' Jimin asked.

'No.' Taehyung walked fastly to their things and grabbed his backpack and sleeping bag.

Jungkook was slowly sneaking through the corridors. He almost left the right wing, where the third years had classrooms. He stopped in the middle of the dark corridor and for a moment pressed his back to the cold wall.

*Why am I so stupid?* he thought. *Why am I like this? I could just let Dami and Yeonjun handle the situation and all would be fine... I made Taehyung mad and worried... This asshole punched him because of me!*

He knew exactly what Taehyung was thinking. As he was never not thinking about Jungkook... he was glad he was not there because it was safer...

*Maybe if I could be more reliable... he wouldn't be worried so much all the time...* Jungkook though sadly.

He sighed. The feeling of being the one that screwed up again, was the worst. And as much as he hated when olders where calling him "kid" he, in the end, was just a brat...

Friend...

What he wanted to hear from Taehyung? Why did this word hurt him? He didn't lie... They were best friends...

But Jungkook didn't have the need to look at Jimin, Yeonjun, Soobin, Dami or Yoohyeon all the time. He didn't have the warm feeling inside his body and tingling butterflies in his stomach whenever he heard their voices.

Taehyung was so much more than just a friend.

Taehyung was just Taehyung. This one person there was no Jungkook without...

Jungkook facepalmed whispering:

'I'm so stupid...'

He heard fast footsteps and wanted to hide, thinking it's a teacher when Taehyung grabbed his wrist.

'Come with me...' he said, and pulled him to the stairs.

'Taehyung? But my classroom is...'

'Shhhh...' Taehyung silenced him, checking the corner of the corridor.

Jungkook closed his mouth and let himself be dragged, through dark, silent corridors, to the third floor and the entrance to the rooftop. Where the resting area for students was. It was usually open only in summer. But Taehyung checked behind the fire extinguisher that was hung on the wall and found the key.

'The janitor is coming here to smoke...' he said quietly and opened the doors.

They walked to the fenced roof and Taehyung closed and locked the doors from outside.

Jungkook sighed.

'I know I'm at fault... I'm sorry, Taehyung...'

'You already apologized...'

Jungkook raised his eyes at Taehyung hesitantly.

'So what are we doing here?'

'Sleepover...' Taehyung said and smiled lightly.

Jungkook's eyes widened.

'What?'

Taehyung took out the sleeping bag and rolled blanket from his backpack.

'The night can be chilly, but I guess if we cuddle it won't be so bad...' he shrugged.

*Cuddle?* Jungkook's cheeks became red.

Taehyung walked a bit and found the place he was satisfied with, next to the wall of superstructure that was hiding the entrance. It had a good view to the east side of the city.

He straightened up the sleeping bag, unzipped it and sat in it.

He looked at Jungkook.

'Come. Before you will get cold...'

Jungkook blinked surprise.

'You... you are not mad at me?' he asked timidly.

Taehyung sighed deeply and looked at him.

'I was mad because Kikyun almost hit you... Not because you were there...'

Jungkook raised his eyes at him and after a minute hesitantly made a move. He sat between Taehyung's legs and pressed his back to the older one's chest.

'Zip it...'

Jungkook did, making them warm and Taehyung covered them in a blanket, before sliding his arms inside the sleeping back and embracing Jungkook's waist.

'Is your stomach ok?' Jungkook asked, concerned.

'Mhmm...' Taehyung rested his chin on Jungkook's shoulder. 'No worries...' he said lazyly.

They were silent for a long time. Until Taehyung felt a light touch on his connected palms, resting on Jungkook's tummy.

'I shouldn't have done that...' Jungkook admitted.

'Why are you always so angry when they call you "kid"?' Taehyung asked calmly.

'It always reminds me, I am younger than you...' Jungkook whispered.

'In some years it won't matter at all...' Taehyung closed his eyes, pressing his cheek to Jungkook's shoulder.

'Really?'

'Mhm... we will be boyfriends, then husbands... Even if it feels so impossible right now...'

Jungkook bit his lips to hide his smile.

'Will we...?'

'Yup. You are mine. I'm yours. Simple as that. We just need to be patient...'

'So I'm not just a friend?' Jungkook couldn't stop himself from asking for reassurance.

Taehyung loosened his grip around his waist with one hand and intertwined their fingers.

'Never were... Never will be.'

Jungkook leaned his head on Taehyung's shoulder and their cheeks touched when they were looking at the city lights.

Jungkook's yawned.

'Are you warm?' Taehyung asked and pressed Jungkook more to himself.

'Really really warm...' Jungkook confirmed quietly.

Taehyung was wondering when was the last time they were sitting like that? Last year? As they were in this strange moment of their life between childhood and adolescence some things started to change between them. Involving feelings they couldn't recognize and making them more conscious about the skinship they shared.

But the feelings they always had were still there... It was so comfortable and peaceful to have Jungkook so close. He was totally ready to fall asleep.

But then he remembered... And he didn't want this to come to them one day without a warning.

'Ummm...' he started hesitantly. 'They gave me a dare during games...'

'Oh? What did they want you to do?' Jungkook asked sleepily.

'Not blush when one of the girls kisses me on the cheek...' Taehyung whispered and he could feel how Jungkook's whole body tensed up.

'A-and... what h-happend?' Jungkook asked, worried.

'Dami saved me...'

'She kissed you?!' Jungkook turned his head to look at Taehyung's profile. Taehyung nodded, looking at him a bit afraid. 'Where?!'

'Just on the cheek...' he turned his left cheek, as if the mark from the almost-non-existing kiss would be visible there.

Jungkook frowned and kissed Taehyung's cheek in the same place he pointed to. Taehyung's eyes widened, but Jungkook looked forward, poking his inner cheek with his tongue and said annoyed:

'I just disinfect it. Don't think too much. And if you want me to be your boyfriend in the future, don't walk around letting people kiss you!'

'N-noted...' Taehyung stammered cutely.

He hid his nose in Jungkook's light brown hair on his nape. He inhaled a bit of a menthol scent.

'What is this scent?' he asked.

'I stole a bit of dad's shampoo...' Jungkook said shyly.

'Why?'

'Don't laugh at me... but... to feel a bit more adult like... I guess...'

Taehyung took a deep breath in, but the new smell on Jungkook's hair made something with hot with his stomach so he giggled:

'Well I like when you smell like strawberries...'

'Okay...' Jungkook murmured meekly, getting back to his sleepy state of mind, from which he had been violently snapped out of, upon hearing about the dare.

'Sleepy?'

'Mhmmm...'

'Sleep well then, baby bunny...'

'You too, baby bear...'

Taehyung smiled a bit and pressed his lips to Jungkook's nape for a second to get one last inhale of the new fragrance.

'What was that?' Jungkook muttered, with one leg in his dreamland.

'Prequel to the future...'

'I like our future... But can it get here faster?'

Taehyung giggled, closing his eyes.

'It can... in dreams... so sleep...'

'Okay, angel...'

'Koo... wake up... Koo...'

Someone was shaking him gently.

'Hmmm...?' He barely opened one of his eyelids. 'Nuuuu...'

'Oh, come on, Koo! Open your eyes...'

Jungkook felt his body aching from the position they were sleeping in, but he was warm and happy, so he wasn't ready to give up on his sleep.

Taehyung pinched his side.

'Auuu!' Jungkook whined. 'Why?'

'Look!' pointed to the front.

Jungkook looked there uninterested, but his eyes opened wide when he saw the orange, red, pink, purple, and blue sky.

Taehyung tilted his head to look at his face.

'Promised you we will see the sunrise in the city, right?'

Jungkook's lips parted at the small orange ball that showed up between the buildings and was getting bigger and bigger.

'Happy?'

Jungkook nodded, smiling widely. But when the sun got higher on the shy, he looked at Taehyung.

'You know what?'

'What...'

'I see the sunrise everyday...' he informed, making Taehyung frown.

'What? With who? You can't sneak out of the house so early, Koo! It's dangerous...'

Jungkook shook his head.

'I see you getting up everyday through my window...' Jungkook pressed his head to Taehyung's chest, looking at the warm light, enlightening the buildings around. 'And you are my personal sun. So I see the sun-rise every day...'

Taehyung laughed out loud.

'Silly, bunny...' he chuckled. 'Should we get going? We have to sneak into our classrooms...'

Jungkook nodded.

'Just a bit more...'

Just a bit more... of this blissful moment at the edge of childhood and adolescence, before the future comes.

---

Good morning, darlings! 🌄🌅🌇

It's 6:30 a.m. and the sunrise was indeed beautiful. I took a break in writing too watch it.

How is the cutness? Not too much for you?😋😋

Sorry I haven't published yesterday. Due to family time during Easter didn't have time to write. Forgive me please!🙈

BlairWitch💙💙

# Chapter 13: 2064

**October 2063, Daegu**

Yoongi was in his music studio. It was the 12th of October. Samhain was approaching and he again was reminded of the voice he heard during the last celebration at midnight. He forgot about it, considering the dumbsterfire that happened after, but lately he caught himself humming the tune in his head.

He had just one phrase. And he already checked hundreds of songs with this phrase and it wasn't it. He couldn't find the matching melody. So he came to the conclusion that it was a made up melody and a random phrase someone was singing during Samhain.

And by someone... he meant - his soulmate. Who else could he have such a hard connection to, that he could hear their voice, even being separated by unknown distance?

Soulmate with the voice of an angel...

So he started to write the lyrics that would match this one phrase and this voice. He never considered himself as the romantic type, but this "*Just let me love you*" moved something in him. He crossed out and changed words, played with metaphors, not entirely satisfied with the effect. Some parts were good, others needed rethinking.

Being stuck inside the words, he switched to the music. He recreated the beat and the melody of this one sentence he heard and somehow the chorus led him to the other notes of stanzas. Thinking about the red string of destiny that tangled to interdependants life he went back to writing, playing the melody he created.

The song started to have the right shape and not even knowing it - he had a light smile on his lips.

He particularly liked this one part so he posted it on DailyDiaryApp.

*I'm scared, just as much as my heart flutters*

*Because destiny keeps getting jealous of us*

*I'm just as scared as you*

He was going to work some more on the lyrics, but before he could go back to it he got the notification.

**CHIMISLOVE:** That hit me hard and made me soft at the same time... 

Yoongi frowned. He already memorized this nickname as this person usually had some nice words or deep thoughts about his short posts.

**SUGA:** Thanks.

**CHIMISLOVE:** You really are good with words.

**SUGA:** I don't know if the whole thing is good tho...

**CHIMISLOVE:** Oh? There is more to it? Show me! Show me!

**SUGA:** You wish bish! It's not finished... And why would I show you?

**CHIMISLOVE:** Because I'm your fanboy and I will appreciate it!

Yoongi blushed a little. He had a fanboy... What the fuck?!

His fingers hesitated a bit before he typed.

**SUGA:** Well I was struggling with this... I have vague experience in lovey-dovey things...

**CHIMISLOVE:** Then hit me up. I'm an expert!

Yoongi raised his eyebrow at the statement.

**SUGA:** Soooo full of yourself...

**CHIMISLOVE:** Yup! That's me. But the offer was sincere...

**SUGA:** Aren't you a brat? How can you be an expert?

**CHIMISLOVE:** "I have lived a thousand lives and I've loved a thousand loves. I've walked on distant worlds and seen the end of time. Because I read."

Yoongi widened his eyes at the swift way the person replied.

**SUGA:** Quoting G.R.R. Martin on a daily basis? Wow... I'm almost impressed...

**CHIMISLOVE:** You should be impressed! I'm amazing!

**SUGA:** Are you drunk?

**CHIMISLOVE:** Nope. I'm underaged, dude! I can't drink...

**SUGA:** Considering that you seem to be a guy who jumps in at the deep end without much thought, I wouldn't be surprised if you were...

**CHIMISLOVE:** True...

Yoongi smirked at the reply. But then he frowned when the next text he received was: *apdkdjfntolkamdasp*

**CHIMISLOVE:** Sorry... Bluemold jumped on me...

**SUGA:** Bluemold? TF?

**CHIMISLOVE:** My cat. So...? Can I help you?

Yoongi was thinking... Maybe talking with someone would widen his perspective? And there was no harm as nobody on the app knew who he is, right?

**SUGA:** Priv.

**CHIMISLOVE:** Sure.

A second later he got the first text on his private chat.

**SUGA:** First rule. No personal details such as name, family, living place, friends names and all that...

**CHIMISLOVE:** Wow! Spy life for Chim is perfect! No worries! I get you... You can call me Chim or Minnie. How should I call you?

**SUGA:** Hyung...

**CHIMISLOVE:** Dude... How do you know you are my hyung?

**SUGA:** Feeling it in my bones.

**CHIMISLOVE:** Petty bish...

**SUGA:** I will stick with 'hyung'. Suga is okay too...

**CHIMISLOVE:** Do you have a hyung kink or what? 😏

Yoongi's lips parted in indignation.

**SUGA:** WTH?! The way I'm glaring at my phone right now would scare you... 😠

**CHIMISLOVE:** The way I'm smirking at my phone would scare you too... 😏😏😏

**SUGA:** I already regret inviting you here... 😣

He was expecting another sassy reply. Instead the phone was silent and he felt bad. He almost could feel how insecure he made the boy on the other side.

**SUGA:** It was a joke... Why have you named your cat Bluemold?

**CHIMISLOVE:** Because of the color. And he has one blue and one green eye. He is red but also has white and gray patches...

Something came to Yoongi's mind... The word 'blue mold' was interesting... He scribbled it on the top of the paper with lyrics. He relaxed texting with Chim. They talked about destiny, love, relationships, love stories Chim's was reading and the conception of the song was getting clearer in Yoongi's mind. And the way Chim was talking about all of it made Yoongi suspect that he is Interdependent as well.

Destiny was a debatable topic. Some believed in it. Others didn't.

Some were fighting against it, desperately wanting to be the captains of their life, without some unknown force that could play with them like puppets.

Others desperately were relying on it, believing that what is happening to them is already decided.

For Interdependants destiny was a simple matter. They weren't fighting against it. But they didn't feel like everything was already decided.

For them destiny wasn't a line where everything was taking place one after another.

For *Eadar-eisimeileach* the destiny was a set of points that the soul was bound to encounter. But when and how? It was for them to decide.

If they choose to go left, not knowing that going to the right would lead them straight to the point, destiny was this power that was drawing a path for them between obstacles to reach the point either way. It was constantly recreating the paths on the soul's map, stretching or shortening them in time, taking turns just to take the soul where it should end.

And it could be felt in Chim's words.

They talked some more before Yoongi frowned, hearing the approaching footsteps.

**SUGA:** I have to go...

**CHIMISLOVE:** Hey! Tomorrow is my birthday and I helped you! What will you give me?

**SUGA:** Why would I give you anything? You offered to help...

**CHIMISLOVE:** Oh come on! Gimmie something... Like a phrase or small personal

detail like what fruit you like...

**SUGA:** Jeeze... This is so stupid... Tangerines.

**CHIMISLOVE:** UWU... I never thought you would cave so easily...

**SUGA:** Fuck you!

**CHIMISLOVE:** *SMIRK* 😏😏😏😏😏

**SUGA:** Seriously. Stop it... 😒

**CHIMISLOVE:** Ok, ok... I'm not so bold to ask for a gift and talking to you was interesting and relaxing. I was just teasing...

**SUGA:** Good. Bye!

Yoongi went closer to the door and heard his father's raised voice. He lightly opened the doors to hear the words clearly.

'ARE YOU FUCKING KIDDING ME, KYUNG?!'

'Jae... calm down...'

'CALM DOWN?! HOW DO YOU EXPECT ME TO CALM DOWN?! 3EO IS NOT A MILITARY ORGANIZATION! NEVER WAS! NEVER SUPPOSE TO BE!'

'It wasn't my idea...'

'But you agreed to it!'

'What else could I do? They created this self proclaimed protection unit and would act whatever we would want it or not! This way we can at least have control over it!'

'Under the name of my organization!? Do you know what it will look like?! For years we were claiming we are the organization that wants to create a safe environment and now what?! Under the same organization an interdependents' strike unit is formed?!'

'It's not a strike unit. It's a security agency...'

'With guns! And military training! Containing the individuals that are ready to

fight!'

'They are ready to fight, yeah, but it doesn't mean they will! It was created for defense considering what is happening around us. Since last year our houses have been attacked. Nobody is safe! People are spitting on us! There are cases when some shops put stickers that they won't serve Interdependents! And because of what? Because we tried to show them who we are? We didn't harm or offend them. Even the ones that were responsible for it, were judged rightfully... Don't blame people they want to have something to lean on...'

'Have you thought about ICI? Or MOI? How will you explain this to them? MOI is a secret agency. They are still acting when Interdependents wants to get involved in crises all over the world, but they are doing this in secret. And the International Council of Interdependents will have to react somehow! Because this will make a mess and stir the water! And they can't just go and say to the world, they don't care and it's not their business! It's the only organization that is respected and listened to in the political environment! Are you ready for them to go against us!?'

'And are you ready to have the agency without control under your nose? I did it for you, Jae! Because I can't trust them and their plans. So at least I want to control them the way I can!'

'What are their plans?'

'They want to secure the Samahin event... That's what their main plan is... And they made a phone line for Interdependents to call in case someone will need help...'

Jae sighed heavily.

'Are we really again doing the open Samhain?'

'Do you want to show them we are scared? What kind of equality is that?'

'Jesus Christ...' A deep sighed was heard. 'OK... We will implement this security agency inside 3EO as the security unit under our total control. I want you to check all the people hired there. If there is even one person with a criminal past, kick them out. No hard ammunition. Paralyzing shots only and combat if needed. The sacred treasures and powers usage to the minimum... All files and raport on my desk till Tuesday. I need to organize a meeting with ICI and MOI before it goes public...'

'As you wish...'

'Kyung... it's your responsibility from now on... Don't let me down...'

'I won't. I won't let them destroy what we have worked on for years...'

Yoongi heard the footsteps and he fastly ran to his desk, and put his headphones on, pretending he was busy with something on his computer.

His father knocked shortly and walked in. He walked to Yoongi's desk and sat on the chair near him.

'What are you working at?' he asked.

Yoongi took his headphones off.

'Some song came to my mind...'

Jaehyun nodded absent-mindedly.

Yoongi was silent, still pretending to look at the screen. He was waiting for the question. And here it was.

'What's up in school?'

Yoongi turned to his father in his spinning chair and leaned forward.

'I mingled with Taeil's friends... They are nice. Sometimes acting stupid. Sometimes doing pranks...'

'Pretty normal for teenagers...'

'Yup. Taeil is... well... he is gathering around himself soulmates... The couples that already can use their weapons. He is pretty stern with this. But there are also his Holders friends... I don't really like them. He doesn't allow in his group of friends Sealers, beside the ones that are already with their holders' soulmates.'

'Do you know why? Is it connected to the things you told me last time?'

'I think so... Taeil's group is pretty much liked and admired at school. They are treated like idols. And they are "protecting" Sealers.'

'Protecting from what?'

Yoongi shrugged.

'Don't know exactly... They are walking them to classes. Bringing them books if needed. They are making sure they will buy lunches first...'

'That's actually nice...'

'Yeah... but why only Sealers are treated like that? That's what I'm thinking... If there's a fight where Sealer is involved - Taeil's group is there to protect him. No matter who is wrong between fighters... If two Holders are fighting - they just

don't care...'

'So, you mean they are acting like a pack of wolves that are protecting the omegas?'

'In some way...'

'But Sealers and Holders are equal. So it doesn't make sense...'

'Exactly. They are protecting them or more like... collecting them...' Yoongi for a moment was wondering if he should tell his father what he heard. He knew his father was really attached to his uncle as he was older and always protected him the same way Yoongi protected Gahyeon. 'I once heard...' he finally sad slowly. '... Holder, who said that Holders are nothing without Sealers... That they are useless... There is a probability that the Sealer can use a small part of his power without unsealing the seal... But the Holder can do nothing without the sacred treasure...'

'But it doesn't actually matter in a bigger perspective. Why would they collect Sealers? Sealers are in the same situation. They can't use their powers without Holders. And there is always just one Holder that can undo the Sealer's seal...'

'Is it like that tho, dad?' Yoongi asked with a low tone.

Jaehyung looked at Yoongi with a stern gaze.

'You are talking about Taboo.'

'So there is a way...'

'You shouldn't even have a bit of a knowledge about this matter... How do you know about it?'

'I listen... And when you don't talk much you can hear a lot of things...'

'Who was talking about it?'

'Some people at the party...' Yoongi said evasively. 'I'm worried about Gahyeon, dad... She is a Sealer... and... if there is a way they can use her...'

'Nobody will use her or any other Sealer. Because it is Taboo for a reason, Yoongi. It has been punished by death since the beginning of *Eadar-eisimeileach*... It is rape of the soul.'

Yoongi gulped hearing his father's serious words and seeing his dark eyes.

'If you ever heard anybody talking about it again... tell me immediately.'

Yoongi nodded.

Jaehyun rested his back on the chair tiredly and looked at the ceiling exhausted.

'I have a gigantic headache...' he sighed.

Yoongi looked through the window at the sunny October weather that was lightening all the red and orange leaves on the trees.

'Dad... maybe we will take mom and Gahyeon for dinner and then for a walk outside the city?'

Jaehyun looked at Yoongi with the corner of his eyes.

'Family trip without suits and fancy guests?'

'Pick up food...'

'Sneakers...'

'Backpacks...'

'Cabrio?'

'Yeah! I could drive in the forest!'

'I will tell mom...'

'I will tell Gahyeonie...'

Yoongi came back to his house late at night after they spent the family afternoon outside the city. They even stopped to take a walk in one of the city parks enjoying the night illuminations there. Nobody could recognize the rich Min's family in their sneakers, casual clothes and baseball caps. They were just a normal family enjoying the walk.

He looked at the clock. It was almost 1 a.m. His phone caught his attention and hesitantly he took it in his hand. He brifely checked the previous conversation with Chim and texted on the spot.

**SUGA**: You wanted a personal detail, right? I'm 17. Almost 18... Happy Birthday...

He sent it and instantly regretted it.

For what he had done it?

He didn't actually have friends. He was not so keen to befriend people from Taeil's circle and Taeil was the only person close his age that Yoongi was familiar with from his early childhood. But talking with this faceless person that actually could just know what was inside him, not knowing the outsides... truly felt like a relaxed friendship.

He was almost falling asleep when he got the reply.

**CHIMISLOVE:** Thank you... hyung... 

**30th January 2064**

Namjoon just watched the news. The "security agency" of 3EO was once again involved in the mess in Daegu. Of course they were called, by one family of Interdependants who ran a shop in the centre of Deagu. The shop was destroyed by a gang of masked thugs and one of the shopkeepers was injured. Not knowing what to do, the owner called the ISA (Interdependents Security Agency) and they arrived like horsemen of the apocalypse in all their glory...

The attackers appeared to be drugged, which did not change the fact, that they were delivered to the police completely massacred, with injuries done by magic and weapons on their bodies.

And he was devastated. Because again - they had the right to protect and again - it was portrayed as masaqre made by Interdependants.

The situation in Daegu was getting darker and darker.

He tried to calm himself down before making a phone call.

'I was expecting this call...' Jaehyun sighed heavily.

'What. The. Hell?' Namjoon asked, trying hard not to raise his voice.

'At this point? I have no idea...'

'When you informed us in October that a unit like that will be formed, I didn't expect that it wouldn't be 3EO's unit! But some kind of suborganization!'

'Namjoon... I agreed to take it under 3EO's wings to control them... I haven't created it. And you don't have any idea how many cases and reckless actions Kyung has already stopped! They are behaving like a freaking terrorists sometimes. And Interdependents here are protecting their doings, because they feel safe!'

'How are you planning to deal with this situation!? The hate for Interdependants are growing not just in Deagu!'

'And the hate for ordinary people are growing inside Interdependants' circles... I know it!'

'You need to do something before your family will get dragged into this!'

'Should I disband 3EO? But what about the school? The mood in the society is so full of anger that the children will get into more danger if we will send them back to normal schools...'

Namjoon sighed.

'Come to Seoul. I will organize the meeting with ICI and MOI... we will figure something out.'

'I can come in 3 weeks. I will try to clear this mess we already have...'

'Okay. Call me if you need help...'

'Thank you... Namjoon?'

'Hmm?'

'Creating this school was a bad idea... I should have listened to you...'

'Nothing creative will come out from blaming yourself now... We need to solve the situation the best we can.'

'Yeah. Say "Hi!" to Jin...'

'I will. How is Handong?'

'Worried. Freaking out actually... But she is holding up for school. The childrens are safe under her wings.'

'Is ISA securing the school too?'

Jaehyun sighed.

'Yeah...'

'Bring with you all the cases they dealt with, interviews with victims... everything you can...'

'Sure. Do you have an idea?'

'Maybe I have...'

'See you in 3 weeks then.'

'See you...'

**20th of February 2064**

Three weeks later Hoseok and Minji picked up Jaehyun and Handong from Incheon Airport.

'Sorry for the trouble...' Handong said smiling lightly to Minji.

'Don't mention it... We all are here to help.' Minji smiled back.

'Are we going to ICI headquarters now?' Jaehyung asked.

'Yeah. Namjoon and Yongguk are waiting for you. Then there will be a meeting with all the representatives of ICI and MOI.' Hoseok nodded. 'I will drop you by and help Jin... you are invited to the dinner and he is freaking out...' he giggled.

'Shouldn't he rest more? His work is not easy...'

'It was harder when he was working in the hospital. Now, when he works in the clinic, it's not so demanding. And cooking is relaxing for him...' Minji explained.

'It's so nice of you...'

'Interdependents are just 0,1% of the world's population. We need to stick together...' Hoseok said, brushing their concerns.

It was true. After the pandemic the world's population dropped from over 8 mld to around 5 mld. And even before pandemic Interdependents were like only 8 mln all over the world. Currently in Korea there were only like 27 thousands of Interdependants in the whole country. Including newborn children.

All of them gathered together wouldn't even fill one quarter of Wembley Stadium...

Hoseok dropped Minji and Mins to the ICI headquarters and drove away.

Minji led the couple to the Head of Korean Branch of ICI office.

Bang Yongguk welcomed them and pointed to the chairs by the table. Minji sat on the chair next to Namjoon. For a moment there was silence. Before Yongguk asked Jaehyun:

'Are you ready to disband 3EO?'

Jeahyun looked at him with widened eyes.

'What?'

'Are you ready to disband 3EO and the ISA together with it?' Yongguk repeated calmly.

Jaehyun looked at Namjoon terrified.

'But...'

Namjoon sighed.

'We can help you... but only if it will be disbanded. Or more like... We will take custody over 3EO's matters. ICI will take on itself responsibility for the school. MOI will take the responsibilities that ISA took over itself. We will make your mission ours... We can get the government agreeing to be the representatives of Interdependents in courts, justice, safety, educational, culture... every aspect. We will portray the incidents that took place as it should be portrayed - as an attack on us. But we will work together with Law Enforcements and we will show the unity between ICI and the government. That's our plan... But it will be useless if 3EO and ISA will still be active...'

'And the school?' Handong asked.

'It can stay as it is. But it won't have "only interdependants children allowed" rule.' Minji said. 'We are working with politicians over regulations that in every school there need to be at least one security officer and one teacher in the team that is an

Interdependent. As well as the offices of all the Ministries should have one Interdependant...'

'You are doing this?'

'For years...' Namjoon nodded. 'But it takes time. But having even one person included in all country matters is important, because they can deliver our point of view. Usually they are not needed there. Because most of the things are the same for us... Just that some citizens are narrow-minded... That's why we need to use law, when common sense is not enough...'

Jaehyun looked at Handong. They were looking at each as if they were exchanging thoughts. Finally he brushed his face with his hands and said:

'Ok. I agree. I need to prepare all the legal things with my lawyers...'

'We will organize the press conference when you will be ready. We have a lot of things to discuss...' Yongguk nodded. 'You should be the first one to inform the Daegu citizens about it. Then we will do the national press conference - me and Namjoon.'

'I agree...'

'We should check all the files you brought. We will need good materials. Our familiar reporters will do a good reportage about all that was happening in Daegu...' Minji said. 'I think we should be ready in a month...'

'Get to work then...' Handong took out the briefcase with files. 'No time to waste...'

'Want a coffee?' Minji smiled at her.

'You are reading my mind...' Handong sighed gratefully.

Minji nodded and looked at Jaehyun, who nodded.

'Black. Please.'

'Chief?' Minji looked at Yongguk.

He shook his head.

Namjoon opened his mouth, but Minji raised his eyebrow at him.

'For you only green tea! Jin forbade more than three coffees daily and Hobi told me you already had four!'

She walked out and Namjoon sighed mournfully.

'That's what happens when you have two husbands and one wife...'

In the evening Mins visited the Kims' house where Jungkook and Taehyung already prepared the table for the dinner.

'Let me introduce you to our kids...' Jin said after greeting them.

'Kim Taehyung and Jeon Jungkook...'

Taehyung and Jungkook bowed to Mrs and Mr Min.

Jaehyun stretched his hand to squeeze Taehyung's palm.

'I'm finally able to thank you in person for saving my little girl!'

'Oh?' Taehyung was surprised and had to recollect the incident from 8 years back. 'Is she ok?'

'Perfectly fine and not so little anymore...' Handong giggled. 'She is 15. But I need to remind Jae about it constantly.'

'She will always be my little girl. What are you talking about?' Jaehyun said defensively. 'Just as Yoongs will be forever his mommy's boy.'

'Understandable...' Minji ruffled Jungkook's hair.

'Mom...' he whined a bit embarrassed.

'Nice to meet you too, Jungkook-ah.' Jaehyung squeezed Jungkook's hand too.

'Time to eat before it gets cold!' Jin clapped his hands.

During the dinner they talked with kids about their school and about Mins' children, before the topic switched to places in Seoul worth seeing. Hoseok invited Mins with their children for vacation, promising them to show them around and they nodded in agreement.

One glare from Jin was enough for Tae and Jungkook to start to clean the table. Minji and Handong stayed in the living room to talk, and the rest went to

Namjoon's office to grab a drink.

Namjoon poured whisky into four glasses.

'Can I ask you something?' Jaehyun asked, looking at the children's picture in Namjoon's office.

'Sure...'

'In your University... do they have the Faculty of Arts and Music?'

'Yeah... pretty good one, why?'

'My son... will graduate high school in two weeks... He always wanted to study music and sound engineering, but we wanted to keep him close. I think it will be hard to let him go... But if I would keep him by my side like I did for years... I would do it for myself. And he wouldn't be happy.'

'You can send him here... we will surely take care of him...' Hoseok shrugged naturally.

'True.' Jin giggled. 'Since we moved here we have been pros at dealing with a bunch of teenagers...'

'It seems... I will have to let him do what he loves...' Jaehyun sighed.

'Well you will have more reasons to visit Seoul then...' Namjoon patted his back.

The ringing of the phone disturbed their discussion.

'Speaking of the devil... My son is checking on me more than I'm checking on him...' Jaehyun shook his head with a smile and picked up the face call.

'Hi, dad! How was the flight? The meeting?'

'Flight was short. The meeting long. But we are going in a good direction...'

'That's good. We went to the movie with Gahyeon... Just got back...'

'Yoongs... I have something to tell you...' Jaehyun said.

'Huh? What?' Yoongi asked, absent-mindedly roaming around his room.

'You should start to pack...'

Yoongi stopped and looked at the screen.

'What?'

'You are moving to Seoul...'

'WHAT THE HELL! WHY!?'

Hoseok laughed hearing the shocked and angry tone of the boy.

'Wha?! Who is with you, dad?'

Hoseok appeared on the screen.

'Hi! Your future landlord I think...'

'Oh my God! Let me handle this...' Jin shook his head and grabbed the phone. 'I'm Kim Seokjin we met in Daegu last year.'

'Good evening sir...'

'Yeah, yeah... So, your father just came to the conclusion you should study music in Seoul... I will give the phone to my husband, so he can tell you what papers you should prepare for your application, ok?'

Yoongi was speechless.

'I... What?!'

Namjoon took the phone from Jin.

'Hello, Yoongi-ssi... So I will give you my phone number, ok? Send me your email address and I will send you the details with papers, back. You can ask about anything regardless the Uni. No need to be shy...'

'Oh... o-okay sir...'

'We will gladly welcome you here... Your father said you are really talented and the Music Faculty is really good here. So as your father said... Start to pack your things...' he gave the phone to Jaehyun.

'Dad... are you serious?' Yoongi asked anxiously.

'Yeah, Yoongs. I am.' Jaehyun smiled lightly. 'We will talk it out in a week, when I will be back home.'

'O-okay... okay...' Yoongi nodded eagerly.

'Go to sleep...'

'Yeah...' Yoongi, still in daze, disconnected the call.

Jaehyun gulped his whisky to the bottom of the glass.

'Damn! Letting your children grow up is for sure hard!'

Hoseok patted his back understandingly.

'Yeah... I'm still blocking this in my head. My Kookie will always be eternally 8. Never 18.'

'Sure... until he will kick your ass if he hears you saying it...' Jin smirked.

Hoseok pouted.

'Maybe I should convince Minji to not train him anymore?'

'Then you will get kicked by her...' Namjoon laughed.

'That's true...' Hoseok sighed and then smiled. 'Well TaeTae won't kick me, so I will just baby him to my last breath...'

'Don't know if you will be so eager to babying Tae when he will be sneaking out of Jungkook's bedroom...' Jin said with a malicious grin.

He was answered with outraged scream of Namjoon and Hoseok and Jaehyun's laughter:

'JIN!!!'

Jaehyun patted Namjoon's back.

'I just understood why you said you have two husbands and one wife...'

'Yeah...' Namjoon shook his head with a smile.

Yoongi was sitting on his bed still looking at his phone.

The tears appeared in the corners of his eyes and he hid his face in his hands. Was he dreaming? Was it true? Was he allowed to chase his dream the way he always wanted?

He knew, tomorrow, he will start to think about all the other things: Gahyeon's safety, the situation in Daegu, leaving his parents...

But right now he was just overwhelmed by the feeling of happiness, excitement... and nervousness.

Something new was coming. He felt as if he was taking the first deep breath in his life.

And he knew... he never loved his father more than in this moment...

**1st of March 2064**

It was the night before Mins went back to Daegu. They got to spend some time with both families and were more than sure that they would take care of Yoongi.

After the both houses calmed down and the night fell above Seoul, Jungkook went to bed. But he couldn't sleep.

Taehyung graduated from Middle School and would start High School in a few days. He again will be only with Yoohyeon and Soobin. Next two years... and it won't be so nice this time, as his school and Tae's new school were in totally different directions.

He was rolling from side to side until he realized, it's not just his sulking that he felt. He was nervous, anxious and insecure...

He got out of bed and went to the balcony. He knew Taehyung never locked his balcony doors. Neither did Jungkook. And he had this feeling something was wrong...

He shivered in the low March temperature, grabbed the railing and jumped over to Taehyung's balcony. It was enough to lightly push the doors for them to open.

Taehyung was dreaming. It wasn't a battle. There was no blood, there were no screams or fights. But he was feeling nervous, anxious and insecure...

He moved on his pillow frowning.

*18 year old Theresites was walking through the calm and quiet Palace. The light breeze was blowing the curtains, making them fly. The torches created the shadows on the marble floor.*

*He sneaked into the bedroom and looked at the balcony.*

*Here he was...*

*Leaning on the marble fencing of the terrace, looking at the calm Aegean Sea that shining under the moonlight. His black curly hair was blown by the warm wind.*

*Theresites leaned next to him so close their arms and tightes joined.*

*'It's so calm...' Jasen whispered.*

*'It is always calm before the battle...' Theresites answered.*

*'How many Greek ships were noticed?'*

*'Hundreds...'*

*'Shouldn't we evacuate the city?'*

*'The King doesn't believe they will storm the walls...'*

*'Well... the walls of Troy were never taken down. But we won't fight inside...'*

*'Prince Hector will lead us...'*

*Jasen nodded.*

*Theresites looked back to see Jasen's armor polished and shining like gold coins. His own armor was waiting for him in his own chamber.*

*'It's unbelievable that it's so quiet...' Jasen noticed again.*

*'But you can feel the nervousness in your veins. The anxiety on your skin. The insecurity of tomorrow...'*

*'Yeah...'*

*Jasen slowly turned his head and looked in Theresites' dark brown eyes.*

*'When we go into battle tomorrow...' he whispered. '... stay by my side.'*

*Theresites shifted and backhugged Jasen placing his chin on his shoulder.*

*'There is no other place for me.'*

*The city of Troy was asleep. And the two lovers looked at the sea, knowing that it would bring to them fate, blood, and an unknown future.*

Tae...

Taehyung...

A gentle call made Taehyung open his eyes. His heavy eyelids raised slightly just to see Jungkook, who was sitting on his bed, next to him, with his legs crossed. He was softly caressing Taehyung's arm to wake him up from his sleep.

'Did you have a nightmare?' Jungkook whispered.

Taehyung blinked a few times tiredly and shook his head.

'It wasn't a nightmare... Just a dream. Why are you awake, Koo?'

'I couldn't sleep...' Jungkook shrugged. 'I tried, but...'

'There is something in the air...' Taehyung finished for him. 'Like the calmness before the battle...'

Jungkook looked at him and nodded lightly.

'Maybe that's why I dreamed...' Taehyung whispered, rubbing his eyes.

'What was your dream about?'

'Ancient Greece I think...?'

'The Battle of Troy?'

'The day before...' Taehyung looked at Jungkook attentively. 'Have you dreamed

about it too?'

Jungkook looked in the space absent-mindedly.

'A long time ago... But I remembered it vaguely a few months ago and I drew it... Sometimes I draw things I'm dreaming about...' Jungkook shrugged and rubbed his arms in a thin shirt.

'You should go to bed! You are freezing!' Taehyung scolded him, worried.

Jungkook looked at him with a bitter-sweet smile.

'Few years ago you would just uncover your blanket and pull me under it...'

Taehyung was looking at him for a moment and Jungkook shrugged again. His gaze fell down, while he started to play with the material of his pajama pants anxiously.

'I guess we are growing up...'

He was looking down... so maybe that's why he didn't notice how Taehyung's eyes softened.

Taehyung slowly uncovered the side of the duvet and gently said:

'Come here...'

Jungkook's eyes widened and his cheeks flushed pink. But even so... not looking into Taehyung's eyes, he slid under the duvet. Taehyung covered them both tightly, and threw his leg over Jungkook's legs.

'You are freezing...' Taehyung rubbed Jungkook's cold skin. 'How long have you been here?!'

'Not so long...' Jungkook giggled. 'I was restless... Sometimes... I just missed when we were  little and everything was simple, you know?'

'Yeah... I know. Me too.' Taehyung found the comfortable position and asked: 'What else were you dreaming about?'

'North and South...'

'You mean... the Civil War?'

'I haven't had history classes about it yet... I just remember uncle Joonie mentioning it once... About North and South...'

'Jude and Theodore trying to reach each other. One from the South, the other from

North. Being on two sides of the conflict... Meeting finally in the battle of Antietam...'

'Yeah...'

'What else?'

'Some more... But... Just flashes... Like the smile. Or joined hands. Or running to meet someone...'

'Nightmares?' Taehyung asked, concerned.

'Not really... Not the thing they told us that happened to Jiyan and Tariq...'

Taehyung sighed with relief.

'Good...'

'Do you ever dream about the power they hold?'

'No. Never.'

'Me neither... Aren't you curious?'

'Yeah... But... I don't know... I feel like... There needs to be a purpose for us to discover it...'

Jungkook turned around, surprising Taehyung. They never layed face to face like that and it made Taehyung's heart skip a beat.

'I have a cold nose...' Jungkook mumbled hiding his face in Tae's chest.

Taehyung let out a breathless chuckle.

'Fine...' he gulped and hesitantly put his arm around Jungkook's waist again.

They couldn't sleep, feeling anxious till dawn, so they just talked about silly stuff lazyly, dozing off from time to time. But finally they fell asleep.

**2nd of March 2064**

In the morning Namjoon sleepily walked to the kitchen to prepare himself a coffee and heard Jin's scream from the living room:

'I left a sandwich for you in the fridge!'

'Thanks, babe!'

Namjoon was impatiently looking at the coffee machine that was preparing his drink, wanting to grab it in his hands asap, when suddenly he heard a noise of broken glass as if someone dropped the mug. But he didn't hear the cursing after that would indicate that Jin was yelling in regret that his carpet got stained.

He frowned and moved to the living room where Jin was standing in front of the tv. His face was ghostly pale. He had shocked tears in his eyes.

'Hey! Hey! What happened?!' Namjoon ran to him.

Without a word Jin pointed at the tv and Namjoon focused on the reporter, who was saying:

*...Min Handong was taken to hospital in critical condition after the car rolled over. The couple were returning from the airport after their visit to Seoul, when shots were fired from one of the rooftops. The culprits remain unknown, but police have no doubt, that this was a deliberate and planned act, aimed at killing Min Jaehyun....*

The reporter turned the talk back to the studio's host, who, looking into the camera, said:

*We confirm the shocking reports from Daegu... An hour ago... in downtown Seoul, by a shot from a long distance, millionaire:*

*Min Jaehyun*

*was murdered.*

---

...

BlairWitch

# Chapter 14: 2064 - Heart that was Shut

**2nd of March 2064...**

...was the day Yoongi's world collapsed.

7 days before his 18 birthday.

10 days after his High School Graduation.

Ordinary day. Sunday to be precise...

Ordinary day he started with a bowl of cereal and a glass of orange juice, reading the text from his mom, that his parents were boarding the plane.

Ordinary day which he spent happily filling all the papers needed for Uni, after getting info from Kim Namjoon that his application was accepted.

Ordinary day on which he got a surprise e-mail from Jeon Hoseok, who had sent him all the suggested dormitories or flats to rent, casually inviting him to his home, in case he would need more time to think about the place he wants to live from now on...

Ordinary day on which he had tuned his guitars and he was wondering if he should organize transportation from all his studio equipment. As he and his sister were spoiled by love, not by money, he hesitantly texted his father about it, and got a text in return:

"*Jeez, Yoongs! Just order everything new and send me the bill. What the hell will you be doing during holidays if you will take everything from home? It feels as if you are planning to never come back! Don't make me cry!*"

Ordinary day on which he rolled his eyes at his sister more then once and laughed at her pouting, sulking figure when she tried to hide his notes, thinking it would stop him from leaving Daegu.

Ordinary day on which he got shy and irritated when Gahyeon was teasing him, finding out his lyrics about destiny, asking if he had a crush on someone.

Ordinary day on which he signed up for the driving course in Seoul wanting to start it as soon as possible. His father taught him how to drive, yeah, but he still needed the course to get the license...

Ordinary day on which he stormed the kitchen, and casually helped the old caretaker of the Mins' household, who was their nanny when they were infants, to prepare the dinner for their parents.

Just an ordinary day...

So...

Why...?

Why was Taeil - standing in front of him, in the middle of the fucking kitchen, with tears streaming down his face, sobbing loudly - talking bullshit like that?

40 minutes ago he got a text from his father that they landed safely and were heading home...

'Y-yo-ongs... I-I a-am s-sooo... soorryyy...'

Yoongi pushed him to the wall.

'SHUT UP!!!' he yelled. 'HOW FUCKED UP YOU CAN BE TO SAY THINGS LIKE THAT?!'

' 'M s-oor-ry... Yoongi... They...'

'SHUT THE FUCK UP!!!!' Yoongi pulled his phone from his pocket and dialed a number.

*"The number you are trying to reach is currently not available"*

Yoongi stubbornly tried again and again, but each time he was answered by the emotionless, mechanical voice.

He dialed his mother's number, with the same effect.

'A-aunt Handongie is... in the hospital...' Taeil cried out. 'B-but... u-uncle... h-he...'

'Shut up! Shut up! Shut up! Shut up! Shut uuuuuuuuuup!!!!!!!' Yoongi punched him, when someone ran to the kitchen and embraced him from behind.

His arms were immobilized, when kicking and jerking off he tried to free himself.

'SHUT UP!!! IT'S NOT TRUE!!!'

'Yoongi...' Kyung's voice was a choke out whisper, almost inaudible, when he tightened his gentle hug around Yoongi's body.

'HE IS LYING!!'

Yoongi felt the warm drops of water on his arm. And heard this one sentence his heart couldn't accept.

'He is not...' Kyung whispered in a weak and quiet voice, as if he couldn't speak louder, too scared to break. 'Jae... ' Gulp. 'Jae... was s... he was...' Gulp. ' s-shot...'

All power left Yoongi's body, when he hung in his uncle's embrace, screaming through tears. Trying to break free.

Denying the tears streaming down his face. Denying fate... Denying the truth.

Just an ordinary day...

...when his heart shut down.

Jimin was sitting next to his desk studying for the first days in highs school. Repeating the material. He was clicking his pen from time to time, solving the equations when a drop fell on his notebook.

He was staring at it in daze, wondering, where did it come from, when the next drop fell on the page. And the next one.

He dropped his pen and touched his cheeks.

Tears?

He wiped his cheeks. But the new flow came.

What the hell?

Was he studying too hard? Maybe it was from being tired?

The wave of misery ran through his heart making it ache.

He put his elbows on the desk and rested his forehead on his palms, trying to understand what was going on.

He just let the tears flow.

*It will be ok... It will be ok...* he was whispering in his head, not even knowing what should be ok and what was wrong.

And suddenly... as unexpectedly as it started... everything stopped. The squeezing in his chest disappeared. The misery passed.

Then why?

Why after he should be perfectly fine again, his tears started to flow even harder? And this time Jimin knew exactly where the tears were coming from.

Because together with the sudden void, he could almost hear the quiet sound of locking.

**3rd of March 2064**

Yoongi and Gahyeon went to the hospital with uncle Kyung. His wife, aunt Chorong, was sitting in front of the room constantly since the accident.

When she saw them, she went to Gahyeon to hug her.

Gahyeon wasn't crying at the moment. But she was numb and the tears were coming unexpectedly to her eyes. But she was holding. Or more like, she was trying too...

Yoongi hadn't said a word since the day before. He didn't sleep. He spent the whole night in his father's home office, watching the news.

The doctors didn't let them in, to see their mother. Her life was still in danger. She went through two surgeries. She was under constant observation. Her heart stopped twice. Once during the first surgery and second time after it, so they had to perform the second surgery.

'Kims are coming...' Kyung said to Chorong. 'Kim Namjoon sent me the message. He and his husband will be here in the middle of the night. He said they will go straight to the hospital to check what they can do for Handong.'

'Can they actually do anything?' Yoongi asked bitterly.

'They are healers. Of course they can. Now it's important for doctors to keep your mom alive till they will arrive.'

'Do we trust them? The doctors?' Yoongi's tone was full of darkness and tamed anger.

Kyung looked at him surprised.

'We do.'

'Can you organize the protection for mom here? And check the doctors?'

'I... I can. But the only security agents that are not ordinary people are from ISA...' Kyung said hesitantly.

'ISA is under your control, so what's the problem?' Yoongi looked at him coldly.

'Officially it is... but in fact it's managed by Na Dokyun. But you are right. I will ask him to send his trusted people here.'

'Thank you...'

Yoongi looked at his sister, who Chorong was rocking calmingly in her arms. Chorong raised her eyes at him.

'We will take care of Gahyeon...' he said softly.

Yoongi frowned.

'What are you talking about?'

'You are going to University next week. Your mom asked us to help you pack your things when she was in Seoul...' Chorong said surprised.

For a moment Yoongi was looking at her. University? Studying?

What was that again? His world just changed 360 degrees... and they were talking about University?

'I'm not going anywhere.' he said coldly and turned around. 'I will be in the car.'

It was the afternoon after the fatal day. Taehyung walked to his parents bedroom, when he got back from school.

'Our flight is in the evening. You will stay with Jeons.' Jin informed Taehyung packing fastly. 'We should be back in a week.'

Taehyung looked at Jin's reddened eyes. He knew what happened and how shocked his parents were. He was sad, because Mr Min was a really nice person and they had so many future plans with his children for holidays.

He didn't understand why someone would want to harm him. Especially in such a cruel, cold way.

Namjoon said not to worry, but Taehyung knew he just said it so he won't think about it. And it only made Taehyung think about it more. Mr Min was, next to his father, the person known for speaking for Interdependants not only inside the country, but all over the world. Interdependants loved him, and none of them would harm him.

And there was no doubt he was murdered - Taehyung saw the news. And on the internet someone posted short videos from the attack as well. It was planned.

Someone on purpose eliminated one of the people that was saying out loud about equality between Interdependants and non-interdependatns.

There was this question in the back of his head, that was making him nuseous... Was his appa in danger?

And now he had to look as his fathers were packing, going exactly to the most dangerous place he could imagine right now...

'Dad, I know the emergency procedure... But I'm 16. I will stay in my own bed in my own house, when you are out...'

'Fine. But remember Hobi and Minji are right next to you.'

'And I will eat at their place, and spend most of my time there. And Jungkook will come for a sleepover if I don't feel like being alone...'

'Ok...' Jin said absent-mindedly.

'Dad... why auntie and uncle are not going with you?'

It was making him worried too. His parents had the defensive kind of power. They were healers. And even if Namjoon, after his seal was unlocked, was so strong his punch could break the skull, he wasn't the kind to fight. That's why Minji and Hoseok were always there with them. As their backup and offensive force. And now they were going without them. It was scaring the shit out of him...

'Minji have to stay because MOI is kind of a mess right now. And Hoseok won't go without her. We have to stick close now.'

'That's what I'm worried about...' Taehyung said. 'Appa and you are going to Daegu

without your shield!'

Jin stopped putting his shirts in the suitcase and looked at Taehyung.

'Tae... there is nothing to worry about...'

Taehyung glared at his dad.

'Don't give me this bullshit! One of the most important activitst in Korea was murdered in the pure daylight and you are telling me not to worry about it?!'

'First. Watch your language... Second...' Jin sighed. 'No matter how you look at it, he was your father's friend. And we are going to his funeral. I want to go to check what I can do for Handong too. And if we can we will do anything for their children, but we are not going there as ICI's representatives this time. It's Yongguk and his wife's job.'

'That doesn't change the fact that I would be calmer if aunt Minji and uncle would go with you.'

Jin hugged Taehyung shortly.

'You are growing up to be a wonderful man.' he said. 'I promise you we will be back safe and sound.'

Taehyung moved from his father's arms and looked at him coldly.

'You know what? I bet the same thing Min Jaehyun promised his son, when he was flying to Seoul.'

Jin widened his eyes, but Taehyung only turned around and shut the door after himself with a loud bang.

Hoseok drove Namjoon and Jin to the airport. Taehyung was going with them. And knowing how both of the kids are working, Hoseok just pushed Jungkook to the car without asking anyone for an opinion.

Seeing Taehyung's face was enough for him to know what he would need...

Taehyung was silent all the way. He didn't say a word even to Jungkook.

So when they got out of the car at Incheon Airport, Jungkook pulled him to the

side. Hoseok looked at them and slowed down his walk so they could easily join him after the talk.

'Tae...' Jungkook looked at Taehyung sternly.

'What? I'm fine.'

'No you are not. You are worried about your parents. I know, because I'm worried too.'

'Yeah. If you know, then just let me be...' Taehyung wanted to turn.

Jungkook grabbed his arm harshly.

'Kim Fucking Taehyung!' he gritted his teeth. 'They will enter this fucking plane either way! Do you really want them to fly to Daegu with your stupid, sulking face in mind? Get a grip!'

Taehyung blinked, surprised

'I know you well enough to know, that you will be mad at your own stupid ass for being a dick to them just before they left!'

Taehyung was looking at Jungkook's angry face and chuckled unexpectedly. He flicked his chin upwards with his fingers.

'Soooo much swearing...' he smiled shortly, when Jungkook pushed his hand away. He sighed and ruffled Jungkook's hair. 'You are right...'

'Of course I am!' Jungkook said, crossing his arms over his chest.

'Aren't you too cheeky?' Taehyung moved his face close to Jungkook's.

Jungkook, taken by surprise, blushed madly, but didn't move from his position.

'S-shut up...' he mumbled. 'We should get going.'

They joined Hoseok, who was looking at Jin and Namjoon giving their bags to the airport staff.

'It's our call so...' Namjoon said, looking at Hoseok, who nodded.

Jungkook hugged Jin tightly, making him smile. Taehyung looked at this with a warm smile.

Then the younger one was pulled by Namjoon.

'Be careful uncle...' he whispered, hiding in the strong, warm arms of Namjoon.

'Look after uncle Jinnie, please...'

'I will, Kookie...' Namjoon said. He moved his lips to Jungkook's ears. 'Don't leave Taehyung's side.'

Jungkook looked at him seriously and nodded in agreement.

Jin and Taehyung were looking at each other, until Jin stretched his arm and grabbed Taehyung's head, pulling him closer. He kissed his head.

'I will text you when we will land' he promised.

'Thanks, dad...'

Namjoon looked into Taehyung's worried eyes and smiled a bit. He hugged him shortly and moved him, squeezing his arms.

'I hope the house will be in the same state we left it...' he joked.

'Appa!' Taehyung whined. 'I'm not going to organize a freaking party!'

'Well who knows... teenagers like to do stupid shit...' he giggled.

'I won't!'

'Sure...' Namjoon nodded, as if he wouldn't believe him.

'APPA!!!' Taehyung was offended by his father's suggestions, but Namjoon knew how to deal with his son. His calmness and jokes relaxed Taehyung for the moment.

Three Kims looked at each other, still a bit worried about each other. Taehyung was holding Namjoon's laptop bag, not wanting to give it back to him.

Hoseok smirked, when Jungkook moved to Taehyung, and pulled him back from his parents, taking the bag away from him and giving it back to Namjoon.

Well he knew his babies... That's why he took Jungkook with them.

If anybody else would do it, Taehyung would snap. But Jungkook just glared at him and the older one only sighed. He shyly waved to his parents who were walking into the right gate direction.

Hoseok, Jungkook and Taehyung were looking at them, until Hoseok said:

'Panda Express?'

'Yeah! Tae should eat.' Jungkook grabbed the material of Taehyung's jacket over

his elbow and pulled the other after his father.

Minji parked her car in front of her house and looked at the dark and quiet Kims' house. Jin just texted that they landed safely and were heading to Handong.

Yeah well... that's why she was freaking out inside. Jaehyun sent them the exact same text a day ago.

She forced them to rent the most expensive, most secure and safest car, but still Jaehyun was on his own secured (like the fucking president's car itself) car and they got him either way...

She got out of the car and moved to Kims' doors. She chose the spare key and went inside. She went straight to Taehyung's bedroom. She lightly opened the door. The room was dark, but she knew Taehyung wasn't sleeping. He wasn't hugging his pillow or wasn't rolled in his duvet like a burrito. He was laying on his side, looking at the snowball with two bears inside.

She sat on the edge of the bed and asked:

'Don't you want to sleep with Kookie?'

'I want to stay here when appa and dad are not here. It's my home...' Taehyung answered after some time.

'I understand...' Minji said quietly, looking at the night outside.

Taehyung turned on his back and looked at her.

'Auntie... are we in danger?'

Minji hadn't denied. She was silent for a long time.

'Not directly...' she finally said. She didn't want to scare boys. But in fact she wanted them to be careful.

'Are THEY in danger?' Taehyung asked harshly. He didn't have to explain who he was talking about.

'Two days ago I would say "no" without hesitation.' Minji said heavily. 'But now? I don't know myself. I don't think anybody would be so stupid to attack ICI's officials, but again... I didn't think anybody would attack Mins either.'

Taehyung covered his head with a pillow and screamed into it out of frustration.

Minji gently took away the pillow from Tae's face and cupped his cheeks.

'TaeTae... no matter how worried I am. No matter how many thoughts are crossing my mind right now... I know one thing. No matter what danger they would face, Seokjin and Namjoon will come back without scratches. I saw what they are capable of. You haven't. So trust me. They will come back. Safe and sound.'

Taehyung nodded. And Minji smiled shortly at him, before kissing his forehead.

'Want me to stay with you?'

'No auntie. Uncle Hobi would kill me if I would steal his bed heater...'

Minji frowned.

'He called me "a bed heater"?'

Taehyung gulped suddenly.

'No...'

Minji smirked.

'I see...'

She stood up, saying:

'Goodnight TaeTae. You have the keys if you change your mind...'

'Goodnight, auntie... Please spare my uncle...'

She smiled sweetly.

'You wish...'

Minji slipped inside her house quietly and without turning on the light she went upstairs. She was in the middle of the stairs when the lights blinded her and she looked at the top of the stairs where Jungkook was standing, with his arms crossed over his chest.

'IT'S. LATE.' he said.

Minji blinked.

'I know that. Why are you not sleeping, Kookie?'

'I was waiting for you...' Jungkook tightened his lips.

Minji's eyes softened. Even if Jungkook and Taehyung weren't emotionally connected to Jaehyun, his death rubbed on them. Because they could feel their parents' moods. Jungkook had never before waited for her when she was at work for longer than she should.

'It's ok, Kookie. I'm fine. You should follow your dad's example and go to sleep...' she walked to him and kissed his forehead.

'Dad is not sleeping. He is pretending. He always is...' Jungkook said, glaring at her. 'And you know it, mom...'

'Aaah... Such a caring men I have in the house...' she giggled. 'Well now I'm here so you can go to sleep. You are going to school tomorrow... You should rest.'

'Yeah... I'm going...' he nodded and turned around to walk away.

Minji grunted and smirked.

'No need to use the balcony...'

Jungkook stopped abruptly.

'Just be here for breakfast...'

'I don't have any idea what you are talking about, mom...'

'Sure thing, bunny. I'm just saying don't hop through railing when you can use doors...'

'W-why would I...' Jungkook started but hearing his mother's giggles, he just ran to his room, embarrassed. Now he would never use the front doors.

Still, if Taehyung was stubborn enough to stay alone in his home, Jungkook didn't have the problem of going to him instead.

Jungkook sneaked into Taehyung's bedroom through balcony doors. Taehyung wasn't sleeping. He raised his head above the pillow, seeing Jungkook, who casually walked around the bed and layed down on the other side of the bed.

'Uncle Namjoon said to not leave your side. And I'm gonna listen to him.' Jungkook explained and turned so he was facing the opposite direction then Taehyung.

'Fine.' Taehyung said quietly. 'I don't mind...'

Jungkook was looking at the wall. He didn't want to make Taehyung more nervous than he already was. And lately Taehyung was often getting nervous when they were close. So he closed his eyes ready to sleep. Happy enough he was hearing Taehyung's breath nearby.

He felt the movement of the mattress and he knew Taehyung was now facing his back.

Taehyung was looking at the back of Jungkook's head.

His baby Koo...

He was so close. The warmth he loved so much was at his fingertips. But he was so confused by the way his body reacted to Jungkook lately... It was making him shy. And embarrassed.

He pouted. Yesterday was ok, right? Maybe he could calmly hug him again? He really needed a calm sleep...

'You are irritating me, Kim Taehyung.' Jungkook said suddenly.

'Whaaa?!' Taehyung widened his eyes.

'You can be so silly, angel...' Jungkook turned on his back and glared at Taehyung. 'Do I look like a toddler to you?'

'No. Probably that's the problem...' Taehyung giggled.

Jungkook squinted his eyes and turned to Taehyung.

'Just hug me, damn it!' he mumbled, closing his eyes. 'I can't sleep hearing your inner battle.'

Taehyung blushed shyly, and threw his hand over Jungkook's waist. He placed his head on Jungkook's forearm that was laying between their heads. He turned his head and kissed the skin on Jungkook's arm.

He closed his eyes to sleep, so he couldn't see how Jungkook smiled lightly, before moving his face a bit and brushing his lips over Taehyung's cheek.

Taehyung pulled him a bit closer.

Just a little bit more...

**4th of March 2064**

It was 1 a.m. when Jin and Namjoon walked into the part of the hospital where a private room was placed. The doctor responsible for Min Handong came to them.

'I'm doctor Kim Seokjin. I'm here as the medical consultant requested by Min's family.' Jin explained, stretching his hand.

'I was informed.' The doctor nodded. 'We did everything we could for her.'

'Can I see the medical documentation?'

'Follow me.' he nodded. 'The room is under security...' he said bitterly.

Jin and Namjoon didn't do anything weird in this. Handong was almost killed together with her husband. There was a possibility she was the target too. They change their opinion when they see four guards. All interdependants. With their holders' mark on display. In uniforms with the ISA emblem.

The agents stopped them before they could go further.

'I'm her doctor!' the doctor said, annoyed.

The guards ignored him. They looked at Jin and Namjoon.

'Show your mark.' he requested.

Jin raised his eyebrow, but took off his glove.

The guard nodded and looked at Namjoon.

'Are you the Sealer?'

'Yeah.'

'You can enter.' he looked at the doctor. 'You stay here. They will ask when they will need you.'

The doctor was fuming.

'It's unacceptable!'

'Just like shooting at us.' The guard answered sternly and opened the doors for Jin and Namjoon. Two of the security agents entered together with them. Two stayed outside next to the doors.

Jin took out the medical card and started to read.

'Brain concussion. Occipital lobe damage. Inner bleeding. Broken ribs. Severed femoral artery. Open fracture of the right tibia. Left forearm bone crushing. Fracture of the sternum caused cardiac arrest...' he raised his eyes at the monitors. 'Pulse abnormal. Pressure is too low... She is dying,' he stated. He pulled the RTG sheet from the medical documentation and pointed it at the light, frowning. 'They couldn't check it yet after the anesthesia, but because of the brain damage she is probably in coma...'

'We shouldn't waste our time then...' Namjoon said, unbuttoning his shirt.

Jin nodded and looked at the guards.

'Are you staying here?'

'Yeah... Only Mr Min Kyng can allow us to leave the room without supervision.' the guards explained. 'He was informed already.'

'We won't wait for him. So, just don't disturb us. If you will, we can accidentally cause more damage.' Namjoon rolled his sleeves over his elbows.

The guard nodded hesitantly.

'Take care of her head. I will deal with the fractures...' Jin said, placing his hand over Namjoon's heart and sliding it inside.

They looked into each other's eyes for a moment. Moment of pure connection of two souls. Then the glowing white bandage appeared around Jin's palm.

Namjoon's hands started to glow with the same white aura. He placed his hands on Handong's head.

Jin moved the sheet from Handong's body and exposed her fractured tights. He gently lifted her leg and the bandage wrapped around the tight to heal the artery.

'You can sit down...' Jin mumbled to the guards. 'It will take time...'

At 7 a.m Jin and Namjoon stepped away from the hospital bed. Jin brushed away the sweat from his forehead, while Namjoon pressed his tired eyes with his fingers.

Jin made the bandage disappear and turned to guards.

'You can call her doctor and her family. She is out of danger.'

The guard opened the door and Kyung with Chorong and the doctor entered. Mins came to the bed and looked at Handong's face.

'I put her to sleep. She will wake up in a few hours...' Namjoon explained.

The doctor looked at the monitors that were showing the perfectly fine vitals.

'She is perfectly healed.' Jin said.

The doctor looked at him shocked.

'If you have the power like that, then why...'

Jin looked at him tiredly.

'How many people can I heal? One? Two at the day? And how could I decide who to save if in my eyes all are worth saving...' Jin said simply. Too many times in his life he had too explained this already.

'And people are greedy...' Kyung said bitterly. 'If you save one. You will meet with hundreds of angry others... Why him, not me?'

Jin nodded sadly.

'Yeah... not to mention I'm just a simple doctor when Namjoon is not around.'

'So you only choose to heal your own kind when it's absolutely necessary?' the doctor said bitterly.

'We rarely choose to heal anybody. Just to not encounter the ones like you who would blame us after...' Namjoon said with dark eyes.

'Guards, take him out...' Kyung ordered.

When the doctor jerked out from the guards grip and walked out angrily.

Chorong looked at Jin.

'Can we take her home?'

'Her body is perfectly fine. But it doesn't mean she is healed...' Namjoon said

heavily and sat on the chair.

'What do you mean?' Kyung frowned.

'She lost her soulmate. She will never again be ok... I don't know if by saving her life we did her a favor.' Jin said sadly, covering Handong with a warm sheet.

'She will be mentally unstable. For years. Even after the separation syndrome will ease up...' Namjoon sighed.

'They will pay for this...' Chorong clenched her teeth with angry tears in her eyes.

Kyung looked at Jin and Namjoon.

'Thank you for coming... Can we offer you a place to stay?'

'Thank you, but we have the hotel booked.'

The funeral will be in two days.' Kyung said quietly. 'The police will give us Jaehyun's body tomorrow.'

Namjoon nodded.

'We will be there. Do you want us to take Min Yoongi with us? His University application was accepted...'

Chorong shook her head.

'Yoongi said he is not going. Maybe he will change his mind later on, but for now... he wants to stay with his sister.'

'Understandable.' Namjoon sighed and got up. 'We will get going. If you need anything, call me.' he handed his business card to Kyung.

'I have your number. Jae gave me.' Kyung smiled sadly. 'He said: if you ever have doubts and want to clear your mind, call this guy.'

Namjoon felt how his throat squeezed and nodded without words. Jin took his hand.

'We will see you then...'

'Thank you, for helping her. We will take care of the rest...' Chorong whispered.

Jin nodded and they walked out.

**6th of March 2064**

The funeral.

The heavy smell of flowers was everywhere.

People in black gathered in the reception hall. All silent. All interdependants.

Outside the cemetery even more people. More Interdependants ready to bid the farewell to the person they admired. Some of them were holding posters like: "We won't forget".

But there was something wrong in this ceremony.

Namjoon wouldn't even notice it, if he wouldn't be focused on the pale, blank face of Min Yoongi, who was holding his sister's arm. They were standing with the rest of Min's family beside the coffin that was slowly being put down inside the deep, dark pit. But Yoongi's eyes were fixed on the crowd, angrily with hate and disbelief.

Namjoon turned around and understood why.

There was a part of the crowd that was screaming angry slogans and holding the posters. Especially one made Namjoon enraged. "Burn in hell.'

Some of the Interdependants started to notice the crowd on the opposite side and walked there. The riots were only a matter of time...

Police were present, on the edges of the crowd, but they weren't doing anything yet. He looked at Min Kyung who looked at the crowd and turned his head to someone behind him.

He whispered a few words and the man nodded.

Namjoon recognized Na Dokyun - the CEO of ISA, who walked away, pulling his phone from his pocket.

He couldn't believe this... Even during the funeral the people didn't have a bit of respect.

It was painful for him. That the place his son was born in. That the place he had so many good memories from... It wasn't the same place he left 7 years ago. It was full of anger. Prejudices.

And hate.

**8th/9th of March**

Jimin didn't know what's happening with him for the last seven days. He could suddenly burst out crying out of nowhere. Or just be silent for hours as if he was in a dark, deep well without an exit.

He was a mess.

Baekhyun started to worry about him. He even wanted him to not go to school and rest, thinking he was just exhausted, but it was his first days of High School and Jimin was stubborn.

Whatever his fathers asked about he was just replying that he doesn't know or he is fine.

But he wasn't fine. And everybody could see it. But when Chanyeol tried to approach him, he just put his headphones on his ears and ignored him like never before.

Baekhyun called Taehyung to ask if he knew something. But Taehyung only said he noticed Jimin's unusual behavior, but didn't know what caused it.

But Baekhyun's call to Tae was enough for the bunch of teenagers to appear on his porch two hours later.

Taehyung, Jungkook, Yoohyeon, Dami, Yeonjun and Soobin just passed him with bags full of snacks saying not to worry and stormed Jimin's bedroom.

Hearing his son's laugh he felt relief. Even though it was freaking midnight...

He was going to bed when Jimin, texting on his phone, walked out of the bathroom. He looked at Baekhyun and hugged him out of nowhere.

Baekhyun was surprised, but when he looked at his son's blond locks he embraced him comfortingly.

'Love you dad. Sorry for being a dick lately...'

Baekhyun's face twisted in regret hearing the swearing, but the smile formed on his lips.

'It's ok, honey... There are days we can help it...'

Yoongi was sitting in his father's home office on his leather armchair. He was playing with Jaehyun's zippo lighter. Lighting it up and putting it out. Looking at the flame that appeared just to be put down after.

It was this simple. To take a life. Just as putting down this fucking flame.

Click.

And it's gone.

He looked at the laptop screen. At the face covered by a balaclava. It was a recording from 12 hours ago. Currently viral. Repeated by all tv stations.

He memorized this recording already. He could repeat every word of the changed voice from memory.

*'We - the NORMAL people - will get rid of every pest. Min Jaehyun was first. He was a threat to normality, to our daily life. We will consider an enemy everyone that will try to steal what ours. The freaks should stay where they belong - in the shadows. Because they are not equal to us. They are protecting their powers instead of supporting the world. They are threatening the stabilization that we had for centuries wanting to be someone they are not. And they are not NORMAL. 3EO and ISA will be first to be taken down by us. We will be everywhere. And whenever you will appear - protectors of equality -, WE - protectors of normality - will be there too. Min Jahyun had to die. As a vermin he was. He was like a virus. So we destroyed him like one. If you want to stay alive... get back to the holes you crawled out of... Interdependants.'*

Click of the lighter.

A pest. A vermin. A freak.

Click of the lighter.

That's what they called his father.

Click of the lighter.

They shot him because he was a threat to their stability... To their peaceful, blind and narrow-minded lifes...

Click of the lighter.

Ha...They didn't know... what a real threat is then...

Click of the lighter.

They wanted a war with Interdependants?

Click of the lighter.

He hoped they were ready for it.

Click of the lighter.

But even if they were... The so-called protectors of normality... will get to know... what Interdependants normality is...

Click of the lighter.

Yoongi's gaze fell on the family photo on his father's desk. He looked at his mother's smiling face.

His mom... was closed in the safe room in the house. She was looking the way Yoongi felt. As if someone sent her to a different planet, where she couldn't recognize anything and anyone. They took away from the room all the sharp objects, all the things she could hurt herself with.

She was furious. She was screaming. Yelling. Calling her husband.

Calling her soulmate.

First stage of separation syndrome...

Yoongi's wrist watch informed him about midnight. The date changed to 9th of March.

His fucking birthday...

Yoongi felt the tears in his eyes and cursed.

He wanted to stay numb. He wanted to stay angry. He didn't need feelings. He didn't want them.

He pulled the lowest drawer and took out almost a full pack of cigarettes. He knew his father was always hiding it there. He took the bottle of whisky from the bar

and grabbed his father's leather jacket from the closet.

He stormed out of the office and walked through the mension, heading to the underground garage.

Gahyeon stopped him when he was going through the living room.

'Oppa... where are you going...?' she asked, looking at him worried.

'Go to sleep, Gahyeon.' he said sternly, not looking at her.

She followed him to the garage. When she saw him unlocking their father's car, her face turned pale.

'You can't! Yoongi! You can't!'

Yoongi opened the doors harshly.

Gahyeon moved and stopped him, blocking his way with her body.

'Don't go... d-don't go...' she whispered.

'Move.' Yoongi said with dark eyes.

'P-please... oppa...d-don't go...' she said. Her eyes filled with tears.

'Move. Now. Or I will move you by myself.'

The tears started to stream down her face when she moved slowly, hiccuping and sobbing.

Yoongi sat in the car and closed the doors. He drove away with the screech of tires, leaving his sister in despair, placing her nails in her cheeks.

(🎶Music: *Runnin* by Adam Lambert🎶)

Yoongi drove through the city of Seoul. He pressed the gas pedal to the end, not looking at red lights. He just wanted to get out of the city as fast as he could.

He couldn't breathe. He couldn't think.

He was biting his lips so hard, he felt the steal taste of blood. When he drove outside of the city he pulled the cap of the bottle with his teeth and sipped the

burning liquid.

His father's voice was everywhere... Telling him how to take a curve. How to change the gear.

The car was full of his cologne scent, just as the jacket Yoongi was wearing.

He was everywhere.

And yet he was nowhere.

The tears blurred Yoongi's vision when he took another sip from the bottle. Still holding the bottle, his fingers turned on the volume to full.

He hoped the music would kill his thoughts. His memories. The voices in his head.

*Slow down, Yoongs...* Jeahyun laughed. *We are not in a hurry anywhere...*

He could hear his dad as clear as if he was sitting next to him.

*A pest. A vermin. A freak.*

The speed counter showed 100.

Then 120.

130.

170.

200.

The road was empty. Just as Yoongi.

Holding the steering wheel with one hand he held the bottle with his knees and put the cigarette in his mouth. He lit it with his father's lighter. For a moment the flame lightened the inside of the car and Yoongi looked at his own deadly pale reflection.

His father's eyes were looking at him. The tears were streaming down his face, but he didn't feel them. Why the fuck was he crying?!

The smoke filled the car. The known smell of cigarettes and cologne mixed. This was exactly the smell he remembered from the rides with Jaehyun.

*Two of them leaning on the bonnet of the car. Jaehyung litening the cigarette, glaring at Yoongi, ruffling his hair, saying: Don't tell mom...*

Yoongi took a long drag of the cigarette and started to cough. The cigarette fell from his fingers on his lap.

'FUCK!' He grabbed it fastly and threw it out of the window.

To get rid of the taste in his mouth he took another sip from the bottle.

*Why did you love this whisky so much, dad?* he thought. *Why couldn't you stay home, dad? Why couldn't you leave everything as it was?*

*I'm just 18...*

*Why did you leave me?*

*I still need you...*

The speed, alkohol and tears caused Yoongi to no longer see the road. He was sobbing, bending over the steering wheel.

*Why?*

*Why?*

Could somebody take away these feelings?

220.

Yoongi hit the wheel with his palm.

Could somebody stop this fucking tears?

He didn't want them.

He didn't want anything anymore.

Just to kill this pain.

The ringtone made him look at his phone, but he ignored the caller. When the call after another didn't stop, he opened the window wanting to throw the phone away, but he saw the notification that started to pop out one after another. He squinted his eyes to focus his vision.

**CHIMISLOVE:** Sorry I wasn't around. I didn't feel well. 

Notification disappeared.

**CHIMISLOVE:** But I realized something...

Notification disappeared.

**CHIMISLOVE:** You never walk alone...

Last notification was displayed on Yoongi's screen.

*You never walk alone...*

He took his foot from the gas pedal, looking at those four words. He started desperately catching his breath.

The car started to slow down without Yoongi's realization.

180... 160... 140...

Another notification after a while.

**CHIMISLOVE:** Waiting to talk with you again, hyung...

120... 100... 80...

Gahyeon's terrified face appeared in his mind. His mother unfocused gaze looking through the window.

60... 50...40... 30... 20...

The car reached the side of the road slowly.

Yoongi hit the steering wheel with his forehead. The engine died, turning off the power and the loud stereo along with it.

The silence was deafening. Only quiet sniffles and desperate breaths were heard.

The bottle rolled to the floor, feeling the car with the hard smell of alcohol.

The sudden lights from behind lightened the car. Yoongi squinted his eyes looking at the rear view mirror and laid his back on the seat. The black car parked behind his car.

Cops would be the perfect addition to his already fucked up birthday... wouldn't they?

But when the doors opened and the person bent to look at him, it wasn't a cop.

Taeil pulled him out of the car and hugged him.

Yoongi didn't mind this time.

*You never walk alone...*

Most of the time he didn't like Taeil's guts. But he was his closest cousin and the only person he could actually call a friend.

He pressed his forehead to Taeil's shoulder.

'Gahy called me...' Taeil said quietly. 'You are dick for making her worried like that...'

'Yeah...' Yoongi agreed.

Over Yoongi's shoulder, Taeil looked at the mess inside the car.

He patted Yoongi's back.

'Don't worry... I will clean this mess...'

'Thanks...'

'Come. We will take you to bed...'he walked Yoongi to his own car and buckled his belt. ' If you puke in my car I will throw you away...' he warned.

'You are a dick, Taeil...'

'Yup. But you are one too. We have it in our blood...' he said with a smirk. He closed Yoongi's car and took the keys, before he sat in his car. He glanced at Yoongi's devastated state. 'You saw the recording...'

'...' Yoongi pressed his forehead to the cold glass.

'We will get them Yoongs. Each one of them.' he said quietly.

'Yeah...'

Taeil turned the car and they drove back to Daegu.

'Happy birthday.' he mumbled shyly.

Yoongi closed his eyes.

*You never walk alone...*

---

Crying... 😭😭😭

Honestly guys... I don't know how do you feel about the story so far...? Is it

boring?□□

I'm getting insecure because the pace is so slow. 😔😔

BlairWitch🩶

# Chapter 15: Red alert

**10th of March 2064**

Yoongi walked out of his room finally after recovering from his pitiful state. He was walking to the kitchen when he encountered Gahyeon, who just closed the doors to their mother's room.

She ignored him and walked away.

Yoongi sighed and jogged after her.

'Gahye...'

'I hate you.' she stated harshly. 'You are a jerk. Cold. Selfish. Jerk.'

'I am...'

'Go away if you want. Kill yourself. Who cares?' she mocked.

'Can I at least say "sorry"?' he asked tiredly.

'Whoa?! You are sorry? How shocking! You were not sorry when you left me here and almost drove me over!'

'FFS, Gahyeon!' He grabbed his sister and turned her harshly to himself.

He instantly let her go when he saw silent tears in her eyes. He was impressed she could hide them in her voice...

'WHAT?!' she asked, annoyed. 'You are surprised I cry?! I thought you won't come back! Or have an accident!'

Yoongi put his hand on her arm. He knew she needed a hug, but he wasn't... he didn't want the warmth it would bring.

'Gahyeon...' he said calmly. 'I'm sorry. I broke down. I wasn't in my right state of mind. But I swear... I won't ever leave you alone.'

She sniffed and pressed her forehead to his chest.

'I-it wasn't j-just your father, shithead...'

'I know...' he gulped.

'Mom is not listening to me when I talk to her... She is just insanely mad all the time. She is screaming...'

'Don't go to her alone. Not till the first stage of separation syndrome will pass. She is dangerous for you...'

'Mom won't hurt me!' Gahyeon hit his arm, angrily.

'She can... Even if she recognizes you... it's not enough to conquer her grief. I will go with you every time you want. Just don't go alone...'

Gahyeon looked at the ground and nodded.

'What will you do now?' she asked, quietly. 'If you don't want to go to Uni...'

'I will figure something out. I need to meet our uncle and lawyers...'

'Oh...? I forgot the company existed...' Gahyeon scoffed. 'Will you take over it?'

'Nope. I will hire people that will manage it till you will finish 18. I hate this business shit...'

'Me?'

'Yeah. You are a financial genius... You won the economics tournament last year...'

'But...'

Yoongi just patted her back.

'Start thinking about it.'

He knew exactly what he just did. He gave his sister a "goal". She wasn't the timid baby, his aunt and uncle wanted to see her as.

She was daughter of Min Jaehyung - a business genius - and Min Handong - a mathematical tycoon. She could do the equations in her head like a computer. And they raised her to be a sassy, confident business Queen, as they knew Yoongi had an artist's soul.

But they didn't have the chance to see that he was not just an artist...

Because 2064 - the year that everything collapsed - made him a warrior.

**11th of March 2064**

Minji was walking back and forth through her kitchen, squeezing her phone tightly next to her ear.

'Namjoon! Have you seen the recording?! Get out of there! NOW!!' she said harshly.

'Minji... Yoonguk called me an hour ago. He talked with Mins... They are not going to disband 3EO...' Namjoon said heavily.

'Right now I don't care! I will deal with it later! You are in the city where some terrorists are killing the Interdependant Activitist! You are next on their list!!'

She turned around, trying to calm herself down, when her eyes widened.

Taehyung and Jungkook that came for breakfast. They had to hear what she just said.

Taehyung's eyes became dark and cold. He stretched his hand for the phone without a word.

Minji was hesitant, she peaked at Jungkook, who just raised his eyebrow demandingly.

Two against one...

She sighed and put the phone on Taehyung's hand.

He pressed the phone to his ear and heard...

'... the danger will be the same whenever I will be. If they want to target me...'

'Appa...' Taehyung said coldly, holding his anger. 'Come back.'

The silence fell on the other side of the line.

'Taehyung...' Namjoon sighed.

'Please.' Taehyung said, before his father could speak further.

Jungkook instantly took his hand and Taehyung squeezed it, having the desperate need to hold to his common sense and not panic.

And Jungkook was actually the only person that could do that for him. He was directing his emotions like a freaking compass.

Namjoon gave up.

'Ok, Tae. I'm coming back... Don't worry...'

'I will stop worrying when you enter the house...' Taehyung said, tensed.

'Fair enough. Give me Minji.'

Taehyung passed the phone, and a second later he turned to hug Jungkook.

'Just a second...' he whispered, to his ear, trying to gain as much comfort as he could.

Jungkook nodded, closing his eyes and squeezing Taehyung's a bit tighter.

Minji were looking at them, listening to Namjoon's words.

'What do you want me to do?'

'I'm sending MOI's unit to you. They will transport you, Jin, Yongguk and Jieun by helicopter directly to the airport. No cars...'

'Fine.'

'ICI jet is waiting for you. You will be here by evening. And Namjoon?'

'Hmm?'

'Unseal your seal. All the time... until you reach home.'

'Isn't it a bit too much?'

'Your power will protect your body, Joonie. And you have to protect Seokjin. It's not time to take any risk...'

'What about 3EO and ISA?'

'We will talk about it later. You can't do anything for now. We talked with Jaehyun. I don't think he had the chance to talk with his organization about the decision he made. And Handong is in no state to explain it.'

'She indeed is not. But we can't help her.'

'There is no power that could help her. And I don't want to see you or Jin in the same state...'

'Yeah... Taehyung was enough. Don't make me feel more guilty...'

'Inform me all the time or ask Jin to do it...' she asked.

'Will do... See you soon.'

Minji disconnected and at the same time Taehyung pulled away from Jungkook's embrace.

'Hobi will drive you to school...' she said, trying to smile at Tae, who just nodded. She walked to him and ruffled his hair. 'They will be here in the evening...'

'What recording were you talking about?' he asked her.

'I...' Minji hesitated. If she won't tell them, knowing them, they will dig it up in the Net by themselves. 'Some sociopaths admitted they were responsible for Min Jaehyun's assasination... We are currently trying to identify them.'

Taehyung just nodded.

Hoseok walked to the kitchen and looked at their pale faces. He went to the fridge without a word.

'Kookie, help me to prepare lunch for you and Tae...' he said, fighting to bring back the calm routine for them all.

Jungkook squeezed Taehyung's hand one more time.

'What do you want me to pack? Strawberry milk? Chocolate milk? IceTae?' he asked, looking at Taehyung.

His eyes were full of anxiety, but he was trying to not show it to Tae, giving him this steady feeling of balance.

'Hmm... all?' Taehyung smiled a bit.

Jungkook rolled his eyes.

'Greedy.'

'Hurry up, Kookie!' Hoseok called him. 'We need to go soon.'

'Yeah, yeah...'

Half an hour later Jungkook sitting in the front seat of his father's car, looked anxiously at Taehyung, who went to Jimin, Yeonjun, Dami and some new guy, Jungkook didn't know. They all were standing in front of their high school gate, waiting for Taehyung.

Taehyung made a high five with the new face and smiled. He was suddenly all smiley and ok. And that guy was freaking handsome...

Jungkook frowned. He didn't know they had a new friend...

'We should go...' he said gloomily, and Hoseok drove away.

He couldn't know Taehyung was following the car with his eyes, until it disappeared around the corner.

Namjoon and Jin came back home safely and Taehyung could relax. He went to his room and tilted his head, looking through the window.

Jungkook was sitting by the desk in his room, studying with a miserable expression.

Taehyung could see it through the window. His lips parted, when he noticed Jungkook was wearing his glasses. It was rare. He had it to read and he hated them...

Taehyung could help himself. He took the camera and clicked a few pictures. He looked at the photos he took and smiled lightly.

After a week of constant tension he fell asleep like a log, dreaming about warm hand in his, bunny smile, tender eyes... and lips.

16 year old Taehyung couldn't know, sleeping peacefully could't know about the talk that took place downstairs.

Hobi, Minji, Jin and Namjoon were sitting in the kitchen.

'Ok... tell us what happened...' Hoseok asked Namjoon.

'First of all... there is no documentation from our talks with Jaehyun. We promised him we will do what we can as ICI and MOI, and he trusted us. We trusted him he

will take care of 3EO and ISA before we will show it to the public...' Namjoon sighed. 'So his brother who is now the CEO of Min's company and all their holdings, didn't know about all of it. But he took it calmly, actually... He wanted to know more... But he said he doesn't want to disband 3EO as it is the heritage of Jaehyun and considering recent events it would be seen as giving up... We tried to figure out some other way to connect 3EO and ICI, but Na Dokyun, the guy that is the "commander" of ISA, said there is no way ISA can be disbanded, as from every corner the ordinary people are threatening us...'

'And it's hard to blame him...' Jin sighed. 'During the funeral... If ISA wouldn't be there... there would have been riots...'

'That's not only this...' Minji sighed. 'I don't know if with all that happened they informed you about this...' she showed them the recording on her tablet.

Protests.

'All the big cities in North Gyeongsang Province... Pohang, Gyeongsan... even Andong and Gyeongju... They are protesting about Interdependants. The officials in Andong "promised to solve this matter". And in Gyeongsan, the closest to Daegu... Interdependants are protesting. And they are... silenced. The protests are finished as soon as they start... ISA has a point. They are in danger...'

'But we can't admit it...' Namjoon sighed. 'I don't know... what can we do? We can talk with the officials but they are not the problems. The people are.'

'The recording of "Protectors of Normality" are like a fucking match that set fire in the whole provinance.' Hoseok noticed.

'The other parts of the country are not affected, because there weren't such events as school only for interdependants or loud talking about equality. But... if it goes like this...' Namjoon shook his head.

'We don't need a civil war...' Jin said heavily.

Minji laughed bitterly.

'Civil war? And where are we inside this civil war? Are we going to stand beside ISA and 3EO? Or are we going to protect innocent, ordinary people from them?'

Hoseok squeezed her hand.

'There is not an easy choice for us... But we will do what we always do. We will help anybody that will need help. No matter if he is interdependent or not...'

**September 2064**

The second semester of Jungkook's last year of Middle School started and he honestly couldn't wait for it to finish. His Middle School misery...

Minji and Namjoon had to watch their backs for the last half of the year, because the situation didn't calm down. Jin and Hoseok were doing all they could to divert the boy's attention but they knew - they couldn't hide everything.

Worried faces. Sudden phone calls in the middle of the night.

Especially the fact that they sent Jungkook and Taehyung for the whole vacation to Dragon's secured house. They almost didn't see their parents during the whole July and half of August. Half of that time Jimin spent with them, because Chanyeol and Baekhyun disappeared together with Kims and Jeons from Seoul.

During that time Jiyong, Siyeon and Bora were training boys in combat the way they weren't trained before.

It made the boys mature a lot. A lot more than they should...

But they got back home in September, started next semester and well... a situation calmed down a bit in their lives.

School had no mercy...

Taehyung knew it all too well. It was just the middle of September, the beginning of the new semester of his first year of High School and they already got the assignments that took two weeks to prepare. So this Saturday their group met at his house to finish the assignment.

Jimin, Yeonjun and Dami were already pretty comfortable in his living room, dividing the work, but their new friend was here for the first time, and he was looking around curiously.

'Want something to drink, Minho?' Taehyung asked.

'Anything will do...' Lee Minho shrugged.

'Ok.' Taehyung walked to the kitchen.

Minho stood next to the terrace doors and looked through the window curiously.

'Wow...' he whispered. 'Hot...'

'What?' Taehyung asked, coming back with the drink.

Minho nodded in the garden direction.

'Hot stuff you have here...' he said, smiling.

Taehyung frowned, looking through the window.

Jungkook was mowing the lawn. The September sun wasn't the warmest, but during work, he was wearing a sleeveless shirt, exposing his delicately shaped, from calenistics, muscles. This was the moment Jungkook chose to take the break... He brushed his hair from his forehead and fetched the bottle of water. He sprayed his face and drank some.

'Uuuuu...' Minho hummed, admiring the view.

Taehyung frown deepened.

Jungkook was cute. Not hot.

He looked at his cute face with big eyes to confirm his thought... But currently Jungkook pulled up his shirt to wipe his wet face with the hem of it. And Taehyung's eyes followed lower to the slim exposed tummy and waist.

It's not like they were obsessed with work outs. But Hoseok - their dance teacher - and Minji - their combat teacher made the plan with callanetics exercises to keep their body in shape, according to their age.

And, fuck!, Jungkook's body was in shape.

RED ALERT!

That's what appeared in Taehyung's mind. Noo! He couldn't start to think about his baby Koo as "hot". He was barely 14!

Taehyung knew there was no coming back once he started to think about it!

'What are you looking at?' Jimin approached them, leaning on Minho.

'At this hot candy there...' Minho pointed to the garden.

'Hehe... Kookie is wilding...' Jimin smirked, but then smacked Minho's head. 'Stop staring, pervert!'

'What?' Minho laughed. 'I just admire the beauty...'

'Yeah... keep admiring and Taehyung will kick your ass to the other dimension for staring at his soulmate...'

Minho looked at Taehyung teasingly, but he met a dark gaze that for some reason made him a bit nervous.

'You could say it earlier...' he shrugged.

'Oh? Never thought you would start drooling over my Koo...' Taehyung said warningly.

'Chill man! I have a boyfriend!'

Jimin gasped.

'Since when?! You haven't told us!!'

'I met him during vacation... We were arguing about the last can of cherry coke in the store, when he opened it and poured it on my head... It got to my eyes so he started to apologize and took his glove off to wipe my face, and well... That's how I met Jisung...' he giggled.

'And you are already boyfriends?' Yeonjun frowned.

'What is there to wait for?' Minho shrugged. 'He boldly kissed me and said I'm his and he can do whatever he wants to me...'

Jimin, Taehyung and Yeonjun mouths fell apart in amazement.

'Indeed bold...' Jimin giggled.

They heard the opening noise and then scream:

'JK! You have an audience of perverts!' Dami was bending through the window and pointing into the glass doors direction where Jimin, Yeonjun, Minho and Taehyung were standing.

Yeonjun instantly waved his hands, denying the accusation, embarrassed.

Jimin and Minho teasingly waved at Jungkook whose eyes got wide. He let go of the shirt and looked in outrage at them.

Taehyung opened the doors and screamed:

'Put something on your back, Koo! It's not a freaking summer!'

'But it's hot!' Jungkook screamed back.

'Oh, we can see that...' Jimin laughed.

Taehyung glared at him warningly and went to the garden, taking off the long sleeve shirt he had over his t-shirt.

'The wind is cold...' he said quietly, putting the shirt on Jungkook.

Jungkook pouted when Taehyung was buttoning the shirt on him till the last button.

'I will choke...' he whined.

Taehyung looked at him sternly.

'Don't test my patience...'

Jungkook raised his eyebrow, and was about to indeed "test Taehyung's patience", but he gulped, when he realized Taehyung's eyes fell on his lips and stayed there.

He could feel the itching of the place Taehyung's gaze was focused on. He licked his mouth to stop the feeling.

RED ALERT! RED ALERT! RED ALERT!!

Taehyung made a fast step back, coming off his thoughts. Or more like... coming back to his sanity, because he fucking didn't think about anything for a moment.

Jimin led the rest to the garden. He snorted, seeing Jungkook buttoned up in Taehyung's shirt to his collar.

'Possessive much...' he whispered to Taehyung's ear.

'I see that nobody with a Y chromosome has the manners to introduce our new high school friend...' Dami shook her head. 'JK, meet Lee Minho...'

'Hi!' Minho waved at Jungkook, who checked him out cautiously. It was the same guy he sometimes saw, when dropping Taehyung's to school.

'Hi.' he said not so cheerfully.

'Hey! I'm a nice guy!' Minho laughed, feeling Jungkook's attitude on his skin.

*That's exactly what Jungkook is worried about...* - Jimin, Yeonjun and Dami thought maliciously.

'Not a pervert at all! I swear...' Minho tried to get on Jungkook's nice side.

Jimin took pity on him.

'He has a boyfriend-soulmate too.' he explained. 'When will we meet him?' he turned to Minho.

Jungkook visibly relaxed and Dami had to hide a snort in Yeonjun's shoulder.

'Oh? You want to meet him?' Minho shrugged, pulling his phone. 'I can text him to drop by when we finish the assignment...'

'Yeah, we have an assignment we should get back to...' Taehyung pushed the rest to the house.

'Come later, Kookie!' Yeonjun said.

'Yeah...' Dami nodded. 'We can cook something after we finish, because uncle Jinnie is not here and you know how Tae is a high level hazard in the kitchen...'

'HEY!' Taehyung opposed.

'Sorry, but that's true, bro...' Jimin patted Taehyung's back. 'Kookie will need to feed you till the end of his days...'

'That's not true, I can...'

'Don't lie to yourself... You inherited uncle Namjoon's kitchen-disaster gene...' Jungkook said with a teasing smirk.

'You little...' Taehyung turned to him, but Jungkook sent him a flying kiss before starting the mower engine, so he lost his thought for a moment. 'You... You will pay for it!'

'I bet I won't!' Jungkook said, putting on his headphones. 'But don't worry I will feed you!'

Taehyung squinted his eyes.

'Oh... you will pay...' he whispered to himself. He was going to his house, when Jungkook started to sing, yelling loudly, not hearing anything besides his music and the mower engine.

Taehyung hesitantly turned around and his eyes fell on the younger's figure. His eyes involuntarily fell to his butt.

RED ALERT!!

He covered his eyes with his hand, running to his house.

He is not hot.

He is cute.

*He is cute. He is cute. He is cute. He is cute. He is cute. He is cute.*

*And hot...*

This thought appeared in Taehyung's head and he whined in his head.

Fucking Minho!

**December 2064**

"Red Alert" was Taehyung's best friend for the next few months. He could feel it in his head during the simplest things.

Watching Jungkook studying through his window.

Watching Jungkook training tai chi on Sunday morning...

Watching Jungkook eating lollipops.

Watching Jungkook eating anything actually...

Watching Jungkook drinking water.

Watching Jungkook stretching after watching a movie.

Watching Jungkook speaking to him...

Generally watching Jungkook could easily trigger the Red Alert...

But it wasn't even half as RED as when Jungkook was watching a movie with his head on Taehyung's lap and suddenly turned to look at him and ask something.

Taehyung caught himself leaning in his direction...

Or when Jungkook jumped on him to wake him up on Sunday, blabbering loudly. Taehyung was so surprised in his half-asleep state that somehow Jungkook landed under him.

And Taehyung caught himself pinning his hands to the bed.

And Jungkook was laying stadily. His eyes weren't surprised at all. More like... they become dark.

And maybe Jungkook's challenging gaze was what brought Taehyung to reality...

Taehyung could swear that Jungkook sometimes was licking his lips on purpose, so Taehyung's gaze will go there.

Because Taehyung's eyes were like trained to look at Jungkook's lips.

Taehyung was ashamed, but yeah, he caught himself focusing on kissing scenes, watching K-Dramas. And he wouldn't admitt even during tortures, but he even watched on you tube compilataion of best kisses. Various kisses... Thousands of them.

And deleted the history after... Because if Jimin would have grabbed his nosy fingers on it... Taehyung would die from embarrassment.

The only thing that could actually take Taehyung's thoughts away from Jungkook, Jungkook's lips and how it would feel to touch them... was the fact that his father was getting thinner and thinner.

October was the worst. During Samhain the riots started. ISA was trying to protect Interdependants in Daegu, but protests were held in the whole North Gyeongsang Province. One of the cities banished all interdependants out from there and consider them as "persona-non-grata". So Interdependdats responded with the same action. As the Deagu was the most active Interdependdats place, they started to loudly demand to banish all the ordinary people out from there.

No diplomacy, No talks, No mediation Namjoon or Yongguk performed there, were effective.

The train was already rolling through railways and getting speed.

So the New Year's Eve wasn't as cheerful as they wished, because all of them were worried about what the New Year will actually bring to them.

But because their moods were so gloomy the parents allowed Jungkook and Taehyung to celebrate the New Year's Eve at Jimin's.

And let Chanyeol and Baekhyun deal with the devilish bunch of teenagers, while Minji, Hoseok, Namjoon and Jin were just chilling on the couch watching tv shows and drinking wine.

Jungkook was sitting on the kitchen counter talking with Yoohyeon and Soobin when his eyes fell on Jisung and Minho.

Jisung just pushed away Yeonjun a bit further on the couch, so he could sit on Minho's lap.

Han (because that's how Jisung introduced himself) and Minho joined his father's dancing group, so Jungkook was seeing them during practices, but usually they were behaving there.

But well... outside of the official place, Jungkook saw them just a few times. But it was enough to notice one thing - Han wasn't fucking around...

If he wanted something - he was getting it. And apparently right now, he wanted to taste Minho's drink... Directly from his mouth.

Jungkook gaze traveled to Taehyung.

*Fuck my shyness...* he thought to himself.

Han was just a year older. Was it such a big difference? Jeeze...

But no matter how much Jungkook tried to provoke Taehyung to make a move (and he was trying... maybe shyly and clumsily... but he fucking was!) the older one was always like pulled back at the last moment...

Jungkook had to think deeper if his need to provoke Taehyung to kiss him wasn't just another of his "younger one complex" things...

He never ever doubted Taehyung was thinking more about him, then himself... But should he trust Taehyung's protective instincts to this point?

Bullshit...

'Ummm... guys... do you think it's... weird?' he asked, pointing with his head to Minsung.

Yoohyeon shrugged.

'Why?'

'They have known each other for... 6 months...?'

Soobin scratched his cheek and looked at the ground, blushing.

Yoohyeon noticed instantly and hit his arm, gasping.

'Don't tell me!'

'It... it just... happened once...' Soobin whispered.

Jungkook's eyes widened and he turned to him instantly. His lips parted.

'What?! When?! Where?!'

'I... we were in fanfair during the holidays. I tripped. He caught me... And somehow... You know...'

Jungkook glared at Yoohyeon.

'And you?' he asked impatiently.

Yoohyeon smirked.

'Nope. But I can fix it pretty fast...' she said confidently, drinking from her red plastic cup.

'And how are you going to do that, huh?' Jungkook asked, crossing his arms on his chest. 'You may be taller, but Dami is like a turtle warrior ninja! She is strong! She would pin you to the wall in no time! Or throw you to the ground!'

'Even better, right?' Yoohyeon had a teasing smile on her face.

'What are you talking about?' Dami asked backhugging Yoohyeon.

'Nothing.' Jungkook said fastly.

'Kissing.' Yoohyeon dead said, at the same time.

'What about kissing?' Dami peeked at Yoohyeon with raised eyebrow.

'Trying...'

'You wanna?' Dami smirked.

Yoohyeon moved her eyebrows.

'Maybe...'

They were so chill about it, Jungook frowned even more.

'And why are you frowning at the topic, Golden Child?' Dami laughed.

'I think Kookie has an existential crisis...' Yoohyeon said, gulping her juice.

"I fucking don't!'

Dami blinked. And blinked again.

'You... You didn't?!' she screamed, and Jungkook instantly pressed his palm to her mouth.

'Shut the fuck up!' he said, looking around.

'Icantbelieveyoudidnt!Howisitpossible?Youareallovereachotherallthetime?!' Dami was mumbling under his palm.

'Ew!' Jungkook wiped his hand over his pants. 'I have your saliva on my hand!'

'Better start to consider saliva as something nice, you know...' she giggled maliciously.

'I do. But not yours...' Jungkook squinted his eyes.

'But it's really strange JK...' she said teasingly. 'Considering you know each other for 14 years, I thought you at least tried like 1000 times...'

'We didn't, ok?!' Jungkook snapped.

'Ok... no need to be so nervous...' Dami frowned. 'Kook... it's not a big deal you didn't, you know? It's just surprising...'

'Yeah...' he said gloomily. 'I'm going to play PS. Are you going with me?' he asked Soobin.

'Sure.' Soobin nodded eagerly, glad the topic died.

An hour later when all of them were standing in front of Jimin's house looking at fireworks, Dami noticed Taehyung, who sneaked behind Jungkook and embraced him.

She frowned and grabbed Jimin's arm.

'What the fuck is wrong with Taehyung?' she asked.

Jimin looked at Taehyung holding Jungkook and shrugged.

'He seems normal to me... All over his Koo as always...'

'Not so all over as I heard...'

'Whoa?! Whoa?! Hold your horses!!' Jimin's eyes sparkled like stars. 'Spill the tea sis!! What do you know that I don't!? I'm pretty pissed you know something I don't

know about my babies, but I will let it slide if it is a good one!'

'You don't know it from me...'

'Yeah, yeah...' Jimin fastly agreed and leaned his face to Dami, listening attentively.

He frowned. Then gasped. Then frowned again and turned to look at Taehyung.

Yeah, he knew they didn't kiss. He would smell "the first kissing" from a mile if they did. But he thought it was because Jungkook was too shy about it... but from what Dami was saying... it wasn't the case here.

**14th of February 2065**

In Jimin's mind it was the perfect day for a first kiss. So he informed Taehyung he was going to study, so he won't have an excuse to leave his house.

But he had never imagined he would encounter on this joyful-to-the-point-of-throwing-up day someone so gloomy.

But when he opened his doors, and looked at Jungkook in an unzipped jacket and without a hat... he felt as if he found an abandoned puppy on his porch.

'Hey... are you busy?' Jungkook asked.

'Nope...' Jimin let him in.

'Taehyung said you are going to study so he said he should too, because tomorrow you have a test? Am I bothering you?' Jungkook said, taking off his shoes.

*This idiot!* Jimin thought about his best friend.

'It's good to take breaks...' he shrugged and pulled Jungkook to the kitchen. 'What's up, Kook?'

'I don't know what to do with this...' he said, opening his bag that was full of Valentine's sweets. 'I don't want Tae to see this...'

'Oh, he got a lot too, don't worry...' Jimin facepalmed himself in his mind as soon as those words left his mouth.

*Dumb shit you are Park Jimin!* - he scolded himself.

He slowly turned to Jungkook, afraid of the angry-jealous expression he would see, but Jungkook just nodded sadly, taking off the sweets. Jimin straightened up.

*Lost puppy*... - that who was sitting in his kitchen.

'Maybe your dads will enjoy it...' he said quietly.

Jimin plopped on the chair next to him.

'Kookie... why are you sad?'

Jungkook shrugged.

'There is no reason...'

'Well... I think there is. And even has a name...'

'I'm confused... Am I greedy? Am I rushing things? Am I pressuring him?'

'Yeah...' Jimin said simply and when Jungkook looked at him terrified he added: 'But what the fuck is wrong with that?'

Jungkook lowered his head.

'He will always see me as a younger kid... I guess I will need to wait till my 15th birthday... or more...'

'Is it only the waiting that is bothering you, Kookie? Because I don't think it's the case here...'

Jungkook played with the pack of chocolates, deep in thoughts.

'It's not just the case that I'm younger... It's also the case that he is older... He is 17. Isn't it normal to be curious about new things? Won't he... you know... try them?'

Jimin's eyes widened.

'Oh, god, Kookie... You mean with someone else? You are afraid he will try to kiss someone else, because he wants to wait until you will be older?'

Jungkook was silence. He just nodded.

Jimin gritted his teeth.

Kim fucking Taehyung!!!!!! He thought they at least talked about it! It seems they didn't!

He took a deep inner breath to calm himself down. He focused on the problem in front of him.

'Why won't you kiss him then?'

'Yeah well... after so many times he backed away I lost all the confidence in this matter...' he shyly scratched his neck.

'Jungkook... I can swear on every sacred thing... on my soulmate I've never met (but bet he is smokin hot)... on my unborn children... Taehyung won't ever try anything with anyone else. He is waiting for you. And if he has to, he will wait till his dying day!'

'Hey! Don't say such a scary thing! You will jinx it!' Jungkook smacked Jimin's arm.

Jimin laughed.

'Feeling better?'

Jungkook nodded, smiling lightly.

'Yup. Thanks.'

'No problem... Wanna tae?'

Jungkook shook his head.

'I will get going. Sweets are yours...'

'Duudee... If I would eat everything I got today and the ones you got, you would need to roll me to school tomorrow like a barrel...'

Jungkook laughed.

'Ok... so say to uncles I love them and it's for them...'

'Hey! Don't spoil them! They will want to adopt you and I don't see myself as the "satan hyung" of the "angel baby"....'

Jungkook grinned.

'Ok... I'm going...Thank you, hyung!' he said, smiling.

'Now you want to make me cry?!' Jimin wiped the fake tear.

'You are the bestest hyung...'

'Tell me more and I will consider letting my parents adopt you...' Jimin said, walking Jungkook to the door.

'Sure... But they will need to install all the cabinets higher and I don't know if you will reach them...'

'GET THE FUCK OUT!' Jimin kicked Jungkook's butt to push him out the door, he shut the doors, hearing the laughter.

He smiled to himself, but then he frowned and crossed his arms over his chest plotting in his head. He looked at the time and smirked... he took out his phone.

Taehyung was sitting by his desk - studying. Well, that's what he called scrolling through his phone gallery...

He blinked when he got an unexpected text from Jimin.

**Jimin: Tae! What the fuck are you doing with your life?!**□□

**Taehyung: Whaaa!? Where does that come from, bish?!**

**Jimin: Kookie just asked me to teach him how to kiss!!! You dumb dense moron! I can't believe it!** □♂□

**Taehyung: He did what?!**

**Jimin: Poor Kook... I honestly pity him now!**□□

**Taehyung: What have you done!?**

**Jimin: What do you think!!!?? He was so sad...**

Jimin looked anxiously at his phone waiting for a response. So he went to the bathroom and checked his phone after. But the response still didn't come...

He smirked. Taehyung was in action, it seems...

He lazyly threw himself on the armchair and a huge devilish grin painted his lips. He choose Jungkook number and sent the message:

**Jimin: Have fun... Thank me later... 😈😏**

He put his headphones in his ears and sighed with content. He didn't expect to receive the text from Jungkook a few minutes later.

**Jungkook: Fun with what?**

Jimin frowned.

**Jimin:...**

**Jimin: With Taehyung?**

**Jungkook:...**

**Jungkook: I'm not at home hyung... I haven't seen him today...**

**Jimin: He didn't call you?**

**Jungkook: No...**

**Jungkook: Why? Wait! What have you done?!😒**

Jimin jumped from his armchair hearing the doors shutting sound. He looked at the doors to his room terrified. He ran there to lock them, but he clumsily dropped the key. So he pressed his back to them, trying to block them with his body. He texted with shaking fingers to Jungkook:

**Jimin: Fuck! He is here!**

**Jungkook: What have you told him!!!!!!!!????????😱😱**

'JIMIN!!!!! OPEN THIS FUCKING DOOR!!!'

'Oh, Tae? How are you?' Jimin giggled nervously. 'I'm changing clothes so sorry but it's not a good moment right now...'

'Jungkook let me in! Right the fuck now!!!!' Taehyung yelled, trying to push the doors to open.

Jimin, surprised by his words, moved away and Taehyung, taken aback, just flew through the door right on the floor. Jimin looked at him and slowly put his hands on his hips, shaking his head.

'You are dumber than I thought... You really think he is here?!'

Taehyung got up from the ground and made a step towards Jimin.

'What have you done to him?!'

Jimin blinked and smacked Taehyung's head.

'I talked with him! What else!?'

'Then what the hell was that!?' he shoved his phone, he was squeezing tightly, into Jimin's face.

'It was a prank...'

'A PRANK?!' Taehyung was enraged. 'Sorry to break it to you, but it wasn't funny!!!'

'Why?' Jimin shrugged. 'Why wasn't it funny for you, Taehyung?!'

'Are you kidding me?! I thought you...' Taehyung gulped. 'That you...'

'I'm trying hard to not feel offended right now...' Jimin sighed, ruffling his hair.

Taehyung was looking at Jimin with anger and insecurity and a bit of apology in his eyes.

'I panicked...' he finally admitted, swallowing his saliva.

Jimin rolled his eyes.

'As you should. That was the purpose...' he mumbled.

He pushed Taehyung to his bed, and Tae sat there heavily.

'Ok... I see that if I won't put it straight for you, you will never go gey...'

He stood in front of Taehyung and shook his head again with a desperate sigh, as if he had to deal with a hopeless case.

'First thing first. You are DUMB.' Taehyung opened his mouth hearing Jimin's statement, but when Jimin raised his eyebrow at him, he closed them without a word. 'Second. I talked with Kookie, yeah... And let me tell you one thing. I didn't see a spoiled brat. I didn't see an excited puppy. I saw a young guy who was sad and lost. And it actually made me mad that you allowed him to feel this way! Because you know him best and you know that deep down inside he is shy. Yet, he was forced to get out of his comfort zone and asked me what he was supposed to do, so you won't see him as a kid anymore...'

'I don't see him as a kid!' Taehyung protested.

'Oh!? Then what is it all about, Tae?! And don't lie to me that you don't want it!'

'I want it...' Taehyung mumbled timidly, lowering his eyes on his hands.

'Ok. So what's the problem?! You don't know how or what?'

'I... I know how... well, I guess I know... I planned how it should be, and it should be special... And there wasn't actually a good... moment...' he said blushing.

'For 15 years there wasn't a good moment?! Jeeze! When I met you were kissing your cheeks as it was a natural way of saying "good morning"! And now when you can go straight to the real deal you can't find a moment!? What bullshit is that, Kim Taehyung!'

'Uuuuuuggh!!! I know it!!!' Taehyung started to pull out his hair desperately. 'But whenever there is this... tension... I have this red alert that it's too early and the voice inside my head saying that it is not special enough!'

'Special enough?! Are you waiting for rose petals to fall from the sky to give you a sign?! Little bells singing and a fucking rainbow to be painted above your head?! Give me a break!'

'Don't make it sound like that, Chim!' Taehyung whined. 'You know how important he is to me! I don't want to mess up!'

'You are messing up right now!' Jimin took a deep breath to calm himself down and said gently: 'Do you even have any idea how lucky you are?'

Taehyung looked at him with eyes full of emotions.

'You had a chance to know your soulmate from the very first day he was born... I guess it is hard for you to turn the tables and kick your feelings for him to a higher level... You are used to the thought that he will always be there. That you will be together to the end of time... Maybe that's why you don't feel this rushing need to speed up things. But Tae you are missing such a simple thing...'

'Tell me what, Chim... because I'm totally lost at this point...' Taehyung said tiredly.

'I can see that. Tae, we all are different! Interdependants in this matter ARE different! I kissed maybe 2 or 3 people. It was nice... It made my heart beat speed up a bit. But I know... I just know...' Jimin put his hand on his heart, where his shirt was covering the mark on his chest. 'There should be so much more there... I imagine the warmth of feeling safe. The thrill of being next to someone who will catch you when you fall...' he said with a longing voice.

Jimin sat next to Tae and waited for him to look him in the eyes.

'And the point you are missing is... that... it doesn't matter when you will do it, or where you will do it... You are looking for "special" not seeing that you already have everything that will make it "special".'

Jimin squeezed Taehyung's arm and said gently yet firmly:

'It will be special... because it's him.'

Taehyung was looking at Jimin not seeing him, absent-minded. It was really simple. It was the truth. Yeah, maybe he was afraid to change and choose the new, unknown path, but it was a fear combined with excitement. He started to smile shyly, when in his mind appeared all the expressions Jungkook could make. How flustered, shy and cute he would be...

A smack on the head brought him back to life.

'Hey! What kind of dirty thought you suddenly got, huh!? Weren't you a scared, pure virgin a second ago?! What's with that smirk!' Jimin exclaimed.

Taehyung grunted. His cheek flushed pink.

'Nothing...'

'Yeah, nothing... sure, darling...' Jimin said ironically. 'Now tell me what you have planned...'

'What?'

'You said you planned something. Come on... tell me...'

'I... NO! I won't tell you... It's not like I planned a date or place... More like... how to do it...' Taehyung mumbled.

Jimin squinted his eyes.

'And which k-drama was your guide, huh?'

'...'

'I will just tell you... Jungkook really doesn't care... So don't go and make it too fancy or he will get nervous and shy. He just cares about one thing... ' When Tea looked at his sassy friend, questioningly, Jimin rolled his eyes for the nth time today and mumbled '*Simpleton*' under his nose. Before he gently said: 'That it's you.'

Taehyung's cheeks got red.

'Where is he now?'

'Well, I thought he went home and you will go after him after I text you, but instead you went after me like a pissed tiger, so... Probably home.'

'Sorry, Chim...'

'Nah... it's ok...' Jimin patted Taehyung's back with a malicious smirk. 'It is always fun being the smarter out of us two...'

'Yeah, well... thanks either way...' Taehyung said bitterly. 'Seems I needed to talk about it without struggling in the circle of my own thoughts.'

'Treat me with cake...'

'Sure thing...' Taehyung got up. 'I will check if he reached home and... Well I will just check...' It's not as he was planning to dive into the action right here and now.

'Okay. Text me when you reach home. It's already late...' Jimin layed down on the bed.

'Worrywart...'

'Shut up.'

'Love you.'

'Well, who doesn't!' Jimin smirked with a proud smile.

Taehyung giggled and walked out apologizing to Baekhyun and Chanyeol, who were sitting in the kitchen, for the screams.

Of course they wouldn't miss the chance to tease him. The argument was quite loud...

Taehyung ran away from Parks' house fast - to find a hole where he could die in peace from embarrassment.

Jimin looked at his phone and saw 15 unread messages from Jungkook. The last one was: *I'm coming...*

He grinned like an evil cat.

'Ups...'

Taehyung was going slowly, deep in his thoughts. He felt a bit lighter so he looked at the sky. The crescent moon was barely visible but the stars were shining brightly. He was two blocks away from his house, going through an empty, narrow alley that was connecting the streets.

He knew what he wanted to do. He was going to sneak out through the balcony and hug the hell out of Jungkook...

He smiled at the thought when he heard the sound of running feet. He frowned and looked to the front to see Jungkook, who stopped on his way, seeing him.

'Tae!' he sighed with relief. 'What the hell is going on?! Neither you nor Jimin texted me back!'

He inhaled trying to calm his speed up from running breathing.

'Sorry... we were talking and didn't notice the texts...' Taehyung said, smiling lightly.

'I almost got a heart attack, idiots!'

Jungkook looked at him and suddenly became nervous.

'W-what? Why are you looking at me like that?'

'Like what?' Taehyung asked, lowering his voice.

'I d-don't know... Different...'

'Really?' Taehyung made a step towards him.

Jungkook nodded hesitantly.

'What were you talking about?'

'Something special...' Taehyung made another step.

'Umm...' Jungkook looked at the ground. 'Have Jimin... said something to you?'

'About what?' Another step.

'Nevermind...' Jungkook gulped and turned around. 'We should go back... I told dad I will... Whaa!?'

Taehyung's arm sneaked around Jungkook's waist when he pulled him closer and

backhugged him. His fingers were moving lightly caressing the curve of Jungkook's waist. Jungkook froze, but a moment later relaxed.

It was Tae. He had this effect on him after all.

'What's the matter?' he asked quietly.

Jungkook could feel, on his nape, that Taehyung shook his head. His nose brushed the hair there making them electrified.

'Nothing...' Taehyung purred. 'I just wanted to hug you...'

'Why?'

'Because it's you... I always want to hug you...'

Jungkook giggled. His palm fell on Taehyung's forearm that was resting around his waist.

Even through Jungkook's jacket, Taehyung could feel on his chest how erratic Jungkook's heartbeat was.

'Your heart is beating so fast...' he said.

'I-i-it's from running...'

If Jungkook wouldn't stammer, maybe Taehyung would believe in this fat lie...

'Only from running?' he whispered, feeling how his own heart was picking up its pace. His arm tightened the embrace even if there was no space left between them.

There was a long silence.

'You know the reason... So why are you asking?'

Taehyung was hit with sudden excited nervousness and sweet longing. There was a short battle inside him, before he whispered:

'Turn around...'

Jungkook didn't make a move at first. But Taehyung was patiently waiting.

Jungkook's feet made a hesitant move and Taehyung loosened his grip a bit, so Jungkook could turn to him inside the embrace.

Jungkook was looking at Taehyung's chest. His hands were caged between them.

'Koo...' Taehyung called him softly.

Jungkook gulped and pulled himself together before slowly raising his eyes at Taehyung.

With the free hand Taehyung delicately, as if it was a fragile glass bubble, embraced Jungkook's wrist, he pressed his lips to the pulsating vein there making Jungkook's heartbeat go crazy. He slowly led Koo's arm to his own neck.

Jungkook was observing him, when his second arm was slowly led like the other. He licked his lips nervously.

Taehyung pulled him closer and his feet for a split second lost contact with the ground, so he tightened his arms around Taehyung's neck.

'Tae...?' Jungkook asked anxiously.

'It feels so good to have you this close...' Taehyung said quietly, his fingers were dancing slowly on Jungkook's waist.

'Ok, tell me what happened...' Jungkook said softly, looking in Tae's eyes attentively.

'Why do you think something happened?'

'Because you are hugging me or want to be close when you are sad, tired or insecure...'

Taehyung blinked.

'I...' he leaned his forehead and connected it to Jungkook's. 'I'm so sorry, Koo... That I made you think like that... That is not the case... entirely.'

'Then why do I feel you are tense?' Jungkook asked suspiciously.

'I don't know how to do it well...' Taehyung mumbled, more to himself then to Jungkook.

'Do what?' Jungkook's whisper was full of gentleness and curiosity.

There was almost no sound when Taehyung's lips moved, but Jungkook heard the words as if they were being shouted.

'Kiss you...'

Jungkook gulped with a racing heartbeat.

'Maybe you just think too much...' he whispered, tightening his arms around Taehyung's neck.

'I do...'

Taehyung closed his eyes, parted their foreheads and moved his face being so close to Jungkook his nose was almost touching Jungkook's cheek, when he leaned his head.

'Maybe you should stop then...' Jungkook whispered, tilting his head an inch.

'I should...' Taehyung admitted purring and their lips brushed.

'Then stop...' Jungkook pulled him closer longingly, saying almost without a sound.

'I don't have any thoughts anymore...' Taehyung whispered into Jungkook's mouth.

The tension reached the level when both of them were like frozen in their own bubble under the sky lightened by stars.

There was something so sweet in this moment just before their lips connection...

When both of them knew what would happen in the next second, they let the longing, tenderness and impatience take over their bodies, which were covered in electrifying goosebumps.

Jungkook could feel his heartbeat in his lips, pulsating in erratic rhythm when Taehyung gently and slowly took his full lower lip, between his lips.

The slight moisture and warmth between their lips, made them thrilled. The time stopped and they just stayed like this, tightly embraced with their lips connected for the first time.

Taehyung hand climbed through Jungkook's shoulder to his cheek to cupp it, before he disconnected their lips softly with a gentle sound.

They both stayed with close eyes, before their eyelids lifted lazyly. They looked deeply in each other's eyes before they both blushed.

'H-how was it?' Taehyung asked.

Jungkook was looking at him enchanted, without a word.

'Let me check again...' he whispered and raising a bit on his tiptoes to reach his lips he repeated the older's action lightly pulling Taehyung upper lip between his lips. Taehyung instantly leaned to him, putting more pressure for them to enjoy.

Jungkook was holding his breath so when his mind became dizzy from the lack of air he moved his head back, looking with his big doe eyes at Taehyung.

'I... i-it was good... I- I like it...' Jungkook stummered with red cheeks.

'Me too...'

Jungkook, feeling the tension made his body weak, pressed his forehead to Taehyung's chest. He was looking at the ground and after a moment, he understood what the sound he was hearing so loud was.

Taehyung's heartbeat...

He smiled. It wasn't just him then...

'I... I think we should practice...'

Taehyung grinned hearing this.

'You just want me to spoil you with kisses...'

Jungkook pouted. Taehyung saw right through him...

'Whatever...' he sulked, and removed his arms from Taehyung's neck, turning around.

Taehyung jogged slowly after him and took his hand.

'Now you are running away?'

'Shut up! Why are you suddenly so cheerful, huh?'

Taehyung grinned widely. He felt as if the big weight was taken off of his shoulders. He licked his lips. He could feel them so well. As if he just ate a chili pepper. But it was a sweet feeling.

They were walking home in silence. Jungkook put on his hood to hide his red face. But he didn't let go of Taehyung's hand.

They could see the lights of their houses when Taehyung suddenly grabbed the hem of his hood with his fingers from two sides, and pulled his head. Giving him a sweet peck on the lips, before whispering:

'I'm going to spoil you...'

He smirked and ranaway to his house.

Jungkook pressed his cold hands to his hot cheeks, looking at Taehyung's back.

'I released a monster...'

**1st of March 2065, 01:00**

Namjoon's, Minji's, Hoseok's, Seokjin's, Baekhyun's and Chanyeol's smart watches were activated with vibrations and beeping. The notice was short:

**RED ALERT!!**

---

I know I'm late!!!! 😖😖😖😖

But I look at this long 8000 word chapter and forgive me.🙏

BlairWitch

# Chapter 16: Spark

For Min Yoongi the whole fucking year was like 360 degree turn in his life. It changed completely. And it changed him.

First of all, the reading and dealing with the last will of his father that he had to attend, was a nightmare. Endless meetings that lasted till late at night. Endless fights with his uncle about what he should and shouldn't do.

As he and Gahyeon were the ones that inherited the company, Kyung tried to push him to take over it. And Yoongi was hardly opposed to it. Neither he wanted to deal with something connected to business, nor had he had the skills and knowledge to do it. He stated it clearly.

He asked his uncle to take leadership of the company and guide Gahyeon, and Kyung agreed. Although Yoongi knew his father's opinion about his uncle's reckless decision making, he required to have the final word in three areas: appointing heads of departments, concluding long-term cooperation agreements and making any changes in company policy. There were two people of the company that he said also have to agree to any decision made by the company - first, was his father's friend and the head of the Financial Department - that Yoongi wished would teach Gahyeon everything she should know. And the second was his father's long-term lawyer.

Kyung said that if he wants to deal with the company this way, he can in the end do it by himself, because he as the CEO won't have much free hand to make any decisions. But Yoongi was stable, he said that if Kyung doesn't want to be the CEO, they can choose the person they can hire for this position.

In the end Kyung agreed. He was also still the head of the 3EO and second in command in ISA.

Did Yoongi agree for 3EO and ISA to stay as it was? No - as the organization was a different matter and not the part of the company.

Did he have anything to say in this matter? No.

Did he think they should have been destroyed? No.

Why? Because the things that were happening were getting dangerous. And he couldn't see anything else close to ISA, that could stop the attacks on Interdependents...

But the real reason for him to join ISA and being the lead person there was - he could use it as a tool to hunt the terrorists that killed his father.

At some point during his first year there, he realized, that after his father's death 3EO still existed just to be cover for ISA.

So his second reason to stay there was to control them and observe them, the best way he could.

He and Taeil were responsible for leading the small intervention groups they divided the agents in. As none of them had their soulmates and couldn't use their powers, they had the obligation to control the emotions of the "couples" that were the parts of strike units and to keep the low profile of the intervention they performed.

At the beginning Yoongi hadn't trusted anybody in ISA. As most of the people there were... "eager" to fight "for equality". That he considered just as the intolerance towards non-interdependants. There were also a lot of Taeil "friends" from school there.

But as the things around and in Deagu was getting quite aggravated and intensive... ISA started a quiet campaign that anybody that wants to join them and "protect" interdependants can do that. And indeed there were hundreds of couples that wanted to be part of it. They weren't employees or "agents" of ISA. They were simply the volunteered troops that could be called anytime if there was a need.

That's how Yoongi met San and Wooyoung.

Yoongi noticed them during the Samhain drama. ISA was everywhere. As well as the people that were attacking interdependents' houses, setting interdependants' properties on fire.

Yoongi, Taeil and ten other agents were going through the city trying to help with any situation that they encountered.

The police, fire brigades and local officials were useless...

Why?

Because any notifications that would be made by any interdependents family were of course acknowledged and right after - pushed down to the list of other emergencies.

ISA confirmed that law enforcement inside the city started to mark the addresses of Interdependants and consider their importance in case of emergencies as "low" because "the magic users can deal with most of the problems by themselves".

That was one of the things that inflamed the moods of interdependants and the fact that the governor of the city tried to justify this solution as "reasonable" just poured the gasoline to an already burning fire.

So on the night of Samhain, that was sacred celebration for Interdependants, people were advised by 3EO to celebrate in houses. But that just stirred the bitter feeling of "having to hide" in the society. So they organized a lot of events in small groups in parks or gardens.

That's when the mutual fights and property attacks started.

So Yoongi was going through the city when they noticed the burning bungalow. The firefighters were trying to reach the attic. The woman was yelling that her child was there - inside the burning house.

Wooyang and San turned that way, but the others stopped them.

'What do you want to do?! They are not ours!'

'They... are people...' San looked at the guy who stopped them, shocked. 'The little girl is inside!'

'What is there to think about!?' Wooyoung stood next to him.

Yoongi was a good and silent observer. He knew in a minute the fight would begin between the ISA's agents. He looked at Taeil and said:

'Take the rest to more important things. The three of us - he nodded in two boys' directions - will deal with this fast and join you.'

Taeil, feeling the tension in the group, nodded and patted Yoongi's back.

'Be careful! Protect him!' he said to Woo and San and took the rest away.

Yoongi, Wooyoung and San looked at each other. Yoongi smirked at them, because they seemed to be so shocked, being in the presence of Min Yoongi.

'Do what you need to do...' he ordered. 'I will take care of the firefighters and family...'

And indeed he had to fight with the firefighters that claimed they "don't need their help", but after the mother snapped at them and begged Yoongi to save their daughter, they just let Wooyoung and San deal with the case.

When Wooyoung pulled the sacred treasure out of San's chest Yoongi widened his eyes. He had never seen a treasure like that. They were shoes like sandals with little wings. And they immediately appeared over Wooyoung's feet and ankles, when San just casually flew to one of the windows in the attic to take the girl out.

After the situation of Samhain slowly calmed down, Taeil tried to instruct Woosan about not acting on the spot, but Yoongi interrupted him saying that he will deal

with them. That's how his - three people strike unit - was formed.

As Wooyoung and San power was mainly "defensive" one, the three of them started to learn how to use all kinds of weapons. No matter what weapon San and Wooyoung held, flying above everyone's heads with enormous speed made them a great threat.

Dealing with ISA and bullshit around wasn't the only struggle Yoongi dealt with. His mother didn't get any better. After the first four months they could be around her only with the presence of bodyguards (that's how dangerous she got) in her rage... - she suddenly changed.

The second phase of separation syndrome started. She was crying to the point of dehydrating herself.

She couldn't see Gahyeon because she had the same smile as Jaehyun. So Gahyeon started to wear a mask to see her.

She couldn't see Yoongi because he had his father's eyes. So he started to wear different contact lenses to see her.

Kyung stopped coming to her, because she was getting hysterical every time she saw him, because he resembles his brother. Blaming him that he didn't die and Jaehyun did.

Handong was crying. She was crying through her sleep. She was crying all the time. And when the tears weren't coming out anymore she bore a dry sob, that was leading to breathing problems. They had to hire a nurse that was with her 24/7.

That state lasted for 5 months...

But even that was better in Yoongi's opinion than what they had to deal with now. Because currently... walking to his mother's bedroom... Yoongi could only see a body without a soul. Her state was almost catatonic.

She was numb.

She changed into a doll.

They could dress her. Feed her. Wash her.

She wasn't responding.

As if everything that made Handong being Handong - disappeared.

Interdependents...

... the people who were so dependent on each other that, once joined, one could not coexist with the world without the other...

That was the dark side...

The dark side of being *Eadar-eisimeileach*.

**1st of March 2065**

It had been a year... A year since his father's murder. On the day of the first anniversary of Min Jaehyun's assasination Yoongi drove to the graveyard just after midnight. He knew that, during the day, the place of his father's eternal peace, won't be peaceful at all...

In the network already the hashtags #werememberMinJaehyun, #WeWontForgetMinJaehyun appeared.

Yoongi didn't mind the flowers and appreciation... But he minded the shitshow 3EO wanted to pull out. And he did mind that a lot of people were expecting 3EO to take the stand like that.

He kneeled on the grass and put the flowers near the tomb.

During all this year he was just... cold. He was indifferent. He wanted to stay this way. Not showing emotions. Not dealing with them.

But right now in the middle of the night... in the presence of the people that were already gone...

He felt.

He felt... grief. Loneliness. Anger.

They were creeping inside his heart unwanted...

He smirked bitterly looking at the cold stone. He gulped.

'I miss You...' he whispered. 'I miss mom... I miss driving with You... Hiding your secrets... Talking with You...'

His lips shivered.

'I... I miss myself dad... I miss... music... I... don't... know... what am I doing. What am I supposed to do? I'm driven just by this one thought... to get them... to get the people that took You away... destroyed my family... and changed... me...'

Yoongi always knew who he was. Who he wanted to be. And Jaehyun let him grow up the way he wanted. Never pressuring him to take over the company, to be a businessman like him. To be someone he wasn't.

A year ago... not just his father was killed, but also the core of Min Yoongi was taken away leaving the emptiness.

The emotion he felt disappeared as fast as they showed up.

He again felt stone cold. He stood up and looked at the tomb from above, saying:

'You can come out... No need to be creeps...'

Two figures approached his both sides.

'Why You hadn't called us? You shouldn't be here in the middle of the night alone...' San said.

'Why would I call You?' Yoongi rolled his eyes.

'Because we are responsible for your safety...'

'I don't remember hiring You as my bodyguards...'

'But we were hired as Your friends... It's the same' Wooyoung patted his back.

'Don't remember that either...'

'It's charitable work...' San giggled.

'Why else would we put up with Your grumpy ass?' Wooyoung nodded.

'Because Your life goal is being a pain in the ass...'

'Pain in the ass is not bad...' Wooyoung smirked.

Yoongi glared at him with disbelief:

'Dude... wtf?!'

When Wooyoung laughed devilishly, something clicked in the corner of Yoongi's mind. A recollection of smirking emoji, next to the flirting text.

'Should we grab a drink?' San asked, taking Wooyoung's hand when they started to walk away from the graveyard.

'Nah... I want to be alone...' Yoongi shook his head.

Wooyoung entangled his arm with Yoongi's saying:

'Not going to happen, Yoongs... You won't sulk, smoke and drink by yourself, it leads to serious addiction and depression...'

'I was born with depression...'

'Yeah, yeah... we know... You want to be a rock in your next life and all... But unfortunately You are a human with a perfect system to get drunk and we are gonna use it...' San said.

Yoongi rolled his eyes and let himself be dragged.

'If any of you will start to be clingy after getting drunk, I will cut Your dicks off...' he warned.

'I feel warned...' Wooyoung giggled.

They reached their cars, but before Yoongi could get in his own, his phone rang.

He looked at it shocked. It was 2 a.m.

Seeing Taeil's name, his heart stopped.

Gahyeon... mom...

He picked up fast.

'THE SCHOOL IS UNDER ATTACK!' Taeil screamed. Yoongi heard it clearly even through the noise of the car Taeil was probably in. 'THEY SET THE EXPLOSIVES THERE! HALF OF THE BUILDING WAS BLOWN AWAY!'

'The dormitories?!' Yoongi asked, getting into his car fast.

Wooyoung and San looked at each other and instantly got into Yoongi's car.

'Talk to me!' Yoongi said, putting the phone on the speaker.

'The guards are dead, we can't connect to the monitoring system there!'

'DORMITORIES?!' Yoongi repeated the question.

'I DON'T KNOW!! I'm going there!'

'I'm on my way too!'

'The ISA's volunteers that were closest to the place are there. We had information from them that the fire was spreading. It seems it was the main building!'

'There are 50 people living in dormitories Taeil! CHILDREN!!!'

'I know that!! I will be there in 5!'

'Don't engage in fights! Evacuate the people first!' Yoongi instructed him knowing how hot headed Taeil is.

'We won't be able to evacuate anybody if they open fire at us!'

'Go to the back gate! The dormitories are closer to the backyard!'

'Fine!' Taeil disconnected.

'What we have in the car?' San asked.

'Some guns are in the trunk...' Yoongi said, taking a sharp turn.

'Will need to do...' San sighed and Wooyoung just unsealed his seal. Sun opened the backseat and reached inside the trunk taking the guns and ammunition.

Yoongi pressed the button and opened the panoramic sunroof.

'You will be there faster, right?'

'Yeah...' San nodded.

'Go straight to the dormitories... Be careful...'

'Don't worry, dad...' Wooyoung smirked and pulled himself up through the sunroof.

San did the same after and both of them flew into the night sky, living the ribbon of sparking baby blue power after them.

Yoongi pressed the gas pedal to the maximum.

They attacked the place that was the core of 3EO.

The safety.

The place that was created to make the children safe...

And they did it on his father's death anniversary.

Yoongi crossed the border of being pissed...

That's what he thought...

When he reached the destination lightened up by fire full of dust and flying sparks the first thing he saw was the strategically placed slogan.

**Hatchery of monsters**

It was perfectly placed on the front wall. So the explosives had to be too - stragically placed - so this part of the building won't be affected. It seemed no of the abusers were here anymore.

The front gate was perfectly intact. The monitoring room of the security too... Except the bullets that went through the front windows... He closed his eyes for a second when he saw two guards with bullets in the heads.

He started to run to the backyard to check the left part of the school building where the dormitories were and saw the ISA's agents that were evacuating the people from there. Wooyoung and San, using their power, were flying back and forth taking people out of the windows to speed up the evacuation.

His aunt was already gathering the evacuated children around her. He approached her.

'Yoongi! Our cars with drivers are coming here! Take the Youngest!' Chorong pointed at three children. The youngest were 8, so Yoongi took the little boy in his arms. And looked at two 10 year olds.

'Grab your hands...' he said and looked at a 15 year old girl that was standing close. 'Come, I will need help...'

She nodded and took one of the youngers' hands. Yoongi lead them outside the school grounds when the first car came. He made sure they sat safely inside and said to the driver:

'Gi, take them to the mension. Tell Miss Balam to give them rooms and feed them.'

'Yes, sir...' the driver nodded and Yoongi didn't wait. He ran back, pulling out his phone. 'Gahyeon! Gahy... listen to me! Get up! We are transporting children from

school to our house... Yes, something bad happened... Will you manage?... Yeah... I will...'

He was halfway on his way back to the dormitories.

He saw Wooyoung embracing someone, pulling them out of the window and San in the air with another person in his arms.

When everything exploded...

The power of the wave of explosion threw Yoongi to the ground. He looked up to see San being thrown by the same power far away in the air and Wooyoung caught up in the fire bursting out of the window.

He heard the shocked and terrified scream of San.

*No, no, no, no, no!!* He thought, having flashback to his mother. *No! He can't see this again with someone else...*

He heard the swish noise as if the missile flew above him. He saw San resisting the wave of heated air, flying into the building direction.

'Yoongi!!!!' he screamed and let go of the boy he was holding, right above Yoongi. Yoongi threw himself forward to catch the kid.

He hit the ground hard, but he felt relieved feeling the body on himself.

The kid was too shocked to cry. Yoongi asked if he was ok, checking his arms rapidly, but his eyes were looking at the building.

He saw San grabbing a knocked out, shocked Wooyoung, in the air from behind. Wooyoung had his arms around the girl's waist. He was squeezing it desperately as if he was afraid to let go. But his head was hanging low and he wasn't fully conscious.

Yoongi sighed with relief.

His eyes followed to the children that were in front of the building with his aunt.

Yoongi noticed Kyung was next to her. He still had the hand on her chest... almost inside it... and was holding the metal shield above their heads.

Chorong sacred treasure was normally a ring. A simple metal ring. But it could change the shape of metal as if it was a plasticine. It could be changed into a sword... shield... or any other metal shape.

Yoongi didn't know how Kyung reached her on time to unseal her power. But he

was glad he did.

Yoongi grabbed the kid's hand and pulled him there. He pushed him under the shield to his aunt and screamed to ISA's agents:

'All water users inside the building!!! Taeil!! Take all the offensive power users around the school's borders! No non-interdependent person can enter or approach!!'

Kyung nodded to him.

'Wooyoung!?' he walked to San, who slowly reached the ground.

San looked at him with tears in his eyes, too overwhelmed by his soulmate's state.

'H-he... has burns on his b-back... a-and...'

'Take him out of here!' Yoongi ordered, taking the person Wooyoung was holding into his arms.

It seemed Wooyoung turned with his back facing the building, when fire fired at him to protect the child he was saving.

'Take him to my home. There is a skilled nurse and Gahyeon there! They will help him!'

Yoongi led the child to his aunt and uncle who were counting them.

'F-forty one...' Chorong said, placing her hand on the arm of the person Yoongi just brought.

'Four were already taken to the mension with Gi...'

'Than forty five...'

Yoongi gulped.

'H-how many were living in dormitories?'

'Fourty... seven...' Chorong's eyes filled with tears.

Yoongi looked at the destroyed building, which was devoured by flames and slowly closed his eyes.

'Maybe I'm wrong... M-maybe they weren't there... t-today...' she whispered with trembling lips.

That was the hope they all were holding on to...

Desperately.

Two burned bodies were found four hours later...

**1st of March, 2:00**

Jungkook was woken up by the noises in the house and running. He sleepily got up off the bed to check what's going on, when he saw that at the same time the light in Taehyung's room turned on.

He saw Jin stormed inside and at the same time Hoseok opened the doors to his room.

'Kookie! Get up! Oh?... You are up? Good!'

Jungkook blinked.

He had never seen Hoseok like that.

In uniform.

No.

In COMBAT uniform. All in black. With heavy boots, bulletproof vest. The mask was hanging under his chin.

'D-dad... what's going on?!' he stammered.

'Hurry up, Kookie! Dress up. You are going to Tae's house now...'

'Why? What happened?'

Minji ran to the room. She was in combat uniform as well. Her long hair was tied high on her head.

'Honey! We don't have time! Please, hurry up!'

Jungkook nodded and fastly dressed up, he just grabbed his phone and he went with his parents to Kims' house.

He instantly looked at Taehyung who was running downstairs dressed up as well. Taehyung fastly walked to him.

'What's going on?!' he demanded the answer looking at his fathers with combat suits as well.

Jin threw the first aid kit bag over his shoulder and looked at him hesitantly.

Namjoon walked to the boys and put his hands on their shoulders.

'Boys... People are in danger... we need to go...'

'What?! No!' Taehyung said fast.

'Explain properly!' Jungkook screamed.

'We don't have time...' Minji said walking to him. She pulled him into fast hug. 'Grandpa will explain everything to you. He will come with grandma as fast as they can...'

'They are here...' Hoseok said, looking through the window at the front yard and opened the door.

Baekhyun and Chanyeol, wearing their combat uniforms as well, pushing Jimin in front of them walked to the house.

'The fuck is going on!! It's not funny!! Tell me what's going on, dad!!' Jimin was screaming.

Jin walked to Taehyung and cupped his face.

'You will close all the doors and windows and turn on the alarm. The only people that are allowed to enter here are Dragon and Hwasa, understood?'

'I DON'T UNDERSTAND!'

Jin shook him a bit.

'Listen to me! We need to go!'

'Why?! Answer this ONE question!'

Six adults looked at each other.

Jungkook glared at Hoseok.

Jimin was killing Baekhyun with his eyes.

Namjoon sighed.

'We are The Red Alert... The specialized unit of MOI. When we are getting the signal... we know something is happening. And we need to answer it...'

'No.' Hoseok shook his head. 'We want to answer it... That's the difference. The units of MOI are always voluntary. And we have been one... since our university times...'

'So we need to go... Because something bad is happening...' Chanyeol said, squeezing Jimin's arm.

'What? What is happening?'

'We don't know fully yet... We will contact you as soon as possible...' Minji said with sad eyes.

The black van approached the quiet, night street and stopped in front of the house.

'We need to go...' Namjoon sighed.

'Please... turn on the alarm...' Jin kissed Taehyung's forehead and hugged Jungkook shortly.

Baekhyun whispered something to Jimin's ear and smiled shortly before leaving the house. Minji kissed Taehyung cheek before hugging Jungkook.

'Don't leave each other's side...' she said quietly.

Chanyeol looked into Jimin's eyes.

'Stay close to Tae and Jungkook, Chim... ok?'

Jimin nodded, looking at the ground.

Hoseok squeezed the three teenagers.

'Love you, boys...' he said, smiling widely.

Only Namjoon stayed, standing in the open doors, ready to leave. He looked at the three of them.

'We will come back...' he looked into Taehyung's eyes. 'That's a promise.'

'Be careful, uncle...' Jungkook said, searching for Taehyung's hand, until he found it and squeezed.

'I will.'

Namjoon said and closed the doors. They looked through the window as he disappeared inside the van and slammed the door, before the car drove away.

Inside the van six people asked the the driver and the person in passenger seat that was holding the laptop on the lap:

'The situation?'

'In the school for Interdependants in Daegu explosives were planted. The school was destroyed.' the person in the front informed them.

'Wounded ones?' Jin asked.

'Worse...'

'VICTIMS!?'

'The school was heavily guarded... All the security officers are dead...'

'Other then that?'

'The evacuation of dormitories as we were informed... That's all we know about the current situation.'

'Media?' Minji asked.

'Here is worse... We have another recording...'

'Protectors of normality?' Namjoon asked darkly.

'Yeah... they posted pictures with the slogan they painted on the school. And the next recording is the same as previous ones. That they won't allow raising monsters, witches and sorcerers in their town...'

Beakhyun was sensitive to sounds. He could grab all the changes in someone's tone of voice.

'That's not all, right?'

'No...'

'What else?'

'We identify the person in the window reflection of the recording... The speaker was masked... but they overlooked that... And I can bet everything - ISA will catch up with this soon too...'

'Who was it?' Namjoon frowned.

'The governor of Daegu...'

Minji and Namjoon looked at each other with widened eyes. The official... The public person. The representative of the city... When ISA will discover this and publish it to the citizens...

As if the school wasn't enough... This was the last spark that was needed to set the people on fire.

This meant one thing...

Rebellion.

---

Hey guys! I'm sorry I wasn't able to publish the chapter sooner.

I already started the next chapter. I will publish it tomorrow and Fire on Fire is in plan as well in few days <33.

XOXO

BlairWitch

# Chapter 17: Teen Spirit

**Marzec 2065**

Taehyung closed the doors and turned on the alarm. He pressed his forehead to the cold wooden doors for a moment, until he heard:

'What the fuck is going on?!'

He turned to Jimin, who looked enraged.

'I would like to know that too...' he said tiredly.

Jimin dropped his bag on the floor.

'But you two knew that aunt Minji and uncle Namjoon often deal with something similar! I had no idea! They had combat uniforms! And what the fuck they can do, huh?! Where did they go?! When will they come back?!'

Jungkook simply went to Jimin and hugged him.

'Hyung, they WILL come back...' he assured.

Jimin's hands were still lying alongside his sides. He looked at Taehyung over Jungkook's shoulder and his eyes were too shiny right now.

Taehyung nodded. Jimin slowly hugged Jungkook back and soon after Taehyung embraced both of them.

'They went together...' he said, trying to stay calm himself. 'I'm panicking when my dads are going alone, but with the rest... I think they know what they are doing...'

'But my dads...' Jimin started. 'They are not the fighting type... Their power is no offensive type...'

'Then good my parents are with them...' Jungkook stroked Jimin's back. 'And in your place, I wouldn't underestimate them. Defensive powers can be more than dangerous.'

He pushed Jimin into Taehyung's arms and took out his phone.

'What are you doing?' Taehyung asked.

'Texting Yoohyeon...' Jungkook said, typing fast. 'We want to know what's going on, right? She will get all the info from the network...' he hid his phone and looked at Taehyung. 'They said we need to wait for grandparents, so we can, as well, set

up a movie and wait.'

Jungkook went to tv and turned it on. Taehyung and Jimin looked at him frowning.

He was so calm.

'Are you ok with "Avengers"?'

'Good guys kicking bad guys' asses? Fits perfectly...' Jimin said hesitantly.

Jungkook nodded and disappeared inside the house for a bit. He came back with arms full of blankets and pillows.

'Come Jimin-ssi...' he patted the couch. 'They snapped you out of your sleep, right?'

Jimin and Taehyung joined him on the couch. Jungkook threw the blankets on them, when they settled with Jimin in the middle.

Taehyung's eyes frequently traveled to Jungkook, who seemed to be engaged in the movie, which he watched hundreds of times.

In the middle of the movie Jungkook patted Jimin's feet that were resting on his lap, while Jimin's head was placed on Taehyung's lap.

'I will make coco for us...' he said. 'We should drink something warm. Uncle Jin always says hot drinks soothes nerves...'

When he hadn't come back to the living room Taehyung and Jimin looked at each other knowingly and Jimin moved so Taehyung could get up, knowing exactly what his best friends wanted to do.

Taehyung walked to the kitchen and leaned on the doorframe to observe.

Jungkook was looking at his phone, while waiting for the milk to heat up. When he hadn't found what he was looking for in his phone, he threw it on the kitchen counter and embraced himself, closing his eyes.

He seemed calm. And "seemed" was the key word here.

Taehyung started to recognize inside himself the part of tingling feelings that were caused by his soulmate struggles. It was a slow process. Normally when it wasn't intense he couldn't feel it. But it was getting deeper, so he could sometimes catch a glimpse of Jungkook's feelings.

But even if he couldn't sense it... He knew Jungkook's face and body language even better than his own. He observed it for years...

'Jungkook...' he called him gently.

Jungkook turned to him and smiled shortly.

'It will be ready in a moment.'

Taehyung frowned.

'You don't need to play tough... We all are worried you know?'

'I'm not playing tough...' Jungkook said calmly. 'Of course I'm worried, but my father is badass and my mom is even more than that! You know how scary she can be!'

Taehyung walked to him and turned off the stove so the milk wouldn't spill, before pulling Jungkook to himself.

'I... I'm really not worried...' Jungkook mumbled into Taehyung's neck.

'But I am... so hold me.'

'Okay...' Jungkook tightened his arms around Taehyung's waist.

'And I'm not mad for the bullshit you are saying if it makes you feel better...'

'So nice of you...' Jungkook said a bit teasingly.

'No matter how badass your parents are, you are not used to them disappearing like that. And you know they will be at the front...'

'Yeah...'

Taehyung's hand traveled to Jungkook's nape to massage it gently.

'Don't hide yourself from me, Koo...' he whispered. 'Don't pretend you are okay, when you need me.'

'I always need you...' Jungkook rubbed his nose on Taehyung's collarbone. 'Isn't that a problem?'

'Not at all... I'm even more needy than you...' Taehyung chuckled quietly.

'Well you are good at controlling it...'

'I've stopped controlling it.'

'No, you haven't...'

Jungkook rolled his eyes.

'Why do you think like that?'

Jungkook pouted. He was glad his face was buried in Taehyung's chest so the other one couldn't see his reactions. If he would say what he wanted, it would be really childish whining.

'Koo?' Taehyung demanded an answer while lifting Jungkook's face, placing his fingers under Jungkook's chin. 'Why do you think like that?'

Jungkook thought about some kind of mature answer. When he couldn't think of any that would stop the further discussion, he went for diverting Tae's attention.

'Spoil me...'

He expected Tae to back away. Maybe even blush...

Not that his pupils will suddenly dilated when he leaned forward and said with extremely deep, quiet voice:

'Ask me properly...'

A shiver ran through Jungkook's spine. His eyes widened. He had to swallow his saliva, because suddenly his mouth felt so wet. He lickes his lips, before whispering:

'...Kiss me...'

The soft plea made Taehyung's stomach tightened.

He leaned his head even closer and saw how Jungkook's eyelashes fluttered before he closed his eyes. He gently laid his lips on Jungkook's.

It was their third kiss. And all of them always were delicate and innocent. He could feel how Jungkook tightened his grip on the back of his hoodie.

Taehyung moved his lips pulling Jungkook's upper lip slightly, receiving a soft huff from him.

When their lips parted, they were standing for a moment, still with closed eyes.

Jungkook made a move and their noses rubbed on each other, when he spoke quietly:

'Do I have to ask you every time?'

'How else I will know?'

'Just look at me and You will know...' Jungkook giggled and Taehyung automatically smiled, hearing it.

None of them noticed Jimin leaning on the doorframe with his arms crossed over his chest and a satisfied smirk on his lips.

'I feel much better after seeing this...' he said, making both Jungkook and Taehyung jump on their feet. They separated fast.

'No, no!' Jimin waved his hand. 'Don't mind me... I enjoyed the show!'

'Chim!!' Taehyung whined.

Jungkook turned to the stove, but a small satisfied and content smile didn't escape Jimin's eagle eyes.

Bunny was happy...

Jimin was sure that Jungkook will be the death of Taehyung in a few years...

'I guess you don't regret missing the part when Hulk is smashing Loke on the floor...' he chuckled. 'Where is my coco?'

'In a minute. I don't want it to be too hot...' Jungkook answered.

'Unlike other hot things...' Jimin teased.

'Could you stop?' Taehyung squinted his eyes.

'Bro... why would I stop my favorite entertainment...' Jimin shook his head.

'Ready!' Jungkook announced, before Taehyung went into "beat up jibooty" mode.

They went back to the living room with their drinks, but before they could start the movie again, Jungkook's phone rang and they heard the knocking on the door.

'Look who is finally here...' he said bitterly, picking up the phone from Hwasa. 'Yeah, we will open them, ma...'

Taehyung went to the door and Jiyoung and Hwasa were met with three strong, not-happy-at-all gazes.

Jiyoung sighed.

'Minji threw us under the bus...'

Jungkook pointed to the couch.

'Please sit, grandpa...'

'Sit and explain...' Taehyung added, closing the doors.

'Aren't you tired?' Hwasa asked, stroking Jungkook's hair. 'Maybe you should sleep now?'

'No.' Jungkook said simply.

Hwasa and Jiyoung looked at each other and shrugged.

'Fine. What do you want to know?'

'What the hell is red alert?'

'We can explain, but watch your language young man...' Hwasa raised her eyebrow.

'As if you didn't curse, ma...' Jungkook rolled his eyes.

'He has a point...' Jiyoung mumbled to himself.

'I'm cursing because you are driving me crazy on a daily basis...' Hwasa said and sat next to her husband on the couch.

Jimin stood in front of the couch. Jungkook sat on the armchair and Taehyung sat next to him on the armrest.

'So... red alert... 'Jiyoung started. 'Military Organization of Interdependents is not like an army as You know. It's not an actual organized unit. It has volunteer units that work all over the world. Usually there are 2 - 3 units in every country. The groups are from 4 to 10 people max. Of course MOI is hiring some employees that coordinate everything and keep a grip. But the main strike units are made out of people that nobody would suspect to be involved in international and national affairs.'

'So... your parents met during Uni times. Jiyoung usually is training some interdependants especially at a young age or before a strike unit is setted up. The six of them were involved in some missions in Colombia, Syria and Singapore. And they sometimes have small tasks that don't involve sudden calls like tonight.' Hwasa continued.

'But what do they do when they are being called?' Taehyung asked.

'Well if the situation is really hard, Jin and Namjoon are the core. Their main goal is to evacuate, heal and treat people in the danger zone. Minji and Hoseok are paving their way and protecting them and are actively involved in rescuing all

people around. And Baekhyun and Chanyeol are their backup. They are keeping the communication between all of them flawless and they are their main informants about the situation around.' Jiyoung looked at Jimin. 'You know how your parents' power works, right?'

'I know that it connects to sound...' Jimin shrugged.

'You are really simplifying this...' Jiyong smiled a bit. 'Baekhyun's sacred treasure looked innocent, but it's not. Neither is his power. You might think it's a simple silver earpiece, because it looks like that. But in fact this little device is like a sound detector. Your parents are using echolocation. They can actually see the sounds around them. So they can portray the situation even from a distance. And Baekhyun is even more than that. When his power is unsealed his hearing is so sharp he can hear thoughts. Chanyeol using the advanced level of the sacred treasure can mindlinked the rest to inform them about everything. And the greatest advantage of it, is that their communication can't be detected in any way.'

Jimin's jaw dropped.

'We usually describe sacred treasures as the offensive or defensive ones. Because most of them are real weapons. But in fact there is not such a thing as "defensive sacred treasures", because all of them can be deadly weapons. Every sacred treasure has more than one level as the soul is not a simple, linear thing, and they are part of it. At the beginning during unsealing of course it's not possible to know all the abilities of the sacred treasure and the power. And some of Interdependants don't even try to go deeper to see what they are capable of.' Jiyoung explained.

'Normally we and your parents would wait a year more, but considering what's happening... you will need to start learning about it sooner...' Hwasa sighed. 'We can train combat with all possible weapons till the end of this semester, but during vacation we will have to start the interdependents training...'

'Yeah...' Jiyoung nodded. 'We will stay here with you as you are starting high school next week, Jungkookie, and Jimin and Taehyung starting their last year, which will be tough, so we can't possibly take you out of here...'

'How long will you be here? When will they come back?' Taehyung asked.

Jiyoung and Hwasa looked at each other.

'We don't know...' Jiyoung said heavily. 'Maybe it will take a week, maybe a month... maybe more...'

'Will they... contact us?' Jungkook questioned, worried.

'Probably Baekhyun and Chanyeol will be informing us about the situation, as they

are responsible for communication. But I don't really know if the rest will have a chance to contact you directly for some time...'

For a moment there was silence in the room and two adults were looking at three teenagers with concern.

Then Jimin frowned.

'Will I be able to train too?'

Jiyoung looked at him and smiled.

'Holders have to stick to combat training if they want to train before meeting their soulmates and learning what the sacred treasure is. But You are a Sealer, Jiminie... you will gain the standard knowledge of how unsealing works, but in fact... you won't need it in the end.'

'Why?' Jungkook asked.

Jiyoung looked at his grandson and then at Taehyung.

'Because I am not the one that teaches Holders how to use the sacred treasures... Their Sealers do.'

'Every Sealer naturally, instinctively knows how to use their own power. Normally they don't know the strength of it from the spot, and of course they can learn new things in time, while they are using it, but the pristine core of their power is their soul, so they best know what it can do.' Hwasa explained.

'End of course the shere act of unsealing is really important. So we can show you the best ways to do it, but in the end every Sealer is placing a part of their own souls in their Holder's hands, so only they can know what they can do.'

'But we will explain everything while we will start to train...' Hwasa said. 'Now it's time for you to rest. It was a rough night and old people like us need their beauty sleep...'

'But you don't look old, ma...' Jungkook said.

'That's what beauty sleep is for...' Hwasa chuckled. 'So, no more questions for now?'

Jungkook felt his phone vibrating, he looked at the screen and saw a message from Yoohyeon: *On it.*

'Yeah, we should go to sleep...' he agreed suddenly.

Jimin and Taehyung looked at him suspiciously, but he slightly shook his head so they would just agree with him.

'Chim, do you want to sleep with us or in the guest room?' Taehyung asked. 'Grandpa and ma can take one, but the second one is free...'

'There is a double bed there?' Jimin asked, raising his eyebrow.

'Yeah. Why?'

Jimin snorted.

'Sleeping in your bed glued to you versus a queen size bed?! Dude... for what you are asking?'

'Ok, so it's settled. Tomorrow we will take you to your home so you can grab your things Jiminie...' Hwasa stroked his hair shortly. 'Now, go to bed... Hurry up!'

'Sleep well...' Taehyung said, bowing slightly to Jiyoung, before running upstairs after Jungkook and Jimin.

'Yoo texted she would come around 10 a.m. with Dami... So we have about 5 hours.' Jungkook whispered.

They nodded to each other before setting their alarm clocks.

Five hours later Taehyung tried to wake up from his confused state of mind. His head was spinning. Feeling his movement Jungkook mumbled something in his sleep.

Tae raised his head from the pillow. Or to be precise - from Jungkook's forearm.

As he was sleeping on his belly, Jungkook was hugging his side like a koala. His leg was laying on Taeyung's lower back.

Taehyung smiled. Jungkook could sleep in any position...

He realized what woke him up. He looked at his phone looking at a few calls. He picked the next one that just came.

'Finally dumbass!' Dami greeted him. 'We will be there in 10.'

'You could call Kookie or Jimin, you know?' Taehyung shook his sleepy mind.

'Yoo said, you for sure turned on the alarm. So I guess you have to turn it off, right?'

'Yeah, well Jungkook could too...' Taehyung mumbled sleepily, and relecuntantly started to get up.

'He knows your alarm code?'

'Knows the alarm. Has the keys. Half of my kitchen is filled with his favorite food... His toothbrush is in my bathroom... And I have the keys, codes and all the rest to his house...' Taehyung heavily sat on the bed still with closed eyes as his mind was fighting to wake up.

'Woah! You are practically married!' Dami giggled maliciously. 'Can't believe you haven't kissed yet...'

'We have...'

When on the other side of the line a silence fell, Taehyung opened his eyes wide, as he realized what big mistake he just made.

And his mistake was confirmed by an excited squeal, that he heard as if someone moved his phone away from his mouth.

'They kissed!'

'Whaaaa!' that was Yoohyeon screaming.

'Finally...' a male voice mumbled.

'Umm... Dami, who is there with you?' he asked hesitantly.

'We all are here. We are almost at your place...'

'By all you mean?' Taehyung gulped.

'All.'

Taehyung sighed heavily. Perfect... fucking perfect.

'Wait! Dami! Don't use the doorbell! You will wake up grandparents!' Taehyung jumped on his feet.

'Oh? You have the guardians around? Fine. Then opened the door...'

'Just be quiet. They are sleeping downstairs...'

'Noted.'

Taehyung turned around and shook Jungkook's arm.

'Wake up, Koo... They are here...'

'Hmm...'

'Oh come on... Get up, please! They will tease the hell out of us if they see you in my bed...'

'Teenagers are pain in the ass...' Jungkook mumbled and turned around on the other side, still with closed eyes.

His statement made Taehyung laugh.

'And you are the one to talk like that...' he shook his head, but when Jungkook didn't make a move to get up, he leaned and bit his biceps.

'AAAAUUU!!! Tae!!' he jumped out of the bed.

'Oh? You are already up?' Taehyung acted innocently. 'How nice of you... So now make the bed and have fun waking Jimin up...'

Jungkook glared at him, massaging his shoulder.

'Jerk...'

'Use my clothes. I will go downstairs. And try not to wake up your grandparents...'

Jungkook nodded and went to the bathroom, while Taehyung fastly put on some jeans and a hoodie.

Ten minutes later Yoohyeon, Dami, Yeonjun, Soobin, Minho and Han peeked into the guest bedroom when the quiet voices were heard.

They encountered amusing scene.

Jungkook was pulling Jimin's leg, holding his ankle and tried to get him out of the bed, while Jimin had his head covered with a duvet and was holding his pillow with one hand, while the other was holding to the headboard of the bed as if his life depended on it.

'Ooooh, cooome oooon!! hyung! don't be a brat!!' Jungkook wheezed.

'I don't want to...' Jimin whined, sleepily.

'You are not sleeping anymore! No way you could grab this headboard so hard in your sleep!!' Jungkook turned around, holding Jimin's leg under his armpit and trying to pull him using all his strength.

'I'm not going anywhere! This bed is like a cloud... Soft, fluffy cloud... You can come here...' Jimin said stubbornly.

'Sure, hyung! Coming!' Han happily went into bed direction, when Minho grabbed his elbow, squinting his eyes.

'Don't push my buttons...' he warned.

Han smirked.

'Why not? I like the effect.'

Soobin turned to Yeonjun with puppy eyes, blushing.

'Save me. I'm too innocent for this...'

'Awwwww... cutie...' Yeonjun sent him a kiss in the air.

Taehyung came to them running.

'Shut up for fucks sake!!' He pushed them inside the room. 'I heard voices in the bedroom downstairs!'

'And why exactly can't they know we are here?' Minho asked.

'They can. It's just I don't want them to stop us from sharing info. And getting news from Yoohyeon...'

Jimin sat on the bed heavily and made grabby hands in Taehyung's direction, who was holding a lot of bags in his arms. The duvet slid from his figure exposing his naked chest.

'Snacks!'

Dami instantly moved to cover Yoohyeon's eyes.

'Jeezus!!! Wear something Park!!!'

'Not that I saw him countless times without a shirt in his house...' Yoohyeon giggled, at Dami's instinctive reaction.

'Yeah, feed your eyes with this beauty, peasants...' Jimin said totally chill about it, while Taehyung threw all the bags on his lap.

'You can wear this for now...'

Yeonjun offered, reaching to the zipper of his blouse, when the hand stopped his movement.

He raised his eyes at Soobin.

'You are not sharing clothes... hyung...' Soobin said quietly, yet firmly.

'What a festival of territorial instincts... I'm blessed...' Jimin said, munching some chips. 'Just hand me the t-shirt from the bag.' he pointed at the bag next to the bed.

'Can't you do it yourself?' Dami shook her head in disbelief.

'Nope. I'm not moving my jibooty from this fluffy bed...'

When Jimin was safely dressed up, another discussion about who wants what from the snacks began.

Taehyung facepalmed and Jungkook actually could totally feel his frustration.

He grunted.

'Hey, guys, I know we have holidays, Seoul is safe, we are young, the sky is blue and everything seems fucking normal, but something is happening... So can we focus for a bit?' Jungkook asked.

They all instantly switched to their serious mode.

Yoohyeon pulled out her laptop from the bag.

'I think my father tried to block some sites for me, until he will check the news himself... But he doesn't know I know the password to his private wi-fi.' she smirked. She fastly started to type on the keyboard. 'I safed most important news that was available in the file.'

'I will check if there is something new...' Han said, pulling his phone out.

'So yesterday the school for intedependants in Daegu was blown away... Half of the building was destroyed in the first explosion. The second explosion destroyed the rest of it. It seems that ISA...'

'ISA?' Minho asked.

'Security Agency under the wings of 3EO.' Taehyung explained.

'Yeah, they managed to evacuate the students that were residents in dormitories...'

'When did you gather this info?' Han asked, looking at his phone.

'Around 6? After I woke up...'

'News from 8 a.m. Two students found dead... One 12 year old boy and 17 year old girl...' he raised his eyes.

They looked at each other terrified. For a moment a heavy silence fell on the room.

'What else have you found?' Dami asked gently, putting her hand on Yoohyeon's shoulder.

'There is the recording. It's viral. Probably because of it my father blocked the net. I... I haven't watched it...' she said quietly, and turned her laptop to the rest.

Taehyung looked at Jungkook shortly before pressing the play.

They watched in silence as the leader of the terrorists were saying things like "we will stop the raising of the witches and sorcerers", "let's weed out this plague at early stage", "you don't belong here", "your demands are silly and amusing, we won't left even an inch of this land for you and we will start with your kids".

When the recording ended, Han gulped.

'New info... non-interdependants media were blocked. All reporters were captivated. The last news that were posted was that Interdependents stormed the governor's house and beat him up... all the officials are under Interdependents guard...'

'ISA?' Jungkook asked.

'No. The crowd started to protest under the house and the town hall. They started to hunt down the officials. It's written here they went furious after the news about killed children and school security murders went viral...'

'It seems they want to close the city...' Minho noticed, looking over Han's shoulder at his phone.

'Your parents... went there... right?' Soobin asked with a worried voice, looking at Jungkook, Taehyung and Jimin.

'Yeah...' Jimin whispered.

'T-they will be ok... Interdependants are not attacking Interdependants...' Dami tried to cheer the rest.

Taehyung nodded shortly.

But they knew. The situation was probably even worse than they could comprehend.

Suddenly the doors opened and Hwasa stood in them.

She widened her eyes seeing the bunch of teenegers in the room. Her eyes landed on the laptop where the recording was stopped and she squinted her eyes.

'What are you doing?' she asked sternly.

'Gathering information.' Taehyung answered simply.

'We would have told you...' Hwasa shook her head.

'You would have told us what you wanted.' Jungkook said.

She sighed heavily.

'We just don't want to worry you. You can't do anything about it, guys... And we won't know the reality until your parents inform us about the real situation.'

Taehyung looked at Jungkook and then at his grandmother.

'You said we should start our training... Can we do it earlier?'

'What?'

'Can we start on weekends? We know it's far away for now... but it can spread really fast...' Taehyung explained.

Hwasa looked at nine teenagers, who were looking at her seriously.

'It depends on your parents...' she said looking at Minho, Han, Dami, Yoohyeon, Yeonjun and Soobin. 'But we can. I will talk with Jiyoung...'

'Thank you, ma...' Jungkook said, smiling shortly.

Hwasa shook her head tiredly.

'Come to the kitchen. I need help if we all want something for lunch...' she turned around, but stopped. 'But don't mistake it... we won't let you get into any fights. It's just for you to know how to defend yourselves...'

'Of course...' Taehyung confirmed that they understand. 'It just for defense...'

He looked at the rest when she disappeared and said with deep voice:

'But grandpa said yesterday... there is no such thing as defensive sacred treasures...'

---

Hey!

I hoped you enjoyed reading this chapter!

Next time we will probably reach the unsealing process and discovering the powers of our young souls.

BlairWitch

# Chapter 18: Teen Spirit 2 - The Repellent

**April 2065**

It was the beginning of their third week of last grade in high school. It'd been already a month since Minji, Hoseok, Namjoon, Jin, Baekhyun and Chanyeol went to Daegu. Taehyung, Jungkook and Jimin were a bit calmer as they were contacting them regularly saying they don't have to be worried. Calming them down. They seemed fine, so the boys under the wings of grandparents or Siyeon and Bora were trying to not bring them more worries and focused on their school work.

It didn't stop them from checking any information they could get as they knew how well their parents could hide things from them.

Third graders had self-studying in the mornings, so Jungkook, Yoohyeon and Soobin usually were coming to school together a bit later than them.

Jimin was sitting in the hallway focused on his math book, because math was stressing him out and he couldn't get anything from the last topic. Until he lifted his head and noticed three people standing next to the window and staring at the front gate where the rest of the students were gathering, coming to school to start their first period.

He smirked amused.

Taehyung, Yeonjun and Dami were standing with their arms crossed on their chest and totally not-amused face expressions.

'What the fuck do they want from them?' Yeonjun asked with a dark voice.

'I don't know but I don't like it...' Dami said.

'If this girl once again will touch Jungkook's arm I will fucking end her...' Taehyung squinted his eyes.

Minho who till now was busy with his pack of gummy bears he was chewing, peeked through the window to see Jungkook, Yoohyeon and Soobin entering school grounds. They were surrounded by other freshmens and some juniors.

Soobin was blushing hard with too much attention on him.

Yoohyeon being the social butterfly was talking with everyone around her, smiling and nodding.

Jungkook had a forced, polite smile on his lips, but it was visible even from afar he

wasn't comfortable with the random touches he was receiving. It looked like someone was praising his jacket touching its sleeves and he didn't really want to be rude.

Then Han approached them with a few of his classmates. Han changed schools to spend more time with Minho. He was in his second grade and his sixteen year old cheeky boy aura was drawing people to him.

Yeonjun pouted.

'Why are they not all over Han like they are all over the rest of them?'

Dami leaned to the window.

'Yeah!? What kind of shit is that!? They are not touching him nor are they invading his personal space!'

Minho casually picked another gummy bear and threw it to his mouth. He smirked, which caused Taehyung and two other jelly beans to focus on him.

'I put a repellent on him...' he said, shrugging.

'What kind of repellent?' Yeonjun asked, parting his lips in shock.

'The kind for people to know he is taken...' Minho smiled with satisfaction.

Taehyung frowned and looked closer at Han.

Jimin jumped on his feet hearing Minho's words and excitedly ran to the window.

'Don't tell me!' he pressed his face to the glass. 'You put a hickey on him?!'

Taehyung's jaw dropped when Han indeed turned around and he could notice a slightly red part of his neck.

'He wanted one...' Minho giggled. 'But the thing is... they know he is taken. As I made it clear on the first day walking him to his class on his first day here... Good to be a senior. His classmates are for sure scared...'

Taehyung, Dami and Yeonjun looked at each other.

The truth was the nine of them were only interdependents in the school. So it was for sure not a big deal for the rest of school. They didn't know the new first-grade interdependents had already soulmates...

As they ate lunch together all of the rest of the students thought they were just casually hanging around in their own kind group...

Jungkoook and Taehyung could be seen more often together but they were always with Jimin, because three of them were in the basketball team. And all nine of them joined the Art and Music club too.

'The classes will start soon, we should get going...' Jimin said and he and Minho walked to their classroom direction.

Taehyung was still looking at the huge crowd that started to move to the school building.

*I can't possibly put a hickey on Jungkookie!* he thought with slight panic and his hands started to sweat. He shook his head before his imagination could start working in a bad way...

'I can't put hickey on Soobin!' Yeonjun whined in distress as if he read Taehyung's mind.

'I will do it if it means they will leave Yoohyeon alone!' Dami gritted her teeth. 'She is too careless around people...'

'Minho is right...' Taehyung mumbled to himself. 'We need to show the rest that they are taken...'

'But It's easier for them! Minho and Han are literally a couple! Yeonjun said, waving his hands in panic. 'We are not!'

Taehyung turned around, saying:

'Well I'm gonna fix this...'

Dami smirked and ran after him, hitting his side with her elbow.

'Good thinking!'

'I...' Yeonjun looked at them then at blushing Soobin. He took a deep breath. 'Okay... You can do it Yeonjun...' he brushed his hair with his hand. 'It's just a formality... YAAAAH!! Why am I panicking?!'

Taehyung came back home later, after sending Jungkook home with Jimin. He, Dami and Yeonjun went shopping. Jungkook wanted to go with him but knowing Taehyung's plan Jimin diverted his attention saying they promised Hwasa to help

in the garden.

Taehyung had to promise him he will come back fast, will text him and will be careful before sulking Jungkook agreed.

Taehyung had a plan and he wasn't going to back away from it.

Dami was even faster than him...

When Yoohyeon joined them during lunch Dami just pulled her on her lap and hugged her waist, telling her to stay like this, because she needs to recharge her batteries.

Yoohyeon looked at her a bit surprised, but then shrugged and stuck her chopsticks with a piece of her lunch in Dami's mouth.

On the other hand, Yeonjun was in full panic mode and Taehyung was silently praying so it wouldn't rub on him.

He didn't even look at Soobin, pretending to be too busy with his lunch. Taehyung could feel how insecure Soobin instantly got as Yeonjun was always the chill and composed between the two of them.

Taehyung was calm. He knew what he wanted...

He wanted all the fucking annoying people to stay away from Jungkook. And if their non-existing brains couldn't understand what personal space is... Taehyung was going to show them.

That's what he was thinking until he came back home. When he saw Jungkook sitting by the kitchen table doing his homework with an unhappy expression...

When Jungkook lifted his face and lightened up. Smiled as if he saw a literal sun...

Taehyung realized how stupid his reasoning was.

Yeah it gave him motivation, but... this boy was actually his whole world. Taehyung didn't need anything else.

Every inch of his 17-year old body was saying "boyfriend" was just a label they didn't need. They were so much more...

But he wanted this label... He wanted Jungkook to call him "his boyfriend".

'Tae? Do you hear me? I asked how was the shopping?' Jungkook said and Taehyung came back from his thoughts.

'It was ok...'

'What have you bought?'

Taehyung came closer and brushed bangs from Jungkook's forehead. He slowly leaned and gently kissed Jungkook's forehead.

Jungkook's eyes widened at the sudden, tender affection he received for the first time.

Taehyung smiled lightly.

'I will show you later.'

Soobin was walking out of his physics competitions, because honestly physics sucked and he needed them.

He walked out of the building and saw Yeonjun leaning on the street railing in front of the entrance. He was usually waiting for Soobin to walk him home, because he was convinced that it's dangerous for Soobin to walk alone in the evenings.

But after his strange behavior at school Soobin pressed his lips tightly and passed him without a word.

'Soobin!' Yeonjun ran after him.

'What do you want?' Soobin asked coldly, waiting for the green light to cross the street.

'I...' Yeonjun gulped. 'Are you mad at me?'

'Why would I be mad?' Soobin was taking long steps, entering the park that was the fastest way to his house.

Usually he and Yeonjun were taking their time walking through it to spend some more time together, but this time he wasn't in the mood. Because usually Yeonjun wasn't a dick like today...

'I don't know... you seem mad...' Yeonjun said, leveling his steps with the younger boy.

'I'm not mad, hyung...' Soobin said, looking to the front.

*Hyung? Said in such a cold way? Oh, Soobin was pissed...*

Yeonjun crossed his path and stopped him.

'You are!'

Soobin looked at the sky.

'I'm so sorry that I don't like when you are ignoring me...'

'What? When did I ignore you?!'

'Today. At lunch. You even snapped at me when I wanted to share the muffin with you, because "You don't eat sweets!' What an obvious lie! And when I tripped you didn't even notice and usually you are like a freaking safety net! You are spreading your arms before I even trip as if it was your sixth sense!'

'You tripped?! Oh God are you okay?! I didn't...'

'Notice?' Soobin disturbed him. 'Yeah you didn't... I'm sorry I'm so clumsy that I'm tripping so often you got used to it!'

Soobin blushed.

'What am I even saying?' he mumbled and wanted to pass Yeonjun, shaking his head.

'Soobin, I'm sorry I was...'

'I'm sorry too. I'm sorry you are sentenced to such a pitiful soulmate as me...' he said bitterly.

Yeonjun grabbed his arm and jerked him harshly.

'Take it back this instant!' he said enraged.

Soobin blinked, shocked by the sudden outburst.

'Don't ever say this again! You are the cutest, most gentle person I've met! And I wouldn't change you for anybody!'

Soobin lips shivered.

'I don't know where this low self esteem is coming from, but I will pull it out together with your hair if I have to!'

Yeonjun was breathing fast.

'What do you want me to do?! What do you want me to say to stop thinking like that?!'

Soobin lowered his head.

'You were nervous the whole day...' he said quietly. 'Yet you didn't tell me anything... How can I stop thinking like that, when I am not reliable enough for you to share your struggles with me...'

Yeonjun sighed heavily and shut his eyes.

'That's not it... Y-yeah I was nervous... I didn't know what to do... I was thinking...'

'Then why didn't you ask me? I could have helped you! Or at least listen to you!'

'No, Soobin, you couldn't help me, because...'

'You see! You said it yourself! I can't even...'

Irritated Yeonjun screamed:

'Will you shut up for a moment?! You couldn't help me, because I was thinking how to ask you to be my boyfriend!!'

Soobin blinked and closed his mouth, surprised.

Yeonjun covered his face with his hands in distress.

'Oh god!' he whined.

The slow blush started to spread on Soobin's face. He was fidgeting with his fingers.

He made a hesitant step forward and embraced Yeonjun's wrists to pull his hands away from his face. He tilted his head.

Yeonjun looked at him anxiously.

Soobin gulped and asked quietly:

'Did I... mess it up? Or do I still have a chance to be your boyfriend from this day onwards?'

Yeonjun looked at their hands and intertwined their fingers.

'Do you want it?' he asked.

Soobin smiled shyly and nodded.

Yeonjun smiled back and he pressed his forehead to Soobin's.

'I'm freaking happy now...' he chuckled embarrassed.

They stayed like that for a moment, trying to embrace everything with their teenage minds and hearts. Finally Yeonjun squeezed Soobin's fingers and said:

'I have something for you...'

Kai opened the doors and saw Dami on the porch.

'Sleepover in the middle of the week? That's unusual...' he smiled letting her in.

'I hope you don't mind, Mr Kim...' she said, taking her shoes off.

'Not at all. But I do mind you calling me Mr Kim... How many times do I have to tell you to call me "uncle"?'

'You are my future father-in-law... I don't want to get used to "uncle" when I will be calling you "dad" later...'

Kai burst out in laughter.

'You are unbelievable!' he ruffled her hair.

'Did I hear Dami?' Jennie peeked out of the kitchen. 'Hi, honey! How are you?'

'I'm fine Mrs Kim...'

Jennie smiled at her sweetly and winked at her.

'Go get this girl out of the shower... She is taking hours, I swear!!'

'Don't stay late!' Kai called, when Dami walked upstairs.

'Ok, Mr Kim!'

Dami walked to Yoohyeon's room and changed into her oversized t-shirt and sweatpants that were her pajamas.

Yoohyeon walked in drying her hair with a towel. She was in a tank top and pajama pants. She had fluffy flip flops on her feet.

She smiled, seeing Dami, who was sitting on her bed with crossed legs.

'You are already here? Your mom was okay with you sleeping at my place?'

'She wasn't happy about it...' Dami shrugged.

'Do you have self-study in the morning?'

'Nah, I'm going to skip this time...'

'High school is fun!' Yoohyeon said, and sat by the desk to comb her hair. 'Girls from my class know so much about makeup...'

'That's what you are talking about with them?'

Yoohyeon shrugged.

'I have you to have serious talks with... And Jungkook is in another class so I'm glad I have Bin with me. Look...' she said, taking something from her desk. 'I have new cosmetics...'

'Oh?' Dami got up from the bed. She looked at Yoohyeon's desk and saw so many new things. 'Don't put too much makeup on. You are prettier without it...' she said casually.

Yoohyeon put her cheek on her hand and smiled teasingly.

'You think I'm pretty?'

Dami looked at Yoohyeon and tucked a strand of hair behind her ear.

'You are beautiful.' she said seriously. 'You don't need makeup.'

Yoohyeon parted her lips in surprise at the deep tone of Dami's voice.

Dami looked at the desk and took one of the cosmetics.

'A lip gloss is enough...'

She gently took Yoohyeon's chin in her fingers and started to put the lip gloss on her.

Yoohyeon's eyes didn't leave Dami's face, which was focused on her lips.

'See? So pretty...' Dami stroked Yoohyeon's lower lip with her thumb.

The sweet scent spread through the room.

Dami frowned and leaned her face, inhaling.

'Is it grape?'

Yoohyeon held her breath. Their noses almost brushed.

'You will need to taste it to find out...' she whispered.

'I don't like grapes...' Dami smirked.

Yoohyeon grabbed the front of Dami's shirt.

'This one you will like...' she said and connected their lips.

The sweet taste of the lip gloss and warm, soft feeling of each others' lips made their hearts beat crazy.

Dami slowly moved away and licked her lips with closed eyes.

'It's tasty...'

'Told you...' Yoohyeon let go of Dami's shirt and slowly moved her fingers through Dami's exposed forearm. 'Why did you come here, Dami?' she asked softly.

Dami brushed her nose on Yoohyeon's and smiled.

'To give you something... '

It was the middle of the night when Jungkook was woken up by the ringtone. He looked at the screen and shut his eyes, when the light blinded him.

'Taehyung?' He looked at the caller ID. He instantly sat up, stretching his hand to the side, where Taehyung should sleep.

But he wasn't there.

Jungkook picked up the call.

'Tae?!' he asked on the verge of panic.

'Come to the garden...' Taehyung said and disconnected.

Jungkook jumped out of the bed and grabbed a hoodie from the armchair before storming out of the room. He ran to the garden.

He saw Taehyung sitting on the small stairs leading from the terrace to the garden. He sighed in relief.

Taehyung lowered his head and blinked seeing Jungkook's state.

'Oh, my god! I didn't think I would scare you! I'm sorry, Koo...' he stretched his hand.

Jungkook shook his head and took Tae's hand, which pulled him to sit next to him on the stairs.

'What are you doing here, Tae?' he asked.

Taehyung leaned his head on Jungkook's shoulder, and Jungkook scooted closer to his side instantly.

'Looking at the moon...' Taehyung answered. 'It's beautiful...'

Jungkook raised his eyes at the sky. They were sitting like that in silence, admiring the night.

'So many stars...' Jungkook sighed with delight.

'And yet you are the brightest... like the moon...' Taehyung whispered.

Jungkook blushed. He tried to cover it by giggling shyly.

'What are you saying, Tae?'

Taehyung took Jungkook's hand and started to draw invisible marks on his palm, sending a tingling feeling to Jungkook's stomach.

'Remember what did I tell you three years ago when we were watching the sunrise?' he asked silently.

'You said many things...' Jungkook was observing Taehyung's long fingers stroking his skin.

'I said...'

Taehyung fetched something from his pocket with his other hand and placed the item on Jungkook's palm. He gently closed Jungkook's fingers on it.

'That one day...'

Jungkook slowly moved his gaze from Taehyung's eyes, on his own hand. He slowly opened his hand. His eyes widened.

'... we will be boyfriends...'

Jungkook was looking at two beautiful bracelets.

Couple bracelets...

He was stunned. He forgot how to breathe. His heartbeat was like drums in his ear.

Taehyung was looking at his profile, until he cupped Jungkook's cheek and made him look at him.

'Can I be your boyfriend, Koo?' he asked softly.

Jungkook's eyes in the darkness, lit up just by the moonlight, were sparkling like diamonds.

'D-do I have to answer with words?' he trampled on his quiet words.

With slightly trembling fingers, Jungkook took Taehyung's hand away from his face and slowly pressed a kiss on the skin of his inner wrist.

Taehyung's eyes widened.

Jungkook, smiling timidly, slid the white bracelet on Tae's wrist. He caressed the beads.

'I will cherish you, angel...' he whispered.

Taehyung was speechless. Jungkook made him speechless.

He forgot all the words in all languages he knew.

The feelings were overflowing. The needs he was controlling so well was trying to break free.

Without a word he stretched his hand and Jungkook put the second bracelet on it. But Taehyung lifted Jungkook's wrist to his lips, and while slowly putting the bracelet on, he kissed there, pressed his mouth harder and started to suck.

Jungkook's pulse went crazy.

The cold feeling on small beads slowly rolling through his fingers and palm and the wet feeling of Taehyung's tongue and slight pain of his skin being pulled.

And Taehyung's dark gaze which didn't leave his face, during all the passionate act. Jungkook involuntarily moved his body closer.

Taehyung pulled away from his wrist and covered the hickey with the bracelet.

Jungkook climbed on Taehyung's lap fast and grabbed his hair and pulled them down, making Taehyung's head fall back. He kissed the corner of his lips and whispered, shakily with passionate and strong voice:

'You are mine, Kim Taehyung...'

Taehyung embraced Jungkook's waist and closed his eyes.

'I was always yours...'

Next day in the morning, school grounds were noisy as always. People were sitting on the benches or lawns. Or were standing chatting between themselves.

'Is it Minho and Han?' one of the girls noticed.

'Yeah...' the second one waved at them.

'Look, look! The rest are here!!' the third one said.

'Oh, we should say "hi"...' one of the boys said.

'Wait...' the other replied.

The Interdependants were like celebrities in this high school. As there were just a few of them and the school was putting a lot of pressure on education of equality. Even the vice headmaster was the intedependent herself.

Not to mention they were beautiful so they were catching eyes everywhere. But this time the whole school was asstounded.

'Is... is this Kim Taehyung?!' one of the boys exclaimed.

'W-with... Jeon Jungkook?!' the girl squealed.

Taehyung entered the school holding Jungkook's hand tightly. On their wrist their couple bracelets were perfectly visible.

Taehyung ignored the sudden rumor and whispering that spread around and went to Minho and Han. Jungkook looked around with a small, proud smirk on his lips.

Jimin grinned while walking after them and brushed his blond hair from his forehead in a flirting manner, winking at one of the girls groups.

Dami and Yoohyeon entered together next and another wave of excited mumbles flew through the field.

On their wrist were another pair of couple bracelets. Yoohyeon had a little chain with the plate with "Her Princess" written on it. Dami had the same one with "Her Queen" on her own.

Yoohyeon nudged Dami with her arm smiling brightly and flipped her hair. Dami rolled her eyes and shook her head with a huge smile.

The last ones to join them were Soobin and Yeonjun. The seven of them were looking at how Soobin almost tripped and Yeonjun instantly grabbed him by his waist. They looked at each other and Yeonjun kissed Soobin's ear before smiling calmingly at him.

Soobin lowered his head looking at the bracelet on Yeonjun's wrist.

Minho looked at Taehyung when all of them, followed by the gazed full of admiration, jealousy and excitement. He smirked and whispered to him:

'Seems like you found your own repellent...'

Taehyung brushed the bracelet on Jungkook's wrist with his fingers.

'We did...'

---

Helloooo.... (◕ᴗ◕✿)

I decided to write this sweet to the point of throwing up chapter hope you don't mind. □□□

And praying you won't cringe at it xD.🙈🙈🙈🙈

And I finally wanted to show all of their faces a they are hot teenagers now!(≧▽≦)

I will check mistakes later as it is 4 a.m....

Love you!💟

BlairWitch

# Chapter 19: Daegu 2065

**May 2065**

'Jiu turn left! Then right! Building on your left side. Jin is there. 100 feet away from you.' Chanyeol informed Minji through his mindlink, from their position in the underground of an old hotel.

'Hope?'

'With RM they are still dealing with the hospital... They try to evacuate as many people as they can, but most of them don't want to move...'

While the Red Alert Squad was on the mission most of them were using their codes name. It was safer.

'We will have a problem with these people till the very end...' she sighed.

Baekhyun was standing in the middle of the room with closed eyes. The purple circle shaped waves were surrounding him, spreading through the room and going outside, creating in his mind the exact map of the town and everything that was going in the town.

It would have an even better effect outside, but it was safer being under the street level, because the explosions and bursts of powers were creating a mess in the whole city.

They could evacuate every person outside of city borders, but not everybody wanted it. Especially the non-interdependants were full of hatred and reluctance as to why they should leave "their" city.

Minji reached the business center building that was half destroyed and used the stairs, because elevators weren't working.

'Which floor?' She asked.

Chanyeol looked at Baekhyun, who made the mind map focused on where Jin was and showed two fingers.

'Two floors up. Left corridor...' Chanyeol informed Minji.

Minji ran and found Jin in one of the offices that were still intact. The glass, broken furniture were everywhere on the right side.

Jin was controlling his two bandaids, healing two people behind him. One with a broken leg and the second one with head and face injuries. He was treating the

third person by his skillful hands, bandaging an arm.

'What happened here?' Minji asked him. Kneeling next to him, and beckoning another person with her hand. She took out another normal bandaid from Jin's medical bag.

Jin looked at her shortly.

'It's one of Min's company buildings...' he explained.

'They are targeting all their properties it seems...'

'I don't know what this terrorists thinks... They are pouring gasoline on a raging fire...' Jin shook his head.

'All of the people that can move help the others leave the building!!' Minji screamed. 'It's too dangerous here! Use the stairs!'

More than a few people started to simply leave the place without helping anyone. But the majority helped the others to walk away from the dangerous area.

Jin looked at the people covered in his magical bandaids and stopped the healing. He looked at the person in front of him.

'Can you help this woman with head injuries? She will be confused but she is able to walk...'

'Yes...' the woman nodded. 'I know her. She is working in the opposite office... Thank you so much...' she squeezed Jin's hand.

When she left, Minji looked around.

'We should get out of here too...'

'I have one more...' Jin said and got up. He took the bag and started to walk to the other side of the corridor. 'I'm keeping him alive, but I don't know if I will manage to save him... He is stuck...'

Minji didn't know what he was talking about till she noticed the hand covered in bandaids under the heavy metal wardrobe. Jin bandaids couldn't be stained in blood or anything else, but the puddle on the floor indicated there was indeed a major open wound on the person's body.

'I can move it, but it can harm him more...' she whispered.

'I can't do anything until he is under this wardrobe... I don't see a way to pull it off the way with my power...'

'Ok... Stand behind me...'

Minji made two balls of light grow and send them as missiles into the wardrobe direction. When they hit the furniture, it stood in flames and flew away with the impact.

Jin ran to the person and a grimace appeared on his face when he saw the heavy bleeding of an open stomach wound. He kneeled next to the men and his bandaids started to cover his stomach, lifting him a bit above the floor.

'Chan, how many people are left in this building?' Minji asked.

'The last ones are living through the emergency exits... Beak can see only the two of you and the person you are treating...'

'Good...' Minji started to help with the minor injuries on the men's legs.

The healing was slow. It meant the wound was deadly. Bun Jin didn't want to give up.

'You should hurry up... RM and Hope are coming back. They said they can't do more today... They evacuated all the people that wanted to be evacuated. ICI buses took them outside the city borders... Well, some of them at least...' Chan informed Minji.

'Yeah... we are almost finishing here...'

Suddenly, something that rarely happened before, happened... Beakhyun activated all his mind powers and stormed Jin's and Minji's thoughts. He barely did it in the past as he was always focused on checking the situation. And Chanyeol was the one that was responsible for keeping the communication flawless. But this time Beakhyun didn't have time to waste:

'MINJI, JIN! GET OUT OF THERE! NOW! THEY ARE PREPARING ANOTHER MISSILE!!'

Everyone in the squad hered him.

Namjoon and Hoseok that were a few blocks away started to run into the building Minji and Jin were in, guided by Chanyeol. Their hearts were racing at tremendous speed.

'It's done!' Jin screamed, his bandaids lifted the person and he and Minji started to run to the stairs with the unconscious body levitating behind them.

Namjoon and Hoseok saw the building from a few feet away... and the terrifying sound of the missile hitting the middle of the building.

The whole construction trembled. Minji was thrown on the wall of the staircase. The dust made everything invisible.

'JIN!!?' she screamed.

'I'm here! We need to get down somehow!'

But Minji felt something. She felt it inside. Almost heard it in her mind. A quiet...

*Jump, baby...*

She grabbed Jin's arm and pulled him to the exit to the fourth floor.

'No! What are you doing? It's dangerous!'

'Can't you hear him?' she answered calmly.

Jin's eyes widened and started to run together with her, manipulating the body behind him.

The ceiling and floor were falling apart. They run away from their feet and fall on their heads.

Minji threw all seven of the light balls at the wall at the end of the corridor making a hole, through which they could see the gray, from the dust, sky.

She grabbed Jin's hand, before he could start to think and made him jump off the building.

Namjoon didn't think much. He grabbed Hoseok's waist and using his power he bounced off the street. The force of the jump made them land right in front of the building.

Hoseok spread his power of light as he did once in the Funfair and embraced the

space making it gravityless.

He saw Minji and Jin jumping off the building and falling down. He and Namjoon floated in the air to catch them.

He embraced Minji and turned around so the impact of the building going down in shreds will hit him.

Namjoon, lifted by Hoseok's power, grabbed Jin, embracing his back and under his knees, as if he was a weightless princess.

Jin hid his face in his chest, trying to run from the heat and dust.

Hoseok brought them gently down to earth.

'Can you ran?' he asked Minji.

She nodded and Namjoon stood Jin on his feet.

'Guys?! Guys?! Answer me!' Chanyeol was yelling in their mindlink.

'We are ok...' Namjoon replied to him. 'We are going back...'

They ran through streets with the strange levitating body behind them.

They had made it to two streets when the shots rang out.

'Why are they chasing us?!' Hoseok screamed.

Minji pushed him after Jin and Namjoon.

'Go! Guard them! I will stop them!'

Hoseok looked at her and wanted to protest, but she already spread the seven lights around her and threw them into the directions the shots were coming from.

He gritted his teeth and ran after Namjoon and Jin. He safely guarded them to the hotel where Baekhyun and Chanyeol took them over.

He turned around to see Minji walking slowly with a tired face and couldn't wait anymore. He ran to her and embraced her tightly.

'I'm fine...' she whispered.

'No. We are not fine at all...' Hoseok said, hiding his face in her neck.

Chanyeol ran to them with a gun in his hand and pushed them into the hotel.

'Go! Hurry up! Save it for later!'

Hoseok nodded and pulled Minji inside the building.

Chanyeol bolted the doors and they went downstairs to the basement.

Jin was checking the unconscious man.

'He should be fine...' he sighed. 'Few hours and he will regain consciousness...'

'Why were they chasing after us? Why did they attack an already destroyed building? It doesn't make sense...' Hoseok shook his head.

'They weren't chasing after us...' Namjoon said, looking at the unconscious man's face. '... but after him...'

When the rest looked at him he explained:

'It's Na Dokyun - the CEO of ISA...'

Few hours later Namjoon found Jin in one of the abandoned hotel bathroom's. He was washing his face. They were sleeping in the basement, but they were doing quick trips upstairs to use bathrooms or take showers.

He stood behind Jin and they looked each other in the eyes through the mirror. Jin slowly turned around and hugged him.

He pressed his forehead to Namjoon's chest.

Namjoon left a kiss on his hair.

'We haven't contacted Tae and Kookie for three weeks...' Jin said.

'I know...'

'Can we do it?'

'We have to... otherwise we can expect them showing up in Daegu on their bikes...' Namjoon joked.

'Is the network safe?'

'Yeah... Kai managed to finally secure it last night...'

'It's a bit late, but I think they won't mind...' Jin smiled.

'For sure they won't...' Namjoon pecked his lips and they walked downstairs, where the rest were waiting.

'What will you say on facetime?' Jin asked.

Hoseok and Minji instantly smiled and Baekhyun and Chanyeol at once reached for their phones.

'Let us confirm it is safe...'

'Do I have any visible bruises?' Minji asked, looking at her own arms and touching her face.

All of them started to check their bodies. Hoseok gave Minji her blouse to hide the bruise under her neckline.

Namjoon used his power to heal the scratch on Jin's face.

They couldn't make their children worry...

'Ok, I have confirmation from Kai that it's safe.' Baekhyun said.

'Dragon gathered them in one place...' Chanyeol added, reading the text message.

They all sat on the couch and Baekhyun made a facecall that was picked up in a blink.

On the screen three teenage faces showed up. They were sitting on the bed with Jimin in the middle.

Minji's lips quivered but she gulped and Hoseok squeezed her hand to comfort her.

'Finally!!' Jimin yelled.

'Hi, honey!' Baekhyun smiled, trying not to show what kind of an emotional mess he was seeing his son. 'How...'

'Yeah, yeah! We are fine, dad...' Jimin brushed him off fast. 'What about you?'

'Pretty much okay...' Chanyeol said.

'Oh... so you are coming home soon, right?' Tae said, looking through the screen at Namjoon. 'If everything is so "okay"...' he added sarcastically.

Namjoon gulped.

'Soon, soon...' Hoseok said with fake cheerfulness, nodding his head. 'How is school?' Do you train? Forgot all the dancing routines already?'

'We are dancing when we can. And we rain with grandpa and all the weapons...' Jungkook confirmed, quietly.

'That's great!' Hoseok smiled widely, but there was something fake in that. 'And school? How is high school, Kookie?'

'Wonderful.' Jungkook said flatly.

Jin was just looking through the screen. Greedily saving every inch of three little faces in his mind.

The heavy silence appeared on both sides of the screen.

'You know... that we are checking the network, right?' Taehyung finally said. 'You are not fine at all...'

Namjoon looked at his feet.

All the adults didn't know what to say.

'You don't need to lie to us...' Jungkook said. 'Just... don't leave us without any contact for so long again...' he looked at his hands with tearful eyes.

'We miss you...' Jimin looked at Baekhyun and Chanyeol.

Chanyeol tried to smile teasingly.

'Oh? I need to go on a mission more often if it's going to make my son that cute...'

Jimin squinted his eyes.

'Shut up, dad! First of all it's not funny... Second of all... I'm always cute!'

Hoseok laughed.

'Yes, you are the cutest fluff ball, Jiminie...'

'See!' Jimin looked at Chanyeol with content. 'Uncle Hobi will adopt me!'

'Kookie...' Minji asked. 'Do you eat well?'

'Yeah...' Jungkook nodded, not looking at her. 'I'm feeding Tae too...'

'That's good... I taught you well...' Jin nodded, smiling lightly.

'You have to teach me a lot more things, uncle...' Jungkook answered. 'Come back fast...'

These words were said by Jungkook... but all of them could hear they belonged to Taehyung, who was looking at his lap. He couldn't say it. So Jungkook said it for him...

*Come back home, dad...*

Jin couldn't stand it, he stood up rapidly.

Feeling the heaviness overtaking them, Jimin screamed:

'Wait!!! I have to tell you something!!!! It's really really important!! Big news people!!!'

Jin stood in his place.

Jimin patted Jungkook's and Taehyung's knees.

'We have a new couple here!!! Cheers people!! Where are the fireworks when I need them?!'

The adults froze and Jungkook instantly blushed.

Taehyung rolled his eyes, but smiled shyly.

'Yeah... we are boyfriends...' he admitted, grabbing Jungkook's hand and lifting it to show the bracelets. 'Not a big surprise, right?'

'They are the fucking Prom Kings of the school if you know what I mean!' Jimin laughed. 'Like in this cliche high school rom-coms!'

The shock the parents went into was broke by Hoseok, who screamed:

'WHAAAAA?!!!!! MY BABIES ARE BOYFRIENDS?! AND I WASN'T THERE!!! NOOOO!!! MINJI PACK MY THINGS! I'M GOING BACK!!'

He teared up.

'Who took your pictures if I wasn't there!!! Why is life so brutal!?'

'Daaad...' Jungkook whined, giggling.

'I took their pics, uncle!!' Jimin jumped on his seat. 'I will show you!!' He took out his phone and showed the screen to the camera.

All of the adults leaned to the screen to see better.

'Well I don't see much difference...' Jin said, shrugging.

Jimin smirked and changed the photo.

'And now?'

The picture showed the back silhouettes of Taehyung and Jungkook, who were kissing sweetly on the couch, watching a movie.

'What the hell?! Where did you get that from?!' Taehyung grabbed the phone from Jimin's hand.

'Private collection.' Jimin pouted, trying to take his phone back.

'Oh my god!!' Hoseok gasped, tearing up again.

Minji sighed and wiped his nose with the sleeve of her blouse.

'It's happening! Oh my god! My babies are growing up!!' Jin screamed, pressing his nails to his cheeks. 'I'm getting old!!!' He looked terrified at Namjoon. 'Do you see any wrinkles?!'

Chanyeol rolled in half from laughter.

Namjoon shook his head with a smile.

'No, I don't...' he said. 'You are as beautiful as always...' he looked at Tae. 'Congrats, boys...'

Suddenly Chanyeol's phone rang and he looked at the screen to check who was calling. His eyes widened.

'I have to take it...' he said.

Baekhyun got a text message, he read it and stood up fast.

'We need to deal with something, guys! We promise we will contact you soon!' He walked after Chanyeol.

'What? Dad!!' Jimin screamed.

'We have a safe connection now. It will be easier to contact you, I promise...' Minji said, reaching her hand to the keyboard.

'No!! Mom!' Jungkook yelled, but she disconnected the call.

'They will be pissed...' Hoseok sighed.

Namjoon was looking at Chan and Baek.

'What's happening?' he asked.

Beakhyun looked at him.

'They are sending the army...'

All of them looked at each other mortified, until...

'Oh... are they?'

The unknown voice said.

**Seoul, same time**

Bang Yongguk, the head of International Council of Interdependants, entered the office of president of Korea.

'To what do I owe this honor?' the president said, raising up from his seat behind the desk.

'Is it true you are sending the military to Daegu, sir?' Yongguk said nervously.

'We have rebellion there... We need armed forces to deal with it...'

'It's a small flame that will burst into raging fire! The rebellion WILL start if you will send the army there, sir! For now it was terrorist against people that lives there! You are joining hands with them, sending the military there!'

'Explosions. Shooting on the streets. Killed people. Regular flights. If this is not a riot I don't know what it is!'

'So let me ask you, who do you intend to fight against?! Terrorist? Or interdependants?'

'The purpose of sending the military there is to calm the situation...'

'People won't take it like that! Have you at least talked with 3EO to inform them about this?! Interdependants will think it's an action against them! And the rest of the people and the whole world will think it's okay to fight with Interdependants,

just because they are who they are! With legal forces!'

'I made my decision...' The president said calmly, sitting by the desk.

'You think you have rebellion?! ISA and 3EO were focused on defense and helping Interdependants. The crowd was what made it worse! But if you send special forces they will take it as a threat! You will start a civil war! When Interdependants will go all out your army won't stand a chance!'

'Are you thretening me?' President squinted his eyes.

'No, sir! I'm trying to make you understand that it is a foul decision that will backfire!'

'How do you expect me to deal with this situation another way?'

'Officially remove officials from there! Take a stand that there is no side there is right! That both made mistakes! Appoint new officials in Deagu! Reasonable ones! Not narrow-minded and not prejudiced! Mix them with interdependants so both sides will feel at ease!'

'Do you really believe there is no side that is wrong? 3EO was the one that started the separation and pointed out the differences...'

'It was years ago! If Min Jaehyun wouldn't be killed we wouldn't have this situation now! They are killing our children! Do you think the regular army will be different?!'

'They are going there for a peacekeeping mission... Not to pacify Interdependants... I want to keep Deagu under control...'

'You are making a mistake...' Yongguk said desperately.

President sighed.

'I will do what you suggested. I will appoint new officials... But the army is still on the table until then...'

Yongguk shook his head.

'It's a mistake history will judge you for...'

'It's the heaviness all leaders are carrying on their arms...' the president said. 'I will give clear orders not to open any fire. I promise...'

'You won't be there Mr President. And generals are used to dealing with things, seeing their own point of view...'

Yongguk turned around and walked off the office.

He took out his phone and called Chanyeol.

---

Short chapter I know... 😓 Sorry. But next one will be long.... That's why.

Hope it wasn't boring...

I know you are simps for Taekook moments. 

And...

I laughed so hard at this... 

I had flashbacks to SmilingLife threathening me for the 70% of King's Pack... Such a cutie aren't you... Smiling life

BlairWitch

# Chapter 20: Unsealing - part 1

**Seoul, May 2065**

Taehyung, Jungkook and Jimin looked at the desktop of the laptop, which displayed disconnected facecall.

'What the fuck?' Jimin whispered.

'They are sooooo not okay...' Jungkook frowned.

'More to it... they are fucking exhausted... Dad had blood in his hair...' Taehyung whispered.

'They are hiding so much... it just makes me more worried!' Jungkook punched the pillow that was laying on his lap.

Jimin sighed.

'Sorry guys, that I threw you under the bus... I just wanted to cheer them up...'

'Nah, it's okay...' Taehyung brushed his face with his hand. 'At least they smiled for a bit...'

'Yeah...' Jungkook nodded. 'We should take more photos... of our days. We can send them sometimes, but they will be happy to see them when they come back.'

'That's a great idea!' Hwasa smiled, standing in the doors.

Three teenagers looked at her with sad, worried eyes.

'Ma, do you know what's happening? They disconnected so suddenly...' Jungkook asked.

Hwasa frowned.

'No, we didn't get any new information. The situation was the same as yesterday before they contacted us.'

Taehyung was deep in thought. He looked at Hwasa.

'Can we start training?'

Hwasa blinked in surprise.

'But we talked about it already... that it will be better if we start after this semester exams are done...'

'Yeah... But we didn't have to look at the bruises, blood and exhaustion of our parents before...' Taehyung said with a cold tone.

Hwasa looked at Jungkook.

'But are you ready, Kook?'

Jungkook's eyes widened.

'Why are you asking me?'

'Because you are the Sealer. You need to be ready...'

Jungkook snorted.

'I don't think I will be more ready in two months than I already am... And I think the same goes for Yoohyeon, Yeonjun and Minho...'

Hwasa nodded.

'Ok, give me one more month... ok? I need to convince parents of the rest... Unless you want to train without them...'

'And get my ass beaten up by Dami? No, thank you!' Jungkook was fast to answer.

'Yeah... she wouldn't have mercy for any of us...' Jimin shivered dramatically. 'And she always goes straight for the balls... This inhuman bish...'

'Language!' Hwasa shook her head.

'Bish is not a curse.' Jimin said, raising his eyebrow.

'It is in this household!'

Jungkook giggled.

'Yesterday you again called grandpa "an old asshole"...'

Hwasa squinted her eyes.

'I'm an adult!'

'Shouldn't you be more careful with your words with so many years of experience then, ma?' Taehyung smirked cleverly.

'I... Three against one is totally unfair!' Hwasa pouted. 'Go to sleep brats!'

'Retreating from discussion in a cowardly way? Fine, ma, we will be angels and go to sleep...'

Hwasa gasped.

'Listen boy! It's not a retreat! I'm stating facts - you should go to sleep!'

'Sure...' Taehyung nodded.

'You and your clever mind! I should beat Namjoon's genes out of you!'

'Maybe then he wouldn't be a hazard in the kitchen...' Jimin giggled.

'What the hell! Whose side are you on!?' Taehyung looked at Jimin, offended.

'On the side that gives me food...' Jimin bared his teeth in a smile.

Taehyung grabbed the pillow and hit Jimin's face with it.

Hwasa took her chance to disappear from the room with pride.

Jungkook on the other hand took his phone to record the pillow war of Jimin and Taehyung, who totally were using all of their strength, not even thinking about it.

Until Jimin sneakily slid on Taehyung with loud:

'HA!!' and sitting on him hit his face with double force.

Jungkook stopped the recording at once and he felt something hot burning in his chest. He poked his inner cheek with his tongue.

'Jimin.' he said quietly with a dangerous tone. 'Stop it...'

'Why? I'm winning!' Jimin didn't even look at the younger still hitting, laugingTae, with a wide smile.

Jungkook grabbed the back of Jimin's shirt and pulled it.

'Get off... now...'

'It's okay, Koo, I'm fine!' Taehyung, still giggling, tried to raise his hands with a pillow to hit Jimin back.

In the next minute Jimin and Taehyung heard the loud noise of doors shutting. They looked at each other surprised, when they realized Jungkook walked out.

He walked out... pissed as fuck...

Taehyung looked at the closed doors and frowned.

'What happened?'

Jimin looked at the pillow in his hand, then at Taehyung and shrugged. But when Tae moved, wanted to sit, the realization hit him, as soon as his body felt the movement.

He looked at the position he was in and fastly got up.

'Wow! Wow!' he whined, brushing his hair, making a total mess on his head. 'My Kookie... my sweetie... my poor baby...'

Taehyung squinted his eyes.

'He is not your baby...'

'He is. You are too...' Jimin said absent-mindedly.

Even the cuteness of Jimin's statement couldn't erase the dissatisfaction Taehyung felt right now.

'Don't call him that.' he demanded.

'If it's bothering you so much, why won't YOU call him that?'

'I... I do call him that...' Taehyung looked at his hands.

'In your head doesn't count...' Jimin rolled his eyes.

'Fuck you...'

'No, thank you.' Jimin bit back. 'So, my baby Kookie...'

'Jimin, I'm warning you!' Taehyung growled.

'Ugh! You really are soulmates! One jealous ass after another!' Jimin shook his head. 'How do I even cope with you two on a daily basis?!'

'I'm not jealous. But don't call him "baby"!'

'Yeeaahhh! Riight! You are not jelouse and Jungkook who just stormed out of here pissed as fuck isn't either...' Jimin's voice was soaked with irony.

Taehyung blinked.

'What? Why would he be jealous?'

'I don't know, genius! Maybe because I was fucking sitting on your junk!?' The sarcasm in Jimin's words was priceless.

'But we were playing... He totally saw it...' Taehyung frowned.

Jimin facepalmed.

'You are so smart, yet your brain is totally useless when it comes to simple things like that...'

'Jimin... Jungkook wouldn't be jealous of something like that. We have done it thousands of times...' Taehyung tried to be reasonable.

'Oh?' Jimin blinked innocently. 'So you will be totally okay with ME, sitting on YOUR BOYFRIEND'S dick just because we are playing? That's actually really nice of you, Tae... Gonna use your kindness then!' Jimin turned around.

Taehyung was on his feet faster than the wind. He grabbed Jimin's arm.

'First of all - don't you dare!' he said warningly. 'Second of all... thank you...'

Jimin made a dramatic bow.

'Love master at your service...'

'Yeah, yeah... I know you are addicted to reading hot romances...'

'You should read some too...' Jimin stuck his tongue and made himself comfortable in bed. 'I'm going to sleep, so get out of my room before Kooks will think You are going to sleep here...'

Taehyung nodded and went to the doors, but turned around to see Jimin laying on his side, holding his phone.

'Will you be okay alone?' he asked quietly. 'You can sleep with us...'

'I will be fine...' Jimin replied. 'Don't worry... I just... miss them...'

'I know... me too...'

'They will come back, right?'

Taehyung hesitated for a second before answering.

'If not we will bring them here by force... But they will come back, Jimin.'

Jimin nodded.

'Night, TaeTae...'

'If you will feel like it... come to my room, Chim...'

'And experience another round of jealousy show? Fuck yeah, I'm in...' Jimin giggled, shaking his head and hiding it in the pillow.

'We are not that jealous...' Taehyung whispered under his nose.

But when he was answered by the snark, he fastly ran out of the room.

Taehyung took a shower and wore his shorts and oversized t-shirt to sleep, but when he entered his room Jungkook surprisingly wasn't there.

Taehyung just wanted to hug him and calm him... laugh the situation out together, but it seems he never actually met with really jealous Jeon Jungkook before...

He walked downstairs through the dark and quiet house. The only light and noises were coming from the basement.

Taehyung walked to the lowest level of the house just to see Jungkook aggressively filling the washing machine.

He was mumbling under his nose angrily.

Taehyung smiled amused. He was cute...

'Are you going to sleep here?' he asked, checking out Jungkook's hoodie and short shorts he usually slept in.

'Why not? You can sleep with Jimin if you get cold...' Jungkook answered not sparing Tae even a quick glance, focused on setting the buttons on the washing machine, harshly pressing them.

His deep, dark tone made Taehyung realized that jealous Jungkook wasn't just cute... he was also extremely hot.

Taehyung slowly walked to him, he lifted his hand to Jungkook's nape, but the Younger instantly stiffened and said, before even feeling the touch:

'Don't touch me.'

Taehyung felt anger crawling slowly under his skin, because of the negation.

He grabbed Jungkook's arm, turned him and before the younger could even react, he was lifted and sat on the washing machine with Taehyung's hands on either side of his hips.

'What if I want to?' Taehyung said deeply, looking at Jungkook with dark eyes.

Jungkook slowly raised his mad gaze at him.

'That's your problem, Kim...'

'Oh? So you would be okay with me ignoring you?'

Jungkook lowered his eyes and poked his cheek with his tongue. He pouted.

'I didn't like that...' he whispered.

'I know. I'm sorry. I didn't realize I would be pissed too, bun...' Taehyung brought his lips closer to Jungkook's ear. '... if you would make me jealous...'

Jungkook gulped and blushed.

'I wasn't jealous... I was angry because he had done something I've never done to you and you were ok with it...'

Taehyung's 17-year old body couldn't actually stay calm after Jungkook's words painted this hot vision in his head. He grabbed the edges of the washing machine, tightly to remind himself where he was now. But he could feel how his stomach tightened suddenly and the goosbumbs covered his forearms, when his heart and breath sped up.

'I didn't even notice that he was sitting on me, Jungkook. Because it didn't have any other meaning or effect on me, besides the body weight.' Taehyung said quietly, with lips still close to the other one's ear. 'On the other hand... if it were you... I would notice... instantly...'

Jungkook shivered from the feeling of Taehyung's breath on his ear and cheek. From his words. And voice.

He slowly lifted his head and Taehyung tilted his own, so their gazes clashed.

'Are we clear here?' he asked deeply, lifting his eyebrow.

Jungkook nodded and licked his lips.

When, on Taehyung's lips, a satisfied smile started to appear, Jungkook grabbed his neck and kissed him.

He wanted to try something. He moved his lips a bit more aggressively then they used to and hesitantly touched Taehyung's lips with the tip of his tongue. It was a small kitten lick.

But after doing it Jungkook got so shy he instantly moved away.

Taehyung opened his eyes slowly and his tongue caressed the place he felt Jungkook tongue a second ago.

'What was that?' he asked, with a small curious smile.

Jungkook blushing madly, pushed him away and jumped off of the washing machine, saying:

'My reward for not punching you for being a dense moron...'

'Aren't you like to be spoiled and getting rewards?' Taehyung smirked. 'Aren't you a baby?'

Jungkook walking upstairs, looked through his arm and sassily reply:

'I would beat up anybody that would imply me being a baby... Except you... Because if it means spoiling and rewards? Hell yeah, I can be your *baby*...'

Taehyung blushed and looked at the floor, biting back his satisfied smile.

**Daegu, May 2065**

'Oh... are they?'

Hearing the voice Baekhyun, Chanyeol, Namjoon, Jin, Hoseok and Minji raised their heads at the person, who was standing in the doorframe.

The man looked through all of them and his eyes stayed on Namjoon.

'You are Kim Namjoon... we didn't know you were here...' he said.

'We are not here as ICI's delegats Mr Na...'

'So MOI sent you here...' Na Dokyun shrugged. 'To help or to disturb us?'

'Us?' Minji raised her eyebrow. 'There is no us or them. We are here to save people. No matter interdependants or not. We treat equality as literal equality.'

'Well, I wonder if the army that is approaching will behave the same...' he said with a bitter smile. 'But I hardly doubt it. At the beginning two children were killed and the governor of Daegu was standing next to terrorist and allowed them to set the explosives under the school building... What kind of fucked up equality is this?' he shook his head.

'The time to prevent what is happening passed out together with Min Jaehyun' Namjoon said quietly.

'We tried.' Dokyun said. 'But people of this city were enraged. And we had to decide on which side we were on. So we helped Interdependants. Because no one else ever did.'

'This is pointless discussion. Now we can only work on reducing losses...' Hoseok said, shaking his head.

'ISA don't mind you being here. As long as you stay out of our way, you're safe.' Na Dokyun stated. 'But think about this... if the army will enter the city... which side will you be on?'

'On the side of life' Jin said harshly. 'No matter who's life it would be!'

'We were informed that the army is sended here to calm the moods... They don't have the orders to attack.' Chanyeol said.

'And you believe that?' Na Dokyun smirked ironically.

Nobody answered him.

Dokyun shrugged.

'Well I hope you are right... But if they start to kill... we will start to kill too. We won't let them destroy what is left...'

Namjoon tiredly shook his head.

'That's a never-ending circle...'

Dokyun smiled sadly.

'I know... but honestly I don't see the easy way out anymore... Do you?'

'If the government would give people the assurance of security, would ISA back away?' Namjoon asked.

'We are not the ones who started it. What kind of assurance are you talking about? Weren't we the citizens of this country before? We were... And that didn't give us equal rights...'

'That's not true.' Minji shook her head. 'The situation HERE is fucked up. But the other parts of the country are different!'

'You are talking about Seoul. The capital. The big, modern city... Where no politician, official or elite member would dare to openly show their true feelings or thoughts. Afraid for the word judging them. You call it An Enlightened City, but it's just a facade... And the rest of the provinces? The countryside? Daegu? Busan? The power of Capital is not reaching there. But the media and prejudices are.'

'You are talking about the whole society... I thought you are fighting with terrorists...' Hoseok said harshly.

'Because we are. For now. And I truly hope we will stick to defending ourselves... I don't see my men die or lose their soulmates.' Dokyun sighed. 'Can you call someone who will pick me up? I'm really grateful for your help...'

Baekhyun took one of the safe phones and gave it to Dokyun.

'It's a safe line,' he said shortly.

'Thank you.' Dokyun talked through the phone shortly, giving the address a few blocks away. He looked at Namjoon. 'If you will need help, supplies or a safe place... I saved one of my phone numbers. I will help the way I can...'

Jin nodded in silent thank you.

'See you around then... ' Dokyun moved into the stairs.

When he disappeared, Baekhyun frowned.

'I don't like him...'

'I don't trust him...' Jin seconded that.

'And our feelings don't matter because if we have to, we will need to cooperate with him...' Namjoon sighed.

'I will check the place. I want to make sure we are not bugged.' Chanyeol said and Baekhyun nodded, and they started to check up the basment throughtfully.

Namjoon brushed his face with his hands.

'I don't have strength to think about the army now...'

'And we shouldn't. This doesn't change our mission.' Minji squeezed his arm.

'Until the situation will get worse...'

'I hope Yongguk will be able to pull some strings in Seoul.'

'He already talked with the president itself. What else can he do?'

'You know what? Enough is enough for one day...' Hoseok said suddenly. 'No dark thoughts before sleep!' He hit Jin's back cheerfully. 'How do you feel as Kookie's future father-in-law?'

'I...' Jin gasped. 'Fuck you Hoseok! I just had a vision of Taekook at the altar! Almost got a heart attack!'

Hoseok clapped his hands happily and lifted Minji.

'Isn't this good news? They seem glad!'

'Yeah... and they kissed...' Minji smirked. 'Wonder when that happened... they haven't said anything.'

'Could you two stop being so hyped up by it?' Namjoon whined.

'Why? We were waiting for years!' Jin joined Minji and Hoseok in their circles of celebrating the puppies in love.

Namjoon looked at the three of them with a miserable expression. He facepalmed.

'Two crackhead husbands and one crackhead wife...'

**Seoul, June 2065**

'The national army entered the city of Daegu yesterday. For now there is no news about an open conflict. The soldiers are mainly pacifying the random acts of

aggression from both sides, providing medical treatment and cleaning the streets. The ISA agents cooperate with them. For now. But the situation can change rapidly...'

Hwasa turned off the car radio.

'They again make it sound as if ISA and Interdependants are the only problem here...' he shook her head angrily.

'The false view on the situation was what was wrong from the very beginning. Media have enormous power...' Jiyoung sighed. He peeked in the rear view mirror to look at Jungkook, Taehyung and Jimin sitting in the back seat with mortified expressions.

Few minutes before the radio news they were bubbly and excited...

The car was moving fast through the forest road.

Behind it two other cars were following them. In the next one Kai and Jennie were driving Yoohyeon and Dami, and in the third one Bora was accompanied by Yeonjun, Soobin, Minho and Han.

It was the third week of June... and the first weekend of their power training...

Jiyoung caught a glimpse of Jungkook turning to Taehyung and their expression changed from worried to determined.

On one hand he was glad. On the other hand... It made him uneasy. He agreed that they need to know what to do in case of an emergency. But if they thought he would let them anywhere near danger - they were totally wrong.

They reached Jiyoung and Hwasa's mountain house where Siyeon was waiting for them.

Kai and Jennie were saying goodbye to Yoohyeon and Dami, warning them to be careful and behave. Bora asked to stay but they said they would be too nervous for that, and didn't want to make the girls get anxious because of them.

They promised to get the girls on Sunday evening and left.

Siyeon hugged everyone cheerfully and led them to the house.

'Dami and Yoohyeon can stay in Minji's old room.' she said taking them upstairs.

'We have six places in the dormitory for trainees' Bora explained. 'We haven't had such a big group at once since... Well since ever actually...' she giggled. 'Let me show you...'

The dormitory was actually a big orangerie with a lot of plants and windows reaching to the ceiling. They showed a view of a Japanese garden and training field in the backyard.

On the floor six fluffy futons were laying.

'Dormitories have their own dressing room where you can leave your clothes and separate bathroom for your use. You won't need much clothes... We have uniforms for you.' Bora explained.

'Whoa! It's a nice place! I hear water...' Jimin said, looking around.

'Yeah, there is a pond near the resting area in orangerie...' Bora smiled. 'Siyeon loves gardening. She even sings to the plants.'

'Where six of you can stay here. And the last place we have free at the moment is the attic... It's a bit hot and dusty there... Kookie, will you be fine there? Don't want the guests to get uncomfortable...'

'We wouldn't mind, mam...' Soobin wanted to assure her fast.

'No, no... auntie is right. The attic will be fine for me...' Jungkook said and glanced at Tae with puppy eyes. 'Stay here, ok?'

Taehyung rolled his eyes. He knew Jungkook was thinking about his skin right now. It could get itchy in dusty, steamy and warm places.

'Yeah... fine...' he said bitterly.

Jimin looked at Jungkook who took his bag and went to the main building. Then his eyes landed on Taehyung, who had a very calm expression on his face.

'Such a caring boyfriend, huh?' he whispered to his ear, teasingly.

'Mhmm...' Taehyung nodded and left his bag next to one of the futons.

'Ok... Come to the garden in half an hour. It's better not to eat before your first time, so we will eat after training.'

All boys cringed when they heard about the no-food agenda, making Bora laugh.

'Trust me... it's safer... You will get a bit dizzy.'

'Wha?' Soobin looked at her worried, but Yeonjun rubbed his back.

'Don't worry. I will take it...' he calmed him down.

'If I get dizzy You will catch me, right?' Han smirked looking at Minho.

'Who said, the sealers will be the only ones to get dizzy?' Bora said with a cat smile. 'Oh, and Sealers... wear button up shirts or something that will be easy to expose your marks in...'

She left the room, leaving six boys with puzzled expressions and exited nervousness.

Half an hour later everyone gathered on the training field where Jiyoung, Hwasa, Siyeon and Bora where waiting for them.

'Sit down. We will first explain some things...' Jiyoung said.

Jungkook, Taehyung and the rest sat on the grass.

'First thing you need to understand is that the Sealer and the Holder are like the Lock and the Key. Each Lock is unique and there is always just one Key that can open it... It's called Unsealing.' When all the teenagers nodded his face hardened. 'But there is something... that is called Taboo. Taboo is the contradiction of everything Unsealing stands for. Even if it has the same effect.'

He looked at Hwasa and loosened the halves of his kimono, to expose his mark.

'Unsealing is gentle. It's like a delicate caress... ' Hwasa explained, she took off her glove. 'It's like putting a designed key to its perfect lock.' Her hand got closer to Jiyoung's skin. It stayed an inch away from it. 'You can touch each other's marks without activating unsealing... But the moment you, the Holder and the Sealer want it...' Her mark started to glow and at the same time the mark on Dragon's chest responded with the light too. 'You can put the key to the lock...' she pressed her hand to Jiyoung's chest.

But her hand didn't touch the skin... it went inside the light that started to glow from the mark. The straps of silver light started to embrace her wrist and she pulled out her palm, she was holding a paintbrush made out of the light, that instantly became material.

It took just a blink of an eye to see the light and then to see the paintbrush.

'During Unsealing you are surrounded by light that none can see but the sealer and holder.' Jiyoung explained.

'In the moment two souls are touching, the Soulmates can feel the unlocking, the

material shape of inmaterial light... It's hard to explain, until you actually do it...' Hwasa said. 'The moment of returning the sacred treasure back to the Sealer is the same. The Holders can make it immaterial part of the soul again and return it back...' the paintbrush in her hand started to look like the shape of it made out of light, befer the little straps of light embraced it and when she pressed her hand back to Jiyoung' chest, the light disappeared and their marks became black again.

'You already know how Unsealing looks. How does it work you can't see... You can only feel it.' Jiyoung said and nodded to Bora, who stood in front of him. 'Now... it's really important for you to realize what Taboo is... and why you should never even think about doing it...'

Jiyoung smiled gently at her and nodded.

'It's okay...' he said comfortingly. 'We have to show them...'

Bora looked at her feet and took a deep breath.

'Imagine trying to fit the square key to the round lock...' Bora said and looked apologetically at her father. 'Only to show you, we are doing this... it's Taboo for a reason.' She took off her glove and pressed her hand to Jiyoung's mark.

The light appeared, but Jiyoung started to scream in pain. Inhumanly. As if he was ripped apart. Bora, breathing heavily, forcefully pressed her hand inside. The moment the paintbrush appeared in her hand, Jiyoung passed out and she was pushed back a few steps as if she couldn't hold onto the ground.

All teenagers held their breaths in shock. They've never realized there was a way someone else could use the sacred treasures beside the fated soulmates. It looked terrifying and sickening...

Bora returned the sacred treasure to Jiyong, but he didn't regain his consciousness. Hwasa kneeled near him and fixed his clothes. Caressed his hair gently, when his body started to tremble.

Bora gulped and a heavy shiver ran through her body. She covered her mouth as if she tried to stop herself from throwing up.

Siyeon made her sit on the grass.

'Even if the Sealer is not opposing the power of the Holder... his soul is. And if the Sealer is fighting against the Holder power... it's incredibly painful to him...' Siyeon explained quietly.

'It's forbidden. Disgusting. And your whole being is punishing you after...' Hwasa said.

Siyeon looked at Taehyung, Minho, Dami and Soobin. 'To put it simply so you will understand and never do something like this... - It is the rape of the soul...'

'We showed you this so You will be painfully aware how holy Unsealing is... And what a profanity Taboo is.'

'Protect your Sealers. Because it's the worst thing that can happen to them...' Bora said with a hoarse whisper. She tried to blink her tears away. She pressed her fingers to her eyes. 'I hate when I have to do this...'

Siyeon stretched her hand to her and smiled:

'Get up... You will feel better when you see their faces after first Unsealing...'

'Oh, yeah... the embarrassment while teaching newbies is priceless...' Bora smirked.

'I will get a blanket and pillow for Jiyoung? He will sleep for a while...' Hwasa said.

'Jimin you can observe and help us...' Siyeon said, smiling at him. 'When you look from the side, it's easier to help them...'

Jimin nodded, getting up. He was interested in the whole process. Even if there was a small sting in his heart he can't experience it.

'Ok... get up and stand in front of each other.' Siyeon instructed.

'Take of your gloves...' Bora said.

Taehyung took off his glove without fingers and threw it on the grass.

He looked at the original mark. In the morning Hwasa took off their protective tattoo, because they said the first Unsealing was meaningful enough for the boys to experience it with their original marks they were born with. And the Dragon's house was safe.

He lifted his eyes at Jungkook, who was wearing a sleeveless hoodie with a zipper. And Taehyung realized Jungkook didn't wear anything underneath it...

He unzipped it to the middle of his chest so his mark will be visible.

The way it showed the pale, smooth skin was... disturbing for Taehyung.

It looked... inviting...

Taehyung's thoughts drifted into the naughty direction, so he shook his head and glanced at the others.

Yeonjun was wearing a T-shirt with a neckline so stretched out that it exposed most of his chest. Yoohyeon put on a red plaid shirt and started undoing the top few buttons. And Han was wearing a basketball jersey with a neckline that reached almost to his nipples.

None of them had the effect of Jungkook's slightly unzipped hoodie on Taehyung.

'Ok... come closer to each other, now...' Bora instructed. 'And stretch your hand, until you will feel the warmth of the skin. It's the feeling as if you would bring your hand closer to a lightened lightbulb... or the flame over the candle...'

Jungkook was standing calmly, looking at focused Taehyung, who had a slight blush over his cheeks.

'Now... my favorite part...' Siyeon smirked teasingly.

'I hope you all will understand when I explain it like that...' Bora said, trying to hold her grin. 'It is like the moment before the first kiss...'

The mass gulping was heard on the field and all the teengers blushed, and started to stomping with their feets anxiously, trying to stop the blush that started to sneakily crawl on their necks.

Except Han and Minho, who smirked and raised their eyebrows at each other. And Jimin who burst out laughing.

'Oh! Good! You all get what I'm talking about!' Bora laughed.

'So, this moment is like that... look in each other's eyes.. and you feel the mutual consent even without voicing it... This consent. The warmth... it's the feeling of unsealing...' Siyeon said.

'You will feel when the unsealing will start...' Bora said. 'It's like a secret code... A password the Holders hold somewhere inside them. For me it's like "Let me in".

'I feel it...' Siyeon continued. 'I hear it. It's not even a whisper. It's more like a gentle breath of wind. I understand those words...'

'How will we know the password?' Soobin asked nervously.

'It's not something you can write down, Soobin... It's carved in your soul...' Bora stood behind him and put her hands on his shoulder. 'Look Yeonjun in the eyes... and you will know.'

Listening to her words with one ear, Taehyung slowly lifted his eyes and looked at Jungkook. His palm was an inch above Jungkook's mark.

He got lost in the galaxy of Jungkook's eyes.

He felt as if he was floating through the centuries, where those eyes were guiding him. He was flying through myriads of stars and colors, embraced by the red ribbon of fate.

And he just wanted to say those two words...

His hand was getting closer, as if the red straps of light were pulling it inside. He felt as the skin on Jungkook's chest changed into a liquid light, invitingly letting him dive inside.

From afar he heard Bora's voice, saying: *Don't panic. They will pass out...*

But before he could register these disturbing words, the strips of light exploded around him and Jungkook, and he said those two soft words:

*It's me...*

And got an unspoken, gentle answer:

*I know you...*

Then his hand dived inside Jungkook's chest.

---

First part of Unsealing is done! 

Wait for the second part of the basic education xD. 

And I will upload some  pictures in next chapter that would make it easier for you to imagine how the unsealing look for the Holder and the Sealer.

BlairWitch

## Chapter 21: Unsealing - Sacred Treasures - part 2

Jungkook was looking at Taehyung and it felt as if they were the only people around.

They were suddenly standing in the light, in front of each other on the desert planet, where moon and sun were both at the same time visible on the sky, floating them in soft light.

They were material but they weren't at the same time.

He was lost in Taehyung's eyes.

Jungkook felt as if his heart was held in Taehyung's warm hand.

It was like being held in his arms falling asleep.

The feeling was divine. Warm. Comfortable.

As Hwasa said, it felt like a gentle caress.

*It' me...*

And Jungkook's soul recognized him instantly.

He knew him.

He knew this warmth. This colours. This touch.

He knew it as someone more than just Jeon Jungkook.

He knew him as Jeryn, Jesen, Jiyan, Jude... and so many more...

*I know you...*

They were in their own bubble. On their own planet. Bora's voice was coming from afar as if she was under the water: *Find the core. It's like the seed of it. When you touch it... you will be able to take it out... Jimin stand behind Yoohyeon, be ready to catch her...'*

Jungkook observed the sudden worry in Taehyung's eyes.

He stretched his hand to Taehyung's cheek and caressed it gently.

In this place between places. In this dimension between dimensions. In this place without time when their age didn't exist. In this place without words and language

Taehyung could understand Jungkook in some deeper way.

*Don't worry, my love...*

Taehyung looked at his hand and could see the little seed, the light so bright it was illuminating like jade.

But...

There was also a second one there that was a bit more intense... slightly bigger.

Jungkook pressed his finger to his lips, showing Taehyung it's a secret.

His eyes got dark, a bit of red flashed through them.

Taehyung remembered what Jiyoung said: it's your Sealer that teaches you how to use your power...

Taehyung smirked and answered:

*Nothing is a coincidence...*

He closed his fingers on the smaller seed and took it out.

Nothing that happened between the two of them was visible to any other person. Taehyung could see the straps of jade light going at once into the seed direction and building an object.

When it shaped the light soaked inside the sword Taehyung was holding.

The surroundings around them became real and material again.

Something they felt for an eternity, was in fact a matter of minute.

Taehyung looked at the black sword, with sharp, irregular silver edges, he was holding. It looked dangerous. It was shining beautifully. At the base was a crystal placed that was shining like the jade he knew from the light inside Jungkook.

He just glanced at it because at the same time the sword became material Jungkook fainted.

Taehyung made a step forward, but Bora was already standing behind Jungkook to catch him so he wouldn't hit the ground.

'DON'T PANIC!' Siyeon screamed to Holders, when the same happened with Yoohyeon, who was catched by Jimin and Yeonjun that fell in her waiting arms. Hwasa was next to Minho to catch Han.

Bora looked at Taehyung.

'It's ok. It's normal...' she calmed him down.

Taehyung looked at Jungkook who was peacefully laying in Bora's embrace. He calmed a bit and looked at Dami.

She was holding a light blue spear as long as she was tall. A bit of steam was coming out of it. The same effect had frozen ice when it was taken out of the cold...

Taehyung could already guess that Yoohyeon could use ice power...

On the other side, Soobin was standing with a golden bow in his hands. It was shining a little bit from inside - light power.

The next one was Minho. He was holding in his hand a brown vambrace, a part of the armor that was suppose to cover forearm. He had an unreadable expression. It was actually a secret for now what the vambrace could do... and probably Minho didn't have any idea about it now.

'Ok... return the treasures now... We will wake them up.' Hwasa instructed.

'To do it... touch your marks and you would be able to put it back where they belong...' Bora explained.

Taehyung touched his mark and the sword became a light and changed into a seed which he pressed to Jungkook's chest. It was pretty simple and not so exciting or magical as unsealing.

When he safely placed it in its place, Jungkook opened his eyes.

'Okay... sit down and rest...'

'What happened? Did it worked?' Yeonjun asked.

'It did' Hwasa smiled calmingly and ruffled his hair. 'Each of you experienced it differently...'

'What about the sacred treasures?' Yoohyeon asked. 'What are they?'

'Yeah! Why did we pass out?' Han frowned.

'If you will sit I will explain...' Hwasa said sternly.

All of them immediately sat down again.

Taehyung rested his hands on the grass, leaning backwards and Jungkook with crossed legs, embracing himself in the way his right hand was secretly touching Taehyung's forearm.

Taehyung moved a bit to be closer, so one of Jungkook's folded legs was resting on his tight in the end.

'Ok, so... unsealing has two levels. You just went through the first one.' Hwasa explained. 'It's a simple unsealing that allows Holder to use the sacred treasure not activating the Sealer's powers. It is useful especially when Sealers are exhausted...'

'And it is also the only way Taboo can work. Because even if sacred treasure can be taken out... there is no way for someone who is not your soulmate to unseal the power of the Sealer...' Siyeon added.

'The second level is deeper...' Bora said. 'Unsealing is the same, with one more thing. The dimension you were in... only you can communicate there. It's like the personal language of soulmates that nobody else can use or understand... So it's enough for a Holder to say the order. You can choose any word for it that you like "unlock", "unseal", "open". These are the words you understand, but in that dimension of soulmates just the thought of it is enough...'

'That's why only you Soulmate can activate the second level of unsealing.' Siyeon added.

'So? Do you want to try? So the Sealers will see the Sacred Treasures?' Hwasa smiled a bit.

'Of course!!' Han said eagerly.

'Ok... stay on the ground. Sit in front of each other. You already know the rest...'

Taehyung turned and sat in front of Jungkook with crossed legs as well. Their knees were touching.

'Is it hurting you?' he asked, stretching his hand.

Jungkook shook his head slowly.

'It is a really comfortable feeling...' he assured Taehyung.

Taehyung felt relieved. For him it was a really warm and pleasant feeling.

It was sweet and trilling at the same time.

Like kissing...

His eyes involuntarily went to Jungkook's lips.

The corner of Jungkook's lips raised a bit with a knowing smile. And Taehyung rolled his eyes, biting his lips from inside to not smile as well.

Sometimes it was hard to share braincells...

'Are you worried about something, Tae?' Bora asked, and Taehyung looked at her with an unfocused expression.

'Nope... Why?'

She pointed at the rest with her head. Taehyung looked there and saw Minho had already taken out Han's sacred treasure and Dami in Yeonjun were in the middle.

'Oh...' he mumbled and took a deep breath.

He looked for a moment in Jungkook's eyes and the galaxy in his eyes embraced him as before.

A minute later he again had the sword in his hand, but this time Jungkook was still sitting, looking at the item in his hand.

'Wow!! It's a spear!?' Yoohyeon said excitedly.

'Can I hold it?' Yeonjun asked, once looking at Hwasa, once at the golden bow in Sobbin's hands.

'You can hold it, but it won't have the power in Your hands...' Hwasa explained.

'What does it do?' Han asked, putting the vambrace on Minho's forearm and tightening the straps. 'It looks normal...'

'That's why it probably isn't normal at all...' Siyeon smiled. 'Mine is similar...'

Bora went to her and pulled Siyeon's sacred treasure out. It was a simple black choker, which Bora placed on her own neck.

Taehyung looked at Jungkook, who was focused on the sword. He placed it on their laps between them.

All the Sealers' skin was a bit shiny with a different glow. Yoohyeon's was like cold

sparkly ice. Yeonjun's was a like warm light. And Han's was a little bit of copper shade.

But Jungkook's skin was normal...

Bora and Hwasa exchanged glances, noticing that too.

Taehyung was calm.

The sword didn't have sparks like the rest of the sacred treasures either.

Nothing is a coincidence...

It was an old saying of *Eadar-eisimeileach...*

Something was different in Jungkook after unsealing. He seemed a bit more... mature to Taehyung. Almost as his inner self Taehyung saw in soulmates' dimension. Taehyung felt as if Jungkook knew so much more than he himself. And instead of feeling anxious he felt so much more excited after he realized this.

'Now... your Sealer will tell you what their power is...' Siyeon said. 'Who wants to start?'

'Me! Because I don't have any idea!' Han said excitedly.

'You are sooo hyped up...' Jimin giggled.

'Why are we glowing?' Yoohyeon asked.

'You will be able to time it with time. It's your power overflowing...' Siyeon explained.

'So Han? What can you do?' Dami asked.

'I honestly don't have any idea...' He said stressed, and brushed his hair back.

Minho took his hand.

'It's ok... you are good at reading people... You will figure this out...'

Han smiled lightly and took a deep breath. He closed his eyes.

Jungkook looked at him, then at the vambrace on Minho's arm. He and Taehyung

exchanged glances.

'Jeeze... don't you play games?' Yoohyeon suddenly giggled, expressing thoughts Tae and Jungkook had. 'It's a vambrace. It's part of the armor. You use it to shield

your arm...'

Han looked at her.

'I have better things to do besides playing you know...' he smirked and winked at Minho. 'Beside I can see that it is protecting the forearm...' he added teasingly.

'Protection.' Jungkook said. 'The key. It's to protect...'

Minho widened his eyes and looked at the vambrace.

It was as if something clicked in Han's mind suddenly. He spread his hands and a wall made of power appeared between them.

He looked at Minho through the transparent wall.

'You can do it too...' he said.

Minho raised his forearm and the shape of a shield appeared between his vambrace.

Suddenly a stick appeared aiming directly at Minho's face. He instinctively made a move to hide behind the shield. But when the stick hit the shield it was burned and its pieces fell like dust on the ground.

All teenagers lifted their heads and saw Dragon sitting on the ground with a second stick he picked up from the ground. He threw it at Han this time and smirked when again the stick disintegrated.

'You started the fun without me?' he asked and heavily stood up. He looked at Han and Minho, smiling. 'We have shielders here...'

'What does that mean?' Yeonjun asked.

'That, the thing you can see them doing right now... it's just a small part of the thing they can do...' Dragon said, he ruffled Han's hair. 'It's enough for the first time. We will do more tomorrow...'

Han nodded and stopped his power. Minho did the same, but when he took off the vambrace, he faltered.

'Easy...' Hwasa said, putting her hand on his arm. 'Using the sacred treasure for the first few times will make you dizzy...'

'Seal it... You will feel better.' Bora instructed, and Dragon went slowly to Soobin.

'Nice bow...' he said. He glanced at Yeonjun and showed both boys to stand up.

'Stand here...' pointing next to Soobin. 'Do you know what your power is?'

'I have some guesses...' Yeonjun replyed.

Dragon nodded and patted Soobin's arm. He pointed at the tree.

'Shoot...'

'But I don't have an arrow...' Soobin looked around as if he could find an arrow laying around casually.

'Imagine you have... Try tightening the bowstring.'

Soobin hesitantly did, and when he had done it an arrow of light appeared.

He let go of the bowstring and the arrow flew through the field setting the tree on fire.

'It's similar to Minji and Hoseok's power...' Siyeon noticed and Bora agreed with her.

Yeonjun moved his hand and painted a sign in the air. The sign stayed there and it was following Yeonjun's hand as if his hand was a magnet.

'Good... You all will have a lot to discover...' Dragon said. 'It's enough for you Soobin...'

Soobin nodded and the bow disappeared from his hands, he pressed it back to Yeonjun's chest and his legs instantly gave away under him.

Yeonjun caught him under his armpits, before he could fall to the ground.

'You always have to catch me...' Soobin whispered.

'And I love it...' Yeonjun giggled.

'Sit down, guys,' Jimin said, helping Yeonjun to sit Soobin down on the ground.

Yoohyeon and Dami were already standing when Dragon moved to them.

'It's pretty simple right?!' Yoohyeon said excitedly. She turned her palms up and ice crystals appeared over it. 'I'm a freaking ice princess!'

'And that makes me...' Dami hit the spear on the grass and the ground under her feet instantly froze. '... and ice queen...'

Jiyoung sighed.

'Teaching you how to fight with a spear will be a pain in the ass...'

'But you love spears, dad...' Siyeon teased him.

'Dami doesn't have to know that...'

'Too late Dragon-ssi...' Dami smirked.

'Yeah, yeah... sit down and seal the treasure...' Jiyoung smiled.

'I feel great, I won't pass out...' Dami shook her head, returned the treasure to where it belonged. She instantly felt her legs became weak and she took few steps back, just to fall into Dragon's arm, who caught her.

'Sure...' he said, shaking his head with pity. 'You feel great...'

Dami pouted when she was seated on the grass, like a child and Yoohyeon glued herself to her side, smiling widely.

'So, what do we have here?' Dragon looked at the sword. 'What is your power, Kookie? Do you know?'

Jungkook looked at Taehyung. He took his hand and closed his eyes. He focused. But he already... knew.

With closed eyes, he lead Taehyung's hand to the crystal that adorned the handle of the sword.

'The... air...' he whispered and the crystal shone with white color like a diamond. And Jungkook's skin responded with a slight glow of the same color.

'That's...' Dragon started, but Jungkook continued.

'Fire...' the crystal changed its tone to red.

Jiyong's eyes got wide.

'Earth...' the crystal behame green. 'Water...' he whispered and the stone changed to blue color.

'Four elements?' Hwasa raised her head to confirm it with Jiyoung.

'There is also... fifth one...' Jungkook frowned. The color of the stone changed and started to glow jade. Like the seed inside Jungkook's soul. Like the light that was overflowing from him right now.

'What is it?' Dragon whispered.

Taehyung looked at Jungkook, who slowly opened his eyes.

'It doesn't have a name that you would understand...' Jungkook said.

'It's the soul stone' Taehyung whispered.

'W-what does it do?' Jimin asked with wide eyes.

Jungkook and Taehyung were looking at each other. Taehyung turned his hand and they intertwined fingers.

'Do you know what it is doing?' Dami nudged them for an answer.

'Everything...' Taehyung whispered.

'What?' Hwasa whispered in shock.

'It's hard to explain...' Jungkook whispered. He shook his head when he started to be dizzy. Taehyung suddenly felt the weakness too. He made the sword disappear before Dragon even said it. His body fell forward and he rested his forehead on Jungkook's chest.

'I... I think it's enough for today...' Jungkook whispered.

'Yeah... I need to... plan the training.' Jiyoung said with still shocked voice.

Jimin kneeled next to them, he rubbed Taehyung's back.

'Tae... are you okay?'

Taehyung nodded.

'M'fine...' he mumbled.

'Umm... we should prepare dinner I guess...' Siyeon said, but her eyes couldn't stop traveling to Taehyung and Jungkook.

'You have a lot to digest...' Bora said, trying to lose the tension that suddenly fell. 'All of you... so we will let you go tonight and call you when it will be ready...'

'It will be good if you manage to take a nap now... you will feel much better.' Siyeon suggested.

'No need to tell me twice!' Soobin said and he and the rest went to the dormitory.

Jungkook stood up and helped Taehyung.

'How was it?' Jimin asked.

'It's... amazing...' Taehyung said.

Jimin smiled but there was a bit of sadness in his eyes.

'It for sure looks amazing... And you can use all four elements! Wow!'

'Jimin...' Jungkook said suddenly. 'Tomorrow... choose two katanas...'

'What?' Jimin blinked surprised. 'What are you talking about?'

Jungkook squeezed Jimin's arm.

'Trust me. Two katanas.'

'Ummm.... fine? I guess...?' Jimin shook his head, not understanding, but in the end he shrugged. 'I will check on the others...'

When they were left alone, Taehyung looked at Jungkook.

'Why did you say that to him?'

'I can see them...' Jungkook whispered. 'When you unselead my power... I can see the shape of treasures inside them... even when they are sealed...'

Taehyung hand caressed Jungkook's arm, and slowly slid down, to rest in the curve of his waist.

'There is something more...'

'There is... but... I have the feeling... that we should leave it for now...'

Taehyung nodded and leaned to kiss Jungkook's forehead.

'They think it's strange... not normal...' Jungkook whispered anxiously.

'Nothing is a coincidence...' Taehyung whispered, repeating what he said during the first unsealing. 'We are totally different, baby...'

Jungkook nodded and buried himself in Taehyung's arm.

They were different...

Because they were the two who found their destiny

... centuries ago.

---

Hello, as I promised I'm dropping some pictures. They are from anime that is called "Guilty Crown". The plot there i totally different, but the treasures they can use are called void and they are made by some kind of virus inside humans body. And there is just one person that can take out the void from anybody, because of the other virus he was shot with.

The moment of unsealing was inspired by it. If someone watched it, it will be easier to imagine this.

BlairWitch

# Chapter 22: Nothing is a coincidence

**Mountain House, June 2065**

'Minji?! What happened?! Are you okay?!' Jiyoung jumped on the bed, picking up the call from Minji.

'Oh? Did we wake you up dad?' Minji said with a sorry tone.

'It's midnight. Yes you did... Jiyoung sighed. 'How are you?'

'Tired... we all are... but fine. The situation for now got slightly better... I will put you on the speaker okay?'

'Mhm...' the whole squad of Red Alert greeted Jiyoung.

'Sorry, dad... We are curious...' Hoseok apologized.

'We tried to call Siyeon and Bora first but they are not picking up... these bishes...' Minji gritted her teeth. 'I will break their bones when I come back...'

'I don't have the strength to scold you...' Jiyoung said tiredly.

'So? How are they?' Jin asked.

Jiyoung got up off the bed and went to the window to not wake Hwasa while talking. He started to talk about all the kids and their powers. He described Yoohyeon and Dami, Yeonjun and Soobin and Minho and Han... But he stopped when he reached Tae and Kook.

'Guys... I honestly... I don't know what to think...' he said. 'I don't know how to help them... For a moment I felt as if they knew and understood more than me...'

'Is there power connected to nature? We once saw a glimpse of it...' Namjoon asked.

'Connected to nature? By all means... yes. But that is a huge understatement too...'

'Don't beat around the bush! What's their power?' Minji scolded her father.

'Water...'

'Oh? That's...'

'Earth... Fire... Air.' Dragon continued.

'Four elements?! Like... all four!? How?!' Hoseok asked.

'We knew they would be extraordinary...' Namjoon let out a long breath to calm himself down.

'Extraordinary?' Jiyoung snorted. 'Does the fifth element still count as JUST extraordinary?'

'Fifth element? What's that?' Hoseok asked.

'Their fifth power... They said they can't explain what it does. Just said it can do *everything*...'

'M-maybe they don't understand it?' Jin suggested hesitantly.

'Ooooh, believe me... they do! They just don't know how to explain it...' Dragon said ironically.

'Or they don't want to...' Namjoon said deep in his thoughts.

'Joon... they are not like that. They are our kind kids...' Hoseok disagreed.

'No... I think Namjoon is right...' Jiyoung said. 'Every couple of soulmates has something that only they can share. If they can't explain it... they will show it to us sooner or later. But I don't have any idea how to train them...'

'Normally.' Jin said fastly. 'Taehyung will instantly notice if you treat them differently...'

'And if it affects Kookie in any way... he will go into protective, distrustful mode that it will be hard for you to turn off.' Minji agreed.

'And Jungkookie will be affected and anxious, feeling that you are weirded out by their powers...' Hoseok added.

'You will do your best not doing anything extra...' Namjoon agreed.

'You all really know how to deal with them...' Jiyoung sighed.

'We have 15 years of practice...' Jin said calmingly.

'Treat them totally normally. You can't do anything else. The rest they will figure by themselves. As always...' Hoseok comforted him as well.

'As only they can do it.' Minji said.

'Okay I agree when it comes to them that is the best I can do... But don't you see something looking at the bigger picture?' Jiyoung asked.

'What?' Namjoon asked.

'When I trained you... you were older than them, but the six of you came here at the same time... to form the perfect rescue squad. One pair for protection. One pair for healing. One pair for communication. But look at them... look at their powers. Sword. Spear. Bow. Vambrace... Three are offensive weapons. One is a shielding power... And I bet Jimin's is either a weapon or a shield too.'

'What are you suggesting...' Namjoon asked silently.

'They are the perfect strike unit...' Minji understood instantly.

'What? Why? They are just soulmates with great power...' Jin denied.

'Yeah... there are a lot of people that have powers like that...' Hoseok backed him up.

'But usually they are not a united group of friends, right? Meeting early in their lives... Knowing each other well...' Jiyoung pointed out.

'It's just a...' Hoseok started.

'Coincidence?' Dragon disturbed him.

The silence fell on the other side of the line.

*Eadar-eisimeileach* didn't believe in chance events...

'Nothing is a coincidence...' Namjoon whispered.

Jiyoung looked at the night sky covered in stars.

'Something big is coming...'

Taehyung sneaked out of the dormitory after midnight. He put on his hood and zipped his hoodie.

He quietly closed the glass door behind himself.

He slowly moved through the garden, close to the house walls.

'I knew you wouldn't just calmingly agree for Jungkook to sleep away from you...'

An unexpected voice, coming from the darkness, made him jump a few inches in the air.

He squinted his eyes when he saw a lonely figure sitting on the bench.

'Chim...' he sighed with relief. He sat next to Jimin, and tilted his head to look at his friend. 'Are you okay?

'Yeah...' Jimin said, flipping his phone in his hand.

'Mhm... What I can see... is totally not okay Chimchim...'

Jimin hit his arm.

'Just let me drown in self-pity!'

'Why would I? Your soulmate is out there...even if he or she is not here now... The moment when you will meet... will be for sure epic...' Taehyung smiled at Jimin with a kind, comforting smile.

'How do you know that?' Jimin shook his head with a heavy sigh and hopeless expression.

'Because you are amazing Jimin. And your soulmate is for sure too...'

Jimin leaned his head on Taehyung's shoulder.

'I just... hate to be in the state when I can't snap out of this sadness...' he whispered. ' I feel like everybody is seeing this and pity me...'

'Because you are always the one who is pulling all of us... always forward. You have this incredible power to lift us up with your small hands...'

'The "small hands" weren't necessary, jerk!'

'But they are cute! Look at this little, fluffy pinky! I wanna have the little figurine made out of it!!' Taehyung started to play with Jimin's fingers, saying with his baby voice.

'SHUT! UP!' Jimin giggling started to hit Taehyung's arm rapidly.

'That's the face I love...' Taehyung gave him a flick on the nose. 'But it's okay to be sad, Jimin... We will embrace everything... your cheerfulness, your sadness... every part of you is precious to us. So don't try to hide it...'

'I will throw up... stop being cheesy!' Jimin looked at his lap. 'Go spoil your boyfriend instead!'

'Well, I'm going too... but remember... your soulmate... will have to go through us before we will decide to give you to him.' Taehyung winked.

'Yaa! Just leave the poor person alone!' Jimin stretched his leg to kick Taehyung in the shins.

'Already protective?' Taehyung smirked. 'I will have one on one with him or her... or send Jungkook.'

'Why do you want to beat up my soulmate before they even show up, huh?' Jimin whined.

'To make sure my best friend is in good hands...'

'I won't be in any hands if you would kill them!'

'Okay, okay...' Taehyung laughed. 'I will be gentle... No promises about Kook, tho...'

'That's what I'm worried about!'

Taehyung hugged Jimin's shoulder.

'Don't sulk alone, Chim...'

'I won't! Now I'm fucking worried!'

'Don't... Your soulmate is already part of the squad. Maybe a bit... bruised part... but still a part...'

Jimin squinted his eyes and pushed Taehyung off the bench.

'Get lost!'

Taehyung got up from the ground and took off his hoodie, he threw it at Jimin's head.

'Get in before you get cold...' he ordered sternly before jogging away to the back doors of the house.

'Alien...' Jimin mumbled, shaking his head, while putting on the hoodie.

Then the unexpected sound of vibration of his phone straddled him and his phone fell to the ground. The notification box showed a messege:

**SUGA:...**

**SUGA:... Hi...**

Jimin's eyes widened.

**Daegu, June 2065**

It was late when Yoongi finally fell onto his bed.

The things that were happening in his birth city were crazy and he was deadly tired after two days of constant patrols on the street.

He just wanted to sleep.

His life was just a sequence of repeating days. Each day he was getting up. Seeing his mother's numb state. Checking on his sister's fucked up youth in closed house, under guards. Wearing a combat uniform. Loading his guns. Taking the knives and heading on the streets to watch what he can do with Wooyoung and San.

And there was a lot to do...

The Protectors of Normality were sick bastards, good at hiding. They didn't even care who they were attacking. Their attacks were mainly focused on Interdependants, but if ordinary people were around - they didn't care.

Yoongi sighed, burying his face in the pillow. Thinking about taking a shower before falling asleep was hurting him mentally at this point.

He heard knocking and didn't even bother to answer. The handle moved a few times, but whoever was behind them, they gave up...

Or that's what Yoongi thought...

After few minutes of peace and quiet, his window opened and Sand with Wooyoung casually flew through it like a fucking Peter Pan...

'We went to Gahyeon to give her good night cuddles and she said we should check on you, because you are an unsociable grumpy cat...' Wooyoung informed cheerfully, and put a bottle of soju on Yoongi's desk.

'Unsociable means I don't like people and prefer to stay this way...' Yoongi mumbled in the pillow.

'Good you have us then, Grumpy Cat...' San poured the liquor into little cups.

'I regret letting you stay here...' he sighed, lifting himself up.

'Well, it was Gahy who let us stay and she for sure is happy about it...' Wooyoung teased him and handed him a cup.

That was true. No matter how Yoongi loved his sister... he wasn't a warm, open type. And Woosan being the clingy crackheads they were, made her smile and cheerful. They were joking with her, lifting her mood, playing cards with her, and having meals with her. The quiet, big house got more lively with them around.

'You are a cold bastard... but we still like you...' San said.

'More like, you are our kitty cat and we will play with you even if you hiss, scratch and bite on a daily basis...' Wooyoung corrected him.

'Fuck you...' Yoongi mumbled, drinking the alkohol.

'Thanks, but I have San for it...' Woo answered and Yoongi spit out what he just drunk.

'Shut the fuck up! I don't want to know that!'

'We have a free day tomorrow... For the first time in a month! We can get drunk in peace...' San sighed.

'Can't you get drunk without me?' Yoongi rolled his eyes.

'Where is the fun in that?' Wooyoung blinked, storming Yoongi's bed. 'Sooo? Who were you before this shit happened?'

Yoongi glared at him and drank another cup of soju.

'If you think you can get out a tearful story from me after getting me drunk, fuck of... Not going to happen.'

'I meant something like: I planned to be a gardener... but sure if you want to open up...'

'I don't!'

'Well, me and San met on a dancing course... We actually planned to join the Dancing Academy in Seoul...'

'Yeah, me too...' Yoongi mumbled, remembering himself from another life.

'You dance!?' San was shocked.

'No, dumbshit... I planned to go to Seoul... I got an acceptance letter from University...'

'What course?' San asked curiously.

'Sound engineering... Music...' Yoongi shrugged.

'That is... unexpected...' San frowned. 'Though more like... I don't know... Law? Medicine? Finances? You know, one of those fancy courses for rich kids...'

Yoongi snorted and shook his head.

Wooyoung gasped.

'Don't tell me! This one sacred, closed door at the end of the corridor on the third floor! The one with three locks and code lock! The one that Gahyeon said is forbidden for everyone... Is that...?'

'A music room? Yeah...' Yoongi nodded, drinking another cup.

'Dude... why?' San asked. 'We've never seen you going there...'

'Because I don't go there anymore...' Yoongi shrugged.

'But you should! All of us need something normal that keeps us sane in this dumpster fire of a city!'

'Well, I don't...' Yoongi answered coldly. 'I ain't sulky bishes like you...'

San and Wooyoung looked at each other, concerned.

'Yoongs... it will end someday... what will you do with your life when it happens?' San said quietly.

Yoongi snorted bitterly.

'Stop being moody jerks... Because right now we both are grumpy, not me...'

Wooyoung gave up, letting him be for now.

They drank the bottle of soju before midnight.

'You should get going...' San said, lying on the floor with his legs on the wall.

'You should...' Yoongi said tiredly, sitting on the bed and resting his back on the headboard, with closed eyes.

'One more song...' Wooyoyng was lying next to him, invading Yoongi's spotify

playlist and his personal space.

'Last one and get the hell out of here...' Yoongi said, throwing Wooyoung's head from his lap. 'And could you go be clingy to your boyfriend, dude?'

'Well I will have the whole night for that...' Wooyoung bit back and finally chose the song but suddenly the sudden vibration made the phone fall from his hands on his face.

He blinked, looking at the notification that caused the vibration.

**CHIMISLOVE: Hey, hyung... been a while right? Are you even alive?**

'Who the fuck is CHIM?!' he asked, jumping from the bed excitedly and looking at Yoongi with star eyes.

'Who?' Yoongi opened his eyes tiredly.

'CHIM! And why is he calling you "hyung"?!'

'Kinky...' San mumbled from the floor.

Yoongi's eyes widened in realization and he jumped on his feet, trying to snach his phone from Woo's hands.

Wooyoung started to run through the room, jumping over San, chased by Yoongi.

'Should I text him that You missed him?'

'What the fuck?! Don't you dare!'

'Then tell me who he is...'

'A guy from the internet I haven't talked to for more than a year!'

'Cold bastard...' Wooyoung shook his head in pity.

'Give it back!'

'So, is he your friend?' he asked.

'No. I talked with him a few times about random things in one app... That's it...' Yoongi said.

San lifted his back and sat on the floor, frowning.

'My whole life is a lie... You don't look like a guy who is a social butterfly on social media talking with random people...'

'Because I don't!'

'You did with him...' Wooyoung smirked.

'Exception proving the rule!' Yoongi snatched the phone from Wooyoung.

Wooyoung and San exchanged knowing glances.

'Exception you say... So he is the only one?'

'Yes.' Yoongi gritted his teeth.

'A random guy that showed up out of nowhere... And you decided to talk with him... Even though you never do?' San summed up.

'Yeah...'

'Okay...' Wooyoung mumbled meekly and helped San to get up from the floor.

Yoongi sighed, relieved they let go of the topic.

The least he knew... they didn't...

They went to the doors and Wooyoung casually turned around and said, pointing at Yoongi's phone:

'Oh... and say greetings from us...'

'To your soulmate...' San smirked.

'Why the fuck would I say...' Yoongi's eyes widened. 'What bullshit are you saying?! Your brains are really fucking made out of cabbage!'

'Apparently they work better than yours...' Wooyoung grinned teasingly.

'Yeah? And how did you come up with this BRILLIANT idea? Random dude. Few random talks. I don't even know his name!'

'A guy who doesn't like to talk to anybody. Online or offline.' Wooyoung showed a finger, starting to count.

'Deciding to talk with a guy that, as you said, showed up randomly...' San added, and Wooyoung showed the second finger.

'With anybody else we wouldn't even notice... But you are you, Yoongs... You don't

do shit like that. Yet you did. More than once...'

Yoongi rolled his eyes.

'Well, I'm not a mute...'

'You almost are, tho...' Wooyoung said, thinking about it.

'You are delusional...'

'As you said it is an exception confirming the rule...' San said. 'You know how else you can call it? A fucking FATE!'

'It's not fate! It's a simple coin-...' Yoongi looked at the phone in his hand and ended up whispering: '...-cidence...'

San raised his eyebrow.

'Nothing is a coincidence... Not for *Eadar-eisimeileach...'*

Wooyoung opened the door and, satisfied that they proved their point, Woosan left Yoongi's bedroom.

Yoongi sat heavily on the bed, looking at the phone in his hands.

'Idiots...' he mumbled under his nose. 'That can't be true...'

*What if it is?* a quiet voice asked in his head.

Bullshit...

Yoongi shook his head and decided to uninstall the fucking useless app, he didn't use for more then a year. The last time he actually saw anything from that app, was when he...

Yoongi felt a sting in his heart before it started to speed up its pace.

The night. Whisky. Cigarettes. The car... His 18th birthday...

With slightly trembling fingers he opened the chat in the app that he didn't open back then. He just saw the notification...

*You never walk alone...*

The words that actually saved him, before he hit the road side... The message that came just in time...

He bent in half and pressed his forehead to the phone.

A slow faith started to burn inside him... Because it was too much of a coincidence this time.

He lifted his head and greedily read all their previous chats. Until he reached the new message. A small smile crawled on his lips, when he read the sassy replies... when he saw the overuse of emojis... when he read intelligent, wise words... the point of view so similar to his own...

He felt terribly scared when he felt something soft blooming inside his stomach...

He recollected the lyrics he wrote inspired by the angelic voice he heard on the night of Samhain. The lyrics that led to private talks with Chim.

The blue mold the boy mentioned... That meant a penicillin for Yoongi's who was used to using figurative meaning...

And penicillin was a remedy.

He closed his eyes too overwhelmed.

He couldn't be sure... He couldn't expose himself with his life being a total mess...

But could he... just a little... dive inside this warmth? The warmth of the thought... that there was someone out there... made for him. Designed for him...

He looked at the last question: *Are you even alive?*

Was he?

He wasn't so sure...

But right now, with a heart pumping blood crazily fast...

Yoongi's fingers were shaking, when he typed:

**SUGA:...**

**SUGA:... Hi...**

**SUGA: I'm alive.**

**Mountain House, same night**

Taehyung sneaked into the attic, through the quiet house, grimacing at every sound the wooden floors made under his feet.

He looked through the dark place filled with unused furniture, boxes, wall paint cans, Hwasa's easels, clothes that were hanging here and there.

He squinted his eyes and noticed the window and the bed placed under it, that was lightened by the soft moonlight.

It seemed Jungkook cleaned the space around it before going to sleep...

There was a sudden move on the bed and the sound of match lightening up was heard, before Jungkook, lightened up a candle inside the lantern, placed on the box next to the bed.

A dimmed light dispearced the darkness enough for Taehyung to notice Jungkook's eyes traveled to him. The younger one lifted his eyebrow.

'Couldn't you stay away from the dust and this steamy air?' he asked, whispering.

'No.' Taehyung answered shortly and walked to Jungkook, who got up from the bed and shaking his head, went to his bag.

He fetched the bottle of bodybalm from it and went to Taehyung.

'Moisture your skin if you want to stay here...' he demanded, stretching his hand with the balm.

Taehyung knew that his skin would be just fine even after one night in the attic, but he was in a strange mood after this day. Maybe because Jungkook seemed so mature today... Maybe because he himself felt as if he wasn't 17 year old, but 17-thousands years old...

Or maybe because he touched Jungkook's soul... he had this unfading need to feel the physical touch as well.

'Fine...' Taehyung whispered slowly, and took off his t-shirt. '... but you need to help me.'

Jungkook's eyes widened when Taehyung stood in front of him with a bare chest.

It wasn't the first time he was seeing Taehyung like that... But it was different as

he did it on purpose this time.

He gulped and nodded with a deep blush on his cheeks. He felt an excitement building up inside him.

He poured a bit of white liquid on his hand and lifted it hesitantly not knowing where to start.

Taehyung embraced his wrist gently and pressed his hand to his chest.

'It's okay... I touched something more than just your skin today...'

Jungkook felt the strong heartbeat under his hand and smiled a bit, satisfied feeling it wasn't so even right now. He started spreading the lotion over the slightly toned skin.

'You did...' he confirmed with a smirk. 'Getting bold, aren't you? Calling me *baby* out of nowhere...'

It was time for Taehyung to blush.

'W-well... as you agreed to it being a simp for rewards... I assumed I could...'

'I'm not complaining, angel...' Jungkook gigled, reaching with his hands to Taehyung's lower stomach and feeling how the other's muscles instantly tensed up.

Taehyung's hands slowly rested on Jungkook's hips, when Jungkook was focused on rubbing the lotion on his sides.

'I expect to be rewarded after being so nice to you...' Jungkook teased, while his hands slid through Taehyung's skin up to his shoulders and arms.

His words could be light but the way he was avoiding Taehyung's gaze, was telling how affected he actually was.

He made a move with his finger to make Taehyung turn around. He put the lotion on Taehyung's back making slow circles with his hands. Reaching to Taehyung's nape and neck with a soft, relaxing touch.

Taehyung tilted his head and closed his eyes. He opened them slowly, feeling how Jungkook's hands slowly slid down through his back, both sides and stopped on his stomach, embracing him from behind.

Jungkook back hugging him, pressed his cheek to Taehyung's back.

'I finished... Where is my reward? It should be extra, you know?' he whispered, trying to hide his smile. The spoiling-reward game was like their secret code...

Taehyung grinned amused, turning around to face him, while saying:

'Sometimes I wonder, are you really 15...?'

The change on Jungkook's face was enough to inform him how unfortunately he used his words. From the soft smile and hopeful eyes to lips parted in disappointment and dull gaze.

'Oh... I forgot that's a problem...' Jungkook said bitterly, turning around.

Taehyung grabbed his elbow.

'It's not! I swear it is not... I just spilled a stupid word, Koo. You don't have to be affected by it every fucking time!'

Jungkook looked at him in disbelief and threw a t-shirt at him.

'Put it on before You start to think it scares me...' he said sarcastically. 'Apparently my eyes are too innocent for it.'

'You are unbelievable!' Taehyung huffed in irritation, putting the shirt on. 'I'm older, yes! Does it matter? Sometimes it does! Because I don't want to cross the line I shouldn't cross yet!'

'And have you ever thought that I will tell you if you will be near the line I don't want you to cross, you absolute moron?!' Jungkook whispered-yelling, breathing heavily. 'Do we always need to go at your pace!? Just because you think it's proper!?'

Jungkook squeezed his nose with his fingers when Taehyung stayed silent, shocked by his outburst.

'If you don't feel comfortable, that's fine, but fucking tell me simply! Because I feel like a complete idiot, wanting something You don't want to give me...'

'What are you talking about?' Taehyung asked with a dark tone and frowned. 'Am I stopping you? Am I pushing you away? I am not!'

Jungkook shook his head with a bitter smile, looking at the ceiling.

'No, you are not...' he agreed. 'You are not stopping ME. You are not pushing ME away. But you are not pulling me either. It's always me... I ask and you give... You are hugging me when **I** want it. You are kissing me when **I** want it... It's not only about me, Taehyung. You are stopping yourself. Each fucking time. Unless you are mad or sad or your need to comfort me is greater than your moral code...'

Jungkook covered his face with his hands and whispered.

'I feel like I'm forcing you...'

Taehyung's eyes widened in sudden anger. He clenched his teeth, before speaking:

'You should be in my skin sometimes, Jungkook... to know how it feels...' he made a slow step forward. 'You think I'm stopping myself? You are right... I'm stopping myself because you are not fucking ready for what I want do to you...' Another step. 'I restrain myself to not hug you each fucking second, that's how much I want to feel your body.' Another step. 'The kisses? You are not forcing me... I restrain myself to not push my tongue inside your throat.' he said harshly, standing in front of Jungkook with angered eyes. 'You don't know that side of me...'

Jungkook lifted his head challengingly, his eyes got dark as well. He replied firmly with an experience of a thousand lifetimes:

'Don't I?'

Taehyung's lips parted.

Jungkook grabbed the front of Taehyung's shirt and pulled him forward, speaking harshly:

'I'm 15. But I don't feel like I am. I never felt my age... And the side you are talking about? It's inside me too. I'm just not as responsible as you... and for sure, because I am a spoiled brat, I'm not as good at restraining myself!'

'Not spoiled enough today it seems, as you keep whining...' Taehyung murmured teasingly, just before pressing his lips to Jungkook's mouth fiercely.

He grabbed him in half, closing his arm around Jungkook's slim waist. He bit the full lower lip and when Jungkook parted his lips surprised, he slid his tongue inside.

It was an unskilled, sloppy, a bit hesitant kiss. So hot, their uneasiness flew away.

When their tongues touched, a soft, baffled moan escaped from two throats.

Taehyung stepped back, pulling Jungkook with him, not letting go even for an inch. Not stopping the moves of his lips. He sat on the edge of the bed and Jungkook instantly climbed on his lap, straddling him with his thighs, while his arms embraced his neck.

The kiss became slow, soft, more thoughtful. Full of curiosity... They were exploring each others' mouths looking for spots that were bringing more pleasure. Taehyung's hands were stroking Jungkook's back calmingly up and down.

They didn't know yet how to breathe during the kiss, so they had to part their lips,

when their minds became dizzy.

They were breathing heavily with closed eyes. Pressing their foreheads together.

Both a bit shaken after the fight and the kiss.

Taehyung brushed his lips on Jungkook's.

'I can't promise you won't have to repeat this to me again...' he whispered. 'But if you want to make me a clingy, possessive motherfucker you are on the right track...'

'Aren't you already?' Jungkook said giggling quietly, making Taehyung laugh.

When the laughter died down and Taehyung's soft fingers started to stroke Jungkook's nape, making him sleepy, the younger one pressed himself more to Taehyung's steady, warm body.

'I can't promise I won't feel insecure about my age again...' he whispered in return. 'But if you want to make me a needy, territorial bish... well, you just need to take off your shirt...'

'Aren't you already a needy, territorial, spoiled bish?' Taehyung chuckled.

'I am...' Jungkook nodded, and bit Taehyung's shoulder. 'But I'm also hot, aren't I?'

'And now you want praises, too?' Taehyung cooed, amused.

Jungkook pouted a bit, almost falling asleep on Taehyung's chest.

'Nah... I was spoiled enough...' he mumbled, satisfied.

Taehyung moved, pulling Jungkook under the blanket. They make themselves comfortable laying face to face and sharing the small space of the bed.

Jungkook had already closed his eyes, dozing off, so he didn't know Taehyung was looking at him. The older brushed the light brown bangs from the younger forehead, and stroked his cheek tenderly.

'You are beautiful...' he whispered.

Taehyung leaned to kiss Jungkook's forehead.

'You were beautiful in all of our lifetimes...'

---

Enjoy the anger and the fluff...

BlairWitch

# Chapter 23: Flame and Lightening

**Mountain House, June 2065**

Jimin was looking at his phone and at the unexpected message. When he texted half an hour ago he didn't expect to get an answer. He was just sulky and sad, pressing random apps to get his mind off depressing thoughts.

**SUGA: I'm alive…**

What should he reply now?

**CHIMISLOVE: Sorry, hyung…**

**CHIMISLOVE: I didn't intend to bother you□□…**

**SUGA: It's been a year, right?**

**CHIMISLOVE: A fucked up year… yeah…**

**SUGA: Same.**

Jimin was wondering what he should say now… The chat seemed dry. And that guy was never talkative… He started to type a goodnight message, not wanting to prolong the awkwardness, when the unexpected happened.

A new text…

**SUGA: You seem down… Something happened?**

Jimin was looking at the text feeling a warmth growing inside. It's not like there were no people around that could easily say when something was wrong with him. But they saw him. And this guy just asked after reading like 3 sentences. As if he was really concerned…

He smirked to himself before replying:

**CHIMISLOVE: You seem soft… Something happened?** 😏

**SUGA: Fuck you!**

**CHIMISLOVE: That's more like you!** 😁

**CHIMISLOVE: I started to be worried that someone stole your phone** 😱**…**

**SUGA: Yeah… two crackheads… but I got it back…**

**CHIMISLOVE: Friends?**

**SUGA: More like leeches…**

**CHIMISLOVE: Oh! So the Best Friends then!** 😠😠

**SUGA: No! They came out of nowhere to make my life miserable!**

**CHIMISLOVE: The thing about friends is that…**

**CHIMISLOVE: It doesn't matter where or when they came from…**

**CHIMISLOVE: What matters is… they stayed…**

Jimin expected another annoyed, savage answer, but it didn't come. He started fidgeting with his fingers over the screen nervously. He was about to type something silly to brush off the topic, when Suga replied:

**SUGA: You seem more mature… Had something happened?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Nope. It's just that it's late and night thoughts are different…** 😔

**SUGA: True.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Hey! Don't be so nice to me!**□□

**SUGA: Why?**

**CHIMISLOVE: What if I fall in love and start to stalk you?** 😏

**SUGA: …**

**SUGA: I have a feeling you would be an annoying stalker…**

**SUGA: … but funny one. Not the crazy bitch type…**

**CHIMISLOVE: Are you sure about that?** 😏😏😏😏😏😏

**SUGA: Not at all…**

**CHIMISLOVE: Good.** 😠😠

**SUGA: …**

**SUGA: Say…**

**SUGA: Can I ask you a personal question?**

Jimin raised his eyebrows, surprised.

**CHIMISLOVE: Weren't you the one, who set the "no personal details" rule?**

**SUGA: Okay. So I will say something and you will just say "yes" or "no".**

**SUGA: How about that?**

**CHIMISLOVE: You really seem different...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Okay... but there is a condition. You will show me the lyrics we were talking about earlier. 😊😊**

**SUGA: It's not finished...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Why? It was almost ready.**

There was a long break until the next text came.

**SUGA: I gave up on it...**

Jimin frowned.

**CHIMISLOVE: Okay... So I have two conditions. You will finish it. And you will show me.**

**SUGA: Demanding much...**

**SUGA: I don't know if it's worth it, you know?**

**SUGA: But I will agree if you answer one question and confirm one statement...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Fine. Hit me! 😊**

**SUGA: The statement is: You are a Sealer.**

Jimin widened his eyes. He gulped feeling his heart picked up its pace.

**CHIMISLOVE: How do you know that?! 😳😱😐😐**

**SUGA: Yes or no.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Yes...**

Jimin hesitantly typed the confirmation. There was no reaction from the other side...

His hands were suddenly sweaty. Was it this type of crazy non-interdependent person, who hated interdependents? If so... fuck him!

**CHIMISLOVE: Is that a problem?** □

**SUGA: No. Not at all...**

Why did this answer seem so soft? The sudden rage flew away from Jimin's tensed body as soon as it appeared.

**CHIMISLOVE: So? What's the question?**

**SUGA: Have you met your soulmate already?**

A bitter smile showed on Jimin's lips.

**CHIMISLOVE: No. I haven't...**

**CHIMISLOVE: So I assume you are one of Interdependents too...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Not that it changed a thing...**

**SUGA: Aren't you curious? Have I met my soulmate?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Well, I'm surrounded by couples on a daily basis, so it wouldn't be a surprise to me...** ¯_(ツ)_/¯

**CHIMISLOVE: But I didn't ask, because of the no personal rule.**

**CHIMISLOVE: We just made a deal to break it.**

**SUGA: Yeah... You really are something.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Did you want me to ask?** 😏😏

**SUGA: I don't want you to ask other questions later...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Okay...** 😒😒

Jimin shrugged. This guy was the most secretive person he had ever met...

**SUGA: I don't have a soulmate...**

**SUGA: But I heard his voice... once... on Samhain night.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Wow... so you know he is somewhere out there. And that it is "he".**

**CHIMISLOVE: You will meet sooner or later...**

**SUGA: Did you... ever felt something connected to your... soulmate?**

**CHIMISLOVE: I did.**

**SUGA: What?**

**CHIMISLOVE: I've never told anybody about it...**

**SUGA: Why?**

**CHIMISLOVE: It was too personal... to explain it... □□**

**SUGA: Sometimes it is easier to explain what we feel by writing...**

**CHIMISLOVE: That is why you are writing such meanigful lyrics?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Then why did you stop?**

**SUGA: I... there was too much inside me to explain...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Well, it will always be "too much" if you won't slowly start to let go of some parts...**

**SUGA: Another deal?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Why not? Not that I have any things to do at 3 am...**

**SUGA: So what do you want for answering to that question?**

**CHIMISLOVE: I want you to write again...**

Hundreds of miles away in Daegu, sitting on his bed with his phone in hands, Min Yoongi felt as if his heart was trying to get away through his throat.

He had been a mess since he started this conversation. He didn't know what he wanted to do, say... Why did he suddenly want to know so much? He asked some things to confirm his thoughts. And every word of Chim was like wrapping a red thread around his heart, pulling it mercilessly.

He hadn't felt so much since a year ago. He didn't want to feel, but he couldn't stop this flow. He couldn't be even sure if it was what he thought it was...

That Chim was actually his soulmate. That's why he wanted to ask just one more question...

But he didn't expect...

**CHIMISLOVE: I want you to write again...**

He was sure he would hear something that would stretch the "personal rule" to maximum. Like "tell me your name", "tell me your birthday date" or something like that. A knowledge that Chim would gain something out of.

Not something so utterly selfless...

Is that how fate was working? Is that how having a soulmate felt like?

Yoongi would not go to the music room on his own. He wouldn't even think about writing again... But now, even before realizing, he promised to finish the lyrics... and he was about to... make another deal.

Because he wanted to know... what and when... Chim felt. Because if it would be connected even a bit to some event in Yoongi's life... it would be a proof, Yoongi needed.

But was he able to write again?

**SUGA: Will it be okay... if I say I will try?**

**CHIMISLOVE: By trying you mean sit your butt down with a pen in hand? Or "thinking about writing"? 😒**

Admiring the clever way of thinking, Yoongi answered sincerely:

**SUGA: Sit with pen.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Then okay. We have a deal.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Ugh! It's hard to say... Because it was just feelings... More than a year ago. I think it was the beginning of March. New semester is starting...**

Yoongi gulped and squeezed his phone.

**CHIMISLOVE: I was... repeating material in my room... When... It's really hard to explain, you know...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Tears appeared suddenly. I felt as if my words collapsed. Everything became dark. I was falling...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I was perfectly fine. But I felt I wasn't okay. As if nothing was**

**okay and never would be okay...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Then it all passed. As if every feeling was shut down...**

**CHIMISLOVE: It was the worst. Because nothing came after... And it scared me to the bone...**

Yoongi was holding his breath. He bit his lips hard in utter shock how well it described the time and feelings from the time his world collapsed. He started to breathe deeply, not wanting to go back to this dark void he was slowly crawling back from.

But this time... there was a light at the top of that void. The light he could follow...

**CHIMISLOVE: It was the only time...**

**CHIMISLOVE: So... when my friends are saying... I will meet my soulmate sooner or later...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I smile. I lie... I agree... but in fact... I doubt it... I think I lost her or him at that time...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I think I won't meet him or her...**

Yoongi's face twisted in misery. He couldn't tell him, no matter how much he wanted to comfort Chim. He still had to avenge his father. His sister was still underaged. His mother was mentally unstable. He lived in a city at war, and nobody could predict its future. Dragging an innocent soul in all of this...

No... he wouldn't ever do something like that to anybody... especially not to his soulmate.

Because apparently... he already found him.

So he typed:

**SUGA: You will meet him.**

**CHIMISLOVE: You are just talking like my friends...**

**SUGA: No. If he would be death, you would have the symptoms of Separation Syndrome... Not the hard symptoms like connected soulmates. But you would have some of it... Feeling as if half of you is gone. Do you feel like it?**

**CHIMISLOVE: No...**

**CHIMISLOVE: OMG! You are right, hyung!!** 😁😁

**SUGA: See? No need to be sad...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I haven't said I was sad... 😒**

**CHIMISLOVE: Aren't you the sweetest? □□**

Yoongi blushed.

**SUGA: SHUT. UP! AM THE FUCK NOT!**

**CHIMISLOVE: UwU (◡ ω ◡)**

**SUGA: STOP IT!**

**CHIMISLOVE: I wanna hug you so much! (づ。◕□□◕。)づ**

**SUGA: Keep your limbs away from me...**

**CHIMISLOVE: How do you know I would go for a jump hug? Amazing...**

**SUGA: Your soulmate will for sure catch you, so go after him and keep me away from it...**

**CHIMISLOVE: And why do you say "he"? It can be a girl you know...**

*Fuck! Fuck! Fuck!* Yoongi panicked. *This guy was so sharp! What to say!? What to say?*

**SUGA: Well I'm just too lazy to type he or she each time.... Beside...would you jump on a girl?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Good point...**

**SUGA: I'm going to sleep. It's my hobby...**

**CHIMISLOVE: You are spoiling me with personal details?! 😱**

**SUGA: Yeah, feel honored.**

**CHIMISLOVE: I'am!**

**SUGA: Go to sleep too. Not sulking anymore...**

**CHIMISLOVE: So caring! I will really fall in love... □**

**SUGA: I feel warned.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Not funny... 😒**

**CHIMISLOVE: Sleep well, hyung…**

**SUGA: Stop typing! Go to sleep!**

**CHIMISLOVE: I feel loved… □**

**SUGA: I'm going!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Dream about me… 😘**

**SUGA: FUCK YOU!**

**CHIMISLOVE: About that too… 😊😊**

**SUGA: …**

**CHIMISLOVE: 😊😊😊**

Yoongi shut down the app. He fell on his bed and looked at the ceiling.

Then a terrifying thing happened…

He realised…

He was smiling.

**Mountain House, June 2065**

'Raise and shine!! GET UP!!'

'Why are you suddenly so energetic?' Minho whined and tried to hide his head under the pillow, while Han snuggled to his side.

'Why are you even up? Usually we have to drag you off bed by force…' Yeonjun mumbled, covering his eyes with his forearm.

'Get up! Get up! Get up!' Jimin started to pull out the covers of everyone.

Soobin sleepily with closed eyes sat on the futon.

'Is it really necessary to get up at 8 on Sunday?' he asked sadly.

'Well, not helping with breakfast means no eating… so you can choose…' Jimin

smirked.

Han instantly sat on the futon, fully awake.

'I'm up!'

'Good boy...' Jimin nodded and patted his head. 'I'm going to check on Yoohyeon... This girl sleeps like a log and Dami is too soft to wake her up...'

'Where is Taehyung hyung?' Soobin asked.

'Where do you think he could be, huh?' Minho said teasingly. 'Where Jungkook is, Tae is too.'

'The rule old as time...' Jimin confirmed, while walking out of the orangerie.

He went to the main house to see Dami helping Hwasa prepare the tea for everyone.

Jungkook was chopping something next to Jiyoung and Taehyung was setting the plates on the table.

'Is Yoo awake?' Jimin asked.

Dami looked at him with puppy eyes.

'Let her sleep some more...' she asked.

Jimin squinted his eyes.

'You know that she will ignore every alarm she set...'

'But...'

'We woke her up...' Siyeon said, smiling widely. 'We could literally lift her and threw through the window and I doubt it would wake her up...' she shook her head.

'She will be grumpy...' Dami pouted.

'We will kick her ass so good, she won't have time for that...' Bora smirked.

Jimin nudged Taehyung with his shoulder.

'Slept well?' he asked silently.

Taehyung's eyes instantly traveled to Jungkook, before he nodded and focused on the table. He smiled lightly, while saying:

'You are in a good mood today too...'

'Yup!' Jimin grabbed a piece of carrot Jungkook was cutting, and threw it to his mouth.

Rest of the boys came eagerly wanting to help. The last one to crawl to the kitchen was Yoohyeon.

'We will eat and then the Sealers will choose weapons.' Jiyoung explained. 'First the same as your sacred treasures. While the training will go further we will mix them. But Sealers will instinctively provoke and use the weapons in a way Holders should do...'

'So eat up! We will have a busy morning. We will end around lunch and we will go back to Seoul, as you need to prepare for school...'

All teenagers whined.

'Well it was your choice to train and study at the same time... So we can only train on Saturday evening and Sunday morning... Don't blame us...' Hwasa raised her eyebrow.

'When the vacation starts we will be able to train for the whole week here if you don't have other plans...' Siyeon calmed them down.

They all sat anywhere around the table, on the kitchen tops or on the floor in a small kitchen where they could find a spot. They were sharing food, between loud talks and laughter.

After they ate, Jiyoung pointed to the people that should stay to help clean the kitchen and the rest were supposed to go with him to prepare the training field and weapons.

Jimin, Jungkook, Yoohyeon, Soobin and Han went after Jiyoung to the basement, where he unlocked the cyfric lock.

Their eyes widened when they saw the collection of all types of weapons from all centuries. They were neatly placed on the walls or secured behind the glass. Knives, spears, even scythe and of course all types of sword from all around the world. Guns, shields. Armours. Combat suits. Communication devices.

'Choose what seems to suit you...' Dragon said. 'Han you can either choose a vambrace or shield, or a weapon that will help Minho master how to use the sacred treasure... Jimin, I think you should just choose what your instinct will tell you...'

Jimin looked hesitantly at Jungkook and went slowly to the part where swords

were placed. He was looking at the tough huge swords similar to the ones Taehyung was holding yesterday. They looked too heavy in his opinion... Then his eyes moved to the slim katanas. They were more to his liking...

He stretched his hand for one of the long, scary looking black japanese swords, when Jungkook caught his wrist.

Jimin looked at him.

Jungkook slowly shook his head. Then he fastly checked what Dragon was doing, but when he noticed he was helping Soobin choose the bow, arrows and target, he slowly moved Jimin's hand to two shorter, lighter black ninja swords.

He himself looked at the katana Jimin wanted to take, took it from the holder and went away, without a word.

Jimin frowned looking at two slim swords.

He took them in his hands. They were really light. Fitted his fingers well. He held them with more confidence and turned around.

Jiyoung was looking at the sword in Jungkook's hand.

'It doesn't look like the sacred treasure we saw yesterday...'

'But it is light as it...' Jungkook said swiftly. 'Taehyung's sword is light, almost weightless... I need something to move with equal speed.'

Jiyoung nodded, agreeing. But he did notice the way Jungkook used his words. *Taehyung's sword*... Technically it was Jungkook Sacred Treasure. And that's what Holders used to call them. It was "Hoseok's Sacred Treasure" even when Minji was using it. It was "Namjoon's Sacred Treasure" even if Jin was the one who was controlling it...

But Jungkook without a doubt, specifically said "*Taehyung's sword*" as if he himself belonged to him.

Indeed... they were different...

Dragon looked at Jimin and smiled.

'They suit you...'

Jimin's eyes traveled fastly to Jungkook, before he shortly.

'Yeah... They feel right...'

'Okay... I will take some more to diversify the combat with all of you, but we will go slow today...' Jiyoung said. 'Prepare the field with Siyeon and Bora. Tell the other's to wear coveralls. Wear them too.'

All the teenagers nodded and went upstairs.

When all of them gathered at the training field Jiyoung started to divide them. His power was unsealed but Hwasa wasn't taking part in the training as Jiyoung could teach combat and fencing without using his power.

'Bora... you will take Soobin, Yeonjun, Han and Minho. They can train in four as one couple can attack and the second one can defend...'

Bora nodded and gathered four boys around her.

'Siyeon... you will supervise Tae and Jungkook while teaching Jimin with them... they all have swords they can train one on one and in three ways...'

Three boys went to Siyeon.

'And well Dami and Yoohyeon will stay with me... Wielding the spear it's a specific way of fighting...'

Jiyoung looked at all of them...

'Don't try to push yourself... especially you Jimin. We will train for two hours only. Slowly. Get to know the weapon. Basics! Don't try to play heroes. It's not a video game...'

'Unseal the Sealers...' Siyeon ordered.

Taehyung looked at Jungkook and they exchanged thousands of thoughts through their eyes. The excitement. Comfort. Warmth.

The unsealing process fastly became as easy and instinctive as breathing. After a few seconds all of the Holders held the Sacred Treasures and all of the Sealers, except Jungkook, started to glow.

'My dear Sealers... try to supress the power...' Jiyoung said. 'You are the ones that control it. No the other way around... It can be used without visibly showing on your skin... The training will help. When you focus on something else, and get used to your power, you won't even know when you are suppressing it...'

'And, Sealers, today use your power as if you would be Holders. Direct it to the weapons... Trust your instincts. We can teach you normal techniques of fighting... the way you will use your power while using a weapon, will be uniquely created by you. And Holders will pick up what you are doing...' Siyeon explained.

'Perfect...' Jimin mumbled, squeezing tightly two swords.

'Don't worry... I can't direct my power to the sword either...' Siyeon said calmingly. 'It's connected to my voice only... So we will strictly train fencing...'

Jungkook and Taehyung were standing next to them... Taehyung next to Siyeon to repeat her moves when she was showing a basic combination of moves.

'If you want to use two swords... you will need to repeat moves with both hands so maybe for now we should stick to one...' Siyeon suggested.

Jimin opened his mouth to agree with her, when Jungkook said sternly:

'No.'

Siyeon blinked at him, surprised.

Taehyung looked at him and then at two swords in Jimin's hands and instantly backed Jungkook up.

'Right. If his Holder would be there he would use both... Even if it's harder. Jimin can do it...'

'But... we don't actually know if...' Siyeon started.

Jungkook looked at her relecuntantly, but when Taehyung nodded encouragingly, he sighed.

'We DO know it. Don't ask me how, auntie...' he said quietly.

'Kook... if you don't want me to ask... You will need to explain more...' Siyeon squinted her eyes.

Jungkook looked at confused Jimin and bit his lips, uncertain.

'It's okay, Kookie...' Siyeon said. 'If you can help him understand his power, even if it is unusual for us, don't hesitate to do it...'

Jimin tilted his head.

'Can you, Kookie?' he asked.

Jungkook looked at Taehyung.

'I... think... not alone... but we can do it together...' his eyes fell to the sword Taehyung was holding.

'Okay...' Taehyung nodded.

Jungkook turned to Jimin with pleading eyes.

'Don't be scared...'

Jimin giggled and rolled his eyes.

'Kook... chill, I won't be ever scared of you babies...'

Jungkook smiled lightly.

'Okay, so... Taehyung will mark the swordstroke... Block it first with your right sword and stay like it. When I tell you, add the second sword... It will be like an X sign I guess...'

'Yeah, I get it... I watch ninja movies...' Jimin smirked.

Jungkook stood next to Taehyung closely and gave him a sign with his hand to start.

Taehyung made a slow move, still amazed how this long, unbreakable sword in his hand could be so light, aiming at Jimin's head.

Jimin crossed his ninja sword with his blade.

Jungkook embraced Taehyung's wrist, which was holding the sacred treasure. The crystal on the sword and Jungkook's skin started to glow like red glitter.

'Flame.' he said and the sword was covered in flames. The flames crawled slowly to Jimin's sword, setting the steel on dancing fire. 'Second.' Jungkook ordered.

Jimin, still looking amazed at the fire that was covering the sword, but not burning his skin, came back to his senses and added the second sword.

The color of the crystal and the glow around Jungkook changed from red to jade.

'Lightening.'

First Taehyung's sword and then crossed with it Jimin's second sword was embraced by the electrifying waves of power.

Siyeon's jaw dropped. All the people around them stopped what they were doing to see what's happening.

Jungkooks slowly squeezed Taehyung's wrist, and led him to withdraw his sword.

But two swords Jimin was holding still were covered by power.

'I will lend you ours for now...' Jungkook started slowly, looking at weapons in Jimin's hands. 'But that's your power, Jimin...'

He smiled with his bunny-like smile at his hyung.

'Flame... and Lightning...'

---

Yeah, yeah, it's finally here... 😬

I'm sorry it took so long...□□□

It's mainly Yoonmin chapter. Hope you don't mind. :D

Love you!❤□

Thank for being patience with me! ＜3□

BlairWitch

# Chapter 24: The Soul Stone

**July, 2065**

The first few training sessions weren't at all spectacular. They mainly learned the basics of using weapons they should have mastered, without Sealers using their power.

Adults didn't let them do more, because they had school.

But Jungkook and Taehyung were happy seeing Jimin more hyped up for the training session now.

With their busy school life and even more busy and tiring weekends they haven't noticed how the time passed and summer vacations came.

It wasn't what made them happy tho...

It was the end of July. In the middle of the night Taehyung, Jungkook and Jimin were woken up by the sudden commotion.

They jumped out of their beds and stopped on the top of the stairs, hearing voices and seeing the lightened ground floor.

Three friends looked at each other, almost tearing up, hearing the specific laugh. They couldn't believe their ears, so they ran downstairs.

They stopped abruptly frozen, with fastly beating hearts.

They couldn't believe their eyes either...

After almost five months...

Namjoon, Jin, Minji, Hoseok, Baekhyun and Chanyeol came back to Seoul.

The tired chatting and occasional laughs with Jiyoung and Hwasa died down suddenly when six parents noticed three boys.

For a moment nobody said anything. Nobody moved.

Then Jimin took a deep breath and screamed:

'APPA!!' and ran to Chanyeol, who caught him in the middle when he jumped on him.

Beakhyun giggled, gulping his tears and went to them to cage Jimin in their

embrace.

'You got heavier...' Chanyeol teased his son.

'I'm so happy I won't even get offended by that...' Jimin mumbled with his face hidden in Chanyeol's arm.

Minji and Hoseok looked at Taehyung and Jungkook who were standing supportively next to each other. They moved at once.

Taehyung made a slight step to make room for them to embrace Jungkook, when Hoseok pulled him without a second thought into a group hug with all of them.

They became a tangle of arms. Minji reached to caress Taehyung's cheek, when Hobi was squeezing Jungkook's arms. They were talking simultaneously:

'Tae, have you even eaten?! You seem so slim!'

'Kookie, wow! you look so mature!'

'Where did you get this bruise from?!'

'The bracelets are gorgeous, you need to tell me everything!'

Jungkook and Taehyung started to giggle, but they weren't any better:

'Bruises?! You dare to say to me I have bruises, mom!!!'

'Uncle, are your legs okay?! Can you still dance?! What's with this bandaid?!'

Namjoon and Jin were looking at this with small, emotional smiles. Untill, Hoseok tearing up, moved a bit and started to wipe his eyes, with his wrists and Minji with eyes filled with tears, smacked his arm:

'Pull yourself together, Hope!!!'

'You are crying yourself!'

'I'm not crying!!!' Minji denied, offended, when the tear rolled down her cheek, betraying her shamelessly.

Hoseok let out a laugh and embraced her, when she hid her face in her hands.

Jungkook and Taehyung smiled shyly and looked at Jin and Namjoon.

Namjoon without a word spread his arms and Taehyung gulped hard and moved inside them. Jungkook stood in front of Jin, who moved bangs away from his forehead, taking in every inch of Jungkook's face with his eyes, before he leaned

and kissed his forehead. Jungkook's arms circled around his waist.

'You got taller...' Jin whispered.

'You got prettier...' Jungkook mumbled.

'Omg! Don't make me cry, brat!'

Namjoon was not saying anything, he was desperately holding his eyes closed, when his arms were caging his son close to himself. His fingers were gently securing his head as when he was a baby, rocking him gently.

'You kept your promise...' Taehyung whispered, diving inside the safety of his appa's arms. 'You brought them back...'

'You kept your promise too... You've watched over them. I'm so proud of you...'

Then it was the time for Jin to babying his 17 year old son, checking if his hair was not too long or didn't he lose weight, while Taehyung just let him treat him as if he was 7, while checking his dad's condition secretly.

Jungkook in the meantime was glued to Namjoon and they both enjoyed the sight of Tae and Jin. Namjoon ruffled his hair and Jungkook raised his eyes at him showing him a bunny smile.

Somewhere between all the crowd Taehyung's and Jungkook's eyes met.

THEIR parents came back.

When they were thinking about it, they didn't think about "Jungkook's parents" and "Taehyung's parents". They were thinking about all four of them together.

Like when they were kids, all four parents came to the conclusion that they don't think about who is whose son. Jungkook and Taehyung were THEIR children.

Jungkook and Taehyung were their reflections. They stopped a long time ago diverting who is whose parents. The labels weren't important. If anyone would ask... their heart-answer was:

*I have three dads and mom.*

They could never express what it meant for them... That their parents never tried to change who they were for each other. Instead they were gently guiding the bond they shared in healthy, safe ways suitable for their age.

They could try to separate them. They could use their parental force to choose the things they thought will be good for them. Instead they gave them trust not

control.

Each time Jungkook or Taehyung had flashbacks from their past lives... They were just grateful.

Never in eternity... they were this lucky before...

They all sat in the living room.

'The situation is stable for now, so Yongguk called us back here...' Namjoon explained.

'The army somehow is under control and indeed is helping in the city.' Minji added.

'So we took the opportunity to rest and spent holidays with you' Hoseok clapped his hands, smiling widely.

'And we were curious about how your training is going.' Jin said, looking at the boys.

'Well we usually spent Monday, Tuesday and Wednesday in Seoul, because our dear teenagers wanted to practice dance in Hobis studio and attend music lessons with Yongguk's wife. But we were going to Mountain House for the rest of the week.' Hwasa explained.

'Hardworking as always...' Baekhyun praised them.

'We just don't like to be bored...' Jimin rolled his eyes.

'And depending on their parents' plans and schedule the rest are joining us.' Taehyung added.

'Well good that grandpa had this scary reputation, that made all of our friends' families not really opposed to training...' Jungkook giggled.

'Scary?! How am I scary?' Jiyoung asked, offended.

'You are the DRAGON.' Jimin grinned. 'One of few people in the world known for training Interdependants...'

'Well, I think it will be good if you will train for a bit with your parents. They have practical experience...' Jiyoung said, exchanging glances with Minji.

Somehow he knew Taehyung and Jungkook would open up faster with their parents around.

'Yeah... We will join you. But we need at least a week of rest...' Jin said.

'I agree... we all need a moment to catch our breath.' Chanyeol sighed.

Baekhyun was sitting on the couch with Jimin next to him. He was stroking his son's hair playfully. He looked at him.

'Want to stay here tonight, or sleep in your own room?'

'I want to go home with you... I will take my things tomorrow.'

Baekhyun nodded and stood up.

'Then take what you want and we should get going. I'm dying to sleep...'

'Aren't you tired?' Taehyung asked Jin, worried.

'A bit yeah...'

'We can talk tomorrow...' Jungkook assured them.

'So caring...' Namjoon laughed, ruffling his hair, before looking at Hwasa and Jiyoung. 'Stay here. There is no need to move for the night to Minji's place.'

'Yeah, we will end up eating breakfast here...' Hoseok giggled.

'No doubt! I missed my kitchen!' Jin looked longingly at the kitchen door.

'If it is not a problem...' Hwasa smiled at Namjoon.

'Of course not! You were taking care of this house for so long!'

'I will go unpack...' Jin stood up.

'Some of my thing are in your bag I think...' Minji frowned and went with him.

Baekhyun and Chanyeol moved to the door.

'We are in touch!' Jimin yelled to Tae and Jungkook before leaving after them.

Hwasa and Jiyoung went back to sleep.

Hobi and Namjoon somehow disappeared after their other halves as if all of them wanted to leave Jungkook and Taehyung alone.

And of course they saw Minji and Jin waiting impatiently behind the doors.

'Shhhh!!!!' Jin told them.

They pulled them inside and left a peek in the door to observe their sons. Hoseok squeezed himself between them to have a better look. Namjoon rolled his eyes but tiptoed to look above their heads.

Minji left a little, excited squeak when Jungkook quietly reached for Taehyung's hand.

'I will sleep in my room...' he said shyly, playing with Taehyung's fingers.

'Yeah... It's okay...' Taehyung assured him, and flicked his chin upwards, smiling lightly. 'It's not so far away...'

'No it's not...' Jungkook grinned and made a small step forward.

Behind the doors a massive gulp was heard.

'Will they...?' Jin held his breath.

'Oh my god!' Hoseok whispered, reaching for Minji's hand, trying to hold his excitement.

'I feel like a pervert...' Namjoon mumbled, shaking his head, but didn't move an inch.

Jungkook moved a bit more with the waiting expression.

A smug smile crawled on Taehyung's lips.

'What?' he asked.

'WHAT A TEASE!' Minji exclaimed quietly.

Jin glared at Namjoon for a moment.

'He got that from you...'

Jungkook squeezed Taehyung's hand.

'You know what. I won't ask...'

'But I don't know...' Taehyung smiled with fake innocence.

'You just like when I'm asking...' Jungkook pouted.

'I really do...' Taehyung admitted shamelessly.

'I... I don't have think...' Jin blinked, totally blank.

'Well, I have a lot...' Hobi said with parted lips. 'For example... Do we already need soundproof walls?'

He received a smack on the head from Namjoon.

'Shut up! They are still babies!'

'Sorry Joon, but that doesn't give me baby vibes...' Minji said with wide eyes.

'Just give me this damn goodnight kiss, Kim!' Jungkook squinted his eyes.

Taehyung embraced Jungkook's chin with his palm and leaned his face to him.

'Wasn't that hard right?'

He gently and lightly pressed his lips to Jungkook's in a simple, innocent peck.

'Awwwww....' Jin, Minji and Hoseok sighed.

'They are still doing the sweet kisses...' Minji cooed at two young boys.

'They better!' Namjoon shook his head.

'Oh, come on! They are cute!' Hoseok was squealing inside.

When Jungkook and Taehyung parted their lips, smiling shyly at each other and moved to the corridor, their parents panicked and fastly started to pretend they were busy with something in the room.

When they entered Jin was aimlessly fixing the pillows on the bed. Hoseok was playing with something on the window sill, Minji was sitting casually in an armchair reading some old magazine about gardening (which she hated) and Namjoon, the only one reasonable, crouched down near the bag, taking things from it.

Taehyung and Jungkook looked at the suspicious scene and squinted their eyes.

'I will go unlock the house...' Jungkook said slowly, glaring at his mother.

'Yeah, yeah... we will be right after you...' Hoseok nodded eagerly.

'I will make you tea before sleep...' Tae offered Namjoon and Jin.

'Thank you, Tae...' Jin smiled innocently.

'Goodnight, uncles...' Jungkook said, sarcastically, walking out.

'Goodnight, goodnight! Sleep well Kookie...' Namjoon nodded.

Taehyung crossed his arms on his chest.

'You should be ashamed...' he said, shaking his head.

'I don't know what you are talking about...' Minji frowned.

'Sure thing, auntie...' Taehyung smiled ironically. 'And you holding the magazin upside down is not suspicious at all...' he said before going to the kitchen.

Minji looked at the colorful paper in her hands.

'Fuck...'

**Daegu, July 2065**

Wooyoung, San and Gahyeon were peaking on the corridor, from behind the corner.

'I told you!!' Gahyeon said excitedly. 'It's the third time I'm seeing him!'

Yoongi looked left and right to check if someone was around, before unlocking the door and disappearing inside the room.

'What is he doing there?' Wooyoung asked.

'It's his sacred music room... so probably composing...' San concluded.

'Nah... I haven't heard any music from there...' Gahyeon shook her head. 'So that means he is writing...'

'Writing what?'

'Lyrics... I saw one he wrote partially... It's good. And shockingly - romantic.'

San and Wooyoung looked at each other and grinned.

Gahyeon looked at them suspiciously.

'You know something!!' she accused them.

'Maybe...' Wooyoung shrugged.

'What?! Teeell meeee!' she whined.

'Well...' San started.

'Not here!' Wooyoung pulled them away from the corridor. 'He will kill us if he catches us here!'

They disappeared to share the news with Gahyeon.

And inside the music room that was silent for now, only scribbling on the paper was heard. Suddenly the pen stopped and a hand reached for the phone.

A soft smile appeared when the eyes looked at the message from the middle of the night, which they saw ten times already.

**CHIMISLOVE: □□□Hyung...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Something good happened.**

**CHIMISLOVE: □□□□I'm happy…**

Yoongi looked at the emoji and shook his head. This guy was addicted to emojis…

Somehow the glimpses of joy he was receiving from his soulmate was making him warm. It was causing him nice thoughts he was lacking so much.

*I'm happy for you, Chim…*

Mountain House, August 2065

Namjoon looked at Jungkook and Taehyung who just shared their power with Jimin, covering his ninja swords in flame and lightning.

'How can you use the lightning?' he asked.

Till now nobody dared to question Taehyung and Jungkook about their power. But it was Namjoon. They trusted him. They trusted his knowledge.

'How can you share it with Jimin?' The second question was asked.

'The fifth power…' Jungkook said hesitantly.

'Saying it can do "everything" doesn't explain anything, Kook…' Namjoon said gently.

'But it actually does…' Taehyung scratched his hair. 'The same way we can switch between activating four elements… The fifth power is allowing us to switch between any other power that *Eadar-eisimeileach* could ever use…'

'Not every…' Jungkook shook his head. 'But most of it. We for example can't heal or strengthen our body like you. We can't use imagination like grandpa to make something material… but every…' he looked at Taehyung for help.

'Hmm… every "immaterial", "natural" or "spiritual" power… we can use it…'

Namjoon tried hard to not show how surprised the news was to him and held a calm and steady expression.

'Give me examples…' he said with his academic tone.

Taehyung and Jungkook relaxed, feeling the discussion was about facts not about

"how was it possible".

'Lightening, light, sound, darkness, shadow, ice, gravity...' Jungkook said. 'Examples. That are connected to the fifth power.'

'And of course everything that can be related to four elements...' Taehyung added.

Namjoon nodded, deep in thoughts.

'Okay... I think I get it. Any power that is associated with phenomena occurring in nature....'

Two boys confirmed.

The loud screams and weapons clashing diverted their attention to Dami, who was currently fighting with Minji.

'Oh, come on!! You are more than that!' Minji teased the girl.

The ice from Dami's spear flew in Minji's direction who destroyed the ice block with one of the light balls.

Angry Dami hit the spear on the ground and was covered by ice, making Minji lose her balance and fell to the ground.

'That's what I'm talking about!' Minji smiled widely at the girl.

Hoseok was showing Yeonjun how to spread the light power around and used it as something dangerous, using Han as the aim, who was trying not to let the light pass his shield.

Soobin was aiming at Minho doing the same, while Yoohyeon was defending herself against Jin's bandaids which were moving like snakes around her, trying to tie her, when she wanted to freeze them.

'It seems your shield is working against the material objects and some powers to some point...' Jiyoung said, observing Minho and Han. 'Taehyung... come here...'

Taehyung walked to him with a sword.

Jiyoung gave Minho a sword too.

'Try to fight, keeping the shield around yourself...'

Teenagers were more bold with Jin and Namjoon around, because if anything would happen, they had healers around now.

Taehyung grinned at Minho.

Jungkook took another sword and looked at Jimin. Two swords in his hands were covered just as Jimin's. One with flames, second one with lightning.

'Slowly...' Namjoon instructed and left to help Hoseok.

Jungkook looked at Jimin challengingly and made a move with his sword. Jimin blocked it. The lightning hit the lightning.

'You are using the power your soulmate will be using...' Jungkook said.

'I know that...' Jimin said, making a turn and trying to reach Jungkook's thigh with the second sword.

They were slowly and carefully sparing. Even if Jimin wanted to speed up, Jungkook didn't let him. And at some point he realized that the Younger was showing him what he can do. Using different ways to form his power over the sword. How to send the power further... how to combine both of the swords' powers at once.

And the thought Jungkook was doing it so effortlessly... was scary and exciting. Jimin was wondering... what he can do while he is not sticking to something that could be "Jimin's style".

'AAUCH!!' Minho's voice made them stop the sparring.

Taehyung's sword crossed his shield and the blade was now pressed gently to Minho's arm.

Jiyoung patted Minho's arm.

'That's what I thought... Depending on the power you can block it to some point. The stronger your shield will get, the stronger powers you would be able to oppose...'

'We should check if the shield is blocking not only physical attack...' Jin suggested.

Everybody stopped, interested.

'How?' Han frowned.

'We can use Siyeon and Bora...' Minji smirked.

'Hey!!' Siyeon glared at her.

'Stop it, girls!' Jiyoung said instantly as if he was used to saying it. 'Minji is right...'

'Siyeon's power is really dangerous.' Minji explained and Siyeon rolled her eyes.

'She can use her voice to tell you what to do...'

'I do! So shut up!' Siyeon said and Minji's mouth instantly pressed together.

She squinted her eyes and sent the light balls in Siyeon's face, when Hwasa entered and pulled their ears.

'Stop it this instant!'

Siyeon released Minji from her power and whined.

'Okay...' Bora sighed. 'I will do it...' she had a satine collar over her neck. 'Everybody stand in front of me...'

When they did, she looked at the faces and stopped at Jimin's.

'Now... Jimin, do a backflip.'

Jimin's body instantly bent and he did a backflip without hesitation. Bora looked at Yoohyeon. 'Sit on the ground.' she ordered, and Yoohyeon instantly plopped on her butt on the grass.

'Scary!!' Yeonjun exclaimed.

'Yeah...' Hoseok agreed with him.

'That's how the power is working...' she shrugged. 'Jungkook hug Soobin...'

Taehyung moved at once. He stood in front of Jungkook and held the blade of the sword, holding it vertically as if he wanted to defend him. A deafening sound rang out. As if the voice echoed and was swallowed after by the blade.

Bora blinked, shocked and behind Taehyung, Jungkook smirked.

'Yeah... we can do that... It wouldn't have affected me, auntie...'

Siyeon raised her eyebrow challengingly.

'Maybe the sacred treasure wouldn't but the sheer power...' she looked at Jungkook and ordered. 'Come to me...'

Jungkook just stretched his palm and the echo of Siyeon's voice flew above their heads and disappeared.

'How?' she asked, blinking.

'Sound wave...' Namjoon said. 'They can manipulate the sound too.'

Before the tension raised, Yeonjun said:

'That's cool...'

And Jungkook let out a silent sigh, grateful they haven't freak out. Taehyung turned to look at him fast, looking for any sign of anxiety on his face.

Jungkook sent him a reassuring smile. He couldn't let Taehyung (still holding a deadly dangerous sacred treasure) go into a protective mood.

'Ummm... okay... so we should check Minho and Han no...' Bora got back to business. 'Cover yourself with a shield. We will check if you will be affected. I will use just a small volume... if it won't have the effect on you it means you can strengthen the shield to the point I won't be able to affect you with the high volume later either...'

Shields whistood Bora's order and Minho and Han sighed with relief.

'Okay! It's enough for today!' Jiyoung ordered. 'We will start tomorrow again... Getting to know your powers is always exciting but tiring...'

'And you have vacation... Go for a walk or something...' Hwasa nodded. 'We bought some tents as there are many more people here...'

'We will go to the attic, you can sleep in my room...' Minji said to Namjoon and Jin.

'We will?' Hoseok whined.

'Don't worry... we cleaned and aired there since last time...' Bora said. 'And dealth with spiders...'

'Okay...' he said gravely, inconsolable.

'I want to sleep in a tent!' Han exclaimed. He looked at Jimin hopefully.

'No way in hell! Mosquitos will eat me alive!'

'And why the hell do you want him in your tent, huh?!' Minho squinted his eyes.

'To make you jealous of course...' Han grinned, making everybody laugh.

'We can sleep in a tent too...' Taehyung said, shrugging.

'Bet you can...' Dami smirked, near him, so only he could hear her.

He rolled his eyes.

'Okay, so Dami, Yoohyeon, Jimin, Yeonjun and Soobin to the dormitory. Han i Minho to one tent. Tae and Kookie to the second one. Everybody is okay with it?' Hwasa summed up.

She answered with a choral "yeaaah!".

'Can we make a bonfire?' Soobin asked.

'Yeah! Let's do this!'

'We can do it in the evening...' Jiyoung smiled. 'You should gain what you can from this vacation.'

After the joyful evening, when Kai, Jennie, Chanyeol and Baekhyun joined them for the bonfire, everything calmed down after midnight.

Taehyung and Jungkook crawled inside their sleeping bags and covered themselves with blankets with aching from sparring muscles.

Using power wasn't tiring, but using weapons and combat... was. So they fell asleep close to each other to keep the warmth and mumbling quiet: *sleep well.*

~~~~~~~~

*There is no coming back from here...*

Water.

Darkness.

Cold.

*Why did you come here, human?*

Pain.

Lack of air.

Blindness.
~~~~~~~~

*There is no coming back from here...*

Water. Cold, dark water.

*Nobody is allowed to come back from here...*

Void.

*There is no coming back from here...*

Jeryn opened his eyes. But he saw only darkness.

He was dying. He knew it. There was no air left in his lungs.

His body was falling deeper and deeper inside the void.

He saw smugs of a jade light. Spreading inside the water. They started to shape until they formed three women that started to circle around his floating in the water body.

He fell to the lake. He left Taeghan there. With hundreds of enemies.

In danger.

He started to struggle, desperately moving his arms to reach the surface.

But the women made of light were stopping him. Not letting him move.

*Nobody is allowed to come back from here...*

He heard the words in his head.

'Who are you?!' he couldn't scream, but the sentence was spoken inside his mind.

*We are... Norns. The daughters of destiny... The masters of life.*

The words were echoing in Jeryn's mind.

'Let me go!!! I need to go back!! He is in danger!!'

*There is no coming back from here...*

*Your life is ending...*

In one of the spirit's hand a scissors appeared.

The second touched Jeryn's chest and pulled a red thread.

But the more she was pulling it out... the longer it was getting...

The third spirit circled around him again and looked at the red string that was going from his back, through the water. Above the surface.

*He is not alone...*

*His soul is connected to the other one...*

*It's not his time...*

Three spirits looked at the thread, touching it, stretching it and playing with it curiously. They looked at each other.

Then the spirit with scissors, looked at him.

*We can make a deal...*

*We were banished here because we trusted a human once!!* - the second one opposed.

'I will make a deal!!!' Jeryn said, looking for any way to go back to Teaghan. To avenge his family. To save the island.

*That one also said so...* - the third spirit said with grief.

*We gave him power... we gave him everything... And he betrayed us!*

'I won't!' Jeryn promised.

*Are you sure?* the first spirit moved forward. *What will you choose?*

*Sacrifice the other half of your soul for a power only for yourself?* - the second spirit came closer.

*Or a bond for eternity to share it...* - the third spirit swam closer too.

'Who would choose the first one?!' Jeryn said enraged.

*That's what we've thought...*

*But someone...*

*...did...*

*And we were punished!*

'I could sacrifice my soul! But I would not sacrifice Taeghan's!'

The spirit with scissors tried to cut the red thread that was embracing Jeryn.

*This red string is strong...*

She looked Jeryn in the eyes.

*We can make a deal...* - she repeated.

*The power... for the traitor's soul...* - her sister added.

'How will I find him?'

*Some meetings are meant to be... He will find you...*

*Beware of him... he is the shadow... the malice... the evil...*

'Taeghan will be safe?'

*As long as you are together...*

*As long as the red thread is strong...*

*As long as your souls will call each other...*

Jeryn was sure. Maybe he was naive. But he was sure. The bond they shared won't ever change.

The spirit stretched her hand. Jeryn looked at it and squeezed it.

'Deal!'

Three spirits got their hands closer. Between them a small, round object appeared. Perfect like a polished stone, shining like jade.

*It's the soul stone...*

*Use it wisely...*

Three hands reached inside Jeryn's chest at once. He screamed in pain.

The pain was short but intense. When he opened his eyes two spirits disappeared. Only one of the sisters left.

*I loved him...* - she said with sad eyes. - *That's why we trusted him...*

She looked at the red thread floating around Jeryn.

She closed her fingers and when she opened her palm there was a second, red shining stone on it.

*This is a gift for you.*

*You are our warriors now...*

'I will need help...'

*The red string in the water is safe here.* - the spirit said. - *We will give you help...*

Jeryn nodded.

*Protect the souls from him...*

*He will haunt you...*

*Beware of him...*

She inserted the second stone inside Jeryn's chest, when he felt the pulling. of the red string inside him. Pulling him above the water.

Taeghan was calling him.

The spirit nodded and dissapper, leaving the echo.

*Go*

~~~~~

Taehyung woke up suddenly, because he got kicked. But what truly woke him up from the deep sleep was the fear he suddenly felt.

Jungkook was moving inside his sleep. Squirming, breathing heavily or desperately catching his breath. Kicking his legs as if he was trying to swim.

'Koo!!!' Taehyung shook him. 'Jungkook! Wake up!!'

But no matter how much he tried, Jungkook was still asleep.

Until he suddenly opened his eyes and whispered terrified:

'I wasn't the first one...'

Taehyung didn't even ask. Jungkook was trembling, sweating badly. His forehead was wet and warm.
~~~~~

'I will call dad...'

Jungkook grabbed his arms desperately.

'NO! Please! Don't leave me!'

'Hey, hey!' Taehyung cupped his face and forced him to look him in the eyes. 'I'm not leaving you!' he said sternly.

With shivering lips, Jungkook choked out.

'H-hold m-me... S-so c-cold...'

Taehyung layed down, pulling Jungkook on him. He covers his back in a blanket.

His hands were rubbing his back to warm him up.

Jungkook pressed his cheek to Taehyung's heart. Gripping the fabric of his hoodie desperately.

For a moment he couldn't calm down, but then Taehyung's scent, the warmth of his body, made him breathing steadily.

His eyelids become heavy.

Taehyung was holding him tightly. Feeling Jungkook's skin is warming up.

Feeling his body weight on himself was making him calm and sure.

Jungkook was here. With him. Safe.

'Tell me...'

'The legend... Jeryn... Taeghan.. Genesis...' Jungkook whispered. 'I know what happened in the lake...'

He closed his eyes and told Taehyung everything.

'So all of our powers are coming from...'

'The soul stone...'

---

Hello!!

Sorry for the delay!

I hope the chapter was worth waiting for...

So:

The **Norns** are deities in responsible for in Norse mythology responsible for shaping the course of human destinies.

The Norns lived around one of the three roots of the evergreen Yggdrasil ash tree, near the dark Urd well (it was the source of the tree's strength). Nearby was a sacred lake from which they drew water to water the root.

They are similar to Moiraes (Fates) from Greek Mythology.

Clotho, the youngest of the sisters, presided over the moment in which we are born, and held a distaff in her hand; Lachesis spun out all the events and actions of our life; and Atropos, the eldest of the three, cut the thread of human life with a pair of scissors.

BlairWitch🩶

# Chapter 25: Feelings under the skin

**August 2065, Mountain House**

The darkness and silence were filling up the tent. Only not-so-calm breaths were heard and occasional ruffling of sleeping bags fabric.

'The soul stone... the fifth power. It's because the spirits made it. It's not just the sheer power of your soul...' Taehyung concluded.

'Yeah... probably the four elements would be the basic power of Jeryn if they hadn't given him something more...'

'And the second one? The gift?'

'I think the other seed we see in soulmates' dimension - it's hidden there...' Jungkook nuzzled his nose onto Taehyung's shirt. Like a puppy trying to indulge himself in known scent to find safety.

Taehyung was his safety.

Taehyung was looking at the ceiling of the tent, frowning. He felt the fear crawling under his skin. Fear and anger.

'They gave Jeryn more power than the other Islanders, because they knew they were sending him to fight with something much more powerful than he could ever be...' he gritted his teeth. Then he sighed. 'But at least they let them share it...'

Jungkook tiled his face, hiding it more into Taehyung's shirt, even if none of them could see in the darkness.

'I felt it... When Jeryn made a deal... I felt his guilt... The guilt that he involved Taeghan's soul in all of it...'

Taehyung felt the grip of Jungkook's hand over his shirt was tightening. He heard the heavy gulp.

'Do you think he was mad at him...? Taeghan?'

Taehyung knew Jungkook from the time he was born... He knew too well how fast to blame himself... How fast he felt anxious...

He could recognize the layers of his questions. He could recognize the slight

difference in his voice. The other note... The tone one could hear lingering in the air after the last note of a symphony...

Jungkook wasn't asking about Taeghan...

'Well... don't know about him... but I would be mad and hate you...' He felt the fingers gripping his shirt, trembling. '... if you wouldn't involve me. So I'm glad the deal was like it was. And probably Taehgan was too... Imagine your husband telling you to stay, when he is going to deal with some demon... I would freaking tie the guy and kick him back to the lake to change the deal...'

Jungkook giggled quietly in relief.

'I don't think they encountered the demon in the end...'

'And others?'

'I don't know... Not the ones we saw in our dreams, I guess.'

'So we don't know anything about him...' Taehyung sighed, then a sudden thought came to his mind. 'Why did she say she loved him? He had a soulmate he sacrificed right? What kind of fucked up triangle is that?'

'Good your dad doesn't hear you...' Jungkook said. 'Her tone... I don't think it was romantic love... More like... all three spirits treat him like a son? They didn't look like someone who likes people much...'

'Oh? That would make sense. Someone they raised... They thought they could trust him...'

'It's all just guesses...' Jungkook sighed tiredly. 'What hour it is?'

Taehyung looked at his electronic watch.

'4 o'clock.'

'I can't sleep anymore...'

Taehyung's hand was rubbing Jungkook's back soothingly. Reaching from his waist to his nape in slow motion. Squishing the material of the shirt by sliding upward, only to straighten it soon by sliding downward.

'Try...'

Jungkook shook his head. The feeling was cozy, calming, warm. He didn't want to lose even a second of it.

'It's better like that...' he whispered, closing his eyes. 'I feel like my mind is resting now more than during sleep.'

'Fine then...' Taehyung agreed calmly and moved his legs a bit.

And the slight movement, made Jungkook's, clouded by overwhelming thoughts, mind, suddenly realize the position he was in.

He was laying on Taehyung. His legs were between Taehyung's legs. Their middles and chest were tightly pressed together. His one hand was gripping Taehyung's shirt, while the other was holding his waist delicately. Taehyung's right hand was steadily stroking his back.

'Sorry! I haven't thought about you! You must be uncomfortable! Am I heavy?!' Jungkook opened his eyes fastly in instant panic, trying to move away.

He was stopped by the unexpectedly strong grip on both sides of his hips.

'Stay where you are...' Taehyung demanded sternly.

'But...'

'Lay down, as you were laying, and don't move...'

'Why?'

'Because I said so.'

Jungkook was cursing on the darkness that was in the tent. He couldn't read Taehyung's expression. Something that would tell him Taehyung's mood. Even a glimpse, a millisecond, would tell him.

Was he mad? Was he tired? Was he sleepy? Was he...

'Come on, Koo... Don't make it hard for me...' Taehyung's voice was gentle, just a little as if he was holding his breath. A deep whisper in the darkness...

Jungkook slowly layed down again, pressing his cheek to Taehyung's chest.

After a moment, Taehyung hesitantly let go of his hips. One of his arms circled around Jungkook's waist and the other hand moved to his hair. His fingers intertwined with soft strands.

'If it is hard for you...' Jungkook whispered. '...to have me this close... wouldn't it be better if I lay beside you?'

'No.'

A simple answer... But Jungkook had to know more. He wanted to understand...

'Why?'

Taehyung sighed.

But it wasn't even hard to explain. It wasn't embarrassing. Because it was Jungkook.

If it would be Jimin or anybody else... he would be a stattering, embarrassed mess. But with Jungkook... in the darkness... when he could only feel the warmth of his body, feel his heartbeat through the clothes, matching his own... Hearing the voice that he felt was with him through the centuries... There was no embarrassment. No shame.

There was only the comfort they shared. The certainty of the things awaiting them in the future.

Their truth...

'No matter how my body reacts... Feeling you this close, just like that... It's peaceful. It's not the physical calmness. It's something I need so much more right now... It's the feeling of having you right where you belong. Where I am sure nothing can harm you.'

Jungkook nodded in understanding.

Nothing was easy between them.

And yet everything was so simple...

It could feel strange to others, but they were different.

Taehyung, being just seventeen, could use words full of truth. Words that most adults weren't able to say through their lifetime.

And Jungkook, being just fifteen, could understand them. Accept them. Cherish...

There was a thick line between their young, teenage bodies and minds and their old souls and hearts.

They knew this line would disappear with time. They were waiting for it.

But for now... Jungkook was happy, because Taehyung, as he told him, noticed and reacted, having him this close. And Taehyung accepted the fact that he WILL react with Jungkook around, no matter how inappropriate, his mind was telling him it was.

The longing was too strong to oppose it.

'It will soon be dawn' Jungkook whispered.

'Do you want to see it?' Taehyung asked his boyfriend, who he knew all too well, and a small smile appeared on his lips.

'Can we?'

'Yeah. We are not going to sleep either way.'

'We need to cross the forest if we want to see it clearly...'

'Then we should get going...'

'Is it safe to move?' Jungkook asked, biting back his smile.

'Don't push my buttons, Koo...' Taehyung warned him.

Jungkook giggled.

'But you are so good at controlling yourself I just can't help but tease you...'

'Oh really?' Taehyung palm squeezed Jungkook's side, exactly at the place under the ribs, causing him the jolting feeling. 'You are not good at controlling yourself at all, so I will have fun later on...'

Jungkook pouted. It was true. He wasn't good at controlling himself...

And observing Kim Taehyung was... well till now it was causing just the immense feeling of adoration and need for kisses...

He felt nervous when he realised this feeling would be getting much more intense soon. How will he be able to hide it or control it or...

'Jeeze... you are going into overthinking like I was...' Taehyung giggled.

'How do you know that?' Jungkook whined.

'Right now, Your nails are digging deeper inside my skin the more stressful thoughts you are having...'

'Sucks to be you...'

Taehyung smacked his back for the sassy reply.

'Are we going or not?'

'Yes...' Jungkook swiftly moved away.

They got rid of the sleeping bags in the darkness and found their shoes, laying next to the entrance to the tent. Jungkook turned on his phone to lighten up the insides. They took the extra hoodies and got out.

They took the short walk a bit higher in the mountain until they reached the place grandpa showed them. It had a beautiful panorama view of the still sleeping Seoul nearby.

The sky was getting brighter. The little orange ball appeared above the horizon bathing them in golden light.

Jungkook had a little soft smile when he closed his eyes, enjoying the first gentle rays of sunshine. He heard the click of taking a picture and shook his head.

'Take one with me too...' he said.

Taehyung moved a bit and took a selfie with Jungkook, he hid his phone in his pocket and Jungkook turned again to look at the sun.

Taehyung stood next to him. He couldn't exactly count how many sunrises they already saw together, but he was never bored with it. It was always something deeper than just Jungkook's love for the beauty of nature...

Taehyung, after being woken up by the freezing feeling of darkness and cold, really wanted what was hidden there since their childhood.

And one of many things one could say about Kim Taehyung was - he was clever.

'I won't ever understand why you are always ready to decline your sleep just to see something that is lasting for a few minutes...'

'Yet you are getting up with me...'

'Well, I'm your boyfriend.' Taehyung nudged him playfully with his arm. 'I'm ready to suffer. But your reasoning is shitty...'

Jungkook laughed. He caught the drift... He closed his eyes again and whispered:

'I just really love the sun...'

There was something magical in the silence that fell on the forest. In the way, rays of sun exposed pollens in the air. In the way, droplets of dew were falling from the clovers on the ground. In the way... Jungkook recognized what Taehyung wanted to hear...

Yet it made him shy...

Until he felt a gentle, warm palm on his cheek and opened his eyes just to be met with beautiful dark orbs that had the softest of gaze.

'I know...' Taehyung whispered.

For a moment they were looking at each other.

And this time... without asking... without teasing... Without secret codes and playful words...

They leaned at the same time to let their lips meet.

To satisfy a bit of longing of their souls in the most innocent and pure way.

**31st October/1st November 2065, Daegu**

Yoongi entered the house with Wooyoung and San after the whole night of keeping the hand on pulse during Samhain. No matter how 3EO and ISA asked the citizens to celebrate Samhain in their houses, they all knew it wasn't gonna happen.

And they couldn't also suddenly deny all of their beliefs about equality and tell people to hide their culture and traditions. They were fighting for something exactly opposite.

But they advised people to stay in a small circle of friends in their house areas.

They didn't want to give an army the reason to take over the city tho... Until now the military was just entering to check how to help and clean the city from rumbles. Interdependents for sure didn't want to have other units against them...

So all of ISA agents were having patrols all over the city for the whole night.

'I'm dying...' Wooyoung whined.

'Then go die in your bedroom not on my living room floor...' Yoongi said mercilessly.

'Jerk...'

Yoongi shrugged and went upstairs. He stopped next to his room and hesitantly turned back.

He stood next to the doors on the opposite side of the corridor and quietly opened them. He looked at the red hair spread over the pillow and calm face.

His gaze softened.

He was sorry, he wasn't the type of a brother to openly show his affection. Only thing he could always do was sacrifice himself to make his baby sister safe. That's what he was doing. And that's what he was going to do... even when she would be 70.

Gahyeon was three years younger than him. He was her oppa. He was a sweet energetic kid. Even Yoongi hadn't smiled at her a lot. She was always ready to share her ice cream with him. When she was sad she was looking for him and he let her sleep in his bed then. When they were older she would pick fights with him or pull pranks just to interact with him. He loved her dearly for that. His sassy, cheerful sister...

He knew he wasn't the best brother. He was often cold. But he was the big brother that would do anything to protect her.

Gahyeon had a heavy sleep like him, so he walked inside the dark room, took a blanket from the armchair and covered her exposed legs, because she was kicking the duvets like crazy, mumbling in her slip, probably arguing with Wooyoung over which jam is better blackberry or strawberry.

Yoongi silently walked out and closed the doors after himself. It was 3 a.m. but he did a round through the house to check if everything was okay, but stopped in front of his mother's room.

It was still the night of Samhain till down. The night when the souls were present in every echo.

Yoongi pressed his forehead to the doors to brace himself, before opening them.

He entered the room.

He sat next to the bed.

The lights from outside were gently lightening the room.

Handong had open eyes. Staring soulless at the ceiling. She was falling asleep when her body was too tired to keep her conscious. Beside that... she was indifferent.

Staring at the walls or ceiling with an unfocused gaze.

The state of living death.

He has been seeing it every day for a year already...

The tragic fate of *Eadar-eisimeileach* who lost their soulmates.

Yoongi was good with words. He just wasn't brave enough till now to say them.

But this time he reached for the lifeless, cold hand and closed it with both of his hands.

'Mom...' he whispered.

No reaction.

He pressed his forehead to his palms, which were holding his mother's hand. The hand that was supporting his first steps. The hand that was on his forehead when he had fevers. The hand he usually saw in a gentle hold of his father's strong grip.

'Mom...' he choked out. 'I know... I know half of your soul was torn apart... I know dad is not here anymore...' he took a deep breath. 'But we are... We are here... Don't you believe a part of him is still alive in us? Isn't it worth fighting for?'

Silence.

'I lost both parents on the same day...' he whispered. 'But you can still come back... Please... Mom... We are still here.'

Maybe it was Yoongi's wishful thinking... Maybe it was his tired mind playing cruel games... But he could swear he felt a twitch of a finger in his hold.

He raised his head, but Handong's face hadn't changed even a bit.

She was still... empty...

Yoongi looked at the slim fingers and long nails and he gently laid the hand down on the sheet.

'I will try to talk more with you...' he promised and left the room fast.

He knew he should go to sleep, but before that he wanted to do one more thing. He went into the music studio.

He relaxed on the seat and pulled closer the paper without scribbles to read it thoughtfully one more time. He couldn't send it on Chim's birthday... but it was ready now.

But should he do it?

Well, he really wanted to know his reaction and thoughts about the lyrics...

Yoongi's fingers were itching to type the lyrics on the app. At the same time he was so extremely shy about it... It was too personal on so many levels.

Before he could make the final decision he jumped because of the sound of the notification.

**CHIMISLOVE: Hyung!!!!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Hyung! Hyung! Hyung! Hyung! Hyung!**

**SUGA: WTF!!? It's 3 am. Why are you not sleeping?!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Wow! I love how you grumpily care about my sleep □□...**

Yoongi almost typed "fuck you"... but deleted it before sending, knowing exactly the response he would get.

He rolled his eyes.

**SUGA: What happened this time?**

**CHIMISLOVE: YOU WERE RIGHT, HYUNG!**

**SUGA: As always, but about what?**

**CHIMISLOVE: It's HIM!**

**CHIMISLOVE: You were right it is a HE!**

Yoongi's heart stopped, before he felt a sudden heaviness...

He was sinking again in the darkness.

He knew it...

He knew it all along.

He shouldn't trust anybody...

He was wrong all along. He just fell for Woosan's stupid talk! He desperately needed a light in his life and he just imagined it was Chim. A guy he had never met!!

He was so stupid and naive...

And now Chim met his soulmate... And Yoongi felt like an utter fool.

Yoongi slowly put down the phone on the desk. His hand moved above the paper with the lyric he gripped it and started to crumble the sheet with his handwriting.

His eyes fell on the dazzling screen of the phone, just before he tore the paper apart.

**CHIMISLOVE: I had a dream!**

**CHIMISLOVE: And I remember now!**

**CHIMISLOVE: I had a lot of dreams when I was younger...**

**CHIMISLOVE: About a boy with light blue hair... A hair like blue mold...**

Yoongi blinked. He raised his head and looked to his own reflection visible in one of the glass doors of the cabinets.

He saw a nineteen year old man. Pale as a ghost. With dark eyes...shocked expression and undeniably... blue mold colored hair.

He hesitantly took the phone in his hand.

**SUGA: What was your dream about?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Oh it's always simple... not detailed. Just a smile...** 😳😳

**CHIMISLOVE: Jeeze!! His smile!!! It's so sweet. As if he is not used to smile so it's precious!** 💅💅

**CHIMISLOVE: Or a profile...Or hands.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Pretty big hands...** 😶😶

Yoongi frowned.

A smile? He wasn't the smily type...

And big hands?

He looked at his hands. They weren't particularly big...

**SUGA: Big hands? Maybe yours are just small?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Bringing that up wasn't nessesry!!! 😤😤😤😤**

Yoongi smirked involuntarily.

**SUGA: So you DO have small hands?**

**CHIMISLOVE: No matter their size, they can do a lot you know... 😶😶Really skillful I dare to say... 😏😏😏**

**SUGA: Just like your mouth?**

Yoongi blinked at the last text he sent. His eyes widened terrified and his cheeks were covered in pink. Had he really texted THAT?!!!!

**CHIMISLOVE: Have you just... 😳😳😳**

**CHIMISLOVE: Flirted back?!!!!!□□**

**SUGA: I haven't!!!!!!**

**CHIMISLOVE: You have!!**

**SUGA: I haven't!!!!!!**

**CHIMISLOVE: It made me speechless!!! And that's a hard thing to do!**

**SUGA: I meant you have an annoying but sharp way of speaking!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Sure you did...😏😏**

**SUGA: Haven't we talked about your soulmate?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Well I don't know him yet, I can flirt with whoever I want...**

Yoongi frowned and his gaze darkened. This guy was getting on his nerves... He

thinks he can flirt with whoever he wants?

**SUGA: And how are you going to explain that to him later, huh?**

**CHIMISLOVE: That he could bring his ass here earlier... ¯_(ツ)_/¯**

Well, Yoongi couldn't find a simple reply to that and it irritated him.

**SUGA: A second ago you were hyped up about his hands and smile and you just casually switched to flirting with me?**

**SUGA: How does that work? Is it so easy for you?**

He didn't get a reply for that. He read his own message again and again after a few minutes of silence and cursed under his nose, when he realised how rude he was.

And that his irritation wasn't an irritation...

It was a feeling he had never felt before.

Jealousy...

And who was he jealous of again? Himself?

Yoongi facepalmed. His love life knowledge and flirting skills were lower than 0.

Before he could text the apology, he got a new message...

**CHIMISLOVE: It's not a crime to enjoy your life...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I was wrong... I thought you were not the judging type...**

**CHIMISLOVE: But if you are going to think of me as a slut just because I'm good at flirting and I enjoy it...**

Yoongi's heart, squeezed painfully. He was fast to reply before Chim could continue.

**SUGA: NO! Wait! I'm sorry! I didn't mean that!**

**SUGA: I just don't know anything about flirting...**

**SUGA: Nor about the normal teenager life to be honest...**

Yoongi exhaled heavily to calm himself down.

**SUGA: I didn't mean to hurt you...**

There was a moment of nothing beside Yoongi's anxiety. Then he got a reply.

**CHIMISLOVE: *sighed* It's okay...**

**CHIMISLOVE: It's just my tongue doesn't have boundaries...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I will try not to flirt with you if it makes you uncomfortable...**

Yoongi's lips moved without his knowledge.

He blinked in surprise. Did he just pout?!

The fuck?! Never ever that happened to him!

What was this annoying feeling?

Was he...? Was he sulking?!

Well... he wasn't really happy about the idea of Chim controlling his flirting attempts... But how could he reverse this situation now?

He didn't know...

**CHIMISLOVE: I'm going back to sleep...**

**SUGA: Wait!**

Yoongi didn't know what the fuck is happening to him. He was nervous. Sweating. He was behaving like a kid! Like a boy with his...

... crush...

**CHIMISLOVE: ??????????**

He realised he stopped Chim without a reason...

But he actually had one... he thought, feeling, that he was still squeezing the paper.

**SUGA: I finished the lyrics...**

**CHIMISLOVE: REALLY!!!! Can I see it?!** □□

**SUGA: Yeah... Just let me type it here...**

Few minutes later Yoongi's trembling finger pressed the "send" button. He was anxiously waiting for any reaction.

*None of this is a coincidence*

*I'm just going with the flow*

*The world is different from yesterday*

*Just with your joy*

*When you call me*

*I go to your flower*

*As if I've been waiting*

*We bloom till it gets cold*

*Maybe it's the way of the universe*

*That's how it is*

*You know I know*

*You and me, I am you*

*I'm scared, just as much as my heart flutters*

*Because destiny keeps getting jealous of us*

*I'm just as scared as you*

*When you see me*

*When you touch me*

*The universe has moved for us*

*Without missing a single thing*

*Because our happiness has been planned*

*Cause you love me*

*And I love you*

*You are my penicillin*

*You saved me*

*My angel, my world*

*I'm your tricolor cat*

*Here to meet you*

*Love me now touch me now*

*Just let me love you*

*Just let me love you*

*Ever since the universe was first formed*

*Everything has been planned*

*Just let me love you*

Yoongi's eyes were glued to the lyrics he typed.

There was sooo much of him inside it... There were words there that just formed without his knowledge and appeared under his fingers. The part he wrote long ago... was just a beggining. The first moment he realised Chim is his soulmate... the words Yoongi had inside were about him. Were made for him...

**CHIMISLOVE: Hyung...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I know I should say something wise now...**

**CHIMISLOVE: But... I'm just overwhelmed...** □□□

**CHIMISLOVE: Can we talk about this tomorrow?**

**SUGA: Do you like it?**

**CHIMISLOVE: "like" is not a word I would use here...**

**SUGA: Okay... But can I have a request?**

**CHIMISLOVE: After you showed me this? You can ask for the shooting star and I will storm NASA to get you one...**

**SUGA: I don't want a star...**

**SUGA: But can you... name it?**

**CHIMISLOVE: You mean the title?**

**SUGA: Yeah...**

**SUGA: Can you do that?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Well, I thought about something, reading the words...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I don't know if it's good tho...**

**SUGA: What was it?**

**CHIMISLOVE: *Serendipity*...**

Serendipity...

A stroke of luck in finding valuable things unintentionally...

Yoongi smiled softly.

**SUGA: Sleep well...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Is it good?**

**SUGA: Naah...**

**SUGA: It's perfect...**

**CHIMISLOVE:** 🩶🩶🩶🩶🩶

---

How do you like the dynamics of my two main couples in this book?

Filler chapter...

I know...

Sorry...🙈

But the action is coming.

I thought I will make it longer... but I actually couldn't during the weekend and I didn't want to delay the chapter.

BlairWitch💝💝

# Chapter 26: 66'

**Mountain House, January 2066**

Snow was everywhere on the training field. It was hard to move through.

Could they clear it? Of course they could...

But Jiyoung and his unbelievable daughter - Minji - were strongly against it. Using the opportunity to teach the youngsters that it is not always easy to move.

And snow was perfect for it... All the trainees had to learn how to keep their balance. How to be fast when something was restraining their movements.

They were getting faster. All of the trainers could see that. After training like that in a normal environment their moves will be precise and flawless.

It was for sure hard for Soobin. But as hard as moving was hard for him... his aim was deadly. His arrows could hit any target, no matter how fast it was. He was able to shoot them from any position he found himself in. As clumsy as his legs were, his hands were absolutely steady. His eyes had eagle precision.

The winter and the cold were for sure Dami and Yoohyeon's kingdom. The two of them were like ice masters.

Elsa? She could learn from them...

Minho and Han barely or at all couldn't stand a chance against them. Jimin with his fire sword could, but usually was too soft for Yoohyeonie to do that. Taehyung could use any kind of power: fire, ice, water... whatever to keep Dami's spear at bay and give her a hard time. After their sparring both were usually so exhausted their soulmates had to drag them out of the field.

Jimin, Han and Yeonjun got a good amount of laughs when they witnessed Jungkook holding Taehyung's ankles under his armpits and dragging him through snow to the house or Yoohyeon who was doing the same with Dami, pulling her by her wrists with all her force. Taehyung and Dami begged them to leave them like that to die... but the younger ones didn't listen to their whining.

So Dami and Yoohyeon could possibly rock this winter... But did the competitive brat Jeon Jungkook, could let them have their time of glory?

No.

And did Dami, being the competitive bitch she was, would just give up like that to the younger?

No.

Dami, except Taehyung, was the only one that wasn't afraid to push Jungkook to go all out. And Jungkook honestly loved it.

There was some kind of older sister - younger brother competitive love between them. And both of them would obviously deny it.

Jungkook prefered use his power along with any weapon he got. And he liked his grandpa's light, black, deadly katanas the most.

So when Dami threw a snowball at the back of Jungkook's head, at the end of training one afternoon... The rest just looked at each other and consciously got out of their way, too exhausted after few hours of sparrings and games...

Jungkook slowly turned around...

Dami looked at him challengingly, raising her chin.

Jungkook corrected his grip around his favourite katana and he stuck his left hand. The air power made a long dagger, which Jiyoung was holding, break out of his hand and flew right into Jungkook's hand.

'Hmm...' Dami snorted. 'Wanna play hard? Fine...'

She hit the spear on the ground and another spear made out of ice appeared in her second hand.

'Oh my god...' Soobin gulped.

'My baby is so hot!' Yoohyeon squealed excitedly.

'What are you saying! They are going to kill each other!' Yeonjung bit his lip.

Taehyung crouched down. His gaze never trailed away from Jungkook.

A slow smirk appeared on his lips.

'Just enjoy the show...' he said quietly to the rest.

Jimin looked at him shortly and thoughtfully.

He didn't know a more protective motherfucker than Taehyung... But as Jungkook

was getting older... And since first unsealing a new side of Taehyung appeared... He had this unwavering faith in Jungkook. The strength to calm down his protective instinct and instead of stopping him, just enjoy watching him with this proud smirk as if he was saying in his mind:

*That's my boy.*

Jungkook swirled the katana in one hand when Dami attacked him. As her spear was longer than any other weapon she had advantage. She sent the ice wave of through the sacred treasure while the ice spear pointed at Jungkook's head.

Jungkook did a cartwheel to doge it, and landed on one knee, blocking the spear that chased after him with the dager.

His katana suddenly covered in fire deflected the ice shurikens that Dami sent at him. From his lower position he shortened the distance so Dami couldn't freely move the spears.

She jumped away, but Jungkook was right after her.

Taehyung was observing them like an eagle.

'Han...' he called out quietly. 'Shield Dami...'

Han looked at him shortly and without a question he sent his shielding power to cover Dami's body like a second skin.

Jimin crouched down next to Taehyung.

'Why Dami?' he asked.

Taehyung smirked.

'He doesn't want to hurt her...'

Jungkook katana slid through the surface of an invisible shield Dami was suddenly covered by. Dami was again in the attack position. The tip of her spear touched the ground making it slippery and Jungkook stepped on it, losing his balance. She used it to throw the ice spear at him, and slid on her shoes as if she was skating, going at him at an enormous speed.

Jungkook dropped the dagger and spread his hand with the fingers of his left hand, which were widely spread, when the high pitched sound echoed around the training field.

Everybody, except for Taehyung, who just gripped his sword tighter, when the crystal on it changed to jade colour, covered their ears.

At the same time the ice spear was destroyed by sound into sparkling shreds.

'Soobin... aim at Jungkook's head...' Taehyung ordered still with a steady, quiet, thoughtful tone.

Soobin blinked, but didn't question the request.

He pulled back the bowstring and a shiny arrow of light appeared. He gulped and released it.

Jungkook was still immersed in the fight with Dami. Blocking the spear with his katana. Blocking the ice creations of her with different forms of his power.

'Jeeze! He won't dodge it...' Jimin whispered, panicking, when he saw how fast the arrow was, how Jungkook was absolutely focused on Dami. He wanted to stand up and warned him, when Taehyung squeezed his wrist stopping him.

In the same second Jungkook's body was covered by shadow. Literally it was as if the shadow of him, which was falling under his feet, stood behind him and swallowed the light arrow.

Jimin let out the air he was holding.

'This was dangerous, you jerk!' he said angrily.

Taehyung peeked at him with the corner of his eyes.

'You think I would let anybody hurt him?' he said and one of his long fingers tapped the sword handle. Jimin looked at the blade of the sword. Ribbons of shadows were circling around it, coming out of the crystal.

Jimin's eyes widened.

Taehyung smirked, tilted his head and pointed at Jungkook with it.

'Go at him...' he said.

Jimin opened his mouth but then gripped his swords and went to help Dami.

Namjoon, Minji and Jiyoung, with their arms crossed on their chests, were observing the fight and all that was going around.

As much as they were fascinated by the fight, impressed by Dami's stubbornness and strength, shocked by Jungkook's powers... all three of them at the moment were focused on Taehyung.

On the way he was silently commanding the rest. On the way nobody questioned

the requests made with a deep voice...

Taehyung was predicting Jungkook's moves. And Dami's moves. Considering the abilities of both.

As much as Jungkook was the most powerful one. As much as he was THE fighter...

Taehyung... Taehyung was a tactician.

He was the leader...

**March 2066**

Jungkook was sulking hard.

Really, really hard...

He was sulking at the party that everybody else was enjoying...

Taehyung, Dami, Jimin, Minho and Yeonjun's graduation party. They were in Minho's house.

An amazing year has passed... His first year in highschool. And the only year in highschool with Taehyung...

There won't be holding hands in the school corridors anymore... Or fast, cute, simple pecks stolen between classes...

And who will make sure he ate his lunch huh?! This moron will starve himself to death! He was like a harvester when someone put the food in front of him, but he could forget about eating all day if he wasn't forced to eat...

Like now... all it took was to put the salad in front of him and he was in the middle of consuming it as if his life depended on it.

His cheeks got filled with food. He had this pout on his lips while munching, being absolutely, illegally cute...

Taehyung's cheeks got so chubby and red right now... Jungkook started to giggle looking at him.

Jungkook's eyes widened, when suddenly Taehyung dropped the chopsticks and

parted his lips, trying to catch his breath like a fish.

'F-fuck...' he barely choked out, holding his throat.

Jungkook jumped through the table, to him, but he literally didn't know what was happening.

Taehyung's face was swollen just like his throat.

'Call the doctor!!!! Or uncle JIN!!!'

Taehyung fell to the ground, he grabbed Jungkook's shoulder and tried to say something.

'Don't try to speak!'

'Jung...'

'HELP!!'

Everybody ran to them. Yoohyeon with the phone next to her ear speaking fast.

'M-my...' Taehyung tried to say.

Jungkook positioned Taehyung's head back, to let him breathe easier.

Jimin went out of the bathroom and looked at everybody around Taehyung.

'WHAT HAPPENED?!' he screamed.

'I don't know! He was eating and...' Jungkook started on the verge of tears.

Jimin's eyes fell on the salad on the table and he turned it upside down... His eyes fell on small pieces of peanuts in it.

'Where is his backpack?!' he said, panicking, looking around.

'Here!' Han threw it to him.

Jimin started to look through it.

'What are you doing?!' Jungkook screamed.

'He has an ampoule-syringe with epinephrine here!' Jimin explained. 'I GOT IT!'

He crouched down next to Taehyung and Injected the drug into the front side of his thigh. Jungkook was looking at it with terrified, widened and shocked eyes. Then his gaze fell to Taehyung's face. He took a desperate deep breath. He was

deadly pale. His face was covered in sweat.

With a trembling head, Jungkook slowly put his hand on his hair and stroked them calmingly. Taehyung from under heavy eyelids looked at him with gratefulness. He was looking at Jungkook. It was calming his heart rate, until his eyes closed.

'I called uncle Jin...' Yeonjun said in an absolutely quiet room.

Jungkook was looking at Taehyung's unconscious face for a bit longer before he turned his face to Jimin.

Jimin gulped under the unreadable expression of his eyes.

'He... h-he has an allergy to nuts....' he whispered. 'Y-you didn't know?'

Jungkook looked at the shreds of salad and a few little peanuts on the table. He hadn't said a thing... and it was worrying Jimin more than all of his powers combined.

'The ambulance service is already here.' Minho informed them, letting in the rescuers.

Jungkook stood up. Observing the medical service in silence. Not letting anything suspicious escape his attention.

He went after them, answering only about what happened. Giving them Taehyng's parents details. They allowed him to go with Taehyung... There was something around him that stopped them from questioning his presence in the ambulance.

He was standing, leaning on the wall, in front of the doors they took Taehyung in. When Jin ran there still in his doctor uniform from work, he answered to all his questions with "yes" or "no".

When Jin went inside to talk with the doctor, Jungkook's eyes only darkened.

*How dare he?*

Jin walked out a few minutes later.

He sighed deeply.

'Everything is fine,' he said calmingly. 'Anaphylactic shock wasn't strong and you reacted fast...'

'It wasn't me.' Jungkook disturbed him. 'It was Jimin...'

'Oh? Then good he was there... The faster the help the easier it is to heal the

allergy... Everything will be perfectly fine by the evening. If there is a need I will heal him after Namjoon comes back from work...'

Jungkook nodded.

'Can I go?'

Jin blinked surprised.

'I... Yeah... I will stay with him...'

Jungkook didn't answer. He just turned around and walked away.

*How dare he?*

*How dare he?*

*How dare he?*

*How dare he?*

*How dare they?*

Jimin tried to call Jungkook to know what's going on.

8 unanswered calls.

He called uncle Jin and finally got the information that everything will be fine. He also informed him that Jungkook went home.

It was more than strange...

It was suspicious. Just as his silence.

And answered calls...

Taehyung came back home in the evening absolutely, perfectly fine. Namjoon thoughtfully checked his state with his powers, before letting him go to Jungkook's house.

Taehyung was surprised, Jungkook wasn't around when he woke up.

And he felt it. The strange feeling of anger.

I made him anxious.

He opened the doors and walked to Jeon's house.

'Hi, uncle!' he said cheerfully.

Hoseok walked to him to hug him tightly.

'How do you feel? You scared us...'

Taehyung smiled widely.

'Perfectly fine... Sorry... I'm usually more careful in new places...'

Hoseok ruffled his hair.

'Good, Jin was nagging you to carry epinephrine with you...'

'I never had to use it tho...' Taehyung smiled shyly.

'There is always the first time...'

'Jungkook is upstairs?'

Hoseok's smile faded a bit.

'Yeah... he came back not so long ago...'

Taehyung gulped.

'How is he?'

'Honestly... I don't know... I thought he would be scared and shocked, but...' Hoseok shrugged. 'He didn't want to talk...'

'Okay... I will check...' Taehyung turned to the stairs.

Hoseok looked at his back.

'Tae? Have you ever told him?'

Taehyung turned, frowning.

'About the allergy? No. I thought you or dad did...'

Hoseok sighed.

'I think it escaped our attention... I don't think he knew...'

Taehyung gulped and nodded.

He walked upstairs, understanding what was going on, slowly.

Hoseok was wrong, thinking Jungkook wasn't shocked or scared...

He was.

To the point that he covered every little bit of those feelings... with anger.

Taehyung pressed the handle of the doors to Jungkook's bedroom.

They were closed.

He knocked.

No answer.

He knocked harder.

'Jungkook...' he called out.

No answer.

He tried a few times before taking out his phone from his pocket. He dialled Jungkook's number.

Rejected.

He texted:

**Tae: Open the door, Koo...**

*Read.*

No answer.

**Tae: Don't make me mad...**

*Read.*

No answer.

**Tae: Oh, come on! Don't be a brat...**

*Read.*

'I don't want to talk with you TAEHYUNG!' Jungkook screamed from the other side of the doors. 'You are perfectly fine right?! So get the fuck out of here!!!'

'Jesus Christ!! Don't be so childish!' Taehyung kicked the doors. 'Let me explain...'

The doors opened suddenly, showing enraged Jungkook.

'Explain what?!' he screamed. 'Huh?! WHAT DO YOU WANT TO EXPLAIN?!'

Taehyung opened his mouth, but Jungkook didn't even think about letting him speak.

'That you knew for years that you have an allergy?! That You haven't told me, you have emergency shots in your bag?!! Huh?! What do you want to explain, KIM?!'

'Jungkook...'

'Do you know how it felt?! I COULDN'T DO ANYTHING! I DIDN'T KNOW WHAT TO DO!!!' He was breathing heavily.

Taehyung tried to hold Jungkook's hand, but the younger one pulled it back harshly.

'IF JIMIN WASN'T THERE YOU COULD HAVE DIED!! Even he knew! And I didn't!'

'He knew because he saw the shots in my bag...' Taehyung tried to explain. 'It's not a fucking secret! I told all of them when they asked! Dami, Yeonjun... they knew from middle school. IT'S NOT A SECRET WE TRIED TO KEEP AWAY FROM YOU!'

'And nobody ever told me! You! My parents! Your parents!!'

'We thought you knew...' Taehyung said in a calming tone.

'I DIDN'T! I WAS AN INCH AWAY FROM YOU!! AND I WOULD LOOK HOW YOU ARE SUFFERING BECAUSE "EVERYBODY THOUGH I KNEW"!!!'

'Nothing happened, Koo... I'm fine...' Taehyung slowly held Jungkook's shoulders.

Jungkook broke out and slapped him.

Taehyung's eyes widened in shock, when he saw the tears in Jungkook's eyes and felt a stinging pain in his cheek.

'You could have died!!! So go die alone if you don't want me to save you!!' Jungkook said bitterly and made a move to close the doors.

Taehyung came out of the shock and stopped the doors with his shoe. He barged inside Jungkook's room, slamming the doors.

He grabbed him in half.

They wrestled for a moment. Jungkook was trying to run away from Taehyung's embrace and Taehyung was holding him in the steel cage of his arms. He was pressing his chest to Jungkook's back. His arms were circling around his waist, when bent in half Jungkook tried to free himself. Jungkook's breath was uneven, as if he was trying to hold the sobs.

'I c-can't lose you...' he cried out suddenly. 'I can't l-l-lose you... I lost you too many t-t-times...'

Taehyung's heart squeezed, but he didn't let him go, he dragged him to bed and sat there heavily, holding Jungkook between his legs. His one hand was still circled around his waist, while the other one caged around his chest to press him more to Taehyung's body.

'I'm fine...' he whispered to Jungkook's ear. 'I'm fine...'

His lips travelled to his temple softly to press the kiss there.

'I'm here, Koo...'

Jungkook was trembling from sobs, he couldn't stop. His hand travelled to Taehyung's wrist on his shoulder, but not to push it away. But to grip on it desperately.

'I'm here, baby...' Taehyung whispered. 'You won't lose me...'

Taehyung slowly shuffled, letting himself lay on the side. Pulling Jungkook with him. Holding him in assuring safety of his arms.

They laid on the bed like two spoons, with Taehyung's lips pressed to Jungkook's ear, constantly whispering:

'I'm fine...'

'You won't lose me...'

'I'm here...'

'I'm still here...'

**Still with you.**

---

I can only publish this short chapter today. Sorry.

You can think it's random, but those moments will be important...

Hope you enjoyed it.

BlairWitch❤❤

# Chapter 27: 66' - Midsummer Night's Dream

**Seoul, March 2066**

Jungkook woke up, feeling the painful dryness of his throat. Stinging pain in his eyes. He felt too hot. Did he sleep in his hoodie?

He opened his eyes. The room was dark. He felt the steady breath on his nape. Then his clouded mind registered the arms secring him tightly, to the point breathing was hard.

For a second he again felt the panic that absolutely won with his common sense few hours ago. The air caged in his lungs, so he tried to inhale it desperately. The arm around his chest instinctively pulled him closer.

'Calm down.' he heard a whisper.

Counterintuitively, the tightness around his chest helped him catch a deep breath instead of stopping it.

He repeated in his mind everything that happened and sighed heavily.

'That's the praise for being a hot headed dumbass...' he sulked. 'I always end up apologising...'

'Because I'm smarter. Older. And composed.'

'And prettier...'

'Absolutely not.'

'Yes.'

'No.'

'Yes.'

'No.' Taehyung said and cut the bickering. 'There is really something you should apologise for.'

Jungkook gulped. And shut his eyes.

So he didn't imagine it... He was hoping it was just a creepy, made up by his overly emotional mind, moment.

He slapped Taehyung.

'I'm so sorry...' he whispered, swallowing hard.

'Look at me.'

Jungkook shook his head, ashamed. How could he look Taehyung in the eyes now?

'I should never have hit you...' he said with a trembling voice.

Before he could understand what's going on he was under Taehyung.

Taehyung had his hands placed on both sides of his head. His soft locks fell on his forehead. Jungkook's legs and hips were blocked by his weight.

'I told you to look at me,' he said harshly.

Jungkook with widely spread eyes couldn't do anything else. Taehyung's gaze was dark. His face was pale. A bit of redness was visible on his cheek.

Jungkook with a painful expression touched the red mark on his cheek, with his fingertips.

'I'm sorry...' he whispered again.

'I don't need your apology for that! I'm fucking mad you hadn't told me you had more dreams!'

'I... I hadn't...' Jungkook gulped. 'I swear Taehyung... I had not.'

'Then why? Why did you say you lost me too many times?!' there was fear in Taehyung's voice. Under layers of anger. There was fear...

Jungkook understood.

Taehyung couldn't stop thinking about the reverse question. How many times had he lost Jungkook?

'I wasn't dreaming...' he whispered. His thumb soothingly caressed Taehyung's cheek bone. 'These are just excerpts. Like frames cut from different movies. Seconds of images that cannot be understood...'

'But you feel them.'

'Too less to be hurt by it. But enough to connect and comprehend...'

Jungkook slightly tilted his head, seeing Taehyung's unreadable expression. He calmingly brushed the bangs from Taehyung's forehead.

'You know how it is. You are dreaming too...'

Taehyung lowered his head to Jungkook's chest. His dreams... the flashbacks he was getting... were different. It wasn't painful. He wasn't struggling like Jungkook did...

He felt ashamed. While Jungkook was seeing the pain... he was seeing...

He gulped.

*Fingers going down the naked skin slowly in a dimmed light.*

*Nails drawing pink scratches on the back covered in sweat.*

*Intertwined fingers pressed to the white sheets.*

*Shiny from saliva lips.*

*Arched body, supported by strong hands on the waist.*

*Lips biting on lips to the point a red droplets appeared on them...*

Jungkook was wondering why Taehyung got so silent suddenly. His gentle fingers grabbed his jaw and lifted his head to make Taehyung face him.

'What are you dreaming about, Tae?' he whispered softly.

Taehyung barely, but shook his head.

'Tell me...' Jungkook said dreamily, while his fingertip brushed Taehyung's lips.

Taehyung felt lightheaded. Jungkook's voice, his touch... The safety of the dark room, lightened only by the patches of moonlight, coming through the windows.

In daze, his lips parted. But he didn't say anything.

'Tell me...' Jungkook's voice was like the call of the siren. His finger slid a bit between Taehyung's lips.

Taehyung grabbed his hand and pulled it away from his face, just a second before his lips fell on Jungkook's.

Jungkook gasped at the sudden action and a shiver ran down his spine when he felt Taehyung's tongue sliding between his lips.

Since the last angry kiss they stuck to the sweet kisses. But even then... being angry... Taehyung wasn't kissing him like that. With this much need and hunger.

His tongue caressed Jungkook's tongue, before he put more pressure and slid it even deeper, tasting the inside of his cheeks and palate.

Jungkook let out a whine inside the kiss. His head sunk in the soft duvet from the strength of Taehyung's kiss. He opened his mouth more, wanting Taehyung to tase him fully.

He shyly moved his tongue and lips to match Taehyung's moves.

Taehyung felt Jungkook's response and deepened the kiss. Jungkook shuffled under him, his leg found a more comfortable position. Taehyung felt how his thigh rested on his hip.

The movement made him sink deeper between Jungkook's legs. A wave of heat hit him hard.

The sound of wet kisses and erratic breaths was ringing in their ears.

Jungkook slid his hand inside Taehyung's hair and pulled it lightly, making their wet, covered in saliva lips separate for an inch.

'I feel so hot...' he breathed out inside Taehyung's mouth.

His voice was dizzy and dreamy. He had his eyes closed and was breathing heavily.

Taehyung fastly moved away from him, shocked by the sudden outburst of fire inside him. He was thinking fast what to say, what to do... How to calm the situation... He sat on the bed gulping hard.

He should get out of here...

He was terrified... he almost got hard...

Jungkook, absolutely oblivious to Taehyung's state of mind, wheezed in exasperation, fastly sat up and took off his hoodie.

Then, before Taehyung decided to get up from the bed, he turned and fell back into Taehyng's arms, pushing him on the sheet.

He hovered over Taehyung and cupped his cheek with one hand. He caressed it slowly, before leaning his head.

'I don't think...' Taehyung started hesitantly not knowing if he would be able to control himself.

'Good. Don't think...' Jungkook purred, getting closer.

'Jungkook...'

'Shut up, Tae...'

A bit of amusement in Jungkook's whisper made Taehyung's panic calm down. He was... curious. He smirked, feeling Jungkook's lips almost on his own.

'Shut me up then...'

'I'm going too...' Jungkook muttered and pressed his lips to Taehyung's mouth. He pleadingly licked Taehyung's upper lip like a kitten. It was driving Taehyung crazy when he was doing it. He was enjoying the tingling feeling, but more than that he was enjoying Jungkook's impatience...

Jungkook whined and bit his bottom lip. He wanted a deep kiss again.

'Mhm?' Taehyung let out teasingly, wanting Jungkook to voice out what he wanted.

Jungkook knew what Taehyung was doing. But he didn't want to give up this time. He grabbed Taehyung's shoulder and pulled himself on him. He sat on his stomach.

Taehyung widened his eyes and opened his mouth to say some kind of useless warning, but Jungkook used this moment to slide his tongue between Taehyung's lips.

After a moment hesitation Taehyung closed his eyes  feeling the sweet, slow, a bit og shy tongue of the younger.

He surrendered...

His hands reached Jungkook's waist and went under thin shirt... just to make sure he won't move too much. But the feeling of the hot skin under his fingers, made him stroke it gently, to the rhythm their lips and tongues were moving.

The blisful rhythm they enjoyed to the down...

**Daegu, March 2066**

'I won. Again. I'm going...' Yoongi said, throwing the last card on the table.

'Damn it!' Gahyeon cursed.

'I'm telling you it's black magic... It's impossible to win six times in a row!' Wooyoung squinted his eyes.

'Suck it up...' Yoongi shrugged and got up from the armchair.

'I don't want to suck anything from you...' Wooyoung stuck his tongue out.

Yoongi made a disgusted face and looked at San.

'Can you tame your boyfriend's mouth?'

'Why would he? Not like Wooyoung is against sucking him...' Gahyeon smirked.

'Jeezes!!! Gahy!!' Yoongi covered his ears for a second. 'I will just imagine you haven't said that and you don't know anything about sucking...' he mumbled to himself. Then glared at Woosan. 'You are depraving my sister!'

'What makes you think she wasn't depraved before she met us?' San laughed.

'I don't fucking want to hear that!' Yoongi marched out of the room.

Gahyeon, Wooyoung and San chuckled at him.

'Seems like our grumpy cat is not so grumpy recently...' San said.

'Yeah...' Gahyeon nodded with a sweet smile.

'Why are you two smiling? It's scaring the shit out of me!' Woosan shivered.

'Why? Most of the time he is in the music studio...' Gahyeon shrugged.

'And that's creepy! You never know when he will appear behind you!'

'I think I caught a glimpse of him smiling, when he was closing the doors a few days ago...' San frowned.

The three of them looked at each other and smirked slowly.

The guy was whipped as fuck...

Yoongi passed to the corridor glancing at his mother's room. He peeked inside and saw her sleeping, so he closed the door. Last time he talked to her... She moved her head. It was barely a move... Just a slight tilting of the head in his direction. Maybe it was just a muscle reaction, but he was hoping it was not...

He could let the noisy bunch win the card game... But he was in a hurry. It was almost 10 pm. And usually Chim was texting just before going to sleep. Sometimes it ended up with them texting until 3 am. Tho...

Yoongi looked at his phone... He had a plan today...

**SUGA: Hi...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Texting first? Wow...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Missed me so much?** □

Yoongi rolled his eyes. Really, really glad nobody could see his cheeks right now.

**SUGA: I have a deal for you...**

**CHMISLOVE: Again? What will I get?** 😊😊

**SUGA: Personal info.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Your name?**

Yoongi gulped. He wanted to tell him. And he wanted to know his name... But it was too dangerous. Min Yoongi was too easy to find...

**SUGA: No.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Meh... Then I'm not interested...** 😒

Yoongi pouted. What would have caught this guy off guard? Chim really was stopping his flirting attempts no matter how Yoongi tried to provoke him. Not that he was good at provoking... He literally didn't know how to do that... subtly...

But... No matter how shy Yoongi was in all this romantic bullshit... He was still the savage king... Maybe he should just not try to be subtle?

He smirked and typed.

Jimin was whistling under his nose. He was ready to have the deal with Suga no matter what simple info he would get in return. Just because it was fun... He just wanted to tease Suga a bit. This guy was too tense most of the time...

He casually unscrewed a bottle of choco drink, and started to drink the milky heaven, glancing at his phone with the corner of his eyes, when he got the reply.

He spit the drink all over his duvet and himself and started to cough.

**SUGA: Even in my dick?**

He was staring at the text with wide eyes. The hell?!

That surprised him...

He took a deep breath, and wiped his nose, from where the choco drink was coming out too.

UUUGGGGGHHHH!!!!

There were so many things he could answer to that!!! He was so tempted to do so!

But he said... he won't flirt... right?

RIGHT?!

*Yeah, Jimin-ah! Get your shit together!* He told himself sternly.

But it was suspicious... Suga never did something like that before...

It was almost like...

Jimin squinted his eyes.

Provocation...

**CHIMISLOVE: DUDE! What the fuck?!**

**CHIMISLOVE: I almost choke with my choco!** ( ≧Д≦)

**CHIMISLOVE: I had to throw away my clothes! I'm naked and cold!** (╥□╥)

Jimin smirked.

That should calm this boy down. He expected a cursing answer as before, instead he got:

**SUGA: I'm not sorry at all, that you are naked...**

Jimin's lips parted in shock.

This guy!!!

**CHIMISLOVE: Listen! Is this an invitation to flirting?** 

**SUGA: Maybe...**

Shy answer. That's better... Jimin felt his confidence coming back.

**CHIMISLOVE: I thought you don't like it...**

**SUGA: Never said that.**

**SUGA: You decided by yourself...**

Oooh? A grinch smile appeared on Jimin's lips.

**CHMISLOVE: Will I get the photo?**

**SUGA: Photo?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Of your dick...**

**SUGA: What the hell!!?**

**SUGA: NO!!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Then what? Size?**

**SUGA: I already regret that I said that!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Well... next time don't try to use my own weapon against me baby...** 

**SUGA: Baby?**

**SUGA: You are the baby here.**

**SUGA: A naked one...**

Jimin giggled and teased:

**CHIMISLOVE: Someone wants me to be his baby... I see...** ( ᵕ̤ᴗᵕ̤)

**SUGA: I...**

**SUGA: I honestly don't know what to say to that...**

Jimin cooed at the honest answer. He took pity at the poor guy and changed the topic.

**CHIMISLOVE: So what's the deal?**

**SUGA: The *Serendipity* lyrics... Can you record singing it?**

Jimin's eyes widened.

**CHIMISLOVE: What? But... I...**

**SUGA: You sing right? You said you are in a music academy...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Yeah, with my friends but...**

**SUGA: Then you can do it right?**

**CHIMISLOVE: But I've never tried to sing without music...**

**CHIMISLOVE: And the song I've never heard before! I don't even know the melody!**

Jimin's heart squeezed. He could imagine the puppy eyes in his head.

**SUGA: Please?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Is this the personal info you wanted to tell me? Your birthday? When is it?**

**SUGA: 9th March.**

**CHIMISLOVE: In 5 days?! It's not possible!**

**CHIMISLOVE: I would do it! I swear but it's...**

**SUGA: I don't want it now. I just want you to sing it...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Why me?**

Yoongi was staring at the question, knowing the answer for it too well.

*Because it was written for you...*

He wanted to hear the voice again.

He wanted to hear the line "*Just let me love you...*" as he heard it briefly so many years ago...

**SUGA: Because you are the only one that knows about it.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Fuck... I... Suga I would really do it, but...**

**SUGA: If not by you... It won't ever be sung...**

**CHIMISLOVE: What's with this pressure?!**

**CHIMISLOVE: I can't do it without music... at least some notes... Hint of melody...**

Suga gulped and looked around the room. At all the instruments. At the laptop and equipment. At his piano...

Writing was one thing...

Composing...

Was he able to do it? Did he still have this inside him?

He was torn between being scared and wanting to hear his soulmate's voice again.

**SUGA: And if you could get the melody...**

**SUGA: Would you do it?**

His hands were trembling when he typed down. The decision he made made him scared and... excited.

**CHIMISLOVE: I guess... But how will you...**

**SUGA: Give me a month.**

**CHIMISLOVE: You can make music?**

**SUGA: I could... in another life... I could.**

**SUGA: I don't know about now...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I will do it.**

**CHIMISLOVE: If it's the music you will write... I will do it.**

**CHIMISLOVE: And you can do it too...**

**SUGA: I will try.**

**CHIMISLOVE: I believe in your "try". The last time you "tried" I got the most beautiful lyrics I've ever seen...**

**SUGA: Okay.**

**SUGA: Night.**

**CHIMISLOVE: You can do it!**

**SUGA: Yeah. Shut up.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Not shy when I'm naked, but shy when I encourage you... So cute! 🥺🥺🥺**

**SUGA: Fuck you!**

**CHIMISLOVE: You wish...** 

Yoongi smiled at the phone, seeing the cheeky response. He took a deep breath and sat by the desk before he chickened out. He opened his laptop and put the headphones on his head.

His soulmate wanted a melody...

So he will gift him one...

**April 2066**

Jin and Namjoon were watching the news. Taehyung stood behind the couch feeling how tense they both were for the last hours.

*The Korean president announced negotiations and mediation with ISA and 3EO. The negotiations will take place within a month on neutral ground in Busan.*

The press conference with the President of Korea was shown:

*"Recent events indicate that the Interdependents are cooperating with the military and not stirring up conflict. They deserve trust, unlike the terrorists who are disrupting the peace of ALL residents of Deagu and neighboring provinces.*

*Many mistakes have been made in the past.... due to ignorance and fear. We are forgetting that we are all one nation. We are Korean citizens no matter who has what talent. And Korea was not and won't ever be be a country where terrorists kill children...."*

*"Mr President, what are the plans for Deagu?"*

*"This is not just Deagu we are talking about here. We are talking about improving government activities in all parts of the country. The work will start with Deagu, but we all equally need to be involved in improving and repairing our coexistence. In Deagu, it is planned to hold local elections to appoint representatives of the city who will treat all its residents equally. Independent Secretaries of State will also be appointed to consult and supervise the actions and decisions of local authorities.* Thereafter, all parts of the country will go through exactly the same procedure..."

*"Who will take part in the debate?"*

*"The total lineup of participants has not yet been determined, we are waiting for confirmations. Certainly the representative of the UN Secretary. Director of the International Council of Interdependents in Korea, Bang Yongguk and Director of ISA, Na Dokyun...."*

*"Will you be one of the participants in the meeting?*

*"Yes."*

Jin turned down the volume of the TV and sighed.

'Hope it's the end of this madness...'

'Well, ISA and 3EO were working along military and the only problem was with the terrorists attacs. They destroyed half of the city...'

'But it's not like the non-Interdependants start to be nice now...' Taehyung frowned.

'No. But with this we dealt for years... We can't fight against fire with fire...' Namjoon sighed. 'Dokyun and Kyng work hard to tame their people. They were helping our people with hurting non-Interdependants. Even if they started...'

'Yongguk worked hard to convince the president to take legal actions. ICI is working like crazy to prepare suitable changes in law and organisation of the

country...' Jin added. 'They will discuss it later...'

'Are they planning to disband ISA and 3EO?' Taehyung asked.

'I don't know about 3EO...' Namjoon said. 'But they want to make ISA a specialised unit of law enforcement... I'm praying Dokyun won't be opposed to it...'

Taehyung thought about the news and suddenly looked at Namjoon.

'Representative of the UN Secretary?! Were they talking about YOU?!'

'Not confirmed yet...' Namjoon said hesitantly.

'Are you kidding me?!'

'Calm down Tae...' Jin said warningly. 'There is no need to yell...'

'My father is going to the international meeting that will be the first target of terrorists! And you are saying that there is no need to yell?!'

'It's not some kind of casual meeting, Taehyung... The president itself will be there. The place will be secured more than Forth Nox...' Namjoon said calmingly.

'They are setting explosives everywhere!'

'The place will be checked before. I assure you...'

'Why are you doing this?! Can't you just be a normal teacher? Working at Uni? Having a peaceful life?'

'No.'

'Why? Others can...'

'If everybody will think "others can do it" nothing will ever be done...' Namjoon cut the discussion.

Taehyung widened his eyes.

Namjoon stood up and walked to Tae. He ruffled his hair.

'Doing what's right... is not easy. Taking steps, just because they should be taken and nobody else will do them... That's how we fight for the future Tae.'

'I know...' Taehyung sighed. 'I'm just worried...'

'It's just a meeting, yeah? It will be okay...'

'Yeah...' Taehyung said sadly and added: 'I'm going to Koo...'

When he left without taking anything with him, Jin looked at Namjoon.

'Don't blame yourself, Joonie... Jungkook will calm him down.'

Namjoon stretched his hand to Jin. He took his palm and kissed it.

'You never said a word about this... I know it's not easy.'

'It would be easy if You would take me with you...'

'I want to. But I can't. The list of participants is strictly reserved.'

'Just to Busan then... I can stay in the hotel...' Jin said with pleading eyes.

'I will ask Yongguk if it's possible...' Namjoon kissed Jin's temple.

Jin snorted.

'If it's Yongguk's decision then let me take care of it...' he pulled out his phone from his pocket.

'What are you doing?' Namjoon frowned.

'Texting Jieun... We will see how long he will say "no" when his wife will get to know he doesn't want to take her with him...'

'You are a scary person, Jin...'

**May 2066**

Yoongi took off his headphones. And closed his eyes.

The music was still playing in his head.

He didn't know... why it turned out to be so soft. He didn't know he had this softness inside him...

Instrumental *Serendipity*... was ready.

All the notes together... sounded like a lullaby.

Maybe that's what he wanted...

Maybe he wanted Chim to sleep peacefully when he couldn't be beside him...

It took two months. A month more than he suspected. But he was not satisfied till now. And he wanted it to be perfect.

He created a fake email account. He secured the file in Google Drive and sent the link to the email Chim gave him.

**SUGA: It's ready...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I'm scared to open it...**

**SUGA: Too late baby... You promised...**

**CHIMISLOVE: ...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Since when are you calling me "baby"?**

**SUGA: Since now.**

**SUGA: Prefer something else?**

**CHIMISLOVE: No?**

**SUGA: Then shut up and take it.**

**SUGA: I'm going to sleep.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Can I ask friends for help? I will need it to record it the best way I can...**

**SUGA: Yeah.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Can I really listen to it?**

**SUGA: You are the only one who can...**

**SUGA: Night.**

Jimin was staring at the chat.

*You are the only one who can...*

His heart fluttered.

He cupped his flushed cheeks.

*Calm down stupid heart...* - he told himself.

He turned off the lights in his room. He shut the curtains so even the lights from the streets won't come inside.

He laid down on the bed and put on his headphones.

His thumb shivered over the link...

He downloaded the file.

Yoohyeon would curse him for downloading something from an unknown source, but right now he didn't care...

His heart had wings...

He pressed the play and closed his eyes.

He didn't want any other sense involved. Just hearing.

The first moment made him gulp hard. His heart skipped.

But the beat...

Made him feel as if he was floating through myriads of stars. A small mikrokosmos opened before him.

He was sitting on the roof of the world and an endless sky was spread in front of him.

Between starts he saw a ribbons of words...

Words of *Serendipity*...

He repeat the melody.

And again.

And again.

Until the words and the music... harmonized in his heart.

Then he gently fell asleep...

**June 2066**

Jungkook was sitting next to Taehyung on the couch, holding his hand calmingly on his tight. Two of them, Minji and Hoseok, were watching the news.

The statement was recorded and given to the media as nobody could enter inside the secured building.

The President of Korea, Kim Namjoon and Min Kyung were standing on the podium.

'The negotiations were successful. The results will be presented to parliament and implemented as soon as possible.' said the president.

'Each official office will have a consultant in the form of an Interdependant. This includes schools and universities, police and military... Each official office will have a consultant in the form of an Interdependant. This includes schools and universities.... Any violation of equality within Korea will be reported to the established Equality Protection Authority. ' Namjoon continued to point out the main findings.

'ISA will be incorporated into the national army as a specialized unit. The 3EO will become part of the International Council of Interdependants, responsible for curating the schools. We will continue what we started with - ensuring the safety of children. All children... By teaching and making them aware and not by separating them....' Kyung explained.

'Candidates for the post of Governor of Deagu and Secretary of State of the province, will be presented within a month. Fast-track elections will be held in October....' the President informed.

The recording was long, but Minji turned off the TV and let out a long sigh.

'Finally...' she smiled at Taehyung. 'Your father did a good job...'

'As always...' Tae smiled back. 'Will it be okay auntie?' he asked unsure.

'We have the president on our side... 3EO and ISA are cooperating... I just...' a sad smile appeared on her face. 'It could be done a long time ago... If Jaehyun wouldn't be killed... We could avoid all of it.'

'Well, now we will need to work hard!' Hoseok ruffled Jungkook's hair. 'We will fight prejudices with culture... and knowledge.'

Jungkook nodded.

'Mrs Jieun already is planning the exhibitions, concerts... and a lot of other events.'

'Culture is something people are drawn to by heart. To music, dance, art, dance... Even if their minds can say otherwise it's hard to fight against beauty in all forms of art...' Hoseok smiled.

'And that's why we have a lot of work at the Academy...' Taehyung sighed.

'Yeah. But it's fun...' Jungkook smiled.

For him it was fun. Double fun.

Not just because of the music. But because the Academy of Arts was a private school, where they all were going no matter the age. It was an extra school that held classes in the evenings. Jungkook was still going to his high school and Taehyung began college. He decided to study Photography... Jungkook was more into Filmmaking, but he was happy they will share the same Department of University in two years.

Jimin chose Dance so he was spending more time with Hoseok now than ever.

But the Academy of Music... No matter what they were studying... They were meeting there under the gentle eyes of Bang Jieun - wife of Yongguk. She was the head of the school and their vocal teacher.

So the whole pack was still meeting a few times a week: 2 times a week at dance classes with Hoseok, 2 times a week at the academy and on Saturdays in Mountain House on their training.

That's why Jungkook liked the academy. Studies were not easy and he could spend some more time with Taehyung and the rest, beside the time they made for each other on Sundays.

They started to go for small, cute dates. They had never called them like that tho... They were a bit too shy...

And of course... they wanted to avoid their parents roasting and teasing them...

But the academy was the place when Jungkook finally noticed Jimin's strange behaviour.

He was standing in the corridor waiting for classes. Absolutely unaware of his surroundings. Giggling like a mad man on his phone...

'What's with Jimin?' Jungkook asked Dami.

She looked at Chim uninterested and shrugged.

'He is pretty much like that for a month or so...'

'Taehyung didn't say anything...' Jungkook frowned.

'You know Taehyung... Pretty much dense in this matter...' Yeonjun joined them, biting an apple.

'Yeah, he is interested only when you are involved...' Minho hit Jungkook's back.

'He better...' Jungkook mumbled, making the rest laugh. 'I will talk with him...' he marched in Jimin's direction. He took Jimin's phone.

'WHAT THE FUCK, YOU BRAT!' Jimin cursed, trying to get back his phone.

'Spill the tea...' Jungkook hid the phone behind his back.

'What tea?' Jimin tried to reach the phone.

'Who are you texting with?'

'Online friend.'

Jungkook blinked.

'Online friend?' he put his hands on his hips. 'Hyung! Who is he? What do you know about him? Maybe he is a pervert? Or just dangerous?'

'Get rid of this scolding tone, bro...' Jimin squinted his eyes and smacked Jungkook's head. 'I have known him for a few years. It's not dangerous. We just talk. No pictures. No personal details.'

Jungkook hesitantly gave the phone back to Jimin and crossed his arms over his chest.

'You are not falling in love, right?' he asked, worried.

'What? NO!' Jimin started to laugh. 'I just have fun flirting as always...' he shrugged.

'I don't want you to get hurt, hyung...' Jungkook said seriously.

'I won't.' Jimin rolled his eyes. 'Stop worrying and help me...'

'With what?'

'I found a poem. And I downloaded instrumental music. I think it matches perfectly... I have an idea for a song. Can you help me record it?'

'Umm... Yeah sure. I will need Yoohyeon and Tae, but no problem. And Mrs Jieun needs to give her permission to use the recording studio...'

'I will get the permission. Don't worry...' Jimin smiled widely. The vibration was heard. 'Oh, I want to text back before classes so see you in few.'

Jungkook frowned looking at Jimin walking away.

Taehyung appeared behind him. Jungkook could feel his presence on his back before he even spoke.

'What's going on...?'

'Flirting? Sure. But he is whipped as well...' Jungkook said. 'Just look after him...'

Taehyung looked at Jimin's back.

'Do you think it's dangerous?'

'No. I don't think everybody wants to hack his social accounts and steal personal details if that is what you mean... But I'm just worried...' he shrugged.

Taehyung put his arm around Jungkook's shoulders.

'I will watch over him...'

**July 2066**

Jimin stormed the house and threw his shoes. He heard the news from the living

room.

*"... was appointed as the new candidate for governor of Deagu's post. He is a well known politician working along Kim Namjoon for Interdependdats equality. He was a vice president in the previous government. It seems the citizens of Deagu Interdependants as well as non-Interdependdatns are glad he decided to be a candidate..."*

Jimin ran upstairs, halting briefly in the doors to the living room.

'Everything fine? Everything good?' he asked, raising his thumbs up.

Chanyeol and Baekhyun looked at him surprised. He was in such a hurry.

'Yeah... The dinner is...'

'Not hungry!!' Jimin yelled running up the stairs.

He locked his doors. And ran to his laptop.

He took a calming breath and put the flash drive to the computer.

He hesitantly uploaded the recording to the file on the drive Suga shared with him.

He took his phone... and was staring at it for a moment, when the doubts hit him.

Was it good enough?

Jimin felt it was good, but... was it giving justice to the music and lyrics?

They were so beautiful...

But he knew... He can't do it differently... He sang the way he felt...

Should he send it?

He started to bite his nails.

Yoongi couldn't breathe. The air was so hot and heavy.

The midsummer was making oxygen hard to find in the air.

Even at night.

And the worst thing that could happen to him was to not be able to sleep...

So he went out to the terrace and laid down on the sunbed, with his headphones, happy he could at least feel a bit of the night wind.

He was looking for a dream. A little bit of it at least... The days were hectic. Not hard and scary, but hectic. But if they work hard and the situation will be as steady as now... maybe next year he will be in Seoul... In University.

And as he realised lately... in the same University Chim was in...

He wiped the sweat from his forehead and ruffled his hair. He wanted to sleep... yet the heat didn't let him. It was just making his eyelids heavy.

He felt the vibration and lazyly looked at his phone. He widened his eyes. Reading the texts.

He gulped heavily and fastly stopped the music he was listening to. He found the file and looked at the mp3.

He set the volume to max. He didn't want to hear anything else...

Just the voice...

He pressed the play.

This voice...

Voice he heard once...

Was here.

Suddenly Yoongi realised he was looking at the starry sky. With the stars as bright as they were never before. He felt as if he had never seen the sky at night before...

His heartbeat synchronised with the beat of the song.

This voice was like penicillin... It could soothe any pain... Heal any wound in the heart.

Yoongi started the song again and thought about the message Chim sent.

*When I first heard the melody... I saw stars...*

Yoongi closed his eyes and thought just before falling asleep:

*When I hear your voice... I see them...*

For the first time in years, Min Yoongi, in the middle of the summer, during the hot night... dreamed.

**August 2066**

It was inhumanly hot...

Taehyung was melting.

They set up the pool in the garden but the water inside was hot too...

Kims and Jeons decided to have a peaceful summer weekend. So they all were sitting under the shade in the garden in light clothes.

Jin was eating ice cream, occasionally feeding Namjoon who was reading the book, not knowing what was going on around him.

Taehyung came out of the house with drinks. He gave juice to Minji who had her face covered by the huge hat. He looked around to find Jungkook.

When suddenly he was sprayed with cold water.

'YAAAAA!!!' he screamed in shock and heard a mischievous laughter.

He turned around and saw Jungkook with a garden hose in hand.

'YOU LITTLE!!!' he started to chase after him, even if Jungkook was constantly spraying him with water.

Finally he grabbed him from behind and they started to fight over the hose, but absolutely drenched.

They were so involved in their wrestling that they didn't notice Hoseok recording everything with a huge smile on his face.

Taehyung finally took the hose from Jungkook's hand and started to spray him mercilessly.

'Tae! Stop!! Stop!!! Kim Taehyung put this fucking hose down!!'

'You started! Say, sorry!'

'Never!'

Jungkook started to cover his face to protect it from the water, while laughing.

The grass got wet and slippery. Jungkook tried to take the hose from Taehyung's hands and fell down. Pulling Taehyung down with him by accident.

Tae fell on him and started to dirtied his face with the grass, mud and water that covered the ground.

'Stop it! Stop it! I'm sorryyyy!!!!' Jungkook cried out, laughing.

Taehyung stopped messing him up and looked at him from above with a wide satisfied smile.

Their gazes met.

Taehyung slightly leaned his head to him...

Jungkook gulped and pushed Taehyung off of himself suddenly. He fastly stood up.

'Gonna clean myself!' Jungkook screamed while walking to Jeon's house.

Taehyung frowned, sitting on the wet grass. He looked at Jungkook's back thoughtfully.

Yeah... heat wasn't Taehyung's biggest problem right now...

Since the hot night of kisses a few months ago Jungkook often was stopping him, pushing him away or keeping his distance. He jumped startled at Taehyung's touch, which he did not expect...

Till now Tae thought it was because after their heated up kisses, when the stream was freed, Jungkook got scared and wanted to put their interactions back on the innocent tracks...

But right now... he pretty much could guess what was the real reason...

He laid down in the mud again and looked at the absolute clear sky.

Perfect... What should he do now?

He was going through it last year and it wasn't at all pleasant... It was mainly

moments of being ashamed of his own body reactions and fighting with himself if he should touch himself for six months. And after he decided that's the better way then avoiding Jungkook... he still felt guilty...

And he wasn't as fragile in those matters as Jungkook...

Sometimes Taehyung felt as if the guilt was Jungkook's best friend. He was first to blame himself for everything...

How could he help him now?

Touching him like that was absolutely out of discussion! Jungkook was just 16...

Taehyung covered his hot face with his arm, already absolutely embarrassed about the talk he was going to have with Jungkook...

And if anybody would wonder why wouldn't he ask any of his four parents to talk with Jungkook... Well, Taehyung was a possessive, 18-year old bish...

Nobody beside him will talk with HIS boyfriend about his dick!

Three days later, during a hot night, Taehyung woke up suddenly from a hot dream. He got used to dreams like that... and a cold shower in the middle of the night, in this temperature was a blessing...

He was almost sure midsummer night's dreams were even harder to stand.

Even with the balcony's doors opened widely the temperature was unbearable.

He wanted to go to the bathroom when he noticed a bedside lamp lit up in Jungkook's room. He frowned. Did Jungkook... wake up too?

And more importantly... was he dreaming too?

Taehyung jumped over the railing to the other balcony. Jungkook had his balcony's door open too. But he was nowhere in the room.

Taehyung sat on Jungkook's bed with his back resting on the headboard and repeated what he wanted to tell Jungkook.

Basically something along the lines of: *it's okay to touch yourself...*

He hit his face with a pillow.

*Get a grip, Taehyung!* He told himself.

The problem was... he didn't want Jungkook to touch himself. HE wanted to touch him...

But he couldn't yet...

So it was the only option.

He didn't want Jungkook to avoid him.

Jungkook came to the room quietly. He was wearing just a towel around his waist. He was drying his hair with the other towel. Together with him a fresh, ice cold scent of the shower gel filled the room.

Jungkook didn't notice Taehyung, he was turned with his back to the bed. He threw the towel on the chair next to the desk and suddenly hide his face in his hands. Just pull his hair and groan in frustration a second later...

Taehyung checked him out throughtfully from his ankles, through his slim waist, back and shoulders. He gulped and lowered his gaze on his lap, before speaking:

'Cold shower didn't help?'

Jungkook turned around fast, gripping on his towel, before it almost slipped.

'What are you doing here?' he gasped, making a step back. In the dimmed room he was barely visible.

'I had a dream...' Taehyung said. 'Did you?'

'N-no...' Jungkook lied and turned around.

'Are you afraid of me?'

'What a bullshit!' Jungkook rolled his eyes. ' Of course not!'

'If not then it's pretty stupid of you to not share with me your problem... Because I've been going through the same thing for more than a year... I pretty much was as panicked as you right now, not so long ago...'

Jungkook still didn't look at Taehyung. His face was red like a strawberry... and what a cold shower could not fix, Taehyung's presence absolutely made worse...

'What I want to say is that you don't have to go through this okay? You will end up doing this either way or we will have to absolutely stick to holding hands for the next 2 years...'

'I don't want that...' Jungkook pouted.

'And I don't want you to avoid me.... Jungkook, there is nothing wrong about it, okay? Or are you mad at me that I've done that?'

Jungkook shook his head rapidly, still not looking at him.

'So can you tell me the reason so we can finish this talk and die from embarrassment after? You don't know how? What's so wrong about dealing with it!?' Taehyung was speaking fast, wanting to run away from the topic as soon as possible.

'Jeeze! Call it jerking off, you making it sound creepy, beating around the bush!' Jungkook snapped. 'And I don't want to deal with it!'

'Cold showers won't always help... And you are jumping at every accidental touch...'

'Well I'm not as good as you at controlling myself...' Jungkook bit back. 'You predicted it. So now have fun...'

'I don't want to have fun! And your age was helping me control myself! Why is it a problem for you...'

'Because...' Jungkook gulped and whispered reluctantly. 'I'm yours... It feels wrong to touch myself...'

The heavy silence filled the room.

Taehyung heaved a harsh breath and licked his lips.

The mixture of feelings he felt was insane. He was an inch from jumping on Jungkook. The only thing that stopped him wasn't even his protectiveness right now. But the promise he and Jungkook made to their parents, that they will be responsible.

He was pleased as fuck by Jungkook's answer.

Yes. Jungkook was his. Taehyung wanted to have a little bit of him.

But he couldn't be selfish. He didn't want him to struggle...

So... they will do it the hard way then...

Jungkook gulped, looking at the desk, not seeing it. Absolutely insecure.

'Say something...' he whispered.

He was answered by the sudden darkness in the room, when Taehyung turned off the bedside lamp.

The sudden deep whisper came from the bed.

'Come here...'

'W-what?' The wave of heat, striked Jungkook. He turned around fast, but couldn't see anything in the darkness.

'Come... Trust me. I will help you to relax...'

'B-but...'

'Or is my presence not relaxing for you anymore?' he said a bit teasingly.

'No... I-if you are okay with my s-state, then just let me put on some clothes...'

'It's enough that I'm dressed... And yes, I'm fine as long as you are fine with my state...' Taehyung said calmly. 'Come... Sit with me as we always sit...'

Jungkook felt a bit better knowing Taehyung was struggling too.

Still looking down, being shy even in the darkness, Jungkook climbed on the bed. He craved Taehyung's calming presence, even knowing that it could have the opposite effect...

He made sure his towel was still tightly wrapped around him, before fitting himself between Taehyung's legs. He gulped when his back leaned on Taehyung's chest.

Taehyung was fast to embrace his tummy with his arms.

This was their position.

The position in which Taehyung was securing Jungkook when he was a wobbly baby.

The position in which they watched movies and played games when they were kids.

The position in which they were crying and solving arguments.

The position where space wasn't allowed and calmness was welcomed...

Taehyung nuzzled his nose into Jungkook's hair. They were a bit wet. And smelled of menthol and... ice. His fingers started to freely caress Jungkook's sides.

Jungkook's hands responded, stroking Taehyung's tights up and down slowly.

'Better?' Taehyung asked.

'Half of me is relaxed. And the other half is even more tense...' Jungkook giggled.

Taehyung pressed his lips under Jungkook's ear. He instantly felt the shiver that ran down Jungkook's body.

'You are not helping...' Jungkook choked out and squeezed Taehyung's tights.

Taehyung moved his lips down the curve of Jungkook's neck. His left hand moved up his chest to stroke the soft skin there.

'T-Tae...'

'You said you don't want to touch yourself because of me...' Taehyung whispered to Jungkook's ear. His right hand reached the towel and started to pull it lightly. 'What if I ask you to touch yourself...'

Jungkook felt the waves of heat coming up and down his body. He felt dizzy and held his breath. He felt the kiss on his ear and a tip of tongue touching it.

Taehyung cupped Jungkook's right hand with his palm and pressed his hand to Jungkook's inner thigh. He led it up, holding it gently but firmly.

'I can't touch you yet, Koo...' he whispered. 'So do it for me...'

Taehyung's hand made Jungkook close his own fingers around his cock.

Jungkook let out a small whimper. His head fell on Taehyung's shoulder, exposing his neck for the other's lips.

Taehyung let go of Jungkook's hand and started to trail his nails and fingertips on his tight.

'Touch yourself for me Koo...' Jungkook pressed his back more to Taehyung and hesitantly moved his hand. His involuntary movements were causing friction over Taehyung's abdomen, making him breath heavily.

Taehyung knew the first time wouldn't take long. Not in this heat...Not in this steamy, scented heavily of night flowers, air...

But he didn't know earlier that he would want to talk to Jungkook like that.

Control him like that...

'Soon it will be my hand on your dick...' he whispered, kissing Jungkook's shoulder blade. Jungkook whimpered. 'And not just my hand... I will lick you there...'

Jungkook trembled and turned his head, asking for the kiss.

Taehyung nails dug more inside the skin on his inner thigh.

Jungkook parted their lips in daze.

'Hickey...' he whispered into the other's mouth.

Taehyung bit the place between the neck and the shoulder and started to suck there harshly.

He knew Jungkook was close. His tight was twitching under Taehyung's hand.

'Aaah... aah.... T-Tae...'

Jungkook little mewls. The small movements of his body, he couldn't stop, were making Taehyung feel the bliss in his stomach.

'Don't be scared...' he whispered, licking the hickey. 'I will catch you...'

When Jungkook crossed the edge he understood what Taehyung was talking about. It was like falling and he for a moment got scared.

But the reassuring grip around his waist and the soft kisses on his neck brought him back from the daze.

'S-so t-this is orgams?' he asked shyly.

Taehyung chuckled at the cute question, hiding his face in Jungkook's hair.

'More like release... I imagine orgasm is much stronger...'

'C-can I help you like that?' Jungkook asked shyly.

'No need...' Taehyung replied amused. 'Your cute noises and moves were quite stimulating...'

'I...' Jungkook gulped. 'Oh...o-okay...'

'Light headed?'

'Y-yeah...'

'Me too...' Taehyung admitte, he grabbed Jungkook's chin and turned his face to himself. He kissed him lightly. 'I will go and change. Clean yourself... I will come back...'

Jungkook nodded and moved away from the bed, wrapping again in the towel.

Taehyung came back a few minutes later and laid down next to Jungkook, who shuffled and backhugged him. He kissed Taehyung's nape.

They closed their eyes, feeling the dreamy state lingered. The divide inside the dreams, a bit less innocent, but still pure...

The Fate let them have their *Midsummer Night's Dream...*

It let them enjoy and collect the next sweet memory to warm them up...

*Because Tempest was coming...*

---

I know you are simps for Yoonmin.

But honestly Taekook's relationship is much harder even if they are together. Becasue they can't actually hide anything before each other... They share the moments normal couple never share. And they need to find their way to deal with it...

7540 words...

How was the chapter?

BlairWitch❤

# Chapter 28: 66' - TEMPEST

*We are such stuff as dreams are made off, and our little life is rounded with a sleep.*

William Shakespeare *The Tempest*

**208 AD, China**

*King Liu Bei looked at his strategist Zhuge Liang.*

*'We will be lost if the wind doesn't change.'*

*Zhuge Liang gaze was calm.*

*'We need time... but the wind will change...' he assured calmly, bowing his head respectfully.*

*'We don't have time. My wife's life is at stake.'*

*'Trust me my King. The wind... will change.'*

*Liu Bei was looking at his strategist for a long time. Then his gaze travelled to two people standing behind him for a moment.*

*He hesitantly nodded his head.*

*Zhuge Liang bowed deeply just as the soldiers behind him and slowly walked away, when the King gave him a sign with his hand.*

*Zhuge Liang walked outside of the King's tent and walked outside of the army's camp, followed by his two trusted men.*

*He looked at the bay and grass bending under the force of the wind. Bending in the wrong direction...*

*They succeeded in taking the arrows they desperately needed, but the numerically-superior forces of the northern warlord Cao Cao were still in favour of the weather. Their whole plan won't succeed if the force of the wind won't push the ships strong enough into their enemy direction.*

*Only their Queen play was keeping Cao Cao from attacking right now.*

*He turned to his two trusted soldiers, friends and... his hope.*

*Junjie and Tengfei's relationship was absolutely secretive. Nobody talked about it out loud. But everybody knew about it. They were protected by other soldiers, by their King and by Zhuge Liang...*

*They were the best warriors. Special ones. Adored and admired by others.*

*'Will the wind change?' Zhuge Liang asked, looking at Junjie.*

*Junjie looked around. His gaze fell on Red Cliffs, on the river and bay.*

*He nodded and smirked, he took a fan from behind his belt.*

*'It will.'*

*'Tengfei?' Zhuge Liang asked.*

*'I will join Huang Gai's troop,' he informed.*

*Zhuge Liang nodded and left them alone.*

*Junjie turned to Tengfei.*

*'I will join the King's troops. We will meet in the battle.' he said, smiling lightly. He looked at the sword attached to Tengfei's hip. 'But I'm always with you...'*

*Tengfei joined their foreheads for a second.*

*'See you soon...'*

*'See you soon...' Junjie whispered back, almost into Tengfei's lips.*

*When he was left alone on the field of grass he listened to the wind. Feeling and counting its waves and flows. He took a deep breath and when the next strong blow of the wind came he swung the fan in the opposite direction.*

*The wind got steady... as it was confused for a moment. Then again blow harder.*

*Junjie's skin started to glow a bit of white. The fan worked again. Convincing the wind to change the direction.*

*The silent battle between the airbender and the wind - started.*

*After a few minutes, inside the camp. Jumping on his horse Tengfei felt the sudden silence. The flags on the pennants have gone silent... Before they were jerked with a new wave of air... The wave of wind blowing into the Cao Cao army's direction.*

*He smiled.*

*The battle began.*

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=pd0bqLQrtdE

(I'm putting this here to please your imagination.)

*Tengfei stopped counting how many times he protected his fellow soldiers from the exploding fire everywhere. Letting the Sacred Treasure swallow it or counter it in the opposite direction.*

*Only the fire was dispearcing the darkness of the night.*

*But he knew where to look, when King Liu Bei entered the battlefield. He instantly saw Junjie protecting him with all kinds of his powers. He was absolutely stunning doing it, so nobody would suspect magic was involved in the battle hell.*

*The Battle of Red Cliffs took place until dawn. Destroying hundreds of lives for one insane man's vision...*

*But they won. Their King and Queen and their friends were safe...*

*Tengfei secretly returned the Sacred Treasure to Junjie and changed it to the replica of the sword, attached to his horse saddle.*

*'Are you unharmed?' he asked.*

*Junjie nodded with a tired smile.*

*'My heart and body are fine when yours are...'*

*They left the place to wash themselves in the river and rest a bit. They had to come back and help the wounded ones. Buried the victims. Joined Zhuge Liang to know the dispositions.*

*They were bending near the water, washing their faces. Taking off the armors for a short time, when they heard an arrow.*

*Tengfei moved faster than the wind when he pressed his palm to Junjie's chest to unseal his power.*

*Because the arrow wasn't material... It was made out of shadow and fire.*

*His life ended when he saw the shadow going inside Junjie's chest at the same time he*

*took out the sword.*

*Junjie's eyes widened. He choked with blood, grabbing the shadow arrow sticking out right next to his heart.*

*Tengfei grabbed him with one hand when he was falling down.*

*'Stay with me!!' he screamed, still holding the sword.*

*The grey tunic was soaked with blood.*

*Another arrow flew in his direction when he swung the sword with light power that destroyed the shadow like arrow.*

*Tears of shock beamed in his eyes, when he looked in the direction of the attacker.*

*'Ohhhh...' a man melting with shadows of the trees around, muttered curiously. 'So I wasn't mistaken when I saw that...'*

*The creature was almost immaterial. As if he was made out of webs of dreams.*

*'I know this power...' he murmured. 'So they made another one... Interesting...'*

*A hand covered in blood grabbed Tengfei's shoulder. He looked at the man in his arms. The red fingers touched his cheek gently.*

*'Look at me, Ten...' Junjie choked out. 'Only at me...'*

*Tengfei shook his head, shutting his eyes tightly.*

*'Look at me... I-I... w-want... to see... y-ou.. E-eyes... La... st... tttime...'*

*'It's not the last time!' Tengfei screamed, shaking his eyes. 'I will cure you!'*

*'P-ple-se...'*

*Tengfei blinked a few times to drop the tears from his eyelashes and see the beautiful face of his soulmate clearly.*

*'Jun... no...' he whispered when he saw a soft smile on Junjie's lips.*

*Junjie gulped and said clearly.*

*'I had a beautiful life with you...'*

*He slowly closed his eyes.*

*'NO!! Don't leave me!' Tengfei shook him, but Junjie's body was boneless. 'NO!! NO!*

*Don't leave me!!! Please!!'*

*'Don't worry...' a hoarse voice of the shadow said. 'You will join him soon...'*

*Another arrow appeared over the creature's hand.*

*Tengfei looked at him and when the arrow was shot into his direction he didn't even try to stop it. He took the pain in. He embraced it happily.*

*'Seems like I'm done here...' the man said, shrugging and melted with shadows completely.*

*Tengfei felt the sword in his hand disappear in little dust particles of a jade light.*

*Junjie's soul left.*

*Tengfei fell on his lover's body and followed him.*

**Seoul, 1st of September 2066**

Jungkook woke up. His nightwear was wet from sweat. His wet bangs were stuck to his forehead. He was breathing heavily.

He touched his chest, trying to catch his breath. Still feeling the coldness of the arrow inside his body.

He heard a scream, coming from outside.

'Taehyung!' he whispered-screamed and jumped out of the bed. He ran to the balcony not even thinking to slow down when he conquered the railings and pushed the balcony's door to Taehyung's room.

They never locked them and he was never as glad for that as now.

Taehyung was tossing in his sleep, crying desperately. His whole body convulsed from sobbing. Jungkook reached him at the same time Jin and Namjoon stormed the room.

'What's going on?!' Jin asked, seeing Jungkook, grabbing Taehyung's arms.

'Please! Go! Get out! Please!' Jungkook screamed, looking at them, almost crying.

'Jungkook...' Jin said calmingly. 'I need to check him...'

'He doesn't need a doctor! It's a dream!' he said, cupping Taehyung's face. 'It's only a dream. A memory...' he caressed Tae's cheek.

Jin stopped in his place and looked at them, when Jungkook pressed his forehead to Taehyung's.

'Taehyung...' he whispered. 'Come back...'

His gentle call stopped the shivers of Taehyung's body. But he didn't open his eyes. The whimpers were still leaving his lips.

'Tae... I'm here.' Jungkook kissed Taehyung's forehead. 'Come back to me...' he gently pressed his lips to Taehyung's mouth, kissing away the tears.

Jin looked down. This moment was too intimate.

But he couldn't leave... It was his kids that were here, in an absolutely shaken up state.

Taehyung opened his eyes and Jungkook made sure he was looking straight inside his eyes. That he saw him. That he saw his soul through them.

'Koo...' Taehyung cried out, sitting up.

He harshly started to pull Jungkook on his lap, to get as close to him as possible. He started to stretch Jungkook's shirt to check his chest. When he didn't find the wound or the arrow or the shadows... only the perfectly fine skin, he pressed his lips there.

Jungkook let him do it. Let him cry on his chest.

He embraced his back, tightly and looked at Jin with pleading, suffering eyes.

'Please... leave us alone...' he whispered shakily.

Namjoon put his hand on Jin's shoulder.

'Come, honey... They will call us...' he gently pulled Jin outside and quietly closed the door. He wanted to inform Hoseok and Minji, to calm them down if they heard anything.

Taehyung not being in the right state of mind pulled Jungkook even closer. Grabbed his tights and wrapped them around his waist, so Jungkook will hug him like a koala. Between sobs, his hands were touching Jungkook's whole body. His waist. Stomach. Back. Nape. Just to make sure he was here.

The dream was so realistic... Taehyung still could feel the scent of burned wooden ships, sweat, horses... His arms remembered his soulmate's trembling body.

He remembered the freezing cold when his sword disappeared together with Junjie's soul...

Jungkook was stroking Taehyung's hair.

'I'm here, angel...' he whispered.

'Koo... baby...' Taehyung cried out.

'I should be mad at you...' Jungkook said, trying to smile, shaking his head, trying to chase away his own tears. 'You didn't even try to protect yourself...'

'I didn't want to live without you... I didn't care.'

'Dummy...' Jungkook gulped, hiding his face in Taehyung's hair.

'You are the same kind of dummy, so don't judge me.' Taehyung said. His lips were so close to his chest, they were brushing Jungkook's skin while speaking.

Jungkook shuffled and pushed Taehyung to the pillows. He laid down on him, so Tae could embrace him.

'It's calming you down... Having me like that, right?' he murmured softly.

'Y-yeah...' Taehyung answered, wrapping his arms around Jungkook's waist.

Jungkook brushed his nose on Taehyung's neck.

'I'm okay...' he said calmingly.

'Have you seen this before?'

'No. Except for Jiyan's memory, this was the longest and most realistic one... I usually see...' Jungkook stopped. Gulped hard and continued: '... reverse moments. The ones where you are... harmed. But without words or details...'

'It was the first time...'

'I think so too. The first time he got to know the spirits gave powers to someone else...'

'The moment he realised... he is not the only one.'

'But why now?' Taehyung said tiredly. 'Why did we dream about it, now?'

'I don't know...'

'Is he a Selear? Or a Holder? How can we recognize him?'

'I guess... we won't know about him more, until the next dream...' Jungkook said sadly. 'Maybe we will never know...'

'He could use magic like a Sealer...' Taehyung gulped. 'But the... most visible part of him was... his right hand...' he said, realising Jungkook could see in the dream only things from Junjie's perspective.

'What about his hand... Did he have a mark?'

'No... But something was there... As if it was bleeding all the time? Or as if it was burned with stigma?'

'He sacrificed his soulmate for the power... But what could it give him? If he was a Sealer at the beginning or a Holder, killing his soulmate could give him both sides of power...'

You think that's why he did that? So he could use his power by himself only? Without unsealing?'

'I don't have any other guess...'

Jungkook raised his head and wiped the last tears from Taehyung's cheeks.

'Don't think about it anymore...' he whispered.

'I can't unsee that...' Tae gulped and his lips twisted again.

Jungkook kissed his eyelids slowly.

'And now?' he smiled lightly.

'You are so calm...'

'I'm calm when you need me. You are calm when I need you.' he shrugged. 'We can't help it. We can't stop those dreams. Maybe they are leading us. Maybe they will help in the end...'

'I hope so.' Taehyung sighed, closing his eyes. 'Don't you dare to move from here...' he added warningly.

'I won't.' Jungkook promised. 'But I should calm your dads...'

'No.' Taehyung whined, embracing him tightly. 'They will understand.'

Jungkook, closing his eyes, stroked the side of Taehyung's neck, having his face hidden on the other side of it.

'Okay...' he agreed. 'What do you want for going back to sleep?'

'There is nothing that would put me to sleep now...'

'So do it as my birthday gift.' Jungkook said cleverly.

'It's already your birthday!' Taehyung gasped. 'Happy 16!'

'It will be happy because you are here...'

'Cheesy.'

'You are my sweet angel... why wouldn't I be cheesy?'

'Still don't know why you are calling me an angel...'

'You are asking this a lot and my answer is always the same: because you are one.'

'Your personal angel?'

Jungkook raised his head frowning.

'Try to be an angel for someone else and I will make sure you will end up being a wingless one...'

Taehyung giggled with closed eyes. He pulled Jungkook's face back to his neck.

'You are getting heavy...' he teased.

'It's pure muscles...' Jungkook burked. 'You are a simp for them so shut up!'

'Are you getting bulked up for me?' Taehyung's hand embraced Jungkook's biceps.

'Dude... you are literally drooling over six packs!' Jungkook shook his head in disbelief, tickling Tae's neck with his hair.

'And you want me to drool over yours?'

Taehyung's hand slowly slid down from Jungkook's shoulder, through his back until it reached lower.

Jungkook gulped hard, feeling a hand cupping his asscheek and squeezing it. Taehyung never did that before. The sudden wave of known heat stormed Jungkook's body, so he bit Taehyung's shoulder.

'If you won't stop, I will need to leave you to clean myself...' he warned seriously.

Taehyung giggled, squeezed Jungkook's ass once more, stroked it calmingly after and let the hand rest higher on his back.

He loved the way Jungkook could get aroused so fast with him. And he would gladly help him like last time...

But he for sure didn't want him to leave now...

Jungkook, wanting Taehyung to fall asleep again, started to talk about school. He knew this would put him to sleep faster than valium. When he asked about one of the maths topics asking Taehyung to explain, because he already had it... Tae suddenly was really sleepy.

He started to hum a melody to shut Jungkook up and made him listen, but it calmed him to the point he fell asleep in the middle.

Jungkok laid a bit more on him, before he got up and fastly ran downstairs to the living room.

Namjoon and Jin were dozing off while sitting on the couch. Jin instantly got up, hearing steps.

'Are you both okay? How is he? What happened?'

Jungkook calmingly hugged him shortly.

'We are fine. It was a memory. We will tell more tomorrow.' he said fast, and hugged Namjoon too. 'Please don't worry. Go to sleep...'

'But...' Namjoon started.

'Really! Go to sleep.' Jungkook ordered. 'I need to go back to Tae...' he informed them and ran upstairs, disappearing as fast as he appeared.

'I...' Jin frowned. 'What the heck?'

'You know how they are when they are dreaming... We can't do anything. They are dealing with it somehow...'

'Yeah, but...' Jin said with worry. 'Tae is not a crybaby...'

'He is. When it comes to his soulmate...' Namjoon rubbed Jin's back. 'But I'm worried about other things...'he sighed.

Jin looked at him.

'They usually tell as about their dreams... And I noticed... that they are dreaming when something is going to happen...'

Jin gulped.

'Is it a prediction?'

They exchanged worrying gazes.

'More like a warning...'

**Seoul, 12th of September 2066**

Namjoon turned on the volume on the tv, and calmed people around to hear the news.

*Deagu's election is finished. Votes are counted. Ko Dongman was chosen as the new governor of Daegu...*

'Thanks all saints...' Namjoon sighed.

*At the press conference he announced that he already talked with the President and agreed to work hand in hand with Min Kyung, who was appointed as the Secretary of State for Daegu Metropolitan City and the whole North Gyeongsang Province...*

'Min Kyung?' Minji frowned. 'And who will take the lead of 3EO now? Don't tell me...'

*As 3EO PR manager informed the media, Min Chorong, wife of Min Kyung was appointed as the new CEO of 3EO. As the organisation will now be a part of the International Council of Interdependents she will be the main person responsible for working with Ko Dogman to bring the peace back to Deagu and nearby zones...'*

'It's not a bad decision...' Hoseok shrugged. 'What about the last guy? The one we met?'

*Na Dokhyun, the CEO of Interdependents Security Agency and General Kwon Jungrok will be responsible for coming up with a schedule to build up the safety of the city.*

*Official ceremony and taking of the posts is predicted for the beginning of October...*

**Deagu, 29th of September 2066**

Yoongi was sitting by his mother's side in the middle of the night. He made sure everyone was already asleep. Their sleep became calm recently... Calm to the point, Yoongi nervously took out his University application form from the lowest drawer of his desk.

As his uncle would have a lot of work with political swamps from now on, he hired a CEO for Min's company. Yoongi agreed with the candidate. He was a calm, patient man in his 40's, really reasonable, known as well by the old family lawyer. He was half-Korean, half British, with a perfect education background. One of the things that convinced Yoongi to him was that Dokhyun didn't like that guy almost as much as Yoongi didn't like Dokhyun. So now, Cha Hyun-soo was the new CEO and Taeil was working at the company with him to keep a hand on the company's matters.

Yoongi told about it to his mother, who was absolutely not interested as always. But he hoped that even when she was not reacting... she was listening.

He finished the usual talk and sat there in silence for a while. He gulped and finally said:

'Mom... I have a secret. But I know I can tell you this...' He took a deep breath. 'I wrote a song again... it's the part of the secret actually...' He hesitantly reached for the headphones and put them on his mother's head. 'Listen to this voice... It's pretty. It's moving. It's...' Yoongi stopped himself when he realised he was talking too fast and too nervously.

'Just... listen... I think you will like it...'

He pressed the play and was looking at his mom shyly. She was the one exception she decided to share his secret with.

And his and Chim's *Serendipity*...

It was making him super shy and embarrassed that he was thinking about the song

as *their Serendipity*.

He was halfly hearing the music from the headphones until it ended. He took the headphones off and said:

'Beautiful voice, right?' he gulped again. 'It... it's the voice... of my...' he looked at the not moving hand and squeezed it, before whispering hesitantly: '...mom... it's the voice of my... soulmate....'

He felt the twitching of the fingers in his hold and looked at his mother's face.

'It's beautiful right? It makes me want to look at the stars. Do you think like that too?' he started excitedly as if he wanted to share this sudden joy and pride. 'I feel so nice, mom! I feel so... nice...'

He stopped when he realised the twitching stopped and the eyes were still looking at the wall. He smiled sadly.

'I think you are tired... I know you can't answer, but w-was the song good? I wrote the music for him... I... Was it... you know... good?'

There was no answer indeed. Yoongi stood up.

'Sleep well...' he said, wanting to take his hand away, when he realised his thumb was embraced by Handong's fingers. The hold was so fragile, almost non existing as if it was a feather that touched him.

He huffed with amazement and smiled.

'Thank you...'

**Seoul, 13th of October 2066**

**CHIMISLOVE: Hyyyyuuung!!!**

**CHIMISLOVE: You know what today is?!** □□□□

**SUGA: Don't have any idea...**

**CHIMISLOVE: *pouting hard***

**SUGA: Your pout doesn't have any power here...**

**CHIMISLOVE: *pouting really really hard***

**SUGA: Jeeze...**

**SUGA: Okay. I know it's your birthday.**

**CHIMISLOVE: I knew you remembered!!! 😩😩**

**CHIMISLOVE: What will I get? 😋**

**SUGA: Me talking with you is enough of a gift.**

**CHIMILOVE: Either you are stingy or too shy to give me something because I'm your crush... 😂😂**

**CHIMISLOVE: I think the second option is more possible...**

**SUGA: It's absolutely the first option!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Sure... Mr Stingy.**

**SUGA: ...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I need to go. My party will start soon! I'm 18 from today onwards!!!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Can't wait to get my driving licence! My bff will be devastated ahahahah! He needs to wait till December...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Sucks to be him!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Gotta go! Bye...**

**SUGA: What do you want?**

Jimin looked at the sudden message, raising his eyebrows from surprise. He didn't expect that...

**CHIMISLOVE: Hyung! I was joking...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Wishes are enough!** 

**SUGA: Take the chance I'm giving you...**

Jimin's fingers were itching to ask about SUGA's real name, but he didn't want him to disappear again like last time.

**CHIMISLOVE: Well... Can you show me your other lyrics?** 

**SUGA: Don't waste your wish for that.**

**SUGA: Will show you when I write something new...**

**CHIMISLOVE: With music again?** 

**SUGA: ...**

**SUGA: I... guess...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Okay. So my wish is... tell me something sweet.** 

**SUGA: I'm not a sweet person.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Your nickname is Suga tho...**

**SUGA: It's SUGA not SUGAR!!!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Okay, okay... just something nice then...** 

**SUGA: Am I not nice enough?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Never enouuuggggghhh...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Never enoughhhhhhh!!!**

**CHIMISLOVE: For meeeee! For meeeee!**

**CHIMISLOVE: FOR MEEEEEEEE!!!!**

**SUGA: You are absolutely crazy...**

Jimin giggled, humming the song he typed under his nose.

**CHIMISLOVE: You can leave a message here... I really have to go.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Bye bye hyung! I will think about you blowing...**

**SUGA: Blowing what?!**

**CHIMISLOVE: ... the candles of course... 😎😎**

**CHIMISLOVE: Were you jealous?**

**SUGA: I WASN'T!!!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Of course not, sugar plum... Bye! 😘😘**

**SUGA: DON'T CALL ME THAT!**

Jimin chuckled under his nose, left the phone on the bed and ran to the bathroom to take a shower. He prepared his dress and put on makeup, and chose the shoes. He knew the guest would soon arrive and he still wanted to help Baekhyun with the food.

He looked at his phone to see the new notification and opened it.

His cheeks reddened and he really tried to convince himself that the sudden moist in his eyes were made from the dust. His heart was hardly trying to leave his chest and fly freely to the author of the message.

*"Your voice is my first love."*

The Party was in full swing. It was 9 pm. And nobody intended to stop soon.

Jimin poured the champagne for everyone and handed the tall glasses after eating the cake. He ignored Taehyung... he had just 3 months until he was 18 so he could taste a bit of alkohol. But when he noticed then he recklessly gave the glass to Jungkook too, he frowned. The Younger was looking at the glass hesitantly

peeking at his parents and then at Taehyung. He swung it and raised it hesitantly, but Jimin saved him.

'I will take that...' he said and gulped the drink in one go. 'We don't want TaeTae to become an angry tiger at my party...'

'Yeah...' Jungkook agreed. He squirmed when he saw Dami just noticed that Yoohyeon already drunk half of hers. 'If you don't want an argument here, better safe Yoo...'

'Jeeze!!' Jimin widened his eyes, seeing Dami marching towards her girlfriend. He turned to Jungkook. 'Pleaseeee!'

'No.' Jungkook shook his head.

'Please!!! Please!!! Please!! Take this one! I beg you! I will do anything!'

'Admitt you were a stupid bish giving champagne to everyone... Look at poor Binnie... He doesn't know what to do not to offend you...' Jungkook sighed with pity.

'FINE! I was a stupid bish! Now, please save Yoo and my party!'

Jungkook ran to Dami.

'Noona! I need you!' he said, grabbing Dami's wrist.

Dami stopped in her place.

'Did you just call me... "noona?" She asked, squinting her eyes.

'Did I? Well... adults are around...' Jungkook said, gulping.

'What did I tell you, kid...?'

Now Jungkook squinted his eyes.

'Don't call me "kid"!'

'Don't call me "noona"!'

Yoohyeon, hearing Jungkook calling Dami "noona" for the first time since ever, realised it was a diversion and looked at the glass in her hand. She panicked and poured it on the nearby flower. Getting rid of the glass fastly, hiding it behind the pot.

Jungkook was thinking fast how to make Dami forget he made her mad, as she already forgot about why she was heading to Yoohyeon.

'Umm... nevermind!! Dami! I need help!'

'With what?' she asked suspiciously.

'Umm... w-we need to convince Minho to do something embarrassing!!'

'Why?'

'Because it will make Jimin's day!'

Dami knew embarrassing Taehyung would bring Jimin much more joy, but oh well... she knew Jungkook, as a whipped bish, would instantly deny...

'Okay. What are you planning?'

Jungkook opened his mouth to tell her when suddenly Namjoon, Jin, Baekhyun, Chanyeol, Minji and Hoseok's smart watches started to beep.

'Red Alert...' Minji frowned.

Beakhyun's phone rang. He picked it up. He frowned instantly.

'WHAT?!!' He screamed and ran to turn on the tv.

The entire squad suddenly surrounded Jimin protectively, looking at adults like hawks.

*During the ceremony of taking the post as the governor of Daegu a massive explosion took place. We don't have information about the victims or wounded ones...*

The photos from the helicopter showed the black smoke coming from the City Hall.

*Another explosion was witnessed in Deagu's Power Station, one of the Middle Schools, Min's Company Main building and other buildings that belong to Interdependants...*

'It doesn't make sense! These are buildings of Interdependents and non-Intedependents!' Minji said.

Baekhyun looked at her.

'The new governor died in an explosion...' he said, ending the call. 'And that's not all. The ceremony was protected by ISA's agents and National Army. The shots were heard along the explosion. Dokhyun was killed! We have two hours...'

'NO!' Jimin went to him but Chanyeol grabbed him in half. 'NO!! You can't go again...'

'Jiminie... we have to...'

'NO! You will disappear for months again!'

Taehyung froze on the spot looking at Namjoon. Jungkook found his hand and squeezed it.

'We can't refuse!' Baekhyun cupped Jimin's face and looked at him sternly. 'Jimin it won't be like last time!'

'Of course it won't!' Taehyung screamed. 'It's a war!! Do you think we don't know that?!'

Jungkook's lips parted when he looked at Minji, who looked down without a word. He couldn't get any better confirmation of Taehyung's words.

'War?' Minho looked at Taehyung.

Tae nodded, still looking at Namjoon.

'The attack was directed at both. Interdependants and non-Interdependants. They will start to look for the guilty ones. Throwing the blame on each other! They knew what they were doing! People started to have hope! They took the chance to make peace! And someone destroyed it! They won't listen anymore! Nor the army! Nor ISA or 3EO!! You know I'm right!!!' he screamed at Namjoon.

'Taehyung... calm down...' Jin said plainly. Tae opened his mouth, but Jin interrupted him. 'Do you think we want to go? Not seeing you for don't know how much time?'

'You are too intelligent for your own good, Tae...' Namjoon said gently.

'We can go with you...' Jungkook said, looking at Minji. 'You know we can...'

'Absolutely not.' Minji shook her head and raised her hand before Jungkook could speak again. 'It's out of discussion, Kookie. We don't know what will happen. You will stay in Seoul until it's safe. If it won't be safe anymore... then you can fight to protect yourself. But you won't go inside the military conflict being children!'

Jimin gritted his teeth to stop himself from asking, begging his fathers to stay. He closed his eyes, shaking his head.

Baekhyun stroked his hair.

'You will stay here. Get the driving licence as you planned, okay? I promise we will contact you each day...'

Hoseok looked around at all the decorations they put around so neatly and moved to Jimin. He embraced him with his arm.

'Come. We will pack your things. You will move to our house. You can make good use of my dancing studio there... I am appointing you as the trainer, what do you say?' he tried to smile lightly.

'Thank you, uncle...' Jimin said flatly and moved with him upstairs.

'We will clean here...' Jungkook said, looking at the rest, then at his parents. 'You have to pack, right?'

Namjoon went to him and Taehyung and put his hands on their shoulders.

'I'm sorry, boys...'

Taehyung put his palm on the hand placed on his shoulder and squeezed it.

'Don't apologise for being who you are...' he said, the same words his father once told him.

Namjoon nodded and blinked fast, before he embraced both of them.

Jin came to them and left forehead kisses on each boy.

'Eat well. Not just take away food...'

'Okay. No promise about Panda Express tho...' Taehyung mumbled.

'Fair enough.' Jin smiled sadly. 'Take pictures for us.'

He left after Namjoon with reddened eyes.

Minji was embracing all teenagers one by one until she reached Tae and Jungkook. She grabbed them and they both had to bend to embrace her together.

'Lead them.' she whispered to their ears, kissing their cheeks in the process. 'Never doubt your power and guts.'

Jungkook squeezed his mom tighter.

She moved away and took a deep breath.

'Kai and Jennie will stay with you until Siyeon and Bora will come.' she said, peeking at her friends, who nodded. 'Stay in our house... Don't do stupid shit...'

'You too.' Jungkook smiled teasingly.

'I'm an adult.' she snorted, offended.

'It just means you had more time to come up with stupid shit...' Jungkook rolled his eyes.

He giggled, making a mess on his head. Jungkook wanted her to smile. And she did. So it was okay...

'I need to go pack myself and dad...'

Jungkook and Taehyung nodded with heavy hearts.

'Stay safe.' she whispered looking at the rest of the kids and walked out of the house.

Kai and Jennie looked at the youngsters.

'We...'

'We will start cleaning.' Minho said fast. 'We know what to do...'

'We will help Jimin pack...' Yoohyeon grabbed Dami's hand. 'We'll try to cheer him up...'

Jungkook looked at his hand which was tightly squeezed by Taehyung and brushed his thumb over the other's knuckles. The hold became a bit lighter.

Taehyung looked at him and when everyone else became busy with cleaning... he whispered:

'The dreams... Our souls are responding to the events around them... Something similar they can connect with events that happened centuries ago...'

Jungkook's eyes became dark when he nodded.

'You are right...' he agreed.

'But?' Taehyun took a step closer. He could easily notice Jungkook's unfinished thoughts.

'They are responding... because HE is involved.'

'What's on Your mind? Is he behind all of it? People don't need a demon to kill each other...'

'You are right again Tae...' Jungkook looked through the dark windows. 'But would we be dreaming then?'

*Hell is empty and all the devils are here.*

William Shakespeare *The Tempest*

---

How was the much delayed chapter?

I could honestly put on any other historical event here, as I'm choosing them randomly, but I like Red Cliff movie and I honestly watching it didn't know it was a real battle. I was doing research looking to suitable even today when I discovered it.

Junjie - in chinese mean "handsome and outstanding"

Tengfei - in chinese mean "soaring high"

A new past revelead.

Oh. And I have short vacation so I will mostly write. (◍•ᴗ•◍)

BlairWitch 💟💟

# Chapter 29: The City of Changes

**Deagu, 13th of October 2066**

Yoongi was running through the corridor of the house to his father's office. San and Wooyoung were following him.

'What happened there?!' he asked Taeil through the phone. 'Are your parents, okay?'

'Do you think anyone can be okay here?! I don't know!!?' Taeil yelled desperately. 'It's an absolute disaster! The City Hall is destroyed! The bodies are everywhere! FUUUCK!!!'

The gunshots were heard and the phone call disconnected.

'TAEIL?!' Yoongi screamed with a fast beating heart. 'TAEIL?! FUCK!'

They reached Jaehyung's home office and Yoongi went to the desk, opened the drawer with a hidden numeric board and decoded the secret safe with cash and guns.

'Take anything you need!' he said.

Gahyeon ran inside with a pile of clothes in her arms.

'Brought everything you needed!'

'Stay with mom!' Yoongi instructed, putting the bulletproof vest on, and hiding all the ammo and guns in it, before he fastened the harness over his hips and under his armpits.

Two years of working with ISA paid back...The three of them were pretty much trained in critical situations. Yoongi could use any kind of guns.

He peeked at Woosan to see they were ready and Wooyoung had a Sacred Treasure around his ankles and calves.

'GO!' he said. 'I will take the car!'

'You sure?' Wooyoung asked. 'I can take you. It will be faster...'

'No. You have to have a clear view. Watch out. Find Taeil! Take him out of there!'

Wooyoung nodded and moved to the window fast, but Yoongi grabbed his arm.

'It's hard ammo...' Wooyoung's eyes widened. They only used sleeping shots till now... 'Don't use it if you won't be forced...' Yoongi whispered.

San grabbed shocked Wooyoung's waste and lead him to the window, saying:

'We will make choices for ourselves... don't take it upon your consciousness, hyung...' he jumped outside and flew in the air together with Wooyoung.

Yoongi weighs the gun in his hand, feeling as if it was as heavy as the whole car, not as something that was fitting his hand.

He slowly raised his eyes at Gahyeon.

She dropped the eyes to the gun and then again to her brother's eyes.

'If someone will shoot you...' she gulped. 'Because you will be hesitating to pull the trigger first...' she blinked fast and looked at him hard. 'I will revive you to kill you myself! Don't leave me with this dumbsterfire of a world alone!'

Yoongi looked for a moment at her. Then fetched another gun from the safe and a pack of ammunition. He checked if it was properly locked and gave it to Gahyeon, whispering to her ear.

'Hide it. If anything will happen... and someone will try to storm this place... Run.'

'But m-mom...'

Yoongi squeezed her arm.

'Have a backpack packed with emergency things. Take the cash from the safe. Phones. Power bank. Knives. Basic clothes. Passport. Pack the same for me and for mom, Wooyoung and San too. Hide everything...'

Gahyeon nodded.

'Gahyeon...' Yoongi said seriously. 'If the situation tonight will get dangerous around the house... Don't wait! Run!'

Gahyeon's eyes teared up.

'To where?' she asked, frustrated.

Yoongi's thoughts were running like crazy. That was a good question...

'In the bottom drawer of my desk... there is a file with University papers. You will find notes there with addresses of Jung Hoseok and Kim Namjoon. If you reach

Seoul they will help you...'

'Seoul?!'

'They are dad's friends. Trust them... Don't stay here! Promise me!' he shook her.

'O-okay...' she whispered.

Yoongi gulped.

'Good. For now close and secure the house... Don't panic.'

He moved to the doors but Gahyeon ran after him and hugged him shortly.

'Stop scaring me and comback dumb oppa!' she hissed.

Yoongi hesitantly hugged his 17-year old sister back. He leaned to her ear.

'I will do everything to come back. It's just the beginning... And, Gahyeon...' she looked at him. '... don't let in anyone. Even ISA's agents...'

Her eyes widened, but she nodded.

Yoongi ran to the garage and looked at all of his father's cars. He chose the biggest of them - GMC Suv and sat inside when his phone got the notification.

**CHIMISLOVE: Hyung? Are you here?**

Yoongi gritted his teeth.

*Sorry, baby... not now...,* he thought starting the engine. *I will come back... I promise...*

He didn't even realise that so much had changed over the last year...

He didn't have a death wish anymore.

**Seoul, Same night**

Hoseok left the house together with Baekhyun and Chanyeol. He didn't throw a joke at the end or smile at them as they all expected. He just hugged everyone after leaving Jimin's room. He stroked Taehyung's cheek and ruffled Jungkook's

cheek.

'Do the photos and recordings for us...' he whispered and left the house.

They all were standing on the porch, looking at a big black car that came to take their parents away again.

Finally Kai and Jennie convinced them to go back to the house.

'Can you go ask Jimin if he wants something?' Jennie asked gently. She looked around at the abandoned decorations... 'It's his birthday, maybe we should...'

Taehyung only shook his head.

'He won't want anything... We will just go to him...' he looked at Minho, Han, Yeonjun and Soobin.

'Okay...' Jennie sighed. 'We will wait here for your aunts...' she said to Jungkook.

They all went upstairs just to see Yoohyeon sitting under Jimin's doors and Dami who was leaning on the wall with her arms crossed over her chest, looking at the doors as if she wanted to burn them...

Yoohyeon looked at them.

'He asked us to go...' she explained.

Taehyung rolled his eyes.

'He needs something else to think about...' Jungkook said.

'And we will give him something...' Taehyung opened the doors.

'I want to be alone...' Jimin said, looking at his phone.

'As if I care...' Taehyung shrugged. 'Yoo...' he pointed to Jimin's laptop with his head. 'Minho, find me a notebook and pen...'

'You don't need this...' Jungkook took Jimin's phone away.

'HEY! GIVE IT BACK!'

Jungkook threw the phone to Yeonjun, who caught it and hid it in his pocket. Then he cupped Jimin's face.

'Your friend not always can be here. WE ARE! In the same shit you are in! So if you want to sulk, sulk!'

Jimin's eyes filled with tears. His lips twisted.

His forehead rested on Jungkook's chest.

'Fuuck...' he whispered shakily.

'Jimin...' Jungkook's voice was quiet and calm. 'They will come back as before...'

'It's not just about them...' Jimin choked out. I'm scared... And angry...And I feel as if a big weight is on my shoulders... I think he is in danger...'

They all looked at Jimin.

Taehyung sat next to Jungkook and Jimin and put his hand on Jimin's shoulder.

'Who?' he asked.

Jimin lifted his wet eyes at him.

'The blue haired boy I dreamed about... These are not my feelings...' he started to breathe fast. 'I didn't feel him for two years... What if he is THERE?! And I am here! He can't defend himself... And dads...'

'Isn't... it better? Like that?' Soobin said hesitantly.

'HOW CAN IT BE BETTER?!' Jimin yelled.

Soobin looked at the rest shyly.

'I... I'm not saying it's good... the whole situation... But isn't our fate working like that?'

'WHAT KIND OF SHITTY FATE IS THAT?!'

Soobin looked at the ground. On the other hand Taehyung smiled a bit. He made Jimin look at him.

'Soobin is right...' he said gently.

'NONE OF YOU HAVE ANY IDEA HOW...'

'Two hours ago I would do anything to stop our parents...' Jungkook caught him off.

'But if they went to the place, where by any chance, they will be able to help you soulmate...' Taehyung continued his sentence. 'We are fine with it...'

Jimin's eyes widened.

'Your fathers... and our parents... even not knowing... can help your soulmate if you are right and he is in danger...' Taehyung said.

'I know it's not a big comfort, hyung...' Jungkook softly stroked Jimin's arms. 'But... Fate is crossing our paths constantly... and nothing is a coincidence... Even if our parents will risk... and in the process they will help the other part of your soul... It's the best reason I can find for them to go there...'

Jimin was looking at them for a moment. Then he closed his eyes and took a deep breath. Patted his cheeks and opened his eyes with determination.

'So what are we doing now?' he asked.

'First we need to know and combine our schedules. We will train with our grandparents as before...' Taehyung smirked. 'And without them... So first write down our classes...' he said to Minho, who was holding the notebook.

When all of them explained their daily schedule and saw where they had free spots, they started to organise the extra time for sparring and power training.

'Here... we can train after dance practice too... They won't suspect it if we play music in the studio...' Yeonjun pointed out Wednesdays. 'We can treat dancing as warming up...'

'We forgot about Jimin's driving lessons...' Jungkook said.

'Don't bother, I...' Jimin started, but Taehyung looked at him sternly.

'You will do it, Chim. We will need drivers if anything will happen...'

'Okay... you are right...' Jimin nodded.

Taehyung turned to Yoohyeon.

'Can you hack MOI's servers? For photos or news?'

'On this laptop? Yoohyeon frowned, typing fast. 'No. It's not safe...'

'And yours?'

'I'm 16! Of course I can't hack the servers of the Military Organization!' Yoohyeon rolled her eyes, just before smirking. 'But my father can... And probably already did...'

'Perfect. But we can't ask your father...' Dami pointed out.

Yoohyeon looked at her with raised eyebrows.

'Even you don't believe in me... The betrayal...' She shook her head with pity.

'What are you going to do then?' Han asked.

'I can't hack MOI...' Yoohyeon repeated and smiled cleverly. 'But I can hack my dad...'

'Genius...' Dami bent and pecked her lips, then she looked around at all the boys that were staring at them. 'Perverts...'

'No, no... Yoo deserves the praise... Don't mind us...' Minho smirked, waving his hand.

'Okay... getting back to business... we all are checking news and the internet every free minute...' Taehyung said. 'We need to know what's going on...'

'We won't know where our parents are tho...' Jungkook frowned.

'For now for sure in Daegu... We can promise they will contact us. Maybe we will notice something then...' Jimin said.

'I could track them from dad's laptop probably...' Yoohyeon said. 'But... you know... if I will be able to do that... someone else too...'

'Yeah. Don't do it...' Taehyung nodded and brushed his face with his hands.

They heard the car stopping in front of the house.

'Aunties are here...' Jungkook said, looking through the window. 'Come, Chim... We need to pack your things.'

'Does your guest bedroom have a double bed too?' Jimin asked.

'Yeah. But you know what? You can sleep in the main one...' Jungkook smiled widely. 'I want to see my parents' faces when they get to know... How panicked they will be...'

'Why would they panic?' Soobin asked innocently.

But Jimin caught Jungkook's drift and smirked.

'Oh... some many treasures to find...'

'Yeah...' Jungkook's face twisted. 'Just don't tell me later, okay?'

Jimin's crystal laugh filled the room and the rest smiled too, hearing that.

Of course nothing was okay...

But they were together.

They just waited for the rest of the squad to join them...

Jimin's soulmate was one of them. If their parents could help him... They were where they should be.

**Daegu, same night**

Yoongi reached the city center and looked around terrified. He saw some smokes in different parts of the city, but downtown was a complete disaster. The city hall was nowhere to be found. He jumped out of the car leaving the lights on.

He looked around... bodies were everywhere.

Most of the people around were happily waiting for the new governor's speech. Interdependants and non-interdepenadants were caught up in the explosion or later shooting.

He unlocked his gun and slowly moved through the street trying, checking for anybody alive. Gulping at not moving bodies, holding his dinner in his stomach by breathing slowly, he was going forward.

San flew above his head.

'Have you found Taeil?' Yoongi asked.

San shook his head.

'No! But we found some survivors. Your aunt said to transport them to her house...'

'Why not to the hospital? Where is she?'

'The closest hospital is destroyed. The second one was taken by the National Army and they are allowing only non-interdependants there...' San said with a dark face.

'What?!'

'Yeah. That's why we are only taking our people there... There is not enough space...'

'Where is she? Or uncle?'

'She is in the yard by the main hall... Unsealed...But I didn't see your uncle...'

'Where is Wooyoung?' Yoongi was running with San floating above his head.

'He was taking care of some woman... We are still looking for Taeil...'

'Okay! GO!'

'Be careful! They are still shooting!'

'Yeah! I can hear!'

Yoongi reached the yard and looked around. Everything was covered in a thick layer of dust. The pieces of rocks, steel and glass were everywhere. For the first time in all this noise and chaos he heard... crying.

ISA's agents in their gray uniforms were helping move the bodies in the safe place or helping injured ones to get out of the place. He reached his aunt who was crouching down next to someone.

Yoongi came closer and his eyes widened.

He was looking at the pale, dead face of Na Dokhyun. In his black hole after the bullet was visible. It was a clear shot...

'Yoongi...'Chorong whispered, squeezing the arm of the man who was bending over Dokhyun's body, crying desperately. 'D-did you see Taeil?' she asked.

Yoongi shook his head.

'Woosan are looking for him... Where is uncle...'

'The Army took him...' Chorong said and her eyes filled with tears.

Yoongi's lips parted.

'Inho...' Chorong said gently to the man in ISA's uniform. 'We need to take his body from here...'

The grip over Dokhyun's chest tightened.

'You are in danger...' she whispered.

Yoongi noticed the glove on the man's hand and how he desperately was pressing it to Dokhyun's chest.

But he couldn't do anything...His soulmate was nowhere to be found anymore...

Yoongi knew what would come next. He had seen it in his mother...

Na Inho raised on his feet. He looked at Yoongi.

'Take Chorong away from here...' he said simply with his voice washed out of any emotions. Then he pressed the earpiece in his ear. 'To all units... Na Inho is speaking. Na Dokhyun is dead. Operation Laundry. Prepare to secure the city. Pushed outside every non-interdependant. None can stay in the city... No matter the resistance...' Yoongi's eyes widened. 'Any survivor with marks or the person with separation syndrome should be sent to ISA's quarters underground. Save everyone you can. Min's buildings are not safe, evacuate them and prepare the check...' the anger was burning in his voice.

First stage...

'What do you mean "no matter the resistance"?!' Yoongi asked with fastly beating heart.

'Do you hear it?' Inho pointed to the sky.

The far away explosions, shooting and helicopters above.

'Interdependants don't use normal weapon... We don't have to...' he said. He took out the gun. 'When we are together... we don't... We don't have to kill to win. But they made us... 'If we won't stand up to them they will shoot us out like ducks...' his eyes dropped to Dokhyun's face. 'Like him.'

Chorong got up.

'What about Kyung?' she asked shakily.

'We will take him back. If they won't give him back by themselves...' Na Inho promised. 'I will keep this anger... Until I will avenge him.'

'There was a General of the Army here...' Yoongi pointed out. 'Where is he?'

'He was the one that took Kyung...' Chorong said. 'When he saw his soldiers dying like flies from shoots... he just... didn't listen...'

Inho touched Chorong's shoulder.

'Please, take Dokhyun from here... If I find your son, I will send him to safety...'

'Thank you...'

Inho walked away, and when he was walking a lot of people around were joining him.

'Won't you stop him?' Yoongi asked.

'He was the second in command in ISA. He is Dokhyun's soulmate. Do you think someone can stop him?' she asked flatly. 'And if he will take Kyung back... I don't care...'

Yoongi's phone rang. He looked at the screen and picked up the phone from Wooyoung.

'I have Taeil!' He was injured... He got a shot in the calf, but beside it he is okay...'

'Fine! Take him to his house!'

'Are you safe?'

'For now... I will take my aunt from here and come back to check on the other injured ones...'

'Did you hear the order?'

'Yeah...'

'You know what it means?'

'Yeah.' Yoongi disconnected and grabbed Dokhyun's under his armpits.

'They have Taeil.' he informed Chorong. 'I have a car nearby... I Will drop you to him. He is injured.'

'Okay...' Chorong grabbed the body from the other side. 'It came out of nowhere...' she whispered, when they were dragging the body to the car. 'Absolutely out of nowhere...'

'Good the two of you survived the explosion...' Yoongi replied.

'We were going to start the press conference when the shooting started... Dokhyun fell first... For a moment the Army started to protect ISA's agents... But then they started to be shot down too... That's when the hell began...'

'How many?'

'I don't know... First 5 shots were only Interdependants...Headshots. Clear. Aimed to kill... Then the next ones were directed at soldiers... It doesn't make any sense...'

'I will drive you and come back...' he only said, when they reached the car. He

started the car.

For him... it had sense. It had perfect sense if someone wanted the war...

If only Interdependants would be killed, it would make the victims and the army would join arms with them against terrorists.

But killing the soldiers and then civilians no matter if they were magic users or not, caused the confusion...

Made each side distrustful.

There was no coming back...

Miles away in Seoul Kim Taehyung was thinking the same.

And in the helicopter between Seoul and Deagu, Jeon Minji was having the same thoughts...

There was no coming back.

**On the way to Daegu, same night**

Bakhyun was constantly on the line with MOI, updating the rest, who were in the helicopter.

'Min Kyung was taken by the Army.' he informed Namjoon.

'Yongguk knows?' Namjoon asked, taking out his phone.

'I don't know... MOI's agents confirmed that ISA wants to close the city...'

'Civilians are going on the streets...' Chanyeol added.

'Of course they are... Interdependants are shocked and pissed. And the non-Interdependants will try to protect their houses...' Minji gritted his teeth.

'Who is in charge?' Hoseok asked. 'Dokhyun is dead... Kyung is taken hostage...'

'For now? Second in command... Na Inho. Dokhyun's soulmate...'

'Fuck!' Jin cursed. 'The separation syndrome. He is not thinking straight... And

others who lost their soulmates will follow him without hesitation...'

'How will we get inside the city?' Minji asked. 'If they will close it... we won't be able to go by road. And if we fly above the Army's camp they will shoot us...'

'We will enter by road. They will let us in...' Namjoon assured them. 'ISA wants to push outside the normal people. They won't try to stop Interdependants from entering... I bet they will even try to convince more Interdependants to join them... There are not many of us in the country. They will need everyone...'

He pressed the phone to his ear.

'Yongguk... The Army has Kyung... Can you do something about it?... Okay. Inform us.'

Namjoon looked at the rest.

'He is trying already.'

Minji looked at the night outside the helicopter.

'If they won't let him go... If something happens to him... Nothing will stop the Interdependants...'

**The Headquarter of International Council of Interdependants, same night**

Yongguk was trying to reach the President of Korea for an hour. Until finally someone connected him.

'It's not the time...' the President started.

'We have a civil war. Where will be the time to talk with the head of Interdependants in the country Mr President?'

'I am the President of all citizens. Not just non-Interdependants. Watch your mouth...'

'So treat us like civilians! The Army in Daegu is acting against Interdependants! We are VICTIMS! It's the terrorists doings!'

'The soldiers were attacked.'

'To stir the conflict!'

'We don't know that yet. You know not everyone was happy about our decisions...'

'Mr President... The situation is hard. But Min Kyung can't be a bargaining chip here! You are holding in your hands the only one that can calm down the moods...'

'Until that tragedy won't be solved... until we will know the culprits he will stay under guards...' The President answered.

'He was captivated without any reason! And Interdependants are not using the normal weapons!'

'Some of them do. Not all of you have offensive powers, am I right?'

'Interdependants wouldn't kill each other! There are only a few of us in the world! We respect soulmates. We wouldn't kill one to make the other suffer! So many years we have been trying to tell you this... but nobody listens!' Yongguk took a deep breath. 'Mr President... I'm asking you... let Min go...'

'I will think about it...'

'You don't understand... ISA and Daegu citizens will try to save him. They see his brother in him... They will go against the army...'

'So it will be their funeral! There are 500 soldiers there! How many interdependants live in Deagu? 100? Maybe less...'

'There are *Eadar-eisimeileach* whose gifts are so powerful that one of them, with his soulmate...' Yongguk said quietly. '...is able to take down dozens of your soldiers. Count again...'

Yongguk was holding hard to not say anything more... He didn't want someone in charge of the whole country to be scared of Interdependants and consider them as a threat...

'I will talk with the General.' The President said and disconnected the call.

Yongguk threw the phone on the desk.

'FUCK!!'

Talking with the General whose soldiers were killed right before his eyes won't bring anything good.

**Seoul, 14th of October 2066**

*... Latest reports indicate that 14 people were killed in the attack, including 7 soldiers and 7 civilians and 5 Interdependents. More than 20 people near City Hall were injured. Later riots led to more casualties.... None of the terrorist organizations claimed responsibility for the attack.*

*Min Kyung was detained until the military clarified the situation.*

*So far, the weapon used in the attack cannot be identified. It appears to be an ordinary firearm, but experts have so far failed to determine what kind of weapon could have fired such shots.*

*So it is still unclear whether terrorists or the Interdependants themselves were behind the attacks....*

Taehyung was looking at the news shaking his head in disbelief.

'They didn't even count Interdependants as people...' he mumbled.

Jungkook took his hand.

'Come... the rest is already in the studio...' he looked at the doors to the kitchen where Siyeon and Bora were. 'We are going to practice, aunties!' he yelled, pulling Taehyung after himself.

When they entered the studio Minho turned on the music a bit louder and they all gathered on the floor around Yoohyeon, who was holding her laptop on her lap.

'What do you have?' Taehyung asked.

'It's not even hidden...' Yoohyeon shook her head. She opened 3EO's site and pressed the newly posted video.

A man appeared on the screen. His eyes were red. He was covered in dirt and dust. He had the combat uniform on.

'*My name is... Na Inho... You don't know me, but I'm just like you... I lost my Sealer yesterday. I lost my husband. My soulmate... There are many like me. They attacked us. They destroy the chance we offered them to make peace... We don't want to and we don't need to kill to bring peace to this city. And we won't be safe until any of non-Interdependants will stay here. WE DON'T TRUST YOU anymore.. Leave the city or we will move you... '*

His hard gaze softened.

*'Interdependants... We will build a city here. City that will be safe... You are always welcome. For all that lost their soulmates... I will nurture your anger. I will give you purpose... Join us. ISA will always welcome you. Sealers and Holders that are willing to fight for our future. For our children... For our safety... Come to us.*'

'What does it mean?' Soobin asked.

'They are gathering soldiers...' Jungkook squinted his eyes.

'They want to lock the city...' Han informed them. 'I read the news on the internet. They already started...'

'It looks as if they are planning to build a separate country inside the city...' Jimin frowned.

'Country only for Interdependants...' Taehyung confirmed, nodding.

It doesn't make sense... There is not enough interdependants to live and make the city prosper...' Dami shook her head.

'That's why they need people. They will embrace any person from anywhere... Do you know how many Interdependents that were hiding their whole life will be tempted to live in the safe place like that?' Taehyung sighed and brushed his hair backwards.

'Do you have the recordings from yesterday?' Jungkook asked Yoohyeon.

'You want to see the shooting or explosions?' Yoohyeon frowned.

'Shooting.'

Taehyung looked at Jungkook, curiously.

'I don't want to see this...' Yoohyeon whispered and turned her head, playing the video from the news.

The shots, screams... footsteps were heard from the recording.

Jungkook bent to the desktop, taking in the details. Taehyung, worried, grabbed his arm trying to pull him back, but Jungkook just stuck his finger to stop him, focusing on the video. He pressed some things on the keyboard. The video started again with a slow motion without any sounds and zoom.

He was staring at it for more minutes, before he looked at Taehyung.

'5 Interdependants were killed, right?'

'Yeah. 5 Headshots... That's what they said in the news...'

'What was that for?' Jimin frowned.

'I wanted to check something...' Jungkook was thinking hard. 'Except Na Dokhyun... who was killed first... all others... were Holders....'

'How do you know that?' Yeonjun asked.

'All had gloves... Maybe Dokhyun was a Holder too I don't know...' Jungkook shrugged.

'What does it mean?'

'For terrorists doesn't matter if they will kill a Holder or Sealer...' Dami pointed out and Jungkook looked at her slowly.

'Exactly...'

'Well... Maybe there were only Holders from ISA there?' Minho said.

Jungkook shook his head.

'Look how they stand... Glove, no-glove, glove, no-glove...The shots weren't accidental...'

'We should inform our parents about it when we have the chance... Even if it doesn't have sense for us...' Jimin sighed.

'It does.' Taehyung said. He was looking at Jungkook, who nodded slightly. 'Because when you have a Sealer... you can still use his Sacred Treasure...'

The rest looked at him with wide eyes.

'They are going to use Taboo...'

'But it would mean that the shootings were caused by...' Jimin gulped.

Taehyung looked at him and confirmed:

'Interdependants.'

---

Here is the first update this week!

Hope it didn't make you bored...

BlairWitch

# Chapter 30: Insecurities

**14th of October 2066, Seoul**

Minho, Han, Dami, Yoohyeon, Yeonjun, Soobin and Jimin were looking at Taehyung and Jungkook with wide eyes in complete silence.

Frozen.

The music was playing in the dance studio, but nobody actually heard it.

Finally Yeonjun put his hands in his hair and said while letting go of the air in his lungs:

'Ok, guys... I know you two have your secrets and probably more than one reason to have them. But it seems like you know much more than we do and it's not fair to leave us in darkness...'

Jungkook looked at him and dropped his eyes to the ground, gulping hard. Feeling the anxiety crawling to his body like a smoke.

Taehyung's hand at once traveled to his waist protectively and he looked at Yeonjun with a dark gaze.

Jimin stood next to them.

'Don't pressure them...' he asked.

'But he is right...' Han frowned. 'What's going on?'

'If we know, we will tell you...' Taehyung answered.

'Tae...' Jungkook said warningly, shaking his head slightly. He touched Taehyung's cheek calmingly, calming his protective instinct down. 'It's okay...' He looked at Yeonjun. 'It's not that we don't want to tell you... We just don't know how... Because it's... unbelievable...'

'Not like you being soulmates for a thousand years is not...' Yoohyeon pointed out gently, tilting her head with a small smile.

Taehyung sighed.

'Well... you can change your mind after hearing it...' he nodded to Jungkook, who gulped.

'There is this being...' he started. 'The first one with interdependent powers... We

don't know what he is capable of. We don't know what he looks like. What is he called... Is he immortal or not...'

'Probably he is...' Taehyung added.

'What about his soulmate? Can he use any kind of power like you?' Minho asked.

'That's the case. He doesn't have one... He sacrificed his soulmate to gain enormous power...' Jungkook whispered and the rest of the squad jaws dropped to the ground.

The measure of evil he had to deal with sinked in...

Yeonjun instantly looked at Soobin as if couldn't imagine him not existing. As if the sheer thought was scaring him to death...

Han softly slid his hand in Minho's, intertwining their fingers. He was looking at their fingers, perfectly matched together with a fragile glass-like gaze.

Yoohyeon leaned his arm on Dami's leg, who put a hand on her head looking down. He stroked them gently when Yoohyeon raised her eyes at her.

But the most shocked one- was Jimin.

'You mean... he killed his soulmate?! WHAT?! I don't even know my soulmate and the pure thought he is suffering is unbearable! How can anyone even think of...!'

'Exactly...' Jungkook whispered. 'We can't even stand when the other is suffering... Not to mention bringing them pain on purpose...'

'That's the kind of evil we are dealing with... Haunting us for decades... Messing with interdependants... It's so hard to believe that Interdependants would hurt Interdependants intentionally. But manipulated by powerful being? We have a feeling he is close...' Taehyung said quietly.

'Okay... so... are you some kind of his archenemies?' Yeonjun asked.

'Our souls are...' Jungkook explained. 'That's why our powers are a bit more... complicated...'

'"More complicated" it's a nice way of saying you are a fucking Mary Sue...' Minho said, raising his eyebrow.

Taehyung sighed and looked at everyone and his hand reached Jungkook's to squeeze it. Looking for comfort.

'The case is... if you want to have a peaceful life... You can't stay next to us...'

The heavy statement lingered in the air for a whole minute.

Then Jimin smacked Taehyung's ear.

'What kind of bullshit is that?!'

'Jimin, at some point you all will be in danger...'

'Not more than you, dumbshit!'

'Yeah, it is stupid way of thinking...' Dami snorted. 'If we want to have "peaceful life" the most reasonable thing to do would be to stay next to the two people that actually can stand against this... what would we call him...?' She looked at the rest of the boys.

'Bastard?'

'Motherfucker?'

'Fucktard?'

'Shadow?'

'Lord Voldemort?'

'Dr Evil?'

'Inter-Thanos?'

'Satan?'

The proposition came from all directions.

'Too cool...' Dami shook her head.

Boys caught her drift at once.

'Sludge.'

'Poop.'

'Shit.'

'Toilet.'

'Potty.'

'Oh, potty is good!' Yoohyeon clapped her hands. Then she frowned. 'But sounds

too cute...'

Taehyung and Jungkook looked at each other, rolling their eyes, trying to hold their smiles.

Han gasped.

'Loo.'

'Mr Loo... Dr Loo... Lord Loo...' Yeonjun started listening.

'Lord Loo it is then...' Jimin nodded satisfied.

'I appreciate your humor but it is not a funny matter...' Taehyung said, with tightly pressed lips.

'No, no... think about it again...' Jimin shook his head. 'Learn from Harry Potter. Lord Voldemort's name was a taboo. People feared more the name than the person itself... But who will be afraid of Lord Loo? He can be used only to wash away our shit...' Jimin spread his arms.

'And not gonna lie... as a villain... I would be pissed to be called a loo by a bunch of teenagers...' Minho nodded.

'Okay... but... if at any point it will be too much for any of you...just tell us...' Taehyung said quietly.

'Yeah. Your soulmate is always your first priority...' Jungkook squeezed Taehyung's hand.

In response Minho just turned up the music in room and Han yelled:

'Sorry, I don't understand bullshit!'

'Dance practice then! We won't have time to train combat today, but at least we need to sweat a bit before going out or aunties will suspect something...' Jimin clapped his hands.

'Something energetic then...' Yeonjun said. 'BTS "Idol" or Stray Kids "Miroh"?

'I have a perfect one...' Jungkook went to the stereo and connected it with his phone. 'ON...'

'UUUU!!! WE ARE GOING HARD!!' Han whistled, and stretched his hand to Taehyung, who high fived him.

'Combination guys!' Jimin yelled and he nodded to Jungkook.

Jungkook was right... The song was perfect.

They were young. Determinated. Didn't know what the future held for them...

But they were fighters.

Together.

*Can't hold me down cuz you know I'm a fighter*

*I'll gladly be locked in this dark abyss*

*Find me and I'm gonna bleed with ya*

Taehyung woke up in Jungkook's bed feeling something was really wrong... And by something he meant - Jungkook wasn't sleeping next to him.

He got up and grabbed his hoodie from the chair. Putting it on, he checked the bathroom upstairs and on his toes passed the guest bedroom where aunties were sleeping. He checked the kitchen, hoping Jungkook just came for something to drink. He checked Jimin's bedroom, because maybe Jungkook was worried about their friend, but he only found Jimin spread like a starfish on the bed.

He was going to the basement, because maybe Jungkook, again, had his night-cleaning marathon, when the cool air embraced his naked feet. He looked at the doors to the garden. They were slightly ajar. He walked there and saw Jungkook sitting on the steps on the terrace. Looking at the garden.

His entire figure was enveloped in the soft moonlight. October's night was cold. The dark brown leaves were falling on the lawn.

Taehyung slowly walked barefoot through the terrace and sat behind Jungkook, backhugging him as always.

'Don't do this, babybun...' he whispered, kissing Jungkook's ear. 'Don't disappear on

me like that...'

'It wasn't even 15 minutes...'

'Enough to wake me up...'

'Sorry, angel...' Jungkook mumbled.

'Did you have a dream?'

Jungkook shook his head.

'Just wanted to look at something else to get the pictures from recording from my head...'

'You shouldn't have watched that...' Taehyung sighed.

'I had to...'

'Why?'

'I don't know... I hoped I would recognize him... Or notice something to warn our parents...'

'And you did...'

'Even if I would see him... I wouldn't know it's him I guess...'

Jungkook looked at the sky. At the moon which was covered by clouds now.

'What have I dragged you all into?' he whispered heavily.

Taehyung looked at his profile.

'Don't tell me you are blaming yourself for something that happened over two thousand years ago...' he said with disbelief.

Jungkook didn't answer.

'Jesus!' Taehyung gasped, and shifted, he kneeled in front of him.

Jungkook turned his head to the side, running away with his fragile gaze. He shut his eyes.

'If not me being here... you wouldn't be in danger... He wouldn't chase after you... And all our friends, our family... wouldn't be his target...' he choked out.

Taehyung cupped his face.

'Koo... It's not you... You have a part of Jeryn's soul... that's all!;

On Jungkook's eyelashes tears appeared.

'Look at me...' Taehyung pleaded softly, but Jungkook shook his head, being fed up with his own fragileness. Not wanting Taehyung to see him like that.

'It's not that he appeared here, because of you... Because of us. It's the opposite. We are here because of him. If he wouldn't be here we wouldn't be either. All of us. Together. Think about it... About the pasts we are aware of... We had never had this much of a support... We were never this close before... with each other or with anyone else...'

'That just put them more in danger...' Jungkook whispered and tears rolled down between his lips.

Taehyung's thumbs wipe the tears from Jungkook's eyelashes.

'Baby... you are the last one to blame here... You are not the disease... You are the remedy.'

Jungkook slowly opened his eyes.

'You are designed to be a fighter. You are a warrior. A-and it scares the shit out of me...' Taehyung whispered. 'I'm not afraid of fighting next to you. I'm not afraid of leading people to fight... But I'm afraid... S-so afraid... I will lose you... or see you suffer. And you are suffering blaming yourself like that... Don't do it, bun...'

'Sometimes I can't help it... Will I be even able to...? I don't know if...?' Jungkook was stuttering.

'Koo...' Taehyung gulped and stroked Jungkook's cheeks with his thumbs. He leaned and pecked his wet lips. 'Forget about it. Forget about all of them. About Jeryn, Jiyan and the rest... They are just signposts. That's to them we are a step ahead. But you are not them! You are you! Some of them were warriors, some not. But the things we can do now... the way we know how to use our powers is thanks to us. Because we know each other and trust each other like no one else! You were trained from early childhood. It doesn't matter that you think right now that you can't stand against HIM. It's normal. But when you are using your power. When I'm using my sword... we are fighting the best we can. That's all we can do. Our instinct will do the rest. I trust you. So trust yourself too.'

Jungkook nodded but still was looking at the ground.

And Taehyung knew... sometimes he had those thoughts too, but he could get rid of them pretty fast. But Jungkook... with his insecurities that were coming out of nowhere... When he couldn't separate, where was his own mind and soul ending

and the parts of the past beginning... With his fragile teenage personality that was so mature when it comes to soulmate things, but was as well really distrustful in what he should trust in... If he was blaming himself for something so utterly stupid... There was a thing that was kicking his insecurities to a higher level even more...

Taehyung's heart sped up its beating. He gulped feeling a bit nauseous. His hands started to sweat.

But the desperate need to soothe Jungkook... not a soulmate... not a destined lover... but his Jungkook. His friend. His boyfriend... His Koo... Was too hard to oppose...

'If you don't know by yourself... I will tell you who you are...' Taehyung whispered, looking down, because he was too shy to look at Jungkook now. He took his hands and started to play with his fingers.

'You are the boy who can do a triple flip without thinking about it... You are the boy who kicked Hyunsik's ass in one on one when you were 12... You are the boy who took off my shoes when I was crying... And the one that is cooking with my dad in the kitchen... The same one who is cute and hot and so easy to get jealous... You are the boy who was sleeping on my lap when I was 4. And the boy who can kick anybody's ass... The one who is so ready to give his time to his friends. And the one who is invested in everything with all his heart... You are the boyfriend who makes sure I eat. Makes my heart skip a bit with one note of his voice... A boyfriend that makes me melt with one smile...'

Taehyung's voice was getting more quiet with each sentence.

Jungkook raised his head to look at him, but Taehyung was still looking at their hands.

'I don't know Jeryn... Jiyan... Junjie... or the rest of those ghosts...' Taehyung whispered. 'I only know Jungkook... ' he slowly raised his eyes and their gazes met. '... and I am in love with him.'

Jungkook's eyelashes flattered with shock. His lips trembled. He couldn't hold Taehyung's gaze, so he dropped his eyes on their fingers and intertwined them.

He sniffed and opened his eyes, but couldn't say anything, too overwhelmed.

'Are you speechless?' Taehyung asked, with a hint of amusement and a lot of emotions in his voice. 'Didn't you know...?'

'You are the only thing that keeps me sane in this whole mess with all the pasts, lifetimes and souls...' Jungkook choked out. 'I never cared about our mark... about

Teaghan, Tarique and whatever their names were... I just wanted you next to me... Even if our meeting was planned...It doesn't matter... Because I love you so much, Taehyung...' he cried out. 'Soulmate or not...'

'So why are you crying now?' Taehyung asked, tearing up. 'I'm here right...'

'I thought... There was a part of me that... thought...you...'

'Dummy...' Taehyung joined their foreheads. 'Being soulmates doesn't define feelings...' he whispered. 'I love you because you are a cute, smart, lively brat... not because you have the same mark as me.'

Jungkook brushed his nose over Taehyung's with closed eyes.

'Kiss me, please...'

'You know I can't say "no" to you...' he kissed Jungkook's red from crying nose, before their lips joined under the gentle light of the moon.

---

Something pop out... So I can only give you a short chapter today...

Sowwy...

Hope you cried... I did...

BlairWitch ❤❤

# Chapter 31: The City of War

**17th of October 2066**

72 hours.

Yoongi reached his home after 72 hours.

Gahyeon was a mess after she saw him. Even if San or Wooyoung was checking the house from time to time, assuring her he is okay on their way. She wouldn't rest until she saw him.

The city... changed.

The gray uniforms were visible everywhere. Interdependants that previously didn't belong to ISA, started to join them. Wanted to be led to fight with someone they considered a threat.

And the non-Interdependants, the so-called "normal" people... Yoongi understood them. Nobody wanted to be dragged away from house and be told to get the fuck out of the city... He understood. But it didn't mean he would let them kill interdependants. They weren't innocent angels... They started all of it a long time ago.

He felt... as nobody was innocent here. There was no one side to blame...

It took him 3 days to understand this.

When he and Chorong brought Dokhyun's body to her house, they met Taeil there. San and Wooyoung were trying to treat him. He had a bullet in his thigh.

Yoongi respectfully rested Dokhyun's body on the ground in the garage and covered it with a sheet. He made a place.

He was afraid... Soon there will be more bodies here...

He gulped and went to the kitchen. The floor was already covered in blood.

'We have to take you to the doctor!' Chorong insisted, when they were pressing a cloth to his wound.

'What doctor?' Taeil choked out through gritted teeth. 'How many interdependant doctors do you know?'

'Hospitals are closed or destroyed...' Wooyoung confirmed quietly.

'There is something more important...' Taeil said, still clenching his teeth. He put his hand into the pocket and had a hard time taking out what was there, because the fabric was already soaked with blood.

Finally in between his fingers a silver ring appeared.

'D-dad... gave me this, before they took him...' he whispered. 'I guess... he didn't want them to have it...'

Chorong and the rest were looking at the ring. It was Chorong's Sacred Treasure.

'So he is unarmed there...' she whispered and her gaze darkened.

'W-we have to... take him back...' Taeil whispered, closing his mother's fingers on the ring.

'We will.' She said coldly. 'But first we need to treat you.'

Yoongi looked around and then focused on his aunt.

'Okay... we don't have a choice,' he said. 'We have to take the bullet out before he will bleed out... And you can do it.'

'What?' Chorong looked at the bloody floor.

'You can control metal objects, right? You are unsealed. You can do it.'

'But he should have surgery! Do you expect me to...'

'Yes I expect you to do it!' Yoongi lost his cool. 'What do you think we will encounter in the next weeks, huh?!' she looked at him with widened eyes. 'One! Procent!! ONE!! That is how many of Interdependants live on this planet! The hospitals are just a beggining. Soon we won't have energy! Then food! How many things that are made or provided by non-Interdependants can you actually exchange with magic?! Stop ISA before they will kick out all people from here! Unless you want to live in the middle age!'

'It's not the time to talk about it!' San stopped them. 'But Yoongi is right. You have to do this, mam.' he looked at Chorong and stood behind Taeil.

'I will bring the first aid kit...' Wooyoung said.

'And VODKA!' Taeil yelled after him.

'We have disinfectants we don't need vodka for...' his mother started but as soon as Wooyoung came back, Taeil grabbed the bottle and drank from it.

'Ewww...' San face twisted in disgust.

'He will be numb after...' Yoongi patted his cousin's arm.

'I don't like this...' Chorong said, quietly, while Yoongi tore out the fabric around the wound.

'Well... get used to it...' Yoongi said bitterly. He held the battle of vodka and gave more to Taeil. He looked at him. 'Better knock out yourself...'

Wooyoung and San held Taeil still, when Chorong with a pained face pressed her hand to her son's wound.

Taeil started to scream.

'Faster!' he screamed.

Yoongi grabbed the wooden spoon and put it between his teeth to bite on it.

'But...' his mother teared up.

'Do it faster or he will suffer longer!' Yoongi said sternly.

He started to look through drawers in the kitchen fast.

Taeil was whimpering when the bullet slowly appeared in the wound. Chorong's power made it jump out of the tissues and she dropped on the ground deadly pale.

Yoongi finally found what he was looking for. He washed his hands thoughtfully with soap. Before he started to spray the needle with a disinfectant.

Taeil grabbed the bottle of alkochol, took out the spoon he was biting on, and greedily drank more of it.

'Bite again.' Yoongi said, dropping to his knees next to the chair, and took out the needle and thread.

'What are you doing?' Chroong asked.

'What do you think?' Yoongi asked, while Wooyoung cleaned the blood around the wound and disinfected it.

'With a simple thread?!'

'Do you have stitches? Or doctor? Or a nurse? Or a healer?' Yoongi glared at her. 'That's how it's gonna look like from now on... better start to think what can we do about it...'

'It's not some kind of action movie...' Chorong started.

'No. And that's what is wrong with all this fucked up situation...' Yoongi said and Taeil nodded.

He was dizzy from all the alcohol and blood loss. His head started to spin. His vision was doubled when he saw Yoongi, pressing the needle to his skin.

Yoongi gulped. The skin was slippery from still coming out blood and it was hard to pierce it even with a needle. He wasn't even sure if what he was doing was right. He simply acted...

Yoongi seemed to be composed. But in fact he wasn't. He just had this ability to fall apart AFTER he took care of everything that had to be taken care of.

He was just a 20 year old boy...

But it seems life decided to give him experience for all the critical situations beforehand...

Wooyoung gave the spoon to Taeil again. In the middle of sewing, he passed out.

Boys took him to his room after and laid him on the bed so his mother could take care of him.

'We are going back to the city... Inho said to evacuate all our people to the underground ISA's headquarters. The ones that need this. The bodies...' Yoongi gulped and looked at Chorong.

'Bring them here...' she whispered, taking off Taeil's clothes.

'What about Mr Min?' San asked.

Chorong looked at the ring on her finger.

'I will contact ISA. Min's Company Headquarter is destroyed... We should check people there too...'

'Our employees are not interdependants... They've never tried to hurt us.' Yoongi said. 'Think about that... And stop this madness, auntie...' he looked at Woosan. 'We are leaving...'

That's how Yoongi ended up on the streets of the city he was born in, surrounded by yelling, crying, gunshots, dust and an overwhelming scent of smoke. And it was just a beggining...

Just as he entered the house he looked at Gahyeon and their nanny who were

looking at the tv and heard the voice of President of Korea:

*'Interdependants Security Agency, known as ISA... I call out to you. Do not raise your weapons. I call out to every Interdependent in Daegu... we don't want your death. We don't want more victims. We will work with you, but you need to show us you are willing to stretch a hand to us. The military entered the city today and I'm asking you... let them do their job. Each of you is a Korean citizen. We never said you don't have the same rights. But we have to work together...'*

Suddenly the speech was disturbed and the screen started to glitch. After a few minutes it displayed the face of Na Inho. Pale. With red eyes. Tired. In military uniform.

*'Mr President... sorry to hack the satellite signal...but the lies... are hard to stand... How can we not act? When we see something like this?'*

The screen changed and on the tv a troop of soldiers were seen. They were walking through the streets. Dragging a teenage girl after themselves. She had a mark on her palm. A boy was running after them. He reached them and she managed to free her hand. She wanted to press it to his chest... but before she could do it... two shots were heard. And two bodies fell to the ground.

Gahyeon flinched seeing the scene.

But it wasn't the end. Next video showed the hospital, guarded by soldiers. A young woman begged was supporting an old man with her arm, screaming:

'Please! Let me in! He has breathing problems!'

And a soldier answered her:

'You have magic. Use it...' And left her in front of the gate.

The old man fell to his knees.

The third recording showed two girls. Both with holders' marks. They were helping some older people to leave the house. Two holders... helping non-Interdependant eldery couple... But suddenly the other people came and started to call them witches. Yelling at them to leave the poor people alone. Some man pushed them to the wall...

They couldn't do anything... Without a soulmate... every Interdependent was a simple human.

Gahyeon covered her mouth with her hand, looking at two girls her age that were

beaten up and not even two eldery people could stop the brainless crowd...

Yoongi looked at her and wanted to turn off the tv when Na Inho appeared again.

*'Do you think these are our recordings? When would we have time to make them? These are recordings from your reporters... The recordings you don't want to show... Some decent journalist sent them to us, because apparently... they are blocked from publishing them... Mr President... Is your army job to kill teenagers, before they even are a threat? Is your job to restrict medical care to people you call "normal"? Some of us even tried to help you... and we were paid back with brutality... I understand... You are afraid of us. But those girls there... they couldn't use any power. None of us can without their soulmate. That's why... we will protect ourselves with your own guns... You made us do it. We would prefer to not use such an aggressive primitive weapon. But we have to protect what's left... The disgusting statistics of yours...'* Inho chuckled bitterly. *'... I will use your pattern. It's been 72 hours. During which PEOPLE killed 20 Interdependants. 20... 50 is wounded without any medical help. Do you know how many people INTERDEPENDENTS killed in return? None. The soldiers that died in an attack are the only victims... We are pushing you out of the city with respect ,and when you don't resist, you are safely delivered on the city border. We don't want to kill. We don't want to lose soulmates...'* he teared up. *'Don't make it worse. Call off the troops... Give Min Kyung back! Mr President... you are fighting with the wrong people... Because we ARE people. Just like you... I'm giving you 72 hours. The army should back away. Min Kyung should be back to his home. And then we can start talking. If not... we have a war.'*

Yoongi felt a cold stone in his stomach. He gulped and turned of tv. Gahyeon looked at him with tears in her eyes.

'I should be there. Helping too...' she whispered.

Yoongi shook his head.

'No.'

'Oppa...'

'No.' he repeated tiredly. 'If you want me to be focused. If you want me to survive there... Stay here.'

'Then at least let me help wounded ones! If we manage to get all the things needed here... I can check the tutorials on you tube to know how to treat wounds and...'

'I won't let anybody inside this house.' Yoongi said sternly.

'The guest house then!' Gahyeon said. 'Let me do something! Wooyoung or San can stay with me!'

Yoongi was thinking.The guest house was a small house in the garden in Min's

possession, with two bedrooms, bathroom, kitchen area and huge living room. If they remove furniture, they could get some space...

'We will help you to prepare the space. You can't walk alone anywhere!' Yoongi said sternly. 'That's my condition.'

Gahyeon nodded.

'I will try to find people who can help...'

'We still have to send all the people with separation syndrome to ISA...' San noticed.

'About that...' Yoongi frowned. 'I know it's fishy... but we can't do anything about it... We are not able to deal with a person with separation syndrome... Look how much care mom needs...'

Gahyeon agreed with a sad expression.

'You should go rest. Even a bit. You look as if you will pass out in a minute...'

'Yeah. I will.'

Yoongi reached his room and with dirty, shivering hands took out his phone, while sitting on the bed.

There were 4 messages from Chim. Asking where is he? How is he?

Each day. The same questions. The same concern...

Yoongi was too tired. He could barely hold his phone. He missed even a bit of peace he had during last year. He looked at his desk. At the papers for University he shyly took out.

He could throw them away again...

He wanted to sleep. He wanted to sleep so much... Without dreams. Without nightmares of what he saw.

He put headphones on...

And played their song that lulled him to sleep.

**20th of October, 3 days later**

'We have a war then.'

The statement was published on 3EO's site with a photo of soldiers on the street of Daegu. The message was copied by all media sites and published on national tv.

ISA stormed the army's camp and got Min Kyung back. He had some bruises but he was in overall good shape. They didn't kill anyone during action. Took only soulmate agents that could use offensive and defensive powers.

But the action was described as the attack on the national army.

Min Kyung posted a statement. Yoongi was glad his uncle got back. His aunt didn't have such a power over ISA as him, and Na Inho in his separation syndrome stage of anger wasn't a person who could make rational decisions...

*'All non-Interdependants that wants to stay in the city of Daegu, can stay...' Min Kyung said. 'But you will be registered. All of you... Even one... And we mean it. ONE! Act against Interdependants will be punished by immediate banishment! If any of you will lay a hand on one of us... you will be punished by death. People without bad intentions and clear consciousness don't have to be afraid.'*

Yoongi sighed heavily. He could agree with it.

*'Brothers. Sisters...' Min Kyung said. 'If we want to survive, we have to work together. All soulmates... please help us. In any way you can. All Interdependants... for your own safety, please contact us. Register your name and rank on our site so we can help you in any emergency. We won't ever... not answer your request. But you need to know how to contact us. And we need to know how to find you. The army is in the city. And our forces are not numerous. Anyone will be welcomed and we will make sure you know how to protect yourself and people dear to you. We have a war.'*

With the last heavy statement Min Kyung finished the message which was published on 3EO's website and displayed in every tv in the country.

Yoongi gulped and closed his eyes.

**20th of December, 60 days since the outbreak of war**

60 days of hell. That's how Yoongi would describe it...

The President made a wrong decision and sent more troops inside the city. But that wasn't a problem...

The problem lies in people. In their racism and prejudices. In psychology of the crowd.

ISA didn't have to fight with soldiers. They have to fight with an enemy inside the city. With enraged non-Interdependants who were treating them as enemies.

And they were treated as enemies in return...

The war woke up the worst in people that were already against Interdependants.

From the whole country, people started to storm the city calling themselves "Protectors of Normality" to help the ones that were against Interdependants.

On the other side all Interdependants joined hands with ISA to help protect what was left to protect. Even from abroad, Interdependants were arriving to Korea to join ISA's troops. The conflict was getting even more dangerous.

At this point it was a force that no one could control. No one could stop...

And it was spreading... after Deagu, the whole North Gyeongsang Province noted outbreaks of aggression and fighting. Rebellions in major cities and villages.

Each day Yoongi was going outside with his heart in his throat wondering if it would be the day that he would have to aim... and kill.

Till this moment he was lucky. He considered himself lucky... He could always stick to combat. He could always aim at leg, arms, and hands... He wasn't in the situation that would force him to take someone's life... yet.

To the most dangerous situations the mated agents of ISA were sent as they could use the power.

But this day was the worst... The National Army sent missiles...

It was the first time. They aimed at ISA's headquarters... And described it as a warning.

Yoongi was running through the city, looking at San and Wooyoung in the air. He was dragging away from the danger every person who was caught up in the explosion. He couldn't evacuate them, but was helping to find the covers. Protecting from the sick minds that found the war... as their playground and enjoyed the chaos.

It was disgusting how many people like that were tempted by war and misery...

It was just a second... He helped a man to hide and ran after another one when he heard the whistle of the next missile. He looked at the building above his head, which started to crumble.

He absolutely froze. The rain of shattered glass fell on his head.

The blocks were flying above his head and his eyes widened when he saw one aiming perfectly at him... He couldn't make it... He knew it... but he instinctively took a step back.

Someone grabbed him in half. The impact threw them on the ground a few meters away.

He felt the heaviness...

But he was still breathing.

The man with golden hair looked at him.

'Are you okay, kid?' he asked, looking around.

'Y-yeah...' Yoongi choked out.

'Do you need a healer?'

Yoongi shook his head.

'BEAK!!!' Someone yelled.

'Coming!' The men screamed back and looked at Yoongi again. 'Can I leave you? Will you be okay? Need help??'

'N-no...' Yoongi let out breathlessly, while the short man, who looked like a delicate angel, got up fast.

He turned around, but hesitantly looked back and helped Yoongi to get up. He grabbed his arms. He wasn't an agent... He had a combat uniform... but not ISA's uniform...

'No injuries?'

Yoongi, still deafened by the explosion, just shook his head.

'Do you want to go with me?'

'No... I-I have a job here...'

'Do you need a gun? Food?' the man asked in concern. How many times has he had to ask that in the last few days? How many people did he save?

'BAEKHYUN!' a woman yelled again. She was throwing balls of light to destroy huge blocks that were falling from the building, just to secure them after with another ball of light and place them on the ground before they hurt someone.

The men called Baekhyun looked once more at Yoongi and his eyes became soft. He wipe the dirt from Yoongi's cheek and whispered sadly:

'You are so young...'

Suddenly he looked left and his face became focused as if he was listening.

'ANOTHER ONE IS COMING!!' he yelled to the woman. 'Hope! RM!! Go there!'

He started to run.

'Hide yourself!!' he screamed to Yoongi who was still shocked by the sudden encounter.

He was never this close to death...

And had not felt such a warm parent-like feeling of concern... for a long time.

**30th of December, 70th days after the outbreak of war**

There was no party.

There was no music.

There were no colorful decorations.

With a heavy heart Jungkook asked their friends not to come...

He knew. He knew Taehyung would feel even worse, trying to pretend everything was fine. Showing a fake smile on his face.

There were just three of them. Taehyung, Jimin and Jungkook.

Grandparents visited, but the atmosphere was so heavy they let the boys be alone. In their little bubble, they felt safe in.

They were waiting. They had hope.

At least a call would lift up their moods.

Three months... They talked with one of their parents three times...

But there was no call for the whole day. Just six messages.

The saddest "Happy Birthday!" texts they had ever seen.

Jungkook was sitting next to Taehyung caressing his back, when Jimin walked in with a small cake.

Taehyung glared at him.

'Come on, Tae...' Jimin whispered. 'I know it shouldn't be like that... I know it's fucked up... But at least have this...'

Taehyung looked at his best friend. Jimin was thin. Thinner than normally. It was hard to watch how he was losing weight. Ten days ago he was standing in the kitchen... and suddenly fainted... It was just a minute or two... But enough to make Jungkook and Taehyung have a heart attack.

When he woke up he was... strange. He was shocked, scared... but he was saying he felt warm.

His soulmate... whoever it was... indeed was in the war zone it seems.

So Taehyung sighed and did it for his friend.

He cut the cake unwillingly, but then a small smile appeared on his face. He took a piece in his fingers and turned with it to Jungkook.

Jungkook blinked surprised and blushed a bit before opening his mouth and taking the sweet.

Jimin smiled a bit to himself and sneakily took a photo. For parents...

He automatically looked at his phone and the smile disappeared when he, as for more than the last 70 days, didn't see notification.

He raised his eyes at Taehyung and Jungkook and let the warmth of looking at them calmed him down. Jungkook licked his lips from the cream, avoiding Tae's eyes. It was cute...

Taehyung looked at Jimin and raised another piece of cake for him. Jimin bent and ate it.

Then both Jungkook and Jimin started to feed Taehyung with the rest. Forcefully

pushing the cake inside his mouth until they were filled. Then they started to paint his face with the cream, finally making him giggle a bit.

They fell on the pillows covered with crumbs and cream.

Jungkook turned to Taehyung and Jimin backhugged him making a Tae-sandwich.

Taehyung squeezed Jimin's small hand thrown over his and Jungkook's waists. He looked at a smudge of strawberry cream on his boyfriend's cheek and pressed his forehead to Jungkook's, closing his eyes.

On the day of his 18th birthday he had just one wish...

He wanted his parents to come back home.

---

I really have to slowly play this so I won't get lost myself. I will try to update again in the middle of the week.

Sorry!

BlairWitch ＜3

# Chapter 32: Iron Wall

**20th of January, 90 days since the outbreak of war**

The situation wasn't calming down. Insead the conflict was swallowing not just Daegu. But surrounding areas where Interdependants didn't feel safe before.

But Daegu... the core of the war... the brutality was getting out of control. Interdependants were doing everything not to kill. But inside the enraged crowd it was hard.

Terrorists were supplying non-Interdependants with guns and amunition, but even when they didn't have it... they were making the weapons from everything they could get. Molotov cocktails were in use daily. As Interdependants were well organized under the commandments of Min Kyung, ISA's agents and all their supporters that cooperated with them were mainly trying to prevent killing innocent. No matter what and who it was. Women, children, and men that weren't fighting were under the protection of Na Inho's order.

They were gathering materials, recording everything they could to publish; they weren't the ones that were attacking.

They were the ones that were defending themselves.

The next troops of the military were sent to Deagu and surrounding areas with the strict order they were sent to calm the situation in the crowd. The President of Korea was now controlling the decisions of the Generals of the Army.

But the opposition wasn't sleeping. His main rival in the next election took the chance and published the statement that the President's decisions lacked stability and the people were dying because of him.

Under the pressure, President orders changed. The Military now had to capture everybody: Interdependent and non-Interdependents that were taking part in fights on the streets. The orders were simple: nip conflict in the bud before the elections.

But even being in danger of being captured by the Military, Yoongi, San and Wooyoung were on the streets. Delivering wounded people to ISA's safeties. They had few healers. They had few trusted people that were still making food and delivering it.

All citizens were asked to spare water, food and energy however they could. The fuel started to be a problem so they found soulmates that were able to control electricity to at least move electric cars.

In the underground the city was still alive...

It was raining heavily. Making everything blurred and slippery. Making clothes heavy. It was hard to hear anything around...

Yoongi was running with a child in his arms. He gave it to his parents and looked around to check on San, who was above his head. The shots were heard... San dodged the bullet swiftly but more of them came.

Yoongi saw someone with a shotgun on the rooftop aiming at San. In slow motion he saw this one bullet. The bullet that should hit San's back...

'SAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAN!!!!!!!!!!'

He heard Wooyoung's desperate scream and saw him flying in San's direction with incredible speed. The rain and the heavy wind indicated the storm was coming - was slowing him down.

There was no way he could possibly reach him...

Yoongi for a moment didn't breathe. Time stopped. He didn't hear anything. There was nothing around.

Just San and the bullet.

Nothing.

No time.

No space around.

Not even a slightest sound.

He was in an absolute void.

Each moment was like stretching in time. Each motion was taking forever. He saw San turning around, hearing Wooyoung's scream...

Piercing through the rain... the bullet that was one meter away from him...

**BOOOOOOOOOOOOOM!!!!!!!!!!!!**

Everything exploded around.

Yoongi was pushed back by the sudden power. The strange liquid-like dome of light appeared, covering the space from the street to the rooftops. Covering San, Wooyoung and the bullets inside the space.

Everything inside was floating as if there was no gravity there.

Everything slowed down. The bullet just stopped in their place.

Yoongi looked at the man crouching down, pressing his hands to the dirty street. He was covered in warm light, which was floating around him like particles of the sun.

He looked ethereal, but when he opened his eyes they were dark and dangerous.

'NOW!!' he screamed.

Yoongi for a moment wanted to move, thinking he was talking about him. But then like a rocket a slim person entered the light space.

Running swiftly, a woman stepped on the man's shoulder and rebounded from it, flying through the space. The lightballs appeared under her feet making steps for her, when she screamed:

'One thing I hate the most!' She flew out of the space and stepping on the lighballs, she was going into the sniper direction. 'Aiming at someone's back!'

Before the shooter could prepare to shoot or at least stand up, her combat boot hit the person's face, crashing it.

'Hope! Jiu!! Stop playing!' A tall man appeared on the street. 'We need to move Namjin to the next location!!!'

Yoongi saw these uniforms already... Who were they?

The woman bounced from the roof and, making a flip, fell inside the gravity-less

space. Then the dome together with the objects and people inside started to shrink, until everyone gently reached the ground. The light disappeared.

Yoongi saw as Wooyoung reached San and pulled him into a bone crushing hug - deadly pale. Tears were falling down his cheeks, when he hid his face in San's neck.

The tall man walked to them fast, looking around, and started to push them, saying:

'I understand, but it's not safe here... get out of the street...'

The red haired man waited for the woman and they, together, started to follow them.

Yoongi came out of the shock all of that caused him and slowly started to go in their direction, wanting to check on Woosan and eavesdropping on their conversation.

'Beak checked the hospital... The destroyed one. The underground is safe. The basements are okay and we can find some supplies there... We need to move Namjin from the school they are using. It's too dangerous there... We have to hide them.'

'And the wounded ones?' the woman asked.

'They healed them to the point their lives are not in danger. We can help them reach safety, but that's it. No matter what Jin says, we are moving them tonight...'

It was a glimpse...

Millisecond of light's reflex that slid through Yoongi's eyes despise the rain...

Gunshot.

Female scream.

Drops of blood that appeared on tall man's face.

And the red haired man's voice, yelling:

CHANYEOL!!!

**Seoul**

Taehyung and Jungkook jumped out of the bed, hearing a scream. They looked at each other and started to run to Jimin's bedroom.

Siyeon and Bora were already there. Sitting on Jimin's side, asking him what's wrong.

He was just shaking his head. Not saying anything. His heavy, sped up breathing changed into a panic attack.

He was deadly pale. All the time shaking his head as if he was repeating: no, no, no, no...

'I will find a paper bag.' Bora said and walked out fast.

Jungkook and Taehyung approached the bed. Jungkook put his hand on Siyeon's shoulder:

'Auntie...' he just said.

She looked at him and moved away.

Taehyung and Jungkook kneeled on both sides of Jimin, facing each other.

'Jimin...' Taehyung called out, rubbing his back. 'We are here...'

Jimin shook his head again, not responding even to him. Nor responding to his voice or touch. He desperately tried to catch his breath.

Taehyung looked at Jungkook, just before his hands slid under his t-shirt. He took out the sword and put it on the bed, while Jungkook's skin started to shine softly like a white glitter. Taehyung, trying to do it as gently as possible, grabbed Jimin's

head and made him look inside Jungkook's eyes.

Jungkook pressed his hand to Jimin's chest and the white air power stormed the other's lungs.

Jimin caught a breath, almost choking on it.

'Auntie... bring melissa...' Jungkook whispered, not letting go of Jimin's gaze.

Siyeon looked at him confused.

'My appa is growing herbs for my dad. They are in the kitchen. Bring the pot please.' Taehyung explained quietly.

Taehyung let go of Jimin's head, who was hypnotized by Jungkook's gentle eyes, who shined like white diamonds from his power. His hand moved to Jimin's hair to caress it. Jungkook was caressing his cheeks with his thumbs until Jimin's breath stabilized and his eyes teared up.

'His soul... is breaking...' he whispered with trembling lips.

'His soul won't ever break, Jimin... as long as you exist.' Taehyung said calmingly. 'If you can feel his suffering... he can feel you too. Send him what he needs... Send him faith. Send him hope... Send him strength.'

Jimin's miserable eyes were staring at Jungkook.

'Help me...' he whispered.

The lightening struck outside the window painting the room with purple and whit light.

Jungkook's eyes shined with jade.

'You are two sides of the same coin. He is the fire. You are the lightning... Light him up then!'

**Daegu**

Chanyeol couldn't comprehend what happened...

That's all he remembered for a moment.

He saw the bullet flying above his shoulder and in the next second his face was splashed with someone's blood.

He blinked.

He heard Minji's scream.

'Chanyeol!!!' Hobi screamed.

He slowly looked around to see the man, lying on the street with the bullet in his face. His face was crushed by the gunshot.

Minji grabbed him.

'Are you okay?!' she shook him.

He nodded. And looked around. In the heavy rain he saw a silhouette.

A boy holding a gun with trembling hands.

He started to run to him.

The reflex of light...

The second Yoongi understood there is a man with a gun pointing at the strangers and Woosan. At the tall man directly...

Sooner than he thought he had the gun in his hand.

Aiming.

But his fingers were trembling over the trigger.

He couldn't do it...

He saw so many people with empty, dead eyes already...

Kill someone?

How?

Why was the time so slow?

Why didn't that man already shoot?

Why did the rain get heavier suddenly?

As if someone was crying and it responded to it...

In this millisecond of hesitation...

In this second of sacrificing his innocence...

Why did he suddenly feel so warm? As if he was in some dimension and someone... hugged him?

*It's okay. I am always here... You don't have to fight alone... I'm here. No matter what.*

In the next moment the lightning struck down and the sudden sound made him pull the trigger.

The sound of a gunshot pierced his ear.

He looked at the bloody mess where a second ago was the attacker's face and felt nauseous. He started to tremble.

Through the sound of rain he heard voices.

The thunders and lightnings were dancing above him. He raised his head. The rain fell on his face, hiding the sudden tears that rolled down his cheeks.

The lightening lightened up the sky.

Why was it so beautiful?

*I'm waiting. Don't give up. You are not alone.*

Did he imagine this? He felt as if he could hear it... In the sound of rain. In the sound of lightning...

Yoongi was absolutely frozen. He was in some kind subspace when he could feel arms around himself.

Chim...

And suddenly he really felt an arm around his shoulder. Pulling him out of the street. Out of the rain under the shade of the empty street shops.

The tall man looked at him from above.

'You are in shock.' he stated, raising Yoongi's eyelid to check his pupils.

Yoongi didn't answer.

Chanyeol took a gun from his hand, locked it and put it inside the holster under Yoongi's armpit.

'First time using a gun?' he asked, checking if Yoongi was harmed anywhere.

'No.' Yoongi responded flatly. 'First time I k-... ki-...' he gulped.

Chanyeol slowly looked at him with sad eyes. He hugged him.

'Thank you.' he whispered.

These two words. A simple "*thank you*"...

Yoongi's need to throw up calmed down. His rebellious guts eased up.

The woman and red haired man joined them, draggin Woosan after themselves.

'Come with us. We will feed you and check your state...'

'Sorry, sir. I don't even know you...' Yoongi shook his head.

'Well, I am Chanyeol.' Chan flicked Yoongi's forehead. 'A Guy, whose life you just saved... This is Hope. And this is Jiu.' he introduced the other two.

Minji looked at Yoongi and her eyes widened.

'You are the boy Baekhyun's saved!'

'The blond man?' Yoongi frowned. 'I remember...'

Chanyeol smiled lightly.

'Baek is my soulmate.'

Yoongi felt as if he hadn't seen a smile from anyone since forever... It felt... Nice. It was giving him hope...

'We are from MOI.' the man called Hobi explained. 'We don't get involved with ISA. We are here strictly to save people... And we should really get going...' he

looked around.

'Come with us...' Chanyeol repeated. 'We can give you at least a safe night for everything you have done for me...'

Yoongi shook his head.

'Your soulmate saved me. I saved you. I say we are even... And I have to go back to my sister and mother.'

Wooyoung and San stood next to him.

'It's not our first night on the streets.' San said.

'Thank you for saving us...' Wooyoung looked at Hope with overwhelming gratitude in his eyes.

'That's what we are here for...'

'Just as we are...' Yoongi said.

He was tired. So tired...

Wooyoung and San embraced his waist from two sides, seeing him spacing out.

'Say safe!' They said and flew in the air.

Minji, Hoseok and Chanyeol looked after them with sad eyes.

'Every night...' Hoseok whispered. 'I pray... our children won't end up like them...'

'Yeah... me too...' Chanyeol gulped. 'And every night... it feels more... that nobody is listening...'

Minji rubbed their backs. She felt like that too. She wanted to see her boys... But she had to be strong. She knew Jin and Namjoon were exhausted to the core. Yet they were pushing forward. She had to make sure the rest will too.

'Well... change your thinking.' she said. 'Because if our boys will ever be forced to show their true colors... They will bring living hell on earth...'

**Seoul**

Siyeon walked to the bedroom to see Jimin embraced by Taehyung's shoulder.

Breathing calmly already. Jungkook looked at her and stretched his hand for the pot with a little plant. The white glitter on his skin changed into green shade.

The plant grew a little and a strange steam ribbon of scent came out of it. Jungkook moved the pot near Jimin's face.

'Inhale.' he said quietly.

Jimin took a deep breath. And another one. His eyes got heavy.

Taehyung slowly moved, laying him on the pillow.

Jimin looked at him.

'We will end this madness... right?' he whispered.

Taehyung's eyes darkened.

'One day we will...' he said.

Jimin moved his face to look at Jungkook.

'I can't feel him anymore... It seems... He calmed down...'

Jungkook smiled lightly.

'I can't wait to meet him. It seems the bluemold haired guy is an amazing person!'

Jimin's hand weakly smacked Jungkook's arm.

'Stop simping over my man, bitch...' he said sleepily.

'Yeah! Stop simping over his man!' Taehyung glared at Jungkook.

Jimin giggled in daze hearing him. Then his head fell to the side when he fell asleep.

Bora stood in doors with a useless now paper bag and chamomile tea. Siyeon looked at Jungkook and Taehyung and took the pot with melissa from Jungkook's hands.

'You will stay with him right?' she asked, gently, predicting the boys' needs.

Taehyung nodded.

'Will you be able to fall asleep?' Bora frowned with worry.

'Don't worry, auntie...' Taehyung said. 'We will manage. He is better now...'

'Call us if anything. Don't try to fight to deal with everything alone...' Siyeon said and stroked Jungkook's hair.

'Okay... Good night...' Jungkook nodded.

When they were left alone Taehyung took the sword and stood in front of Jungkook. Jungkook lifted his shirt and Taehyung pressed his palm to his chest. When the Sacred Treasure disappeared, he pressed his forehead to Jungkook's and they both sighed heavily, closing their eyes.

'I can't even... imagine...' Jungkook whispered. 'Not having you around... Not being able to help you. Not knowing but feeling something is wrong...'

'Me neither... It scares me so much...' Taehyung admitted. 'Their connection is so strong, even if they haven't met...'

They both look at Jimin sleeping on the bed.

'I feel so useless...' Taehyung whispered.

'Yeah... me too...'

'Will he sleep till the morning?' the concern in Tae's voice was easy to recognize.

'He will. The pure essence from melissa will relax him... I couldn't do much more... But your dad always says melissa is good for nerves...'

'I hope they will call soon...'

'They better...' Jungkook said sternly and caressed Taehyung's cheek. 'I know, with your new driving license, you are an inch from jumping inside the car...'

'I am...' Tae sighed. 'But you would jump with me and I don't want to put you in danger...'

Jungkook squinted his eyes.

'Never even think about going without me. I will haunt you down and make you regret...'

Taehyung hugged him and sighed into his neck.

'That is the second reason I'm stopping myself.'

Jungkook stroked Tae's nape calmingly.

'We should at least lay down... We have school tomorrow...'

'Can you make french toasts?' Taehyung asked.

Jungkook smiled sadly. Uncle Jin always made french toasts when TaeTae was a grumpy tiger... So when Jungkook was around 10, he really wanted to know how to make them to please his TaeTae. And Jin taught him well...

'Of course, angel.' he said. 'French toasts for breakfast for my fluffy tiger and cute chick...'

Taehyung pecked Jungkook's neck and pulled him to the bed so they could surround Jimin with warmth and presence.

He could never get out of being impressed... Jungkook was easily breaking down when it came to his own feelings. But when everything was falling apart... he was like the last shreds of sanity Taehyung and Jimin needed...

**Daegu**

Yoongi came out of the fast and short shower. They really tried to save the water...

He sat on the floor, resting his back on the bed and hid his face in his hands.

He killed a man.

He was sure he would never get this out of his head...

But he also saved a man.

And it was making his feelings bearable...

He took his phone in his hand. GSM network was still working, so the phone calls were possible. The net... Sometimes it was hard to find the connection.

But maybe he will be lucky... He turned on the datas.

After a moment the app responded and he saw messages, he smiled a bit. Chim sometimes was whining. Sometimes threatening him. He could get sad or angry, because Yoongi didn't text him for more than 90 days. He hadn't texted him since his birthday...

Yoongi blushed remembering the last text he sent.

But today... he actually felt him. He really felt him...

He felt him in the moment, he needed him the most.

So no matter how tired and broken he was... he wanted to calm him down. He could guess Chim had to feel him first to respond to Yoongi like that...

He felt soft... So soft for him...

So the grumpy cat hid his claws for a moment to let himself be pet and purr...

**SUGA: I'm sorry I wasn't around.**

**SUGA: The days are hard. The nights are even harder now.**

**SUGA: I'm listening to Serendipity when I want to fall asleep.**

**SUGA: And yeah, consider your ass lucky, because it's a personal detail I'm giving you without any deals.**

**SUGA: I missed your sassy ass...**

**SUGA: FUUUUCCKK!!! Being sweet is weird!**

**SUGA: How can I even use the throwing up emoji?**

**SUGA: □□ *throwing up***

**SUGA: I feel better now...**

**SUGA: You know...**

There were so many things Yoongi wanted to say. He wanted to let out all that happened...

But he couldn't possibly stand if Chim would know. If he would connect the dots like Yoongi some time ago. His little sassy bitch would storm the place... he was sure of it. And Yoongi's capacity to be worried about people was at the breaking point already. Gahyeon, mom, Wooyoung, San, Taeil, his uncle and aunt... he could barely stand worrying about them everyday. If his soulmate would be here... close to ISA...

No. Absolutely NOT.

So Yoongi didn't type anything about the dark reality he was living in. But he couldn't just leave the sentence like that... when he already started...

**SUGA: I'm worried! I think I'm sick...**

**SUGA: I like to call you 'baby'.**

**SUGA: It's the first time I have this disease...**

**SUGA: How can I get rid of it?!**

**SUGA: Don't know when I will be able to text you again. But I will...**

**SUGA: Night!**

And as every night he put the headphones on his head. And played their song to sleep.

On the next day he couldn't reply but he caught a glimpse of the replies.

**CHIMISLOVE: I think fate loves me... (๑♡⌓♡๑)**

**CHIMISLOVE: I felt like shit yesterday...**

**CHIMISLOVE: But I got those amazing messages in the morning and french toasts ( ◜‿◝ )♡.**

**CHIMISLOVE: I am a lucky bitch!**

**CHIMISLOVE: You don't have any idea how much I wanted to bite your head off!**

**CHIMISLOVE: You are lucky you are safe and sound or I would dig out your ass from underground to beat it up!**

**CHIMISLOVE: First of all! I am moved and happy you used an emoji! I'm a proud daddy now!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Second of all! I am outraged and shocked that the first emoji you'd used is that !**

**CHIMISLOVE: Suuuugaaaa plum!!! (づ。◕‿‿◕。)づ**

**CHIMISLOVE: You like to call me baby?! *Going to heaven *

**CHIMISLOVE: I'm taking "daddy" comment back! I'm a proud baby !**

**CHIMISLOVE: This disease is called "chimislove" and it is untreatable!**

**CHIMISLOVE: I will wait then...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Hyung... 🤍🤍🤍**

Yoongi felt as if the motivation got back inside his body. It was a simple thing... But if he could read more text. If he could hope he would someday hear those sassy words said with an angelic voice...

He will keep going.

**20th of March, 150 days since the outbreak of war**

Yoongi was standing in one of ISA's safetys.

'We need to do something...' Na Inho's right hand said. 'They are storming the city. No matter how many we will be expelled the more are coming in... It's a pointless circle...'

'We won't be able to fight like that without going all out all the time... It won't ever end...' the second in charge after him said.

'If we want to limit victims we have to close the ways to the city...'

'Are we able to survive if we close it?' Inho asked.

'We have a lot of people that registered as the ones that want to stay and work with and for us... We will be able to keep the city and supplies alive...'

'And it will have a clearer situation. Once we kick someone out, they won't be able to threaten us again. And as the military moved to North Gyeongsang because the rebellion spread, we have more problems with citizens here...' Inho's deputy said.

Inho raised his head and looked at Kyung and Chorong.

'What are we doing?'

Yoongi actually didn't know. Didn't have an opinion about this... If it would decrease the people that were against them for the time being and let them take a deeper breath and rest... Maybe it wasn't such a bad idea...

But... will they be able to open the city later? Will it cause separation from the rest

of the world?

'We should vote...' Kyung sighed. 'Who is in favor of closing the city?'

Two men near Inho raised their hands. Chorong and Taeil too.

Yoongi, Kyung and Inho didn't.

'4 to 3.' Kyung said. He looked at Yoongi briefly. 'We are closing the city then...'

'How will we do it?' Taeil asked.

Kyung looked at Chorong and the ring on his finger.

'With iron...'

Yoongi's eyes widened.

Chorong nodded and took a deep breath.

'With Iron.'

Two days later Min Kyung unsealed his wife's power standing in the middle of downtown. In the middle of the night. Guarded by ISA.

They held each other's hands, while facing each other.

Chorong closed her eyes.

Her power spread through the city.

The ground started to shake...

Small pieces of metal, left by ISA's agents around the city borders, started to shake, grow, changing their shapes...

From small iron leftovers of cars and buildings the power made enormous, iron blocks. One by one, they were getting bigger, reaching from the ground to the sky. Tightly pressed to one another.

Until the whole city was closed around.

And just one gate was made... ISA's agents were already next to it, securing it.

Nobody could get in without their knowledge.

And nobody... could get out.

---

Hello...

Surprised?

I hope so...

BlairWitch 🩶

# Chapter 33: Breaking Point

**20th of April 2067, 180 days since the outbreak of war**

Since the moment the Iron Wall appeared Daegu has become even more under attack. But it didn't affect them as much. The soldiers couldn't enter the city. Every non-Interdependent citizen, who were caught in a fight or attack were immediately expelled outside the city.

ISA's agents were now going behind the wall to help the neighboring villages and cities in North Gyeongsang, where the horrid fights were taking place, as the soldiers were sent to prevent, Interdepenedents' influence spread even more.

Interdependents from the whole country and those who managed to come from abroad were treated and trained by ISA.

13 thousands of them, the half of Interdependents' population were already joining hands with ISA under 3EO's supervision.

Soulmates that were willing to fight were gladly welcomed. As well as the Sealers and Holders... who were willing to... give their powers to ISA.

When Yoongi saw it for the first time... he was enraged. He grabbed the first person he saw in ISA's underground headquarters - Taeil - and pushed him to the wall.

'What is the meaning of it?!' he growled.

'We need power to fight... What do you expect us to do!?'

'I expect you not to use the fucking Taboo!'

'26 thousands of Interdependents...' Taeil said quietly. 'Most of them are not even able to use their powers. How can we stand against all those terrorist, army and people that hate us? Do you want us to go there with guns and bombs, as they are doing? It will cause even more victims...'

'Have you done it?' Yoongi gulped.

Taeil looked at him with broken, sad eyes.

'There are few Sealers that convince us to use them... Some of the ones that lost their soulmates mainly... They are in the state that they don't care anymore. They cannot be broken more than they already are... And the ones that haven't met their soulmates yet... They just want to help... But we still are looking for their

soulmates...'

'You mean the registration?'

'Yeah. Anyone who registered in 3EO's database and put the picture of their mark can quicker find their soulmate...'

'Did you?' Yoongi asked.

'No. Most of them didn't. Red String of Fate makes you meet your soulmate at the right time. And most of interdependants hardly believe so. They don't want to force fate... So we have a database of Interdependents but mostly without their marks.'

Yoongi did exactly that. He and Gahyeon. They were in the database with basic information, but without any pictures.

And he absolutely didn't want Chim to find him like that and come to him...

'How are you holding?' Yoongi asked, looking at his cousin from head to toe.

'I'm... The Taboo is...' Taeil shook his head. 'It's breaking a bit of you...' he whispered.

'Then why are you doing this?' Yoongi frowned.

'Because my father can't be everywhere. Because others are willing to fight and I won't just stand and watch...'

Yoongi understood. But honestly... if he had to choose between staining himself with blood, killing people, and staining himself by abusing someone's soul, forcefully taking out something that didn't belong to him...

Both things were hurting his soul. But he chose the first one.

'What is uncle and Inho-ssi planning?' Yoongi asked.

'They will use the elections... for the president to agree with us...'

**10th of May, 200 days since the outbreak of war**

Kyung, Chorong, Taeil, Yoongi, Inho and his two assistants were standing in the conference room. Yoongi didn't know why he was being dragged for all the meetings. He wasn't an official ISA's agent. Nor he was or wanted to be in charge.

The only reason why he was willing to be here, was to be close to information. Because he didn't have any power over their decisions.

'Yoongi...' Kyung looked at him. 'People like you... They see a lot of Jae in you... Will you lead some troops made out of non-agent Interdependents?'

Yoongi gulped.

'Rescuing?'

'We can send you as a rescue squad if you don't want to get into more offensive affairs...' Inho said gently.

'I want Wooyoung and San with me.' Yoongi demanded.

'Okay...' Kyung nodded.

'Then fine. I will do it.'

Taeil looked at him hesitantly.

'Do you want to...?'

'No.' Yoongi responded before he could finish. 'I need guns or other weapons. I don't need a Sacred Treasure that is not mine.'

'It will be more dangerous...' Chorong said.

'I don't care.'

'When you will have the outside missions... Do you want us to take care of the house, Gahyeon and Handong?' she asked gently.

Yoongi was thinking about this for some time already... He really thought having his family close would be better. But... Kyung was still targeted. And he selfishly didn't want Gahyeon to be close to him to not be dragged inside, in any case.

He finally shook his head.

'Not yet. They have their daily routine. They need it... I don't want to spoil it. If the situation would get worse then of course, auntie.'

Chorong nodded.

'Are we ready?' Inho asked his assistants.

'Everything is prepared.' one of them confirmed.

Kyung sat beside the table and looked at the camera.

'We have a signal...'

Kyung took a deep breath and started.

'I'm talking to the president of the Republic of South Korea and all the citizens. As well to all the greedy politicians that are trying to use the death of civilians to their advantage. Citizens of Korea... I will help to clear your mind about the upcoming election. You have 200 days to consider what is best for this country...'

Yoongi looked at the ground. He knew what's coming...

'Mr President... I have a deal for you. North Gyeongsang and Daegu were Interdependants are constantly trying to fight for their rights... will become an independent Republic with our laws and rules. All people that will be willing to obey our laws will be protected and respected by us, because we are not like you. We don't see the difference between our powers and your talents. This is something you never understood. The Republic will work together with Korea in every international affairs. All Interdependents will be able to move here if that will be their wish. Mr President... you want to win the election. Your soldiers on the streets and in the countryside won't help you to do it... Do you wonder who are the victims of your orders? It's you. Your own people...'

That was the truth. As there was no many Interdependents, the people they mostly saved were innocent "normal" citizens that were caught in the conflict.

'We are again putting our lives on the line to protect the people you are calling "normal". We are rescuing them. Healing them. Giving them safeties. Because your army's doings are bringing misery mostly to them. We always treat everyone equally. We don't ask "if someone is an interdependent" before we start to save them... It's your pattern of behavior.'

Time for the trick... Yoongi still had mixed feelings about it. He knew from history... Places like Kosovo, Taiwan, Abkhazia or Transnistria... They were just partially recognized as Independent countries. And all of them were constantly at risk of conflicts...

'If the Republic will be proclaimed. If it will become an Autonomous Province... If you call out the army from its grounds - the civil war will end. I know your political opponent won't agree to it... So the citizens can choose... They want peace for something we should have gotten a long time ago - equal rights on our terms.

Or they want the war to continue... If you don't believe me... Here are the recordings... All the people that attacked us... if the situation allowed it... weren't killed. They are here as hostages. We have over 2000 of them. Healthy. Treated well.'

The recording showed places under the guards with people closed under bars or caught or just closed in some kind of space created by power.

'We don't need to kill. We told you this many times... We will free them... They will be able to get out of the Republic safely... If they want to come back to threaten us again... They will do it at their own risk... Mr President... you have a choice. Citizens... you have a choice too... So choose wisely.'

He ended the recording and let out a deep breath.

'I hope it will work...' Chorong said quietly, putting her hand on her soulmate's shoulder.

'We will see...' Inho said. 'Thank you everyone... Yoongi-ah... can I talk with you?' he asked.

Kyung, Taeil and Chorong turned around to him, shocked.

Yoongi's eyes darkened. He nodded.

'Leave us...' Inho said. 'Please...' he asked politely.

He didn't have any power now. Yoongi didn't see him using Taboo either. But people were following him... They wanted to be led and with sad, broken eyes and calm voice he was trustable... He was the one they chose to follow.

'Inho...' Kyung started warningly.

Inho looked at him and smiled lightly.

'It's just friendly talk. Don't worry...'

Mins relecutantly left the conference room.

Inho was looking at the map of North Gyeongsang on the table. It was marked with small and red dots, depending on how hard the situation was there. Small gray, black, red and green pawns were placed on it with numbers or names of units.

Yoongi came closer.

'What are the black ones?' he asked.

'Independent units... like yours. The ones that are not under direct supervision of ISA. We ask and they agree or not.' Inho explained.

They were just a few of the black pawns on the map.

'If gray is the ISA and green is military... What does red mean?'

'MOI units. We know they are here. But we never know where or how many... Or we know a long time after they change the place... They have their own mission...'

'Will ICI support this deal?'

'I don't know. They will support any way to save Interdependents I think...'

'What do you want from me, Inho-ssi?' Yoongi asked slowly.

'You don't really want to be here, right?'

'No. I can't make such big decisions and I don't want to either... So my presence here is just a waste of time...'

'Even one person can make a big change...' Inho said and looked directly at Yoongi. 'If they will agree to the deal. If the Republic will be proclaimed, your uncle will become the president here... The President of Korea and people are aware of it. There is honestly no other candidate... They will try to eliminate him before...'

Yoongi's eyes widened.

'Not officially, but I am asking you to let them live under your roof until the election. We will put the impostors inside the house, so they won't suspect anything...'

'It will put my sister in danger... And we are not safe even now. We are still Mins. We are high on their list...'

'But as I am aware the house is safer than any other place, right? Your father made sure of it...'

It was true. Mins' Mension was like a fucking Forth Nox. Jaehyun was obsessed with the safety of his children.

'We can wait till we get feedback... But I don't think it will be good...' Inho said with sad eyes.

Yoongi gulped. They were his family. Chorong was taking care of his mother for the first months. Taeil was the one who found him when he almost had a car

accident... Kyung was his father's beloved lil brother...

'Left wing is almost empty... They can come anytime. But you have to ensure it will be a secret. And nobody will know they will live there...'

'I will think about it then...' Inho nodded. Then he checked Yoongi and smiled unexpectedly. 'You don't really like me, right?'

'Don't take it to heart. I don't like people in general...' Yoongi answered unbothered.

'So? What do you have against me?' Inho asked calmly.

'Why do you want to know, sir?'

'Because even if you don't like people - people like you. You are not doing this all as Taeil to support his father, or like me because I want to prevent others from losing soulmates. You are doing this because you were raised like that... to be a person who makes sure others are safe. That's why people trust you. You are between them. Not ordering from above... People like you... are important. I don't want to have an enemy in you...'

Yoongi looked at him thoughtfully and finally said:

'Your separation syndrome... It's suspicious...'

A corner of Inho's lips raised in a bitter smile.

'Because I didn't break down?'

'Exactly...' Yoongi said coldly.

Inho looked at him with equally cold eyes.

'You want to know how that is possible?'

'Yeah.'

Inho looked down.

'It's pretty simple...' he whispered. 'I've never finished the first stage... First anger... was hot like a fire... But then...' he grabbed one of the green pawns on the map and squeezed it. 'It changed to being cold as ice. I'm desperately holding onto this anger... to have a clear mind... I remind myself that I hate them. I hate people so much... For how narrow-minded they are... I'm constantly watching the moment Dokhyun was killed to feel this anger all the time... And keep the sadness away... Because once you will let yourself feel sadness and grief... The moment you will

become tired of this sadness... You are becoming numb... And I can't allow myself to become numb... till the moment they will pay for Dokhyun's death...'

He slowly raised his eyes at Yoongi and smiled bitterly.

'Did I answer your question?'

Yoongi understood. Indeed... sadness could be tiring. He prefered anger too. But sadness was also - healing. And in fact compassion you could feel around, when you were sad... was healing too. But if you couldn't ever get rid of the sadness... you were simply getting tired.

So there was no magical way to heal the syndrome...

His mom... was simply tired...

'Yeah.' Yoongi turned and left the room.

**10th of July 2067, 260 days since the outbreak of war**

The whole bunch was going to move for vacation to the mountain house. They were training all the time desperately. And they were going to train even harder. Play war games. Lear how to cooperate with each other's powers.

It was easier now to drive between Seoul and Jiyoung's house because Taehyung, Jimin, Minho and Dami had their driving license already.

It was the end of the first semester of 3rd year of Jungkook's high school. He came out of school and looked around surprised by gossip.

Then the cause was revealed in front of his eyes.

When Taehyung said he would pick him up... Jungkook didn't expect this...

Taehyung was leaning on the car side, absolutely not bothered by the whispers and stares around him. He had black sunglasses on his nose. Tight jeans exposing his long legs. Silver hair with earrings...

Jungkook whined inside.

The amount of times he had to hold back his whimpers inside his mouth and his dick inside his pants, while being with this man was causing him daily...

Being with Taehyung was hard!

Literally.

As if sensing his inner turmoil, Taehyung took off his sunglasses and turned his head in Jungkook's direction, chewing gum.

These eyes.... Ughhhh!!!

Jungkook got a grip and walked to Taehyung lazyly.

'Did you had to appear here looking like a fucking cookie?' he asked, raising his eyebrow.

Taehyung flicked his chin upwards, smiling lightly.

'The only Kookie here is you...'

'Brought my things? I hate these official uniforms...'

Taehyung wrapped his arm around Jungkook's waist and leaned to give him a kiss.

'Of course...' he whispered. 'I brought your favorites...'

Jungkook smiled cheekily.

'You mean you brought only your clothes?'

Taehyung smiled.

'Cheesy much...' he poked his nose. 'Where are Yoohyeon and Soobin?'

'Yoohyeon is saying bye to friends and Soobin had to go to the library to return a book. They will be here in a minute. What about the rest?'

'Minho took Han and all our things. And Jimin will pick up Dami and Yeonjun.' Taehyung said opening car doors for Jungkook.

Taehyung buckled his belt and fastly checked on everyone if they did the same.

Jungkook turned on the news radio.

They knew the news was always twisted...and colored in the "normal people" favor. But the events were real and they could pretty much draw a rest for themselves.

'How is the situation?' Taehyung asked Yoohyeon.

'Well...' she sighed. 'In the net people mostly say to agree to the ultimatum after the last events... They are tired of the war.'

'They are tired...' Jungkook snorted bitterly, shaking his head.

The last two months' events... were giving them sleepless nights. They were constantly looking at their phones observing the news.

The army launched a full assault on the city. It bombed the Iron Wall.

3EO and ISA were intransigent. On the recordings they were showing what the army was doing. How citizens are suffering because of it. How they have to save more people around Daegu, because frustrated generals, when they could not conquer the City, were taking revenge on surrounding towns and villages.

Even the bombarding wouldn't change the fact that Interdependents were holding their ground. What people break, they fix.

It had been a month since they last heard anything from their parents.

It drove them crazy.

They barely had an appetite and they didn't get the proper rest, waking up few times during the nights. The only thing that could make them hungry or tired enough to sleep soundly were training. So they train to exhaust their bodies too, to let their mind rest.

They were half way on their way, when Jungkook turned the volume up when the reporter started to speak:

*The President of Korea announced that he is going to negotiate an ultimatum with the organization of Interdependents that took over Daegu...*

*"I will make sure that the hostages will be let out... If they show us their good will, I will consider their demands..."*

*Opposition is hardly against it - the speaker continued - they demand the military to storm the place and free the hostages...*

Taehyung and Jungkook peeked at each other.

'That's some political swamp...' Jungkook frowned. 'They really don't care...'

'The President is trying to check if his statement will raise support for him...' Taehyung shook his head.

'Well according to some websites questionnaires... He already succeeded...'

Yoohyeon said,  surfing through the net on her phone.

'Do you think it will really end the war?' Soobin asked, looking at Taehyung.

Taehyung was deep in thought. He was from early childhood surrounded by political news and guests. He could predict their movements... It was enough to ask yourself "what they will gain from it...".

'I think it will for a moment stabilize the situation or after the election the conflict will be only worse... Because you can't trust their promises... But at the beginning, if the current President wins, he will try to show citizens it was a wise choice. I don't know how fast he will feel safe to attack the Autonomous Province.'

Soobin sighed heavily.

'They really don't get that they can't fight Interdependents on equal terms.' Jungkook gritted his teeth. 'Look at it... They try their hardest, not to kill... What if they decide to go all out. And they will, if the Interdependents' Republic will be proclaimed and later attack, they won't care anymore. Too many times their trust was broken...'

'Do you... think HE is around?' Soobin asked.

'Lord Loo? Yeah. I think he is around, enjoying the conflict he started and planning next moves. Now, when everything is moving, he doesn't need to do anything, just watch how we kill each other...' Jungkook said with disgust.

Taehyung moved his hand and squeezed Jungkook's thigh calmingly.

Jungkook's phone rang suddenly. He looked at it and his eyes widened. He picked up fast.

'DAD?!'

Taehyung slowed down and stopped the car on the road side, focusing on Jungkook.

'Are you okay?! What about mom? And uncles?!'

Taehyung took out the phone from Jungkook's trembling hand and put the call on the speaker.

'... we are fine. Mom is sleeping with Jinie. Namjoon is taking care of some people. Beak and Chanyeol are making something to eat for us...'

'Dad... please don't lie to us...' Jungkook whispered. 'We are watching the news. We saw the bombardment. We saw fights... We know what's going on. You can't

possibly be fine...'

Hoseok sighed heavily.

'Kookie... We are fine as we can be in this situation. We have a safe place. We are evacuating people. We have water and food. None of us is harmed... We are... just tired.'

Jungkook closed his eyes.

'I understand...'

Taehyung looked at the phone.

'What is appa saying about the situation? Did Yongguk contact you?'

'We are in contact with him, yes.' Hoseok said tiredly. 'He convinced the President to declare negotiation... And Namjoon... I don't think he believes it will work out in the long run... But for now we will be glad if it will at least calm down... So we can return soon.' a heavy silence fell on the line. 'How are you?'

'We are okay. We are taking photos for you... Well it is mainly Jimin spying on us...' Taehyung said, hoping he will hear a specific laugh. And Hoseok giggled.

He and Jungkook looked at each other, almost tearing up.

Taehyung gulped.

'Jungkookie passed the semester... I don't know how, but he did...'

'Hey!' Jungkook played along and smacked Taehyung's arm. 'Shut up! If I didn't feed you, you would starve, you walking kitchen-hazard...'

Hoseok chuckled lauder.

'I'm glad to hear you are doing good, boys...'

Jungkook pressed his forehead to Taehyung's shoulder, and mumbled:

'Don't worry about us. We are fine. We are going to grandparents now...'

'Jungkook became bossy and made me his personal driver...' Taehyung whined. 'I think aunt Minji rubbed it on him. How do I turn it off, uncle?'

Hoseok laughed.

Taehyung closed his eyes, gulping. It was so hard to pretend... But they wanted to give their parents a bit of inner peace...

'I will tell you on Jungkook's 18th birthday.' Hoseok teased them. 'Enjoy your vacation, boys. Don't focus only on training. Hug everyone from us. Tell Jiminie Baek will call him in two days... after we will move to another place.'

'Okay, dad. Thanks for the call... Stay safe.' Jungkook said, feeling the call was ending.

'I love you!' Hoseok said.

'We love you too!' Taehyung answered and the call finished.

Taehyung's hand automatically raides to Jungkook's head, still resting on his shoulder. He stroked his hair gently to comfort himself and Jungkook.

Then they felt palms on their shoulders.

Jungkook raised his head and they turned to Soobin and Yoohyeon.

'They are healthy and kicking...' Yoohyeon said gently.

'They are planning to come back...' Soobin added.

Jungkook and Taehyung's gazes met and they nodded slightly.

Taehyung started the engine, saying:

'We should get going... We should tell Jimin, Uncle Beak and Uncle Chanyeol are fine.'

'It's a good day.' Jungkook stated suddenly, frowning. 'They call us. We know they are fine. It's a good day.'

'Yeah...' Taehyung agreed.

They had to count good days. They had to cherish it.

Cause good days were keeping it all bearable.

**10th of October 2067, 350 days since the outbreak of war**

Jimin considered it as the best gift he could get for his approaching 19th

birthday...

Jungkook's granddad inform them that Yoongguk called Red Alert back and they should be back in a month when the other unit will take their place till election.

It seemed the current President of Korea was going to win again. And he knew the agreement with Interdependents is his best deal right now.

People wanted their comfortable life to come back.

And war was on their way.

After a while most of the people that weren't directly involved in the conflict, weren't some kind of ideological freaks or racist, and didn't have a family that were inside the war zone - started to be immune to all the misery that was taking place. And all they cared about was that it was disturbing their social and peaceful life.

And as scary and disgusting as it sounded... It was the main reason the President was winning in the polls.

On the other hand... the terrorists and keen opponents, feeling they are loosing, started to be even more brutal and heartless...

**2nd of November 2067, 372 days since the outbreak of war**

8 days. Their parents should come back in 8 days...

Jungkook was sorting the file with photos and recordings in their shared cloud, humming under his nose.

He shyly was praying that this year Taehyung's birthday will be a happy one with all of them together...

He couldn't wait to see his dad and mom in Christmas hats.

18 day till the election that should calm down the civil war.

It has been over a year since they saw their parents... It was enough... They had to

come back already...

Siyeon and Bora went for a walk and were supposed to fetch some pick-up food for dinner.

Jungkook was alone in the house.

Taehyung and Jimin left for their college friend's birthday event in some club.

Jungkook convinced them to go. Their parents called three days ago to confirm they are coming back. So he said they should go even for a bit... The whole last year was crazy. They deserved a bit of relief.

It was okay, but after some hours... he started to feel a bit uneasy...

He was feeling anxious.

Then his phone rang, so he picked it up.

'Hey, Yoo... what's up?'

He frowned. Then his heart started to race like crazy the more he heard.

He almost dropped his phone. He ended the call and started to run.

Taehyung was sitting in one of the couches in the club. He wanted to come back home already...

He didn't want to drink. He didn't feel safe enough to drink. Neither did Jimin or Dami. So they were sipping their non-alkoholic drinks, while Han and Minho were sipping their one and only beer for the whole evening.

He wanted to go back home and cuddle with Koo...

The club was loud and they had to have their eyes around their heads. Even if there were no fights or dramas in Seoul, that didn't mean it was free from narrow-minded people, who were cursing on interdependents.

He stood up, wanting to go to the bathroom.

'Can we leave when I come back or you want to stay longer?' he asked the rest.

'We can leave...' Jimin shrugged. 'Not that I have much to do here... I'm not in the mood to dance...'

Dami nodded too and looked at her phone. She instantly got pale as a ghost.

Taehyung focused on her instantly, feeling his guts twisting.

'What is it?' he asked.

'N-nothing...' she denied at first. Shook her head. 'Not here...' she said right after seeing Taehyung's dark gaze.

He harshly took the phone from her hands, and looked at the message from Yoohyeon.

**My Princess: Babe... I heard dad say to mom...**

**My Princess: Uncle Namjoon and Jin. They are hurt. The place they were in. Was attacked.**

**My Princess: Dami... what should I do?**

Taehyung was staring at the phone.

He blinked. Once. Twice.

His hearing was suddenly really sharp. He could hear senseless conversation around him. He picked up a line... "fucking interdependents" from behind his back...

And that was it.

He had enough.

He turned around, grabbed the guy and threw him on the nearest table. His punch hit the next one's face in no time.

'Taehyung!!' Jimin screamed.

Dami fell to her knees to find her phone, while Jimin and Minho tried to grab Tae from behind. Han kicked the guy who tried to approach Taehyung next, in the stomach.

The first guy picked himself up from the shuddered glass table and charge at Taehyung, saying:

'You are one of them, huh? Then get the fuck out of here!'

'Taehyung, stop it!' Jimin tried to pull his friend back, but Taehyung freed himself and looked at the guy in front coldly.

'Because of people like you... we have to suffer...'

'Come on little witcher! Show me some magic tricks!' The drunk guy mocked.

He was huge like a three. He had scars all over his face. It was clear he was used to fights like that.

Taehyung made a fast move with his open palm and broke the guy's nose in no time.

'I don't have to...'

'Shit!' Jimin cursed looking around, seeing more people and security coming in their direction.

He looked at Dami who was pressing her phone to her ear.

'Fuck! He is not picking up!' She dialed the second number. 'Yoo! Can you reach Jungkook!? Tae knows...'

'I told him first! I think he is on the way already! He cut me in the middle!'

'Okay!' she hid her phone and made a quick movement with her foot, undercutting the person who was walking toward them.

'What happened!?' Jimin asked, helping her to get up.

'His dads... are...'

In the next moment they heard a commotion next to the doors. The guards didn't want to let someone in and in the next second, they were both unconscious on the floor. It took just fingers pressed to the right places on their necks.

Jungkook ran inside, fastly taking in the situation.

Jimin looked at Dami in disbelief.

'You called the natural disaster?!'

'Do you know the other way to calm the tiger, huh!?' she said, grabbing the head of the next attacker and pulling it to her knee.

Jimin looked at Taehyung kicking the ass of the huge guy and at Minho and Han

who were guarding his back from the people too interested in helping that guy to win against a slim teenager.

'Fuck!' he cursed. 'Jungkook will make a blood bath here!'

Dami scowled in response.

Jungkook reached them through the crowd and he calculated the distance, synchronized his movements with Taehyung's and both of their opened hands reached the guy's chest, making him fly to the dance floor.

Taehyung turned around to find the next opponent. But Jungkook screamed enraged:

'Taehyung! Stop it!'

Taehyung stopped in his place, breathing heavily. He wiped the blood from his mouth.

Jungkook stood behind him, so close, Taehyung could feel his chest on his back.

'It's not the place... nor the time for this...' Jungkook said quietly.

Taehyung's lips started to tremble. He looked at his bloody knuckles.

Jungkook took his hand and led him through the crowd to the exit.

The rest look after them.

'Yeah, it's not the place for the ones like you!' someone screamed.

Jimin just turned around kicking the guy in the balls.

'SHUT! UP!'

The guy fell to his knees, holding his crotch with a red face.

'Every time you are begging US for help. One day... we won't answer...' Jimin said harshly. And left after Taehyung and Jungkook. Dami, Minho and Han looked around warningly and followed them.

They stood on the street just to see Jungkook helping Taehyung get in the cab.

Jungkook looked at them.

'Pack your things,' he said quietly. 'Inform the rest. Jimin prepare my parents' cars... I will calm Taehyung. And tell aunties. If someone can't go it's okay...'

'Go where?' Dami asked.

'Dragon's house for the start.' Jungkook just said and got inside the cab.

'Okay?' Minho said with puzzled face.

Dami looked at the rest.

'Uncle Namjoon and uncle Jin are wounded. We don't know how much. But enough that MOI wants to take them out of there as soon as possible... It seems they can't heal themselves...'

'That explains quite a lot.' Han said. 'I will inform Yeonjun and Soobin. We will be ready in two hours.'

'I will go to Yoohyeon... Her parents won't let her go so easily...' Dami said.

'I will drive you on the way...' Jimin said, pointing to the car.

'Will Tae be okay?' Han asked.

'Jungkook will make him okay...' Jimin assured him, running to the car.

The cab stopped in front of Kims and Jeons houses. And Siyeon and Bora run out of the Jeons' house.

'Jungkook! Where were you!? We were worried sick!'

Jungkook ignored them waiting for Taehyung to come out of the car.

'Are you okay?!'

Jungkook just looked at them and said:

'We know.'

Siyeon and Bora's eyes widened.

Jungkook passed them, holding Taehyung's hand. He led him to Kims' house, decoded it and shut the doors after himself, right in the face of, still shocked,

aunties.

Taehyung was standing without a word in the middle of the living room, Jin decoreded so neatly. He could feel his dad's favorite air freshener around. He could see his appa's book under the table near the couch...

He was clenching and unclenching his fists.

Jungkook slowly turned around to him.

He knew. From the moment he entered the club. He knew...

The anger... was just a facade.

'Tae...' he said gently. 'It's only me now...'

Taehyung's face twisted. Tears rolled down his face like a stream.

He sobbed heartbreakingly and fell on his knees and pressed his forehead on the ground, crying out loud.

Jungkook teared up instantly. He sniffled. He pressed his hand to his eyes trying to hold his own tears. But he never could stand Taehyung's tears.

'Why...' Taehyung cried out. 'Why...?'

Jungkook walked to him, sat behind him and pulled him up from the ground, back hugging him. Holding Taehyung's shaking body.

'I don't know...' Jungkook choked out, pressing his face to Taehyung's neck.

'H-how b-bad it i-is?'

'Yoohyeon... she h-hear they can't heal... themselves...' Jungkook stummered, trying to speak between tears.

Taehyung groaned painfully, hearing it.

If healers couldn't heal themselves... either they were exhausted or the wounds were too much for their bodies. If it would be one of them... the other could heal him... But both?

They cried.

Taehyung - loudly - he was too scared now to care.

Jungkook - silently. Tears were dropping from his nose when he tried to compose himself.

They needed it.

This moment of pristine fear and suffering.

Just the two of them exposed to each other.

Being just two sons.

Before being the fighters...

After an hour... Taehyung turned around tiredly and looked at Jungkook's red nose and glossy eyes.

Jungkook leaned in and joined their wet, salty mouths in a long, calming, simple kiss.

Taehyung opened his eyes, when they parted their lips.

'What will we do now?' he whispered.

Jungkook took a deep breath and stood up.

'Get up. We have a lot of shit to do...'

'What?' Taehyung took the hand that Jungkook stretched to him.

'Yoohyeon said, MOI will be able to evacuate them in 3 days. We won't wait for that.' Jungkook said harshly.

Taehyung's eyes shined dangerously when he heard Jungkook's words and saw his determined gaze.

'We are going for them...'

Jungkook squeezed Taehyung's hand.

'Yes. We are.'

---

So here is the long chapter for you!

Enjoy reading.

BlairWitch

# Chapter 34: Red String

**2nd of November 2067, 372 days since the outbreak of war - Seoul**

Jungkook and Taehyung took bags from the room. Siyeon and Bora were standing in the door frames.

'What do you think you are doing?' Bora asked.

'What we should have done a long time ago - we are bringing our parents back.' Taehyung answered, putting on the hoodie.

'And you think we will allow you?!' Siyeon yelled.

'You are going with us.' Jungkook informed them, grabbing just a few things and throwing it to backpack.

'Kookie, I know the situation is hard, but you are just...' Bora started calmingly, but Jungkook cut her off.

'Mom is there.' he looked at her. 'Don't tell me you don't want to go...'

Bora closed her mouth.

'She wouldn't want you to risk...' Siyeon said gently.

'I didn't want her to risk either. Yet she did.' Jungkook said unfazed. 'We are going to grandpa. You can yell at us on the way...'

'I'm ready.' Jimin said standing in the doors.

'He won't let you go...' Bora said quietly.

'We will see...' Taehyung said harshly and passed them.

Jungkook followed after him.

Bora and Siyeon looked at each other.

They could try to calm the boys on their way and hope Dragon will convince them to wait. Or he will fail and trigger Jungkook and Taehyung to the point they won't mind going against them...

'Okay...' Bora smirked involuntarily. 'Jeeze... he reminds me of her so much...'

'Well, if Dragon couldn't win with her... he won't with him either...' Siyeon grinned as well, and they both started to run after boys.

Yoohyeon received the message from Dami and started to pack a bag with all the electronic gadgets she owned, laptop and some training clothes. It was over 11 pm.

She had to somehow sneak out of the house and her parents were in the living room...

On her tiptoes she went downstairs and heard her parents' worried voices. They were talking about Namjoon and Jin. She could hear Jennie's voice trembling slightly...

She passed the dimmed corridor and reached the door successfully. She stretched her hand to the doorknob and her fingers... stopped before she could touch it.

She closed her eyes. She couldn't do it...

Not like that.

Not leaving them like that...

She stood in the doors to the living room.

'Mom, dad... I have to go...' she said quietly.

Jennie looked at her with slight surprise and curiosity.

'Go where, honey? Do you want to see Dami? I will drive you if you need her...'

Yoohyeon took a deep breath and looked straight into her mother's eyes.

'We are going to save uncles.' she informed them.

Kai blinked, then he got pale.

'ARE YOU OUT OF YOUR MIND!?'

'Dad, listen...'

'WHO DO YOU THINK YOU ARE?!'

Yoohyeon squinted her eyes.

'I AM A POWERFUL SEALER! THAT'S WHO I AM!' she screamed.

'YOU ARE JUST A CHILD!'

'Kai...' Jennie tried to calm him.

'GO TO YOUR ROOM!' Kai pointed to the stairs.

'And what I will do there!? Wait for my friends to take a risk when I can help them?! Let my Holder go there without me and anything that could defend her?!'

Kai gulped.

'Yoohyeonie... I know you want to do something, but...'

'They are my people! And I will go there whether you want it or not!'

'You are still underaged, young lady!'

'And I could have walked out of here without you noticing! But I didn't want you to find an empty bed and freaked out even if it would be simpler for me!'

Kai and Jennie looked at her shocked, when suddenly the knocking was heard, and enraged Yoohyeon opened the doors harshly.

She saw, breathing heavily, Soobin only in his hoodie.

'They tried to stop me, but I sneaked out...' he exhaled. 'It was the closest place... Can't let Yeonjun go by himself...' he gulped hard.

Yoohyeon looked over his shoulder to see Dami parking near the sidewalk. She turned to her parents.

'Do you want me to run away like Soobin? Or will you help us?' she asked with pleading eyes.

Kai looked at his phone and dialed a number.

'Bora? Are you going with them? To Dragon? Okay... Inform us.'

Jennie walked to Yoohyeon.

'Be careful...' she whispered, kissing her forehead. Then she hugged Soobin. 'We will calm down your parents somehow... Go.'

Soobin looked at her thankfully.

'Say that I'm sorry to them...'

Kai, still shaking his head in disbelief, disappeared for a moment in his office. He came back and gave three phones to Yoohyeon. 'Nobody will be able to track them...' he said.

Yoohyeon hid them in her bag and nodded before hugging him.

Kai walked Soobin and her to the car.

He walked to the side of the driver and leaned to the window to look at Dami.

'Better bring your ass here safe and sound, brat...' he said.

She smirked.

'You can whoop it after, future dad...'

'Sure I will!' he said and flicked her forehead, with a heavy heart. He looked at Yoohyeon in the passenger seat and Soobin in the back. 'Seat belts.' he ordered. 'Drive safe...' he whispered when Dami pulled back.

Jennie went to him and hugged his waist looking at the car with glossy eyes.

They knew they trained for three years. All the time. They were synchronized and dedicated to each other... but still... it was their child...

It seemed that for them the process of letting their kid grow up was a fast and hard way type...

Jimin was driving, Taehyung was in the passenger seat and Jungkook in the back with his phone near his ear. He ended the call.

'We have everyone,' he said. 'Minho and Han took Yeonjun. Dami has Yoohyeon and Soobin.' he said.

Taehyung looked at the car of Siyeon and Bora, who were driving in front of them.

'Why Dragon's house?' Jimin asked Jungkook.

'We need some bulletproof vests and weapons. We can get it there.'

'And how are you going to convince him?'

'I will simply leave him no choice...' Jungkook said with a determined tone.

'And how are we going to reach Daegu faster than MOI?'

Taehyung smirked and met Jungkook's eyes in the rear view mirror.

'We have few ideas...'

They all reached the Mountain House of the Dragon at 1 am. The adrenaline, anger and fear they all felt, made them absolutely focused.

It was the freezing type of focus when their minds were sharp as edges of ice blocks.

Jiyoung was already standing in the front doors with his arms crossed over his chest and raised eyebrow. Siyeon and Bora probably informed him beforehand.

Jungkook boldly stood in front of him like his mother a few years ago.

'And what do you want here at this hour, brats?' Dragon asked warningly.

'Your help for starters...' Jungkook said. 'Weapons would be a nice addition too...'

'Don't test my patience, Jungkook.'

'Don't waste my time, grandpa.'

'The only help I can offer you right now is food and beds. And arms that will calm you down...'

'And the help I want is the power to save YOUR family. Don't leave my mother alone as you did years back!'

Jiyoung's eyes widened.

'You are crossing the line...' he whispered.

'I will cross every line if it will save my parents!'

'MOI will go there!'

'That's too late!!'

'Jungkook! You are only 17!'

To the surprise of everyone around Jungkook smirked.

'I was 18 when I died in the battle of Troy. I was 15 when they sold me. I was 17 in the battle of Antietam. I was 19 when HE killed me after the battle of Red Cliffs.' he said bitterly. 'Age is just a number...'

Taehyung closed his eyes as if every one of these brought back memories pierced his heart.

Jiyoung went pale as a sheet.

'Do you want to end up like before then?! And drag your friends with you?!'

'If we wouldn't want to, we wouldn't be here...' Jimin said.

'I-it was a different time... Young people then had different experiences...' Dragon stammered hesitantly.

Jungkook shook his head.

'Don't hide behind our age...'

'We will do it the hard way without your help. Or you will help us and make sure you guided us the best you could.' Taehyung said quietly.

'And what? You will storm my house to get the weapons?'

'No. We will go without them... We don't actually need them.' Taehyung said. 'But you can arm us and be sure we have any possible defense...'

Jiyoung looked at Bora and Siyeon looking for help. But they were looking at the ground not going to back him up against nine enraged teenagers.

Finally, he felt a pat on his back and heard:

'They beat you, oldie...'

Hwasa smiled at the little crowd in front of her house. She tilted her head pointing inside the house.

'Get inside, kids...'

They asked for bulletproof vests and weapons they were usually using. Jiyoung

went to the armory to bring what they wanted, but to their surprise he came back with something they hadn't expected.

'If we are doing this... we will do it properly...' he said, opening a big bag full of clothes. 'I ordered it and kept for the moment you all will be 18...'

He pulled out the first uniform.

'It seems their time came earlier...' he handed the uniform to Jimin, then to the rest.

All the uniforms were made from light black material. The bulletproof vest was sewn inside the places that were mostly exposed to attacks. They were soft and comfortable as ninjas' outfits. They had hoods and masks that one could pull over their face and head to hide their identity.

All Holders' uniforms had specially made gloves that were exposing the inside of their palms and their marks so the unsealing would be done without taking them off.

All Sealers' uniforms were zipped across from the left shoulder to right hip so the exposing of the mark was easy and safe.

But when they all wore them... they noticed each of the uniforms was a bit different.

Jimin's had the addition of two harnesses over his thighs, in the size of the knives he usually was using. It also was made to be immune to fire and electricity.

Dami's had a special waterproof material so it won't be soaked when ice was melting, with the belt that had the handle on the back to place her spear.

Minho's had the space that was perfect for his vambrace on his arm.

Taehyung had the belt over his chest that ended on his back where the scabbard for the sword was placed.

Jungkook was surprised that his own uniform had two scabbards on the back too. His grandpa knew him well...

Soobin had the handle for the bow on his back.

Yoohyeon's uniform could hold the low temperature so even the fire couldn't threaten her ice power.

Yeonjun's uniform pockets were filled with all types of little glass balls that were filled with different types of light, he could upgrade the light in each to enormous

levels. He looked at them curiously.

'That's my own doing...' Jiyoung said. 'You won't need them later probably... but they will help you bring the light all the time, till then.'

'Thank you...' Yeonjun said.

Jiyoung nodded.

'I will bring weapons...'

'Eat something...' Hwasa said, pointing to the kitchen, and went after him.

When they were alone in the armory, he looked at her pouting.

'Minji will kill me...'

'Well, we will send her own son against her if she tries...' Hwasa shrugged with a grin. 'We will see how well she will do...'

She took Jimin's knives from the wall, and went for one of katans Jungkook was using, when she noticed Jiyoung staring at something inside the drawer.

'What is it?' she asked.

'Remember when you told me Minji and Hoseok had a boy?'

'Yeah, your stupid ass, stormed out of the house and you went missing for 3 days...'

'I... went to the temple... to pray for them...' Jiyoung said. 'It was late at night when I reached there... There was a festival there... But only one booth was still there... An old lady with some handmade jewelry... She had almost everything packed already... I asked her for three bracelets...' Jiyong took out the package wrapped in a simple white paper. 'I wanted to give it to Siyeon, Bora... and Minij one day... But she said it doesn't work like that. That every bracelet has its pair. And those are the last she made and she won't make more...'

Jiyoung slowly unwrapped the paper and looked at the simple Red String Bracelets. Most of them had a small bead in the middle.

'So I bought all of them. I don't know why... Maybe because they were so special... Last ones...'

Hwasa looked at the bracelets. She took two with one golden bead in the middle. Golden like Yeonjun's light...

'Soobin and Yeonjun...'

Jiyoung separated next two with a crystal baby blue bead on each.

'Dami and Yoohyeon...'

'Minho and Han...' Hwasa took the ones with glass transparent beads.

The next set was with two beads on each string. One yellow, one red.

'This is for Jimin and his soulmate...' Hwasa assumed.

'And those are for Jungkook and Taehyung...' Jiyoung pointed to two bracelets with 5 beads of different colors.

'There are more?' She blinked.

'Yes. From the beginning there were 7 sets. 14 Red Strings...'

'The group is not complete...'

'There will be five more...' Jiyoung nodded.

Hwasa gulped.

'Okay...' she whispered. 'What is going to happen if destiny combines the fate of 14 strong individuals?'

Jiyoung looked at her.

'Something dangerous.'

'The group is not complete so it's not about current events.'

'And that is why I am scared...' he whispered.

Hwasa shook her head.

'We will think about it later! Now Jin and Namjoon are the most important. Which second sword should I take for Kookie?'

Jiyoung slowly smirked.

'Mine.'

When they got back upstairs all Sacred Treasures were unsealed already. Hwasa

handed knives to Jimin, who put them inside the harnesses, thanking her quietly. Jiyoung gave Jungkook his old black katana and the second one he was usually using.

He looked at the group that was ready to go and gulped.

'It's good to have something that will unite you and remind you that you are not alone...' he said. 'Red Alert has their watches. So I have a small gift for you...'

He handed them the designed bracelets.

When he reached Jimin, he tied two bracelets on his wrist and looked him in the eyes.

'You will know who to give it to...' he whispered.

Jimin looked at the beads on the bracelets.

Yellow and red. Fire and lightning.

'One day I will.' he smiled.

Jiyoung looked at nine people standing in his living room in combat uniforms, armed and determined.

'Siyeon and Bora will go with you. I will stay here to save your asses if anything goes wrong...' he looked sternly at Taehyung. 'And you better pray nothing will go wrong or I will personally find you to kill you... Before your parents will!'

Taehyung smirked and nodded.

'In the meantime You should think about the name... You will need it one day if you want to work for MOI.' Hwasa said.

'Isn't it simple?' Jimin was caressing the soft thread of the bracelets. 'We all are connected by the Red Strings... The type of Red String that won't ever break.'

Taehyung smiled.

'Red String is good.'

'Red String sounds awesome!' Han nodded.

'Red String is it then...' Jungkook smiled, joining hands with Taehyung.

'Okay, Red String, how are you going to reach Daegu faster than MOI, huh?'

Hwasa raised her eyebrow. 'Do you have some hidden plane or teleporting power?'

'We will be more sneaky...' Taehyung grinned and pulled Jungkook outside of the house.

The rest looked at them surprised and followed them.

Jungkook and Taehyung stood in the middle of their training field.

Taehyung took out his sword and they stood in front of each other. Jungkook put his palms over Taehyung's hands on the sword handle.

Their gazes met.

The crystal on the sword started to glow in an intense green color. Jungkook's skin glittered in slight green.

There was a moment of complete silence. When even wind in the trees around stopped its whisper.

And suddenly Jungkook and Taehyung were trapped inside the column of green light. Their hair was moving slightly from the force.

The power reached high above the trees, but a minute later it hit the ground under their feet.

Together they stabbed the sword in the ground.

It made a small crack at first. Then the zigzag became larger. It went between Taehyung's legs and dived inside the ground, sculpting the rocks deeper and deeper.

Jiyoung's eyes widened when he noticed that the whole area where the zigzak force disappeared became larger and longer. He came closer and looked down inside the hole just to notice the ground was sculpted into the stairs, disappearing in the darkness.

Jungkook and Taehyung were still standing looking at each other, the power was embracing them closely. It took 15 minutes before Jungkook slowly took his hands away from the sword.

He looked at the stairs and the darkness inside the hole.

'A rabbit whole...' Taehyung smirked. 'Jump in Alice...' he nudged Jungkook with his elbow.

'I'm not a rabbit. I'm a human!' Jungkook rolled his eyes.

'You are a bunny tho...'

Jungkook shook his head, smiling a bit. He knew Taehyung was trying to make them both less nervous. And they were.

They were so nervous... Not just because they were going to do something crazy, but also because they were exposing a huge part of their power.

He gulped and looked at Yeonjun.

'Light, please...'

Yeonjun moved his hand and little drops of light appeared on the stairs, lighting them up.

Taehyung went first, having Jungkook behind him.

They reached the underground slowly until they stood inside the wide square tunnel. It was not high but it was wide enough to accomodate two cars next to each other.

The rest joined them, looking around with parted lips.

Jiyoung grunted, not wanting to show how shocked he was.

'You... made a tunnel...?'

'Yeah...' Jungkook said timidly.

'To... Daegu?' Dragon asked weakly.

'Y-yeah...'

'And you are going to go by foot?! To Deagu?! Are you crazy?! Cars would be faster!' Hwasa shook her head.

Jungkook rolled his eyes and shook his head, sighing heavily.

He took a few steps, crouched down and pressed his palms to the ground. Under his hand a little puddle appeared.

At the same time Taehyung pressed his sword, which was adorned by the blue crystal this time, to the wall made of the ground and made a cut across it.

From both places water started to appear. First in drops. Dripping on the ground. Then Jungkook and Taehyung moved a bit and joined hands again.

The water started to appear faster. First it was a small leak that changed into a

stream. But the stream got wider. The water sped up.

It turned into a river. Fastly running down the tunnel and disappearing inside the darkness far away.

They made a river...

An underground river.

Jiyoung's knees got weak.

'Dami, Yoohyeon... five boats if you may...' Taehyung asked.

Yoohyeon blinked and shrugged, spread her hands and started to make circles above the water. Dami made the same paintings with the shape of the boat with her spear.

Soon enough five small boats that could take 2-3 people were made out of crystal clear ice.

Taehyung jumped on the first one and stretched his hand to Jimin to help him get in. Jungkook joined them.

Without thinking or asking, Dami and Yoohyeon sat in the second one. Yeonjun and Soobin in the third one. Minho and Han in the fourth one.

Siyeon and Bora looked at each other, shrugged and sat inside the fifth one.

'Soobin... Yeonjun... lights.' Taehyung said.

Yeonjun created five flames over each of the boats. And Soobin shot an Arrow far away in the tunnel that was lightened up. The arrow was moving slowly. Showering everything around with a gentle dimmed light.

'Han, Minho.' Taehyung called out to them.

Minsung spread their power over every boat, wrapping them with tight shields.

Yoohyeon threw one of the phones that her father handed her to Hwasa, saying:

'They are safe.'

Jiyoung was so impressed by the amount of power he saw... a magic casted so effortlessly, that he just understood...

'You are going to sail...'

'Yes.' Jungkook nodded.

'To Daegu...'

'Yes.' Taehyung confirmed.

'You are aware that cars are still faster!?' Hwasa asked.

Jungkook smirked.

'And you are aware, grandma, you are provoking me?'

In the next second, through the hole in Jiyoung's garden wind stormed with the force of a hurricane. Hwasa and Dragon were pushed to the wall of the tunnel.

Taehyung only managed to shout:

'Wish us luck!'

Before all the boats pushed by the white air power disappeared on the horizon, sailing effortlessly on the river.

When the wind calmed down around, Hwasa took a deep breath.

'Okay... Do you have any idea what we will do with 14 of these powerful people together?'

'When the tornado is showing up... you can only let it run its course...' Jiyoung gulped.

'Y-yeah...'

Hwasa looked at her watch.

3:00 am.

They made a freaking tunnel that was running from Seoul to Daegu in 15 minutes and created a river in the next 15 minutes.

'Nice timing...' she whispered. The she sighed. 'I need a drink...'

**3rd of November 2067 7:00 (373 days since the outbreak of war) Deagu**

Baekhyun was breathing heavily. He was leaning on the wall of a destroyed building, holding unconscious Jin's hand.

Chanyeol was pressing his hands to Namjoon's chest, checking his breathing from time to time.

Minji and Hoseok were holding the last shreds of strength their bodies could have inside, just to secure them.

The attacks were crazy. This time the enraged terrorists and their followers went all out, feeling in their bones they are loosing. The election results were pretty obvious... They didn't have anything to lose. They just wanted to destroy as much as they could till they could.

The people they tried to save and heal in the underground of an old church, mainly didn't survive the attacks.

Jin and Namjoon were caught in the middle of the explosion, trying to evacuate at least children...

Jin had the wound on his head and was unconscious since then. And Namjoon had a piece of metal inside his chest. They were afraid to remove it, to not cause harder bleeding.

48 hours...

How will they survive till then?

Jin and Namjoon didn't have so much time.

Beakhyun didn't even know how much time he, Chanyeol, Minji and Hoseok had...

He closed his eyes. Trying to focus, to hear something before it will happen, to at least guide Minji and Hoseok.

Suddenly he heard a voice in his head. He knew this power.

The power of sound... The power  similar to his but reversed.

'Baek! Can you hear me?!' Siyeon asked.

'W-what?' he whispered, even knowing Siyeon couldn't hear him.

He swallowed saliva hard and moved his hand to create an image in front of him made by echolocation. He was trying to find Siyeon, and if she was here - Bora as well, somewhere nearby, but instead he found...

'Fuck! We don't have time! Sorry for that! Connect us!'

Siyeon's voice made an order, and Baekhyun felt the power forcing him to use his

power. His mindlink spread... to Chanyeol first, then Minji, Hoseok... it went further and found Siyeon and Bora... and then...

Jimin... Jungkook... Taehyung... Dami... Yoohyeon... Soobin... Yeonjun... Minho...Han...

And he heard Taehyung's voice:

'Minho! Secure the church!'

Suddenly a transparent barrier embraced the ruins of the church.

Then he heard Jungkook:

'Jimin, stay close to me! Han, shield him all the time!'

And again Taehyung:

'Dami, Yoo, Yeonjun and Soobin - take left and back! Minho, go with them! Han you are going to the front with us! Aunties! Go inside!!'

'What the hell!!?' Minji screamed in his mind suddenly.

It almost made Baekhyun laugh... He wiped the tear that appeared in the corner of his eye, but he in the end, couldn't hold it, and laughed out loud, when in the next minute he heard Jungkook's, not amused at all voice:

'Hi, mom... Haven't I asked you to not do stupid shit?'

---

Proud af! 🔥🔥🔥🔥

RED STRING IS HERE!!!!😎😎

Enjoy!!!! I freaking did!!!😁😁

Info: The red string braclets are often tied on children as the symbol *of protection, faith, good luck, strength, and connection*.

BlairWitch91 <333333

## Chapter 35: Inside the Mist

'Hi, mom...' Jungkook said, not amused at all. 'Haven't I asked you to not do stupid shit?'

Minji parted her lips.

'Jungkook! Don't make me go there!'

'Not really the time, mom. We are already here... So either you will yell at us or lead us...'

Hoseok put a hand on Minji's shoulder.

'You are distracting them... And we need them.' he said tiredly.

Minji looked at his red, swollen from smoke eyes. The gray dust on his face. She was golding up with sheer willpower. And Hoseok was holding only for her and the rest.

She nodded.

'Taehyung... will you manage?' Hoseok asked through mindlink.

'We will. We will just push them back from this place, and go inside...'

'Dad, put down your shield. Minsung will keep the barrier.' Jungkook said.

'You want us to Stay inside?!' Minji opposed.

Hoseok squeezed her shoulder and put down the light barrier. Bora and Siyeon run inside the ruins.

Minji turned to her sister.

'I can't believe...'

Bora held her shoulders and shook her.

'Stop it Minji! Stop it! Let it go for once! You are on the verge of exhausting yourself and Hobi! How long you haven't sealed him?! Seal him. We are here! We have to take care of Jin and Namjoon. I saw what they can do! Believe me they are not here to play!'

Minji sighed.

'Okay...' she nodded. 'Okay... Come!'

The four of them run to Baekhyun and Chanyeol sitting beside the altar. Half of the Gyesan Cathedral was destroyed. One of the towers collapse. The side entrance was blocked by ruins. The remains of broken stained glass windows and shattered pews were everywhere. So was the cold.

Siyeon and Bora went pale at once, seeing Namjoon and Jin, covered by their friends' clothes. To give them a bit of warmth they could.

They looked at Namjoon and Siyeon kneeled next to Jin.

'They were sealed?' Bora asked.

'No...' Minji pointed to the bandage hanging from Jin's fingers and covering Namjoon's chest. 'But Jin collapsed before he could start to heal him. And Joon is exhausted that his regenerating power is keeping him alive, but not healing him...'

Siyeon touched Jin's face.

'Jin... wake up...' she ordered, using her power.

Jin's fingers twitched. But it was all the reaction they received.

'He can't hear me...' Siyeon said.

Bora kneeled next to her and took out the first aid kit.

'We will do what we can, but we have to transport them as they are...' she looked at Baekhyun. 'Baek, I need you to think about any place closer than Seoul. Safe place where we can take them... With some healer we know or some trusted doctors...'

Baek nodded and took out the map.

'And how will we transport them there?' Hoseok asked.

'Your boys will figure something out, I'm sure of it.' Bora said, focusing on cleaning Namjoon's wound around the metal rod that was stuck in his chest.

Suddenly the series of gunshots were heard and Minji and Hoseok ran to the break in the thick walls to check what was happening. They were scared to yell or ask, because they didn't want to distract kids.

But what they saw terrified them. There was a crowd of around 50 people. Shooting from all directions at three boys. Throwing dynamites and Molotov cocktails or charging directly at them.

They all had one disadvantage... They were simple people with brutal weapons...

In the moment parental fear changed into... amazement.

Jungkook shared his power with Jimin and lightened up his swords with fire and electrifying lightning.

'Secure our backs...' he said. 'Don't go into direct contact.' Then he looked at Han. 'Stay beside the church. And all the time shield Jimin.'

Han reloaded the gun with paralyzing shots and ran to stand near the church entrance.

Jimin, Jungkook and Taehyung looked at each other. Only their eyes were seen between the masks and hoods.

'We just have to push them back...' Taehyung said through Baekhyun's mindlink to the rest. 'We don't want to waste time.'

'Okay!' Dami said. 'There are not so many of them here... We will deal with them and go inside...'

The first shots were heard and Jimin gasped, seeing the people so enraged going at them.

Jungkook just spread his hand and little fireballs flew into the bullets direction. They meet them in the air and burn them to ash.

In the next moment Taehyung swung his sword and all Molotov Cocktails that were thrown at them in glass bottles were shuddered by the sound wave.

It was unbelievable how fast they were thinking. As if it wasn't their first time on the battlefield. They're minds change into some kind of ice cold steel trap.

On the other side of the church Dami, Yoohyeon, Yeonjun and Soobin with Minho behind them, shielding each of them separately.

Dami looked around. There wasn't an open crowd here storming the church. They

were hiding inside surrounding buildings and shooting from a long distance through the cracks and windows of the cathedral.

'Yoo! We can surround this side with an ice wall!' she said.

'Yeah! But we need time to build it and draw it!'

'I will give you time!' Yeonjun said. 'Soobin... can You knock them out when I do it?'

Soobin looked around and he could see every little bit of light around. Even the reflexes of optical rifles. He located six in different windows and rooftops.

Dami and Yoohyeon ran in two different directions while Yeonjun raised his hands and light surrounded it. It was a bright, sharp light. The type of light when the sun is mirrored and hurts eyes by simple reflex.

The light spread and hit the area in front.

At the same time Soobin raised his bow in the air and pulled the bowstring with four fingers at the same time. Three light arrows appeared and he shot them in the air. Each of the arrows multiplied itself and now six arrows like shooting stars went into six directions.

When they reached the shooters they changed into ropes of light and tied them.

'NOW!' Dami yelled and hit the spear into the ground, when at the same Yoohyeon from the other side, stepped hard with her foot on the street.

The line of ice from both sides started to speed up as if it wanted to be connected with its twin sister. When it happened in the middle the block of ice started to rise creating the ice curtain.

Some people started to run from destroyed buildings shooting without aiming but the bullets were useless against the ice wall.

'Come! We are going back!' Minho screamed.

He made sure the four of them were running in front of him so he could constantly secure them.

The easy part was done.

Jungkook, Taehyung and Jimin didn't intend to hurt anybody deadly, so when the explosion backfired at the attackers, Taehyung touched the ground with his sword and water appeared underneath it, running into the opponents' direction. He raised the sword and the stream of water raised into the air. Jungkook moved his hand and the water started to spin and changed into the giant ball.

Taehyung threw it on the crowd, soaking it with cold water.

Jimin touched the water on the ground with his lightning knife and sent the shock wave to the crowd.

'Good idea! We can paralyze them!' Jungkook nodded.

He joined his two fingers and moved the electricity sparks through the water to the wet people in front of them. Some of them started to shake, covered in electricity ribbons.

But the rest, seeing the rest that was still standing, seeing the attacks from afar are not effective started to run in their direction.

'Idiots...' Taehyung mumbled.

They could see Dami, Yoohyeon, Soobin and Yeonjun secured by following Minho, running inside the cathedral. It seems they deal with the other side somehow.

'Parents will freak out if we go into direct combat...' Jimin said not amused at all by people's stupidity.

Jungkook shook his head and stretched his hand to Taehyung, who took it. The crystal on the sword changed its color to deep green and the blade started to shine with little golden pollens.

Jungkook opened his hand and the pollen started to gather above it in a sparkly ball, he moved his hand close to his mouth and blew on it, as if he was sending a kiss.

The white air and green earth wave of his power sent the pollen into the crowd direction. They involuntarily started to inhale it and right after passing on the dirty ground.

There were just five people who were clever enough to pass through the crowd, covering his mouths and noses with their clothes.

They were running at them. First three - One with a baseball bat, second with daggers and the third one with his fists covered with metallic tensioners - reached

them.

Jungkook, Taehyung and Jimin didn't move at all.

Jimin at the last moment just bent in half backwards, avoiding the daggers, and when he straightened up, one of his knives dived deep inside the guy's left thigh. He used the lightning to shock him and he fell to his feet in convolution.

In the meantime the men with baseball bat went at Jungkook.

Really poor decision, one would say...

Jungkook grabbed the bat with one hand and burned it to ashes in no time. At the same moment Jungkook made a forward kick into his guts, throwing him back and knocking out the guy behind him in the process.

Jimin grabbed their clothes and exposed their faces. They inhaled the pollen and passed out right after.

At the same time Taehyung swiftly turned aside when the guy with tensioners on his fists approached him and hit his temple with the sword handle. Made a spin and the blade landed on the fifth guy's neck, who was raising his hand with a metal rod at him. The drop of blood appeared on his Adam's apple.

Taehyung pressed the blade more.

'Give me a reason...' he whispered.

Men's lips trembled when he saw Taehyung's black eyes, and he dropped the metal rod to the ground.

With the free hand Taehyung tugged his shirt down to expose him to the pollen.

'We are going inside...' he said.

'What was that pollen?' Jimin asked while they were running.

'I can't use two types of power at once. But Taehyung can use a different type than I am...' Jungkook explained. 'So we can combine two.'

'But what was it?'

'Earth power. Nature power. The pollen from plants that have strong sleep-inducing properties...' Taehyung replied.

'I combined them with air to put them to sleep...' Jungkook added.

'Oh...' Jimin let out trying to not seem too impressed.

They reached the broken doors of the church and went inside, passing Han, who closed the barrier after them.

Jimin raised his head and pulled his mask down.

'Dad... appa...' he whispered and ran to them.

Baekhyun and Chanyeol turned around and started to run to him. They met in the middle of the broken church.

Taehyung and Jungkook marched fast towards the altar when the rest gathered. Yeonjun noticed them and together with Soobin went to meet them. Yeonjun put his hand on Taehyung's shoulder.

'Tae, I don't think you should...'

Taehyung raised his eyebrow.

'Move.'

Yeonjun slowly took away his hand and looked pleadingly at Jungkook.

Jungkook gulped. It probably was worse than they thought...

He took Taehyung's hand and went with him further. Minji and Hoseok moved towards them but Jungkook slightly shook his head to stop them. He knew Taehyung wouldn't accept any touch, beside his, in his current state of mind.

They reached the podium near the altar and when Dami moved a bit they saw Bora and Siyeon trying to stop the bleeding and secure Namjoon's body. Jin was not moving at all. He was looking as if he was sleeping. Just the short, occasional moves of his chest were telling he was still alive.

Jungkook felt his legs get weak and he almost fell, but at the same moment he felt Taehyung's body gave up and he would collapse if Jungkook wouldn't grab his waist.

It gave Jungkook that one moment when he had something to focus on and pull himself together.

He turned Taehyung to face him.

'Hey! Hey! Hug me!' he ordered gently.

He felt Taehyung desperately clinging to him. Shivers were shaking his body from time to time. He was devastated.

Jungkook gave him the stability he needed right now. And he gave him the purpose to keep going.

'They are alive. We are taking them out of here.' he whispered to Taehyung's ear. 'I need your brain, Tae... you are the tactician here...'

Taehyung gulped and took a deep breath. He nuzzled his nose into Jungkook's neck to inhale his scent.

Above his shoulder Jungkook lightly nodded to Minji and Hoseok who slowly went to them. Hoseok touched Taehyung's back and after a second with a sigh, Tae turned to hug him.

Minji just looked at Jungkook and pulled the mask from his face. She cupped his cheek with tearing eyes.

'I'm okay, mom...' he assured her. He embraced her wrist. 'Just let us take care of you this time...'

'You haven't left me much choice, you know...'

'Neither did you leave a choice for us. We can discuss this later...' Taehyung turned to Minji and hugged her shortly.

'Fair enough.' Minji whispered, rubbing Taehyung's back.

Taehyung braced himself and turned around.

'What is the plan?' he asked.

Siyeon raised his eyes at him.

'We can't move Namjoon through the tunnel and the river. It will affect him too much...'

'Tunnel? River?' Hoseok looked at her surprised.

'We will explain later.' Bora said. 'Actually we shouldn't move him at all in this state... Removing this rod is dangerous, and without removing it, when we move him we can cause bigger damage...'

'And we for sure can't move him all the way to Seoul...' Minji added.

'The safest way will be to move him to Daejeon.' Baekhyun said. 'There is a Pink Alert there. Girls are usually rescuing and healing animals and the environment, but that's our best chance now...'

'We could use the Gyeongbu Expressway if we managed to get out of the city...' Chanyeol added.

'But we would need more than one car if that's the case... and preferably one ambulance...' Siyeon frowned. 'How will we get away from the city unnoticed?'

'And we would have to cross the wall... the only way is to open the gate...'

'I could order the guardians to open the gate but... we still have to go through the whole city somehow...'

'First thing first... we still can't move uncle like that, right?' Jimin reminded them. 'Maybe we should bring a Pink alert here?'

'It would take too long...' Baekhyun shook his head.

Dami looked at the wound in Namjoon's chest and then at Yoohyeon.

'What if we will remove the rod... and exchange it with ice?' she asked slowly.

'That's...' Minji opened her mouth. 'Risky...'

'But it would slow down the bleeding too...' Chanyeol pointed out.

'Can you control the ice so it won't melt and won't affect other areas beside the wound?' Siyeon asked Yoohyeon.

'It for sure won't melt... But I can fill the wound with ice as deep as it is. If it is inside or near lungs or heart... it will be affected...'

'It will slow down the living process... nothing more.' Bakehyun said.

Taehyung looked at Yoohyeon.

'Do it. We don't need an ambulance. We need a van. We will manage to do the rest by ourselves...'

'Okay, so how will we go to the street to find one without being noticed?' Minho asked.

'We will take care of it.' Jungkook said. 'Han, there is a bottle of water in your backpack, right?'

Han took out the backpack. He and Minho each of them had one backpack with useful things. Energy bars, water, first aid kits. They are their shields and backup.

He gave the bottle to Jungkook. Jungkook opened the bottle and put one of his fingers inside. It became a bit green. He gave it to Minji.

'Everybody, take a sip. It will make you immune...'

Minji drank and gave the bottle to Hoseok.

'Immune to what?'

'To the mist...'

The rest looked at him surprised, but he just rolled his eyes.

'It's hard to explain. So can we not waste time?'

When 13 standing people drank from the bottle, Taehyung went to Soobin and Yeonjun. He cut his own thumb over the blade. Then he painted an X sign on Soobin's bow and the front of Yeonjun's palms.

'Your light will be able to go through the mist...' he explained. He looked at the rest. 'We need one van and at least 3 other cars... People will fall asleep. So find the cars where someone would be sleeping and take them. There will be keys there.'

'Fall asleep? How?' Hoseok asked.

'Like that...' Jungkook said quietly.

Taehyung's sword flashed green and was covered with the pollen Jimin had already seen before. But this time Jungkook put his hand above Taehyung's on the handle and the ribbons of thick milky mist started to appear. The ribbons started to dance above their heads. They spread through the church and ran out through the broken windows.

The mist was slowly covering the streets, shining beautifully with little pollen. It sneaked under the closed doors and between the crevices of windows. It was embracing the houses and bathing the cars.

All human beings started to be sleepy. Standing, sitting in armchairs. Driving cars... They slowly slowed down their breathing. Their eyelids become heavy.

The mist didn't spare anyone. There was no house, no place where everything wouldn't be covered with it.

The city surrounded by an iron wall - fell asleep.

There were no gunshots. No screams. No cries.

Just peaceful dreams.

Yoongi just drove through the gate. Woosan was sleeping in the backseat. It was eight in the morning. Taeil informed him they were preparing to deal with a riot near the Cathedral, so he was called back. Apparently someone was hiding there and the crowd with terrorist as backup went crazy to burned them alive like some witches in the middle age.

He decided to glance at the situation, so he took the road there.

November morning's were dark and gloomy. It was almost still a night even at 8 am.

This morning was especially misty...

He opened the car window to get some fresh air when his eyelids became heavy. He took his foot from the gas pedal and pulled near the sidewalk to shake his head.

He never had this overwhelming feeling of sleep.

Was the mist getting thicker?

'San... Wooyoung...?' he whispered, when his eyes got blurry.

The lights of the car couldn't conquer the fog thick and white as milk.

In the next minute Yoongi's head fell to the side.

He fell asleep. Deep sleep with colorful, happy dreams.

Jimin, Yeonjun and Han were in one team. The second one was made with Minho, Soobin and Hoseok. Third was made of Jungkook and Dami, as Jungkook could use the shield and light as well as Yeonbin and Minsung. And fourth one was Taehyung and Minji, for the same reason.

Yoohyeon, Siyeon and Bora stayed in the cathedral to prepare Namjin for

transportation. And Bakhyun and Chanyeol were keeping the communication steady.

So Jimin, guided by the little flames of light made by Yeonjun and a shield by Han, was walking through the misty street.

It was creepily quiet. No sounds around beside their footsteps...

The pass parked cars as they were for sure locked, but Jimin stopped, when he saw a huge black car half in the parking place and half on the street. As if someone didn't manage to park before falling asleep. The engine was still on.

'Look! There...' he said and the echo of his voice spread on the street.

They went there and bent to look through the windows.

'Three...' Han said and opened the car doors from the driver's side.

Yeonjun looked at the backseat and saw two young men sleeping peacefully with joined hands. He looked at their hands and blinked.

'They are Interdepenedents.' He said. 'One of them has the mark...'

'And guns...' Jimin tightened his lips, when he saw the gun beside the belt of the driver.

'Well... they don't have ISA's uniform tho... We can't just leave them on the street like that... Someone can attack them when they wake up.' Yeonjun said and looked around. 'There is a cafe there... We can leave them there.'

'It's closed.' Han frowned.

'Whoa! And that's really a problem now, right?' Jimin said mockingly.

'Shut up...' Han blushed. 'Help me with this one...' he said, grabbing the driver under the armpits, while Jimin took his ankles. Yeonjun broke the glass doors and opened them from inside.

It was a nice caffe once...There were comfy colorful couches and armchairs everywhere. And bookshelves... It probably hasn't been open for a long time now. Everything was covered in a thick layer of dust they could see when they came closer to the tables and the mist spread before them.

They placed the sleeping guy in one of the armchairs.

'We will bring the next ones...' Han said and he and Yeonjun went outside.

Jimin was looking at the guy in the chair.

The glove on his hand was black as the rest of his outfit. He looked tired.

'You went through a lot, huh? In this city of war...' he whispered.

There was a blurry flashback of an old dream that appeared in Jimin's mind. Something like a corner of the mouth...

This guy... He looked a bit like a cat... Jimin giggled at the thought. And moved his hand to fix the beanie on the guy's hair and pulled it on his ears so he won't get too cold. His hand almost reached him, but he fastly retreated his hand when Han walked in with the second guy thrown through his arm. He put him on the couch and helped Yeonjun who was struggling under the second guy.

'Jeeze this one has too many muscles! He was heavy!' he sighed, when they placed him together with his soulmate.'

'Bring them their guns...' Jimin said. 'We need a car, not their belongings...'

Han and Yeonjun agreed.

Jimin looked at two other guys sleeping next to each other. They for sure will be warmer... His eyes involuntarily traveled to the cat-guy. He was still tempted to take off his beanie... He was wondering what his forehead looked like, so he could properly know his face.

Maybe one day he would be able to give him his car back?

But before he gave in to curiosity Han and Yeonjun came back.

They left everything under the couch so it wouldn't be too visible from outside.

'Are you going?' Yeonjun asked. 'Jimin?'

Jimin nodded and took off his black jacket he had over his uniform and covered the guy with it.

'I will apologize for it properly one day. I hope you won't need your car... Because we really need it now,' he whispered. 'Sorry.'

He turned around and went after Yeonjun.

Jimin sat beside the steering wheel. The scent inside the car... was... strangely calming.

'We have a car.' He said through mindlink.

'Taehyung and Minji are already back. Dami and Jungkook are coming here with a delivery car we can use...' Baekhyun said.

'I declare that I will not drive this lash any longer than I have to' Dami said angrily.

'We will be there in a minute too.' Hoseok confirmed.

Jimin looked one last time in the side mirror to look at the cafe.

*I promise I will return this car to you...*

Half an hour later only four cars were moving through the sleeping streets of the city. In the delivery car the stretchers and stabilizators made out of ice were holding two unconscious people. And the ropes of light were gently holding them in place. They were also surrounded by the light of gravity so they will be absolutely stable during the car movements.

Hoseok was driving the car with Yoohyeon, Siyeon in the back with Namjin and Baekhy in the passenger seat.

In front of them Minji was driving the first car with Yeonjun who was lighting up the road for them. Minho who was shielding them and Dami in case something unexpected would try to attack them.

After the delivery car Soobin, Minho and Bora.

Chanyeol, Jimin, Jungkook and Taehyung were in the last car.

'What will happen to the sleeping city if the army will try to launch missiles from outside? They won't even be able to hide...' Hoseok said through mindlink.

'We secured the city from above... The mist will stop everything inside it. No guns or other weapons would go through it. The mist will swallow it and become stronger...' Taehyung answered.

'What is this mist even made of?' Minji asked.

'Sheere power of nature...' Jungkook answered. 'We combined everything we could think of in the mist. So we could use only the earth's power. Pollen from different plants. Water that will soak and neutralize every explosive... wind that would

direct any attack back at the attacker... It will last for an hour or two. Depends on how far we will get away....'

'The area around the city is still dangerous... The military has its postings there, how will we pass them safely?' Baekhyun asked, when they reached the Iron Gate.

'They won't see us.' Jungkook said calmly.

'If you tell me you can be invisible then I will lose my shit...' Dami said.

'No. I don't need to be invisible. Nature gave us the natural way to make something invisible...' Jungkook said.

'We will cover the cars with moving light and shadows. We will be visible for an eye just for a blink. Like a mirage.' Taehyung explained. 'The color play will work like moro uniforms in the forest. Yeonbin will help us.'

'How do you come up with those ideas?' Chanyeol sighed, shaking his head in disbelief.

Taehyung and Jungkook smiled at each other sadly.

'We are not the first ones that used some of them. And the rest? It's just instinct...' Jungkook said.

He sighed when he heard of the gate opening. Minho and Yeonjun get out of the first car and open it. The lights and shadows covered the car.

Jungkook sent the wind to close the gate when the last car left the city surrounded by the Iron Wall.

Jimin frowned looking through the back window at the closed gate. What if his soulmate was somewhere there? Or his hyung?

He sighed heavily and looked to the front. The most important thing now was to deliver Namjinies to the healers...

Two hours later the mist was lifted from the city and a sunny day appeared covering everything in gentle light...

Yoongi opened his eyes, feeling relaxed as he had not been in a long time...

'What the hell are we doing here?!' He heard San's yelling.

'They stole our car?! What the fuck?!' Wooyoung screamed. 'Oh! They left the guns!'

'What nice thieves!' San said mockingly.

Yoongi internally rolled his eyes, but then nuzzled his nose deeper inside the collar of the jacket. This scent was so calming... A faint scent of perfume mixed with... something like... air after storm?

He opened his eyes and looked at the jacket.

Whose jacket was this for fucks sake?!

And why the hell it was so small?!

He got up.

'We were robbed. Not a big deal during a fucking war... I have plenty of cars. Take the guns we need to check what happened...'

'Yes, boss...' San said mockingly.

'Richie Rich.' Wooyoung added.

Yoongi squinted his eyes.

'Want to walk on foot from tomorrow? I can make that happen...' he said warningly.

Woosa bowed ironically.

'No, Most Gracious!'

'We are sorry, Our Lord!'

'Better.' Yoongi said and went to the doors. He looked at the jacket in his hand.

Yeah, well. A jacket for the car was a shitty exchange but he will take it...

Few blocks away a man opened his eyes sitting beside the table in the kitchen. His

coffee was cold already.

A slow smirk appeared on his face.

He knew this power that was still lingering in the air...

They were here...

The fun... was just starting.

---

Hope you liked the chapter.

BlairWitch🤍

# Chapter 36: Soul Healing

**4th of November 2067, (374 days since the outbreak of war), Daejeon**

As soon as Red String and Red Alert left Daegu, Baekhyun and Chanyeol destroyed all the tracking devices in the cars, so nobody could track them.

Yoohyeon called her father through one of the safe phones and calmed him down when they left the city.

He said to the rest through Baekhyun's mindlink to everyone:

'Auntie Lisa and the rest are waiting for us.'

'We will be there in an hour.' Hoseok said.

Kai and Jennie, until they moved to Seoul, were part of Pink Alert. They still sometimes were helping the rest when they were needed. Pink Alert was rescuing the environment and animals all over the world. Their job was a peaceful one. They were not involved in conflicts. But it was also meaningful as all Interdependants loved nature and was connected to it.

'How are they?' Taehyung asked.

'No changes. Thanks to all gods, their state didn't worsen after moving them...' Siyeon said. She and Yoohyeon were constantly checking Namjoon and Jin's state.

They reached Daejeon at noon. They stopped in front of the animal clinic connected to the house with a big garden where dogs were happily barking seeing them.

A man ran out of the house, opened the gate to the backyard and waved at them to drive in.

As fast as they were hidden from the strangers' eyes, Jungkook and Yeonjun dispersed the shadows and lights around the cars.

A tall man with a bit longer, curly hair walked fast to the van.

Everybody went out of the cars, surrounding him.

Siyeon opened the backdoors of the van...

He glanced at two unconscious bodies inside and cursed:

'Lisa! We need stretchers! We can't move them as we planned!' he called out and a

young woman fastly ran from the house through backdoors. 'Yoohyeonie... get out, I need to check Namjoon.'

Yoohyeon and Siyeon get out of the van.

'Who is he?' Soobin whispered to Yoohyeon.

'Uncle Bogum. Aunty Lisa's husband... And these are Aunt Rose, Jisoo and Lisa...' she pointed with her head to three women, who walked out of the house, pushing two stretchers.

Bogum went inside the van.

'He is unsealed?' he said, surprised and terrified. 'And yet he isn't healing?'

Lisa got inside too, she put her hands over Jin's head.

'Brain damage... Jin is in a coma... My power won't be enough to heal him...'

Jungkook felt a light brush of cold fingers over his palm. He looked at Taehyung. He was barely holding up. But he was.

'Only Namjoon can do that then...' Bogum stated. 'We have to try with him first...'

They slowly moved Namjoon to the stretchers and Chanyeol and Hoseok walked with them to the house guided by Lisa.

'I need to remove the ice.' Yoohyeon said to Bogum, who nodded. He helped Baekhyun to put Jin on the other stretchers.

Jungkook and Taehyung walked after them to the part of the house that was made as an animal clinic. They put them on surgery tables.

Minji rubbed Taehyung's back.

'Stay here boys...' she said. 'We will do something with cars...'

Others walk away in different directions. The doors closed leaving Bogum and Lisa inside. Only Taehyung and Jungkook stayed beside the doors in the corridor.

Taehyung looked at Jungkook...

'Do we have any...?' he asked hopefully.

Jungkook shook his head regretfully.

'Maybe some plant power to slow down the bleeding or strengthen the organisms, but that's it...' he said quietly.

Taehyung took off the hood and pulled down the mask before sliding down the wall and sitting heavily on the floor.

The hours were passing by. People were roaming around the house talking quietly. From time to time one of their friends was coming to check on them.

Jungkook was sitting on the floor with Taehyung's head on his shoulder. He was comfortingly holding his hand all the time.

After some time a black doberman stood in front of them and waved his tail friendly. He ran somewhere and after a moment he brought a plush toy in his jaws. He put it on Taehyung's lap and waved his tail again.

Taehyung looked at him and stretched his hand. The dog smelled it and licked it.

'Can we play later?' Taehyung asked tiredly.

'She doesn't want to play...' Rose stood near and tilted her head with a soft smile. 'She thinks you need comfort... So she brought you her favorite plushie... Her name is Ana. She wants to stay with you...'

Ana lay down, finding her place between Jungkook's and Taehyung's legs, and put her head on Taehyung's lap.

'Ask her if you need a bathroom... she will show you where it is... Me and Jisoo will take care of the rest of the bunch...'

'What's your power?' Jungkook asked, stroking the warm head of the dog.

'I am a Sealer. Jisoo and I can talk with animals...' Rose smirked. 'And shapeshift... Lisa and Bogum are healers... Their healing powers are not as strong as Namjin's. But they will manage... It will just take more time...'

'Thank you...' Jungkook said quietly.

Lisa came out from the room in white bathrobe. It was covered in blood.

Taehyung got even paler than he was.

She looked at Rose.

'I need Minji. We need to know what blood type Namjoon has. And if any of us can...'

Jungkook stood up.

'A Rh-. I have the same.' he said.

Taehyung jumped on his feet. Ana instantly leaned on his knee.

'Jungkook...' he started.

'It's okay...' he calmed Taehyung. 'You know dad can do it too, but he is too exhausted. I'm fine. I will do it...'

Lisa nodded and opened the door for him. She looked at Taehyung, who looked as if he was going to pass out any minute, now when Jungkook was about to go inside.

'Come...' she called him. 'If you want...'

Taehyung gulped and walked in.

Lisa pointed to the chair next to the table, where Namjoon was lying. His chest had a whole... blood was coming constantly staining everything around. Bogum was pressing his hands to the wound.

Lisa had nude gloves on her hands. They looked almost invisible...
Sacred Treasure.

Taehyung stood next to Jungkook. He couldn't look at his fathers states. So he just put his hand on Jungkook's shoulder, while Lisa lifted Jungkook's sleeve and connected the IV, before attaching the second vire to Namjoon's arm.

The red liquid filled the drip.

Taehyung stroked Jungkook's hair, looking at Lisa and Bogum focused around his appa. Jungkook looked at him - worried. Taehyung was holding up with sheer willpower.

'I don't understand...' Bogum muttered. 'He should have started to heal himself already...'

Taehyung hesitantly looked at his fathers white, lifeless face...

Why wasn't he healing himself?

Why?

Could Sealers be this exhausted?

But Namjoon's power would work either way. Slowly. Weakly... but it would... Healing his cells all the time...

So what could actually stop his soul's power?

Taehyung's eyes traveled to Jungkook.

He was for sure the most powerful Sealer that ever existed... If he would be in his father's place... What would stop his soul from healing itself?

Taehyung frowned. His gaze slowly trailed from Jungkook to the bandage hanging from the second table. Then to his dad's fingers, that were still fisted on it... At the last moment his dad tried to heal his appa... Then got wounded himself...

Taehyung's eyes went to Jin's face.

At any point Namjoon was embraced by the bandage and saw Jin getting hurt...

Taehyung knew what Jungkook would do in this situation... And probably - his father did too. His mind was working like crazy creating all possible scenarios... Sealers couldn't use their own sacred treasures, but...

'He can't heal himself, because he tried to heal dad...' he whispered, thinking deeply. 'And because he couldn't move... And was covered with a bandaid... that dad was holding... he pushed all his power inside the Sacred Treasure... Dad should have been hit with all of Appa's healing power, but probably let go of the bandaid at some point...' he looked at Jungkook. 'Is it possible?'

'I can transfer powers through Sacred Treasure...' Jungkook frowned. 'Like at the time we did with Jimin's swords... But yeah we both have to be connected to do it...'

Lisa and Bogum looked at each other surprised by the youngers' thoughts.

Jungkook nodded reassuringly.

'Can we try?' Taehyung asked hopefully. 'Connect them?'

'Everything is worth trying...' Lisa whispered, still looking at Bogum.

Taehyung walked around the table and helped her to push the other table closer. He gently took Jin's hand, and put it on Namjoon's hand, while Lisa took the bandaid and wrapped it around their connected palms and wrists. She made sure two ends of the band aid were between their connected fingers.

Bogum didn't stop the healing on Namjoon's chest, but all of them were constanly peeking on two connected hands and bandaid.

*Come on, appa...* Taehyung thought. *Dad is here... Come on!*

He was looking at his parents hands like a hawk until his eyes widened.

Twitch...

First - the small finger. Then the heart one...

Then all of them desperately tried to curl up, trembling immensely.

'Come on...' Taehyung whispered.

Finally they clenched on the slim fingers, as if Namjoon was drowning and grabbed the rescue line. The grip was strong. So strong they heard a crack...

The bandaid started to glow with a soft warm yellow light. The light was slowly crawling to Namjoon's skin, sinking inside his palm.

'Now we are talking...' Bogum huffed.

He poured more power inside Namjoon's wound.

The bleeding slowed down...

'Now, the healing is working... It will take some time, but...' Bogum gulped. 'Lisa! The anesthesia! He is waking up!'

Namjoon's eyelashes were shuddering.

Bandaid stopped glowing and Namjoon opened his eyes. He groaned in pain, when Lisa came with anesthesia in a syringe.

'I don't know if it will work... I don't know his weight and...'

Jungkook stretched his hand, not letting her come closer.

'Wait...' he said quietly.

'We can't wait...' Bogum started, but Taehyung, seeing his father trying too move, fastly took his hand away from the bandaid and placed it on Jin's forehead.

'Here...' he said.

Namjoon looked at him and when he realized who he was looking at, he slowly closed his eyes, as if he calmed down.

His fingers were twitching on Jin's forehead, before he pressed them. Painful groans were leaving his mouth.

The blood was coming faster again. A trail of blood appeared on his lips when he started to choke.

'Fuck you, Namjoon!' Bogum cursed and pressed his hands to his lungs. 'Couldn't you give me half an hour?!' He was healing him, keeping him alive, while Namjoon was healing Jin.

Taehyung was holding Namjoon's weak wrist, so he could still press his fingers to Jin's head.

He was breathing heavily, scared to the bone. Namjoon was risking his life...

But Taehyung knew... For him there was no other choice. Losing one of them, was losing both...

Finally the fingers lost their strength... Namjoon passed out.

Jungkook let Lisa go to the table where she and Bogum were doing everything they could.

Taehyung gently put his appa's hand on the table, and looked at his dad.

Jin suddenly took a deep breath. He opened his eyes and sat on the table. He almost fell out of it, when his head spinned, but Taehyung embraced his back, helping him to stay still.

'Dad...' he whispered.

Jin was blinking slowly, looking at Taehyung's face like someone woke up after a long sleep. Not knowing where he was.

Jungkook was pale from all the blood donation. The scent of antiseptics and blood. But he was bending over Namjoon's face.

'It will be okay, uncle... We are here...'

Jin looked there, hearing his voice and a panicked whimper left his mouth.

He weakly gripped his fingers over the bandaid and it flew to Namjoon. Embraced him... Shined and started to heal...

Taehyung was holding Jin's weak body looking at the sheer power of soulmates...

Yoohyeon and Dami asked Jisoo if they could get some blankets and cover Baekhyun and Chanyeol that fell asleep sitting on the couch, with Jimin sleeping between them.

Yeonjun and Soobin did the same with Hoseok and Minji, who were sleeping with their heads on the kitchen table, still holding hands under the table.

Minho and Han were helping Siyeon and Bora contact Kai and Dragon to deal with cars and organize transportation.

They knew... the healing was effective. Namjoon and Jin were sleeping now and their lives were safe.

Taehyung and Jungkook stayed beside them, helping Bogum and Lisa clean the surgery room and patients themselves.

Bogum said the wounds were clean and healed now. Jin was just exhausted, that's why he was sleeping. And Namjoon's power was slowly feeding his cells.

'They will stay asleep for a few days, but you can move them...' Lisa said, smiling lightly at Jungkook. 'I will bring you chocolate... How do you feel?'

Taehyung instantly looked at him.

'I'm fine. Just a bit dizzy...'

'Carrot juice will help. I will ask Jisoo to bring it.' Lisa smiled and walked away.

Taehyung sat on the chair between two beds and stretched his hand to Jungkook, who walked slowly to him. He pulled him gently and made him sit on his lap.

He kissed his shoulder and they both stayed like that, checking their parents' state from time to time.

**5th of November 2067 (374 days since the outbreak of war) Deagu**

Yoongi, Wooyoung and San reached ISA's headquarters where everything was in disarray. People were running left and right. Screaming to phones or checking the cameras.

Yoongi approached his uncle.

'You are here!' Kyung exhaled and hugged Yoongi. 'Thanks the Fate! I was so worried!'

'Everything is fine...' Yoongi said, frowning. 'What happened?'

'It seems the people that attacked the cathedral weren't harmed, but we have just a few not so good pieces of recording of what was going on there... They were interdependants, but we don't know who. It seems like MOI as they were all masked...'

'If nobody was harmed what's the problem?'

'They fucking put the whole city to sleep!' Taeil said. 'Imagine having the power like that on our side...'

'That's why you are chasing after them?'

'If they can do something like that and freely get in and out of the city it means the city is not safe...' Kyung said.

'Bullshit.' Yoongi said. 'They clearly were interested in the situation in the cathedral only. Get out of the city without harming anyone... So what's your point?'

Yoongi looked at Taeil. Definitely it wasn't the case of safety as his uncle said. But Taeil tended to say what was on his mind. He wasn't good at mind games... They wanted someone powerful on their side...

'He is right.' Na Inho walked in the room. 'Leave them alone. We don't chase Interdependents. They can freely go in and out of the city. That was and still is our purpose... We have other things to take care of. If MOI sent the unit to help the other unit they did it in a way the public won't know. ICI is still between us and the non-Interdependants. They never act openly. And we can't make them our enemies....'

'It that's true I will confirm this with Bang Yongguk. If it is the only case, as you are saying - fine. We will forget about this...'

'Do it then.' Inho nodded and went to the table with a map, uninterested anymore in the conversation.

Kyung looked at Yoongi a bit angry.

Yoongi didn't give a fuck about it. He never did...

'What's the situation outside the city?' Taeil asked Yoongi, changing the topic.

Yoongi with the help of Wooyoung and San reported all the matters they encountered shortly, before asking:

'Will you drop us home?'

'Why?' Taeil frowned. 'Something happened to your car?'

'It seems MOI borrowed it.' Yoongi shrugged.

'Which car?' Taeil's eyes shined excitedly.

'Does it matter?'

'You know they have gps right? We can track them.'

Yoongi didn't know why, but he didn't like the idea one bit. Whoever was it really didn't try to harm them...

But Taeil was already beside the computer.

'If you are so interested in how and which way they went, why won't you check the city monitoring system?' Yoongi said lazyly.

'I did. But everything is covered by this fucking mist... Everything was invisible as soon as it appeared!'

Nice, Yoongi thought.

'Fuck! The gps lost signal as soon as they left the city, through the fucking gate!' Taeil gritted his teeth.

'It just means you should leave it alone, Taeil.' Yoongi said, amused. 'What are you going to do? Meet them and beg on your knees to be your soldiers? Or force them? I can already tell both ideas are shitty...'

'We are fighting for Interdependants safety. They should help us, don't you think?'

'I think that the less of our people are involved here, the less would be harmed in the end. Will you drop us or not?'

Taeil threw him the keys to his car.

'You can take the car. I will come back with dad...'

'Thanks...'

Taeil played the recording from the monitoring system around the cathedral. There wasn't much to see. Wall of ice suddenly appearing... The arrows of light...

'This are some freaky powers...' Taeil whispered to himself, fascinated.

With the corner of his eyes Yoongi looked at the next scene. It showed a crowd and three masked people in black. He blinked, surprised, when Taeil made a zoom

and he saw a jacket on one of them.

He knew this jacket...

'Leave it, Taeil. Don't waste time.' he said sternly and walked away.

**6th of November 2067 20:00 (375 days since the outbreak of war) - Seoul**

Dragon together with MOI secretly transported everyone to Seoul. They were going in small groups in different cars, at different times, through different routes.

But finally he could see his daughter.

When Minji and Hoseok got out of the car in front of Kims' house he embraced both of them and kept them like that for long, until Hwasa pushed him away, while crying and hugged them, scolding them on their way.

Minji's phone rang. She took it out and frowned.

'It's Yongguk...' she picked up tiredly. 'Hi, boss...'

'What kind of fucked up action was that?! Min Kyung called me to confirm MOI organized evacuation action and only that!'

'And what have you told him?'

'After Baekhyun sent me the last message saying you are leaving the city I said "yeah" but I am pretty sure no MOI units were around, so who got you out of there?!'

Minji looked at the next car that stopped in front of the house. Taehyung, Jungkook and Jimin again with masks and hoods on, got out of it.

For a moment she was seeing them in slow motion. Glowing. Powerful. Determined.

'Our kids...'

On the other side a silence fell.

'Excuse me... what?'

'Our children got us out of there...' Minji confirmed and tears appeared in her eyes.

'What the hell!'

Hoseok took the phone from her.

'Boss... we are really tired. We all reached Seoul. We will talk tomorrow, okay?' he didn't wait for an answer, but disconnected.

Baekhyun and Chanyeol get out of the house. They traveled with Namjin all the way and stayed with them till the rest arrived.

Siyeon with Bora made sure the rest of the kids reached their homes safely.

All of them were waiting for the message to assemble in Mountain House of the Dragon in few days.

Baekhyun hugged Minji, rubbing her back calmingly. Chanyeol and Hobi were looking at each other exchanging a million thoughts.

They, together with Namjoon and Jin, went through hell... It connected them as never before.

Jimin walked to them and took his fathers hands.

'Come. I will drive you home...' he said, smiling lightly.

'Oh! My son has a driver's license!!' Chanyeol ruffled Jimin's hair. 'How convenient!'

Jimin nodded to Taehyung reassuringly. They didn't talk a lot during their journey to Seoul... Jimin knew his best friend. He was holding up till the very end.

'Take off this mask already!' Baekhyun frowned, pulling Jimin's mask down.

'Why?! I look awesome! Badass! Like a hot ninja!!'

'More like a chimney sweep...' Chanyeol giggled.

'You want to walk on foot?!' Jimin glared at him.

Three Parks walked to the car, teasing each other.

'Go. Sleep...' Jungkook said, pointing to Jeons' house, while looking at his parents.

Minji squinted her eyes.

'Listen, brat! I...'

Dragon put his hand on her shoulder.

'Go to sleep, firefly and take your husband with you...' he said calmingly.

'We will stay with Namjoon and Jin. You will change us in the morning...' Hwasa added, stroking Hoseok's cheek.

'Okay, mom...' he whispered and looked at Jungkook, before his eyes traveled to Teaehyung. Only their eyes were seen. And he was pretty sure it was their way of hiding how... fragile they felt right now.

There was also no need to ask where Jungkook would sleep tonight...

'We will see each other at breakfast then...' he said, nodding to his boys. He took Minji's hand. He knew... she was on the verge of breaking down.

She was so strong for the whole year... A fucking year!

So tonight he was going to hold her, when she will cry.

In their bedroom. In the safety of their bed. Far away from missiles and death. Close to their family warmth...

He will let her break down and pick her up after...

Taehyung and Jungkook checked Namjoon and Jin in their bedroom. They were pale. But their breathing was even. They were sleeping peacefully connected to the IV's with nutritions.

They thanked their grandparents quietly and walked upstairs to Taehyung's room.

They let the darkness linger in the room. Jungkook took off his hood and pulled down his mask. He slowly turned to Taehyung, who didn't move from his place next to the window.

He was looking at the moon.

Jungkook stood next to him for a moment without talking.

He knew... he had to make Taehyung... let go now.

He had to give him a sign that it was okay...

Okay... to stop being strong.

Taehyung was always his priority.

And he knew... he will do the same for him after...

He turned to face him. He slowly lifted his hand and took off the hood from Taehyung's head. He combed his hair with his fingers calmingly.

Taehyung's gaze fell on him... Looking at Jungkook was calming him down. He was forgetting about the stress, pressure, blood... his fathers pale faces... hours of being deadly terrified...

Jungkook pulled down the mask that was covering Taehyung's face and exposed his trembling lips. He caressed his cheek calmingly, before reaching for the zipper of the jacket.

He unzipped it and took it off Taehyung's shoulders.

'I should...' Taehyung wanted to reach for the sword.

'Leave it...' Jungkook caught him off calmingly. He grabbed the hem of Taehyung's black t-shirt and took it out of him.

'Koo...' Taehyung said, when Jungkook reached for the button of his pants.

'It's okay... We will just take a shower...' Jungkook said gently.

Taehyung looked into his eyes. There was nothing else beside the care, tiredness and softness in them.

So he let go of the shame. Embarrassment. Thoughts connected to anything physical... There was nothing physical between them now. They just needed warmth. Touch... that meant so much more.

He nodded and slowly reached to Jungkook's jacket to unzip it.

They got rid of each other's clothes in silence. Still, safely hidden in the darkness. Jungkook took Taehyung's hand and they went to the bathroom.

They didn't turn on the lights here either.

They walked under the shower and turned on the water.

At some point... when their hands were entangled in the other one's hair, washing the sweat and dust away... the water on their cheeks became salty.

Taehyung pressed his forehead to Jungkook's.

'We brought them back...' he choked out.

Jungkook hugged him desperately.

'Y-yeah...'

'I-I... wouldn't be able to survive without you...'

'You would...' Jungkook whispered, but Taehyung shook his head. 'You would.' he repeated. 'But you don't have to.'

Taehyung lifted Jungkook's hand and kissed his forearm. He knew there was a bruise from IV there, that appeared on his milky skin.

'Thank you for this...'

Jungkook cupped Taehyung's cheek, making their noses touch. Their trembling mouths were an inch away.

Both were aware tears were rolling down to disappear in between their parted lips.

'H-he is my father too...' Jungkook cried out, to Taehyung's ear.

Taehyung nodded, pulling him closer.

'M-mom looks so devastated...' he whispered. 'It's not like her...'

'S-she was so strong for so long... But she will be o-o-kay...'

'We will make her o-o-kay...' Taehyung promised.

They let the water hide the sound of their cry. They let the water hide their tears.

They let it wash away the fear...

Until there was nothing in the darkness beside them and the quiet whisper that lingered in the air...

A whisper made by two voices at the same moment in time.

A whisper which melted into one.

A soft whisper...

'I love you...'

---

UwU □□□😣

I made it...❤□

BlairWitch💙💙

# Chapter 37: The Matter of Choice

**7th of November 2067 (376 days since the outbreak of war) - Seoul**

On the next day Minji and Hoseok walked to Kims' kitchen to see Taehyung putting the plates on the table and Jungkook making breakfast.

Taehyung lifted his head and smiled at them brightly.

It was such a soothing sight... seeing them here.

Minji walked to him and he bent a bit so she could give him a cheek kiss. She stroked his cheek with her fingers after, looking him in the eyes.

'How do you feel?' she asked.

Taehyung nodded.

'It's okay...' he assured her.

Jungkook turned around to peek at them and smiled.

He walked to the table with cut melons on the plate. Took a piece and gave it to Hoseok.

'Eat. You are pale...' he said, and Hoseok, lightened like a sun, flashing him a smile.

He ate the treat cheerfully, sitting by the table.

Jungkook wanted to put the plate on the table, when he caught the view of Taehyung's pout. He shook his head, hiding his smile and stuck another piece of the fruit in his mouth, before Tae could even say something embarrassing.

Satisfied Taehyung, flicked his chin with his finger and sat opposite to Hobi.

'Hey! What about me?!' Minji protested.

Jungkook raised his eyebrow and feed her, saying:

'So, you know, I'm still mad at you...'

'Oh yeah?' Minji glared at him.

'Yeah. Why haven't you called us earlier?'

'Why would I?' she pressed her lips together.

'You are the Leader of Red Alert... You could have called us when the situation got hard...'

Minji sat by the table. She could use the parent card...

She could.

But looking at Jungkook and Taehyung right now... well she was not talking with her children. She was talking with fellow warriors...

She looked down at her own fingers tapping on the tabletop, before slowly raising her eyes at Jungkook, and asked:

'Would you? If the situation would be reverse?'

Jungkook crossed his arms over his chest.

'Well I am not the leader... Taehyung is.' he threw his boyfriend under the bus mercilessly.

Taehyung looked at him with parted lips.

'Since when?!'

'Since the beginning.' Jungkook nodded as if it was obvious.

Hoseok giggled. Taehyung looked at him.

'See?! How do I turn it off?!'

'You don't... You just enjoy...' Hoseok grinned at him, embracing Minji's waist.

'Hoseok!' Minji glared at him warningly.

Hoseok smirked and Taehyung flashed him a smile, but soon after, his godfather screamed in pain, when Minji pinched his side. She turned to Taehyung as if nothing happened.

'So? Mr Leader... would you?' she asked seriously.

Taehyung took a deep breath and thought for a bit.

'We would call our parents for help, yes... But I guess... we wouldn't think about putting willingly... our children in danger...'

'Exactly.' Minji nodded. 'Well, not until they would be an official squad at least...

But even then it would be hard...'

'Yeah. I understand.' Taehyung nodded.

He glanced at Jungkook who got a bit pale and silent.

'I will call grandparents...' he whispered and walked out.

'Is he mad?' Hoseok asked Taehyung, worried.

Taehyung shook his head and walked after Jungkook.

He caught his arm in the corridor and turned him to himself.

'What happened, Koo?' he asked.

Jungkook looked at the ground.

'I felt something... A flashback...' he said quietly. 'Haven't seen it before...'

'Tell me...'

Jungkook shook his head.

'It will come when it will be the time...'

Taehyung's eyes darkened. He said just one word:

'Don't.'

*Don't hide. Don't struggle by yourself...*

Jungkook for a moment was looking into Taehyung's eyes, before running away with his gaze and looking blankly into space.

'I just... felt... sorrow... Heartbreaking sorrow...' he whispered. 'And saw... us... crying... screaming... broken...'

'One of the lifetimes we already saw?'

Jungkook shook his head.

'No.'

'But we were together?'

Jungkook nodded.

'So what could break us like that?'

'I don't know... That's why I think we have to wait...'

'Okay...' Taehyung sighed and leaned to kiss Jungkook's forehead. 'Come. We will check on our parents and call grandpa and ma for breakfast...'

Jungkook took his hand and they walked to Namjin's bedroom.

Jungkook couldn't stop thinking about it all day. The anxious feeling under his skin was running like blood in his veins.

Even Bang Yongguk's visit couldn't take his mind out of it. His parents and grandparents were talking about the Daegu situation, upcoming election and probable scenarios and Taehyung was listening to them attentively.

But his gaze was traveling to Jungkook, who was in deep thoughts, often.

He had the unfading need to hug him...

The day was rather peaceful. Jimin visited to take his things. All of the squad called or messaged to ask how are Namjoon and Jin.

In the evening, before leaving the house, Dragon looked at them.

'You should come to the Mountain House. We need to nullify all that you have done.'

Taehyung and Jungkook nodded.

'As soon as appa and dad will wake up we all go there' Taehyung promised.

'It shouldn't be long there' Hwasa smiled. 'They look healthy now. The colors came back on their faces...'

'We will stay with them tonight.' Minji informed them.

'You don't have to. You should rest to...' Jungkook started, but Hoseok shook his head.

'We want to. We will be fine... You go to sleep. Let us be parents again and order you around.' he smiled.

Jungkook's eyes became a bit glassy and distant for a moment, even when he smiled at his dad. But only Taehyung noticed it.

'Okay. We will be good and grateful children then.' Taehyung nodded and pulled Jungkook fast upstairs, screaming: 'Bye, grandpa! Bye, ma! See you! Goodnight!'

When they closed the doors behind them, Taehyung again cornered Jungkook.

'What's triggering you?' he asked.

'I... I'm not sure.' Jungkook gulped.

'Jungkook...'

Jungkook stubbornly shook his head and walked to the bathroom to take the shower and change into his nightwear. He came back after a while, and Taehyung passed him on his way to the bathroom without a word.

Jungkook looked at him sadly, and layed on the bed. He turned off the lights, and was looking at the ceiling, listening to the wind outside.

Taehyung came back and without a word layed on the other side of the bed, turning his back to Jungkook.

He hated when Jungkook was hiding. Struggling. Fighting on his own. Suffering from something they should share. He rarely did it... And usually Taehyung could easily break his stubbornness. He didn't know why this time Jungkook was so adamant to share his thoughts....

'Tae...' he heard a whisper. 'Hold me...'

There was some kind of fear and determination in Jungkook's voice. Taehyung frowned, worried, and turned on his back.

'Jungkook... what the hell is happening...' he gulped.

Jungkook shuffled and pressed his face to Taehyung's chest. Listening to his heartbeat.

'Tell me baby...'

'Hold me all the time.' Jungkook whispered and Taehyung closed his arms around him. 'We will be dreaming tonight.'

'How do you know?'

'Because I want to.'

'Do you know about what?' Taehyung asked, quietly.

Jungkook shut his eyes tightly.

'Don't let go...' he just asked.

'I won't.'

Jungkook took a deep breath. He couldn't tell Taehyung... Taehyung would never fall asleep after. And Jungkook couldn't go through this dream alone. He couldn't wake up tomorrow and try to explain...

At some point of the day... He realized what triggered him and caused this arrow of pain in his chest.

It was the moment when Taehyung said...

... *our children...*

There were no screams that could wake up the parents. There was no sleeping paralysis... When Jungkook and Taehyung opened their eyes the next morning, the dried signs of tears were visible on their faces. Jungkook had bruises on his arms where Taehyung's fingers were pressing too hard. Taehyung had a sign of nails on his chest as if Jungkook in his sleep was digging his nails there.

They opened their red eyes and looked at each other.

Their whole bodies were aching.

They didn't care about the snippet of time they saw. What year was it... The names of those people that went through hell... But the feeling of pain... was real.

Taehyung pressed his cheek to Jungkook's hair. Jungkook embraced his chest tighter.

'Are you okay?' Tae whispered.

'Yeah.' Jungkook said blankly. 'Are you?'

'Yeah.'

They heard the knocking. They looked at the doors but they weren't ready to let go of each other. So Taehyung simply said:

'Come in.'

Hoseok stuck his head inside and let out a:

'Awwwwwww...'

Jungkook blushed.

'Don't you dare...' he warned, before Hoseok pulled out his phone and took the picture.

Hobi pouted.

'You are no fun as always...'

'Something happened, uncle?' Taehyung asked.

Hoseok nodded and smiled gently:

'They woke up...'

Jungkook and Taehyung looked at each other smiling widely and jumped out of the bed.

Minji and Hoseok were laughing hard because from the moment Jungkook and Taehyung stormed Namjin's bed there was no way of pulling them out of it.

Somehow in the end the six of them squeezed in the bed in the one big tangle of arms and legs. With Jin screaming:

'I will suffocate!!!' right after: 'Why haven't you washed your teeth before coming here, brats?!'

They were just lying and talking. Catching up with silly stuff. They didn't want to spoil the joyful mood.

Just that Taehyung was clinging to Namjoon like a little child. And Jungkook was nuzzling his head in Jin's belly.

Hoseok was laying back hugging Namjoon and Minji was teasing the hell out of Jin, blowing into his ear, back hugging him.

They didn't move from the bed the whole day. Until Baekhyun, Chanyeol and Jimin visited and went directly to the bedroom when they heard laughs.

Jimin didn't think. He just jumped in the bed, lying between Jungkook and Taehyung.

Chanyeol looked at Namjoon with a smirk, who glared at him in response.

'Don't you dare...' he started warningly, but Chanyeol was already on his way.

Making them all grown when he laid across their bodies.

Jin hit his back.

'I will die! I will die!!' he screamed dramatically.

Beakhyun, laughing hard, took out his phone and took a few pictures with all of them, before taking a selfie with the bed in the background.

'How are you feeling?' he asked. 'You scared the shit out of us you know...'

'Yes. You did.' Taehyung mumbled, into Namjoon's chest.

Namjoon ruffled his hair, calmingly. He looked at Jin with sad eyes.

'We are fine.'

'We are just wondering how we got here...' Jin looked at Jungkook questiongly with a light smile.

'We will explain at grandparent's place.' Taehyung said, ending the topic for now.

'Fine. But I am hungry.' Jin pouted.

'What do you want? I will make it.' Jungkook flashed him a smile.

'Actually...' Jin peeked at Taehyung. 'Panda Express?'

The hurral "YAAAAH!!" was heard in the bedroom.

'I will order.' Chanyeol said, rising up from the bed.

And the six parents ended up talking with their children about their daily life during last year, college, school, training, while happily eating, something unaffordable during the wartime in Daegu... a simple Panda Express.

**9th of November 2067 (378 days since the outbreak of war) - Mountain House**

Two days later Minji, Hoseok, Namjoon, Jin, Baekhyun and Chanyeol stood in front of Jungkook, Taehyung, Dami, Yoohyeon, Jimin, Yeonjun, Soobin, Minho and Han in the living room of Dragon's house.

Dragon looked at everyone.

'Red Alert...' he nodded to the elders and stretched his hand. '... meet Red String. The unit that saved you....'

Jimin frowned.

'What's with this pompous introduction?!'

'Yeah...' Han mumbled. 'I feel as if I should be in a suit or something...'

'Can't you let me speak brats?!' Dragon snapped at them.

'Sure thing, dragpa...' Jimin shrugged.

'Dragpa?! What's that?!'

'Isn't it obvious?' Yoohyeon blinked innocently. 'Dragon-grandpa...'

'I don't like it! Stop it!' Dragon whined and the adults started to giggle, looking at the children bullying their grandpa.

'But you are our dragpa!' Dami said, teasing the elder.

Jiyoung squinted his eyes.

'And I let you use my weapons... The betrayal...' he shook his head.

'Yeah. That! Explain yourself kids...' Namjoon nodded, sitting on the couch.

The rest sat and Res String with the help of Hwasa, Siyeon and Bora told them what happened.

'A tunnel?' Namjoon blinked.

'Yeah... we should take care of it...' Taehyung said, standing up.

'Wait. Let me see...' Namjoon said, and he walked out holding his hand on Taehyung's arm.

The rest of the Red Alert went after them curiously.

Dragon removed the tarp that was covering the whole, and Namjoon blinked seeing the stairs.

They went to the bottom to see the tunnel and river that Jungkook and Taehyung so effortlessly caused to appear.

'Okay... I am impressed...' Namjoon said simply.

Jungkook shrugged.

'It is just earth and water power...'

'Just? Sure...' Jin rolled his eyes.

'So that is how you reached Daegu...' Minji said.

'Yeah. Nobody knew we were there. Nobody knew we went out.' Jungkook assured her.

Minji nodded, taking a deep breath.

'Okay... let the children clean up the mess they made and we should start a small celebration...'

'Namjoon frowned.

'Celebration? The war is not over...'

Taehyung instantly looked at him. With daggers in his eyes.

'For you it is over.' he said coldly.

'Taehyung...' Namjoon started, but Jungkook grabbed his arm and turned him to the stairs. 'I will help you go upstairs. You should be careful, uncle...' he fastly pulled him up.

Jin looked at Taehyung with sad, sorry eyes.

The tension between Red Alert and Red String raised.

Finally Minji sighed.

'War is definitely not over.' she stated. 'But we are back. And we are not going anywhere till we rest and figure out what we can do it, and how we can do it.'

Baekhyun and Chanyeol let out the air they were holding, relieved.

Baekhyun squeezed Jimin's shoulder calmingly, because his son was clenching his

fist tightly without a word.

Minji took few steps and stood in front of Taehyung.

'And if at that time you all will be legal adults... And the rightful unit of MOI... We will take the decisions together...' she stretched her hand to him.

One leader to the other one.

Taehyung squeezed her hand seriously.

'Okay.' After few minutes of heavy silence he looked at her pleadingly. 'Now, please... tell this to my father.'

Minji's eyes softened.

'Oh, Tae... we saw... horrible things. He didn't mean...'

Jin rubbed Taehyung's back.

'It will be okay... I won't let him do stupid thing till he properly rest and recover.'

Taehyung nodded.

Hoseok looked at the stairs, where Jungkook, a bit agitated, appeared. He smiled lightly.

He didn't think Jin or Minji would have to talk with Namjoon...

In the meantime Jungkook, gripping on Namjoon's elbow, pulled him upstairs. They stood in the garden in the cold November air.

Namjoon raised his eyebrow at Jungkook's hand.

'Umm... Kook... your grip is a bit... hurtful...'

Jungkook glared at him.

'Can you stop this uncle?!' he hissed. 'Can you fucking think about Taehyung now?!'

'Language...' Namjoon squinted his eyes warningly.

'Fuck it!' Jungkook cursed again. 'Do you know what he went through?! And me? How would you feel seeing us with a hole in chest or brain damage?!'

'We never can predict what will happen during a war, Jungkook... We all are in danger till it will continue. Children. Peopleyour age... Dying. Screaming. Crying... We can't stay still...'

'Can you stop thinking about the whole world for a moment?!' Jungkook yelled, frustrated. 'Can you think about HIM?! And me?! 72h ago we thought you would die! Can you let us breathe?!'

Namjoon closed his eyes, to not see angry tears in Jungkook's eyes.

'We know you want to help. We want to! But we know this is not the end and this war will come to us either way! And when it does, we will need you...' Jungkook let go of Namjoon's elbow. 'We don't need heros... we need parents... As long as we can have them. Because we never know what will happen the next day... You have a choice... We don't.'

Namjoon without a word pulled Jungkook into his arms.

'I'm sorry...' he whispered. 'I still see everything in front of my eyes...'

'Taehyung is not a crybaby, uncle... He is strong... Protective... Smart... Determined... And he broke down! More than once...' Jungkook mumbled into Namjoon's chest. 'I was holding on just for him... You were on the verge of dying...' he whispered.

'I'm sorry... I guess... I was so fixed on doing what was right that... I lost sight of you...' Namjoon breathed out, looking at the gray and cloudy sky.

He suddenly remembered Jaehyun... Who would do everything for their kids... Yet his doing brought them even more pain... He on the other hand was trying to fix the world, not putting his children first, making them suffer.

It was a bitter truth...

That parents in the end - were just people. They made mistakes...

He kissed Jungkook's head.

'You were not here on his 18s birthday... Can you at least promise you will be on 19s?' Jungkook choked out.

'Don't make me feel more guilty, Kook... I understood already...' Namjoon

whispered.

'I love you, uncle.... You are my second father... or third one depending if I like you or uncle Jin more during the day...' Jungkook said, making Namjoon giggled.

Jungkook took a step back and looked at Namjoon with a steel gaze.

'But no matter what... Taehyung is always my priority. You can be his father, but I won't let you hurt him...'

'You matured a lot...' Namjoon smiled lightly.

Jungkook shook his head.

'When it comes to me and him... honestly speaking... we had never had the chance to not be mature...'

'I will be on his 19th birthday... and on yours 18th... I will try to do what I can, being around you.'

Jungkook sighed deeply.

'Thank you.'

Namjoon nodded.

'So I guess, I will help Ma prepere the celebration...'

'I will clean the mess then...' Jungkook smiled shortly and returned to the tunnel.

When he was left alone, Namjoon started to think deeply. There was something that Jungkooks said that was scaring the shit out of him...

What did he mean by: *We don't have a choice...?*

The celebration was a simple house party with small loud groups. Jin and Hoseok were sitting with Jimin and awwing and screaming and laughing at photos he was showing them on his phone.

The rest gathered around Dragon, Baekhyun and Chanyeol who were telling stories about some of Red Alert's missions.

Until the silence fell in the room when Dragon told them about 14 Red Strings... Jimin looked at his own wrist where two were wrapped...

So there were 4 more?

All the adults looked at each other, tense. They knew what something like that could mean.

A heavy burden was on their children's shoulders...

That's why they started to talk about everything that they could connect with Lord Loo and current events. Taehyung was laughing hard every time his appa cringed at the name...

The atmosphere was thick and nervous, when the topic came. And thinking about the probabilities of what Taehyung and Jungkook would have to go through... made their parents anxious.

'Boys...' Namjoon started quietly. 'Maybe after what happened, I should be the last one to say it, but... maybe you should just... stay out of it?'

'We can't.' Taehyung caught him off instantly. Harshly. A bit aggressive.

'What do you mean you can't?' Minji looked at him. 'All of our missions were our choices... Nobody forced us to go... Nobody will force you either... You always have a choice.'

'We don't.' Jungkook whispered, looking at the ground.

*Again. This...* Namjoon thought, frowning.

The silence fell in the room. Everybody looked at Jungkook and Taehyung.

Taehyung got a bit closer to Jungkook. And Jungkook's body slightly turned to him, as if he was ready to hide any minute into his arms.

'The destiny doesn't work like that...' Namjoon said gently. 'You always have a choice... It's just a path... You decide to follow it...'

'We would never consider the second option... again...' Taehyung looked at his father with sorrowful eyes.

'Again?' Hoseok made a step closer towards Jungkook, with a worried face.

Jungkook lifted his head and looked at him.

'Only once... our souls refused to play the Fate Game...' he whispered, and blinked

fast to chase away sudden wetness in his eyes. 'And the consequences were too much...' he fastly looked down.

'It doesn't have to be like that again...' Jin said gently.

'Whoever we were at that point in time... we lost ***our children***.' Taehyung said harshly. 'We were losing people around fighting with him... It was always painful... But once we decided not to fight. Not to get involved. To lead a peaceful life... Away from the world. Away from troubles... And the price we paid...' he shook his head, not able to finish.

'They took in two orphans... Twins... Boy and girl...' Jungkook whispered.

It was the first time when they were telling about one of their lifetimes as it didn't involve them personally. As if they wanted to cut themselves off of those events.

'They were living inside some forest. Away from everything. The war was going on around, but they had a small garden. They haunt in the forest to feed themselves. They were taking everything what nature could give them... They were poor and extremely happy... The children were the victims of war, so they took them in... They raised them. They loved them... for ten years...' Taehyung said with a sad smile.

'And they lost them.' Jungkook said harshly at the end. 'HE found them. Both were unskilled... And he didn't kill THEM! He killed their children... Because it was more entertaining for him to see them suffer than to see them lifeless...'

Taehyung looked at his father with bitter amusement.

'What kind of choice is that?' he asked. 'Even if it won't be children... Should we risk losing someone again, just because we won't be prepared? He will find us either way...'

'But if you want to call it a choice...' Jungkook gulped. 'Then we already decided...'

Namjoon looked at Taehyung.

'Fine then... We will give you everything we have... If the fight is unavoidable... you should be able to kick his ass this time to hell. Once and for all...'

Taehyung looked at all the members of Red String, and they nodded to him. His gaze traveled to Jimin and two bracelets on his wrist. Still... 5 people was missing from them. It wasn't the time yet...

Jungkook looked at him calmingly so Taehyung said:

'When we will be ready... - we will.'

**19th of November 2067 (388 days since the outbreak of war) - Seoul**

4 days after the election that the previous president won again, he signed the agreement with Min Kyung.

Against half of the country and to happiness of the other half...

Against his advisors wishes... Min Kyung warning that they can fight much longer was enough. He wanted peace in Seoul and the rest of the country. So he secrificed the country unity...

On the day of 19th November in 2067 the whole of North Gyeongsang was proclaimed a Republic of Deagu.

The first in history Republic of Interdependants.

Min Kyung became a Premiere and President in one.

ISA was changed to the Army of the Republic and the new laws... started to be created.

---

Sorry to being late. *bows*

We will calm the situation for a moment...

BlairWitch91

# Chapter 38: Republic of Daegu

**2nd of December 2067 (400 days since the outbreak of war) - Daegu**

Yoongi was looking at the laptop screen with Gahyeon on his right and Wooyoung and San on his left.

He was looking at his uncle's face. His aunt and Taeil were standing behind him.

*'Today... The National Army of South Korea left the territory of the Republic of Daegu. All areas of the Republic from its west border on Nakdong River to the Sea of Japan in the east are free from the official conflict. The ceasefire was signed with the President of South Korea. The war... is over.'*

Yoongi heard a sighed on his right and looked at Gahyeon with the corner of his eye. His 18-year old sister clenched her fists a bit pale.

He understood. They should feel relief... But they knew they were not going back to the world they left few years ago... What will this new reality be like?

*'The equal rules will be made. The equal laws will be created and executed. Every person that won't act according to those laws - no matter Interdependent or not - will be punished. That's the equality we were looking for. And that's how the Republic will work for our safety and future. Everyone who wants to leave is free to go... From this day onwards we are beginning to rebuild our society, homes and life on a new basis of equality. Don't worry... Interdependatns don't want revenge.... We are not going to divide society into WE and YOU. From today we are all citizens of the Republic.... Together we will rebuild schools, universities, businesses.... Away from racism and inequality, we will create a safe place for our children. Together.'*

The crowd gathered at the conference began cheering and whistling. Kyung was smiling sadly, until Chorong took a step forward and stood next to him. He looked at her gratefully.

'He for sure can talk...' San said with a grimace.

'Well, from now on, talking will be his main weapon...' Yoongi sighed.

'What about ISA?' Wooyoung asked.

'It's not ISA anymore. It is the Army of the Republic... Their main purpose is to deal with the small conflicts inside the country. And act as the law enforcement till the Police and Courts will be restored...'

'What happened to Na Inho?' San frowned.

'Uncle wanted him to be the Minister of National Defense but he refused... He said that without Daehyunhe can't actually do much and he don't know when the separation syndrome will hit him in fact, no when the situation calmed down. Hate for people was what was keeping it at bay... So now he is the General Secretary of the President. And advisor. Two people that always were around him: Wi Hajun and Oh Joryoung, with their soulmates, will now manage the army.'

'What Taeil wants to do?'

'Stay beside his father I guess...' Yoongi shrugged.

'He won't mind staying in the flashes either...' Gahyeon smirked.

Yoongi closed the laptop and turned to Wooyoung and San.

'What do you want to do now?'

Wooyoung blinked in surprise.

'What do you mean?'

'The war is over. You can do and go wherever you want... So what is your plan?'

A teasing smile appeared on Wooyoung's face, he wrapped his arm around Yoongi's neck and pulled him, punching jokingly his stomach:

'Well, my lovely hyung, my plan is to live in this house and annoy the hell out of you of course...'

Gahyeon giggled, but there was a bit of relief in her voice. Wooyoung and San were like her brothers... She got used to them being around. She didn't want to lose them.

Wooyoung being just a year older than her with his cheerful being was her favorite. Mostly because they often meet in the night in the kitchen eating an absolutely unreasonable amount of food...

'That is what I was afraid of...' Yoongi wheezed, chasing him away like a persistent fly. He glared at San right after. 'I'm asking seriously here...'

San crossed his arms over his chest.

'What is your plan then?' he asked challengingly.

21 year old Yoongi usually was forgetting then San was just a year younger then

him. Maybe a bit less mature, but still he could follow his mind process easily...

Everybody looked at Yoongi.

'I... I am not gonna create a plan. As I don't believe it is over... I will just... do what can be done at this point. I don't want to get all happy and hopeful too early...' he said quietly.

'Exactly...' San nodded. 'So we will just try to slowly live normally, but at the same time... we are going to stick to you...'

'Yeah, maybe we will find some private dance tutor and confirm him to begin some kind of studio... There will also be a lot of work to do around.' Wooyoung nodded. 'We should fins a job...'

'I will find you a job...' Gahyeon said fast. 'Considering all the events when we will check the condition of the company we will need a lot of people...'

'Even better...' San nodded. He patted Yoongi's back. 'Don't worry about us, Yoongs... We are fine being together no matter when and in what situation...'

Wooyoung smiled at san sweetly.

'Yeah, we are...'

'I wasn't worried about you, but about my own sanity...' Yoongi glared at them.

'Sure, grumpy cat... You should check your phone, you know...' Wooyoung grinned. 'You always have such a calm ass after... Tell us, how is your soulmate?'

Yoongi choked on his saliva, surprised and looked at Gahyeon, who, just like San and Wooyoung, had an evil grinch-grin on her lips.

'Tell us! Tell us...' they started to tease him, pinching him and poking.

'What the fuck?!' Yoongi jumped aways. 'S-shut up! I don't have a...' but he couldn't say it. He gulped. He couldn't deny Chim's existence...

'Awwwww! You are blushing!' Wooyoung squealed.

'You two get the fuck out! Gahyeon! I have to talk with you!' he said sternly.

'Uuuu... our Master got mad...' San bowed teasingly. 'We are sorry, Master. Minions are going...'

When they left Jaehyun's office, Yoongi looked at Gahyeon, who had a hard time trying to not laugh. Finally she cleared her throat and said:

'Yes. We know... You don't have to hide it. It's normal to be affected by your soulmate.' she shrugged. 'I would be super worried if you wouldn't be... It would mean dad and mom lied to me when I asked them if you were a robot...'

Yoongi snorted with laughter.

When Gahyeon was four she really asked that... Because Yoongi fell from the stairs and didn't even blink. He just stood up, dusted his clothes and walked further as if it never had happened

Of course the 7 year old boy was in pain. But Yoongi was Yoongi. He rarely showed emotions from the very beginning.

Yoongi sat on the couch and patted the place next to him.

'I asked seriously... What do you want to do, Gahy? You are 18... Last years were fucked up... You didn't have time for yourself... Now you have a chance.'

'And here you are wrong, oppa... When you were dealing with everything around, I had plenty of time to think about myself...' Gahyeon smiled. 'I know what you are trying to do... Get me out of here to lead a peaceful life... Not going to happen, big bro!' she casually poked Yoongi's arm.

'Oh, yeah?' he asked, squinting his eyes, but the corner of his mouth raised a bit.

'Yeah! So... first of all I am not going to university. I will take some online business courses offered by Harvard, Oxford and Stanford. Finances, management, economy and logistics. I also want to improve Japanese, Chinese and English as those are languages of our important customers. I also hope dad's mentor and lawyer will help me in the company... You will need to help me too at the beginning...You know how they will treat me at first...'

'You are the daughter of Min Jaehyun... they can't do shit to you!' Yoongi growled.

'What about uncle?'

'I don't know what he wants to do now...' Yoongi frowned. 'Now when he is the president...'

'We also have to find a physiotherapist for mom... It's unhealthy that she is lying all the time...'

Yoongi nodded.

'Are you sure you don't want to leave this place? You know that dad had funds for both of us... You can choose any university in the world...' he said quietly.

Gahyeon shook her head.

'We don't know what will happen in a year or two... This place changed, because of a decision our father once took... For us. Sometimes... I feel responsible...'

'You shouldn't. He did it to protect us... It was just a mistake in the long run that other people used, before he could fix it...' Yoongi's eyes got sad.

Gahyeon smiled lightly.

'I'm glad you think like that... I was afraid you blamed him...'

'Nah... he was a shitty politician but a good dad... I miss him...' he sighed earnestly.

They were sitting in silence for a moment, before Gahyeon whispered:

'Oppa... do you think mom will ever...'

Yoongi stroked Gahyeon's back.

'I don't know, Gahy... I hope so...'

She nodded sadly, but then she smiled, patting his knee.

'Go take a shower! I know you are dieing to check your phone!'

'Shut up you brat!' Yoongi squinted his eyes.

Gahyeon stood up, walking to the doors, but stopped to turn around.

'What is she? He? Like?'

'He... And it is not your business!'

'IT IS!' Gahyeon pouted. 'It's my future brother-in-law! I have to approve!'

Yoongi blushed.

'Hold your horses...' he mumbled, shaking his head. 'Haven't even seen him...'

'Doesn't matter...' Gahyeon grinned. 'So? Tell me something and I will leave you alone for now...'

Yoongi sighed miserably and said angrily:

'He is an annoying, cheeky, sassy brat like you! Pain in the ass with a foul mouth!'

Gahyeon wiped an invisible tear dramatically.

'I love him already! The perfect match!'

Yoongi threw a pillow from the couch at her, but she was fast enough to close the doors after herself and ranaway.

Yoongi walked inside his room and looked in the mirror.

He actually... didn't know what to do now. For the last few months he had a purpose. And now? What should he do now?

He had a feeling he should go far away from ISA or his uncle... He wanted at least information to act accordingly. If he will cut himself off from them... he will lose the chance to be informed. He just really didn't want to be around all the political swamp... But it could be dangerous in the long run...

He sighed and decided that he will stay around his uncle and Taeil... Just keep a low profile...

He went to the shower to wash out the bitter taste in his mouth.

In his opinion the war wasn't over. It just changed its face...

When he came back he laid on his bed and couldn't help himself. He took the phone and opened the chat app. He blinked because the message was already there:

**CHIMISLOVE: So... Is the war over?**

Yoongi frowned. He didn't want to talk about war... He assumed that somehow Chim knew his soulmate was somewhere in the war zone. But he didn't know it was Yoongi... Suga should stay away from the topic.

But at the same time... It wasn't a statement... It was a question.

Again, he got proof Chim was damn intelligent...

Maybe it was actually the way to solve his internal conflict?

**SUGA: What do you think?**

**CHIMISLOVE: I asked first... 😑**

**SUGA: It is over on paper. In people's minds? I don't think so...**

**CHIMISLOVE: So, it will just calm down before it will burst out again.**

**CHIMISLOVE: That's what I thought...😔**

**SUGA: Are you worried? Are you inside the warzone?**

**CHIMISLOVE: I enjoy every signle second you being worried about me...□□□**

Yoongi rolled his eyes.

**CHIMISLOVE: No I am not inside the warzone. But it doesn't mean I am out of it either...**

**SUGA: You beating around the bush...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I think my soulmate is inside. I'm worried...**

Yoongi his forehead to the phone.

Yes. It was a nice feeling...Feeling the care.

*It's fine... I'm okay...*, he whispered in his mind.

**SUGA: No matter where he is... He can feel you. It helps...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Do you feel your soulmate?**

A sweet smile appeared on Yoongi's face.

**SUGA: Sometimes I do...**

**CHIMISLOVE: What does it feel like?**

**SUGA: Warm. Gives you courage...**

**CHIMISLOVE: When I feel him... I feel his pain... □□**

**CHIMISLOVE: It is heartbreaking... That I can't be next. Help, comfort, protect...**

**CHIMISLOVE: It's hard.**

**SUGA: Never doubt that you can help, comfort or protect him...**

**SUGA: If you feel him, he feels you too.**

**CHIMISLOVE: That's what my friends are saying...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Still... A Holder without a Sealer is just a human.**

**CHIMISLOVE: It scares me... The possibility I will lose him before meeting him...**

Yoongi didn't know what to answer to that. He was scared too.

**SUGA: Yeah... it is a scary thought...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Yeah...**

Yoongi was looking at the saddest "yeah" he saw in his life. He blushed and texted something against his whole attitude, but he knew it would cheer Chim up and take his train of thoughts to a new track.

**SUGA: Want a hug?**

**CHIMISLOVE: ...**

**SUGA: What?**

**SUGA: Speechless?**

**SUGA: Hey! Say something idiot!**

**CHIMISLOVE: A friendly hug?** 😏

**SUGA: Ummm... yeah? I don't know...?**

**SUGA: What other kind of hugs are there?!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Comforting hug.** 

**CHIMISLOVE: Happy hug.** 😁

**CHIMISLOVE: Jumping hug.** ☺

**CHIMISLOVE: Back hug.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Side hug.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Hug while kissing someone's forehead...** 😘

**CHIMISLOVE: Hug while squeezing someone's ass...** 😏

**CHIMISLOVE: Hug while brushing over someone's di...**

**SUGA: OKAY, I GET IT!**

**SUGA: Jeez! That escalated quickly...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I'm laughing so hard at your innocent ass...**

**SUGA: Compared with yours it IS innocent!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Guilty as charged... *bows***

**SUGA: You are a satan...**

**SUGA: But a cute one...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Arrow in the heart!**

**CHIMISLOVE: WARN ME NEXT TIME!**

**SUGA: Why would I?**

**CHIMISLOVE: You used emoji again?!**

**CHIMISLOVE: It is a national event for sure!**

**CHIMISLOVE: But getting back to the important thing...**

**CHIMISLOVE: What kind of hug do you want to give me?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Choose wisely! It's a one time offer to squeeze my ass or brush my...**

**SUGA: SHUT UP!**

**CHIMISLOVE: So shy... I love it!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Okay I will do it for you... Friendly...**

**CHIMISLOVE: *hug***

Oh, so that is how you do it... He was wondering.

He gulped feeling a bit nervous.

It was just words and signes right?

**SUGA: *forehead kiss***

**SUGA: It will be okay...**

Miles away in Seoul, sitting beside his desk Jimin looked at the text with all freaking butterflies running freely through his veins.

Forehead kiss?

Why?

What the hell... - he pressed his hand to his heart, gulping.

No flirting could ever make him react like that...

The comfort in these simple words was... indescribable...

At this point he will really fall in love...

He shouldn't fall in love with someone who is not his soulmate... It would only hurt after...

But he for sure had a soft spot for his unnamed hyung...

He should just be careful to tame those butterflies...

**CHIMISLOVE: Thank you, hyung...** □

**CHIMISLOVE: I feel much better.**

**CHIMISLOVE: But how are you?**

**SUGA: Honestly speaking... I don't know what to do...**

**SUGA: Every day I had something to do and now I don't have it...**

**SUGA: So I don't know... what to do tomorrow or the day after...**

**SUGA: It's too much free time?**

**SUGA: Not to mention... I think it is just a longer peace before a fucking hurricane...**

**CHIMISLOVE: My drive instructor once said...**

**CHIMISLOVE: If you feel like you are going to crush then accelerate more idiot...**

**CHIMISLOVE: So just move on and let out those feelings the way you love.**

**CHIMISLOVE: If you still don't know, I will tell you what to do... You will move your ass and go write next amazing lyrics and then create music...**

**CHIMISLOVE: That's what you will do. The rest will come or not. You don't have control over it...**

**CHIMISLOVE: So don't give a shit... And nevermind it...**

**SUGA: You are really something...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I know 😎... Sent me a heart as a thank you... 🖤**

**SUGA: □ *Black heart***

Sitting in his room Jimin laughed out loud seeing the text.

**CHIMISLOVE: Did it have to be black? 😫**

**SUGA: Take it or leave it. Night...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I will take it... 👍**

The 2nd of December in 2067 was the day the Civil War, after 400 days of fights, officially ended.

**30th of December 2067 -Seoul**

As they weren't present at Taehyung's 18th birthday Jin and Namjoon decided to organize his birthday with a bang this year.

So the whole garage was cleaned to make a dancing space. Living room was full of tables with foods and drinks.

Jungkook put speakers in the whole house so the blasting music was heard everywhere.

Yoohyeon, Yeonjun, Dami, Soobin and Han decorated everything and the rest led by Jimin took care of the guest lists.

By 8th pm the room was full of people from Taehyung's old highschool and his colleagues from University, as well as Jimin's parents, Yoohyeon's parents, grandparents and aunties. They even invited the Pink Alert to thank them and all of them appeared, taking the chance to spend New Year's Eve in the Capital.

All adults were mainly occupying the kitchen where the music wasn't so loud, while the Youngsters were coming by to chat with them for a moment, before storming the party again.

In the dimmed colorful lights, Jungkook was pouring himself a coke into a red cup, when a long haired, tall guy approached him.

He was really handsome...

Well not like Taehyung, but Jungkook was sure there is no person as beautiful as Taehyung in this world...

Or any other world actually...

'Can you pour me some?' he asked, showing him the cup with a heavy smelling of vodka.

'Sure...' Jungkook nodded and poured some coke to alkohol.

'What are you drinking?'

'Coke.'

'Pure? At a party?' he laughed.

'I'm underaged.' Jungkook frowned.

The guy shrugged.

'You are here, so not so much underaged... Right?' He stretched his hand with his cup. 'Wanna try?' He smiled charmingly.

Jungkook glared at the cup under his nose.

'No. But thanks...'

It's not like he wasn't tempted to try. Just not here. Not on Taehyung's birthday... And definitely not without Taehyung around...

He smiled shortly at the guy, looking around. He could see Yeonjun was stuck next to Soobin as if he was his shirt, not letting anybody talk with him alone.

Jungkook could understand... Soobin was their maknae. He was protective towards

him too... With so many college people around he should be protected.

Dami and Yoohyeon were probably on the dancefloor, just like Jimin, who didn't move out of there from the beginning and probably was collecting hearts, dicks and boobs like pokemons...

Han and Minho were sitting on the couch surrounded by their friends chatting and laughing. Jungkook could recognize Taehyung's hair in the circle.

He smiled a bit, scrunching his nose, hearing Tae's laughter.

'Hi, Chin-Mae...' a girl approached them, asking the guy. 'Want to dance?'

'Hi, Cho! Later.' he said, showing the cup.

Cho looked at Jungkook.

'Maybe you then?' she smiled. 'I'm Cho...'

'I...' Jungkook was shy with new people. And his shyness was reaching an extreme level when it was coming to girls...

'Come on! We can dance!' she said, grabbing his wrist.

Jungkook didn't know how to refuse politely... And he actually never was at the party with so many people...

But he knew one thing...

*If Taehyung would see him on the dancefloor with...*

'How do you know Taehyung?!' the girl asked, screaming through the music. 'Are you his neighbor?!'

'He is my boyfriend and you are touching him.'

Jungkook heard a deep, dangerous voice behind the girl and thought in his mind with a sigh: *that's exactly what would happen...*

Taehyung - knowing how Jungkook is reserved to people - normally didn't get jealous. And Jungkook didn't have a need to make him jealous either... So Taehyung wasn't getting jealous... He was instantly getting possessive and territorial.

And it was fucking dangerous...

'We are going to dance...' Cho answered cheerfully absolutely, innocently oblivious to the danger.

Jungkook scowled inside hearing her.

*Wrong answer...* he thought.

Taehyung looked at Jungkook with cold eyes.

'Oh? Are you?'

Jungkook lifted his, embraced by the girl's fingers, wrist up, not even ashamed he was throwing the girl under the bus.

'Well... I didn't have the chance to refuse...'

Taehyung turned to the girl and raised his eyebrow demandingly.

'It's just a dance you know... I won't kidnap him. Nor will I hurt him or throw myself on him... Chill, Tae...'

*Poor soul,* Jungkook thought with pity.

Taehyung looked at the fingers on Jungkook's wrist and his cold, dark eyes pierced the head of the girl.

'So let me put it straight for you, Cho. He didn't agree to it... So, don't touch him. Don't even look at him...'

Cho laughed and let go.

'Okay... It is a bit strange, but fine...' she shrugged. She looked at Jungkook. 'You don't mind? His behavior?'

Jungkook peeked at Taehyung and smirked, before saying:

'I'm even worse...'

Cho looked at them and smiled.

'I will stick to Chin then... Speaking about the devil...'

Chin came to them and said to Jungkook, nodding in the process to Taehyung:

'Here! I'm telling you, you should try! I made it really light...'

Jungkook glared at the red cup and then at Chin.

'And for the second time... I'm telling you "no". Unless...' he turned to Taehyung, smiling cheekily. He was fucking enjoying the drama and people not knowing they were in deadly danger. 'Can I?'

'Yeah! Say to him, he should drink to your health!' Chin was making his situation worse.

'How old are you?' Cho asked.

'9 months to 18...' Jungkook shrugged.

'At your age I was drinking at every party!' Chin informed them with disbelief.

'Wow!! College people are amazing!' Jungkook clapped his hands, enjoying Taehyung's state with a mischievous smile. His boyfriend was ready to spit fire...

Chin put the cup in Jungkook's hand and looked demandingly at Taehyung:

'Tell him to drink, bro!'

Jungkook looked at Taehyung.

'Should I?' he asked, grinning widely.

Maybe his angel would be a bit more conscious with what was going on, but he was after a few drinks already...

That was probably the reason why he didn't decide to turn his college friends to ashes...

That or the way Jungkook had teasing, challenging flames in his eyes and a small smirk on his lips...

So instead of killing Chin, Taehyung wrapped his arm around Jungkook's waist and took the red cup from Chin's hands.

Jungkook, like in slow motion, was looking at how he raised the cup to his lips and took a huge sip. It made him thirsty...

He gulped and wanted to run away with his gaze at least, as Taehyung's steel arm was holding him in place, when Taehyung suddenly lowered his hand with the drink, tilted his head and pressed his lips still full with a sweet and fizzy, alcoholic drink to Jungkook's lips.

Surprised, Jungkook opened his lips and let the liquid pour inside, he gulped it, feeling Taahyung was bending him in half, backwards.

He kissed him, putting his tongue inside, making the bitter taste of the drink change into a sweet one.

A drop escaped their lips, and ran down Jungkook's cheek.

Taehyung looked at him with fire and darkness in his eyes and whispered into his lips.

'That's the only amount of alcohol you will get till you're 18...'

Still bent and pressed closely to Taehyung's body, Jungkook wrapped his arms around his boyfriend's neck and muttered:

'And I guess it will be my favorite way of getting it...'

He joined their lips again, hearing somewhere in the room, excited scream of Jimin:

'You are putting on a show without inviting me?!'

Taehyung and Jungkook smiling into a kiss, didn't even think of stopping their make out.

Namjoon and Hoseok stood in the kitchen door frame to check the sudden applause and commotion.

Namjoon parted his lips in shock seeing the k-drama-like scene.

'They don't do sweet baby kisses anymore...' he whined.

Hoseok was grinning widely, taking out his phone.

'No, they are not!' he said excitedly.

Chin and Cho looked at the couple, laughing and cheering. When Taehyung and Jungkook finally came back to the present, Cho patted Taehyung's back.

'Interdependants couple are for sure cute!'

'Way to go!' Chin showed a thumb up, before taking Chin's hand and pulling her to the dancefloor.

Taehyung pulled Jungkook to sit next to Minsung on the couch. Jungkook sat on his lap, feeling Taehyung's arm not leaving his waist.

'Don't you dare to move away from me from now on...' Taehyung warned him.

Jungkook nodded pleased as fuck.

Few hours later, after a lot of dancing, laughing and eating, Jungkook escorted Taehyung to his room.

Taehyung wasn't tipsy anymore...

He was absolutely wasted.

Everybody wanted to drink with him... even his uncles. Well especially his uncles actually... Baekhyun, Chanyeol and Kai were testing his limits...

Jungkook took him to his room, where Taehyung leaned heavily on the closed doors.

'You don't feel well?' Jungkook asked.

Tae shook his head, and stretched his hand for him. He grabbed his hips and pulled him closer. He nuzzled his face in Jungkook's neck...

'My head is spinning...' he whispered.

'Well...' Jungkook started, but he stopped and gulped when he felt a wet kiss on his neck. 'Tae...' he breathed out, tilting his head. 'You will make me needy...'

Taehyung's hands slid through his sides and down, and cupped his asscheeks.

'And you don't want it?'

'I want it...' Jungkook felt Taehyung's hands pulling him closer. Their crotches brushed on each other. He whimpered. 'B-but if I won't stop you n-now...' he gulped hard, while his hand reached for Taehyung's hair and intertwined in them. 'Tomorrow... you will... fuck!...' he cursed when he felt the sucking on his neck. '...you will... be mad at m-me...'

'Why would I...?' Taehyung muttered with a hint of amusement, kissing and licking the purple mark on Jungkook's neck.

'B-because you are drunk... And as much as I know you... You don't want to touch me, not fully conscious...'

Taehyung lifted his head and sighed heavily.

'You are right...' But his hands didn't leave Jungkook's butt, causing a friction between their bodies. 'But you smell... so delicious, baby...' he whined, pressing his nose to Jungkook's neck again. 'It's hard to control...'

Jungkook was feeling Taehyung's state on his stomach...

*Fucking shit! If only Taehyung wouldn't be drunk...*

Well if he wouldn't be, he wouldn't be so bold either...

Jungkook won his internal battle.

No. They won't go through it without being fully aware... Both of them.

His care for Taehyung's comfort won with his needy ass.

He lifted Taehyung's face and kissed his nose and lips lightly and calmingly.

'Cold shower?' he asked.

Taehyung nodded miserably and kissed him back.

The kiss changed into a long and sweet one. Taehyung hugged Jungkook closely, stroking his back softly.

He smiled content when their lips slowly parted.

'I was waiting for this gift the whole evening...'

Jungkook raised his eyebrow.

'You took the gift already downstairs absolutely unexpectedly, you know...'

'Didn't mean the kiss... I meant you... You are my favorite gift... Each year. Each day. Each moment... Since the moment you were born...'

Jungkook stroked Taehyung's cheek gently.

'And you are mine, Kim Taehyung...' he whispered, looking into the mysterious eyes. 'Happy birthday, Angel...'

---

Hello! □□

UwU.... Yes. It's me. ( ᵕ̤ᴗᵕ̤) So early this time...

Happy? (≧▽≦) You better be!

Nice chapter? Hope so... (✿◠‿◠)

BlairWitch91 💟💟

# Chapter 39: Coming of Age

**14th of February 2068 - Seoul**

Jungkook didn't mind Valentine's Day. But it was also the third anniversary of their first kiss and that had a meaning for him.

So after his school ended and Taehyung came back from college classes they went out. They were going out a lot actually. Sometimes to eat, sometimes to watch a movie or just casually take a walk in the park.

They didn't call it "dates". No matter where they went together, the time was special. And the simple word was making them blush and they wanted to spare themselves...

They felt much more relaxed with their parents being home and getting back to their daily routine now.

'What are we doing today?' Taehyung asked, because it was Jungkook who asked if they could go out today.

He took Jungkook's hand when they left their houses.

'N Seoul Tower...'

'Haven't been there for quite a time...' Taehyung smiled. 'When was it?'

'I think in the year we moved to Seoul...' Jungkook nodded. 'But even then we weren't in the restaurant...' he smirked.

'Whoa! Are you treating me? How did you manage to save so much money?!' Taehyung exclaimed.

'Just got a nice gift from grandparents for Christmas...' Jungkook smiled.

'I see!' Taehyung got it too, but he saved it for vacation. He had plans... 'Wait... Are we dressed properly?' Taehyung checked Jungkook out.

He had a long camel color coat, which was reaching his knees. It was unbuttoned so Taehyung could see a white sweater and tight black jeans under it.

'Wow...' Taehyung whispered. 'You look like a boyfriend...'

'Yes. Yours. So shut up!' Jungkook hit Taehyung's stomach, while a crimson blush painted his cheeks.

'Such a shy cutie you are...' Taehyung leaned his head, while smiling and kissed Jungkook's cheek.

'Fuck you!'

'Sure you want...' Taehyung chuckled deeply, making the blush paint Jungkook's neck as well. Tae pressed his nose to Jungkook's neck. 'Jeeze! This scent drives me crazy!'

'It was a Christmas gift from you, so now suffer...' Jungkook smirked.

'It had a nice aroma in the bottle, but on you it is freaking illegal...' Taehyung muttered. He took a deep breath and asked: 'So should I go change?'

'No.' Jungkook said sternly and seriously.

Taehyung blinked.

'Why not?'

'You look just right.' Jungkook said.

Taehyung was wearing a black jacket with decorative buttons and a black t-shirt under it. Jungkook was thanking all the saints that the other was wearing an oversized coat over it...

He ran away with his gaze, pulling Taehyung to walk.

'If I will let you change... you will come up with something absolutely hazardous to me...' he mumbled under his nose.

Taehyung chuckled, squeezing Jungkook's fingers intertwined with his own.

'I love that you are not hiding how needy I make you feel...'

'Because you don't have the slightest idea how many times I actually do..' he mumbled to himself, rolling his eyes.

The smirk on Taehyung's lips was perfect proof he heard him tho...

They catch the train to Namsan. It was a bit crowded so they had to stand. Taehyung grabbed the handle above his head and wrapped his arm around Jungkook's waist to stabilize him.

The protective hold was enough to make Jungkook feel all warm and happy.

'We could take the car...' Taehyung said, when someone pushed Jungkook. He felt

Jungkook was being pressed more to him and changed his mind. 'Actually, like that is better...' he smiled.

Jungkook's arm embraced Taehyung's waist too.

'Yeah...' he smiled back sweetly. 'But I didn't want you to drive today... It's your gift, you should relax and not be tense while driving.'

Taehyung brushed his nose over Jungkook's.

It was endearing... he still remembered when he had to bend to hug him or catch his gaze. And now Jungkook was as tall as him and he had free access to his lips... and to look into his eyes... and it was enough to lift his own head a bit to kiss his forehead.

'So considerate...'

Yes... Jungkook was considerate, protective, more mentally - keeping Taehyung in balance - then physically. It was Taehyung who never got rid of his physical protectiveness towards the younger. He treated his body as Jungkook's shield, safe place and home.

'Now that I think about it...' Jungkook frowned and glared at Taehyung. 'Why am I the only one who gets needy, huh?! Shouldn't you be like... really, really horny?'

Taehyung laughed out loud.

'Just because I am not showing it, doesn't mean it is not happening...' he squeezed Jungkook's side, biting his own lips.

Jungkook rolled his eyes.

'Waiting for this legendary control of yours to vanish...'

'Have some mercy for our parents...' Taehyung teased him.

'Yeah, yeah...' Jungkook shook his head, and pulled Taehyung to the exit.

They took a cable car whisks and because it was already dark, they could see the beautiful panorama of the night city. Jungkook stood next to the window looking down and Taehyung back hugged him, putting his hand on the railing, securing him in the cage of his arms. He put his chin on Jungkook's shoulder.

'Do you think they will have a free table?' Taehyung asked. 'It's Valentine's after all...'

'I made a booking... Told you it's a gift for you...'

Taehyung was impressed. A slow smile appeared on his face.

'Booking? For dinner with your boyfriend? You know what it's called?' He brought his lips closer to Jungkook's ear. 'D.A.T.E.'

'S-shut up...' Jungkook looked down shyly. It was the main reason he hated this word... It was making him shy as fuck.

'More to it... it is a Valentine's Date...' Taehyung teased with his deep voice, next to Jungkook's ear.

'No. It is not.' Jungkook pouted. 'It's Anniversary...'

Taehyung smiled sweetly and whispered:

'I know, Koo...'

He pressed his cheek to Jungkook's cheek and looked at the city lights.

When they reached Namsan Tower they first visited the art gallery. Then they took photos and spent some time on viewing platforms, before going to the restaurant with french cuisine.

They were so into the delicious food they didn't talk much. They were enjoying the view of each other delighted faces and pouts while munching and praising the food.

When they ate the dinner and were sitting with their drinks looking through the window, Jungkook hesitantly reached into his pocket.

With a fast beating heart he slid the slim box through the table to Taehyung, looking down. Not able to lift his gaze.

Taehyung looked at the box and then at Jungkook.

And his gaze stayed on the shy face.

So beautiful...

He loved this guy so much, he got scared suddenly. His heart tried to leave his chest. It was almost painful...

'Open it...' Jungkook whispered pleadingly, when the silence was prolonged.

'You are more interesting to me...' Taehyung answered quietly.

Jungkook huffed and bravely looked at the older one.

'So you don't want it?' he asked cheekily.

'I haven't said that...' Taehyung smiled widely. He stroked Jungkook's palm on the table and reached to unwrap the box.

It was a jewelry box. He opened it and blinked.

On the soft pillow there were two silver, delicate necklaces with small blue stone, shaped in square.

'It's beautiful...' he whispered.

'You got us bracelets...' Jungkook shrugged looking down.

Taehyung smiled and instantly put the necklace on his neck. He stood up and went to Jungkook, stood behind him and fastened a second necklace on his neck.

He bend to Jungkook's ear and whispered:

'Next it should be rings then...'

Jungkook hid his face in his hands, embarrassed.

'Can you stop?' he whined.

Taehyung took his hand, pulling him up.

'Hey! I was 8 when I asked, when can I marry you!' he said, teasingly, while laughing.

'And what did they tell you?'

Taehyung smirked.

'I will tell you another time...'

'No fair!'

'I will take our coats...'

'Okay. I will go and pay then...' Jungkook nodded.

Waiting for their coats, Taehyung texted Yoohyeon. When Jungkook joined him, they put on their coats and Jungkook shifted to be on Taehyung's left.

He was always walking on his left side. To hold his hand without a glove.

They took a cab to the city, but in the middle of driving Taehyung asked the driver:

'Can you drop us here?'

Jungkook looked at him surprised, but he didn't oppose.

They got out of the car near the park. The snow was falling lightly.

'I have a need for a walk...' Taehyung explained and they walked slowly through the park where they played when they were children.

They had so many memories here, with Jimin and the rest.

They passed Jimin's house and decided together to send him the selfie they took on the viewing platform, absolutely sure he will tease the hell out of them tomorrow.

They turned their steps towards their home. They were in the small alley that was joining two streets when Taehyung stopped.

Jungkook took a few steps forward when he was pulled back by their joined hands. He turned to Taehyung.

'How did it go?' he asked and smiled. 'Oh, yeah...' he pulled Jungkook closer, lifted his arm around his own neck. '...like that...'

Jungkook's eyes widened, when his second arm was wrapped around Tae's neck too. He realized they were in the exact same place as three years ago...

Hundreds of kisses ago...

He relaxed in Taehyung's arms, when he felt the older one hug his waist.

'We practiced a lot...' he smiled.

'And we are so much better now...' Taehyung nodded. He brought his face closer to Jungkook and slid his nose through his cheek, tilting his head.

Jungkook closed his eyes.

'Ask me...' Taehyung whispered but there was more of plea in his voice than demand.

Jungkook didn't mind... At all... It was worth it...

'Kiss me, Taehyung...'

Taehyung joined their lips in a soft kiss that turned into a deep make out that made them warm inside falling snow.

Jungkook sighed softly inside Taehyung mouth, when their lips parted.

'If you ever stop kissing me like that... I will haunt you down, Kim Taehyung...' he whispered dreamily.

'You know it is enough to ask...' Taehyung smiled into his lips.

'Jerk...'

'You love this jerk...'

'I do...' Jungkook giggled.

Taehyung rocked him in his arms.

'I have a gift for you too... But it is at home... Should we get going?'

'What is it?' Jungkook's eyes shined.

'You will know when we reach...'

Jungkook nodded and pulled Taehyung to run.

'Hurry up then!'

Taehyung's laugh filled the night air.

'Which home?' Jungkook asked, when they reached their street.

'Yours.'

Jungkook entered the house with a bang still pulling Taehyung, just to see Minji, Hoseok, Namjoon and Jin surrounding the couch and awing loudly.

'What's going on?' he frowned.

Hoseok turned to him, smiling like the sun.

'You are here...'

Taehyung brough Jungkook closer, chasing the parents away. When they moved they showed Yoohyeon sitting on the couch.

Jungkook blinked, confused, when Yoohyeon smiled at him.

Taehyung let go of his hand and went to her. He crouched down next to the couch and moved a blanket on her lap.

Jungkook's eyes dropped there and his lips parted.

Taehyung stretched his hand to the little black ball of fur.

'No! Don't wake him up!' Jungkook protested, making a step forward.

Yoohyeon laughed.

'It's okay...' she said. 'He is a baby. He will go to sleep again in no time...'

She gently put the dog into Taehyung's arms.

The puppy opened his eyes lazily and licked his nose while yawning.

Taehyung turned to Jungkook.

'I saw how you played with Ana in Daejeon...Asked your parents and then Yoohyeon to contact Miss Rose. He couldn't be taken from his mom on Christmas yet, so... Happy Aniversary, Koo...'

Jungkook cooed at the puppy.

'Can I?' he asked, stretching his hands.

Taehyung nodded and placed the puppy in his arms. The dog started to sniff Jungkook's chest instantly when he pressed him gently.

'Aren't you cute...?' Jungkook awwed. 'Aren't you the cutest, little Bam?' he raised his eyes at Taehyung. 'Can we called him Bam?'

'It's your dog...'

'No. It's ours. Don't think I will look after him by myself...' Jungkook raised his eyebrow. 'We have to buy him a bed! And food! And toys! And...'

'Everything is in your room already...' Yoohyeon said. 'Tae asked aunt Rose to choose what would be the best...'

Jungkook looked at Taehyung with whipped eyes.

'You are absolutely the best...'

Taehyung blushed.

'I will get going then...' Yoohyeon said, standing up. 'I have a sleepover at Dami's... Bye guys! Bye auntie! Bye uncles!'

Jungkook smiled brightly at his parents and went upstairs, together with Taehyung, talking to the dog, who was looking at him with heart eyes.

Jin looking after them sighed heavily.

'When I was praying I didn't want to be a grandfather this fast... I didn't include dogs... I should... Right?'

'Totally.' Minji patted his back.

'You know they will be dropping him to us whenever they would be going out anywhere...' Hoseok laughed.

'I knoooowwww....' Jin whined, and hid his face in Namjoon's shoulder.

**July 2068 - Seoul**

Bam became a little gem of Kims and Jeons household. To everyone's surprise it was Taehyung who was the spoiling type of an owner. Jungkook was more strict. He got so into raising the pup that he read a lot of books about dog training. According to literature - dogs were more at ease when they knew their limits and boundaries. They had to know who was the one in control.

And indeed Bam was whipped for Jungkook almost as much as Jungkook was whipped for Taehyung...

Taehyung, noticing the naughty behavior of a dog around him and compared himself to Jungkook, finally agreed with him. And as much as he was soft to let the puppy sleep on the bed and share his food under the table, he also didn't like when Bam didn't listen to him during walks.

After five months Bam indeed was listening to both of them. They even start taking him to their power training at the Mountain House. He was becoming their little pup-warrior, running with them, sniffing out the hiding enemies, during war games and absolutely still and quiet when they were in their hideouts.

Taehyung and Jungkook were proud parents, showering their dog with a lot of love and playing.

The next beloved person of Bam was Hoseok and then Jimin, who were just spoiling him to the core, not minding Jungkook's ranting.

But it was good to have so many people willing to take care of the puppy. Jungkook started his college in a Filmmaking and Editing field, in the same Department as Taehyung who was studying Photography. They ended their spring semester with good grades.

They also were super happy Hoseok started his dance classes again so their dance group were united again.

Taehyung was going to start his summer job before next semester started and then he wanted to apply for an internship, so their schedules were, as always, busy...

(🎶Music tip: *Wave* by Ateez🎶)

But right now the vacation began and the group of friends were going to enjoy it. Last years were scary and tense, and they knew the situation calm for now could change any time, so they used the opportunity and asked their parents if they could go for a trip.

They agreed when everybody signed with their blood the agreement to look after Jungkook and Soobin - the only two people that were still underaged.

So Dami, Jimin and Yeonjun borrowed the cars from their parents. Packed tents, food in turistic fridges, sleeping bags, and more snacks and drinks, and of course - Bam, and drove towards Busan, wanting to visit the famous Haeundae Beach.

They connect their phones to talk with each other during the ride. They planned to stop for the night in Daejeon and brought gifts for Pink Alert.

They drive towards the sea early in the morning again.

Jungkook was sitting in the back with Bam, while Taehyung sat next to Jimin who was driving.

Dami, Yoohyeon, Yeonjun and Soobin were in the second car and Minho with Han in the third one.

They were stopping in random places on their way to take pictures, eat or visit some small, adorable towns. Make memories...

When they reached one of the tourists' villages by the sea. First thing they went to eat and walk around.

Taehyung was sitting with Minho and Dami by shades when he spotted Jimin, Jungkook and Yeonjun coming back from the shop.

His eyes got fixed on Jungkook, who was talking with Soobin...

In the sun... surrounded by a crowd of tourists... Taehyung could see only him.

He was still cute.

He was more than beautiful...

But he got this aura of mature hotness around him now.

Taehyung's self control was fading away... It was making him scared. As well as excited...

But the fear was there...

And Jungkook provoking him just by existing wasn't helping...

Jungkook's gaze found him and his eyes darkened in realization.

His awareness of Taehyung's thoughts... was what made him so dangerous...

He checked Taehyung out and walked to him.

He took the cup of coke from his hand and drank it, looking at Taehyung.

'Thirsty?' Taehyung asked, trying to sound normal.

'Mhmmm...' Jungkook leaned, putting his hand on Taehyung's chair. 'Very...' he whispered.

'Are we going?' Han asked, joining them. 'We should set up tents before it gets dark...'

Jungkook and Taehyung were looking at each other for a while more, before Jungkook straightened up and said: *Yeah.*

He took the leash from Dami and called:

'Come, Bam! You are going to play on the beach, boy!'

Bam happily jumped next to him, excited for a new adventure with his papa.

Yeonjun, Soobin, Dami, Yoohyeon, Minho and Han went after them.

Taehyung sighed. He was glad they would sleep in a tent with Jimin and Bam. Minsung and Yeonbin were in the second tent and girls had the third one.

Jimin looked at Taehyung with the corner of his eyes.

'Hard time?'

'You have no idea...'

Jimin rolled his eyes.

'Knowing you... you are chickening out again...'

'It's a bit more complicated than kisses, you know...' Taehyung said, looking at the ground.

'For sure it is... You are afraid you will hurt him... Fail... It won't be as good as you think... You won't make him feel good... and the list continut... Fucking scary. I get it...'

'How can I make it simple then?'

'You don't...' Jimin shrugged. 'You just go with the flow I guess... It doesn't look like Jungkook is bothered by it...'

'Honestly? I don't know how he is doing it... He just wants me... Nothing else matters...'

'So? Are you worried he will jump on you on 1st of September when the magic 18 will be crossed? I don't think something will change in him in a month... Don't fix the deadline, bro... It just stresses you out more...' Jimin patted Taehyung's back.

'Yeah... It sounds as if I don't want him... But... the case is different... I was waiting for him for so long... I am afraid that my control will just vanish one day and I will mess up everything for him...'

Jimin sighed.

'You are thinking too much. You are just provoking him to do more to destroy your control, you know... He is waiting for your move. Because he doesn't want to push you out of your comfort zone... So he provokes. You know it... But... better fix your mind Tae... Jungkook is Jungkook. The longer it takes... the more he will doubt you want him...'

Taehyung knew Jimin was right. He just felt so... unskilled. And soooo... on the verge.

'Come. We should join them...' he said, taking their bags.

They set up tents and picked the dry wood to settle the bonfire. Minho was playing on the guitar, while all of them were chatting and laughing, sitting on the sand.

Jimin was running with Bam, throwing him a stick to the sea. He ran to them, breathing heavily. He wiped his face with his t-shirt.

'The night is so warm!'

Dami gave him a cup with a drink.

'Drink and breath...'

'I'm trying...' he smiled.

Yoohyeon patted Minho's back and the melody he played changed. Yoohyeon started to sing walking to Dami:

*I will always remember*

*The day you kissed my lips*

*Light as a feather*

*And it went just like this*

Dami tapped their cups and while continued:

*No, it's never been better*

*Than the summer of 2002 (ooh)*

The rest started to clap to the rhythm, while Dami poked Jimin with her elbow, so he started to sing:

*Uh, we were only eleven*

*But acting like grown-ups*

*Like we are in the present*

He ran to Yeonjun and patted his arm, so the song went to him:

*Drinking from plastic cups*

*Singing, "Love is forever and ever"*

Yeonjun looked at Soobin, singing softly:

*Well, I guess that was true*

Soobin a bit embarrassed stood up and sung, pointing to Han, who joined him:

*Dancing on the hood in the middle of the woods*

*On an old Mustang, where we sang*

*Songs with all our childhood friends*

*And it went like this, say*

And all of them started to scream-singing loudly into the night, clapping and jumping:

*Oops, I got 99 problems singing bye, bye, bye*

*Hold up, if you wanna go and take a ride with me*

*Better hit me, baby, one more time, uh*

*Paint a picture for you and me*

*On the days when we were young, uh*

*Singing at the top of both our lungs*

In the meantime Yoohyeon pointed to Jungkook, who shook his head, but when she glared at him he just went with the flow:

*Now we're under the covers*

*Fast forward to eighteen*

He turned to Taehyung.

*We are more than lovers*

Taehyung smiled softly, raising his cup in a toast in his direction and continued:

*Yeah, we are all we need*

*When we're holding each other*

*I'm taken back to 2002 (ooh)*

*Yeah*

Han went to Minho and kissed his cheek when they sang the next part, before they all together till the end of the song started screaming their lungs out with the joyful chorus.

And the night continued with more songs, more jokes and laughs and photos...

They cleaned the beach and went into their tents direction while Taehyung took Bam for a walk. After a while Jungkook walked after them.

He found Taehyung sitting on the sand with Bam's head on his lap, and feet diving in the wet sand, while the waves were gently embracing them from time to time. He was looking at the moon.

Jungkook sat next to him.

'Am I pressuring you too much?' he asked quietly.

'You are like the Moon, Koo. You always were... So delicate... Gentle... But at the same time... So tempting you just can't help but look at it and want it... Taehyung said.

'So... you just stare at it because you can't help it?' Jungkook looked at the dark sea, bathed in the moonlight.

'No. I stare because I want to.' Taehyung put his cheek on his palm, tilting his head to look at Jungkook's profile. 'Because it's a need I don't want to fight with...'

'Yet you try to fight with it...' he sighed.

'You are not scared?' Taehyung asked gently.

Jungkook looked at him.

'I was never scared to be with you...'

Taehyung reached his hand and brushed bangs from Jungkook's forehead.

'You have so much trust in me, that I am afraid you won't stop me if something goes wrong...' he whispered earnestly.

Jungkook was looking at him for a moment, before turning to the sea with a smile, after making some mysterious decision.

'So will you take some more provoking, Kim?'

Taehyung smirked.

'For a while...'

Jungkook peeked at him with the corner of his eye.

'Is this a challenge?'

Taehyung teasing smile got wider:

'Maybe...'

'Jerk!' Jungkook threw himself on Taehyung, pushing him on the sand.

He bit his lips before kissing him, feeling Taehyung wrapping his arm around his waist.

But poor Bam hearing their giggles wanted to join the fun and excitedly started licking their cheeks and pushing his nose between their faces.

They laughed and Jungkook rolled out of Taehyung, spreading his arms on the sand, while Bam was absolutely into licking Taehyung's face.

Taehyung patted the puppy's head.

'It's okay... It's okay, Bam... We love you too...'

Two weeks after they came back from their vacation trip, Jimin was sitting in his room, texting with Suga. He finally convinced him to show him the new lyric and it was amazing!

So powerful! Strong! Honest!

He smiled seeing the text that he told him...

He especially loved one part:

*I don't give a shit I don't give a fuck*

*Like I always said hundreds of time every day, "Never mind me"*

*I can have a taste of failure and frustration and bow my head*

*We are still young and immature, don't even worry about it*

*Moss surely grows on a stone that doesn't roll*

*If you can't return, go straight through your mistakes and forget them all*

*Never mind*

*It's not easy but engrave it onto your chest*

*If you feel like you're going to crash then accelerate more, you idiot*

*Come on*

Jimin was reading it over and over again. He had to think about the title for the song, because Suga again asked him to name it...

Jimin agreed, but under one condition... He wanted to hear the music to it...

And he was sure he would get it...

He smirked, when he heard the knocking and let out:

'Come in...'

Jungkook stormed his room and dropped himself on Jimin's bed...

Jimin raised his eyebrow while drinking his coke from the can.

Bunny was pouting hard... And he could guess that the tiger was having fun seeing how much he was trying to test Taehyung's limits...

Jungkook was looking at the ceiling, sulking.

He was adorable and cute so his next words made Jimin choke on his coke.

'I want him to fuck me...'

Jimin gulped, wiped his mouth, and took a deep breath...

After the first shock, he jumped on Jungkook.

'That's my boy!!!!' he praised him.

Jungkook frowned and moved him away with his finger.

'No offense, but I'm Taehyung's boy, Jimin-ssi...'

'I swear I was waiting for this moment for my whole lifetime... This is my life's calling! Taehyung was trying so hard to keep your innocence away from me and by doing so he pushed you right inside my waiting hands!' he giggled devilishly.

Jungkook moved away, looking at him like he was mentally unstable.

'Now I'm scared...'

'No, no no... no need to...' Jimin grunted. 'I was just excited... So, it's not like Taehyung doesn't want you, you know?'

Jungkook looked at him reluctantly.

'It's just that... he was programmed from earliest childhood to protect you. Even from himself. It's hard for him to snap out of it...'

'He better do it because he is teasing me whenever he can and he is just walking away, leaving me with blue balls...' Jungkook said darkly.

'Oh, we will make him snap out of it...' Jimin smiled with a mischievous grin. 'And he will snap out of it hard...'

**Middle of August 2068 - Seoul**

Taehyung liked his summer job as the assistant in the photography studio. He enjoyed helping with family photo sessions, wedding sessions, children sessions and so on. People were so happy commemorating memories like that.

Jimin was helping Hoseok in his dance studio for summer classes for children.

And Jungkook had to make his summer project for next semester.

So they were pretty busy but it didn't change the fact that the power training and dance classes were obligatory.

Especially now, when they had the chance to perform as dancers for one of the celebrities who wanted Hoseok's studio dancers as backup.

So Hobi was merciless with their practices. Each dancer of their group had to prepare and perform a choreography.

Taehyung was late after work, and he already performed his choreography with a lot of praise from his teacher, but well...

Hoseok was absolutely terrifying when it was coming to dancing and their classes. And it was Jungkook's and Jimin's performance today!

He slid inside the studio breathing heavily, happy Hoseok was just setting the music for each of the performances that day. He sat on the floor next to Minho, pressing his back to the wall.

Jimin performed a beautiful contemporary choreography that left Hoseok speechless. He just walked to him and kissed his forehead.

'You are amazing...' he said seriously.

Jimin blushed and nodded as thank you.

'Jungkook! You are next! Your choice of music... surprised me not gonna lie...' Hoseok shook his head with a smile. We will see how it will go...'

Taehyung raised his eyebrow... Jungkook was wearing black an elegant jacket and white shirt... The black pants were tightly embracing his thighs. Even his boots were elegant... It wasn't his style...

He looked nervous, when Jimin patted his back encouragingly, before sitting on the other side of the studio next to Yoohyeon. He tilted his head to look at Taehyung and sent him a smirk.

It made something cold slide to Taehyung's stomach.

What was going on?

'Ready?' Hoseok asked, when Jungkook stood in the middle of the room.

Jungkook gulped, looking at the floor. Then he raised his eyes at Taehyung slowly and answered...

'Yeah...'

From the moment the *Coming of Age* started to play... Taehyung was a goner...

(I will just kindly drop this here...

https://youtu.be/TSBS1UwBB9I

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TSBS1UwBB9I

(And suddenly it's hot...)

For Taehyung...

It was 2 minutes of hell... He was literally eaten up by hell's flames inside him.

Those minutes changed into an hour of hell, while the classes continued and Jungkook was absolutely avoiding to look at him or be near him...

But even this hour passed...

So Jungkook for the first time in his life was glad he was on cleaning duty this evening.

Yes! He wanted to provoke Taehyung, but not make him fucking furious!

And Taehyung's eyes were following him like a prey he wanted to kill!

He knew it was a bad idea! He fucking knew it! It made Taehyung jealous and dangerous, not horny! He stormed out of the studio as soon as Hoseok said 'bye!'.

*Uuughh! I shouldn't have listened to Jiminie!* - Jungkook groaned in his mind.

Jungkook sadly lumbered back to his room. He looked at Bam who was lying on the couch keeping his head on his mom's lap and didn't even say a word about spoiling him like that...

He opened the doors, sighing heavily.

He should go to Taehyung, admitt that he is a stupid brat and say sorry...

He planned on taking the shower and did exactly that, when his shoulders were grabbed and he was thrown on the bed.

His eyes widened when Taehyung sat on him, pressing his hands above his head.

'What. The. Fuck. Was. That.'

---

See you next Sunday! 🫘🫘 🤜🤚

BlairWitch91😎

PS: The song they sung on the beach is "2002" by Anne-Marie, written by Ed Sheeran :D

## Chapter 40: Coming of Age - Heat of Hearts

'What the fuck was that!?'

Taehyung's hands were squeezing Jungkook's wrists. He brought his face closer to Jungkook's, who gulped hard.

'Answer me! Want everybody to see you like that?! Drool over you?!'

Jungkook closed his eyes and shook his head slowly.

'Then what?! What do you want from me!? Fuck you in the room full fo people?! Do you want it to be like that?!'

Jungkook's lips trembled.

'No...' he whispered.

'I'm fucking frustrated all the time! I'm holding up with the last shreds of will to not distance myself from you or to not make a mistake in the heat of a moment, because you are too much to handle...'

Jungkook opened his eyes.

'Too much to handle?' he asked quietly. 'I understand... I'm sorry...' he whispered, turning his head to the side.

Taehyung pressed his forehead to Jungkook's temple.

'I didn't mean it like that...'

'No, Tae...'Jungkook whispered. 'I am really sorry... I felt... a bit of excitement and challenge... I thought if... I dare you... You will see that... you don't have to be so careful...'

His lips twisted in a bitter smile.

'You are again restraining yourself... hurting yourself... because of me... And I don't know how to show you that you don't have to...'

The grip around Jungkook's wrists softened. Taehyung cuddled his face into Jungkook's hair.

'The recent dreams... are so full of warmth... fire... longing... Connection.'

They were silence for a long time until Jungkook choked out:

'Sometimes I feel so old, Tae... I feel my soul is calling you... And you are not replying...'

Taehyung lifted his head to look at Jungkook's profile, while the other had still closed eyes. His fingers slid through Jungkook's forearm and arm gently, when he reached his chin and delicately made him turn his head. He caressed his cheek and eyelids, till Jungkook looked at him.

'I didn't mean to make you mad...' Jungkook said quietly. 'The idea... was to provoke you and I am sorry for that... But when I started to dance, and you were there, looking at me... I just hoped... you will see I am not a kid anymore...'

'We both are pretty stupid I guess...' Taehyung whispered. His mouth was rubbing the corner of Jungkook's lips when he spoke.

Taehyung was so focused on Jungkook's body. On the physical aspects of them being close...that he overlooked... what was hidden behind...

And Jungkook still... didn't get rid of those insecurities and complexes of the younger one...

'Baby... you are a brat...' Taehyung said mercilessly. 'But definitely I don't see you as a kid.'

He smiled, pecked Jungkook's lips and rolled out of him to lay next.

'Fucking shit! You really crossed the line this time!' he exhaled.

A slow smile appeared on Jungkook's lips.

'Was I hot?'

'Don't even go there...' Taehyung whined, feeling his insides twisted. He threw his arm over his eyes.

'You liked it?'

'Fuck! Shut up! I don't want to recollect it!'

'I honestly didn't think it would affect you this much...' Jungkook said with a hint of amusement.

'Are you fucking kidding me?! You were moving like... Ugh! It was hot, okay?! Illegally, insanely hot! I'm still fucking mad that anybody else saw you!'

'You would prefer a private performance?' Jungkook teased him.

Taehyung groaned.

'I. Need. A. Shower.' he stated miserably.

Jungkook for a moment was looking at the ceiling. He knew what "shower" meant in their little couple's world. He gulped and blushed when he had a hot vision of wet Taehyung.

And well... he caused this right...?

With a bit of hesitation Jungkook shuffled and cuddled to Taehyung's side. He hid his face in Taehyung's arm.

'No. You don't. You need something more...' he mumbled.

Jungkook was fucking nervouse... he was freaking out actually... It was always Taehyung who led him.

So when he put his hand on Taehyung's stomach, it was shivering slightly.

He nuzzled his face into Taehyung's collarbone. His fingers stroked the fabric of the other's t-shirt. He could feel how tense they were.

'Can I?' Jungkook whispered.

He could see how rapidly Taehyung's Adam's apple moved, when he gulped hard.

Jungkook kissed his collarbone.

'Can I?' he repeated softly, moving his hand slowly.

Lower. To the hem of Taehyung's pants.

Taehyung closed his eyes. And softly breathed out:

'Yeah...'

Jungkook's fingers touched the button of the jeans.

'But lock the doors...' Taehyung whispered weakly.

Jungkook looked at him, but Taehyung still had his arm over his eyes. He smiled tenderly, cupped Taehyung's cheek and leaned to kiss him.

Taehyung felt his lips, and opened his mouth, he moved his hand to embraced Junkook's nape and pressed him closer.

The soft kiss changed to a hungry and aggressive one, till Taehyung harshly parted

their lips, breathing heavily.

'Doors. Fast.'

Jungkook looked him deep in the eyes. Taehyung raised his eyebrow in return.

Jungkook smirked and jumped from the bed to lock the doors.

Taehyung moved a bit to the middle of the bed and lifted himself on his elbow to look at Jungkook.

His eyes were traveling though Taehyung's body greedily.

'You are so beautiful, Taehyung...' Jungkook whispered, slowly walking to the bed. 'Sometimes I wonder... are you even real...'

'You want to melt me or seduce me?' Taehyung asked huskily..

'Why not both?' Jungkook said, putting his knee on the edge of the bed.

Taehyung licked his lips, when Jungkook slowly climbed on the bed and sat on his thighs.

The sudden nervousness that clouded Jungkook's mind after the little break made his hands shiver. He desperately wanted to ask: what now?

But it was his idea, right?

He fixed his eyes on Taehyung's chest.

'C-close your eyes?' Jungkook said.

'Why?' Taehyung gulped nervously.

'Because I'm embarrassed when you look at me...' Kook whined.

'Well, I am freaking nervous right now and looking at you is calming me down...'

Jungkook hesitantly touched Taehyung's t-shirt...

'Fuck... it's harder then I thought...' Jungkook mumbled, his fingers were restlessly kneading and folding the fabric of the shirt.

Taehyung's heart was beating like crazy. Jungkook's hands and his thighs were absolutely too close to his crotch for his sanity sake... But he still tried...

'Y-you don't have to...'

'But I want to!' Jungkook stammered out stressed. 'J-just don't k-know h-how... or what you would l-like...'

The quieter his voice was, the more visible redness was covering his cheeks.

'Welcome to my mind's daily discussion...' Taehyung said ironically.

'It sucks here!' Jungkook whined.

'No shit Sherlock...'

The sarcastic answer made them glare at each other, before the silliness of the whole situation came to them and they both started to giggle quietly, then louder, before they couldn't stop their laughs anymore.

Jungkook fell on Taehyung, hiding his face in the other's chest.

'It's so stupid... so stupid...' he giggled. 'Five minutes earlier it was easier...' he hit Taehyung's side. 'If you wouldn't stop me, you would already feel really good!'

'Sorry I didn't want your mom to see my dick in your hand...' Taehyung said teasingly.

'Better mom than dad...She would ranaway, he would take a photo...' Jungkook chuckled into Taehyung's collarbone.

The giggles of both of them made their bodies rub on each other. The soft movement between their abdomens, bringing back the reality of the situation. The cheerfulness died down...

Jungkook gulped feeling Taehyung's hardness pressing to his stomach. The tension came back to his body with redoubled strength. He breathed out softly and turned his head to press his lips lightly to Taehyung's chest. He moved up, kissing his collarbone... he was so nervous he out of nowhere started to hum a song quietly into Taehyung skin:

'*He's so lovely...*' The movement of his hips made Taehyung huffed involuntarily. *'Goddamn pretty...*' He kissed Taehyung's jaw. *'People say...*' Jungkook's lips hung over the other's lips when he brushed over them, while saying singingly: *he's quite the lover...*'

He licked Taehyung's lower lip, making him let out a soft sigh that he swallowed, joining their lips.

The kiss was what was needed for them to stop thinking. To forget about the embarrassment, stress and hesitation.

To feel the heat in their veins. And the need to touch...

To feel the warm skin under their fingertips...

Jungkook's hand slowly slid under Taehyung's shirt and stroked the soft skin around his navel.

The hot and messy kiss made them a bit dizzy and it also brought relief. It was something they knew...

The warmth, the comfort and excitement their joined lips were bringing.

Taehyung slowly lifted himself, not stopping the kiss.

Jungkook grabbed the hem of his t-shirt and pulled up. Taehyung raised his hands up so he could take it off.

Jungkook, mesmerized, put his hand on his shoulders and slid them down, caressing the skiing of Taheyung's arms and forearms. His fingers were slowly memorizing the map of Taehyung's chest and gently shaped muscles that held so much inner strength.

Taehyung opened Jungkook's white shirt that he wore while performing, button after button. He spread the fabric and greedily looked at the mouth watering view of Jungkook's milky skin tightly embracing his six pack.

His arms wrapped around the other's waist, when he again pulled him to a deep, messy kiss. He bit Jungkook's lips hard when he felt the hand slipping down his belly between his thighs.

The gentle, shy fingers rubbing the bulge through the jeans was enough to send shivers through his spine and electrified hairs all over his body.

He sucked on the lips he was biting, when Jungkook unbuttoned his jeans. He slid his tongue inside Jungkook's mouth to take his mind away from the nervous feeling that the fingers on his zipper caused.

Jungkook had never thought that a simple thing like unzipping pants can be so complicated... Well in fact it was when the fabric stretched to its limit...

He stopped the kiss and looked down embarrassed, whispering:

'Sorry...'

'It's okay...' Taehyung breathed out calmingly, pressing his forehead to Jungkook's temple. 'J-just pull it...'

Jungkook gulped and looked at his fingers. He had to use both hands to finally open the annoyingly resisting zipper.

Taehyung's fingers were caressing his spine up and down. The skinship was calming him down. Touching Jungkook was calming him down the same way it was making him hot all over.

Jungkook feeled the shape of Taehyung's hard member and the wave of heat hit him. He pulled down Taehyung's underwear, hearing near his ear like the other held his breath.

He turned his head and Taehyung instantly kissed him.

Jungkook wrapped his fingers around the hard and hot flesh and they both shivered. He moved it slowly up and down...

Taehyung's chest moved from a restrained moan and heavy breath.

The Older pressed his lips to Jungkook's neck and started to suck there hard.

'What...?' Jungkook choked out, moving his hand slowly.

'D-do what you l-like...' Taehyung whimpered, brushing his lips over Jungkook's skin.

He felt Jungkook making circles over the tip of his dick and moan.

'Good?'

'Yeah...'

Jungkook's touch felt absolutely different then his own. Taehyung was on the edge just with all the tension and soft, slow stroking.

Jungkook was... amazed. By the shape, softness of the skin and the hardness of his boyfriend's member. The feeling of twitching in his hand. Taehyung's heavy and fast breathing on his neck... The quiet deep sounds full of need and pleasure...

He felt his own pants were extremely tight right now... And Taehyung's hands that fell to his ass and squeezed it didn't help him to control... He brushed his hand over the tip again feeling it got wet from precum. The friction became smooth and he couldn't help to speed up the rhythm.

'F-fuck... Koo...' Taehyung choked out, involuntarily moving his hips up.

'Y-you don't have to h-hold back...' Jungkook whispered.

Taehyung wanted something more... He needed something more, seeing Jungkook so absolutely hot. His hand reached into Jungkook's tight pants and opened them fast, freeing his erection.

'You think I won't notice?' He asked, embracing Jungkook's member with his long fingers.

'Tae...!' Jungkook moaned, throwing his head back.

Taehyung's other arm brought Jungkook's body closer, while he nibbled on his neck. He felt the knot tightening inside his abdomen and made harsh, slow moves with his hand. His thumb was stroking the slit, making Jungkook tremble.

He felt Jungkook's grip on his dick become stronger and faster. It pushed him unexpectedly over the edge. He moaned, surprised, while his thighs were trembling. The shots of cum painted his stomach and Jungkook's hand.

He tightly shut his eyes and bit the skin under Jungkook's ear. He felt the moment the other held his breath for a long time, before Taehyung's next stroke, squeezed out a long moan from his throat, together with his orgasm.

They were moving their hips lightly in each other's hands, breathing heavily, before Taehyung's body gave up and he laid on the sheets, pressing Jungkook to his chest. He hugged him while Jungkook let go of his dick and stroked his side.

Jungkook cuddled his cheek to Taehyung's chest.

They were sleepy... relaxed... dizzy...

And absolutely curious for more.

'Look at me...' Taehyung whispered.

'No.' Jungkook hid his face into Taehyung's skin. 'I'm shy...' he mumbled.

*Awwwww...* Taehyung squealed inside. He caressed his baby's back calmingly and said:

'You weren't shy doing hip thrust during the dance tho...'

Jungkook instantly lifted his face to glare at him with a red cheeks.

Taehyung was smiling at him gently.

'I was focused only on physical aspects...' he said. 'And you were thinking about everything beside them... Maybe we will just meet in the middle?'

'Yeah... I should think about that too... You shouldn't be the only one feeling responsible...'

Jungkook shuffled and kissed him. Taehyung answered with a soft kiss.

'I love you...' he whispered, when their noses brushed.

'I love you too, Taehyung...'

They were in a sleepy daze for a moment, before Taehyung moved lightly.

'Come, baby... we have to clean, wash ourselves and let Bam in, or he will sulk tomorrow...'

'Mhmmm...' Jungkook mumbled sleepily, rolling off Taehyung and pressing his face to the blanket.

Taehyung sat and looked at him. He slapped his ass.

'Get up...'

Jungkook with a heavy sigh turned on his back, with a huge pout on his face. But the relaxed tiredness didn't stop him from biting his lips, seeing Taehyung zipping his jeans.

'Don't look at me like that...' Taehyung warned him.

'B-but we just...' Jungkook stuttered.

'Yeah... and we are teenagers in heat...' Taehyung put his hand on Jungkook's thigh and slid it up. Jungkook felt the known heat building again in his stomach and involuntarily lifted his hips up. 'See... it can happen fast...' Taehyung smirked. 'So, it's dangerous to look at me like that...'

He buttoned Jungkook's pants and straightened up.

'Go take a shower... I will clean...'

Jungkooks smiled.

'Husband material...'

Taehyung blushed.

Jungkook got up off the bed and pecked his lips, before looking him in the eyes.

'Don't stress yourself anymore, Angel. I understand your pace...'

'Husband material...' Taehyung mumbled, smirking.

Jungkook blushed, turned on his heel and disappeared in the bathroom, without a word.

Taehyung looked at the bed... they crossed the first thin line of intimate touch. It relaxed him... He felt excited and more confident... Just like after the first kiss...

He closed his eyes recollecting Jungkook's voice and touch, and his soft skin under his fingers...

'Fuck...' he mumbled under his nose. He could already tell that his pace - changed.

Few days later Jin walked out of the clinic he was working in and blinked in surprise seeing Jungkook leaning on his car. He had sunglasses and was holding Bam on the leash.

Bam was really well trained even being a young puppy. He was sitting calmly next to Jungkook's leg, absolutely unbothered by people walking by or other dogs passing him on the sidewalk. When the little aggressive yorkshire terrier started loudly barking at Bam, Bam only glared at him bored and turned his head to Jin. He waved his tail happily.

'How is my favorite boy?' Jin asked, crouching next to Bam to pet him and scratch him behind his ears. Jin raised his eyes at Jungkook. 'What's up, Kookie?'

'Can we take a walk?' Jungkook asked.

Jin could feel his nervousness. There was something he wanted to talk about apparently...

'Convince me...' Jin said, jokingly.

'I will treat you with ice cream?'

'Food bribe? You know me well...' Jin smiled. 'Double salted caramel with whipped cream...'

'Shouldn't you look after your blood sugar?' Jungkook grinned.

'If this is an indirect insult about my age, that I am forever young and handsome. Like a vampire. Remember that, brat...' Jin squinted his eyes.

'Sure. Double salted caramel ice cream with whipped cream then...' Jungkook giggled, when they started to walk.

Jin was working near the city center so they had plenty of cafes and resting areas on their way to the nearest park. When Jungkook already treated Jin with his order, Jin nudged him with his arm.

'You walked here?'

'Nah, we took the bus. Bam likes to ride... He goes crazy excited seeing Taehyung by the wheel...'

Jin grunted, hiding his grinning face behind the ice cream cone, when he thought Jungkook was practically drooling when he was seeing Taehyung in the driver's seat...

Jin could guess it wasn't about the view... It was about Taehyung's confidence while controlling the car.

They went inside the park and found a bench a little bit further from the main paths, where Jungkook released Bam from the leash.

Jin sat on the bench, praising and melting over his delicious ice creams while Bam already found a perfect stick and came to Jungkook with it.

Jungkook threw it far away.

'Soooo? What is so important that it couldn't wait till I come back from work?' Jin asked.

'It can wait...' Jungkook shrugged, observing Bam making friends with some oldie labrador.

'Let me rephrase the question then... What is so important that you didn't want anybody else to hear it?' Jin asked gently.

A slight blush covered Jungkook's cheeks. He was glad he wore sunglasses that could hide his gaze from Jin's eyes.

'The Talk. The scary, embarrassing one...' Jungkook mumbled.

'Oh...' Jin forgot about his ice creams and froze a bit, instantly understanding what

Jungkook meant. He gulped, cleared his throat and said: 'Don't you prefere talk with your dad or mom?'

Jungkook shook his head and whistled on his fingers. Bam jerked his head up and ran to him instantly.

'Why? Jin asked, making Jungkook look at him. Don't get me wrong...' Jin casually gets back to his ice cream. 'I'm honored. Just surprised... And well, I'm curious why I am better than Hobi, Minji and Joon...' he grinned.

Jungkook sat on the bench next to Jin and pet Bam's head, thinking.

'First, because you are a doctor. Second, because you are on the receiving end... Well, that's what I thought. Sorry, if I assumed it wrong uncle...' Jungkook whispered, avoiding Jin's eyes, absolutely focussing on stroking Bam's fur.

Jin smiled gently. What a gentle way to put it... He could tell Jungkook was so stressed and embarrassed. He tried to play it cool, but the nervous tapping of his leg and the desperate moves of his hands through the puppy's head were betraying him.

'You are not wrong...' Jin ruffled his hair calmingly. 'But the question is... do you want to know how to treat someone on the receiving end or how to be on the receiving end?'

'The second.' Jungkook said simply.

'You are quite sure...'

'I am... is it strange?'

'Not really... Just from looking how you both are possessive and protective of each other I would say you would switch...'

Jungkook shook his head.

'I don't want to.'

'Okay...' Jin nodded. 'Can I ask why?'

'In the pasts... it was diverse... Sometimes it was me. Sometimes it was him... Sometimes we switch... In my case...' Jungkook took off his glasses and bravely looked at Jin. 'It's the case of feeling safe... When I am unsealed... When I feel this whole, immeasurable power... I feel the weight of it. The responsibility... I have to have control over it... Of everything that can and cannot happen... I have to control... even friends, just to make sure they will be safe. But when I am with Taehyung... I can just let go. I can give all the control to him. I don't have to

think... I know he will take care of everything... He will take care of me. I just want to be absolutely his.' Jungkook gulped. 'Does it make sense?'

Jin nodded, smiling lightly. He didn't expect such a mature answer. But as the talk was serious, he took it seriously, brushing off the thought about talking with his little one. He was talking with another man right now.

'I guess Taehyung has the reverse needs then... He wants to take this control for you. He always wanted to secure you in every meaning of this word. So yes, it makes sense... But it's not the thing you want to ask about...'

'I want to make it easier for him... He is so stressed about it... And I really... didn't think from his perspective till now...'

Jin brought his doctor mode to the surface.

'Well... I guess understanding the basics will not only make you more confident but also him.'

'I don't need to know the process...' Jungkook scrunched his nose. 'I know what it looks like...'

'Then ask what you want to know...'

'Hygiene. Safety...'

'In case of safety... We can check your conditions. I will take blood samples and check both of you with my power. I don't think anything is wrong, especially since Interdependants are immune to most of diseases, but it's good to check, especially...' Jin looked at Jungkook with the corner of his eyes. '...when you are not using condoms...'

Jungkook blushed. Yes. He didn't want that...

But Jin's simple, out of emotion, almost medical language calmed down the embarrassment a bit. So he nodded.

'Take notes, boy... So about hygiene and cleaning yourself... There are special devices that you can use under shower...'

Jin talked steadily and simply, unlightening Jungkook about all the down to earth aspects of two man having sex.

'Keeping up?' Jin patted Jungkook's back.

The boy had his face in his hands. But he was listening and asking questions if something was not clear to him.

Jungkook nodded without a word.

'Good. You can also prepare yourself for the big day... it won't be so shocking later...'

'I don't wanna...' Jungkook mumbled. He was still absolutely sure he preferred Taehyung's touch. Even if preparing himself earlier would make it easier...

'Okay... Wanna hug?'

'Not yet...' Jungkook whined.

Jin giggled. Yes definitely he needed time to process now.

'I will order everything you need. I will address the package in your name...'

'Thank you, uncle.'

'Well I'm glad you decided to talk. Still I will stay in blissful denial you are going to do this soon... Don't you dare to break my innocent bubble!' Jin chuckled, standing up. As soon as the embarrassing talk ended he switched to being a cheerful, teasing father, instead of guide and doctor.

Jungkook took a deep breath and let go of the air, brushing his bangs back.

'I will come in the evening when Joonie comes back from work, to check on you. I will check Taehyung too. Should this stay between us?'

'He will get to know either from you or me. I can't keep secrets from him...' Jungkook smiled a bit crookedly. 'He can read me too well... And we shared a lot of embarrassment together already. Next one in the collection won't kill us...'

Jungkook put the leash on Bam and stood up, while Jin was observing him.

'You are pretty calm... Is it a pose? Teenagers normally panic and hide anything that is embarrassing...'

'Embarrassment doesn't matter. It comes and goes. I want what is behind it...' Jungkook said quietly.

'Your heart and soul was waiting quite the time for your bodies to be ready I guess...' Jin embraced Jungkook's shoulders with his arm, while they started to walk back.

'We had never thanked you all...' Jungkook said quietly. 'For working hard to understand us... For allowing us to be who we are...'

'It was a challenge.' Jin admitted. 'But also a never ending journey that amazed us... In the end we just wanted you to be happy.'

'Well... thank you for that...'

'You're welcome...' Jin kissed Jungkook's temple, comfortingly rubbing his arm.

They were almost next to the car when Jungkook noticed the grin on Jin's face.

'What?' he asked.

'Knowing you both have a similar mind process... Taehyung will, or already did, corner Namjoon... And I can't wait to hear this story...'

Taehyung was mentally tired... He just wanted a simple confirmation about the thing he read. He actually got more...

It calmed him down. But even his father's academic talk while both of them were hardly running from each other's gazes, couldn't stop the feeling of embarrassment and tiredness.

So he walked out of his father's office quite relieved.

The most important thing he heard, that actually any website could give him was his appa's telling him at the end:

'The worst thing you can do... is hesitate... The pain is normal. But if you will try again and again and will back away each time because you will see him in pain... it will be just worse. The pain will fade away. And it will be just the two of you after...'

He was thinking about it with his face hidden inside his pillow, when Jin called him downstairs.

Taehyung went to the kitchen and blinked surprised, seeing the bandage in Jin's hands and his medical bag.

'Sit.' Jin ordered.

Taehyung took the chair, asking:

'What's going on?'

The bandages wrapped around his ankles, wrists and head.

'I'm checking you up...' Jin informed him. 'I already checked Jungkook. He is okay.' Jin focused for a moment and took the bandage away. 'You are fine too.'

'Was he sick?' Taehyung asked, worried, seeing Jin taking out the syringe. He tied a rubber around Taehyung's arm.

'No. He said it will calm you both down, knowing everything is okay... I will take the blood samples and give you results in a few days.' He took the blood and hid the samples in the container, before turning to Taehyung with a smile. 'I had a talk with Jungkook. Did you talk with your father?'

Taehyung blushed.

'We... had an academic discussion...'

'Mhmmmm...' Jin raised his eyebrow knowingly. 'I guess the same I had with Kookie...' he patted Taehyung's arm. 'You are free to go and I am going to watch the photos of my babies being in diapers, drink wine and cry...'

'Dad...'

Jin raised his hand up.

'I don't want any more serious talks today... Go, torture Hoseok or Minji!'

Taehyung laughed.

'What about Disney Movie? I can call Koo...'

Jin raised his eyebrow.

'But I'm choosing...'

'Just not Snow White please...' Taehyung whined.

'Why does nobody appreciate the mirrors in this household!' Jin huffed, shaking his head.

**1st of September 2068 - Seoul**

Jungkook's birthday party was only for family and close friends. He preferred it that way.

He enjoyed feeding Taehyung with a cake.

Taking a lot of photos with all his friends and making recordings.

It was a chill and relaxed time. He was sitting on the couch next to Taehyung, who was stroking the inner of his thigh.

Namjoon asked him something, and Jungkook had a hard time getting what was that. He was saved by Han throwing the cake in Minho's face, laughing like a maniac.

Minho took his revenge by taking another piece and painting his face with it.

They haven't noticed Jin standing behind them with a mop in his hand. He gave it to them without a word.

Dami brought champagne, poured a half glass of it and gave it to Jungkook.

'Drink.'

Jungkook looked at the glass and sparkling liquid inside it. He tasted it hesitantly. He glanced at Taehyung, who smiled.

'Drink up!'

Jungkook drank to the bottom and his face twisted.

'Not as good as I thought...'

'Ungrateful brat... I brought the best one!' Hoseok laughed.

Taehyung stretched his hand to the table and took a strawberry. He fed it to Jungkook.

'And now?'

Jungkook munched it slowly, raising his eyebrow under Taehyung's gaze, fixed on his lips. He licked them, slowly.

'Better...' he admitted.

Taehyung leaned to his ear.

'But you already know the best way?' he whispered, squeezing Jungkook's thigh.

'Precisely...' Jungkook muttered lightly, only for him to hear.

'Stop being all horny!' Dami smacked Jungkook's head. 'We are still here!'

'So maybe you should go?' Jungkook smirked.

'How dare you brat!' Dami gasped.

Yoohyeon hugged Jungkook, leaning through the couch and kissed his cheek.

'But it's his birthday so we will forgive him, my lady...' she winked at Dami.

Dami squinted his eyes, looking at Jungkook's self-satisfied expression.

'Fine.' she pouted and squeezed herself next to him on the couch.

'Uncle, uncle, uncle!!' Jimin ran excitedly to the Hobi. 'Why are we not dancing?'

'Good question, Chim! All of them are too lazy I guess...'

'Excuse me!?' Yeonjun stood up. 'I can dance!'

'ME TOO!!' Han screamed from the kitchen.

They danced a lot with each other. But Jungkook mostly remembered the moment when it was already dark and he and Taehyung were on the terrace. Embraced and slowly rocking to the melody.

'How are you feeling, being 18?' Taehyung asked.

'The same as yesterday... How do you feel about me being 18?' Jungkook asked in return.

Taehyung kissed his nose and smiled.

'The same as yesterday...'

Taehyung's hands stroked Jungkook's back.

'My parents are going away for the weekend for my appa's birthday...' Taehyung whispered hesitantly.

Jungkook pressed his face to Taehyung's neck. He felt the thrilling nervousness in his stomach. He gulped and simply said:

'I will come to you...'

---

How do you feel about this chapter?

Just a little bit more... Calm down.

BlairWitch91🤍🤍

# ***RSF Guide***

**WARNING!**

**!!!! Don't read this quide unless you read all the chapters between 1-40. Spoilers includes the previous chapters. No future spoilers... !!!!**

**The guide contains in order:**

1. Basic info of characters - list

2. Basic info about *Eadar-eisimeileach*

3. List of Holders with known sacred treasures and powers

4. List of Sealers with known powers

5. Organizations and Units

5a. Red Alert Members

5b. Red String Members with assumptions

5c. Pink Alert Members

5d. ICI, MOI, ISA and 3EO members

6. Details of characters - friends, family, look, age, power

7. Taekook known past lives

**LIST OF CHARACTERS - BASIC INFO**

**Characters under 25**

**Characters over 25**

***Eadar-eisimeileach - BASIC INFO***

*Eadar-eisimeileach* in old scottish gaelic language mean INTERDEPENDENT.

INTERDEPENDENT meaning: dependent upon one another / mutually dependent / if two or more things are depending on each other

*Eadar-eisimeileach* pronounciation:

eadar - ***ediaer*** *eisimeileach* - ***iseamealix***

Characteristics of Interdeprendents:

They exist in pairs of two soulmates. They are divided into Holders and Sealers.

**Holders** are like keys. They have marks on the back of their palms (left or right). They can unseal their soulmates and **hold** the Sacred Treasures that is sealed in their soulmates' souls. Sacred Treasure has the same power like the power of the Sealer.

**Sealers** are like locks. They have marks on their chests, over the heart. They are **sealing** the Sacred Treasured that their soulmate can realease. Sacred Treasures work in two ways. They block the power of a Sealer till the moment of unsealing. After the unsealing they inherit the power of a Sealer and Sealers and Holders can use their power.

Interdependants are absolutely normal expect the connection with their soulmates and their power after unsealing. They also live longer to around 110 years and not getting old as fast. After they hit 25 their aging process is slowed down, so they usually look about 20 years younger than they actually are. If someone is 50 she or he looks like 30 and so on. Their immunity is also much strong. They don't get sick or can fastly recover.

All Interdependants are pansexual (Pansexuality is sexual, romantic, or emotional attraction towards people regardless of their sex or gender identity. Pansexual people may refer to themselves as gender-blind, asserting that gender and sex are not determining factors in their romantic or sexual attraction to others. ). They are not hetero- or homo- sexual. Their sexuality is connected to their soulmates. You can call them soulmate-sexual. Until they meet them they are still attracted to both genders.

Woman x woman and Man x Man couples can have children as the action is taking place in the future from 2050.

In lesbian relationship one of the wives is going through in vitro. The way of labor is her choice.

In gay relationship its more complicated. One of husbands have to go through medical requirements to insert inside his belly the divice that works like incubator,

which replaces the uterus, through the whole pregnancy so the fetus can rise after in vitro. And the then its needed to go through c-section. Its the procedure not just for Interdependants but all people as its the science way to rise the fertility after the pandemy that took place in 2030 and is much promoted by governments.

One of the reasons Interdependents are not numerous is because till the sciense allowed only the heterosexual soulmate couples could have children. In new century it's possible so they have more children now.

**List of Holders with known powers**

**List of Sealers with known powers**

**Organizations and Units**

**ICI - International Council of Interdependants** - working together with UN and Country's Governments, responsible for taking care of Interdependants Rights and Businesses. In Korea the Head of ICI is Bang Yongguk, his right hand is Kim Namjoon.

**MOI - Military Organization of Interdependatns** - MOI is made out of voluntary units working all over the world to take care of conflicts, natural disasters, wars. They usually work along national armys or not getting involved with the main conflict just performing humanitarian missions. One of the units of MOI is **Red Alert** and **Pink Alert** for now. Next one will be **Red String**.

**3EO - Eadar-eisimeleach Equality Organization** - Organization founded by Mins' family in Daegu to fight for Interdependants Safety and Equal Rights.

**ISA - Interdependants Security Agency -** Agency established by Na Dokhyun in Deagu to work as a counter force to national law enforcement in the City, that weren't treating Interdependants equally. ISA was changed into **Army of the Republic**, after the Republic of Deagu was proclaimed in 2077.

**RED STRING MEMBERS with ASSUMPTIONS**

Red String currently has 9 members: Taehyung, Jungkook, Jimin, Dami, Yoohyeon, Yeonjun, Soobin, Minho and Han.

According to Dragon assumptions there will be 5 more, to reach the number of 14 red strings.

We can allready guess the 10th member is Jimin soulmate: Yoongi. We can

connect the Red String to Daegu then.

So from Deagu we still have 5 missing members. We know it will be Yoongi. Then his two crackhead friends: San and Wooyoung. And the next close person to him, his sister: Gahyeon.

So that gives us 13 known characters already. And as the people in units are always soulmates, the one unknown person that is missing is Gahyeon's soulmate.

Leader of Red String: Kim Taehyung

Type of unit: strike unit

Date of official registration: 6th of December 2068 (after Soobin's 18th birthday)

**RED ALERT MEMBERS**

Red Alert currently has 6 members: Minji, Hoseok, Namjoon, Jin, Baekhyun and Chanyeol.

Side members that are not officialy the part of Red Alert but works with them are: Bora, Siyeon, Kai and Jennie.

Leader of Red Alert: Jeon Minji

Type of unit: rescue unit

**PINK ALERT MEMBERS**

Pink Alert currently has 4 members: Bogum, Lisa, Jisoo and Rose.

They are taking care of natural disassters and animals.

Jennie and Kai were once a part of Pink Alert.

Leader of Pink Alert: Kim Jisoo

Type of unit: rescue unit

1 - Kim Jisoo

2 - Kim Rose

3 - Park Lalisa

4 - Park Bogum

**ICI, MOI, ISA and 3EO members**

**ICI - International Council of Interdependants**

Korean Leader: Bang Yongguk

1 - Bang Yongguk

2 - Kim Namjoon

3 - Kim Kai

4 - Kwon Hwasa

5 - Son Jieun

**MOI - Military Organization of Interdependants**

1 - Kwon Jiyoung

2 - Kwon Minji

3 - Kwon Siyeon

4 - Kwon Bora

**3EO - Eadar-eisimeleach Equality Organization**

Current Leader: Min Kyung

**ISA (Army of the Republic) - Interdependants Security Agency**

1 - Na Dokhyun (founder / death)

2 - Na Inho

3 - Min Taeil

*****BEGGINING OF CHARACTERS DESCRIPTION*****

**Details of characters - friends, family, look, age, power**

**Name:** Kim Taehyung (Holder)

**Current Age:** 20

**Soulmate:** Jeon Jungkook

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 2 year old

**Parents:** Kim Seokjin and Kim Namjoon

**Same age friends:** Jimin, Dami, Yeonjun, Minho

**Other friends:** Yoohyeon, Soobin, Han

**Studying:** Phoography in Seoul National University

**Born in:** Daegu, 2048 Dec 30th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** Sword (fire, water, air, earth and others)

**Nicknames:** Tae, TaeTae, Angel (reserved for his boyfriend)

**MOI unit pseudonim:** V

---------- < 3 ----------

**Name:** Jeon Jungkook (Sealer)

**Current Age:** 18

**Soulmate:** Kim Taehyung

**Soulmate known from:** the day he was born

**Parents:** Jeon Hoseok, Jeon Minji

**Family:** Kwon Jiyoung (grandpa), Kwon Hwasa (grandma), Kwon Bora (aunt), Kwon Siyeon (aunt)

**Same age friends:** Yoohyeon, Soobin

**Other friends:** Jimin, Dami, Yeonjun, Minho, Han

**Studying:** Filmmaking nad Editing in Seoul National University

**Born in:** Daegu, 2050 Sep 1st

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** fire, water, air, earth and others

**Nicknames:** Kookie, Kook, Koo (reserved for his boyfriend)

**MOI unit pseudonim:** JK

----------<3----------

**Name:** Park Jimin (Sealer)

**Current Age:** 20

**Soulmate:** Min Yoongi

**Soulmate known from:** not known

**Parents:** Park Chanyeol, Park Baekhyun

**Same age friends:** Taehyung, Dami, Yeonjun, Minho

**Other friends:** Yoohyeon, Jungkook, Soobin, Han

**Studying:** Dancing and Performing in Seoul National University

**Born in:** Seoul, 2048 Oct 13th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** flame and lightening

**Nicknames:** Chim, Chimmy, Mochi

**MOI unit pseudonim:** Jim

----------<3----------

**Name:** Min Yoongi (Holder)

**Current Age:** 22

**Soulmate:** Park Jimin

**Soulmate known from:** not known

**Parents:** Min Jaehyun, Min Handong

**Siblings:** Min Gahyeon (younger sister)

**Family**: Min Kyung (uncle), Min Chorong (aunt), Min Taeil (cousin)

**Friends:** Choi San,Jung Wooyoung

**Studying:** not

**Born in:** Daegu, 2046 Mar 9th

**Lives in:** Republic of Daegu

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** two swords (flame and lightening)

**Nicknames:** Suga

**MOI unit pseudonim: -**

----------<3----------

**Name:** Lee Yubin (Holder)

**Current Age:** 20

**Soulmate:** Kim Yoohyeon

**Soulmate known from:** when she was 13 yo.

**Parents:** -

**Same age friends:** Taehyung, Jimin, Yeonjun, Minho

**Other friends:** Jungkook, Soobin, Han

**Studying:** Management in Seoul National University

**Born in:** Seoul, 2048 Mar 7th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** spear (ice)

**Nicknames:** Dami

**MOI unit pseudonim:** Dami

----------<3----------

**Name:** Kim Yoohyeon (Sealer)

**Current Age:** 18

**Soulmate:** Lee Yubin "Dami"

**Soulmate known from:** when she was 11yo.

**Parents:** Kim Kai, Kim Jennie

**Same age friends:** Jungkook, Soobin

**Other friends:** Taehyung, Yeonjun, Han, Minho

**Studying:** Computer engineering in Seoul National University

**Born in:** Seoul, 2050 Jan 1st

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** ice

**Nicknames:** Yoo, Pup

**MOI unit pseudonim:** Yoo

----------<3----------

**Name:** Choi Yeonjun (Sealer)

**Current Age:** 20

**Soulmate:** Choi Soobin

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 15yo.

**Parents: -**

**Same age friends:** Taehyung, Dami, Minho, Jimin

**Other friends:** Jungkook, Yoohyeon, Han

**Studying:** LINGUISTICS in Seoul National University

**Born in:** Seoul, 2048 Sep 13th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** light

**Nicknames: -**

**MOI unit pseudonim:** Jun

----------<3----------

**Name:** Choi Soobin (Holder)

**Current Age:** 18

**Soulmate:** Choi Yeonjun

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 13yo.

**Parents: -**

**Same age friends:** Jungkook, Yoohyeon

**Other friends:** Taehyung, Jimin,Han, Minho, Dami

**Studying:** Literature in Seoul National University

**Born in:** Sangnok-gu, 2050 Dec 5th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** bow (light)

**Nicknames:** Binnie

**MOI unit pseudonim:** Bin

----------<3----------

**Name:** Lee Minho (Holder)

**Current Age:** 20

**Soulmate:** Han Jisung

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 16yo.

**Parents: -**

**Same age friends:** Taehyung, Dami, Jimin, Yeonjun

**Other friends:** Jungkook, Yoohyeon, Soobin

**Studying:** International Relations in Seoul National University

**Born in:** Gimpo, 2048 Oct 25th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** vambrace (shielding, protection)

**Nicknames: -**

**MOI unit pseudonim:** Leeno (Lee Know)

----------<3----------

**Name:** Han Jisung (Sealer)

**Current Age:** 19

**Soulmate:** Lee Minho

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 15yo.

**Parents: -**

**Same age friends:** -

**Other friends:** Taehyung, Jimin,Jungkook, Yeonjun, Soobin, Yoohyeon,Dami

**Studying:** Dancing and Performing in Seoul National University

**Born in:** Incheon, 2049 Sep 14th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** protection, shielding

**Nicknames:** Han

**MOI unit pseudonim:** Han

----------<3----------

**Name:** Jung Wooyoung (Holder)

**Current Age:** 20

**Soulmate:** Choi San

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 16yo.

**Parents: -**

**Friends:** Min Yoongi, Min Gahyeon

**Studying:** not

**Born in:** Daegu, 2048 Nov 26th

**Lives in:** Daegu

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** Hermes Shoes (flying, speed)

**Nicknames:** Corgi

**MOI unit pseudonim:** -

----------<3----------

**Name:** Choi San (Sealer)

**Current Age:** 21

**Soulmate:** Jung Wooyoung

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 17yo.

**Parents: -**

**Friends:** Min Yoongi, Min Gahyeon

**Studying:** not

**Born in:** Daegu, 2047 Jul 10th

**Lives in:** Daegu

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** flying, speed

**Nicknames:** Sanjook

**MOI unit pseudonim:** -

----------<3----------

**Name:** Min Gahyeon (Sealer)

**Current Age:** 19

**Soulmate:** unknown

**Soulmate known from:** not known

**Parents:** Min Jaehyun, Min Handong

**Siblings:** Min Yoongi (older brother)

**Family**: Min Kyung (uncle), Min Chorong (aunt), Min Taeil (cousin)

**Friends:** Choi San,Jung Wooyoung

**Studying:** finances, business management, economy

**Born in:** Daegu, 2049 Feb 3rd

**Lives in:** Republic of Daegu

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** unknown

**Nicknames:** Gahy

**MOI unit pseudonim: -**

----------<3----------

**Name:** Kim Seokjin (Holder)

**Current Age:** 43

**Soulmate:** Kim Namjoon

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 20 year old

**Parents:** -

**Children:** Kim Taehyung

**Friends:** Minji, Hoseok, Baekhyun, Chanyeol, Kai, Jennie

**Proffesion:** Doctor

**Born in:** Daegu, 2025 Dec 4th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** Bandages (healing, fixing)

**Nicknames:** Jin, Jinnie

**MOI unit pseudonim:** Jin

----------<3----------

**Name:** Kim Namjoon (Sealer)

**Current Age:** 43

**Soulmate:** Kim Seokjin

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 20 year old

**Parents:** -

**Children:** Kim Taehyung

**Friends:** Minji, Hoseok, Baekhyun, Chanyeol, Kai, Jennie, Jaehyun, Yongguk

**Proffesion:** Academic teacher

**Born in:** Seoul, 2025 Sep 12th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** healing, fixing

**Nicknames:** Joonie, Joon

**MOI unit pseudonim:** RM

----------<3----------

**Name:** Jeon Minji (Holder)

**Current Age:** 43

**Soulmate:** Jeon Hoseok

**Soulmate known from:** when She was 21 year old

**Parents:** Kwon Jiyoung, Kwon Hwasa

**Sibling:** Kwon Bora (sister), Kwon Siyeon (sister-in-law)

**Children:** Jeon Jungkook

**Friends:** Namjoon, Seokjin, Baekhyun, Chanyeol, Kai, Jennie

**Proffesion:** MOI Official

**Born in:** Seoul, 2025 May 17th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** 7 Light Bulbs, Light, Gravitation, Explotions, etc.

**Nicknames:** Firefly

**MOI unit pseudonim:** JiU

----------<3----------

**Name:** Jeon Hoseok  (Sealer)

**Current Age:** 43

**Soulmate:** Jeon Minji

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 21 year old

**Children:** Jeon Jungkook

**Family:** Kwon Jiyoung (father-in-law), Kwon Hwasa(mother-in-law), Kwon Bora (sister-in-law), Kwon Siyeon (sister-in-law)

**Friends:** Namjoon, Seokjin, Baekhyun, Chanyeol, Kai, Jennie

**Proffesion:** Dancer, Choreographer

**Born in:** Daegu, 2025 Feb 18th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** 7 Light, Gravitation, Explotions, etc.

**Nicknames:** Hobi

**MOI unit pseudonim:** Hope

----------<3----------

**Name:** Park Chanyeol (Holder)

**Current Age:** 41

**Soulmate:** Park Baekhyun

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 20 year old

**Parents:** -

**Children:** Park Jimin

**Friends:** Minji, Hoseok, Seokjin, Namjoon, Kai, Jennie

**Proffesion:** Sound engineer

**Born in:** Seoul, 2026 Nov 27th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** Echolocation, Communication, Sound

**Nicknames:** Chan

**MOI unit pseudonim:** Chan

----------<3----------

**Name:** Park Baekhyun (Sealer)

**Current Age:** 40

**Soulmate:** Park Chanyeol

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 19 year old

**Parents:** -

**Children:** Park Jimin

**Friends:** Minji, Hoseok, Seokjin, Namjoon, Kai, Jennie

**Proffesion:** Sound engineer

**Born in:** Daegu, 2027 May 6th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** Echolocation, Communication, Sound

**Nicknames:** Baek

**MOI unit pseudonim:** Byun

----------<3----------

**Name:** Min Handong (Sealer)

**Current Age:** 44

**Soulmate:** Min Jaehyun

**Soulmate known from:** when She was 18 year old

**Children:** Min Yoongi, Min Gahyeon

**Family:** Min Kyung (brother-in-law), Min Chorong (sister-in-law), Min Taeil (nephew)

**Friends:** -

**Proffesion:** School Headmaster, the vice CEO of Min's Company

**Born in:** Daegu, 2024 Mar 26th

**Lives in:** Daegu

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** Water

----------<3----------

**Name:** Min Jaehyun (Holder)

**Soulmate:** Min Handong

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 19 year old

**Children:** Min Yoongi, Min Gahyeon

**Family:** Min Kyung (brother), Min Chorong (sister-in-law), Min Taeil (nephew)

**Friends:** Kim Namjoon

**Proffesion:** CEO of Min's Company

**Born in:** Daegu, 2023 Apr 10th

**Died in:** Daegu, 2064 Mar 2nd (41 year old)

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** 10 water rings (water)

---------- < 3 ----------

**Name:** Min Kyung (Holder)

**Soulmate:** Min Chorong

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 20 year old

**Children:** Min Taeil

**Family:** Min Jaehyun (brother), Min Handong (sister-in-law), Min Yoongi (nephew), Min Gahyeon (niece)

**Friends:** Na Dokhyun, Na Inho

**Proffesion:** CEO of Min's Company after Jaehyung's death, Head of 3EO, **President of the Republic of Deagu**

**Born in:** Daegu, 2023 Apr 10th

**Lives in:** Daegu

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** iron ring (Iron, Steal, Metal - controlling, creating shaping)

---------- < 3 ----------

**Name:** Min Chorong (Sealer)

**Soulmate:** Min Kung

**Soulmate known from:** when she was 19 year old

**Children:** Min Taeil

**Family:** Min Jaehyun (brother-in-law), Min Handong (sister-in-law), Min Yoongi (nephew), Min Gahyeon (niece)

**Friends:** Na Dokhyun, Na Inho

**Proffesion:** Headmaster of school after Jaehyung's death, consort of the **President of the Republic of Deagu**

**Born in:** Daegu, 2026 Jan 18th (currently 41)

**Lives in:** Daegu

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** Iron, Steal, Metal - controlling, creating shaping

----------<3----------

**Name:** Min Taeil (Holder)

**Soulmate:** unknown

**Soulmate known from:** not known yet

**Parents:** Min Kyung, Min Chorong

**Family:** Min Jaehyun (uncle), Min Handong (aunt), Min Yoongi (cousin), Min Gahyeon (cousin)

**Friends:** -

**Proffesion:** working at Min's Company, 3EO and ISA

**Born in:** Daegu, 2045 Dec 10th (currently 23)

**Lives in:** Daegu

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** unknown

----------<3----------

**Name:** Kim Kai (Sealer)

**Current Age:** 40

**Soulmate:** Kim Jennie

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 20 year old

**Children:** Kim Yoohyeon

**Friends:** Minji, Hoseok, Seokjin, Namjoon, Baekhyun, Chanyeol

**Proffesion:** Game designer, agent of MOI and ICI

**Born in:** Seoul, 2027 Jan 14th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** unknown

----------<3----------

**Name:** Kim Jennie (Holder)

**Current Age:** 39

**Soulmate:** Kim Jennie

**Soulmate known from:** when she was 19 year old

**Children:** Kim Yoohyeon

**Friends:** Minji, Hoseok, Seokjin, Namjoon, Baekhyun, Chanyeol

**Proffesion:** Real Estate Agent

**Born in:** Seoul, 2028 Jan 16th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** unknown

----------<3----------

**Name:** Kwon Jiyoung (Sealer)

**Current Age:** 64

**Soulmate:** Kwon Hwasa

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 17 year old

**Children:** Jeon Minji, Kwon Bora

Family: Jeon Hoseok (son-in-law), Jeon Jungkook (grandson), Kwon Siyeon (daughter-in-law)

**Friends:** BangYongguk

**Proffesion:** MOI Trainer

**Born in:** Seoul, 2004 Aug 18th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** Imagination, Creating

**Nicknames:** Dragon

**MOI unit pseudonim:** Dragon

----------<3----------

**Name:** Kwon Hwasa (Holder)

**Current Age:** 63

**Soulmate:** Kwon Jiyoung

**Soulmate known from:** when She was 16 year old

**Children:** Jeon Minji, Kwon Bora

**Family:** Jeon Hoseok (son-in-law), Jeon Jungkook (grandson), Kwon Siyeon (daughter-in-law)

**Friends:** BangYongguk

**Proffesion:** Painter

**Born in:** Seoul, 2005 Jul 23rd

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** Paintbrush (Imagination, Creating)

----------<3----------

**Name:** Kwon Bora (Holder)

**Current Age:** 41

**Soulmate:** Kwon Siyeon

**Soulmate known from:** when she was 22 year old

**Parents:** Kwon Hwasa, Kwon Jiyoung

**Sibling:** Jeon Minji (older sister)

**Family:** Jeon Hoseok (brother-in-law), Jeon Jungkook (nephew)

**Friends:** Kai, Jennie, Baekhyun, Chanyeol, Namjoon, Jin

**Proffesion:** MOI Trainer

**Born in:** Seoul, 2026 Aug 10th

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** Choker (Sound, Voice, Control)

**Nicknames:** -

**MOI unit pseudonim:** SuA

----------<3----------

**Name:** Kwon Siyeon (Sealer)

**Current Age:** 40

**Soulmate:** Kwon Bora

**Soulmate known from:** when she was 21 year old

**Family:** Kwon Hwasa (mother-in-law), Kwon Jiyoung(father-in law), Jeon Hoseok (brother-in-law), Jeon Minji (sister-in-law), Jeon Jungkook (nephew)

**Friends:** Kai, Jennie, Baekhyun, Chanyeol, Namjoon, Jin

**Proffesion:** MOI Trainer

**Born in:** Seoul, 2027 Oct 1st

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** Sound, Voice, Control

**Nicknames:** -

**MOI unit pseudonim:** Sia

----------<3----------

**Name:** Bang Yongguk (Sealer)

**Current Age:** 53

**Soulmate:** Song Jieun (wife, 50, Head of the Music and Art Academy in Seoul)

**Soulmate known from:** when he was 30 year old

**Friends:** Kim Namjoon

**Proffesion:** Head of the Council of Interdependants

**Born in:** Seoul, 2014 Mar 31st

**Lives in:** Seoul

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** Unknown

----------<3----------

**Name:** Na Dokhyun (Sealer)

**Soulmate:** Na Inho

**Friends:** Min Kyung, Min Chorong

**Proffesion:** Head and Founder of ISA

**Born in:** Daegu, 2026 Jun 20th

**Died in:** Daegu, 2066 Oct 13th (40 year old)

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** Unknown

----------<3----------

**Name:** Na Inho (Holder)

**Current age:** 40

**Soulmate:** Na Dokhyun

**Friends:** Min Kyung, Min Chorong

**Proffesion:** vice Head and Founder of ISA, Secretary of President of Republic of Deagu, Advisor of the Army of Republic

**Born in:** Daegu, 2027 Jun 20th

**Lives in:** Daegu

**Sacred Treasure/Power:** Unknown

*****FIN OF CHARACTERS DESCRIPTION****

**Taekook known past lives**

1. Jeryn and Taeghan - around 1300 year BC (XIV CENTURY BC) ->Island of Erv -> Celts -> hidden folk

2. Jasen and Theresites - around 1180 year BC (XII CENTURY BC) - Antient Greece - > Battle of Troy

3. Jiyan and Tarique - aroud 680 BC (VI CENTURY BC) -> Babilon -> Middle East

4. Junjie and Taejun - 208 AD (III CENTURY BC)-> China

5. Jude and Trevor - 1863 (XIX CENTURY AD) -> American Civil War -> Battle of Antientam

---

I could only add 20 photos, that's why not all characters have photos. I chose the most important ones.

Questions <--------- IF YOU HAVE ANY YOU CAN ASK IN COMMENTS.

I will edit it later and post the questions and answers above, so you don't have to go through all comments.

Question: **when Yoonmin will meet?'** I am already answering - AFTER THE HELL AND BEFORE SECOND WAR.

BlairWitch91

# Chapter 41: Redamancy

**10th of September 2068**

Taehyung was driving back from the airport where he left his parents. They were flying to Japan all in a lovey-dovey mood. It was nice seeing them like that. It for sure was bringing Taehyung inner peace.

And he was in desperate need for inner peace.

9 days... As if the simple mention that his parents won't be home, made the tension rise to enormous level.

He and Jungkook could barely look at each other without getting all aroused... Not to mention sitting next to each other always ended up in their hands squeezing and stroking the other one's thighs.

When they had the chance to drive from University together it usually led them to the hot make out session in the parking in front of the Uni or in the garage of one of the houses.

But the hardest challenge Taehyung encountered through those nine days took place last weekend when Jungkook slept in his room, because they were watching a movie...

Taehyung was woken up feeling all hot with an absolutely tense stomach and erection.

It wasn't the first time it happened to him, but for sure it was the first time he knew the physical reason and couldn't blame himself...

Well, nobody could actually blame him...

Who wouldn't get hard when his boyfriend, who he was back hugging while sleeping, would rub his butt over his abdomen in absolutely sinful moves, apparently having a hot dream?

Exactly!

And the thin fabric of Taehyung's pajama pants and even thinner fabric of Jungkook's sleeping shorts wasn't helping...

Taehyung could let him be... He could. Nobody would blame him for coming in a

half sleep state from something like that...

But Jungkook's little sighs and occasional whimpers made him a bit possessive...

He could make him sigh and whimper in a much more pleasurable way... Jungkook didn't need dreams for that.

Taehyung, absolving himself quickly, kissed Jungkook's shoulder through the shirt.

'Bun...' he stroked Jungkook's stomach gently. 'Baby... you are dreaming...'

'Hmmm?' Jungkook muttered sleepily.

'You have a dream...'

Jungkook whined, arching his back and squeezed Taehyung's forearm, wrapped around his belly. He pressed his back more to Taehyung's chest but ranaway with his hips a bit to separate their bodies.

'Sorry...' he whispered in daze.

Taehyung gulped. He could still feel the gentle movements of Jungkook's hips, which the younger couldn't control.

He kissed Jungkook's neck.

'Do you want me to do something?' he asked, quietly.

There was a lot of need in Jungkook's answer.

'Please... Tae...'

'Okay, baby...' he kissed Jungkook's ear. 'We will do something... Just really quietly, okay?' Taehyung muttered.

Jungkook nodded, gulping hard. He turned his head and kissed Taehyung's arm, which he was using as a pillow.

With the free hand Taehyung slowly pulled down Jungkook's shorts from one side. Jungkook helped him raise his hips and lower the cloth from the other side. The shorts stopped on Jungkook's upper thigh, exposing his butt and crotch.

They were still half asleep. Covered with a blanket in the darkness. Maybe that's why it was easier. Maybe that's why there was only heat, craving and no reason.

Taehyung's slim, warm hand caressed the soft skin on Jungkook's asscheek, sending a harsh shiver through his spine. Taehyung slid his hand to the front, caressing Jungkook's stomach and belly button.

They both had closed eyes letting the dreamy, sleepy state - linger. Jungkook's lips were brushing over sensitive skin on Taehyung's inner arm to the same rhythm Taehyung's lips and nose were rubbing Jungkook's nape.

Taehyung's fingers lazily created a path through the warm milky skin. They reached Jungkook's tightly pressed thighs to bless them with soft, gentle touch, before they wrapped around Jungkook's member and without a rush started to pull, squeeze and pump it in a sleepy, pulsating rhythm.

Jungkook let out a soft sigh that was followed with a quiet moan that he suppressed with sucking on Taehyung's arm. When the first delightfull, still a bit shocking feeling calmed down he pressed his asscheeks to Taehyung's clothed crotch, silently demanding.

His hand reached back and slid between their bodies to cupped Taehyung's hard on. He was palming it lightly.

'Don't cheat...' Jungkook mumbled out of breath. 'You too...'

Taehyung smiled into the hair on Jungkook's nape. But the position was so comfortable and warm, and their sleepy state was so relaxing he didn't want to move...

'Mhmm...' he muttered. He took Jungkook's hand and pressed it to his member. 'Play with yourself for me for a second...'

Jungkook obediently moved his hand, but asked:

'Why?'

Taehyung took out his dick from his pants and pressed it to the younger's soft, bare asscheeks. He slid it into the heat of Jungkook's rim and tightly pressed thighs. The thick, musculine thighs squeezed him.

Jungkook whimpered needly.

Taehyung let out a choked out sound of pleasure.

Taehyung replaced Jungkook's hand with his own and continued to stroke him slowly.

Jungkook didn't have to be told... He started to rock his hips back and forth squeezing his thighs and ass, embracing Taehyung's dick in a hot cage of his own skin.

His parted lips were covering Taehyung's arm, under his head, with wet kisses and love bites.

The feeling of Taehyung's member shape, hardness and heat moving slowly between his legs was pushing him to the edge extremely fast. He was focused on this feeling more than on the hand on his dick.

Taehyung moaned deeply into Jungkook's ear, when the other's moves became harder.

'Not so fast, baby bun...'

But Jungkook didn't listen. He turned his head.

'I need you so much...'

Taehyung kissed him, because his hips made a harder thrust hearing his words. He had to calm down a bit.

'Slowly...' he muttered and bit Jungkook's lower lip. 'We will go there slowly...'

Jungkook focused on the kiss. He trusted Taehyung's pace. And he let himself be controlled, because he knew he wanted to feel Taehyung so much he shouldn't trust himself.

He wanted Taehyung to take him... He wanted Taehyung to be absolutely his.

Give him everything he was and had...

Taehyung, parking in the garage of his home, sighed heavily, feeling his pants became too tight just from the memory.

Fucking shit! If that night was the prequel he was in serious trouble!

How will he control himself AND Jungkook?!

The feeling of Jungkook's body was so blissful he was losing his mind! And Jungkook was so eager to give him everything that it was making him look so insanely hot and just... oh! So in love!

Taehyung was knocked out by waves of heat and tenderness at the same time...

He was fucking terrified. And excited. And scared. And horny.

But above it all... there was just this need... to love him.

Maybe if he will focus on this... to show him how much he loves him... it would bring him the much needed balance...

Taehyung brushed his face with his hand and looked at the watch.

Except Jungkook came to wish Namjoon and Jin a safe journey, they haven't seen each other the whole day and didn't even talk.

Probably not to speed up things or show the other one the nervousness.

Jungkook was usually walking out Bam around 8 p.m so Taehyung expected him to come around 10 or so...

Taehyung took a deep breath and got out of the car.

He had some things to prepare...

Minji was lying on the couch, with Hobi cuddling to her belly. She was stroking his hair slowly with one hand, scrolling through her phone with the other one.

Hobi was looking at the movie, laughing from time to time. He was always laughing a lot watching '*Guardians of the Galaxy*'.

Bam was sleeping on the carpet on his back with all four of his limbs stretched to the ceiling.

Minji looked at her grandson amused.

'Jungkook tired him pretty good during the walk...'

'I think he jogged with him to the city center and back... Don't ask me why he torture himself like that...' Hoseok shook his head.

'Maybe he had too much energy?'

'He always has too much energy...'

'Just like his father...'

Speaking about Jungkook, he just ran downstairs, and not even looking at them, informed them while walking to the front doors:

'I'm sleeping at Taehyung's!'

And disappeared.

Minji just smirked, when to her nostrils came the fragrance Jungkook left behind. He had to bathe in it for sure... Not to mention his clothes...

Hoseok frowned.

'What was that...?'

'Namjinies are away, right?' she asked innocently.

'Huh? Yeah... Why?'

'Nothing...' Minji shrugged, smirking devilishly.

Hoseok jerked his head up. He parted his lips.

'No...' he said in disbelief.

'I'm not saying anything...'

'But you are thinking about something...' Hobi squinted his eyes. 'Tell me it's the same thinking as mine!'

Minji looked at her phone with a poker face.

'It just seems that my son will get what he wants...'

'Knew it!' Hoseok said triumphantly.

Minji casually texted Jin.

**Minji: How was the flight? Reached safely?**

**Jin: Without issues. What's up there?**

**Minji: 😄😄😄**

**Jin: 😑 THESE BRATS! I'm away not even for a 6 hours!**

**Minji: We will need soundproof walls asap... □**

**Jin: I will order a team... 😣😣😞😞**

**Jin: 😱😱😱😱**

Jungkook stood in front of Kims' house with closed eyes, breathing deeply.

He did everything Jin instructed him with.

He was nervous. I'm a little bit scared... But more than anything he felt the craving.

For the first time in his life - he pressed the doorbell to Taehyung's house.

After some time he heard the fast, almost panicked steps from inside and Taehyung opened the door.

He blinked surprised, seeing Jungkook.

'Jeeze! You scared me! Why did you ring the bell?!'

'To officially be invited inside?' Jungkook blushed and looked down.

'Or give me another heart attack in the collection...' Taehyung raised his eyebrow.

Jungkook smiled a bit and lifted his gaze. He stretched his hand and stroked Taehyung's cheek.

'Have you eaten anything?' he asked gently.

'Food is the last thing on my mind right now...'

'Then what is on your mind?' Jungkook tilted his head.

'You.' Taehyung said. 'Are you afraid? We don't have to...'

'Taehyung.' Jungkook said quietly yet sternly, so Tae closed his mouth. 'If you think it is too early - that's fine. I know what I want. So the time doesn't matter.'

Taehyung checked Jungkook from head to toe. His smell was already driving him crazy. He looked pretty determined...

'What do you want?'

'Don't get me wrong... It's not about being horny. Well, I am, but I can deal with

it...' Jungkook grunted and looked away, when his cheeks were covered in rosy pink color. 'It's about you... About wanting everything from you. I need to have you completely... And even more than that - I want to be yours. Literally and undoubtedly yours. I want you to own every fiber of me... I want to belong to you in... every possible way... I need it. But it doesn't have to be right away...'

Taehyung gulped, absolutely overwhelmed and speechless. The maturity of Jungkook's words sent Taehyung the same feeling they had in soulmates' dimension. When he could feel they were somewhere beside time...

'I was craving your whole being before I even realized what love and desire is...' Taehyung said quietly. 'Because even if I can name those feelings now, they just mean that I want you to have me and I need to have you...'

Jungkook looked at Taehyung and they were exchanging a million thoughts in total silence.

The mutual feelings.

The feeling of getting back everything you gave without even asking.

The blissful affection of loving and being loved back...

Taehyung slowly spread the doors open wide. He leaned and fastly pecked Jungkook's lips.

'Come inside. Lock the doors. Turn off the lights... And come upstairs in 5 minutes.' he whispered into his lips.

Jungkook was watching how Taehyung turned around, and walked upstairs sending him this one long, dark gaze at the top of the stairs.

He gulped and made a step inside.

Jungkook locked the doors slowly. He checked the whole ground floor and turned off all the lights, leaving only the one over the stairs. He was checking the watch... he had the feeling the hands of the clock were moving with an incredible speed not moving at all at the same time.

He wiped his sweaty hands over his pants and stepped on the first step of the stairs, feeling his heartbeat was going crazy with every step he took.

He reached the top of the stairs and turned off the lights.

But the corridor on the first floor didn't become dark.

Little lanterns with tea candles were placed on the floor leading the way to the doors of Taehyung's room. The doors were opened. The gentle dimmed light, almost only darkness, was coming out of it.

The nervousness hit Jungkook with double strength.

*Kim Fucking Taehyung! If I will see the fucking bed of roses I will fucking ranaway from here...* - he thought outstressed.

His hands trembled, but he took a deep breath and slowly walked to the room.

The inside of the room was almost dark. Only a few candles lightened up the surroundings. Two candles on bedside tables. Four on the windowsill. Taehyung was just now placing the last on the desk.

7 candles. Lucky number...

They all were scented. Spreading the calming fragrance of forest and ginger.

Taehyung was wearing a red silky shirt and black jeans. Jungkook smiled lightly. He matched him... He was also wearing a similar shirt, but dark blue and black jeans.

They got those shirts from Minji for last Christmas. And as much as Taehyung liked it, Jungkook usually wasn't wearing it...

Maybe that's why Taehyung asked, still turned with his back to Jungkook, who was standing in the doors:

'Why this shirt? You don't like button ups...'

'But I like when you are unbuttoning them for me...' Jungkook mumbled, biting on his lips, recollecting the last time Taehyung did. 'And Why do you wear this one then? Few minutes ago it was a different one...'

Taehyung turned with a soft smile:

'To match you...'

Jungkook gulped, feeling his mouth watering. Taehyung's shirt was unbuttoned and opened, showing the toned skin of his chest and belly.

In the gentle candle light he looked unbelievably tempting, seductive and hot...

Jungkook licked his lips and looked down.

To calm himself a bit he looked around. Thank god there was nothing extra beside those few candles in the room. The bed was neatly made-up with clean fresh sheets.

'According to Master Jimin, making something fancy for you only makes you more nervous and shy...' Taehyung said amused, reading Jungkook's gaze well.

Jungkook nodded, not looking at him.

They were silent for a moment. Jungkook nervously brushed his hair back. Taehyung's lips parted at the view. He suddenly could see a lot of details separately.

Jungkook's slightly trembling lips. His Adam's apple movement... Even the drop of sweat that ran down the vein on his neck.

He made a step forward enchanted and another one. Finally he stood in front of Jungkook, and stretched his hand above his shoulder to push the doors which closed themselves with a quiet sound.

Jungkook slowly lifted his eyes on Taehyung, who was standing a step away from him. With this fucking red shirt spread open and the neckle with blue crystal Jungkook gave him on his neck only. Jungkook's fingers felt itchy. He rubbed them together before hesitantly touching the middle of Taehyung's chest.

'Your body is so smooth and slim...' he whispered, looking at the play of flames on Taehyung's skin and his own fingers.

Taehyung gulped.

'Koo...' Taehyung choked out, made a step forward, wrapped his arm around Jungkook's waist and pulled him closer. He pressed his lips to the other's ear. 'Koo... I will do what I can to make it easy... But you have to help me...' he whispered in heat. 'You need to listen to me... You have to tell me if there will be something you won't like or something you want me to do, okay? And don't try to rush yourself or me...'

Jungkook lifted his arms and wrapped them around Taehyung's neck.

'I will listen. I trust you...' He pressed their foreheads together with closed eyes. 'Now, kiss me or we will end up talking the whole night about who loves who more...'

Taehyung smiled into Jungkook's lips.

'We will end up talking about who loves who more the whole night...' he muttered. 'But not with words...'

He joined their lips together.

First - gently - in the sweet kisses they shared a lot. Brushing and pulling each others' lips. Parting and joining them with soft, wet sounds.

Then - deeply - pouring the need inside their dancing tongues.

Taehyung bent a bit and embraced Jungkook's thighs, lifting him up.

Jungkook giggled surprised. Towering over Taehyung, he cupped his face and kissed him sweetly.

'My idiot...' he whispered dreamily, showering Taehyung's face with cute kisses, when Taehyung walked with him to bed.

He put him on the ground, while Jungkook was still kissing him.

'Should we take this off?' Taehyung asked mildly, brushing his fingers over the shirt's split near Jungkook's collarbone.

'You first...' Jungkook muttered, while his hands slid from Taehyung's nape to his arms. He was watching, fascinated by how the light pull made the red shirt slide down Taehyung's arms, exposing his whole upper body for Jungkook to enjoy.

Jungkook, enchanted, was letting his own hands roam around Teahyung's skin. His shoulders, arms, stomach, the narrow line of hair leading from his navel down and disappearing under the hem of trousers.

'I love your body...' Jungkook whispered, placing his hands on Taehyung's sides and stroking his sides, while his eyes were still memorizing every detail painted by candle lights and the room's shadows.

'Your is much better...' Taehyung chuckled, stroking Jungkook's arms, but his guts twisted seeing the pristine hunger in Jungkook's eyes.

Jungkook rolled his eyes.

'You just have a muscle kink...And you are lucky I am here to bless your day, but... your body is slim, the muscles are just perfectly outlined... That's why, only when someone knows you, and gets really close, like I am now...' Jungkook nails dived inside the skin near Taehyung's v-line. Taehyung instinctively pulled Jungkook closer warningly, but Jungkook only smiled at that. '... the hidden strength is showing... This strength is fascinating...' Jungkook brought his lips closer to Taehyung's. 'And the dominance behind it...' he licked Taehyung's upper lip,

teasingly like a kitten.

Taehyung let him play for now. They were still at the very beginning, where it wasn't so hard for him to control.

He sat on the bed and pulled Jungkook to stand between his spread legs.

'Your turn, baby... Let me undress you...'

Jungkook nodded, but blushed involuntarily. For Taehyung THIS was fascinating. The way Jungkook was composed when he was focusing on him... But as soon as he was in the center of attention he was all timid and nervous.

Taehyung looked him in the eyes, reached for the first button and opened it swiftly. He was caging Jungkook's gaze until the shirt was unbuttoned. Then he looked down and, taking it off, pressed his lips to Jungkook's tummy.

'You are so hot...' he mumbled, outlining Jungkook's muscles. 'I wanna eat them...' he could tell how Jungkook trembled, so to lift the mood that got heavy suddenly, he started to kiss each of his packs, saying: 'We should name them...'

'Don't you fucking dare!' Jungkook widened his eyes.

Taehyung laughed deeply and tugged on Jungkook's jeans, pulling them down, when the other was still indignant at the suggestion. Jungkook automatically stepped out of the pants and Taehyung looked at his bare feet.

He frowned and his caring side took over him.

'If I see you once more without socks in autumn I will put your embarrassing baby photos on display at Uni...' he threatened.

Jungkook looked down and blushed.

'I just couldn't portray you taking them off...'

'So the shirt and pants are okay but socks are not?' Taehyung raised his eyebrow. 'I just took off your pants and you didn't even blink...'

Jungkook covered his face with his hands and whined:

'Don't ask me why it seemed embarrassing!'

'But you have beautiful feet...' Taehyung giggled and caressed Jungkook's side calmingly. 'Next time don't take the socks off... we will see if I can do something with your embarrassment...' he smirked.

Jungkook bent to him and kissed him slowly, meekly whispering "okay". The kiss changed into a long one, while Taehyung's hands were caressing Jungkook's bare sides and back, and Jungkook's fingers were tugging on the hair on Taehyung's nape.

'Lay down...' Taehyung whispered into Jungkook's lips.

'Huh?' Jungkook straightened up. 'No way! You are still dressed! I won't be the only one with bare ass on display!'

'Jungkook, I told you not to rush...' Taehyung started but Jungkook pushed him to the bed and started forcefully pulling the legs of his pants.

'Take off your pants...' he demanded.

Taehyung laughed.

'Take them off!' he whined, pulling them down.

Feeling the forceful pulling is moving down not just his pants, but underwear too, Taehyung unbuttoned his jeans and lifted his hips, letting Jungkook take them off.

Jungkook threw the pants over his shoulder, still holding Taehyung's ankle in the air. He glared at Taehyung's sock, adn casually took it off.

'Not as weird as I thought....' He said thoughtfully.

'You brat...' Taehyung sat.

'Wait, wait... we need to take the second one...' Jungkook wanted to bend, but Taehyung grabbed his waist, pulled him and threw him on the bed, while they both were laughing.

Taehyung rolled them on the bed, while whispering:

'Such a brat!'

'I'm your brat, tho...' Jungkook giggled, kissing Taehyung's jaw.

Their silliness calmed down the nervousness and shyness a bit.

🎶Music tip: *Conversations in the dark* by John Legend 🎶

Taehyung lifted his head and looked at Jungkook... The more they were looking in each other's eyes the smaller their smiles were.

They realized their skin was touching. They were only in underwear... They could

feel each other's scents so well. The heat of each other's bodies.

One of Taehyung's thigh was between Jungkook's legs. Jungkook was calmly laying under him, letting the heat of Taehyung's gaze set the flames inside him...

Taehyung, looking mesmerized at Jungkook, brushed his bangs from his forehead.

'Yeah... you are mine...' he whispered.

'Then take me...' Jungkook whispered back.

'I'm going to...' Taehyung muttered and pressed their lips together.

From this point onwards there were no words...

Just Taehyung's lips tasting Jungkook's mouth.

Just Jungkook's hands stroking Taehyung's naked back with light touch, similar to butterfly wings.

Just Taehyung pressing his tight between Jungkook's thighs...

Just Jungkook entangling their naked legs.

They were making out till they both were out of breath. The drool were covering their lips, still joining them together even when their lips parted.

Taehyung moved his lips to Jungkook's cheek to leave the kiss there. Then the path of slow, wet kiss was painted further to Jungkook's ear...

Down the vein on his neck...

Even lower... to his collarbone...

Jungkook tilted his head when Taehyung's head nived down through the middle of his chest...

He didn't know this feeling before... The butterfly, wet kisses on his body... Left one after another next to each other.

His eyelashes fluttered and his eyelids shut down when he felt a wet open mouth on his nipple.

He let out a soft, amazed whimper.

Taehyung was charmed by how the simple touch of his tongue made the little bud in his mouth so hard. He curiously sucked on it, making Jungkook move needily underneath him - he was so sensitive...

Taehyung reached with his second hand to the other nipple and his fingers circled around it. He rolled it between them, pulling with his teeth the other one.

Jungkook didn't have to say a word. The slight move of his hips was saying enough about the heat that was located in his abdomen. Taehyung could feel how hard his baby was on his thigh.

He knew he had to give him some release if they wanted to continue... He was planning to show him only the pleasure before the pain.

He sucked on the other nipple circling his tongue around it, bringin the purple color to it.

He shuffled, placing himself between Jungkook's legs. The younger looked at him with lazy and dizzy eyes from under hooded eyelids and spread them slowly and welcomingly.

Taehyung caressed Jungkook's hip calmingly, before proceeding his mission to kiss every part of Jungkook's skin. He moved down with his lips through the middle of Jungkook's belly. Staying for longer near his navel.

Jungkook took a deep harsh breath and his stomach sank deep, before he moaned, from the pressure and the feeling of Taehyung's tongue and teeth. His fingers entangled with silver hair.

He was so hot with this heavy breathing and fast heartbeat that Taehyung could feel in his lips, whenever he pressed them to Jungkook's skin, that Taehyung had to kiss and lick the skin there to compose himself and tame his own shivers, before he could go lower.

He sat on his heels for a moment stroking Jungkook's stomach and thighs calmingly, looking at the painting in front of him.

Jungkook's skin became rosy and covered in a dew of his sweat from all the blood rushing through his veins. His lips were red from biting on them.

In the candle lights? He was an art...

Taehyung's fingers ran brushed over the hem of his underwear letting the other know what he was about to do.

Jungkook gulped nervously and nodded. He lifted his hips and Taehyung grabbed the pantys to slide them down Jungkook's legs.

Jungkook shut his eyes to somehow control his embarrassment and shyness. He bit his lips.

'You okay?' Taehyung whispered, caressing the younger's thighs calmingly.

'Y-yeah...'

Taehyung bent to kiss him and distracted him while he wrapped his fingers around Jungkook's member, stroking it in slow motion. He swallowed Jungkook's moan.

But it was the kind of touch and kisses Jungkook knew so it calmed him down a bit. He felt safe feeling the known wave of heat.

Taehyung sucked on his lower lip and whispered:

'Remember you have to listen to me...'

Jungkook nodded, greedily taking the breath from Taehyung's mouth.

Taehyung kissed his forehead slowly, before moving down. Leaving kisses on Jungkook's nose, chin, chest, navel...

Hipbone.

He moved along the v-line...

Down the thick, milky thigh...

'T-Tae...' Jungkook groaned hesitantly, when Taehyung grabbed him under the knee and spread his leg more to the side to have the better access to kiss and suck on his groin.

'Grab the sheets.' Taehyung muttered softly, but without a doubt it was an order.

'B-but...'

'Baby...' Taehyung said warningly, biting on Jungkook's inner thigh. 'Grab the sheets...'

Jungkook, breathing heavily, grabbed the sheets on both sides of his hips.

'I dreamed of doing this to you... You can stop me if you won't like it...' Taehyung whispered, moving with his kisses through Jungkook's abdomen. 'But you will like it...' his hot breath enveloped Jungkook's member. '... right, baby?' he purred.

Taehyung's lips embraced the head of Jungkook's dick softly.

Jungkook arched his back and choked out:

'Yeaaah...'

His fists clenched on the sheets desperately.

Taehyung threw his arm over Jungkook's hips to hold him in place, while his tongue was dancing over the slit. He could taste it... the precum. It had a specific taste. It wasn't bitter or sweet. But for sure it was fucking arousing...He slide his mouth down, taking the pulsating, hot flesh deeper.

Jungkook was moaning and whining. His thighs were shivering. His stomach was sinking deep from the heavy breaths he was taking in and holding inside.

*Fuck!* Taehyung thought and his own hips moved involuntarily, rubbing over the sheets. *I could do this all the time just to hear him moaning like that...*

'T-Tae... I will... c-come...' Jungkook cried out.

Taehyung pulled out and licked the dick up and down, moving his hand along his tongue.

'That's the point, babybun... I want you to come...' Taehyung purred while his tongue was covering the strained skin with saliva, making the friction smooth. He was moving his hand up and down while his lips were sucking on the tip.

Jungkook was fucking battling with himself, he was trying to hold back. He couldn't... He shouldn't come while Taehyung had his mouth still around his cock!

But Taehyung's sucking was merciless... Was he really going to...

The orgasm hit Jungkook hard and unexpectedly. He hoisted his hips up and curled his toes, almost tearing up the sheets, while he screamed and tried to roll away, but Taehyung's arm was still holding him in place.

After the wave passed through him and his body calmed down a bit, Jungkook started to shiver.

'I'm sorry...I'm sorry...' he whispered, throwing his arm over his eyes, ashamed and overwhelmed.

Taehyung, who was gently licking the still sensitive head, was absolutely proud of himself, for making Jungkook come so hard, raised his head, worried, hearing his Koo's voice.

He crawled up to take away the arm from Jungkook's face.

'Hey...' he called out gently. 'Baby... It's okay...'

Jungkook shook his head.

'Look at me... Do I look like I didn't like it?' Taehyung stroked Jungkook's cheek.

Jungkook opened his eyes slowly.

Taehyung's angelic, calming smile was there to welcome him.

He looked absolutely content with the fact Jungkook just came in his mouth...

Jungkook blushed hard and Taehyung's smile changed into a smirk. His gaze fell on Jungkook's lips.

'Want to taste?' he muttered.

The electrifying feeling ran down Jungkook's body. He nodded shyly.

Taehyung kissed him, letting Jungkook's tongue inside his mouth.

The almost non-existing taste was there... hard to describe...

It was... so dirty... so naughty...

So hot!

They kissed until Jungkook's hands started to roam around Taehyung's back again and he realized the hardness pressed between his legs. He lifted his hips to rub over Taehyung's hard on.

'I want to make you come too...' Jungkook whispered.

Taehyung pressed his forehead to Jungkook's. He knew he had to give Jungkook a moment for the heat to come back to his body and push him to the edge again. He was a tactician... He was planning this night for over a year...

And he himself was on the edge... He needed more time...

He took a deep breath and nodded.

Jungkook embraced Taehyung's hips with his legs and changed their positions.

Jungkook sat on his crotch and Taehyung ground instantly. Jungkook bend to kiss Taehyung's neck and asked innocently:

'Can I lick you?'

Taehyung insides tightened at shere idea.

'N-not now...' he whispered.

'Why?' he could feel the pout in Jungkook's voice.

'Koo... I'm on the edge...' he choked out. 'If you touch me with your pretty mouth it will be a second...'

Jungkook sighed and kissed Taehyung's collarbone gently. He kissed his lips softly, stroking Taehyung's hair.

'Okay...' he breathed out, brushing his mouth over Taehyung's.

Taehyung grabbed Jungkook's hips and pulled him down to his hard on. He made him move, saying:

'But you can do this...'

Jungkook lifted his head to look at him, he bit Taehyung's lower lip and pulled it.

'You are cheating again, Taehyung...' he muttered. 'You still have clothes on you...'

Taehyung smiled lightly and pecked Jungkook's lips.

'Take them off then...'

Jungkook slid down from Taehyung's body and with a blush on his face he took off his underwear.

He had a moment when he was just looking. He gulped, memorizing the shape and size.

He bit his lips... Maybe he could actually...

'Come back here, Koo...' Taehyung demanded quietly, as if he could trail Jungkook's thoughts.

Jungkook crawled on Taehyung's body.

He knew what Taehyung wanted from him. He noticed it last time...

'You really liked it, right?' he whispered, looking at Taehyung's chest while he sat perfectly on Taehyung's member.

Taehyung's hands touched Jungkook's back, slowly slid down to his asscheeks. He stroked his butt before he squeezed it and made him move.

'Yeah...' he breathed out, closing his eyes.

Jungkook moved slowly, humping Taehyung's dick with his rim. He was observing the strained veins on Taehyung's neck. His clenched jaw... He shivered when he

imagined having Taehyung inside him like that... Being an absolute mess under him...

His asshole was teased by the hard dick and it made his insides on fire again for some, yet, unknown reason.

Taehyung let out a quiet, deep moan and Jungkook could feel how the grip on his ass got harder. He felt the eager movement underneath him and he rolled his hips harder and slower as the response.

'Fuck! Koo!' Taehyung opened his eyes, feeling how Jungkook easily synchronized their moves.

He was pressing his hands to Taehyung's chest, teasing his nipples with every move. He had parted lips, looking at Taehyung from hooded eyelids. His abs were tensing and untensing.

Taehyung hoisted his hips and Jungkook's next harsh move made the friction over his dick, squeeze the orgasm out of him. He moaned while his nails dug inside Jungkook's ass.

Jungkook shivered, feeling the moisture on his rim. He licked his lips...

Taehyung coming while hungrily looking at him was the hottest view he had ever seen...

He leaned forward and started to kiss his face to calm him down.

'I knew it...' Taehyung whispered into his lips. 'I knew that if I look at you I won't stop myself... You look like a personified sin...'

Jungkook smiled and laid on his content.

They were lying like that for a while feeling lazy and comfortable.

Taehyung kissed Jungkook's head, which was laying on his chest.

'Enough? Or more...'

Jungkook mumbled something shyly. It sounded like:

'I want you...'

Taehyung's heart stopped before it started to run like crazy. For two reasons... First - the hard part was coming... Second - he fucking wanted to take him...

He sat still hugging the other closely.

'Ready?'

Jungkook nodded with his cheek still pressed to Taehyung's chest and looked at him with a hint of fear in his eyes, but he asked nevertheless:

'And you?'

Taehyung cupped his face, stroking his cheeks with his thumbs.

'Yeah...'

While kissing him, he embraced Jungkook and laid him down on the soft pillow. Jungkook finally parted their lips, made Taehyung looked in his eyes, before whispering:

'I will be okay...'

Taehyung took a deep breath and reached for the second pillow.

'Lift your hips...' Taehyung said quietly.

Jungkook, being absolutely shy again, turned his head and raised his hips, so Taehyung could put a pillow under them.

He looked at the bottle of lube and a pack of condoms that was hidden by the pillow till now.

He frowned, grabbed the pack and threw it through the room.

Taehyung blinked surprised.

'You can do everything to me. But no barriers between us...' Jungkook said with a trembling voice. 'We are both healthy...'

'I didn't have it because of it...' Taehyung stopped him calmly, laying on Jungkook's right side. 'I thought it would let me control... Bare contact is always... more overwhelming...'

Jungkook nuzzled his face to Taehyung's chest.

'I want to feel you... Don't you want to feel me?'

'You know I want to...' Taehyung whispered and kissed Jungkook's temple.

Jungkook reached for the bottle not looking at Taehyung and Taehyung stretched his hand without a word. Jungkook covered his fingers with a thick gel.

Taehyung started to kiss and suck on Jungkook's neck, while his hand reached

between Jungkook's legs.

'Touch yourself...' he whispered to Jungkook's ear.

Jungkook was looking at Taehyung, when he did what he was told. Taehyung was lying on his side, holding himself on his elbow, with one of his legs hooked on Jungkook's thigh to stop him from closing them if he tried.

Taehyung was praying he knew what he was doing... His fingers touched Jungkook's asshole.

'Umm...'Jungkook with a red face stopped him hesitantly. 'I... t-think your c-cum...'

*Oh...* Taehyung hadn't thought about that... *Well... It didn't matter...*

But he should calm his baby... And knowing how Jungkook was sucker for naughty words he smirked and whispered:

'Don't worry... there will be more of it there in a moment...'

Jungkook's lips parted, but he closed them when the simple truth came to him. He spread his thighs a bit more, giving Taehyung a silent sign he could continue.

Taehyung kissed him, taking Jungkook's mind away from the moment his finger spread the liquid over his hole. He massaged it for a moment. It was already super sensitive from their play earlier... He tried to slide it inside, but when Jungkook flinched a bit, just from the unknown feeling, he stopped.

Jungkook pulled his head closer to kiss him deeper and it gave Taehyung the much needed moment to compose himself.

*Don't hesitate...* he told himself.

He slowly but relentlessly pushed one of his fingers inside. The ring of muscles tightly embraced it. Taehyung started to move it in and out slowly.

Jungkook was kissing him softly, calmingly. But Taehyung had to know...

'Okay?'

'Okay...' Jungkook purred.

Taehyung pushed his finger deeper, speeding up the pace delicately, before adding the second one.

He curled them until Jungkook let out a surprised whimper. Taehyung's long fingers didn't have a problem with reaching his prostate...

Jungkook let go of his dick and grabbed the sheets, while Taehyung was caressing and brushing his prostate, scissoring him. He lifted his hips involuntarily.

'I feel... strange...' he breathed out.

'Hot? Dizzy?'

'Y-yeah... But... d-differently...'

Taehyung was tempted... He really was tempted to make him come like that... But if he would do that and Jungkook would come down the high it would be hard for him to take Taehyung in.

Besides... he wasn't stretched enough yet...

Taehyung kissed Jungkook's neck, observing how the younger's member was hard again.

He pushed the third finger inside and Jungkook hissed. Taehyung slowed down, joining his fingers, but didn't stop.

He was slowly changing his position, while kissing Jungkook's shoulder, collarbone and chest. He sucked on his nipple again, while his fingers were steadily fucking him.

Jungkook's cute, soft whimpers, gentle needy moves of his hips and desperate fingers on his back made him hard again.

When Jungkook started to breathe heavily and fast, Taehyung kissed him and slowly took out his fingers, stopping him from coming.

Jungkook shivered heavily for the denied orgasm. He moaned and cried out at the same time.

'I'm sorry, baby...' Taehyung kissed his neck calmingly. 'I will take you there again... I promise...'

Jungkook desperately clung onto him

'Please... Taehyung...' he moved his hips in need.

Jungkook's soft pleads didn't leave Taehyung much time to think or hesitate. He couldn't stand his lover with this much unsatisfied desire.

Taehyung fastly spread more lube on his dick and hovered over Jungkook to kiss his forehead.

He looked at him from above and trembled. The sudden fear of hurting the other one was just overwhelming. But the person he was running to when he was afraid... was...

'Koo...' he called out softly and his voice broke down. 'I'm scared...'

Jungkook opened his dizzy eyes. His gaze softened.

'Shhh... Don't be scared, Angel...' Jungkook purred tenderly. His arms wrapped around Taehyung's waist 'I know you...'

*I know you...*

The answer which was opening the soulmate dimension for them...

Taehyung felt his fear decreased. As if the storm calmed down leaving just normal waves.

He positioned his member and brushed the tip over the hole. Helping himself with a hand he pushed the head inside.

Jungkook whimpered in pain and shut his eyes.

Taehyung slowly laid down on him, pressing their cheeks together. He naturally let his hips sink down between Jungkook's body. He didn't move... he just let his member slowly, almost painfully dive deeper inside in the way Jungkook's body was allowing it.

He felt a drop on their joined cheeks.

Jungkook being in pain was hurting Taehyung the most. He wanted to soothe him somehow... And the first thing that was coming to his mind was:

'It's me...' he whispered into Jungkook's ear.

Jungkook's embrace around his waist tightened.

'It's me...' Taehyung repeated, kissing Jungkook's cheek.

Jungkook tilted his head and their lips met in a desperate kiss.

When the feeling of stretching calmed down and Jungkook felt he adjusted, he realized Taehyung was holding himself up desperately trying not to move. Fighting against his body's natural instinct.

He curiously moved his hips up and Taehyung moaned right next to his ear. It was the first thing that awoke the fire inside Jungkook's body. The second one was

much simpler... - he had Taehyung inside.

Finally...

They were absolutely and completely united.

He didn't mind the slightly stinging sensation between his asscheeks, what he minded was the sweat that covered Taehyung's body and his trembling muscles, because of all the control he was showing...

Jungkook raised his legs and crossed them over Taehyung's waist, making him sink deeper inside.

He kissed Taehyung's ear.

'Move...' he muttered. 'I'm yours... Take me there again...'

Taehyung stayed still for a moment as if he was taking in the words, before he kissed Jungkook's shoulder and rolled his hips.

When he didn't encounter any resistance... he lifted himself on his arms.

His stomach was rubbing over Jungkook's dick, while he pulled his hips back slowly and moved them forward again.

Jungkook was looking at him. Feeling this blissful feeling he was missing...

Belonging.

'Oh God!' he choked out suddenly, when Taehyung changed the angle of his moves and hit the right place. 'T-Tae...'

'Mhm... I have you...' Taehyung purred and kissed him, before kneeling, while pulling Jungkook's hips, not parting them for a moment. He thrust inside him faster and harder.

Jungkook moaned.

Taehyung supported his arched hips with one arm while the second hand reached for Jungkook's member. He was still moving inside.

'Come on baby... Come for me...' he breathed out pleadingly, absolutely refusing to come till Jungkook will.

But his body lost to Jungkook.

To his voice. His body.

His whole existence...

He shot the cum in the thigh, hot, velvet ass cursing and moaning.

It just gave Jungkook additional smoothness of the friction inside him, so he needly moved his hips, while Taehyung was pumping his dick.

The clenching of his ass was milking Taehyung dry, making ride his high and shiver in euphoria.

Jungkook was hit by the lightening of pleasure and screamed. His moans lingered in the air, when the stars exploded in front of his eyes.

He stretched his hands pleadingly and Taehyung fell inside his open arms, breathing heavily.

A light relieved sobs left Jungkook's lips when the overwhelming feelings took over him.

Taehyung didn't have time to get worried, because the tender kiss on his neck told him what was going on.

He calmingly kissed Jungkook's teary eyelids.

'I'm yours, Koo...' he whispered, calmingly.

Jungkook kissed him softly and answered:

'I'm yours, Tae...'

They sighed dreamily, stroking each other's bodies to calm the shivers that still were running through their bodies from time to time.

Finally, Taehyung pulled out slowly. Jungkook's face twisted slightly.

'Be right back...' he whispered, kissing Jungkook's forehead before getting up. He went to the bathroom and came back with a warm wet cloth.

He cleaned Jungkook's stomach, thighs and asscheeks carefully. Jungkook was observing his focused face. He knew he needed to let him do that...Even if he was super shy about it... Taking care of him was making Taehyung calm.

Taehyung came back and went to the desk. He poured a glass of water and went to bed. He gave Jungkook the glass and painkillers.

'It's not hurting...' Jungkook mumbled, sitting up.

'Yet...' Taehyung said, looking at him worried.

Jungkook obediently took the pills and swallowed them. He gave the other half of the water to Taehyung.

'Drink it...' he demanded.

Taehyung gulped down the water and put the glass on the night table.

Jungkook moved the duvet and slid under it, spreading it open.

'Come here...' he said gently.

Taehyung looked down and slid next to him.

Jungkook leaned to him and kissed his nose, stroking his cheek.

'Stop. Worrying.' he whispered seriously. 'I love you... You made it a dream... I was never so happy it's you, Tae...'

Taehyung finally smiled a bit. He kissed Jungkook, shuffled and laid on his chest.

'It was hard...' he admitted. 'And it wasn't at the same time... because it was about you... I love you.'

They closed their eyes feeling the overwhelming and blissful feeling of redamancy.

---

**Redamancy - loving someone who loves you back / a love returned in full; an act of loving the one who loves you.** □□❤□❤□

---

Hello...

Okay... better someone tell me I haven't wrote 7500 words of weird smut... 😓

I think it suits them...

I just don't know how you all horny people will take it... It's quite unique...

BlairWitch91 💝

# Chapter 42: Glow

Jungkook was sailing in his relaxing, cloudy, sleeping state of mind. He started to register his own naked skin under the soft sheets. And right after... a naked skin pressed to his side. A slow, wet kiss left on his naked shoulder.

A hand slowly caressing his belly in a rhythm he could only think about as seductive, as it was making his insides tingling and setting them in warm flames, which were ready to hit the sky.

Still with close eyes, he wanted to move on his back to face Taehyung when the other kissed his cheek gently and muttered:

'I will walk out Bam... Sleep some more...'

And he got up...

He. Got. Up.

And walked out!

As soon as the door closed Jungkook opened his eyes and frowned.

That was not what he had in mind...

He had in mind Kim Taehyung and now he felt betrayed...

He glared at the ceiling.

*Wait. Wait, Jungkook... Analyze... Don't get horny first thing in the morning and tame your bratty ass... Analyze...*

You are dealing with Kim Taehyung here... What is Kim Taehyung made of?

*Besides the 179 cm of mouth-watering hotness?*

*He is made out of 24/7 overprotecting-Koo-syndrome...*

*So what is Kim Taehyung, your amazing man, the other half of your soul thinking?*

*That you are hurt and he shouldn't touch you now...*

Jungkook nodded to himself with a sigh. He will just have to give him this time and show him he was okay...

Because he was, right?

Jungkook sat on the bed and squirmed lightly. Well it wasn't like he was broken in half. He was just aware of his lower parts, that's it.

Taehyung was really, really gentle.

Jungkook blushed recollecting everything.

Maybe it was a bit reckless of him but he wanted to experience the not so gentle Taehyung as well...

His heart waited for so long for this complete feeling of being united with this one person he was fated to love.

Jungkook hid his face in the pillow he suddenly grabbed and squealed inside, rocking from side to side.

He was so happy! He loved Taehyung so much! He felt loved so fully.

Jungkook was a bit scared that the happiness would break him in half at this moment.

He took a deep breath and slowly got up. Few first steps were strange because it was a new kind of feeling but he would just take a shower and stretch a bit, before he made a delicious breakfast his angel deserved...

Taehyung came back and let Bam in.

Bam happily ran to the kitchen at once instead of going to his usual place by the couch in the living room. But as soon as he smelled the air and felt the cinnamon toast he knew Jungkook was in the kitchen and that's why the pup went there.

He saw Jungkook standing in the oversize hoodie only, which was reaching his thighs, making Taehyung recollect what those tights felt like under his lips and hands. He gulped.

Jungkook crouched down to spoil his puppy, talking to him sweetly.

Taehyung was observing him. Jungkook raised his eyes at him.

They blushed.

Taehyung looked down.

'How do you feel?' he asked, quietly.

Jungkook sent him a smile.

'Perfect.'

Taehyung peeked at him, checking if he was telling the truth.

'Really.' Jungkook assured him, standing up. He turned to the stove. 'Go, take a shower. I will finish here...' He said moving through Jin's kitchen, feeling at home.

Taehyung made a hesitant step towards him, wanting to hold him, but stepped back when he realized, it won't be so easy JUST to hold him.

'Okay...' he mumbled and walked away.

Jungkook turned around, rolled his eyes, knowing exactly what was going on behind his back.

*Jeeze! This man!*

*Where is my good morning kiss?! Where is my: come take a shower with me!?*

Jungkook had a lot of ideas in his head for the moment the magic line would be crossed...

He made breakfast extra carefully. He cut fruits. The cinnamon toasts were crispy and delicious. He put everything on the table and fed Bam's bowl with his food.

He sat by the table when Taehyung came back. The other bent and kissed his forehead, saying:

'Thanks.'

'You deserve it...' Jungkook smirked and Taehyung blushed, looking at the table.

'I have a task to do for studies after. It will take about an hour... We can watch a movie after...'

Jungkook nodded calmly.

'Okay... I will check if I have something pending too. And have to wrap gifts for Yeonjun and Han...'

'Are you sure you don't want to just laze around today?' Taehyung bit the toast and moaned at the taste. 'Delicious...'

Jungkook gulped.

*Fuck! That sound was hot...*

He grunted and brought his face closer to Taehyung.

'Do I look as if I should?' he asked.

Taehyung looked at him from close proximity and his heart sped up.

Rosy cheeks, messed up hair... this fucking red, still a bit swollen, lips...

'You look as beautiful as always...' Taehyung mumbled, dropping his eyes on the plate.

Jungkook pouted. He could bet he looked more than *good as always*. He was fucking glowing and he couldn't stop it!

'No. I don't want to rest. I will wrap our gifts. Tomorrow is the party they organized. I will ask Soobin if they need help...'

'You want to go out!?' Taehyung raised his head at him.

'I will just ask if they need anything for tomorrow...' Jungkook shook his head. 'I have to check the assignment I've already done. We also have to choose songs to perform for Music Academy classes... I will make myself busy before the movie. Don't worry...'

Taehyung felt a slight uneasiness. Jungkook was calm and normal, but why was he feeling there was something behind it?

Was Jungkook not feeling well in the end?

'What assignment do you have to make?' Jungkook asked casually and they started to talk, while eating.

They finished eating and cleaned the kitchen together.

'I will be upstairs...' Taehyung said, kissing Jungkook's cheek again.

*Stay calm, Jungkook... Don't sulk just because it is again a cheek kiss... Think how cute Tae is! Not that you want to kick his ass!* - thought.

Jungkook nodded, whistling at Bam. He had to go home fast to pick up gifts and his laptop.

And he had to do that casually, not getting into heated discussion with his parents or he would die from embarrassment... Unless Taehyung already did, while taking Bam for a walk...

He looked at the clock. 10 o'clock... Okay... It was a perfect time. His parents should do the grocery shopping right now...

He went to the basement to grab Taehyung's freshly dried sweatpants and moved to the doors, calling.

'Bam! Come! We have to hurry!'

He wasn't as lucky as he thought he would be... Absolutely relaxed, he walked to the house, because the car wasn't in the front yard. But as soon as he opened the door and Bam happily ran to the living room he knew... his parents tricked him... Only one of them went to the store...

Hoseok looked at him from the couch. He was looking at Jungkook like a hawk.

'Good morning, Jungkookie...'

Jungkook gulped.

'Good morning, dad...'

Hoseok tried to play it cool. But he was as well Hoseok... the tea loving father...

'Slept well?' he asked.

Jungkook closed his eyes with a heavy sigh, knowing he had red cheeks for sure and he would have to go through this.

'Pretty well... yes...' he said. 'Where is mom...?'

'In the store. How is Taehyung? Minji said he couldn't look her in the eyes when he was taking Bam for a walk...' Hoseok smirked and sipped his sprite. 'Just like you now...'

So Jungkook had two options: A - die from embarrassment. B - Make his father die from embarrassment...

And Jeon Jungkookie had a brave and dangerous mind of his mom. He sat on the coffee table in front of Hoseok.

'Okay, what do you want to know?' he asked, praying inside his dad will retreat and he will do it fast... Because if Minji comes back, Jungkook would never be able to pull this...

Hoseok blinked.

'W-what?'

'What do you want to know about last night?'

'I...'

Jungkook raised his eyebrow.

'Was it good? Yes.'

'O-okay...'

'Want details?'

'Ummm... n-no...' Hoseok shook his head.

Jungkook smiled sweetly. Just a bit maliciously...

A smile Hoseok knew all too well from Minji's lips.

'Love you, dad... Tell mom, not to worry...' Jungkook stood up and ran upstairs. He closed the doors to his room and hid his red face in his hands.

*Oh god, oh god! How long will it take for all of them to get over it!?*

He won this time just because it was his cute, soft dad... If it would be his mom... Or uncle Jin...!

They didn't want to know! They all just wanted to tease them!!!

Maybe he and Taehyung should just move to Alaska for some time?

Jungkook was already watching a movie in the afternoon, holding his feet on Bam's fur, caressing it from time to time, when Taehyung came downstairs.

'It took some more time... I had to edit some photos they sent me from work...' he said, apologetically.

'It's okay...' Jungkook said, smiling at him lightly.

Taehyung laid on the couch, putting his head on Jungkook's lap.

It was Taehyung's safe way not to cuddle the hell out of him and be too tempted to kiss him. Because if he would kiss him... He wouldn't be able to keep his hands to himself. And if he would start to touch him even lightly... he wouldn't be able to

stop...

Jungkook was addicting... Them being together so closely was addicting...

But he shouldn't behave as if he couldn't think about anything else right? Jungkook for sure needed time after their first time together...

So he let his thoughts drift to the neverland while Jungkook was stroking his hair softly.

They watched first part of *Star Wars* and Taehyung played the second part, asking:

'Want to lay down?'

Feeling excitement building up, Jungkook nodded.

Taehyung shuffled, laying on his back and Jungkook laid next to him, halfly laying on his chest. There was a moment Jungkook was watching a movie, before Taehyung's warm body next to him took over his whole attention.

He turned his head and his nose dived inside the fabric of Taehyung's shirt. He relaxed and became almost sleepy instantly. He placed his tight on Taehyung's tights and closed his eyes.

They barely touched the whole day... It was enough to make him comfortable and dreamy.

'I will just take a nap...' he muttered. 'Don't go anywhere...'

Taehyung looked down at his profile.

'I wasn't going anywhere...' he whispered, surprised.

'Sure...' Jungkook mumbled. 'I know you... I know what you are thinking... You haven't even kissed me...'

Taehyung's heart squeezed.

'You are worried about me, right? So let me sleep...'

Jungkook embraced him tighter and Taehyung was afraid to wake him up.

He kissed his hair.

*Okay... Sleep now. It seems we have to talk later... because you are not okay with me...*

Jungkook woke up after a nap, when the ending music of the movie started to play. His nose automatically moved to Taehyung's neck.

'I will feed you...' he said sleepily, getting up.

'You are not my babysitter...' Taehyung said, sitting up.

'Right back at you, angel...' Jungkook said, shaking his head, walking to the kitchen.

'Why are you angry because I am careful?' Taehyung asked calmly.

Jungkook stood in place and slowly turned to Taehyung.

'I wasn't angry... I can pretty much trace your train of thoughts... But I just woke up... And you know, it is not a good moment to talk to me...'

'I can fucking do the dinner you know...'

Jungkook was looking at Taehyung for some time.

'Okay... If you don't want me to make dinner then I'm not needed here...' He turned to the doors. 'Bam!'

The dog got up instantly.

Taehyung blinked, shocked by his words.

He pointed at Bam.

'Bam! Stay!'

Bam sat, turning his head from left to right, confused, who he should listen to.

'You are not going out of here!' Taehyung said angrily to Jungkook, who was almost at the doors.

'Yeah? Watch me, Kim...'

'What the hell do you mean by that?!'

'You won't kiss me. You will barely touch me... If I can't make you eat then what am I here for?'

'Are you really blaming me for taking care of you?!' Taehyung asked in disbelief.

'No. I don't blame you for anything.' Jungkook said coldly. 'You are you. I know how you behave... I guess I just thought it would be a bit different... But I promised I will go at your pace... I'm sorry but it is hard... so fucking hard! Not to touch you. So I better go... And when YOU will decide I am okay - find me.'

'Wait a damn minute! I know it's fucking hard! I am trying...'

'And who asked you?' Jungkook cut him off, angrily.

'What?' Taehyung frowned.

'Who asked you to stop yourself? Because I didn't...' Jungkook squinted his eyes. 'You asked if I'm okay, and I said I am... But you still know better!'

'Because you are so hot headed! What if you hurt yourself...'

'I was so happy in the morning!' Jungkook didn't let him explain. 'And I thought you were too! But you let this stress take over you, and no matter how I am showing you I am fine, you don't see it! Sorry I thought it would bring us closer! Sorry I assumed you would want me more! Sorry I am this kind of needy bitch that wants to have you again and again!'

'It's not just you...' Taehyung started, making a step towards him.

'Oh, yeah?' Jungkook said ironically. 'Then sorry I can't control myself as well as you... I tried to give you time and space the whole day. You haven't hugged me. You haven't kissed me... You ran away from the bed in the morning...' Jungkook shook his head and closed his eyes. 'Was last night so hard for you?'

'No. It wasn't! I just think about you!'

'Taehyung!' Jungkook screamed while walking to him. He grabbed his arms and shook him, almost tearing up. 'You know me!! You can read me! But you need to trust me when I am saying I am fine! Because as much as you know my soul it's me who lives in this body!!'

'You are no better... You could have just asked... Or hug me. Or kiss me! It works both ways!'

Jungkook blinked, surprised. He let out a fast sigh.

'Yeah, I should have done that earlier...'

He grabbed Taehyung's nape and joined their lips harshly.

Taehyung instantly pulled him closer. Pressing their bodies tightly as if his hands were just waiting for it...

They literally were eating each other's mouths. Biting and pulling. Jumping into making out with all their might.

They felt the heat building up instantly. And Taehyung slowly back away to

whisper gently:

'Why are you so impatient, bun?'

'Knowing all our pasts? Do you want to risk losing even a day?' Jungkook whispered, brushing over Taehyung's lips.

'Don't fucking even go there!' Taehyung growled.

'Fine. Then blame it on my spoiled by you ass, who wants to be high again... There are so many things I want to do to you. So many things I want you to do to me... I'm not really patient... And I want to feel you again...' Jungkook's lips traveled to Taehyung's neck.

Taehyung's head fell back.

This guy was either a natural seducer or his voice and touch had just this effect on Taehyung...

Or both.

A dangerous mix...

'I appreciate your care... But I also hate when you are stopping yourself around me. You don't have to... Trust me I will stop you.' Jungkook nuzzled his nose into Taehyung's neck, breathing heavily. 'If you want me to ask - I will ask. How many times do I have to give you permission to have me?'

Jungkook's lips traveled to Taehyung's collarbone...

'Tae... I'm this one person you can have fully... Don't hide yourself from me... Don't you want more? Without all this first-time stress?'

Yes... Taehyung wanted more. Much more.

There was a part of him that still wanted to ask if Jungkook was okay... but he knew... this time his ass would be literally kicked...

'Don't make me embarrass myself more...' Jungkook whispered. 'I don't know how to seduce you...'

'You don't know?' Taehyung muttered amused. 'Strangely, You are doing fucking amazing already...'

Jungkook shook his head and brought his lips closer to Taehyung's ear and said softly:

'Will you take me to bed if I ask?'

'I will take you even if you won't... Jump!' Taehyung unexpectedly grabbed Jungkook under his tights.

'Whoa!' Jungkook giggled, pulled up. He embraced Taehyung's waist. 'If you want to carry me like that often you will have to go to the gym with me...'

Bam barked.

'Stay Bamie!' Taehyung ordered softly and the dog finally at easy, laid down.

Taehyung slowly walked upstairs.

'I was wrong...' he admitted quietly, kissing Jungkook's jaw.

'You are cute and overprotective...'Jungkook nodded.

'We could have done it a hundred times since morning...' Taehyung whined.

'Hold your horses, Kim!' Jungkook gasped.

'Too late, babe...' Taehyung sent him a sinful smile.

'Why do I have to dare you each time and then you are going into this horny overdrive? Can't you go into horny overdrive right away?' Jungkook asked, amused, biting on Taehyung's lower lip.

'But you are so cute when you are asking all needy...' Taehyung's hands were kneading Jungkook's butt.

'Kinky Jerk.'

'Spoiled Brat.'

They smiled into each other's mouth, while Taehyung closed the doors to his room with his leg.

They hit the bed, but Jungkook was fast to switch their positions, laying on Taehyung.

'I will show you... How amazing it feels...' he whispered, pulling Taehyung's shirt up and kissing on his stomach, while his hands were working on his belt.

'What?' Taehyung choked out, while Jungkook's tongue slid under the hem of his underwear.

Jungkook pulled down Taehyung's clothes and licked his member from the bottom

to the head, making Taehyung shiver, before his mouth closed on it.

Taehyung choked out a deep, surprised moan when he felt the hot, wet heaven of Jungkook's tongue and lips.

Taehyung felt the slow, determined move of the tongue around his dick when Jungkook sucked him hard.

He lifted his hips sliding deep inside Jungkook's lips involuntarily.

Jungkook pulled away when he choked a bit and made a kitten licks over the head, closing his eyes with delight, hearing Taehyung's soft sounds he couldn't stop.

Taehyung lifted himself on his elbows, to tell him to go slowly, but when he saw him... When he saw his dick disappearing inside Jungkook's mouth.

The pleasure doubled... And the sinful expression on Jungkook's face... When he opened his eyes... This dark, hungry, satisfied gaze...

'You have such a dirty mouth...' Taehyung breathed out. 'Take me deeper...'

Jungkook felt the shiver from Taehyung's demanding voice.

He swallowed hard around Taehyung's member, covering it with saliva. He moved his head up and down, letting the dick go deeper and deeper.

'Aren't you obedient? Such a good boy...' Taehyung stuck out his tongue and licked his lips. He threw his head back breathing heavily.

Jungkook whimpered, rubbing his hips over the bed.

'Oh...' Taehyung smirked. 'You liked that? You like me talking how well you can take my dick into your pretty mouth...'

Jungkook pulled out, breathing heavily. His lips were shiny and covered in drool.

'I like your voice...' he breathed out. He got up and fastly took off his shirt. 'Tae!' he said demandingly, pulling Taehyung's shirt, to make him sit.

'You are so naughty... You want me so much?' Taehyung licked the vein on Jungkook's neck.

'Shut up, Kim... I know your weakness too...' Jungkook said, moving his hips on Taehyung's tights. 'Want me on top, right?'

Taehyung gulped hard, having a sudden vision, but he also wanted to tease...

'But you like it when I talk...' he said, sucking on Jungkook's collarbone. 'Are you so eager to ride me?'

Jungkook blushed.

'I want to try... b-but not today...' he whispered shyly.

Taehyung smiled softly. Okay... it seems he was really a blockhead thinking Jungkook would jump to everything without thinking. He should trust his boyfriend more...

He kissed him, caressing his back, until they slid under Jungkook's pants and cupped his naked asscheeks.

'You want me to take you?' he muttered.

Jungkook nodded and leaned to kiss him again, but Taehyung moved his head back teasingly.

'Words.' he demanded.

'Yes.'

'Yes, what?'

'Take me?'

'How?' Taehyung threw Jungkook on the bed, pulling down his pants.

Jungkook blushed.

'W-what?'

'Tell me how...'

Jungkook shook his head, while Taehyung reached to the drawer for the lube.

'You got shy now?' Taehyung smirked. 'Spread your legs.'

Jungkook did.

Jeeze... how he loved Taehyung controlling him like that... Doing whatever he wants with him... He was so hot, all dominative...

'Bent your knees.'

Jungkook with red cheeks slowly moved his legs. He knew how exposed he was right now and he shivered.

Taehyung caressed his inner thigh calmingly.

'Such a shy hottie you are...' he muttered.

He started to jerk Jungkook's member with one hand while the other one was covering his asscheeks and rim. Jungkook huffed softly, licking his lips. 'You know...' Taehyung slid his finger inside Jungkook's ass. 'I will be doing this as long as you won't tell me, how do you want me to take you...'

'W-whaa...' Jungkook moaned, feeling Taehyung's finger deeper.

'I guess you heard me baby...' Taehyung tried the second finger and when it went in he fastened his moving pace. 'If you won't tell me I will make you come like that...'

Jungkook shook his head.

'Oh... I know you want me inside...' A third finger went in. Jungkook moved his body in the sheets, nailing himself on his fingers. 'But either you will tell me... Or I will use your sweet mouth to come...'

Jungkook moaned, hearing that.

'You liked this idea a bit too much I guess...' Taehyung sped up the pace. 'So you don't want me inside you?' he teased. 'Going hard on you?'

Jungkook's thighs started to tremble, when he was lifting his hips slightly.

'I... I will s-show...' he moaned.

Taehyung raised his eyebrow, licking the drop of sweat that rolled down to his lips from his forehead.

'Then show me, babybun...' he pulled out his fingers and Jungkook rolled on his stomach.

He lifted himself on his knees and hands.

Taehyung gulped hard seeing him like that... His trained back was covered in sweat. His plump ass raised up only for him...

Only he could see him like that...

'Koo...' he whispered. 'I will go really deep like that...' he warned.

'I know...' Jungkook breathed out. 'I want you deep...'

Taehyung almost...almost took him in one go. Instead he leaned to kiss Jungkook's

spine calmingly, inhaling his scent, while his hand pressed the tip of his member to Jungkook's asshole.

When he was inside his arm embraced Jungkook's waist. Stroking his tummy until he felt Jungkook moving his hips slightly back and forth.

He straightened up and grabbed Jungkook's waist to hold him in place.

He made a hard thrust inside that made them both moan.

And again... and again...

Until the deep, hard slow pace changed their moans into one long blissful scream

They were kissing, stroking each other's skin, whispering dirty naughty teasing words, talking quietly, before they went under the shower.

The tension left Taehyung. Not the care he felt. But the constant worry of hurting his baby.

They walked out Bam and left him in Jeons' house for the night, because he would sulk under Taehyung's room's doors if they wouldn't let him in while nobody else was home, and Taehyung was sure... they will turn to each other again during the night hours.

His parents were coming back in the evening the next day and wanted to feel comfortable till they could... and enjoy being just the two of them.

On the next day they had to go out to meet with friends. Jungkook and Taehyung, no matter how tempting staying in the bed was, wanted to go to celebrate with their friends. So they took a long walk to Yeonjun's house, because Jungkook (while smirking) said walking around helps to soothe his back pain.

Yeonjun and Han had birthdays day by day and their Uni schedules were hectic so they decided to combine the party into one.

As they were a bit tired they were mostly sitting on the coach or by the table, eating a lot of sweets. Because a lot was going on around nobody noticed anything. They were always clingy and touchy. Their touchiness just had a deeper meaning for them now...

At the end of the party they started to help Soobin. They took the dirty dishes and

went with them to the kitchen. Soobin was instructing them where to put what and where the trash bags were. They smiled secretly at how comfortable and at home he felt in Yeonjun's kitchen.

They were cleaning the dirty dishes, washing what they could and putting the rest to the dishwasher.

When they finished they turned just to see Jimin, who was blocking the doors like a fucking cowboy ready for duel.

He was glaring at them with his eyes squinted and lips pressed tightly together.

'SPILL. THE. TEA.' he said slowly.

Taehyung gulped.

'W-what tea?'

Jungkook fastly turned around to wipe non-existing dirt from the kitchen counter, leaving his boyfriend on the battlefield alone. He already dealt with his dad... it was Taehyung's turn...

'WHAT TEA?! You are fucking glowing! And it is not the usual "*oh I am so in love*" glow!' ' he pointed a judging finger at Taehyung. 'It's an *aftersex* glow!!!'

Taehyung grabbed him pulling him closer to the kitchen, whisper-screaming:

'Can you shut up!? Not so loud for fucks sake!'

Jimin gasped. His mouth gaped. His head was going from Taehyung to Jungkook and back.

'I WAS RIGHT! YOU HAD SEX!'

Jungkook in panic jumped to him and covered his mouth with his hand.

'Be quiet! They will eat us alive!'

Jimin's eyes had evil flames in them, when he mumbled under Jungkook's hand.

'Betyoupreferetoeateachotherkinkybitches'

'What?' Jungkook frowned and took his hand away.

'Better spill the tea or I will yell it through the mic...' Jimin smirked.

Jungkook and Taehyung looked at each other and sighed.

'Okay... we did it...' Taehyung admitted.

Jimin squealed, moving his fingers impatiently.

'Details!!'

'Are you kidding me?' Jungkook glared at him.

'You can write it for me to read if you prefere...' Jimin spread his arms, while shrugging, being absolutely serious.

'No way in hell...' Taehyung shook his head.

Jimin took a deep breath as if he was going to scream in a minute.

'Okay, okay!' Jungkook panicked. 'We had sex...'

'Then we had a fight...' Taehyung added.

'Then we had sex again.' Jungkook nodded.

'And again...' Taehyung smirked.

'Angry sex at the second time? Maaaan you are brave!' Jimin patted Jungkook's shoulder.

'We weren't angry...' Jungkook frowned.

'Positions? Dirty talk? Kinks? How were you dressed?' Jimin showered them with questions.

'Jeeze! Calm you ass down...' Taehyung smacked his head.

'Leave my ass alone!' He pointed at Jungkook, while smirking 'That one is yours...'

Jungkook facepalmed.

Dami called Jimin from the living room. Jimin sighed disappointed, but pointed his fingers at his besties.

'I want details by text. Today. Or I will post an info on our group chat and we will all celebrate together losing your v-cards... How sweet, right?'

Taehyung and Jungkook went pale, they looked at each other.

Evil mochi was able to do that...

'Fine!' Taehyung hissed.

Jimin patted his cheek cheekily, before turning on his heels while whistling, not knowing two gazes were practically stabbing his back.

'I had this idea to move to Alaska with you, while talking with dad...' Jungkook pouted. 'I'm getting back to it...'

'I will book tickets.'

Yoongi was looking at the lyrics he wrote in his music studio when he heard the notification from the one app he had notification turned on for.

He smiled lightly wondering what will bring their conversation today, when he was taken aback by:

**CHIMISLOVE: Whaaaaaaaa... (╥□╥)**

**CHIMISLOVE: 😭😭😭😭😭😭**

**CHIMISLOVE: Hyyyuuunngggggg!!!!**

**CHIMISLOVE: I'm saaaaaaaaaaaaad!**

He got worried instantly, so he quickly texted back.

**SUGA: WHAT THE FUCK HAPPENED?!**

**CHIMISLOVE: I'm still a virgin! Whaaa!!! (つ˘̩̩̥̩̥̩̥

**CHIMISLOVE: But it is pretty... you know...** 

**CHIMISLOVE: Want to see?** 

**SUGA: No I don't!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Even you don't want to!**

**CHIMISLOVE: 😭😭😭😭😭**

**SUGA: What kind of fucked up drama is this?!**

**SUGA: Are you drunk?**

**SUGA: Better tell me you are not the crying-drunk type!**

**SUGA: I can't handle those...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I'M NOT DRUNK! ( ≧Д≦)**

**CHIMISLOVE: I'M SAD! (。•́•。)**

**SUGA: Your dramatic ass... *facepalm***

**SUGA: Sad because you are still a virgin?**

**SUGA: So am I, what's the drama about?**

**CHIMISLOVE: You are? 😳**

**SUGA: I haven't even kissed.**

**CHIMISLOVE: I could teach you...** 

Yoongi sighed.

*I know you would...* he thought.

**SUGA: My point is... it doesn't matter.**

**SUGA: It's not like you had no chances right?**

**SUGA: So you just decided to stay like that...**

**SUGA: Your own choice. Why sulking about it?**

**CHIMISLOVE: My friends had sex!**

**SUGA: Good for them...**

**CHIMISLOVE: They are glowing like a fucking Eiffle Tower!**

**CHIMISLOVE: And I am here dead drop gorgeous!**

**CHIMISLOVE: With angel face, pretty ass and dirty mind!**

**CHIMISLOVE: I want to glow too!** 😓

For a moment Yoongi was spacing out looking at the words: angel face, pretty ass and dirty mind...

He grunted even if he was alone and focused on Chim's misery.

**SUGA: Are they a couple?**

**CHIMISLOVE: That's a lame word to describe them...**

**CHIMISLOVE: They are those destined lovers you know...** 🤔

**CHIMISLOVE: Falling deeper and deeper in love with each gaze...** 💗💗

**CHIMISLOVE: My cuties...** □□

**SUGA: So they know each other for long?**

**CHIMISLOVE: They know each other forever...** 😶

**CHIMISLOVE: And I don't exaggerating...**

**SUGA: So it's not about sex.**

**SUGA: They glow because of the connection they share...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I KNOW THAT!** 😓

**CHIMISLOVE: That's why I am sad!!!**

**CHIMISLOVE: I'm waiting, you know...** □□

*Me too...* Yoongi sighed. *Me too, baby...*

*Just let me make sure... everything calmed down...*

*Just a bit more...*

**SUGA: Stop being a weak bitch.**

**SUGA: It will come.**

**SUGA: We are bound by the Red String of Fate.**

**CHIMISLOVE: We?**

Yoongi gulped.

*Fuck! FUCK! Think fast Min!!*

**SUGA: We as Eadar-Eisimeleach...**

**SUGA: Not every path made by destiny is straight, right?**

**SUGA: Sometimes there will be lot of turns...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Yeah... My babies don't have it easy either...**

**SUGA: See? Nothing is simple. And nothing's a coincidence...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Yeah... Hug! ʃつ◕□◕ʅつ**

**SUGA: No.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Please! □□□□**

**SUGA: NO.**

**CHIMISLOVE: I have a really nice ass and pretty dick you know...**

**SUGA: I... believe you...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Then hug me! □**

**SUGA: The frequency I am sighing around you... smh...**

**SUGA: *hug***

**CHIMISLOVE: □□□**

**CHIMISLOVE: Now send a heart! Even black one!**

**SUGA: Are you training a dog?!**

**CHIMISLOVE: No. You. In flirting... (☆▽☆)**

**SUGA: Do you have some kind of sick pleasure from getting me embarrassed?**

**CHIMISLOVE: YES!** 😈😈

**SUGA: Does it make you feel better?**

**CHIMISLOVE: YES, HYUNG!** 😁😁

**SUGA: Fuck...** 😣😣

**SUGA: I will stand it then...**

---

Chill chapter.

But we are going into action soon.

Hope you laughed a lot.

You got smut for free...

You are welcome.

BlairWitch91 ❤□

# Chapter 43: Under the Lights

**Seoul, 1st of October 2068**

Jimin was sitting in his room working on one of the subjects he considered absolutely unnecessary in his field. But it had to be done if he wanted to maintain his scholarship and internship offers.

He pouted, but he smiled unexpectedly when he got the message:

**SUGA: What do you want for your birthday?**

Jimin's jaw literally dropped. Eyes widened.

What the hell?!

What. The. Actual... HELL?!

Suga - his absolutely reserved - online friend asked him something sweet...

ABSOLUTELY OUT OF FREE WILL?!

OMG!! The opportunity to tease this guy was endless now!!!

Jimin smirked.

**CHIMISLOVE: Sorry... I am still speechless...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Are you sick?** □

**CHIMISLOVE: Is it even you?** □

**CHIMISLOVE: Maybe someone stole your phone?** 🤔

**CHIMISLOVE: I am a bit scared...**

**SUGA: Stop fooling around!**

**SUGA: If you don't want anything it's even better for me!**

**CHIMISILOVE: Hyyyyuuunggg!!** (つ≧▿≦)つ

**CHIMISLOVE: It's really you!** ♡(˘¨Ɛ□·:·)
□

**SUGA: I hate you...**

**CHIMISLOVE: No you don't.** 😊

**CHIMISLOVE: Chim is love and you love me! □□**

**CHIMISLOVE: But it was so sweet I choked!**

**SUGA: Choked on what?**

**CHIMISLOVE: On your dick... 😏**

**CHIMISLOVE: Well more like on the thought of it, but still... ¯_(ツ)_/¯**

Jimin was laughing to himself, giggling like a madman to his phone.

**SUGA: I will never try to be nice again...**

**CHIMISLOVE: But you are always nice...**

**SUGA: HUH?! NO I AM NOT!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Yes you are!**

**SUGA: Believe me I am not.**

Well to me you are, Jimin rolled his eyes.

**CHIMISLOVE: So... Can I choose anything?**

**SUGA: No.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Huuuuu?! But you asked! 😞😞**

**SUGA: But you remind me you are a satan who can be trusted...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Then what can I get? *pouts***

**SUGA: You know the deal... Something I won't refuse...**

**CHIMISLOVE: We know each other for so long and you still don't trust me... 😭😭**

**SUGA: It's not about trust. But about safety...**

Jimin frowned and pressed his lips together. He almost typed millions of questions, but he knew... Suga will just disappear if it gets too much.

So he sighed and answered what he already planned of asking either way:

**CHIMISLOVE: *Nevermind.***

**CHIMISLOVE: Complete it for me.**

**SUGA: It's completed.**

**CHIMISLOVE: No. It's not. You wrote the lyrics. You composed the music.**

**CHIMISLOVE: But it's not completed. It deserves to be completed, hyung.**

**SUGA: ...**

**SUGA: What do you mean?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Find someone who will properly sing it...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Just like you did with *Serendipity*.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Make it alive. Make magic...**

**SUGA: It's almost impossible...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I don't believe there is anything impossible for you hyung...**

**SUGA: Too sweet...**

Jimin smiled sweetly.

**CHIMISLOVE: Are you blushing? 😊😊**

**SUGA: Fuck you!**

**CHIMISLOVE: I was waiting for this only to say:**

**CHIMISLOVE: Yes, please. □**

**SUGA: Can you get off of my dick already?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Oh...**

**CHIMISLOVE: You wish I would be on it, hyung...**

**CHIMISLOVE: And definitely you wouldn't want me to get off... 😏😏**

**SUGA: ...**

**SUGA: I have to go.**

SUGA: □*black heart*

**CHIMISLOVE: Chicken. 🐓**

**Daegu, 5th of October 2068**

Few days later Yoongi was walking through the city. There were still an incredible amount of buildings that were destroyed and the city wasn't as crowded as before the war. First the important places had to be restored: hospital, electoral station, water supply. It was important for Daegu and the area outside it.

Lot of communication lines were still not fixed. Only in a few places well-working internet was available. Building up the logistics routes from the countryside of the Republic for supplies to secure all major cities and small places was a hard job.

They had to work with what they had as the international trade was limited. Not all countries considered the Republic a country with equal rights.

The legal international journeys from the Republic were almost impossible. There were no passports available yet... The only territory that was available for them was in fact South Korea where they could just go by foot.

It was just a country on paper...

With more shadows that one could count.

They were still considered the citizens of South Korea for the rest of the world.

And for South Korea itself they were considered just rebels or spoiled kids that ran away from home...

Well... usually kids are running from home when they don't feel loved or safe...

But it all didn't mean that it was just a waste of their effort and time before everything will fall apart... (That's what Yoongi hoped at least). He was amazed by how many people stayed inside the Republic and didn't try to get out of it. Wanting to build something together - Interdependants and non-Interdependants. But even more surprising was how many Interdependants from all over the world wanted to move here. They were coming to South Korea and then just wanted to cross the border of Daegu.

For Interdependants the access was easy... it was enough to show their marks in one of the boarders passages. One of the first things the President organized was the Crisis Management Bureau, which was, among others, responsible for helping

new citizens find their place and be useful for society, according to what they wanted to do.

As some of the modern solutions weren't working, Interdependants powers were filling the gap. Or just openly using their skills.

So Yoongi walking in the morning around the City Hall area, which of course was the representative one, and the most clean one, saw a pair of young soulmates, who were working around the greenyards. Planting something, making it grow with their earth power... - obviously enjoying their job.

Above Yoongi's head some gravity users or air users were helping lift the heavy building materials to the upper levels in the buildings that were currently under reconstruction.

Interdependants with flying power were fast to help with delivering important things or information at great lengths with incredible speed.

It looked like heaven...

Heaven, where the Interdependant's power was welcome and happily shared with non-Interdependants, who weren't afraid of it. They wanted to use it, when there wasn't technology available, either exchanging skills, asking for favors... or even offering payment.

Maybe he was delusional... but he could imagine how they all will decorate the city for Samhain with candles, lanterns, music... respect...

It would be nice... for once, experience something like that...

And of course there was ISA... - The Army of Republic... Most of Interdependants still were connected to it. Wanting to protect and defend. But the Army also was taking care of fixing cities, roads. Securing supplies... Keeping calm.

Because of course not all non-Interdependants who hated Interdependants left the city... They were calmer...but in Yoongi's eyes it just meant they are more sneaky...

The sudden silence of the terrorist was suspicious too...

Yoongi sighed. He didn't go for a walk to think about conspiracy theories! He went for a walk to think about an impossible task Chim gave him.

Impossible!

*Nevermind* couldn't be recorded.

Especially not in 8 days!

*And why the hell this guy was so obsessed with his lyrics and music?!* - Yoongi whined in his head.

*And even more importantly!! - Why the fuck do I care!?* - he gritted his teeth.

It was not like Yoongi wrote the music and lyrics so the song won't ever be sung...

He just didn't expect someone would want to hear it...

He already tried a few times to sing it... Should he find someone?

Everything in him revolted at the thought. It wasn't written for anybody actually...

It was inspired by Chim's words. And the music was born out of Yoongi's tired mind that was covering non-stop existing anger in him...

He should just show middle finger to Chim and say it is not possible... He should choose something else!

Yoongi nodded to himself, when he imagined Chim's last words, said in an amused, teasing way, with this angelic voice...

***Chicken.***

Yoongi groaned frustrated, turned on his heels and angrily walked in his home direction.

**Seoul, 13th of October 2068**

Jimin had an exam the next day so he just had a calm celebration with all important friends and cake. He came to his room to do fast repetition and go to sleep.

Suga wasn't active in the app for 2 weeks.

Jimin was worried he crossed the line with his request. But he wouldn't mind just getting simple wishes on this day. His request was more like a challenge to make Suga develop more of his music, because he really was a magician and his talent shouldn't be wasted...

It was really late when he suddenly got a notification with a link to the secured file he and Suga used before.

Jimin's jaw dropped.

He did it?!!

He really did it?!

**SUGA: Happy Birthday.**

He fastly opened the link and downloaded the song. He put on his headphones and played without hesitation.

He didn't even notice, when he was turning up the volume with every second passing until it reached maximum.

What was that?

This energy? This pain of youth? This middle finger shown to everyone in the form of sound and angry words spitting fire?

Was this created by the same person, who made *Serendipity*? The sound as soft as a lullaby? How many layers did this person have?

And who the heck was singing this?

So powerful! So angry!

He was repeating it all over again until it sank into him. Until it somehow made him stronger... and more bold.

Then he shook his head in excited disbelief and his fingers started to dance over his keyboard.

**CHIMISLOVE: AAAAAAAAAAAAA!!!!**

**CHIMISLOVE: WHAT THE FUCK IS THIS!?**

**CHIMISLOVE: IT'S AMAZING!**

**CHIMISLOVE: I CAN'T STAY STILL!**

**CHIMISLOVE: I don't know I wanna go make something rebellious!**

**SUGA: ...**

**SUGA: Don't.**

**CHIMISLOVE: HOW THE HELL YOU CAN CREATE SOMETHING LIKE THIS?!**

**CHIMISLOVE: THIS IS SO GOOD! 😩😩💫💫**

**CHIMISLOVE: ARE YOU A GOD? 🙇♀**

**SUGA: I'm a king. I'm a boss.**

**CHIMISLOVE: FOR SURE YOU ARE!**

**SUGA: I was joking…**

**CHIMISLOVE: KJDNASJFNALKJ!!!!**

**CHIMISLOVE: MINDBLOW!**

**SUGA: Can you stop screaming?**

**CHIMISLOVE: NO!**

**SUGA: So you like it!?**

**CHIMISLOVE: I feel the electrifying energy in my veins!**

**CHIMISLOVE: How had you found a guy who rapped it so perfectly?!**

**CHIMISLOVE: It suits the lyrics! The music!**

**CHIMISLOVE: You are a genius!**

**SUGA: S-shut up…**

**CHIMISLOVE: You should show this to someone!!**

**SUGA: I showed you…**

**CHIMISLOVE: I meant someone who will make it recognizable as it deserves!**

**SUGA: No.**

**CHIMISLOVE: You are an idiot!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Who sings this?! He is so talented! Can I check his other songs anywhere?!**

**SUGA: No.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Huuuuuu?! Is it a random person?! With this talent?!**

**SUGA: Can you like s-shut up already!?**

**CHIMISLOVE: No till you tell me who this guy is!**

**CHIMISLOVE: His voice and anger are... bewitching!**

**SUGA: It's me. Now, shut up!**

Jimin's eyes widened. He played the song again. And again...

Was it his voice?

Raspy. Flawless.

He was stunned for a good 10 minutes.

**SUGA: Hey! When told you to shut up I didn't want you to go completely silent.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Is it really you?**

**SUGA: Yes. You don't like it?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Are you kidding me?! I love it even more!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Can I get more?**

**CHIMISLOVE: For Christmas? Valentines? National Events? Your birthday? Star Wars Day?**

**SUGA: What? What is Star Wars Day?**

**CHIMISLOVE: The perfect day for you to create and sing another song!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Like any other day!**

**SUGA: Stop it.**

**CHIMISLOVE: I don't want to... I want to hear you more...**

**SUGA: Glad you liked it. I'm going...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Nooo! I love it! Create more!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Please hyung!**

**SUGA: ...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I am your biggest fan now!**

**SUGA: Seriously you should stop this. It's nothing much.**

**CHIMISLOVE: If this is nothing much I am eager to hear when you create "much".**

**CHIMISLOVE: Please do it... Even not for me.**

**CHIMISLOVE: You were made for it...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Don't waste it.**

**SUGA: I will think about it...**

**Seoul, November 2068**

Namjoon, Jin, Minji, Hoseok, Taehyung and Jungkook were sitting in the kitchen in Kim's house.

Jungkook was playing the recording Kai sent them.

It was almost like a commercial for Interdependants. Showing the growing Republic. The safe place for every Eadar- Eisimeleach.

Indeed - the free, respectful, enjoyable celebration of Samhain was beautiful.

Festival they made... Openly showing their powers and bonds without any risk... was beautiful.

The voice of the Speaker in the spot was calm and gentle. Almost mesmerizing...

*Equality is possible...*

*We are working together to create a safe place for everyone.*

*Hand in hand. Without labels. Using our talents. Magical and non-magical.*

*Everybody is welcome here.*

*During the last 9 months 10000 Interdependants from all over the world became the citizens of the Republic. As long as we all will respect our rights and laws... we will make this place bloom.*

*Together.*

The commercial ended.

The short movie was indeed beautiful, even showing the destroyed places, which were being fixed.

'Kai said... that it's the spot that is playing in all available places and portals... The 3EO side is full of photos, interviews and recordings like that. Interview with non-Interdependants and Interdependants...' Minji said.

'It's looks really good...' Jin sighed.

'When you are not focusing on other things it is...' Namjoon nodded. 'But according to Kai and MOI, in Daegu a lot of outside sites and portals or contents are marked as "This content is not available in your country.' They are closing their point of view inside...'

'Indoctrination?' Hoseok frowned.

'No matter how you look at it...' Namjoon nodded. 'They are happy now... But no matter how fluffy the cage is... It's still a cage.'

Jungkook was looking at the sweet picture displayed on the screen.

'It's too quiet...' he shook his head.

'Well, the situation calmed down for now...' Minji started, but Taehyung shook his head, instantly picking up Jungkook's thoughts.

'You are looking at what's visible... That's your job. We understand. You look at politics. At international affairs... We are not as skilled in reading all of this. But we know... there is someone behind all of this...'

'Maybe he is not the one who makes decisions... but he causes someone to make them...' Jungkook frowned. 'It's his playground...'

'Are you absolutely sure about it?' Namjoon frowned.

Jungkook looked at him.

'I can't say... his presence was always causing some turmoil in Interdependants' life.' he said hesitantly. 'He was more focused on...' he peeked at Taehyung. '... us. But whenever we were involved in some catastrophe, war... battle... humanity problems... he appeared there. As if he was just waiting when we will stand up for Interdependants...'

'As if it was his way to lure us out...' Taehyung said quietly.

'Someone who would plan something like that...' Minji sighed heavily.

'I don't think he is a human being at this point...' Jungkook frowned. 'I think he is mortal...'

'That would mean he has plenty of time to plot...' Taehyung said sternly.

Hoseok was still looking at the screen.

'So... we should change our way of looking at the events then...' he concluded.

Minji nodded.

'I would inform Yongguk and MOI that we should focus more on Interdependants itself, not on relations between Interdependants and non-Interdependants. Especially in Daegu...'

'And you two!' Jin pointed at Jungkook and Taehyung. 'Keep a low profile!'

Taehyung gasped, offended.

'Hey! We have plenty of things to do with our normal life! No need to remind us!'

'Yeah! We have trainings, practices, studies, music academy, house duties! Taehyung has a job too! We barely sleep!' Jungkook pouted.

'If you barely sleep it is not the house duties or studies fault!' Jin raised his eyebrow.

'Neither dance practices.' Hoseok was quick to assure.

'Or trainings...' Minji squinted her eyes.

'Eeee...' Namjoon's eyes were running between all of them, scared of the approaching topic. 'Boys, you are right! You are doing a good job!' he clapped his hands, nodding.

'I love you uncle...' Jungkook, still sitting, hugged Namjoon's side.

Taehyung grunted, and Jungkook felt the other's nails digging in the inner side of his tight.

Jungkook looked at him warningly, but Taehyung just raised his eyebrow demandingly.

Jungkook sighed and closed his laptop.

'We will go to walk out Bam...' he said, standing up.

'I will sleep at Koo's tonight...' Taehyung informed his dads, walking after

Jungkook.

The parents waited till the front doors closed after the boys. Then Namjoon sent a crooked smile to Hoseok.

'Your turn...'

But he couldn't finish when Jin smacked his arm hard.

'Good job, boys?! Are you insane?!'

'I had just one aim and it was to save my brain cells. So suck it up!' Namjoon squinted his eyes.

'I can't stand it anymore!!' Jin whined. 'Soundproof walls! Where are you?! I will pay double!'

'I will pay triple...' Minji sighed.

'The team will be here near Christmas...' Namjoon patted her arm.

Hoseok looked at Jin before his eyes traveled to Minji.

'What's with you guys? They are not even loud. I haven't heard anything even once... They barely kiss around us now...'

'Yeah... They try to be really subtle... Not like you!' Namjoon nodded. 'That's why you shouldn't bring that up!' he glared at Jin.

Jin and Minji looked at each other and then with pity at their husbands.

'It's not about them being loud! It's about this whole tension! Whenever they are in the same room I'm drowning in testosterone!' Jin whined.

'Exactly... They can't calm their asses... They don't even have to be close! It's enough when they look at each other!' Minji sat heavily on the chair.

'So the soundproof walls won't save you...' Hoseok giggled.

'Maybe when we get them, boys will just become so tired the tension will just die down...' Jin folded his hands as if he was praying.

'I predict nothing like that will happen in the next 3 to 5 years...' Namjoon smirked.

'Or ever.' Hoseok nodded.

Jin hit his head on the table.

'Maybe we should just move on together and give them a second house...' He sulked.

'Absolutely not!' Namjoon denied. 'They are barely legal adults! We won't spoil them like that at such a young age...'

'But my sanity...' Jin faked - cried, cuddling his cheek to the table top.

'Maybe we should send them to grandparents for sometime?' Minji asked hopefully.

'They have studies.' Namjoon shook his head.

'Just deal with it.' Hoseok giggled.

Minji peeked at him and pouted.

'Make me.'

Namjoon choked on the grape he picked up from the plate on the table.

'And you are blaming teenagers!' he coughed out in disbelief.

Jin lifted his head, looked at Namjoon and smirked.

'We have an empty house tonight...'

Namjoon rolled his eyes with a small sinful smile on his lips.

'As if it ever stopped you...'

'We all should have had soundproof walls a long time ago...' Hoseok giggled.

**Mountain House, 11th of December 2068**

It was the first training after Soobin's 18th birthday, which they all celebrated loudly. Yeonjun organized the greatest party for his Prince and they all had a huge hangover after it...

They were celebrating not just their maknae's birthday. They celebrated the moment in which they could be officially signed as a unit under MOI's command.

Red String was now official.

After the training, Dragon gifted them all their uniforms and their favorite weapons. They now could have them in their houses in case of emergency.

Kai secured their phones and put them on the list of MOI's emergency alerts, so they could get official calls now.

They all sat in Hwasa's living room to discuss what was going on after the last conclusions Minji and Namjoon made with boys.

'It's really hard to get any information from inside Daegu...' Kai said. 'Of course unofficially there are ways. I already sent Yongguk what I could get...'

'Some MOI's people were ready to move to Daegu undercover. We should get some more info after...' Minji sighed. 'For now we know... that when an Interdependant is crossing the border he or she has to show the mark. It's scanned to check if it is not tattooed...'

'It means they are making the database...' Kai frowned. 'If they scan them they can keep them. And they also know instantly who is a Sealer and who is a Holder.'

'Yeah.' Minji confirmed. 'Soulmates are asked about their powers to be directed where or how they can help, work, develop business. Of course they can also choose something else after, but still... they know their powers as soon as they cross the border...'

'What about singles?' Dami asked, confirming her thoughts silently with Taehyung, who nodded slightly, that he had the same thought.

'They don't know their powers or can't use them, so they just move them where they want...'

'Mom, tell your people to check closer, what are they doing with Sealers and what are they doing with Holders...' Jungkook said.

'Yeah. Especially Sealers.' Taehyung nodded.

'You think about the shooting at that time...' Namjoon frowned. 'That only Holders were killed.'

'Yeah... And where are all the people with separation syndrome?' Taehyung asked. 'Interdependants were dying there during war. Maybe not much. But still they had to deal with separation syndrome cases...'

'If we want to get info like that... we will have to invigilate the army...' Minji frowned.

'They called themselves protectors... but how many soulmates would actually willingly work for them?' Dragon asked quietly. 'It's a regular army...'

'During the war there were lot of single Interdependants willing to risk Taboo to help...' Jin said sadly.

'And I don't think that after the war ISA would be so willing to lose the powers they had...' Namjoon shook his head.

'It's depressing...' Hoseok sighed.

'We were overlooking this for too long...' Namjoon gulped.

'I will try to get as much info as I can.' Kai said, patting his back. 'And the one I sent to Yongguk. You should read it. It's their constitution... and basic laws.'

'I will check it then.'

They all were sitting, deep in thoughts. Adults and youngsters.

Anxious. Worried. Thinking about possible outcomes...

Finally, Dragon clapped his hands.

'Okay! Next training as planned, next week! Then we will have a break till January, kids!'

'Okay!' They screamed unisono and started to slowly walk to their cars.

Jungkook and Taehyung holding hands, were walking behind Jimin. Their bestie was spacing out a lot recently...

'What's up?' Taehyung caught up with him, and Jungkok took the other side.

Jimin looked at them.

'Huh? Nothing...' Jimin blushed.

Jungkook squinted his eyes.

'Jimin-ssi!'

'What? Nothing is going on. I have just had hard rehearsals at Uni recently...' Jimin shrugged.

'Then why are you blushing?' Taehyung raised his eyebrow.

'Umm... I was just thinking about something...'

'Something or someone?' Jungkook looked at the phone in Jimin's hand.

'Not your business!' Jimin glared at him.

'Hey! Everything is okay?' Taehyung put a hand on Jimin's shoulder. Their friend wasn't easy to snap at them like that.

Jimin sighed and looked at the ground.

'Actually... more than okay...'

'Then what's with this frown?' Taehyung asked gently.

'I think I just like this guy... a bit too much...' Jimin whispered, stroking his phone with his thumb.

'You mean your online friend?' Jungkook asked hesitantly.

Jimin looked at the horizon, spacing out.

'He is... special...'

'JIMIN!' Baekhyun called him from the car.

Jimin blinked and snapped out from his thoughts. He smiled at Taehyung and Jungkook.

'Don't worry. I have everything under control...' he waved at them and ran to his parents car.

Jungkook crossed his arms around his chest.

'He soooooo doesn't!'

'What is the possibility that his soulmate and his online friend, he is apparently falling in love with, are two different people?' Taehyung asked cleverly.

'Nothing is a coincidence... but as I know... They don't share personal details for some reason. And that's suspicious.'

'Yeah... I don't want to get his hopes up either...' Taehyung sighed.

They came back late to their houses. Jungkook hanged his uniform and hid his new equipment in his closet, before walking out Bam and taking a shower.

He went to Taehyung after. There was no night they spent in separate bedrooms for some time now. It wasn't even about sex...

They tried to have mercy on their parents. So they usually were making sure nobody was around... Or they were getting at it in the mornings when Jin and Namjoon went to work and the home was quiet.

Well sometimes they didn't have patience for that tho... That's why the laundry room was his favorite place. Washing machine sounds, closed doors and small space were making wonders when they didn't want to be too obvious.

The showers were too... Just not the cold, lonely ones anymore. Steamy, hot showers taken together was their favorite way of ending the day, before getting to sleep.

Or the car.

Or the random university bathroom...

But if Hoseok would ever joke about his studio being their hideout too sometimes... they would sternly deny it...

The important thing was the nights though. Cuddling. Inhaling each other's scents. Stroking each other's skins. Dreaming together... Feeling that whenever they would turn the other was there.

It was charging their batteries daily.

Jungkook entered Taehyung's room through balcony doors. The other was taking a bath.

He started to put Taehyung's things in order automatically. He was cleaning his desk when he saw a glimpse of the colorful paper in the bin.

He took it out because the photo on the leaflet was good and he wanted to check it.

**INTERSHIP OFFER**

He read through it, frowning.

Taehyung came out from the bathroom in his pajama pants only.

Jungkook looked at him and his gaze became dreamy for a moment looking at Taehyung's naked chest, before he shook his head to snap out of his naughty thoughts.

He lifted the leaflet.

'Why did you throw it away?'

'It's just a leaflet...'

'It's a direct Pais Intership offer with your name on it...' Jungkook squinted his eyes.

'My boss gave it to me.' Taehyung shrugged,

'And you threw it away? Why?'

'It's in Japan. For a month!'

'So?'

'I'm not leaving you alone!'

Jungkook sighed and neatly unfolded the leaflet on the desk.

'You will apply for it and you will go to Japan.' he decided sternly.

'NO!'

'YES!'

'NO! I DON'T WANT TO!'

'YOU DO!'

'I DON'T WANT TO BE AWAY FROM YOU!'

'It's a month. Not a year! You will take this chance. And you will buy me something awesome from this good amount of money they offer...' Jungkook smirked.

'Nooo!' Taehyung whined, and backhugged him. He glued himself to Jungkook's back.

'Tae...' Jungkook said quietly. 'Don't make it hard for yourself and for me. I want you to get the experience you need. Your photos are amazing. You deserve this.'

'Come with me.' Taehyung pouted.

Jungkook giggled.

'You know I can't...'

'Then I am not going.' Taehyung dragged Jungkook to the bed and laid on him.

Jungkook cupped his face and looked at him.

'You will go. Do it for me, okay? We will see how we cope away from each other.'

'It's not at all a nice perspective...' Taehyung kissed his nose. 'I prefer this...'

'Me too. But you love to take pictures. And you should upgrade your skills when you have the chance. Okay? You would do the same for me...'

Taehyung sighed heavily, still shaking his head.

'Think about our future...' Jungkook smiled and pecked Taehyung's lips. 'You will be the best photographer in Seoul...'

'And you will be the husband of the best photographer in Seoul...'

'Of course...' Jungkook started to kiss Taehyung's face. 'But still... You have to earn the best photographer title so I can be the best photographer's husband right?'

Taehyung pouted.

'Right.' he said reluctantly.

'So you will go?' Jungkook kissed Taehyung slowly.

Taehyung nuzzled his face in Jungkook's neck.

'Okay.'

'Awwww.... Don't sulk, baby...' Jungkook cuddled his boyfriend in his arms. He brought his lips closer to Taehyung's ear. 'When you will come back... I will make sure you will be really really happy...'

Taehyung's body twitched. He kissed Jungkook's neck.

'How?' he purred.

And Jungkook started to whisper to him how happy he will be when he comes back from his internship.

**Seoul, 30th of December 2068**

At the end of December Jungkook got his driving license and he was shoving it in anybody's face. Not like just Soobin didn't have it already...

But their parents informed them in the middle of the month that their Christmas gift is soundproof walls (making them almost burn down from embarrassment). They took their revenge by not coming out from their rooms often for the whole week.

Their parents, even without any sound around, started again to consider moving out... Or kicking them out of the house...

But both boys, robbed of their Christmas gifts from their parents, decided they will make the gifts for each other especially awesome this year.

So using the opportunity that the renovation crew was hanging around Kims' house, he asked Namjoon and Jin to create the darkroom for Taehyung out of the smallest guest bedroom. He equipped it together with all four parents and their friends.

And Taehyung bought Jungkook a camera he wanted to make films with better quality.

As soon as Jungkook figured out how to use it, he was recording all their Christmas moments, Bam, their friends and everything he considered worth memorizing.

He even created an online cloud where Taehyung could keep his family photos and he could keep his recordings. He moved and secured all of their previous photos and recordings Hoseok, Minji, Jin or Namjoon had ever taken since they were kids.

Even now, when Taehyung walked to the bedroom, he was playing with his new camera.

Taehyung was tempted to throw it away. Jungkook should be focused only on him...

His wish was granted faster then he thought when Jungkook faced the camera and said:

'Today is a day worth immortalizing.... Today my beautiful and only boyfriend Kim Taehyung turns 20! There is no man as gorgeues and sexy as him...'.

'Stop it...' Taehyung, laughing, embarrassed, tried to take the camera out of his hands.

'No...' Jungkook said stubbornly and embraced him with his arm, showing the both of them together. 'Look at the camera and smile for me with this 1 million dollar

smile!' he kissed cheek.

'Shut up...' Taehyung grabbed Jungkook's chin and kissed him hard.

He was fast to embrace Jungkook's waist and press him closely, while they made out in heat.

Jungkook dropped his arm with the camera and it slowly slid from his fingers on the carpet, when he forgot about anything else.

There was only Taehyung...

He embraced his neck, while Taehyung grabbed him under his tights, lifted him and walked with him to the bed.

This day was sweet and special.

Just as their soft, slow love making session.

In his dreamy state still drowning in the galaxy of bliss and Jungkook presence and scent, falling asleep Taehyung, felt a hand on his cheek, before a soft, tender kiss was left on his lips and the naked body cuddled to his chest.

It was the best gift he could get again... when Jungkook whispered:

'I love you, Taehyung...'

---

Hello!

Sorry for being late... *bows*

Here comes the update!

Hope you enjoyed!

BlairWitch91❤

# Chapter 44: Rights and Wrongs

**Seoul, January 2069**

Namjoon was sitting in Yoongguk's office, reading through papers.

Yoongguk was looking through the window with a dark, thoughtful face.

Namjoon took off the glasses and sighed heavily.

'Have you read it?'

'Yes.' The answer was short and harsh.

'Is it the original document?'

'These are the laws currently in use in the Republic of Daegu. Signed by the President and National Security Council...'

'As I am aware after the proclamation and ending of war the State of Emergency has been declared right away. It's normal. The ending of war doesn't guarantee immediate safety and order.'

'Following your thoughts... No. They did not abolish the State of Emergency till now.'

Namjoon rubbed his eyes tiredly.

'It's really shady and smelling bad Yongguk...'

'I know.'

'According to this law during the State of Emergancy or Martial Law, all Interdependants over 17 are subject to oversight by the National Security Council. And the Council's main force is the military...'

'Simple people are not aware that even now they are part of the Army of the Republic.'

'They are giving them simple tasks. Restoring the country, helping it functioning properly... but if anything would happen.' Namjoon snapped his fingers. 'They are going to fight like that. With the ones they told them...'

'If the citizens will get used to this peace... they will fight either way to keep it. Look at all of it... It looks like heaven now... Wouldn't you fight for it?'

Namjoon nodded and frowned when something Jungkook and Taehyung were repeating echoed in his head.

'They don't have diverse bonded soulmates and single Interdependants...' he looked through the papers again.

Yongguk turned to him.

'Isn't it obvious? There is no use in an army from Interdependants who can't use their powers.'

Namjoon chuckled bitterly.

'Yeah. For us it is. Because we had never encountered something like that in our history. But in fact, they can use both of them. Find a willing Holder. And find a Sealer who will agree or who will be forced and you have the next unit with power...'

Yongguk's eyes widened.

'No. That's Taboo! That's the profanity of all the Interdependants stands for!'

'They already used it during the war...' Namjoon looked at him hard.

'The war! They were in danger!'

'Look at this...' Namjoon pointed at something in the papers. 'The Interdependants who lost their soulmates are under care of the Ministry of Health that guarantee the necessary safety and care. And guess what? The Ministry of Health is managed by the National Security Council during the State of Emergency. It means they can even use soulmates during their separation syndrome using the anger and grief of Holders or despair and numbness of Sealers!'

Yongguk sat heavily on the chair.

'This actually looks good. The whole constitution and laws practically don't hurt Interdependants or non-Interdependants. They both are punished and protected equally if they go against any of those laws. Well except where the non-Interdependants would be proven to work against the country or kill or hurt severely one of Interdependants. They are immidiately exiled from the Republic and all their belongings are confiscated. In the reverse case an Interdependent is sentenced to lifelong jail. They are not going to exile Interdependants... They also connect soulmates because they have the database of the marks - which is strange - but not really hurtful. But when you switch to one of the Emergency States the National Security Council and the Army of the Republic suddenly have enormous power.'

'Which would be normal as in any other country... That's why these are Emergency States...'

'During the War States, yes.That's when the reserves are called up or trained, and it usually involves men and the voluntary conscription of women. But when it comes to Interdependants gender and age doesn't matter. But the power does.'

'They can't force them! People will start to leave!'

'If the already formed army will allow them. And look at the penalties... One thing Interdependants are afraid the most? Separation. That's the punishment. And for the single Interdependants? It's jail. And when they will have single units closed, they will be able to do what they can with them!'

Yongguk was looking at Namjoon for a long time. Trying to comprehend all that was going on.

'That's really sneaky... They have a State of Emergency right now and nothing like that is happening. People feel safe. Don't see the risk. Even more are coming there. And they believe in 3EO and in ISA. Because they protected them from the beginning. They will fight for them willingly. But when they will snap out of this utopia... If the situation gets hard...'

Namjoon nodded.

'As always in history... Most will believe in what they fight for. And the units that will see through it... will just quietly disappear.'

'For all the gods, Namjoon! Dozens of Interdependants are crossing the border of Daegu each day! Looking for a better life.'

'I don't want to panic...' Namjoon said quietly. 'In normal case I would just consider this the first sketch of rights when the country is growing up and blooming and learning, but...' Namjoon hesitated. How much should he tell about the so-called "Lord Loo". He didn't want to explain how his children are getting so much knowledge about him.

'But what?' Yongguk asked.

Namjoon thought fast.

'The Republic was created on 3EO's and ISA's grounds. It all started with Jaehyun's murder. And I would believe that only terrorists were responsible for it, but... the outburst of war... The moment we could have still won all this without bloodshed and separating the countries, the shooting where Interdependants were killed. It were only Holders, Yongguk. For non-Interdependants it would matter who they would kill. But when you have a Sealer you still can use his power. And a Sealer

with separation syndrome? It's a perfect tool!'

'I don't want to believe it...'

'Me neither. But right now Daegu is the place with the highest number of *Eadar-eisimeileach* per square meter.'

'We have to make them aware, but it is not so simple... We can try to stop people from coming there from outside and for sure I will do it. But...' Yongguk sighed heavily. 'I am afraid they have the reason to keep the Emergency State, Namjoon.'

Yongguk closed his eyes and started to speak.

**Daegu, January 2069**

Yoongi entered the wing of the house that was used by his uncle, aunt and Taeil. He knocked on the doors to the room, which was currently Kyung's office.

'You said I should come, uncle?' Yoongi said and looked around, expecting Taeil. But his cousin wasn't there.

'Yoongs, how are you?'

'As fine as I can... I'm helping Gahyeon to take over the company...'

'Considering the last years, the company's finances don't look good...'

'Considering the last years... we had a war.' Yoongi rolled his eyes. 'We don't have as many employees, half of the buildings and factories are destroyed and our international trade is dead... We have to regroup forces and start with what we can...'

Kyung frowned and looked at Yoongi.

'The Republic needs contractors for International Trade. Inform the board to start preparation. I think Min's Company along with 3 other big companies from the area are the only ones that could handle the contracts. It will be a chance...'

'Is it wise to involve the company in politics?'

'You don't think like businessman Yoongi... All over the world big companies are fighting for government agreements because they are safe... Ask the board. Let Gahyeon learn...'

Yoongi nodded. It was true. He didn't think like a businessman...

His uncle lifted his head and closed the files he was checking. He smiled and stood up. He sat on the chair next to Yoongi's chair so the desk won't divide them.

'You are so not like Jaehyun... and so much like him at the same time. He had this amazing ability of joining his business skills and social responsibilities he felt. You have the second part, but you were always a dreamer. And an artist... I'm proud of you.'

Yoongi blinked in surprise.

Kyung smiled as if he was expecting this reaction from him.

'I know you are not agreeing with me in half of the decisions I made. And that's totally okay. You should never go against your own self... Jaehyun didn't raise you like that. I know for sure that there is a huge amount of people who stayed beside us just because of you...'

Yoongi widened his eyes.

Kyung laughed and patted Yoongi's knee.

'The fact you are not aware of it is one of the reasons they did! I agree with Inho... you are this type we really need around. Doing what has to be done in his own way, not focusing on the bigger picture. You are a born leader, Yoongs. Just like Jaehyun... You feel this responsibility inside you for people around you.'

'I don't want to be the leader.'

'The best leaders don't want to.' Kyung leaned on the backrest. 'There are two types of leaders. Natural born ones. Who accepted their role with respect. And they cherrish and know the abilities of their people. They know how to use them without demanding or being questioned. Those are people, who had time to get to understand their people. And they are loved by them for that... The second type - is like you. They don't feel good enough for it... You don't pressure people around you to do what has to be done. You just do it. Show the example. And the rest follows. They observe you and feel trust, because of your actions.'

Yoongi sighed and looked at his godfather.

'I... honestly I don't know what to do now. Where should I be? What role should I take?'

'Do you want to have a bigger role?'

Yoongi shook his head.

'I don't want to be too involved in the company. But I don't want to be in the Army either. It's not for me. I can't be a soldier... I am not made to listen to orders, uncle.'

'I know.' Kyung smiled lightly. 'But we still need people like you and people that want to be around you, Yoongi. We need order. It's still fragile. So... I want to give you a job if you want... ISA was made as the security agency. Someone who was there for Interdependants where the police failed to protect them. Army is considered more aggressive and powerful. They are the last force we want to use. But we can make a unit of the Guardians. Directly under my command. Main job is to support the Army. Rescuing, not fighting.'

Yoongi was thinking. He needed an aim for himself. He desperately needed it. He felt as if he was just spending days without any reason. Waiting for the storm to come. Next war to burst out... He was expecting the worst... Maybe that's why he couldn't wholeheartedly believe in the country's restoration.

'What would it mean?'

'Trips outside the city. Checking the borders. Helping people. Being under reach in need. Supporting the army if needed...'

Yoongi was thinking. He was really distrustful of the army from the moment they started to use Taboo during the war.

So... it would be a good opportunity to... quietly observing what the army was doing...

And well... he would finally do something helpful.

'It's not really different from what you were doing during the war. Just more peaceful I guess...'

Yoongi nodded.

'Okay. I will think about it. But still... I would like to get information about where to go and what has to be done. Information not orders... Is it possible?'

'Normally no... But we are still in a State of Emergency. So I guess we can work out units working like MOI's units were before. Acting only when needed and when they want.'

'That would suit me.'

'I think so too.' Kyung smiled.

'Is State of Emergency still necessary?' Yoongi asked.

Kyung frowned.

'I wish it wouldn't be...' he whispered and looked down. 'We are trying to keep hope in people. Give them purpose to rebuild their safe places...'

'But?'

Kyung nodded and sighed heavily.

'But we have information... from our intelligence... that the South Korean National Army is preparing the actions. There are movements on the borders. And... Interdependants are expelled from the army... Lot of them came here. They refused to fight against Interedependants... and they were told they can fight or they will encounter the accusation of treason...'

'Are they preparing for an attack?'

'The President signed the agreement. We proclaimed the Republic. But it doesn't mean that the government is happy about losing territory and profits from it... Of course they will try to take it back...'

'They will never learn...' Yoongi shook his head. 'We were not prepared before and we kept on fighting. They don't stand a chance for united powers of Interdependants!'

'I guess that's what ICI is trying to tell them... But ICI... don't have power anymore. There is less Interdependants in South Korea than in Daegu... If they will stand against the Government... they will be considered a threat too. That's why I don't want people to lose focus. That's why the State of Emergency is still legit.'

Yoongi nodded.

'Don't tell anybody. We don't want to panic. We try to prevent it. Secure the borders. And of course prepare people to fight if needed. But I called you here not to talk about politics, you know, I'm moving out. With Chorong. We will move to the building they are now called "President's Palace". The old place of the governor of Daegu... I don't want to put all of you in danger. But can Taeil still stay here?'

'Sure.'

'He is part of the army and of course he is working with me, but... I want to keep him safe. He will be safer here...'

Yoongi nodded.

'Where is he now?'

'In Gumi. It's the city parted by the border. We have to check it often...'

'Of course he can stay here.'

'I prepared an evacuation plan for all of you from here if needed. But there is a possibility that we will be evacuated here if something happens, too. This place is easy to secure... Is it okay with you?'

'Yes, Mr President.'

'I always imagined Jaehyun as the president... Not myself.' Kyung sighed. 'He was much better at making hard decisions than me... '

Yoongi stood up.

'So we should be cautious all the time, right? And still train...'

'If you have time for it... with a heavy heart, but... that's what I would recommend. And Yoongs... this time, take Gahyeon with you...'

Everything in Yoongi wanted to oppose it. But Gahyeon wasn't a little girl anymore... And she was beside their mother too. She had to be able to protect herself and Handong...'

'Okay...' he agreed.

**Seoul, February 2069**

Jungkook was driving, chatting like a parrot. Making requests about what Taehyung should bring him. When he finished he started to make rules too:

'Call me each evening. No exceptions!'

'You will need to stop me from calling you each hour, not each evening...' Taehyung chuckled.

'Don't look at others! I will know! I will fucking know if you do!'

'Koo, I am a photographer... I need to look at people to take their photos....' Taehyung shook his head, amused.

'You can look through lenses... Don't change the topic! You know what I'm talking about.'

Taehyung laughed out loud.

'Okay I will walk looking down all the time.'

'Nooo....' Jungkook whined. 'You will fall under the bus or something! Okay! Okay! You can look! Just... not for too long...' he sulked.

Taehyung put his hand on Jungkook's nape and started to massage it.

'Baby... you were the one who wanted me to go...'

'And I still do!' Jungkook said sternly.

'You know you are the most beautiful person on earth. Why would I look at anybody else?'

'Beautiful and hot?' Jungkook pouted.

'Extremely hot.' Taehyung nodded.

'And you will send me the pictures of your meals?'

'Mhm.'

'And your face?'

'Mhm.'

'And if someone tries to touch you, you will kill him or her?' Jungkook raised his eyebrow demandingly and looked at Taehyung.

Taehyung put his finger on his jaw and turned it to the front.

'Eyes on the road.' he instructed.

Jungkook looked at the road, but repeated:

'Will you?!'

'Anybody who will touch your property won't walk away on their own legs...' Taehyung smirked.

'Good.' Jungkook nodded and focused on the road.

'You are so cute...' Taehyung giggled.

'Sure. If my possessive, jealous ass is cute for you...' Jungkook wasn't amused by Taehyung's light way of taking the topic.

'Because you don't have to be jealous and you know it, but you still are...'

'Can't help it.' Jungkook mumbled, squinting his eyes. 'I just fucking know everybody wants you!'

Taehyung shook his head, smiling shyly.

Jungkook parked at the airport and helped Taehyung to get out all the luggages. They went through all the procedures and stood in front of the gate.

Taehyung back hugged Jungkook and stood with his chin on the other's shoulder, rocking him in his eyes.

'You know...' he whispered in a dangerous tone to Jungkook's ear. 'All those rules you just made... are applying to you too, right?'

'I won't send you the pictures of my meals. I eat. You don't.'

'But you will send me the pictures when you will be going to sleep and after you wake up, because I know, when I am not around, you can stay all night, don't sleep enough and walk like a zombie all next day...'

'Okay.'

'And you won't look at others...'

'I won't.'

'And if someone tries to touch you... you will make sure he or she won't speak, walk and move their hands for the next few weeks...'

Jungkook opened his mouth, but Taehyung continued.

'... and you will make a picture of this person.'

Jungkook frowned.

'Why?'

'So I can find them and make sure they won't look at my property... ever... again...' Taehyung whispered absolutely seriously.

'If I am cute... you are fucking scary when jelouse...'

Taehyung smirked and kissed Jungkook's ear.

The announcement informed them about opening the gate for the flight to Tokio.

Jungkook turned and fixed the bag on Taehyung's arm.

'I will take care of our parents.' he promised. 'Call me as soon as you reach.'

Taehyung nodded and hugged him.

He cupped Jungkook's face and kissed him slowly.

Jungkook parted their lips and, with close eyes, whispered:

'Have a safe flight. Go.'

Taehyung kissed his forehead and moved to the line of passengers waiting for the security control. He was waiting, moving forward slowly, but turned his head to see Jungkook still standing in the same place. With his back turned. He saw the other moving his hands to his face.

He knew all along... The whole cheerful blabbering was Jungkook's way to divert his attention.

He looked at the long line of people and left the queue. He moved to Jungkook and hugged him. Pressing his forehead to his own shoulder.

'Idiot.' he whispered. 'You don't have to act as if everything is okay...'

'I just don't like to see you going away...' Jungkook choked out.

'I don't like to go away from you...' Taehyung pressed his eyes tightly.

'It's just a month...'

'It's a month. It's a fucking 30 days! We haven't been separated for so long since we were 2...'

'That's only another reason to check how we will do...' Jungkook took a deep breath, and raised his face.

Taehyung wiped the tears from his cheeks.

Jungkook kissed his lips several times.

'See you soon!' he breathed out, making Taehyung smile.

Taehyung flicked Jungkook's chin and kissed him one last time.

'See you soon...'

****

In the middle of February Jimin woke up at night and couldn't fall asleep again.

He probably was even more worried about Jungkook and Taehyung than their parents... But till now his clingy besties were doing okay. They were glued to their phones whenever they could tho....

Once when he was on a walk with Jungkook and Bam, Taehyung called just to facetime his babies. Jungkook stopped in the middle of the park just to do the whole ritual, showing Bam Taehyung on the screen and let them talk.

It meant basically Taehyung cooing at their puppy and Bam whining and trying to lick the screen. Then Taehyung took them for a walk through Tokyo streets, showing them around.

So he guessed they were coping like that... Hearing each other's voices and looking at each other, knowing the other one was fine.

And he could bet they took their sextexting to another level...

If he would be sneaky enough and gather enough blackmailing material maybe he would get a peek at it... He smirked at the thought.

After turning from side to side for some time he gave up on his sleep and took his phone. He looked at their group chat and smiled seeing Soobin's and Yeonjun's pictures from their Valentine's trip to the fanfare.

**JIMIN: Is anybody awake?**

**JIMIN: I can't sleep!** 😭

**JIMIN: HELP ME!** 😫

After some time, he saw Dami texting:

**DAMI: Dude! It's fucking 3 am! Just close your eyes and go to sleep!** 

**JIMIN: If it would be so easy I would!**

**JIMIN: Don't be a bitch!** 😡

**JIMIN: You are not sleeping either...**

**DAMI: If your annoying ass will wake up Yoo, I will kill you!** 

**DAMI: I thought it's an emergency!**

**JIMIN: So if I would be dying, it would be better?** (-_-ㅅ)

**DAMI: That would be a good reason to wake me up!**

**JIMIN: Hate you!**

**DAMI: No you don't...**

**MINHO: Why are you blowin up my phone in the middle of the night?** (☞ಠ_ಠ)☞

**MINHO: Could you yell at each other in private chat?**

**HAN: Are we doing a night chit chat?!**

**HAN: Awesome!**

**MINHO: No, baby. Go to sleep.**

**HAN: Why can't you sleep, Jiminie?**

**JIMIN: I don't know...**

**HAN: What are you thinking about then?**

**YEONJUN: What's going on?! Something happened?!**

**DAMI: That's what I was afraid of!**

**DAMI: Told you, you stupid chicken, you will wake up the panic!**

**SOOBIN: Everything is okay, hyung? Are you not feeling well?**

**JIMIN: Binnie... Hannie...**

**JIMIN: Those stupid bitches are mean to me!** (╥_╥)

**YEONJUN: When I was mean!? I was worried!**

**TAEHYUNG: Guys... if you wake up Jungkook I will kick your asses when I come back!** [$(ಠ_ಠ)$]

**TAEHYUNG: All of you!**

**TAEHYUNG: I just managed to put him to sleep!**

**JIMIN: How can you put him to sleep being in Tokyo?**

**TAEHYUNG: I sang to him...**

**MINHO: Jimin can't sleep. Sing to him too... (人 •ᴗ•)**

**TAEHYUNG: No. What happened Chim? Text me.**

**JIMIN: Nothing happened. Why are you not sleeping yourself?**

**TAEHYUNG: Told you... I was making sure Jungkook will sleep.**

**DAMI: Dude, have you eaten? I saw your last photo. I think you lost few kilos...**

**SOOBIN: Oh no! Hyung!! I saw it too! You have to eat!**

**YEONJUN: Yes! You have to!**

**YEONJUN: Otherwise Jungkook will go on a rampage when you come back!**

**MINHO: And nobody will be safe!**

**HAN: Don't eat! I'm waiting for it!**

**DAMI: Han!**

**JIMIN: HAN!**

**YEONJUN: Han!**

**MINHO: Baby... *facepalm***

**JIMIN: You all are stupid... If Dami noticed I bet Jungkook already did too...**

**TAEHYUNG: He did...**

**SOOBIN: And what happened?**

**TAEHYUNG: I don't want to talk about it...**

**DAMI: Does it have something to do with him booking a ticket to Tokyo?**

**TAEHYUNG: If auntie wouldn't stop him he would be already here!**

**HAN: And your ass would be whooped! AHAHAHAHHA!**

**TAEHYUNG: Fuck off!** □

**DAMI: Yoohyeon is waking up! I will fucking kill you all!** 🔪

**YEONJUN: Uups! Your princess is scary after waking up...** (□–□;)ゞ

**DAMI: NO SHE IS NOT!**

**DAMI: She looks as if she was robbed and about to cry!** □

**YEONJUN: And that's scary!!!** 😱

Jimin got a notification from the other app:

**SUGA: Hey... I can't sleep.**

His heartbeat sped up.

He texted fastly on the group chat:

**JIMIN: I'm suddenly sleepy!**

**JIMIN: Byeeeee!**

**DAMI: Bitch... what?** 😒

**MINHO: Huh?**

**YEONJUN: You woke up everyone and now you are sleepy?!** 😒

**JIMIN: You are so boring I am out!**

**JIMIN: Suck it up!** 😠

**JIMIN: Love you all...** 😌

**SOOBIN: Is he really okay?** □

**HAN: Bet someone more interesting texted him...** 😏

**TAEHYUNG: Leave him be.**

**TAEHYUNG: Night.**

**DAMI: I'm going to put Yoohyeon to sleep again...**

**HAN: Minhoooooo... cuddle me!** ⊂((□▽□))⊃

**YEONJUN: FFS! Do it in private!** □

**SOOBIN: …**

**SOOBIN: Hyung…**

**YEONJUN: …**

SOOBIN: □□□ *puppy eyes*

**YEONJUN: …**

**YEONJUN: I will be there in 30.** 😩

Jimin rolled his eyes, closed the chat and opened the app.

**CHIMISLOVE: Hi…** □

**SUGA: Can't sleep either…?**

**CHIMISLOVE: I woke up. Aren't you a sleepy head?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Something is bothering you?**

**SUGA: Not exactly…**

**CHIMILOVE: Wanna talk?**

**SUGA: That's why I texted you know…**

**CHIMISLOVE: Don't be mean!** 😒

**CHIMISLOVE: It's too early or too late for it…**

**SUGA: I'm always mean.**

**SUGA: How didn't you notice earlier?**

**CHIMISLOVE: I like your savage ass…** 😎

**CHIMISLOVE: Usually…**

**CHIMISLOVE: What do you want to talk about?**

**SUGA: I don't know. Anything.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Say… Do you ever wonder…**

**CHIMISLOVE: What is your soulmate like?**

**SUGA: I…**

**SUGA: No matter how he is... I will accept him, right?**

**CHIMISLOVE: But if you could choose... someone perfect for you...**

**CHIMISLOVE: ... what would he be like?**

**CHIMISLOVE: What do you imagine?**

**SUGA: Do you imagine?**

**CHIMISLOVE: I asked first!** 😑

**SUGA: I will tell you... If you tell me first...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Sneaky!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Okay... So...**

**CHIMISLOVE: In my imagination he is... gentle.**

**SUGA: ...**

**SUGA: Wishful thinking...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Don't disturb me!** 🙄

**SUGA: Jeez! Okay.**

**CHIMISLOVE: He has this kind of gentleness that is not visible at the first sight... But random when you need it the most. He seems... cold, but that just a pose, to hide how much he cares. He doesn't need to speak much, but he acts and that makes you feel.**

**CHIMISLOVE: He is protective. Strong willed. Calm.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Warrior with a heart of the poet...**

**SUGA: *cough* quite and ideal you picture for yourself...**

Jimin pressed his lips tightly, absolutely not amused.

'I just described you, jerk!' He mumbled to himself.

Then he instantly blushed at this thought. His heart did a flip because of the sudden fear and uneasiness.

*Don't be silly Jimin! Don't do it to yourself!*

**CHIMISLOVE: He is not perfect. I don't want him to be.**

**CHIMISLOVE: He doesn't have to be.**

**CHIMISLOVE: He will be for me despite all his flaws...**

**SUGA: That's quite a precious thing to say...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Your turn.**

**SUGA: Okay. So my soulmate would be: energetic, annoying, loud, kinky, clever, funny.**

**SUGA: He needs to be able to read through my spite.**

**SUGA: Will have to actually... read through me in every situation...**

**SUGA: And he would have to have a hard ass, because I am not affectionate...**

*You are*, Jimin thought. *In your own way...*

**CHIMISLOVE: That person seems smart and annoying af...** 

**SUGA: Right? I think so too...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Then... why?**

**SUGA: I don't know...**

**SUGA: Maybe because you are an idiot like that...**

**SUGA: And I really like it...**

Jimin's eyes widened. The breath got caged in his throat. He suddenly couldn't swallow his saliva.

He teared up.

*No... please... don't make me fall for you...*

He took a deep breath and as always joked:

**CHIMISLOVE: I knew you have a crush on me!** 😎

**SUGA: If I wouldn't like you I would not talk with you.**

**SUGA: I am not a masochist...**

Jimin felt so, so weak. Why? Why did he continue? Why couldn't he get mad or run away as always?

**CHIMISLOVE: Suga...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I'm weak.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Don't make me fall for you...**

**SUGA: ...**

**SUGA: Say...**

**SUGA: Would it be so bad?**

**CHIMISLOVE: It would.**

**CHIMISLOVE: I am not a masochist either.**

**CHIMISLOVE: I don't want to have feelings for you and meet my soulmate. Get confused. Suffer. Make him suffer too because of it...**

**SUGA: I understand.**

**SUGA: Well... good I absolutely suck at flirting then.**

**SUGA: You are safe.**

**SUGA: And not gonna lie... You are much more annoying than my soulmate in my imagination.**

**CHIMISLOVE: FUUUUCK YOUUU!** □

**SUGA: Night!**

Miles away in Daegu Yoongi spread his arms on the bed, looking at the ceiling.

He almost fucked up.

He almost started to convince Chim he can safely fall in love. But it would blow everything covered by him for so long...

The other was confused and Yoongi didn't want to make him feel uneasy. But he really... liked him. It was true. And he really wanted to say it.

Why the hell did he even agree to this conversation!?

Oh yeah... because he wanted to know what Chim wanted from his soulmate. He

was frowning the whole fucking time... but then...

*I don't want him to be perfect...*

Yoongi closed his eyes, feeling the sudden calmness inside him.

*You don't have to be perfect either, baby...*

*****

Jungkook was helping Hoseok cleaning the garage. He was sorting the things in the boxes and cleaning the shelves.

Hoseok knew he had a hard day, but he didn't even have to ask. Jungkook just came and started to help.

It has been three and half weeks...

Jungkook started to be nervous. He was trying to get rid of it by jogging with Bam or making himself busy or training to get tired.

'Kookie... you don't have to... I will clean the rest...' Hoseok said gently. 'I know you had a busy day...'

Jungkook shook his head.

'I want to help... It's something normal, you know... I enjoy doing those things with you...'

Hoseok nodded and turned to check the other box.

He was thinking that Jungkook was hiding his anxiety and longing. But after what he heard, he realized that both of them - Taehyung and Jungkook - indeed were like that. It wasn't just the case of them being raised like that. Even if their house duties were annoying them sometimes, they were welcoming them, because it was... normal.

They enjoyed natural, everyday life.

As if...

Hoseok gulped and looked at his son.

As if they were preparing themselves to lose it and wanted to have a lot of memories like that.

Hoseok put the box aside, walked to Jungkook and hugged him hard.

Jungkook blinked, surprised, before hugging him back.

'I'm fine, dad.' he mumbled.

'You are always working so hard... Dancing. Combat. Singing... It's wonderful, honey. But let your body rest sometimes... I know you think that the times fly by too fast...'

'Well... it doesn't! There are still 9 days till Taehyung comes back!'

'I'm not talking about Tae right now... You have all your life, Jungkook. All life to enjoy little and big things. Don't try to squeeze everything as if you will be robbed of it next second.'

Jungkook stayed silent. He closed his eyes and inhaled his father's calming scent.

'Stop thinking about past lives... Their stories don't have to be yours...'

'This shadow around us is hard to ignore, dad...'

Hoseok hid his face in Jungkook's hair.

'You are scaring me. And the thought you live in fear... is making me mad! If you can't feel safe... both of you! We failed as parents!'

Jungkook shook his head.

'You gave us all we needed. You gave peace and safety...Thanks to you we are still stable.'

'Sometimes I would prefer you wouldn't be so brave...' Hoseok clenched his teeth.

'Am I brave? I don't know... I just want to be with Taehyung... And see all of you safe and sound.'

'You are brave!' Hoseok cupped Jungkook's face. 'Never doubt that! You are fearless!'

'Fearless? I'm scared of mom!'

'Everybody is scared of your mom! That's not being a coward! That's being a reasonable man!'

Jungkook giggled.

Hoseok hugged Jungkook's shoulder.

'Come! We will make our lady annoyed and make her watch *Divergent*...'

'She hates this movie...'

'Because she loved the books and they fucked it up...'

'You just want to make her rant and curse at them...'

'Exactly... She is so cute, looking all pissed...' Hoseok chuckled.

'Taehyung is cute when he eats...' Jungkook mumbled and blushed.

'You will get your cutie boyfriend back soon and make him eat as much as you want...'

'Indeed!' Jungkook cheered up.

They ended up in the living room, watching the movie. Minji texted Jin and Namjoon if they wanted to join and they all fit on the couch while Jungkook was sitting leaning his back on Jin's and Minji's legs, with Bam's head on his lap.

Minji was stroking his hair slowly, while Jin was feeding him with apple pieces from time to time.

The vibrations were heard from Jungkook's pocket.

'It's Tae! I have to answer!' he tried to get up, but Jin and Minji stopped him forcefully, putting their hands on his shoulders.

'You can answer here!'

'What? No!'

Namjoon turned down the volume.

'Come on! No need to hide the flirting, we are perfectly aware you are not saints...' Hoseok teased him.

Jungkook blushed and sighed heavily.

Why was it always him? He asked himself miserably.

He answered the call.

'Kooooooooooooo!!!' Taehyung whined. 'I don't want to be here anymore!'

'Ummm... Tae...'

'I can't anymore! Show me your tummy! Please... I will fucking cry if I won't see...'

Jungkook, blushing like a tomato, moved the camera to show four, mischievously amused faces, behind him.

'Tae... Parents are here...'

Minji bent down to the phone, over Jungkook's shoulder, smiling like a devil.

'If you won't see what, TaeTae?'

Taehyung gulped and licked his lips.

'Ummm... I missed you, guys!' he fastly said, smiling nervously.

'Sure. Missed us so much, you called us 10 days ago...' Jin said, rolling his eyes.

'How many times have you called Jungkook in the meantime?' Namjoon asked. 'I will check the bill...'

'Can you stop?' Jungkook whined.

Hoseok chuckled and ruffled Jungkook's hair.

'Okay. We will be merciful today...'

Sighing with relief Jungkook stood up.

'Go, go...' Minji lazily rested her back on Hoseok's chest.

'Yeah... show him the tummy...' Jin screamed after Jungkook, who was walking upstairs.

The boy instantly sped up his steps, trying to run from embarrassment. The last thing they heard from the phone was Taehyung's voice saying with determination:

'We are moving out!'

**Seoul, March 2069**

Namjoon drove with Jungkook to the airport, because the boy was so excited, they were afraid to let him drive by himself.

Rightfully...

When they got stuck in the traffic, Jungkook was checking his watch every five seconds.

'We will be late...' he whined.

'He will wait...' Namjoon said calmly.

Jungkook was nervously tapping the car floor with his leg.

35 days. Almost 5 weeks.

His angel was coming back finally!

But this fucking traffic...

Namjoon barely managed to stop the car when Jungkook sprang out of it. He shook his head, amused, seeing him running between other parked cars to the entrance.

They were 20 minutes late, but he was sure Taehyung just got out of the plane and was waiting for his luggage.

He calmly walked to the waiting hall just to see passengers from the flight from Tokyo getting out of the gate in a rush. He pulled out his phone (he promised Hoseok to take pictures). But he decided to record when he saw the moment when Jungkook and Taehyung saw each other.

He smiled widely, seeing as they at once started to run to each other, as if they hadn't seen each other for years.

They crashed in the middle of the hall. It looked almost painful. He was expecting (and was mentally prepared) to see them jumping on each other trying to eat each other's faces...

Instead...

He saw Jungkook, throwing his arms around Teahyung's neck desperately. Taehyung embraced his waist with one arm, almost lifting him in the air. His other hand traveled to Jungkook's head. His fingers intertwined in the other's hair. They both had closed eyes.

As if the sudden relief of the reunion was... hurting them.

They looked as if they were in pain... Pain caused by a sudden letting go of their determination to hold on and keep going.

They survived just fine... but only they knew how much it cost them. And the

blissful feeling of being together again was achingly sweet...

Namjoon stopped recording and looked at the floor, smiling tenderly to himself.

He let his boys have their moment...

---

Hellooo!

How was the chapter?

Hope it was good!

It turned out to be longer than I thought...

BlairWitch91

# Chapter 45: Primal Fear

**March 2069**

Again two young lovers surprised their parents.

They all expected that as soon as Taehyung would enter the house they would close themselves in their little world. Wanting to be alone and catch up with all unholy things they were robbed of because of separation.

Instead they were glued to each other in such a gentle and tender way as if they wanted to soothe the longing with daily, domestic touches.

While Jungkook was helping Jin with the dinner and Hoseok and Namjoon were sitting by the kitchen table listening to Taehyung's story, Taehyung had his hand on Jungkook's lower back constantly.

When Minji came back, she hugged the hell out of Taehyung, telling him how handsome and manly he is, looking above his head at Jungkook. She smirked and he just squinted his eyes at her in response, warningly.

He grunted and pulled the back of Taehyung's t-shirt to make him sit on the chair next to his.

Taehyung looked at him and for a moment they were lost in each other's eyes.

The whole world disappeared for them.

They hadn't heard when Namjoon called them.

They hadn't heard Hoseok's amused snort.

Minji sneakily took a picture of this moment to tease them later, but... when she lifted her eyes again at them, there she understood the sacred moment between them.

The unspoken, amazed talk of their eyes.

*You are here...*

*I'm so happy...*

*I finally can see you...*

*I finally can sense you around...*

Then Taehyung nuzzled his forehead to Jungkook's temple and the younger smiled slightly scrunching his nose.

Jin coughed.

'Finished staring at each other? We are still here you know...' He raised his eyebrow.

Jungkook looked down timidly, but Taehyung teasingly looked at his dad.

'Oh, you are? I haven't noticed...'

'You brat!' Jin laughed and threw an apple at his face.

Taehyung caught it swiftly without even thinking much about it. He wanted to bite on it, but Jungkook looked sternly at him and took it out of his hand.

'Eat dinner first.'

Hoseok giggled.

'Time for roasting and explanation... Why haven't you eaten well Taehyung?'

'I did!'

Jungkook glared at his boyfriend, without a word and started to eat his food.

'I really did!' Taehyung whined, looking at him with puppy eyes.

Jungkook ignored him.

'Koooooo...' he cried out, pulling his shoulder. 'I've sent you a lot of pictures right?'

Jungkook just raised his eyebrow looking at his chopsticks with noodles.

'There were just a lot of fast days going. We were moving to a lot of locations and running around... But I ate!'

'Something beside chocolate and fruits?' Jin poured the oil on the fire.

'Dad!'

Jungkook gritted his teeth.

'Hey! You weren't better! How many times I caught you not sleeping in the middle of the night?!' Taehyung frowned, still whining.

Jungkook didn't say a word while still eating calmly.

Silent treatment at its best...

Hoseok, having the experience from all the years with this kind of behavior, peeked at Minji, who sent him angelic gaze in return, decided to give his godson a helping hand.

'Not that I mind the drama, TaeTae... But you are still not eating... And I don't think this help you in this situation...'

Taehyung stubbornly crossed his arms over his chest.

'I won't eat till he talks with me.'

The sound that Jungkook let out could be described only as irritated sighed.

He turned around with the bowl in his hand and pressed the brought his chopsticks with noodles to Taehyung's lips demandingly.

Taehyung happily bent his head and devoured the food.

'Brats...' Jin shook his head, mumbling to himself.

But it was always like that. Taehyung loved food. All kind. And he could eat a lot... when someone was there to remind him it's time for eating. Left alone, he could just simply forget, easily lost in his colorful mind, things he loved and busy schedules.

Jin smiled lightly to himself when he recollected two little babies, when Jungkook couldn't even walk but he was already stuffing Tae's mouth with his biscuits...

Who knows? Maybe it was caused by it? Maybe from their earliest childhood Taehyung didn't mind the food, because he was sure Jungkook will be there to make sure he won't walk around hungry?

Taehyung gulped and asked:

'So what's going on around?'

Namjoon straightened and sighed, while Jungkook was steadily feeding Taehyung and himself.

'Situation is not good...' Minji started heavily. 'I am not talking about Daegu only. The government is preparing the resolution that the Republic was proclaimed illegally... That the President didn't have the right to agree to it without the agreement of the whole Senate...'

'They could have said it earlier...' Taehyung frowned. 'They haven't protested then!'

'The truth is they were absolutely shocked and not prepared for the force of Rebellion... They strategically backed away to regroup forces.'

'If Daegu won't agree to their terms we will have military movements soon...'

'Did they give them the terms they can actually agree to?' Jungkook frowned.

'They want to keep the unity of the country. It's understandable... The whole Korea is vulnerable being this divided. But no. They didn't give them anything besides their demands. They want to show them strength... Not looking that the people, living in the new Republic, being happy there... getting used to the freedom and, no matter how you look at it, equality.. Won't be so willing to lose it...' Namjoon shook his head.

'Military is preparing their camps on the border. The river is under constant observation. They are trying to surround them... The Navy is located around the east shore...' Minji added.

'That's not just it... Yongguk said they don't want to talk with ICI, UN or any other Interdependants organization. The Prime Minister said that after the Civil War and Daegu Separation the entire economy is in bad shape. The stock market, investments. Budget revenue, etc. It's their job to look at it...'

'It's their job to keep citizens safe!' Jungkook gritted his teeth.

'And economic safety is one of the things important for citizens.' Namjoon sighed.

'So we are just sitting and watching for the second war to start?' Taehyung asked Minji in disbelief.

Minji looked at the table.

'I am afraid it's not all...' she whispered. 'They know... if they go against Daegu... they will have to watch their backs... Too many Interdependants live there. If they start a war, even those who weren't involved last time will try to help... So they are trying to prevent it now...' she gulped.

Taehyung blinked.

'W-what do you mean?'

'It didn't get to Seoul yet... but they started to hunt down Interdependants...'

'Hunt?' Jungkook leaned to his mother.

'They try to identify them and keep an eye on them... They haven't made any moves yet... But we are under observation.'

'And the ones who were in the National Army were expelled. We are not trusted...'

'The Prime Minister has already said a few times that either we will fight for them... or...'

'Or what?' Taehyung asked aggressively. 'They will imprison us?'

'They call it preventive detention...' Namjoon said bitterly.

'Pink Alert moved to Daegu... They said either way they are at risk. Will get involved in fights to protect themselves or to protect others. So they moved to Pohang. Not to Daegu itself...' Hoseok informed them.

'Lots of people are moving to the Republic right now. That's why military secured the borders... They were lot of incidents when Interdependants were being held back by Korean Army. So The Army of the Republic intervened.' Minji explained.

Taehyung looked at four parents.

'Should we think about it too?' he asked quietly.

'No.' Nmajoon shook his head. 'Not till the situation will be absolutely helpless...'

Jungkook slowly lifted his eyes at him.

'Because of us?'

The heavy silence fell on the kitchen. Jungkook's gaze became dark and dangerous.

'We know we will always fight on two fronts. Non-Interdependants versus Interdependants is just one side of the coin... What can we do? We have to stand for our people, but...' Namjoonm gulped.

'We won't bring you closer to the danger till we can prevent it...' Jin said harshly. 'Daegu was and is the core. And all the movements are starting from there...'

'He is there. Yes. I think so too...' Jungkook nodded.

'That's the end of discussion then.'

'It will come either way. He will come here or we will go there. What if we will be captured and held back here and the war will start?'

'Jungkook... Do you want to be involved in a war inside a war?' Minji looked at him sternly. 'It's not just them against us... It's Interdependants against Interdependants!'

'I don't want to be involved in anything...' Jungkook said bitterly. 'But I am. Either you want it or not.'

'We are.' Taehyung corrected him calmly. 'We know that if we go there... things can escalate quickly. But we have to be prepared to move out from here. Fast. Quiet. Any time.'

'With everyone.' Jungkook added.

'Don't agree to this so easily!' Minji stood up. 'I'm fed up with you two being so fucking calm about this shit!'

'Minji...' Hoseok tried to stop her.

'No! I hate it! Stop chasing after death! There is nothing pretty or heroic in blood, screams and killing!'

'It's not about chasing it...' Jungkook said in disbelief that he had to explain it. 'It's about facing it...'

Taehyung tiredly brushed his face.

'Would it be better if would ask ourselves "why us?" everyday?'

'Don't twist my words, brats!' Minji pointed her finger at Jungkook and Taehyung. 'That's not how I raised you! You are fucking fighters! Best one I had ever seen! You have the fucking ultimate team, that we sometimes can't embrace with our minds!'

She hit her hands on the table.

'I don't care how many times you have lost with him! I don't care how many deaths you have seen in your dreams! They are not YOU! We gave you everything we could! I trained you from the time you were 6! Not even knowing what will come! Stop agreeing to die so easily!'

She turned around and walked out, shutting the doors behind her.

Jin stood up and looked gently at Taehyung and Jungkook with a lot of sadness in his eyes.

'You know, guys... It hurts when we look at you and see how desperately you try to live each day to the fullest... As if you already gave up... Even when you two are together... You are holding each other as if it was the last day...' he shook his head and walked out after Minji.

Hoseok and Namjoon were sitting in front of Jungkook and Taehyung who were

silent and shocked from the sudden turn of events.

Jungkook hesitantly looked at Namjoon, chewing on his lower lip.

'We are not giving up...' he said quietly.

Namjoon crossed his arms over his chest.

'If you want me to believe you... Start to think you will win...'

Taehyung smirked and checkled bitterly.

'Appa... We don't doubt we will win... I'm more than sure... we are the force that destiny is pushing us forward like an avalanche that will bury him... You don't know half of our power yet...'

Hoseok stretched his hand and put it on Taehyung's palm.

'Then what's the problem with the two of you? Shouldn't you be more bold? More confident?'

'We will win...' Jungkook said unexpectedly, standing up. 'But the question that is lingering in the darkness is...'

Taehyung stood up too, look at his fathers and ended the sentence quietly:

'...how much will we pay for it...'

Namjoon's eyes teared up, as if Taehyung just said: "start to cope with it as we are".

Taehyung sighed and shook his head.

'Seriously, dads... stop worrying... we love our days... We love you... Time is passing by... And we won't stop this. We are not going to stress ourselves out and lose our days like that... But you can't make decisions that will be best just for the two of us... If moving out will be better, for all of us, we should move out...' he rubbed his eyes tiredly. 'Sorry... I'm sleepy... I will talk with auntie tomorrow...'

Jungkook looked at his sleepy tiger and looked pleadingly at Hoseok.

'Would you take care of mom, for now? We will spoil her tomorrow I promise...'

Hoseok winked at him.

'Don't worry... Take care of your sleepy boyfriend...'

'Yeah!' Taehyung demandingly put his arm around Jungkook's neck. 'Carry me!'

Jungkook snorted with laughter, bent a little and took Taehyung in his arms, grabbing him under knees.

'Seems I have to carry the princess to the bedroom...' he laughed and while Taehyung was stroking his back, and tickling the other's ear, Jungkook carried him upstairs, while giggling.

As if they haven't just talked about the tragedies and dark fate...

Hoseok peeked at Namjoon and embraced him with his arm, comfortingly.

'They are much better at coping with it than all of us...'

'Yeah. But... If they are so sure they will save everybody... We will make sure to be the ones to save them...'

'Of course we will, Joonie...' Hoseok said dangerously. 'On the day Taehyung was born... the fate decided to mess up with the wrong people...'

Namjoon smirked.

'Or the right ones...' he opened his palm and Hoseok high fived him.

'Well said, Kim... Well said...'

They just wanted to cuddle. To be close. To feel each other. So they gladly fell asleep in each other's arms.

But in the middle of the night... they turned to each other.

'You promised to make me really happy...' Taehyung muttered between kisses, while his lips slid down Jungkook's neck.

'Mhm...' Jungkook confirmed, while his hand slid through Taehyung's shoulder to his spine.

'I want to punish you so much...' Taehyung bit harshly on Jungkook's collarbone.

Jungkook hissed and let out an erratic breath.

'Why?'

'You haven't shown me your tummy for the whole month! I missed it...' Taehyung sucked on the bite.

Jungkook pulled back Taehyung's hair harshly and whispered in his lips:

'You can see it now...'

'I didn't need your permission... I was going to see it either way...' Taehyung moved, grabbed Jungkook's t-shirt and tore it apart in two halves.

Jungkook didn't move. He just smirked knowingly. His hooded, hot gaze was challenging Taehyung.

Taehyung's eyes dropped to Jungkook's chest and lower until it fell to his favorite mouth-watering place. Jungkooks perfect navel is surrounded by hard muscles.

He gulped and licked his lips looking at the belly piercing, he was absolutely sure wasn't there a month ago.

It was two little crystals piercing the edge of the navel and a little chain that held the sun and moon at the end.

Taehyung opened his mouth, but only a choked out moan came out of it.

Jungkook knew how Taehyung had an obsession about his tummy. Sometimes Jungkook didn't even have to say a word when he was horny. It was enough for him to lift his shirt a bit pretending to scratch it or stroke it and Taehyung was ready to fuck the hell out of him.

Taehyung had his own weapon tho... Jungkook was a sucker for naughty, dirty words. One whisperer and he was ready to be the bestest boy in the world...

But currently he was satisfied with Taehyung's astounded and amazed reaction. Taehyung's hungry gaze was eating his body greedily.

Jungkook lifted his arms above his head, stretching his body out. Exposing it. Spreading his tights to make room for Taehyung...

He smiled sinfully when Taehyung looked him in the eyes.

'Have fun, angel...' he purred.

'Ohhh... you know how much I love you?' Taehyung sighed blissfully before diving down to cuddle his face to Jungkook's belly.

Inhaling greedily his scent and rubbing his cheeks over the hard muscles covered

by the soft skin.

Jungkook moaned, feeling Taehyung pulling the piercing with his lips. He grabbed the headboard and let his tiger feed himself.

Lot of hickeys, kisses and bites later, when Jungkook's tummy, abdomen and tights were covered in purple and shined from saliva. After being pushed to the edge and held there, with Taehyung's fingers more times than he could count, Jungkook in his dizzy, unfocused state, let out a dragged moan, feeling Taehyung entered him till the hem at once.

He lifted his hips eagerly, wanting more of him when he realized he was lifted.

Taehyung turned them swiftly and laid on the pillow, grabbing Jungkook's ass. Breathing heavily he whispered:

'Ride me...'

Jungkook squeezed his tights around Taehyung's hips and rocked his body back and forth slowly.

'Don't be shy...' Taehyung slapped his asscheek. 'I know you want to wreck me...'

'Fuck!' Jungkook threw back his head and moved faster.

Taehyung's left hand traveled to Jungkook's navel and pulled the piercing. His second hand slid between Jungkook's asscheeks. His fingers pushed inside along his own member, stretching Jungkook's ass even more.

'You missed this? Aren't you needy, Jungkook?' he said sternly. 'How dare you hide this from me?' he pulled the piercing harder.

'It w-was aaa...ahh... s-surprise...' Jungkook moaned, feeling Taehyung pushing his dick inside him together with his fingers.

'You knew how I would go crazy for this, right? What do you want?"

'P-pleasee... Tae!'

'You want hard?'

'Yess!'

'Take me hard then... Use me, baby... Fuck me....' Taehyung groaned deeply, when Jungkook's nails dived deep inside his chest.

Jungkook forcefully took Taehyung's arms above his head, making him smirked.

Their eyes lightened up from hunger, need, almost aggressive love.

'I missed you so fucking much...' Jungkook breathed out with tears in the back of his throat, taking Taehyung's mouth into a hard kiss.

He felt Taehyung moving underneath him, buckling up his hips, giving him a hard thrust, so he grabbed the other's sides and pressed him to the mattress forcefully.

'You will take what I give you this time...' he growled, keeping Taehyung still. 'I will take you... You are mine...'

Taehyung made him grab his hands. Intertwined their fingers, so Jungkook had better support to move his hips.

Jungkook was so powerful... so desperate to take him... To have him...

It was making him so beautiful...

Taehyung was a moaning mess feeling how he is riding his dick hard and fast.

And he was swimming in bliss hearing him, claiming in daze: You are mine... You are mine...

*Yes, Koo... I'm yours... I love to be yours...*

**April 2069**

Yoongi looked at Taeil who entered the kitchen.

'I saw you prepared the shooting range in the garage...' Taeil said.

'Yeah... I need to teach Gahyeon...'

'I can help in my free time...'

'It won't be necessary. I know you often need to go outside the city. Wooyoung and San are training her.'

'That's good. And absolutely pissing it's needed...' Taeil shook his head.

Yoongi nodded.

'How is your leg?'

'It healed just right... You acted fast.' Taeil leaned on the kitchen counter where Yoongi was preparing the tea. 'My mom was a mess at that time...'

'Can't blame her...'

'How is auntie?'

'No changes. But she sometimes... seems as if she is understanding what we are talking to her...'

'It's been so many years...' Taeil shook his head. 'The other's with separation syndrome are hard to deal with... But it's nice to see how many people are willing to take care of them with devotion and empathy....'

'And Inho?'

'He closed himself in the house... Barely appear anywhere... There is still a chance that he... will hold himself to the first stage, with all things that are going around... Maybe not as hard as before... but people still look up to him. He walked us through it together with dad...'

Yoongi peeked at Taeil. His older cousin seemed harder, tougher... more mature.

'Do you still do it?' he asked quietly.

'You mean Taboo?'

Yoongi nodded.

'There was no need for it since the end of the war...' Taeil gulped.

'That's good...'

'Yeah... It makes you sick... You don't feel like yourself after...'

'Then why have you done it?'

Taeil looked at the gun Yoongi was carrying on his belt, even being around the house.

'I can't pull the trigger...' he whispered. 'When you pull it... there is no coming back...'

Yoongi remembered. The gunshot. The scream. The bloody mess the human changed into after he shot him. He again felt nauseous.

He took a deep breath.

'Well... it hurts only me... Not the other Interdependent...' he whispered.

Taeil smiled bitterly.

'Interdependants power is pure... I never... used it... forcefully. Without the other person's consent.'

And that was the only thing Yoongi could let slide in this situation. Most Holders that used Taboo did only after they found a willing Sealer. If a Sealer agreed... who were they to judge them?

'Yoongs... your unit will be formed soon. I have my team too... Can they came here when I need them?'

'Who?'

'Four people. You know all of them from school...'

*Oh, so Taeil's inner circle...*Yoongi thought.

'Baek Gyeom. Ahn Yein. Yu Kang. Hwang Bomin.'

'Figured...' Yoongi said reluctantly. 'Okay... Just keep Yein and Bomin away from Gahy...'

'Why?' Taeil laughed. 'I mean why the girls not boys? Besides, they are all mated...'

'I don't care. I don't want their mindset rubbed on her...'

'I know they are my friends but Gahy is much more intelligent dude...'

'She is also younger.' Yoongi looked at him sternly. 'I don't want them to have influence on her. She is absolutely fine figuring out herself...'

'Okay. As you wish. They won't be around often... I promise.'

'Taeil... you are my cousin. You spent half of your childhood. I spent the other half at your home... Just don't try to make me listen to you and we can absolutely cope with each other... And of course I can't guarantee Wooyoung and San won't kick someone's ass if they won't like them...' he shrugged.

Taeil giggled, taking the tea from Yoongi.

'I want to find my soulmate as soon as possible... I wasn't lucky till now...' he said quietly.

'Me neither.' Yoongi said plainly. Chim was a secret. He should stay a secret till he will be absolutely sure it's safe...

'Yoongs... can I have a request?' Taeil asked heavily.

'You already had a birthday...' Yoongi smirked.

'Don't be a dick.' Taeil glared at him. 'It's serious. I can't ask anybody else...'

Yoongi blinked, surprised.

'I'm afraid of two things...' Taeil gulped. 'Killing someone. And separation syndrome...' he lifted his eyes at Yoongi and said quietly. 'Promise me... you won't let me live with separation syndrome...'

Yoongi's eyes widened.

'You don't even have a soulmate...' he said sternly.

'But if I will find him or her... And something will happen... You will kill me... Please. I don't want to end up screaming, crying and just... suffering for years...'

Yoongi squinted his eyes in disbelief.

'Do you think I should kill my mother?'

'No! No! Yoongs! Absolutely not... Just that I...' Taeil choked out.

Yoongi shook his head and turned around to walk away.

Taeil grabbed his arm.

'Please...'

Yoongi took his arm away harshly.

'I will think about it when it happens!'

Yoongi was walking upstairs enraged.

*Bullshity!* He thought. *Taeil was scared of separation syndrome? No he was not! Even if he hadn't met them yet, he was scared to lose his soulmate!*

Yoongi glanced at his mother's door.

*As they all were.*

**May 2069, Mountain House**

Minji was standing in the middle of the training field.

'Situation is getting worse...' she stated. 'You can't be together all the time, it's understandable... But sometimes the combat won't be enough...' she sighed heavily. 'You need to know how to use guns... Because when you are not together, you're exposed and easy to attack.'

The Red String members looked at each other.

'We heard that... some Interdependants are starting to go missing...' Yoohyeon said quietly.

Minji heavily noded.

'They are... And we can't find most of them after...'

'When soulmates are missing it's usually the case of them running away and trying to sneak through the border to Daegu...' Namjoon said. 'But when one is missing... It's suspicious.'

'We suspect either they are running to Daegu or getting captured by the government...'

'But Daegu is not safe either...' Taehyung pointed out.

'Currently, for Interdependants, unfortunately... it is...' Minji sighed, looking at him with sad eyes.

Jungkook closed his eyes.

'He is gathering an army...' Dami shook his head.

'Maybe we are the bad guys here? Maybe he just wants a happy Interdependants Republic?' Jungkook said bitterly. 'Maybe we are just standing in his way for all those centuries?!'

'Koo...' Taehyung said warningly.

'Look at it! He doesn't have a grudge against all the interdependants! He has a grudge against us! Against me!'

Taehyung put his hand on Jungkook's chest.

'Calm down!'

'No! Did he hurt them? No! He is chasing after me and you!'

'You fucking idiot!' Taehyung pushed him a bit and raised his sword. 'Take the sword!'

Jungkook instinctively parried his blow.

'Now! Think!' Taehyung said while they were fighting fiercely.

Jungkook's mind became clear as always when he was holding the sword and using his powers.

He could go all out on Taehyung. He could let go of the steam and anger.

'Why did he kill Junjie?' Taehyung asked, kicking Jungkook's abdomen, while Jungkook made a fast turn to stop his blade going for his left thigh.

'Because... Because he thought it's his power only...'

'Exactly...!'

The rest was just standing around, enjoying the free entertainment. Even parents let Taehyung deal with his baby the way he considered proper at the moment.

'Gimmie popcorn...' Han said with star eyes.

Dami automatically stretched her hand and smacked his head.

'Kookie is worried...' Yoohyeon said sadly.

'Worse... he is blaming himself...' Jimin shook his head.

'He needs good whooping...' Yeonjun squinted his eyes.

'But, hyung... Even Taehyung hyung can't whoop his ass...' Soobin pouted.

'But he at least can make him tired...' Han grinned, looking at Jungkook who just made a cartwheel trying to avoid the shadow made by Taehyung's sword that was trying to embrace him.

He moved his hand and cut through it with white laser like light.

'What else?' Taehyung grabbed the second sword from Minho's hands and while Jungkook sent a fire at him he blocked it with Sacred Treasure and threw the second sword at Jungkook's head.

The other bent in half avoiding it.

'He is a greedy bitch with a superiority complex!' Jungkook exclaimed, undercutting Taehyung. He fell but managed to block Jungkook's sword.

'No doubt he is!' Taehyung nodded, breathing heavily. He licked his lips. 'Do you think someone like that is glad that nobody else has a power like him?'

Jungkook stepped back and gulping hard lowered his katana.

'No...' he whispered.

'You are a challenge to him... But the rest... They are just worms he looks at with disgust...'

'I feel offended...' Dami crossed her arms over her chest.

'I don't like him even more...' Minho followed her movement.

Jungkook stretched his hand to Taehyung and helped him to get up.

'I know...'

'He doesn't want to save them. He wants to play with them and use them... Even if on his way he will do something good for them. It's not his intention...'

Jungkook nodded, closing his eyes.

Taehyung briefly brushed his lips over Jungkook's temple, whispering quickly:

'Stop blaming yourself...'

Jungkook looked around.

'Sorry...' he said to others.

'For what?' Han shrugged. 'I like when you try to kill each other...'

Dami smirked:

'Looks almost like foreplay...'

Jungkook glared at her.

'Kinky bitches.' Jimin added mercilessly.

Taehyung sent him a warning look.

Soobin blushed. Yoohyeon giggled.

Minho and Yeonjun just sighed heavily.

'Yeah well...' Hwasa clapped her hands. 'I don't know how it came to this but either you are starting your shooting practice or we are having dinner!'

When the crowd (including adults) started to discuss loudly, Hwasa raised her hand and everythings stopped:

'I don't want more fights. So I will decide. Minji takes them to the shooting range. Show them the basics. Come back in 30.'

Minji bowed.

'Yes mom.'

Dragon glared at his daughter reluctantly.

'How come you can behave with your mother and not with me?'

Minjis shrugged, turning around.

'She is scary, you are not... You are just loud.'

Dragon gasped.

Jungkook frowned hearing his mother.

'I think I inherited this...'

Hoseok patted his arm, nodding.

'Yes, my boy... you did.'

---

We all should say goodbye to this wonderful cover.... Dawn really made my day when she made it...

But the new one is beautiful too, right? So beautiful...

Thank you dear Dawn ＜333

I'm taking my time with the events now... :D

Hope you don't mind. Was it good?

BlairWitch91🩶🩶

# Chapter 46: VK sign

**June 2069, Seoul**

Wednesday was one of Taehyung and Jungkook's favorite days beside weekends. It was caused by their Music Academy activities where they could meet with everybody, beside the Mountain House when they were training till they all were exhausted.

Even Soobin - the most gentle one out of their whole team - was focused, determined and unpredictable.

Taehyung really was looking after him. Directing his arrows, teaching him how to think and react fast, sending arrows where and how he needed them, according to the situation.

The same way Jungkook was keeping Jimin next to himself all the time. Not just for protection, that was Minsung's job. He was keeping him close, often using fire or lightning power to show him what he can do.

It made Jimin work hard. And it made him at ease too. As if Jungkook was saying inaudibly: *we are ready for your power. We are ready for your soulmate anytime...*

They had to divide the training in two sections: power and non-power. As most of Interdependants were under observation it was really risky to show their power even in the moment of need. So they trained combat and shooting as hard as their powers.

No matter how hard Minji and Dragon tried to make the situation hard. No matter what scenario Dragon's power of imagination drew for them - Taehyung was a step ahead of their two trainers. As if he was fighting and commanding countless battles before...

Maybe he did... It wasn't important now. What was important was the rest was trusting him to the point of following his orders with blindfolds.

Inside the unit two main forces were made. They normally didn't separate soulmates to not distract them. But Minho and Han were fine with shielding all of them even separately.

Dami was Taehyung's right hand. The second one in command. If they had to be divided she, Yooyeon, Han and Soobin and Yeonjun were the first strike team.

Jungkook, Taehyung, Jimin and Minho were the final blow. Minho was securing

Jimin all the time, even when he was safely fighting between two dangerous creatures, he usually called his best friends...

As much as Taehyung wasn't getting in the way of Jungkook's fighting style, a bit too mesmerized by it every single time, he and his boyfriend, for sure were attentive enough to show Jimin he had to find his own fighting style even not knowing his powers, because Jimin tried too much to stick to Jungkook's advises.

Whatever it was using swords or power, Jungkook's style was precise, deadly, fast, harsh and flawless.

And it wasn't the right style for Jimin. So they told him to chill out...

'Fuuck you! You chill out!' Jimin glared at Jungkook. 'Have you ever seen yourself? You look like a demon ready to bury everyone around with a single glare!'

Jungkook raised his eyebrow not amused.

Taehyung grunted.

'He has a point...' he mumbled and his eyes for a moment had this unfocused expression and a small smile was painted on his lips.

Jimin smacked his head.

'Earth to Taehyung. Come back from Horny Planet!'

Jungkook sighed frustrated.

'I mean... you don't have to go hard, Jimin-ssi! You don't see your bigger assets. Don't try to do everything with strength. Do it... with...' he was looking for the write words to express his thoughts. '...charm..'

'Charm?' Jimin frowned.

'Elegance.' Taehyung backed Jungkook up. 'You have flawless, elastic moves... Use them. Dance...'

Jungkook nodded.

'Dance with swords. And then dance with your power... Nobody is expecting moves like that. The taller and stronger the opponent will be, the more you can surprise him. Be clever. Find your own style...'

Jimin took their words seriously and he indeed started to express more of himself in the sparring. And it was beautiful...

So the team were preparing, sometimes having war games against the Red Alert, Siyeon, Bora and Dragon.

They didn't know what they were preparing for. But they knew it would come.

They were the MOI's unit now... The call could come anytime.

Especially considering what was going on on the borders, in Daegu and in the whole country actually.

Minji, Yongguk and Namjoon were walking on a thin red line. They had to be really careful not to get preventive detention for the smallest reason.

The message from the government and the media was clear. Anyone who supported the reunification of Korea and the surrender of Daegu was an enemy. Yongguk and Namjoon tried to explain, to establish mediation, that it was not a matter of reunifying the country, but of preventing casualties from occurring. If the government did not pursue an aggressive solution to the conflict, they would not have to fear.

But the Daegu government was also adamant. Nothing was offered to convince them, that the rights they had fought for all along, would be preserved outside the republic.

Minor acts of aggression and shoving between military personnel at the border were now a daily occurrence.

It was affecting the daily life of Interdependants in the whole Korea. They started to be treated strictly and without trust.

Soobin was fighting with his parents all the time because they wanted him to move to Daegu with them. They were preparing for it... They planned to move in a year and wanted to take him. Away from University and friends. He was standing for himself. But it was Yeonjun who was this force that was calming his parents when it was getting too much for him.

They all knew... Soobin won't go without Yeonjun. And Yeonjun won't go without the rest. So no matter how hard emotional blackmail of Soobin's parents was, they were still unwavering.

So Wedsdays were their favorite days, bringing some kind of fun for two hours of practice in the Music Academy. They were preparing the concert for New Year's Eve, trying to show Interdependants through art in a calm, beautiful way.

They still hoped... it will happen, and they worked for it peacefully and joyfully.

Taehyung and Jungkook walked to the auditorium holding hands and chatting

with Jimin and Dami.

They saw Yeonjun hugging Soobin in the corner of the room. Trying to visibly calm him down. Yoohyeon walked to them.

'What happened?' Taehyung asked.

'He got a phone call from his mom and it somehow changed into another augment...' she sighed heavily.

Dami rubbed her back. Soobin and Yoohyeon were really close. She was easily swayed when he was unhappy.

'I talked with mom and dad...' she admitted. 'I hope they can help here somehow... Mrs Choi really likes mom...'

Jungkook's eyes traveled to Soobin, who seeing his gaze sent him a calming smile.

They all were pretty caring over Jungkook. They knew how easily he was to take the blame that had nothing to do with him.

Yeonjun pulled Soobin to them, smiling.

'Are we starting?'

They looked at the stage where their headmistress, Jieun, was surrounded by Minho and Han.

She looked... distraught... as never before. And Han and Minho were trying hard to cheer her up.

The wife of Bang Yongguk, their parents' friend... looked miserable. And it wasn't at all a good sign...

Jungkook squeezed Taehyung's hand tighter, while they walked to the piano, where she was sorting the sheets with notes.

'Ma'am?' Taehyung looked at her. 'Something's wrong?'

She clapped her cheeks.

'No, guys, everything is fine...'

'It's not good to lie...' Taehyung said gently.

She squinted her eyes at him.

"It is also not good to accuse someone of lying either...'

'Something happened at school?' Soobin asked.

'Not at all. School is safe...'

'Is Yongguk-ssi okay?' Jungkook tilted his head.

'Yes. He is. Should we start?' She looked at the piano.

'We will know either way after we go home... Maybe we can help somehow?' Taehyung offered.

She shook her head, teared up and instantly wiped her eyes.

'It is normal for parents to worry about their children...' she said, looking at Soobin. 'No matter their age...'

Jungkook and Taehyung looked at each other.

'Let me call my father...' Tae said, pulling out his phone, but Jieun's slim hand stopped him.

'He knows... No need to bother them.' She looked at all of them and lowered her voice. 'Well, I wouldn't tell this to students, but you are all in MOI's, so... I'm just worried. My son... Ryu, went to Daegu. As the secret agent. To know what's going on there first hand. Especially as he is a single one... He will try to inform Yongguk about the things that are not going outside of the Republic...'

'So he is there without his soulmate?' Dami widened her eyes.

'He hadn't met his soulmate yet... He is 25, I guess he is worried she or he is there... So he tried to do something. He is used to working with MOI...'

'He went directly to Daegu?' Taehyung asked.

'That's his aim... He wants to get inside their troops...'

'He is risking a lot...' Yeonjun whispered.

'I know. But that is his decision. Even if me and his father are not happy about it...' she smiled sadly. 'In the end we raised him like that...'

She closed her eyes and took a calming breath, before looking at the crowd around them and smiling lightly.

'But look at all of you! You are younger... and so ready for whatever will happen.'

'We are together. He is alone.' Jimin sat next to her on the seat. 'It's much harder...'

'Some things... are possible to reach by only being alone...' she whispered. 'I hope he will find his soulmate and be safer than he is now... at least.'

'We will help.' Jungkook said seriously. 'However and whenever it will be.'

Jieun nodded and clapped her hands.

'You can help me now!' she bravely smiled. 'Sing for me! Yoohyeon... You first!'

They gave up. They let her be sad as they couldn't help her now.

The rest sat in the audience while Yoohyeon was singing "*The Secret Love Song*". They all were choosing their own songs. The songs that in their hearts were describing and showing the core of Interdependants. That was the main purpose of the concert.

Openly show what they were truly made out of - the bond between two souls. The need to show it no matter what.

They were singing in groups, in duos, in units.

Jimin was allowed to sing the song that was called "*Serendipity*". Even if the rest were choosing the known songs. But the song deserved to be heard. And they all convinced the headmistress to agree to this song.

'Taehyung, Jungkook... which one do you want to practice with today?' Jieun asked.

Taehyung and Jungkook had separate songs to sing... but they as well had one song they wanted to sing together. They haven't practiced it yet in the auditorium. They looked at each other.

'*Clarity*...' Taehyung said.

'A new one?' Yeonjun looked at him excited.

Jungkook smiled shortly.

'Yeah...'

They walked to the stage and took the mics. Taehyung gave Jieun the notes and she read through them and nodded. She put her fingers on the keyboard.

Jimin and Yoohyeon looked at each other and smiled widely. They all always were getting excited when any of them were coming up with something new.

Taehyung and Jungkook stood on two different ends of the stage, feeling a bit nervous. They were keeping this song to themselves for a long time. It was... in some parts it was really like them.

'I need to record it for uncle Hobi...' Jimin grinned and pulled out his phone.

Jungkook nodded to Jieun and she started to play.

(🎶**Music tip: *Clarity* by Sam Tsui, Kurt Hugo Schneider**🎶)

Taehyung looked at how Jungkook closed his eyes and raised his mic.

*I dive into frozen waves where the past comes back to life*

*Fight fear for the selfish pain, it was worth it every time*

*Hold still right before we crash 'cause we both know how this ends*

*A clock ticks 'til it breaks your glass and I drown in you again*

*'Cause you are the piece of me I wish I didn't need*

*Chasing relentlessly, I still fight and I don't know why*

*If our love is tragedy, why are you my remedy?*

*If our love's insanity, why are you my clarity?*

Taehyung turned to Jungkook and raised his mic slowly, walking to him.

*Walk on through a red parade and refuse to make amends*

*It cuts deep through our ground and makes us forget all common sense*

*Don't speak as I try to leave 'cause we both know what we'll choose*

*If you pull then I'll push too deep and I'll fall right back to you*

*'Cause you are the piece of me I wish I didn't need*

*Chasing relentlessly, I still fight and I don't know why*

*If our love is tragedy, why are you my remedy?*

*If our love's insanity, why are you my clarity?*

Jungkook turned to him. They came really close to each other singing together.

*Why are you my clarity?*

*If our love is tragedy, why are you my remedy?*

*If our love's insanity, why are you my clarity?*

The last notes of the piano silenced.

Jungkook and Taehyung were looking at each other seriously. They tell everything they wanted through the song.

The rest were looking at them from the audience.

'Fuck...' Jimin choked out overwhelmed.

'I hate them...' Yoohyeon wiped her tears.

Dami squinted her eyes, and gritted her teeth.

'Me too.' she stood up and angrily walked out.

Yeonjun looked at her surprised and was fast to go after her. Yoohyeon left her alone. She knew her too well... if Yeonjun wanted to be the one whose ass would be kicked right now... she wasn't going to stop him.

'Dami!' Yeonjun called out to her, while she was walking out in fury.

'Leave me alone now!'

'I don't like this either, okay!' he grabbed her arm. 'None of us do!'

'Why?!' she asked. 'Why are they like that?! We know it's hard for them! Why do they have to remind us they are ready for the tragedy to happen?!'

'I guess they... try to find the beauty in their pain...' he whispered hesitantly.

'Beauty in pain?! WHAT BULLSHIT IS THAT?!'

'Do you think they are not scared?' Yeonjun asked quietly and Dami closed her mouth.

'Noona!' Jungkook was running to them with Taehyung.

Dami pointed a finger at him.

'Don't talk to me, kid!'

But Jungkook just grabbed her arm and pulled her outside, while running.

Taehyung reached Yeonjun and looked at him, biting on his lower lip.

Yeonjun crossed his arm over his chest.

'As much as it was beautiful... It's not funny singing about tragedy...'

Taehyung smiled sadly.

'You know... we choose this song, because in the end we are each other's remedy and clarity. Nothing else matters. How tragic it will be on the way doesn't matter, as long as we will be together during the whole road.'

Yeonjun sighed heavily.

'I understand... But you look so happy and it is pissing us off! Why the hell aren't you angry as fuck!?'

Taehyung chuckled and patted Yeonjun's arm.

'Because we are happy! And...' he turned to the rest, who were coming in their direction and smirked. '... we are saving our anger for the right moment...'

Outside the building Dami jerked her arm from Jungkook's grip.

'Listen brat! I don't want to look at you! Not to mention talk with you right now!' she said.

Jungkook sent her wide, mischievous smile.

'Why?' he asked innocently.

Dami, taken off guard, blinked in surprise.

'What do you mean WHY?!!!' she threw her hands in the air. 'You are fucking givin-...'

'We are not.' Jungkook cut her off, before she could finish. He cheekily raised his eyebrow. 'Have you ever seen me giving up?'

Dami looked at him from head to toe and suddenly in front of her eyes stood 11 year old Jungkook, much shorter than her, who absolutely didn't give a shit about

fighting against taller, more experienced Hyunsik, but charged at him head on.

She realized Jungkook was taller than her now... But well, her little bro was still the same pain in the ass as he was back then...

She rolled her eyes.

'No...' she kicked the small stone on the pavement.

'Exactly... I will do everything to be with Taehyung till the rest of my life... No matter what I will encounter on the way. But sometimes we are scared... and we have to let this fear out.' he said quietly.

'Uuuugh!!! It ticks me off!' she growled, frustrated. 'I feel useless! Can't we just go at this shithead with full force when he is not expecting anything?!'

'Great idea! As soon as we will know who it actually is!' Jungkook smiled bitterly.

'So can you just be disgustingly in love without thinking about it till then?'

'Aren't we?' Jungkook grinned. 'Whoa! I will tell Tae we can go all out around you all!'

Dami got pale.

'I take that back...'

'Too late!'

'Listen brat, if I catch even a glimpse of your tongue...'

'Why the fuck are you talking about his tongue?!' They heard an angry voice behind Dami.

Dami turned to Taehyung.

'Keep your dick in your pants! That's all I have to say!'

'No way in hell...' Taehyung shook his head. 'Not gonna happen...'

'Awwww...' Jungkook jumped like a bunny to Taehyung's side. 'Isn't he cute and horny?'

Dami grabbed her hair.

'I regret saying this! Have mercy!'

'What did she say?' Taehyung looked at Jungkook.

Jungkook smirked and brought his face closer.

'That we should be disgustingly in love...'

'Oh? Did she?' Taehyung brushed his nose over Jungkook's.

'Stop it! Stop it!' Dami whined.

Minho just gave a pack of gummy bears to Han, who was enjoying the drama with star eyes.

And Jimin, Yoohyeon, Soobin and Yeonjun were laughing at how easily Jungkook dealt with his angry noona.

To be honest Jungkook won with Dami with his first unexpected smile, reading through her anger too well.

'I give up...' Dami sighed. 'Come! We are going to eat now!'

She grabbed Yoohyeon's hand.

'And better you all train hard next weekend! I will never agree for this fucker having a chance to beat us...'

**August 2069, Daegu**

At the press conference everyone was tense.

Even being in the back Yoongi could feel it.

His uncle nervously was talking with Wi Hajun and Oh Joryoung - commanders of the Army.

Taeil looked at Yoongi through the room.

What the hell was going on?

Finally the crowd was silenced by Chorong and Kyung got on the podium. He fixed the microphone and started to speak:

'From the very beginning I tried to be honest with all of you... I guess you all see

what is happening on our borders... The situation is getting harder and harder. So I wanted to remind you why we proclaimed this Republic... It's started because Interdependants weren't safe. They were not treated equally. For more than a year we proved that equality is possible... Even during the State of Emergency, even being the citizens of a young, small, broken country we proved we can work hand in hand to rebuild it. We proved that laws that treat us all equally are not a threat to non-Interdependants as we all are people that cherish life and happiness of our loved ones. We are not different... We proved it. You all... proved it. We showed our powers and proved we are not dangerous...'

Kyung took a deep breath.

'The Republic of South Korea, the place still dear to us, the place we once called home... and we would like to call it home again... is treating us like a spoiled kids. They demand... without asking what we need. I am not saying we are against unification of the countries again... We would wholeheartedly accept it... IF they would look at us and actually see us. We tried negotiations, but we are meeting only with a hard hand in return. I'm calling out to the Government of Korea... if you want us back - earn it. Show us, you understood past mistakes. Show us the equal rights we want. We are not stubborn. We are holding to our beliefs. Despite all the threats we are the ones that withstand the threats calmly and we are not getting in return anything... But if the situation gets even slightly worse... We will answer. That's a promise.'

Kyung gulped, outstressed.

'Anybody that wants to be prepared for the worst can apply for training to the reserve force or the guards. I won't lie to you... The past shows us that we can't trust anybody. And as much as it is paining my heart... I don't believe we will avoid another conflict...'

The rumor spread through the hall.

'I know it will be a hard blow to bear. For all of us, but especially for Interdependants who could finally... feel free. But you know...' he smiled lightly. '... look at our flag.' he pointed with his finger to the banner on the left. 'We chose those colors for a reason... We chose green because it's the color of hope... harmony and safety... We chose turquoise because it's the color of compassion, balance, communication, peace and clarity... We chose black because it symbolizes protection, power and strength. It's in the middle because we will protect! We will show strength and power to fight for everything else - for balance, hope, harmony and safety!'

A massive clapping was heard.

'Now look at the symbol in the middle. Not everyone knows it... but those few lines symbolize all of it. It's the symbol of first Interdependants. It's the symbol of protection and clarity! If you ever start to lose hope, believe in this symbol! It was proven that the destiny that binds us sent the protectors for Interdependants through ages. And this is their symbol! I do believe they are around. When the situation will be hopeless. When we all will be too tired to stand for ourselves... they will stand for us. We will create our own daily heroes! But we can have hope... We can have it Interdependants... that this time we will again be protected by fate!'

Yoongi rolled his eyes. It started to look like some religious meeting. But he knew what his uncle did here.

He gave people the faith in some force from above that was looking after them... Previously they were going after Inho. If he wasn't strong enough now to boost the crowds to fight (and the Army's Commanders weren't those kind of inspiring people), he needed something greater that would push them forward.

Even some mythological creatures...

Kyung knew he wasn't strong enough either.

Jaehyun would be... Yoongi's father was this type of leader people were following with all their heart.

Yoongi looked at the Army's uniform. All of them had the VK sign over their arms already.

People needed something that they felt united by... even if it were only a few crossed lines and some legends...

**September 2069**

Taehyung and Jungkook walked inside the Jungkook's room frustrated and started preparing to sleep.

'I don't know how to convince them...' Taehyung shook his head.

'They are freaking out after what happened last month...' Jungkook mumbled.

As the Government of Korea gave the last ultimatum to Daegu that if they won't surrender till the end of the year they will make them surrender, even in Seoul the

situation was taking a dangerous turn.

Interdependants were literally hunted. They were being held in preventive detention for the smallest offenses such as passing a red light or driving too fast.

Jungkook and Taehyung tried to convince their parents it's the time for them to move out before it will be too late and they will be imprisoned. Especially Namjoon or Minji. It was even dangerous for Jin to go to work in the clinic!

But after the VK sign was spread around the whole Republic of Daegu they were even more scared to cross the border than before.

And the fucking festival of VK sign was on in full swing. Not just the flag of the republic or army's uniforms.

Ryu, Yongguk's son informed them that the cult of First Interdependants are spreading through the Republic like a plague.

'He is fucking trying to lure us out...' Jungkook gritted his teeth.

'No he is not.' Taehyung said, deep in thoughts. 'Think about it... If we would show up there now... We could take control over all those people like some kind of legendary gods. He wouldn't do something like that... With his superiority complex? Remember he is the REAL first Interdependent. I bet he is fucking furious when he is not even mentioned once anywhere...'

Jungkook sighed, laying on the bed.

'I haven't seen our original mark since the first unsealing day...' he shook his head. 'Grandparents' power can't be erased or seen through... Nobody would recognize this mark on our skin. They are not thinking straight now...'

'Suggesting them to leave and left as here was a bad idea...' Taehyung admitted with sour face.

'Yeah...' Jungkook peeked at him.

'Sorry, but as they are constantly hiding behind our safety I tried to erase us from the map for a moment.'

'And it definitely backfired...'

Taehyung slid under the cover and cuddled to Jungkook's chest.

'It's fucked up. We have to go there... or they will close us like animals...'

'I know... But maybe it's not the time yet...'

'I hope it won't be too late later...' Taehyung closed his eyes.

'Mhm... me too.' Jungkook kissed Taehyung's head and drifted to sleep.

****

***Scotland, 1314***

*Jasper was sneaking through the castle, silently commanding with gestures all the people around. He knew he didn't have much time.*

*Tancred's group was making a diversion to get as many Englishmen out of the castle as possible.*

*His own group was sneaking through the dark castle surrounded by his power. He was putting every watchman around to sleep. They were stealing everything they could sell later or equip the Scottish army.*

*But the main reason Jasper was here was in the dungeons.*

*He went there alone, not making any noise.*

*They often were pretending to be English soldiers, so he was used to talking and walking like them. It was the only way Scotland could fight for their Independence.*

*He blew over his hand and the guards in the dungeons obediently went to sleep.*

*He took the keys from one of them and opened the heavy doors.*

*He crouched down near the beat up, bleeding men, unconsciously lying on the hard, cold floor. He squirmed seeing the wounds and his gentle eyes filled with sadness.*

*But in the next minute he had to stop the punch directed at his nose.*

*'Whoa! Calm down, Yves!' he giggled. 'Still alive? That's great!'*

*'Bloody hell! Jasper! What on earth are you doing here?!' Yves groaned painfully, trying to sit.*

*Jasper helped him to stand up slowly.*

*'Saving you of course...'*

*'Nobody asked you!' Yves burked, when Jasper threw his arm over his own shoulders.*

*'Well, it was boring without you around... and I had some time to spare...' Jasper grinned, walking out, supporting the other.*

*'I will beat Tancred's ass for letting you risk like that!' Yves was barely talking through the broken, dry lips.*

*'What risk?' Jasper smirked cheekily, looking from above at sleeping guards.*

*Yves snorted.*

*They walked back through the castle, while the rest of Jasper's group was waiting with horses outside. Jasper helped Yves to get on the horse.*

*'I hope this pile of rocks will be burned to the grounds one day!' Yves spitted on the grass.*

*'Your wish is my command...' Jasper showed him the fireball over his hand, still smiling widely.*

*'Leave it...' Yves shook his head.*

*'Don't spoil the fun...' Jasper pouted, jumping swiftly on the horse.*

*He was always like that. Smiley, cheeky, irresponsible kid with enormous power...*

*They rode to the woods not looking back until they reached the camp. They were taking care of the horses and checking Yves' wounds, when the second group reached them.*

*Jasper knew right away. He lifted his head from above Yves' knee he was treating looking in the darkness.*

*'Go, go... I survived Englishmen, I will survive a few more minutes...' Yves smacked his head.*

*Jasper smiled widely and ran between the trees just to be caught by the other men. Tancred was a typical Scottish man. He wasn't bothered by stares around, he was sucking on Jasper's lips as soon as he reached him.*

*Yves slowly stood up.*

*'HEY! TOLD YOU NOT TO MOVE!' Jasper yelled at him right away, pulling away from the kiss.*

*Tancred looked over his shoulder and quickly walked to Yves to hug him.*

*'Good to see you, brother...'*

*'Sending your guy to save me instead or moving your lazy ass instead? Typical you...' Yves hit his younger brother's back, before squeezing him tighter.*

*'I wouldn't trust anybody else with your annoying ass...' Tancred helped Yves to sit back again. 'GIVE HIM WHISKY!' he yelled to the guys.*

*'What are Walles plans?' Yves asked quietly.*

*Jasper and Tancred told him about the upcoming battle and plans.*

*Few days later, with their faces painted blue, they were preparing on the backs of the English Army.*

*The battle was bloody and ugly. They heard it... but they had to wait for the sign from the commander. Then to their ears the sound of horses came.*

*One of the Scottish soldiers ran to them.*

*'We were betrayed! Englishmen are everywhere! They are coming here!'*

*The arrows started to fly between the trees. The fire from them was spreading in the woods.*

*Jasper moves his hand to control the fire and ran to save the horses.*

*'TO THE WOODS!' Tancred yelled. 'HIDE! KILL EVERY OF THEM YOU ENCOUNTER!'*

*'LEAVE EVERYTHING! TAKE ONLY WEAPON AND HORSES!' Yves exclaimed to their men around, sticking his sword into the flesh of the approaching enemy.*

*Two brothers were cutting through enemies, while Jasper was untying the horses and stopping more units to come into the woods, spreading the mist around.*

*Tancred pushed Yves, who was still moving too slowly and stiffly from the previous wounds to Jasper.*

*'GO! YOU HAVE TO HIDE!'*

*Yves was cursing under his nose, when he reached the younger.*

*Jasper was turned with his back to him so he didn't see the archer aiming at his back, but the arrow was cut by his knife when he made a fast turn.*

*'GET ON THE HORSE!' he yelled, but instead Yves grabbed him and pushed him to the ground.*

*Jasper cursed, turning on the ground just to see how the sword was going inside Yves' stomach.*

*'No...' he whispered. 'NOOOOOO!!' he yelled and the mix of the air and fire power hit everything around setting the trees and enemies on fire.*

*He ran to Yves who was smiling, still standing and holding his sword. The blood was staining his face. Running down his mouth, chin and chest. He beheaded the guy whose sword reached him.*

*Jasper caught him before he could fall down.*

*'NO! WHY?!'*

*'Go... k-kid' Yves whispered.*

*Jasper shook his head.*

*'I would manage! Why did you save me!?'*

*'I saved... my little b-brother... What is s-s-strange about it...? You know h-he... can't... live... w-without... you...'*

*Jasper pressed his forehead to Yves' forehead, when tears went down his cheeks.*

*'You... w-were always... a c-crybaby...' Yves smirked and more blood get out of his mouth.*

*'I will find a healer!' Jasper promised, trying to stop the bleeding.*

*But Yves shook his head and the grip around the handle of his sword tightened.*

*'TAN! TAKE HIM!' He yelled with the rest of his strength. 'Go...'*

*'No...' Jasper shook his head.*

*'You have something more dangerous to fight against...' Yves said through clenched teeth, he slapped his cheek. 'GO!'*

*Jasper's waist was suddenly embraced and he was lifted. Tancred sat him on the horse in front of him.*

*Jasper hid his face in his shirt.*

*'He died because of me...' he whispered shakily. 'I'm sorry...'*

*'There is no place for your blame here...' Tancred whispered, kissing his hair. He was cutting with the Sacred Treasure through trees setting them on fire. Cutting the way of*

*the enemies.*

*'Your brother died because of me...'*

*'No. He died to save my life...'*

*Jasper yelled and cried out in fury and pain and the deadly wave of air power spread through the battlefield killing everyone on it.*

****

Taehyung woke up and reached for Jungkook, who at the same time stretched his hand to look for him.

They looked at each other. And hide their faces in each other's necks.

'I don't want to lose anybody...' Jungkook whispered shakily.

Taehyung gritted his teeth, shutting his eyes tightly.

He could still feel Tancred's pain. He could still feel the loss of his brother... But he could also recollect the immense relief and gratefulness.

And this one though was invading his mind.

*I don't want to lose you...*

---

Are you nervouse?

I am...

Another part of the past revealed... If anybody watched Braveheart with Mel Gibson, it's connected to events there.

The name **Tancred** is primarily a male name of English origin that means *Thought Strong*.

The name **Jasper** is primarily a male name of English origin that means *Treasurer*.

*"Clarity"* was one of the songs that I had in mind all along the story...

Song Jieun and Bang Yongguk sing the song that is called "*Crazy*". I love it. It's really awsome. That's why they are soulmates in the story. I am a simple human...

BlairWitch91 🤍

# Chapter 47: Water and Ice

**Daegu, November 2069**

Yoongi was walking through the Daegu city center and rolled his eyes.

Lucky charms... Bracelets with VK sign.

Seriously people believed in some mythical bullshit like that?

If they won't save themselves nobody will save them...

'That's quite a shit show your uncle started...' San said judgingly looking at the jewelry shop with a banner, showing VK pendants.

'But indeed people calmed down... at least Interdependants...' Wooyoung shook his head.

'They are storming training centers like idiots...' Yoongi sighed.

'Good, Gahyeon has us... Maaan! She is fast...' Wooyoung rubbed his stomach, which was still aching from Gahy's punches.

They were not skilled in specific martial arts. A bit of ISA self defense training just showed them some moves, but they mainly were street fighters. Not afraid of causing and receiving pain. Fighting without rules. All movements permitted...

Unexpectedly Gahyeon was as merciless as her brother. After they showed her all the fragile places (especially boys fragile places) she was using the knowledge mercilessly...

Yoongi squirmed recollecting the last time he wanted to go easy on her...

Did he end up with the pack of ice on his crotch?

Yes.

Was Gahyeon sorry for that?

Not. At. All...

He told him he can't be a weak bitch and better it won't affect her future nieces and nephews...

But inviting Taeil's friends for their sparring? Oh god! That was amusing!

They were so used to using their power then when it came to not using it they were crying like babies out of pain...

The drops of water started to fall from the sky.

'Again?!' San whined, looking at the dark clouds as if it betrayed him.

The rain was falling constantly for the last three weeks. The breaks between downpours were short. It started to be dangerous...

The level of water in the rivers was dangerously rising... Some parts of the cities, not just in Daegu, but in whole South Korea, were waterlogged.

'Check the three locations beside the river shore we had under observation. If the people from there will be willing, evacuate them right away. If not, tell some of the guards to check them each 12 hours...' Yoongi said to San and Wooyoung. 'I will check in the Council office what is the situation with the river and how many water controllers we have around...'

San and Wooyoung nodded, bounced from the ground and flew in the air.

After the short visit at the crisis staff headquarters, where discussed the possible outcomes, he was walking back home in the rain, watching what was going around attentively.

So the current situation was under control... Yet. Imha Dam, a tributary of the Nakdong River, that was under their control was supervised by the water controllers. But the Chungju Dam on Namhan River, which was responsible for flood control, and was unfortunately outside the republic, was a threat. If the South Korea Government decides to do the dirty move and open it, the whole Daegu and the areas near the cities will have the flood of the century...

And they could do it to save the Soul from the same destiny...

Yoongi sighed.

He hoped they at least had a bit of self-respect to not risk peoples life like that.

He was near the ruins of the old Min's Company Building when to his nostrils came the familiar scent. He stopped and looked at the exposition of the pastries shop. He hadn't seen those sweets in some time... And knew them more then well.

His father was often spoiling his mother with her favorite hand made chocolates or Gahyeon with little cookies she loved.

It was something nostalgic... Something from his previous life...

He was glad the shopkeeper survived and could still make the sweets...

He went inside, relieved he could for a moment hide from the cold rain. The line inside was long, so he sat in the corner of the shop by the small table, trying not to bring attention to himself.

He brushed his wet hair from his forehead, when a young woman sat on the chair in front of him and with irritation said:

'Jeeze! It's so hard to catch you alone!'

Yoongi blinked and checked her out. She had long blond hair with dark strands. Delicate face, dark eyes. She had an elegant coat over herself and matching leather gloves.

Had he passed her in the corridor in the Headquarters?

'Who the fuck are you?' he asked quietly.

She smiled sweetly, but her eyes stayed ice cold.

'Good to see you!' she said out loud, before lowering her voice. 'Better pretend it's a meeting of two old friends...'

Yoongi raised his eyebrow, not interested.

She moved her chair a bit closer. Raised her hand to the waiter, smiling widely:

'Takeaway coffee, please!'

'I'm not here to hang out...' Yoongi said with a stone face.

'Listen, you don't know me. But you need me.' The woman said.

What she was saying and what was displayed on her face were two different things. She looked as if she was blabbering about old times... And Yoongi was absolutely sure he didn't know her...

But he didn't remember people from school to be honest. And she looked as if she was Yoongi's age...

He shook his head and scolded himself for thinking about buying sweets for his mom and sister. He wanted to stand up, when not looking at him the women said quietly:

'Do you trust your uncle?'

Yoongi moved on the chair to cover his previous sudden move and stayed still.

'That's what I thought...' the woman nodded.

'What do you want?'

'Nothing. I know you are close to the core, but they won't let you inside... you are too pure in their eyes.' she whispered. 'I will be your eyes.'

'First of all: why would you? Second of all: what will you gain from it? And lastly: who the fuck are you?'

'My name is Ren. I work near Inho, Hajun and Joryoung... I'm the secretary there. Believe me. They are not saints... and they definitely don't care if I am around...'

'I know that... Ren...' Yoongi smirked. 'But how the hell you came to the conclusion I will believe you?'

'You don't have to. I will give you information. What will you do with them? It's your choice...'

'What do you want in return?' Yoongi asked, bored.

'The war to be over. Min Taeil being kept away from the governament and army and this fucking shit show for Interdependants to end.'

'What do you have against Taeil?'

'Watch over him, Min. I saw what Taboo is doing with Interdependants. He won't be stable for long. And Hajun and Joryoung are just waiting for Holders like that... They collect them like candies!'

'My uncle...'

'The only person the President won't hurt even for the sake of the country is his own son.' Ren said sternly.

Yoongi closed his mouth. That was the truth.

Actually Taeil was the only untouchable person around...

'Keep him close or really far away from your family.' Ren whispered.

'He is my family...'

'Then control him and observe him... Keep him safe and away from Commanders of the Army. I don't care how... Because even his father doesn't have control over the Army no matter what he says. It's controlled by Hajun, Joryoung and their

soulmates. And they are loyal to someone else...'

Yoongi slowly lifted his gaze at her.

'Inho?'

'I am not sure. But he disappeared. I will try to get information about him...' she gulped, for the first time showing nervousness.

Yoongi tilted his eyes.

'What's wrong about Inho?'

'He is the only one who can see through me... But that's my problem.' She took the takeaway coffee the waitress put on the table. 'It was nice to meet you! Hope we will keep in touch!'

She fastly walked out.

Yoongi frowned and looked at the small scraps of paper she gave him under the table.

*I will find you. Watch out!*

He frowned.

What the fuck?

Yoongi entered the house and instantly ran to the kitchen hearing Gahyeon's cry. He stood in the doorframe, confused, seeing her laughing through tears in Wooyoung's embrace.

San was teasing her to make her laugh more.

'Why are you crying?' he breathed out heavily.

She smiled and with wobbly lips she said:

'Oppa... mom said my name...'

Yoongi's eyes widened.

'Yours too...' she added after she composed herself, wiping her nose with her sleeve.

Yoongi was standing, frozen, not knowing what to do. His grip over the packet with sweets, tightened.

'I... will check on her...' he gulped, and not looking at anyone he walked out of the kitchen.

With a painfully slow and hard beating heart he entered his mother's bedroom.

She was sitting on the wheelchair in front of the balcony's doors, looking at the rain.

He crouched in front of her.

'Hi, mom...' he whispered.

She slowly looked at him.

She looked at him... and it was already more than he got for the last few years.

He took a deep breath, trying to chase away the sudden emotions. His eyes dropped on the paper bag.

'I have something for you...' he grunted and gulped. He took out a small praline with hazelnut feeling, which she loved. 'Do you remember this? Do you want to try?'

The corner of her mouth twitched even when her eyes filled with more sadness than before.

Yoongi brought the praline closer to her mouth and she slightly parted them. She slowly took the treat and let it melt.

Yoongi sat on his heels in front of his mother, enjoying that she was... seeing him. She wasn't looking through him.

It didn't matter she was barely reacting... or her moves were so weak... or she wasn't speaking.

He pressed his forehead to her lap and annoying, betraying, hot tears escaped from the corner of his eyes.

He didn't know how long he was like that, but he almost started to cry out loud as

he wasn't crying from the moment Jaehyun died, when he felt a weak hand over his hair. Almost non-existing movement of the fingers.

And a faint whisper:

'Yoonie...'

Yoongi fell on his bed overwhelmed. Emotions were exhausting...

He needed something to distract himself... He took out his phone and frowned, when he thought about something.

He first texted Gahyeon.

**Yoongi: Do you remember a girl named Ren from school?**

**Gahy: No. I don't think so...**

**Yoongi: She could be older than you...**

**Gahy: In the school there wasn't anyone like that...**

**Yoongi: Tell me if you will remember something.**

**Gahy: I'm telling you I never heard of any Ren...** □

**Gahy: ...**

**Yoongi: What?**

**Gahy: In OUR school there was for sure no Ren...**

**Yoongi: But?**

**Gahy: I'm not sure... But remember the elementary school dad took us out of?**

**Yoongi: The one where you were attacked and the headmaster was a dick?**

**Gahy: Yeah... I think... I heard it there.**

**Gahy: But I was really small and I am not sure.** ¯_(ツ)_/¯

**Gahy: Besides... it wasn't a girl...**

**Gahy: I'm pretty sure he was on the basketball team...**

**Yoongi: Like the boy who saved you?**

**Gahy: Yeah, but it wasn't him for sure.**

**Yoongi: Nevermind. It's not the person...**

**Gahy: Why are you asking about the girl, oppa?** 😒

**Yoongi: Night!**

**Gahy: Hey! Tell me! Or I will tell Woosan about it!** ( ≧Д≦)

**Yoongi: I will change your name to "Little Hag" I swear!**

**Gahy: XOXO** 😘😘

**Yoongi: I'm throwing up!** 

**Gahy: Clean after yourself then!** 😎

Yoongi rolled his eyes and opened the app to check if Chim was there.

**SUGA: Hi... distract me!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Am I your slave or what?** 😒

**SUGA: Come on! Be your usual annoying self!**

**SUGA: It's absolutely enough.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Something happened, hyung?** 

**SUGA: I feel like marshmallow inside and I hate it to the core!**

**CHIMISLOVE: So it was something good?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Have you perhaps... met someone?**

Yoongi's eyes widened. What the hell!?

**SUGA: Are you a seer or what?!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Oh? You did...** 

What was with this plain tone?

**SUGA: Yeah...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Umm... sorry I have something to do now...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Congrats...**

**SUGA: What? Wait!**

**SUGA: Congrats about what?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Meeting your soulmate.** 

Yoongi's jaw dropped. He facepalmed.

**SUGA: And how did you come up with this brilliant conclusion?**

**CHIMISLOVE: You are not the marshmallow type...**

**CHIMISLOVE: So I guess, that would be the only reason you would feel like that?** 

**CHIMISLOVE: I'm going...**

**SUGA: Idiot...**

**SUGA: Come back here...**

**SUGA: I wanna smack your head soooo much!**

**CHIMISLOVE: *puppy eyes*** 

**SUGA: Aaaaa!!! Stop it!**

**SUGA: I haven't met my soulmate, jeeze!**

**SUGA: Just some random person!**

**SUGA: And I was happy because of my mom!**

**SUGA: Can you stop sulking?!**

**CHIMISLOVE: ...**

**CHIMISLOVE: So your mom made you happy?**

**SUGA: Yes. She is sick but she is getting better...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I see... 😓**

**CHIMISLOVE: Whaaaaa... I'm sorryyy... 😭😭😭😭**

**CHIMISLOVE: I acted like an idiot! 😓**

**SUGA: HEY! WHAT'S WITH YOU?!**

**SUGA: Are you on your period or what?!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Yes! My dick is bleeding from loneliness... 😭**

Yoongi snorted, then laughed out loud. He threw his head back trying to calm down.

This guy...

He smiled shyly looking at the phone.

It made him happy. A hint of possessiveness and jealousy from Chim...

**SUGA: Idiot.**

**SUGA: You are so stupid I will hug you out of pity... *hug***

**CHIMISLOVE: Liar.**

**CHIMISLOVE: You just want to hug me... *hugs back* □**

**SUGA: Dream on...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Oh trust me! Cuddling with me would be your favorite thing! 😁😁😁**

**CHIMISLOVE: I'm super fluffy! □**

**SUGA: Oh? What a disappointment... I thought you are hot...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I'M FLUFFY AND HOT! 😠😠**

**CHIMISLOVE: SUPER INCREDIBLY HOT! □**

**CHIMISLOVE: TOO HOT FOR YOU TO HANDLE! 😎**

**SUGA: Well I like to play with fire...**

**CHIMISLOVE: You would burn yourself if you would come closer! 😈**

**SUGA: Are you sure it wouldn't be you who would be on fire?**

**CHIMISLOVE: Well... M-maybe?**

**SUGA: Look who got shy suddenly?**

**SUGA: Baby Satan came back...**

**CHIMISLOVE: ... 😏😏😏**

When Yoongi saw the smirking emoji, he knew Chim got back all his satanic powers...

**CHIMISLOVE: If you move your tongue in bed as fast as during rapping...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I'm interested... 😎**

**CHIMISLOVE: Hyung...**

Yoongi blushed.

**SUGA: FUUUUUUCK YOUUUUUU!!!!**

**CHIMISLOVE: Anytime... *flying kiss* 😘😘😘**

**December 2069**

The only thing thanks to which War had not started yet, even if the ultimatum wasn't answered the way South Korea was expecting, was the winter.

Cold, gloomy winter with freezing rain.

The storms were a daily thing... The level of the water rose up as never in history. The natural catastrophe was behind the corner. Nobody was stupid enough to start military movements in this conditions.

New Year brough not only rain but also snow and low temperatures. But it didn't bring relief to citizens in Korea and Daegu. They were deadly afraid of melting ice and snow. More areas were under the water.

Even the floodplains have begun to give up. Most bridges have become impassable. Basements in cities were flooded. People began to move from lower floors to higher ones. Spring crops were threatened. Natural disaster was at hand.

Some streets in Seoul were inaccessible. And then it was announced - the decision. Or rather, political blackmail was exposed.

**January 2070**

It was the middle of January when at night 9 phones started to ring and 6 watches started to beep.

Jungkook frowned in his sleep and turned to the side, while Taehyung tightened his embrace around his waist.

He looked at the phone squinting his eyes and showed the coded number from MOI. He jumped out of the bed, scaring the hell out of Taehyung.

'Yes?!' he asked.

'Meeting in 30 minutes. Shelter number 4.'

Taehyung answered his phone call and heard exactly the same.

Their phones started to ring like crazy. They had to confirm the rest if the call was real.

'Soobin, don't panic! Yeonjun will come to you and we will pick the two of you from there... Yes! Even by the window!' Taehyung said to the phone.

Namjoon stormed Taehyung's room at the same time Jungkook was jumping through the balcony railing to his own room to get ready.

'You are awake? Good!'

'They called us.'

Namjoon's face went pale.

'Oh...'

'What's happening?' Taehyung asked, wearing his combat uniform.

'I will know after meeting Chanyeol and Baekhyun. We can't go there all at once...'

'Should we be careful? We are under observation...'

'When MOI is calling there is no time to lose. We will deal with the outcome later...'

Taehyung nodded and ran downstairs, yelling:

'See you at the meeting point!'

Minji just got out of the house and was approached by two policemen.

She just raised her eyebrow.

'You are not allowed to leave the house lady...'

Bam growled behind her and slowly walked to two men. Baring his teeth dangerously. They stepped back.

'Oh I think my dog is not agreeing with you...' Minji smirked, while Taehyung approached them from behind and hit their necks with his fingers, making them pass out.

'Take the car. I will take the second one.' she said.

Taehyung crouched down and patted Bam's head.

'Good boi! Go protect the house now...'

Jungkook and Hoseok walked out.

'We should unseal them... We don't know if they will try to stop us on the way...' Minji instructed Taehyung, pressing her hand to Hoseok's chest.

Taehyung did the same. He took out the sword and put it inside the scabbard.

'We have to get to Soobin and Yeonjun...'

Hoseok nodded.

'Don't get involved in an argument with his parents...'

'Don't worry we will get him out quietly. Jimin and uncles will take Dami and Yoohyeon. Minho and Han are on their way already.' Jungkook said while Namjoon and Jin walked out of the house and closed it.

'Stay in touch all the time.' Jin said sternly to the boys getting inside the car with three reminding parents.

'You too' Taehyung said, walking to the car.

Jungkook and Taehyung met Yeonjun under the windows of Soobin's room on the fourth floor.

Yeonjun gulped, pressing his phone to his ear.

'You have to jump...' he said.

'I know...' Soobin said. 'It's better than going through the front doors... I don't want to see my mom crying and threatening me...'

'Jungkook will catch you...' Yeonjun assured and Jungkook nodded.

'I'm ready...' Soobin said and hid his phone. He took a deep breath and stood on the windowsill.

Jungkook spread his arms and a warm wind flew from the ground to the top of the building.

Soobin closed his eyes and clenched his teeth so as not to scream.

But when he jumped he couldn't help it, but as soon as his voice tore out of his throat it was dispersed by one swing of Taehyung's sword.

Soobin was caught out in the swing of wind and slid down it safely, jumping out of it into Yeonjun's waiting arms.

'We don't have much time!' Taehyung rushed them.

15 minutes later they walked to the basement of the magazines in the industrial area of the city and met with the rest.

'We have everyone...' Namjoon informed after counting people inside the room.

One of MOI's intelligence officers nodded.

'The Military had the order to open the Chungju Dam on Namhan River...' he said shortly. 'They said it will save the North and East parts of the country from the upcoming flood...'

'They want to drown all Daegu and half of the Republic...' Namjoon whispered, terrified.

'They were threatening them that they would do it... Nobody took it seriously.' Minji said.

They are risking too much of the South Korean areas around the Dam... Even citizens didn't believe they would do it...'

'Well now the capital is at risk and paralysis of the whole country is possible... They are not able to control the waters anymore...' the officer said.

'They will sacrifice a small part of the country to save the rest...' Namjoon frowned.

'And they will drown Daegu on their way...' Hoseok shook his head. 'Clever Crisis Management... I don't think Daegu has enough water power users to calm the waves that will go through the rivers...'

'Whole Gumi will be underwater in an hour...' Baekhyun said, trailing the border river on the map, with his finger.

'That's why people are protesting...' The officer showed them pictures. 'Citizens from surrounding areas attacked the Dam's officers to stop the procedures and don't want to leave the structure.'

'Army?' Minji asked, thinking fast.

'They are preparing to blow up the Dam and flood barriers...'

'We have to evacuate people...' Jin said looking at the picture.

Taehyung with crossed arms was looking at the pictures of the Dam and map.

'No.' he shook his head. 'We have to stop this all along...'

'If you go against the military you will start a war...' Minji protested quietly.

'We won't go against the military...' Taehyung said. 'Not till they attack first...'

'Then what?' Jin frowned.

Jungkook was looking at the recording of the troubled river waters, running fast and said:

'We will go against the flood.'

**(🎶Music tip: *Scream* by Dreamcatcher🎶)**

An hour later they were transported to the private helicopter landing pad. The pilots were running around the military helicopter when 15 people entered the machine.

'We will have troubles on the way...' the pilot warned them.

'We will deal with them.' Hoseok patted his arm.

They were half on the way when the pilot got the message.

'You illegally entered South Korea's airspace. You do not have permission for this flight. You will be escorted to the closest military base....'

Namjoon approached the pilot and took the radio microphone.

'Kim Namjoon speaking. It's Military Organization of Interdependants are here to stop the flood without blowing up the Dam.'

After few minutes they heard.

'Denied. Go back or you will be shot.'

'Recording from this talk will be all over the internet in a minute!' Namjoon said sternly. 'We want to stop the disaster without victims and economic loss for the country! Are you really denying that?'

Another few minutes of silence.

'Request denied. No information about the mission. Combat aircraft on the way. Surrender.'

Namjoon cursed and looked at Taehyung, who nodded shortly.

'We will try not to harm you.' he said quietly to the radio and put it back.

'Four fighter jets on the radar.' the second pilot informed.

'Ten minutes to destination.' the first one added.

'The fighters have the order to shoot! Surrender!' the voice from the radio yelled.

Taehyung embraced Soobin with his arm.

'Tell me now if you don't want to do it...' he said, looking at him and Yeonjun.

'We will do it...' Soobin said, determined, gripping his bow tighter.

'Dad...' Jungkook called Hoseok. 'Protect them...'

Minji patted his back.

'Don't worry... We know how to play this game.'

The gravity shield embraced Yeonjun and Soobin. THey were floating over the floor a bit swallowed by the gentle light bulbs.

Hoseok high fived Yeonjun.

'We will show what the light can do!'

He and Minji were covered by the gravity bubbles too.

Minho grabbed the handle and opened the doors. The flow of air hit all of them.

'Don't worry!' she screamed through the roar of the wind. 'Hoseok will control gravity for us!' she said and jumped outside.

Yeonjun nodded to Soobin and jumped out as the second.

'Kick their asses!' Yoohyeon screamed and Soobin smiled and jumped after his soulmate.

Hoseok looked at three bubbles floating in the air and after he stabilized them in the air he jumped out after them.

'Missiles!' the pilot screamed.

They all looked through the front glass to see the approaching missile.

But it was met with an arrow of light long before it could reach them.

The remaining pieces were caught by gravity bubbles and safely reached the ground not harming anyone.

Baekhyun created the echolocation map in the middle of the helicopter.

'Checking the connection.' Chanyeol said. 'Hope, can you hear me?'

'Perfectly!'

'How is the situation?'

'We will manage. Boys are doing great... they are like two missiles themselves!'

'Okay! Checking the sound! Everybody hears me and each other?'

In the mindlink created by Chanbeak the voices were heard:

'V! JK! Dami! Jin! RM! Jim! Yoo! Jun! Bin! Leeno! Han! Jiu!'

'We have everyone!' Chanyeol confirmed.

'Three minutes!' Pilot yelled.

Baekhyun was analyzing the situation on the sound map. He was trying to hear through too many sounds.

'They removed the people from the Dam!' he yelled.

'The missile on the radar!' the second pilot screamed. 'They directed it at the dam!'

The helicopter trembled. They fell to the side.

At the same time Baekhyung and Chanyeol, who were sensitive to the sounds, screamed in pain and the terrifying rumble.

Then even more freezing silence came after it.

Baekhyun looked at the map.

'THEY HIT THE DAM!' he screamed.

'DAMI! YOO!' Taehyung screamed. 'MINHO, JIMIN!' Go!'

They jumped one after another without hesitation, embraced by Jungkook's air power.

'Han stay here! Secure the machine!' Taehyung said while Jungkook jumped after the rest. He looked at his fathers. 'We will calm the situation, you will be needed later!' he said to them and taking out his sword he jumped after the rest.

From outside it looked as if on the dam surface that was falling apart six meteors fell.

Minho was running through the wall shielding everyone.

Jimin was sticking to him with his swords ready to protect him at this moment when the rest were dealing with the catastrophe.

Dami fell on like an arrow on the wall sticking her spear in the ground feeling the cracks with the ice, giving Yoohyeon time.

Yoohyeon, spreading her arms to catch the balance, on the wall, which was still falling apart under their feet, finally stood on the edge of the whole in the dam.

She fell on her knees and pressed her palms to the ground. She poured the power inside the wall. She started to build with ice what was destroyed.

'GO!' Dami screamed at Taehyung and Jungkook, when the two of them were fixing the dam with ice as well. 'We will manage!'

It was true. The two of them could build as many dams as they wanted, but they couldn't stop the waters...

Jungkook looked at Taehyung, cupped his face and pressed his lips to him.

It wasn't a kiss. It was the air power used to let them breathe under the water. They both had to use both kinds of powers now.

It didn't mean they didn't enjoy it though...

He winked at Taehyung and jumped over the wall to the river.

Taehyung smirked and jumped over the wall from the other side.

A shiny dam made of sparkling ice was rebuilt under Yoohyeon's hands and Dami's spear.

'Another missile!' They heard the voice of Baekhyun in their minds.

'We have it!' Yeonjun replied.

He and Soobin were like two falling stars, floating in the air. Soobin tightened the bowstring and sent the four arrows at once that hit the missile, coming into Dam's direction.

Yeonjun used the smaller light balls to disperse the remaining pieces of the projectile.

And as soon as the construction was made the soldiers came from two sides of the dom.

Jimin stood on their way, with his two ninja knives sparkling from fire and lightning.

On the other side Dami made a cartwheel with her spear and pointed it at the unit that stood in front of her.

'I will help Jimin!'

Yeonjun screamed to Soobin, who nodded, staying in the air near Hoseok, looking around, ready to deal with another ambush.

Yooyeon was strengthening the construction. Hardening the ice. Changing the water around it to the frozen blocks. Making the ice dam thicker and stronger.

Jiu landed next to Dami.

'Ready?'

'As never before...' Dami smirked.

When the first gunshots were pointed at Jimin and Yeonjun, Jimin swift avoided them.

He was dancing. Dancing with the swords. Cutting through the bullets, bending and making backflips. He sent the shock wave to the enemies and Yeonjun added the light to blind them. Most of them fell to the ground.

On the other side Dami was freezing everything that was coming at her and Minji was sending the seven bubbles of light to destroy it to sparkly pieces.

They had to give time to Yooyeon, Jungkook and Taehyung.

Namjoon from the helicopter was observing the piled up waves runnin in all the directions. He knew his boys needed time.

He pressed his phone to his ear.

'Yongguk... connect me to the president! Now!'

After some minutes he heard on the other side of the line a calm voice:

'Hallo?'

'Kim Namjoon speaking. Mr President, I required you to call out the army near the Chugju Dam!'

'You entered the zone of military operations illegally...'

'Do you want to explain to the citizens why Seoul is under water?!'

'Destroying Chugju Dam is not a threat to the Capital...'

'What if we turn the water flow from Daegu to Seoul?' Namjoon said dangerously. 'Believe me we are able to do it...'

'You will be imprisoned.'

'Before or after the President Palace will be stormed by an angry crowd?'

On the other line the silence fell.

'You gave Daegu an ultimatum. I will give you one too. Either we will calm the water and the flood will never happen anywhere. Or Daegu will stay safe and Seoul will move in boats instead of cars.'

'I have to talk with the Prime Minister...'

'Do it fast.'

'You all will be under arrest for this, Mr Kim...'

'Try us.'

Under the water Jungkook and Taehyung didn't do any spectacular magic. But it was beautiful.

Floating in the water, ragged by angry waves, they were... scanning.

Jungkook moved his hands gently. Taehyung embracing the handle of the sword.

They were spreading the raging waters through small leaks in the ground. Directing every small drop through the ground. Soaking it gently, pushing it forward.

To underground rivers. To small mountain creeks. To lazy forest streams. To long forgotten channels in the cities.

Then forward. Feeding the earth, fields, old trees from their roots to their crowns.

They used every small plant to spread the water naturally through the whole Korean Peninsula.

It was a slow process but the level of their power... their connection to nature was immeasurable.

The waters in the river decreased gradually. The waves became calmer with time.

Finally everything that ground couldn't take, the ocean embraced gently.

'It's done...' Jungkook spread the thought through his mindlink.

'Come back. It's getting ugly above...' Baekhyun informed them.

'On it!' Taehyung replied, swimming to the river's surface.

Using the water and the air they jumped off the water and landed swiftly on the top of the dam, where on one side Jiu, Dami and Yoohyeon and Jin were standing and on the other side Jimin, Yeonjun and Namjoon.

They weren't fighting. They were glaring at the military forces that were keeping an eye on them. It seemed they get the order to hold the fire until the situation would be solved.

The gun were pointed at them instantly.

'Keep your cool, boys...' Namjoon said quietly.

'HANDS UP!! YOU ARE UNDER ARREST!'

Taehyung and Jungkook looked at each other with 'done' faces.

Taehyung nodded slightly to Jungkook and started to slowly raise his hands...

Jungkook smirked.

'Han, Minho! Double barrier!' Taehyung said through mindling just a second before he hit his sword on the ice.

The sound wave spread through the area, making all the soldiers bend in excruciating pain in their brains.

At the same time Jungkook spread his hands and the mist fell on the whole dam like a soft, fluffy sheet.

---

Time is ticking...

Hope you enjoyed the chapter.

Read the lyrics of *Scream* guys. It fits perfectly...

This is the small gift from me for our dear Jin's day. □□□□□□□

We love you World Wide Handsome! <333333333 🫰🫰🫰🫰🫰🫰💕💗💗💗

BlairWitch91🩶

# Chapter 48: Eclipse of the Moon

**January 2070**

The mist was so thick there was no way to see through it. But there was something moving with incredible speed inside it.

Two invisible shadows.

Fast steps.

Chaotic screams and yelling were heard from the military officers.

Commands were heard from inside the mist. The soldiers were blinded not knowing what was happening to them.

One after another the voices were silenced.

Red String and Red Alert stayed still.

There was an urge to move. To act.

But they as well trusted in what Jungkook and Taehyung were doing right now.

Namjoon sighed. He told them to chill...

Right after he gritted his teeth. The situation was hard. They were stuck being arrested right away or being arrested just after going back to Seoul.

'Appa... hope you have some ideas?' he heard in the mindlink Taehyung's voice.

'I do...' he sighed heavily. 'But you won't like it...'

'We will see. For now we have to get out of here.'

'I sent the helicopter away. There was too much risk they would shoot it down. We have to hide it for some time...'

'MOI's cars were on the way either way.' Minji added.

'What are you two doing?' Jin asked, feeling the shadow passing near him.

'Giving us time to come up with a solution...' Taehyung answered.

Right after his words the mist suddenly dispersed as if it wasn't even there to begin with.

Red String and Red Alert turned to see Taehyung and Jungkook standing in the middle of the dam, breathing with difficulty from running in the wet, frozen clothes.

No matter how powerful their souls were, and how much they could use their power to protect themselves, they still had human bodies.

Bodies which were in freezing water for too long.

Jin ran to them, but the rest were still staring at the soldiers, who looked as if they were in a paralyzed frozen state. Still pointing guns at them but not moving. Having open eyes, breathing, they looked like human statues.

'What is this?' Minji asked.

'Sleeping loop.' Jungkook replied. 'I usually don't use mind powers, but sometimes it's useful...' he shrugged.

'Useful?!' Dami snorted. 'More like fucking awsome!'

'What does that mean?' Soobin asked, frowning.

Jin's bandages were embracing Jungkook's and Taehyung's hands.

'I will raise the temperature of your bodies...' he mumbled. 'Idiots! Are you trying to get hypothermia?!'

'Using the whole hydrogenic map of the whole country wasn't easy uncle...' Jungkook whined, while Taehyung looked at Soobin and explained:

'It means they see the last three minutes of what happened in a loop. They still think they have us under gun and control the situation...'

'Smart move...' Namjoon noded.

Taehyung rolled his eyes.

'No matter how I look at it, we are in deep shit. We could have just get away from here, but they will start to hunt us.'

'Yeah...' Namjoon sighed.

'What's the plan then?' Hoseok asked.

'The only solution I have in mind...' Namjoon said heavily. '... is to corner them using the fourth power. The only alternative is to risk going back to Seoul, pack and run for our lives, hoping we will reach Daegu and not cause a war, because of

crossing the border...'

'Then indeed we have only one solution...' Minji shook her head.

'So we don't have anything to discuss here.' Taehyung said. 'Do what you need to do, before the rest of the military will come here...'

'It will expose us and you...' he warned, looking at Red String. 'Later it will only be harder...'

'We knew it when we came here...' Dami said.

Namjoon looked at frowning Jin, looking for reassurance.

Jin with a tightened throat only nodded to him.

'We are here! Is it safe?' They heard Baekhyun in the mindlink. 'Cars will be here in 15 minutes.'

'Do you have Yoohyeon's laptop?' Namjoon asked.

'Yeah. We took everything from the helicopter.'

'Wait for the cars..."

Namjoon took out his phone and gave it to Yoohyeon.

'I recorded everything from the helicopter. Spread it through the net. Send it to the media. Do everything you can do now. Baekhyun sent the recording from the talk with airspace control. Add it too...'

Yoohyeon, moving her fingers fastly posted the recording on all possible social media, and sent it to the biggest Korean news station and platforms.

'I'm sending it to dad... he will push it abroad...' she said. 'He will take care of government blockades till I get my laptop. '

She gave the phone back to Namjoon.

'Next military unit is approaching...' Chanyeol warned them through the mindlink.

'Minji, call Yongguk. Tell him to organize a press conference and inform the President that if he wants to call me, he knows the number....' Namjoon ordered. Few minutes later his phone rang in his hand. He smirked sadly, shaking his head.

'Yes, Mr President?'

'What's the meaning of this? You all are under arrest... You broke the law. You will

be tried for violating military protocol...'

'Mr President, right now under your windows a crowd is gathering I guess? And reporters? Will you explain the recordings alone or want me to help you?'

'There is nothing to explain. You disturbed military operation...'

'Your soldiers are around us. Unharmed. You know who else is? All the citizens, whose life you risked to destroy the dam. People that live around, who would be killed or whose houses would be destroyed by your decision... There are currently as many of those people as your soldiers here... How will you explain a massacre if they will stand for us?'

'We had to make a decision that will be the best for the majority of the citizens!'

'And we made the decision that was best for EVERYONE.' Namjoon countered him. 'In two hours ICI will hold the press conference... You can have an open debate with us or you can explain the situation to the whole world and the United Nations...'

The long silence was heard.

'Your soldiers will let us go and we will join the press conference... If we won't win the debate with your reasoning in front of the eyes of all of Korea... We will surrender. If we will... you will stop targeting us.'

'And if I don't like your proposition?'

'Then I will expose all of the operations of ICI and MOI we did to help this country undercover. I will blame the government in front of the eyes of the whole world for its inhuman behavior towards its own citizens during the war in Daegu. And I will demand your generals to be accused of crimes against humanity. Destroying hospitals. Blocking the humanitarian routes. Sending missiles on civil objects where childrens were... And working along terroristic organization!'

'Do you have proof?'

'Plenty.' Namjoon said calmly. 'Remember you are talking to people with powers you can't comprehend... Time is ticking Mr President. We calm this situation now... or for the second time in your career you will encounter a rebellion. This time... in the whole country.'

'Your threats are baseless...'

'We are surrounded by your soldiers... And we can pass through them if we want. I am not threatening, Mr President. I'm warning. You have 5 minutes to call out your army and let us through.'

'Mr Kim...'

Namjoon disconnected.

He looked at Taehyung and Jungkook.

'Wake them up...' he said, confidently.

'Are you sure it will work?' Jin asked quietly.

'Governments have the power... till the crowd decides otherwise.' Namjoon said bitterly. 'Humanity doesn't change. Deep down inside, all officials and powerful people are scared of the French Rebellion repeating itself. This time much faster and worse... because the media have an enormous power now...'

Taehyung nodded, believing in his father's words. Everybody returned to their positions with their hands up, while Jungkook and Taehyung one after another woke up the soldiers.

Namjoon was standing in front of the commander, looking him in the eyes.

They again started to yell. Running between the Interdependants on the dam. Trying to pacify them when next military cars approached the dam and one of the Generals walked to them.

'Let them go!' he yelled.

The commander looked at him surprised.

General looked at Namjoon with disgust and hatred, before explaining:

'Order of the president.'

Namjoon, Minji and Hoseok were discussing how to act, while Jin was checking everyone if they had any scratches or bruises.

Yeonjun and Soobin were jumping around Taehyung and Jungkook, who still had wet clothes on them until Jungkook used the air power to dry them, so the rest won't worry.

Han and Minho were shielding vans that MOI sent, because they were escorted by military cars and the situation could change into an ugly one really fast.

Namjoon warned the President that if they won't reach the Conference right away safely, Yongguk will publish all the recordings they had from Daegu.

They reached Seoul at 9 in the morning.

Namjoon sighed.

'Minji and I will go. Sealed. Rest will stay in cars...'

'I'm going too. You can't go alone without protection... There are guards there. If you are going sealed you need someone to protect you. President will be there with his guardians, right?' Taehyung said.

'If Taehyung is going, so will I.' Jungkook said fast.

Minji rolled her eyes.

'You two are the ones I the least want to be shown to the public eye...'

'A bit too late for that after publishing the recordings from the dam...' Jungkook pointed out cleverly.

'I agree you shouldn't go without protection...' Hoseok said to Minji.

'Okay...' Namjoon gave up. 'But you have to cover your faces, kids. We can't be shown as someone who has anything to hide... But our bodyguards are the other case... '

Taehyung and Jungkook put on their hoods and masks. Jungkook's katanas were still attached to his back. So was Taehyung's Sacred Treasure.

In front of the building, where the International Council of Interdependents' Office was, the crowd and the reporters were already present.

Jin cupped Namjoon's cheek and pecked his lips.

'You got this...' he whispered.

Namjoon took a deep breath and nodded.

Minji looked with worry at Taehyung and Jungkook, before she opened the van's door.

Namjoon got out as the first one. He was instantly blinded by flashes. Minji joined him, nodding to Yongguk, who was coming to them.

Jungkook and Taehyung stood behind them glaring at the police officers, who were securing the place, warningly.

'President is ready, you can't have any weapons around him...' An agent in black suit came to them.

'We don't have guns.' Minji said calmly.

'Any weapons.' The agent repeated, looking at Taehyung's sword.

Jungkook whispered something to Taehyung's ear.

Taehyung rolled his eyes and two of them gave their weapons to Jin and Hoseok. They get rid of all knives and any other objects.

Hoseok patted Taehyung's palm, when the other looked at him unhappy, giving back his sword.

'I will protect it...' Hoseok promised.

Taehyung nodded. They were so stupid. They were looking at physical things, when Jungkook, who was right now the biggest threat to all of them, could walk freely unsealed.

Where people's ignorance about Interdependants was to their advantage this time...

The agents searched them thoroughly, before allowing them to go through the crowd.

Namjoon, Minji and Yongguk stood on the stairs in front of the mics on the right side with their silent bodyguards behind them.

The reporters were already yelling one through another. Asking questions.

They waited for some time until The President of Korea, Minister of National Defense and Attorney General stood by the mics on the left side.

Yongguk whispered something to Namjoon, who nodded.

'We will answer the questions later...' The Attorney General said. 'First we will explain the situation and current situation...' he looked at Namjoon with a confident, judging expression.

Minji fixed the mic and started:

'The situation that took place today at 3 a.m. near the Chungju Dam was the Operation performed by the officers of the Military Organization of Interdependants. You all know it as MOI. To understand why it happened you

have to know that MOI doesn't act FOR or AGAINST anything or anyone unless the people's life or public safety is in danger. And by 'people' we mean everyone. We don't look at the danger through who deserved to be saved...'

She stopped to let this sentence linger in the air.

'The operation was performed at the last possible moment by 16 trained officers. The short notification about the problem resulted in a discord between the government and MOI...'

On the faces of government official confusion appeared. They looked at each other inaudibly, asking if any of them knew what was going on.

'... but fortunately we managed to come to an agreement. Nobody was harmed as people's lives are always our top priority. We managed to restore the dam and remove the danger of flooding altogether.'

She nodded to Namjoon.

'First of all, from this place I would like to thank the President for his forbearance. As the discord could result in a much more exacerbated situation. Too late we were informed and asked to help. Communication problems resulted in a lack of information from the military about our mission. For this reason, according to the protocols they are bound by, the officers refused to let us in and the generals were not informed of our presence in time. As we had to act fast we took the risk to save the dam and to stop the flood...'

Jungkook and Taehyung looked at each other confused for a second listening to Namjoon's words, but then Jungkook could see the satisfaction in Taehyung's eyes above the mask.

Kim Fucking Namjoon - the King of "FUCK THEM WITH KINDNESS".

How could the government react to those lies in front of the whole country? If they expose Namjoon's lie, he would expose that they were ready to kill people and sacrifice some districts of the country "for greater good".

'We are aware we violated military protocols that are made for citizens' safety. We would like to sincerely apologize for that and all the stress we put the Generals and President through. We are happy we could have helped. If the communication would work flawlessly as many times before, we would prepare this mission a long time ago, without solving this matter the way it was solved in the end. We were aware of the danger of flooding and we understood the President's decision in a critical situation. This makes us all the more pleased that we were able to avert danger without loss of life or economic loss to the country.'

Yongguk stepped forward.

'Despite how brazen our actions may seem, more than 250,000 residents at risk of flooding were saved thanks to them. The operation also prevented financial losses of more than 5 billion won. We also avoided exacerbating the international situation with the Republic of Daegu. But the law is the law and must be respected. Therefore, the International Council of Interdependants is ready to pay for the loss of military equipment that was destroyed during the action and to report for social work.'

Jungkook frowned. No way in hell... He whispered something to Taehyung's ear.

Taehyung agreed and moved to Namjoon. He covered his father's ear and repeated Jungkook's words. Namjoon looked at him, whispered something back and nodded.

He grunted and Yongguk let him speak immediately:

'The social work and payment will be executed in the form of securing the river banks in the whole country. As we know, the level of the waters can still rise till the end of March, according to forecasting. The floodgates will be dammed, inspected and strengthened at no additional cost for the country budget. '

Even Yongguk seemed impressed by the offer. He cleared his throat and continued:

'Therefore we want to offer our sincere apology for violating the law all should be equal to, even for greater good. And we all hope this situation will teach us how to cope better between organizations of all kinds...'

Yoongguk looked directly at one of the cameras and gently said:.

'To all citizens from the endangered by flood areas... we are glad you all are safe. And we are delighted that we could help using our powers...'

It was the last bullet to the President and his minions...

The massive applause was heard in the room. The clapping, whistles and cheers were so loud as if a massive idol concert just started. The flashes started to blind them again.

That's what the trio in front of the mics wanted to cause - The crowd's approval and support.

The public was on their side. And it was hard to go against it...

No matter how unfair it was to apologize for something they should have never

apologized for, Taehyung was just super amazed and proud of how Namjoon, Yongguk and Minji could easily manipulate and use the crowd to their advantage...

And for their safety.

They were aware they will be under observation of the government even harder than before. But now they were under observation of the whole country too... And that meant that even the smallest act of injustice towards them would be hardly opposed and judged...

The President, Minister of National Defence and General Attorney were thinking fast now, how to react to that. How to not turn the crowd against them and how to take a bit of this support back. No matter what they planned to say few minutes ago, their plan went down the drain. Minji, Namjoon and Yongguk turned it into ashes without any mercy...

President stepped to the front and said to the mic:

'The situation was hard. The decision we made in the time of critical situation, would indeed put the people that oppose the evacuation in danger... We indeed need to work on our cooperation and communication. We know that Interdependants don't like to be involved in any other way the normal citizens are. That's why... despise the whole situation and danger that it caused... - He turned to Namjoon, gulped and through his throat calculated words were squeezed.- ... thank you for replying to our call for help. We hope that in the future we can work together in a much more effective way for the safety and good of this country...'

A clapping was heard from the crowd, when the General Attorney reluctantly took the stand:

'The military protocols in critical situations, and that is what we encountered today, provides for the possibility of deviating from standard procedures in emergency situations. Therefore, there is no need to compensate or prosecute the participants in today's events. But we will gladly accept the help from ICI in securing the rivers' banks as their good will and opportunity to strengthen our cooperation. Once again... We are thankful to MOI for saving our citizens.'

Taehyung and Jungkook were glad the masks were hiding their satisfied smiles.

'It's time for the questions now...' The President informed the reporters, smiling lightly.

There was few questions to Interdependants for example: "How the flood was stopped?" or "How are they going to secure the rivers?' but mostly the questions were to the officials: "Why did the military try to destroy the dam more than once? What happened to the people that were protesting on the dam? Did they inform

and secure Daegu before they took the action?'

The roasting was long and hard for the Minister of National Defence, but that wasn't Namjoon's problem.

The Press Conference took more than 40 minutes. Inside the vans the rest of Red String and Red Alert were watching it on their mobile phones.

'It's really pissing me off that Namjoon had to pull out all of this, because the President wouldn't agree to the exact same talk in private...' Hoseok gritted his teeth, and looked at Jin with the corner of his eye.

He saw how pale Jin was.

'Hey! Are you okay?' he asked, grabbing his arm.

Jin gulped and whispered:

'C-call Dragon.. Tell him to bring Hwasa to our home asap...'

'What? Why so sudden?'

Jin looked at him with terrified, widened eyes.

'Hoseok... it's January...'

Hobi had pure confusion on his face.

'So what?'

'The year passed... I'm pretty sure... I saw their original mark on Taehyung's palm. The VK sign! It had to change during the night!'

Hobi went as pale as Jin and fastly took out his phone. Jin was shaking his head in disbelief.

'How could we overlook this?'

Hoseok grabbed his hand and squeezed it.

'Don't panic. Their faces were covered. They are seen as normal MOI's officers. It's not so easy to identify them...'

They weren't stressed about boys' mark normally. It didn't matter one day late or early as Taehyung was wearing the glove and Jungkook would be a dead meat if he would showed his chest to anyone beside his boyfriend...

So usually it wasn't a huge problem!

But they entered the fucking press conference broadcasted on the whole country and beside its borders!

And the gloves to Holders' combat uniforms were designed to show the marks and have the fingers and inside of the palms bare, so it was possible to unseal and seal the sealer anytime.

That's why Jin was 90% sure he saw the VK mark on Taehyung's palm when he whispered something to Namjoon, covering his ear.

Jin started to shiver...

Someone for sure will notice this...

'Jin! Stop spiraling!' Hoseok shook his arm. 'We will change their mark as always! Their faces were covered! It's not good, but it is not hopeless either! Okay?!'

Jin took a deep breath.

Okay! Even if someone will notice and chase after a legendary hero, they will chase after an unknown MOI's officer. Of course they will try to look through Namjoon's and Minji's close surroundings, but if they will change the mark to JT as they had been doing for years, maybe boys won't be discovered so easily...

When Minji, Namjoon, Jungkook and Taehyung got inside the van, still having a bit of hope, Jin pulled his son to himself fast and with a steel grip around his right wrist.

Taehyung looked at him surprised then at his own palm.

His eyes widened when looked at the mark.

'Shit!' he whispered.

'Hey! What happened?' Jungkook leaned to them, just as Minji and Namjoon.

Jungkook for a moment was speechless. Fear ran through his body like a premonition to something bad... A cold piece of ice slid down to his stomach.

As if he could sense it, Taehyung looked at him with terrified eyes.

'I'm sorry.' he breathed out in panic.

Jungkook frowned.

'What are you sorry for?' he asked angrily. 'It's our mark. It's normal, it appeard.'

'It's okay... we will deal with this situation as always.' Namjoon said calmly.

Jungkook pulled Taehyung to the seat next to him, and hid his palm between his hands, warming it up. He put his head on Taehyng's shoulder and gritted his teeth in determination. He wasn't a child anymore. He won't allow anybody to hurt Taehyung.

No matter the costs...

**February-March, 2070**

After two weeks the situation calmed down. They watched the published recordings of the Chungju Dam's Operation and the tension died down a bit when they realized the whole Red String was masked all the time. There was just one moment when Jungkook shared the air power with Taehyung, pulling his mask down for a moment. But they were recorded from their backs and only someone, who knew them, could tell who it was.

When Dragon and Hwasa restored the covering mask, Taehyung started to openly show it, not wearing a glove, to trick anyone who could suspect he was the one with the VK sign on his palm.

Jin stopped to panic too, when with time the media focused only on the public figures they knew, without trying to discover the masked officers of MOI. So now usually Minji, Yongguk and Namjoon were pestered about interviews, meetings and so on.

But the fame and appreciation for Interdependants slowly died too, after the economic condition of the country, after more than a year after separation of Daegu, worsened. The inflation rised and the foreign investments slowed down. The society was not happy about it. The mediation and negotiation between the Korean Government and Daegu Government didn't bring effect. So another ultimatum to Min Kyung was sent, that the Military will enter the illegal Republic. Because Daegu was doing surprisingly well. And it was caused mainly by the fact that they replaced what they couldn't do normally with their powers till they were able to find a solution.

Right after the Dam was almost destroyed Wi Hajun - one of the Commanders of Daegu's Army, posted a statement:

*'I want to give our thanks to the International Council of Interdependants and Military Organization of Interdependants for stopping the cruel act of the Korean Government. You risked your life for the safety of innocent people. But I want you to know, that no matter how you all will portray it, we are aware of the truth. Destroying the Dam would cause major losses to Daegu citizens and it was planned on purpose to force us to give up.*

*Mr President... we won't. You don't try to help or understand us. You don't try to fix your mistakes. You don't learn.*

*We will fight for the rights of our citizens. We will fight to protect the happiness of Interdependants and non-Interdependats who found their way to cooperate and coexist together without being forced. Because we gave them the stability to do it.*

*Till you will guarantee the same equality they have now in your country, Mr President, Daegu will stay an Interdependent Republic.*

*We will stand for it. We will bleed for it. Because we don't trust you.*

*To all officials of MOI and ICI - you can try to cover Korean Government mistakes and cruelty as you did a few hours ago. But how long will you be doing this?'*

This statement caused a lot of divert reaction of Interdependants, who still haven't left Korea. And blocking the borders with Daegu, made them just more anxious.

Everybody was asking themselves: will they force us to fight against them? Should I sit still this time too?

After fulfilling their promises and securing the rivers in a natural way from the next flood (what they had to do at nights driving through the whole country), Taehyung and Jungkook tried to convince their parents it was the last moment they could move to the Republic of Daegu and their ice was slowly breaking. They couldn't be caught up in the crossfire of the Korean Military and Daegu's Army.

All of them started to look for a place they could move to, as far away from Daegu itself as it was possible.

But they waited.

It wasn't easy to restore life in an absolutely unknown place... It wasn't easy to guarantee Jungkook's and Taehyung's education as they were still students. It wasn't easy to find jobs and secure their finances in an unstable country that was at risk of war anytime.

So they waited for the information from Ryu - Yongguk's son - to know what was the situation and actual condition of Sealers and Holders in Daegu.

During the wait, they tried desperately to lead their daily life. Enjoy their normal jobs. And plan the future somehow...

**April, 2070 - Gumi - City on the border in Daegu**

Yoongi was driving fast. Gumi was a fragile place. Their weak point. It was the city, which was divided by the river and currently half of it belonged to Korea and half to Daegu.

If the Military would try to cross the border it would be there... So they threw a lot of their forces - which weren't that great - to this exact spot.

His job was to secure the people there. Check if anybody wanted to be evacuated and inform them about the closest safeties and who to contact in a dangerous situation. Army was formed mainly by Interdependants... and they had to protect mainly non-Interdependants.

What an irony!

San, who was sitting on the passenger sit, looking through his phone, frowned:

'Do you think this is true? The guy with the VK sign, Taeil was talking about?'

'I saw it. It really looked like that mark...' Wooyoung added.

'I saw at least 4 people with the same mark...' Yoongi rolled his eyes. 'This shitshow is not ending. And I am sure we once passed a stall, where they were selling fake tattoos like that...'

'But people whisper... They seem to believe it...'

'They should focus on what is here and now, not on some legends!' Yoongi gritted his teeth. 'Even if it would be true, how do you expect two people just coming out of nowhere and fixing everything? That's impossible! Even if they exist, they are just Interdependants like us!'

'Yeah, we should focus on the job in front of us...' San sighed. 'Two other teams are behind us. Should we start?'

Yoongi stopped the car for a moment.

'Give them instructions. I will find Taeil and tell him we are here... He is probably with the Commanders...'

San and Wooyoung got out. Yoongi was sending information to Taeil, so he would inform the soldiers to give him a pass, when the doors from the passenger's side opened and someone swiftly sneaked in.

'Drive where you were going to drive...' the person said.

Yoongi squinted his eyes.

'I convinced myself I made you up...'

Ren rolled her eyes.

'I told you I will find you.'

'Maybe I didn't want to be found.' he pressed his lips tightly. 'What are you doing here?'

'Drive.' Ren pulled her cup over her eyes more. 'Told you I am the secretary of the Commanders. I am where they are...'

'What do you want this time?'

'The army is divided internally.' Ren said quietly. 'There are groups that try to stop separating people with separation syndrome. They are sneakily evacuating them to the North of the Republic... Just as some powerful Sealers. It's a small group. It started out of nowhere... There is this new guy there... He is quiet and clever.'

'Name?'

'If I knew it he wouldn't be clever... In the army he is using the name of Song.'

'How did the generals not find out?'

'They can't save everyone. They save the ones they can... Undercover.'

'Why?'

'Because Hajun and Joryoung play a dangerous game under your uncle's nose.'

'They are using Taboo?'

'Whenever they can... And their circle is as rotten as them. They are protecting each other like some kind of cult... They are looking for especially useful Sacred Treasures...'

Yoongi frowned:

'When you say Taeil can become unstable... You meant mentally?'

'What do you think can happen to a soul that violated the other soul? The more time Holders are using it... the less human like they are... They are starting to be aggressive. Have mood swings. Unexpected bursts of hate for themselves that are changing to power addiction a moment later... It's like a drug...'

'We have a war around a corner?! Seriously?! They are doing this!?'

Ren crossed her arms over her chest.

'Do you really think the war will start? I don't think Korea will go against us again with this much violence... The world is watching... But I have a feeling the other game is playing without our knowledge... Don't you?'

'Is my uncle involved in this game?' Yoongi asked quietly.

'According to me... not yet. Let me out here...' Ren said unexpectedly.

'Where is Inho?'

'Out of reach.' Ren said shortly. 'I will try to get in contact with Song. If you are a Guardian, you need to have a way to sneak out from here someone who will be in danger... You are close to people. If you want to protect them, find a way to not give them to the Crisis Management Council or the Army...'

Yoongi stopped and Ren fastly got out of the car.

**June 2070, Seoul**

As Taehyung, Jimin, Dami, Yeonjun and Minho ended their college in March, they started their jobs. Besides their usual planned meetings they didn't have time to meet all together in a group but they had small meetings with whatever could reach the pointed place.

Yeonjun and Minho rented an apartment together, and Yeonjun convinced Soobi

to move out of home, no matter what. Soobin was a top student. His scholarship was enough to cover his University expenses and Yeonjun wanted to help with the rest.

He didn't want Soobin to meet with the situation like a few weeks before, when Soobin was met with his things packed inside the car and his parents giving him no options to stay in Seoul. In the end Soobin said they can take everything and he is not going to move out of here. His mother was beginning, crying, asking, threatening.

Soobin convinced them to go. He took his things and moved for some time to Yoohyeon, where Jennie was spoiling him to the core.

But now Yeonbin and Minsung were practically living together as Han was treating Minho's room as his own.

Taehyung was mostly busy with work while Jungkook had a hard second year in college with a lot of new material to cover up. They were glad they were practically living together, so they could be around each other at home all the time.

They were worried about Namjoon, Minji and Yongguk, because they started to be actively involved in calming the situation around the borders. They were standing against the government's aggressive moves, trying to pinpoint and explain how to change Korean law and behavior of its citizens to reach the goal, which was uniting the country again. Their work wasn't appreciated much... But they were blocking the conflict escalation.

Boys knew... they were doing it because the latest news from Ryu was that the Army of Daegu is using Taboo on Sealers and Holders are practically addicted to power. Ryu, with few new friends, organized safe ways to save Interdependants at risk from other Interdependants.

It was just another reason for parents to keep the boys as far away from there as it was possible...

On the other hand Taehyung, Jungkook and the rest of Red String tried to convince the Red Alert they can't stay still, when Taboo was used freely, hurting Interdependants!

So the atmosphere wasn't that nice, when they were starting any topic related to it.

Taehyung wanted to rest from all of this tension and politics, so he dealt with his job extra fast and drove to the University to pick up Jungkook.

'Hey!' Jungkook got in and pecked Taehyung's lips. 'How was your day?'

'Pretty cheerful...' Taehyung said. 'I had a photoshoot with these two cute twin sisters. Four-year olds...'

'Energetic?'

'You have no idea...' Taehyung smiled with a comically painful expression, making Jungkook laugh.

'Where are we going?' Jungkook frowned, noticing they weren't driving through their usual way to home.

'Just driving.' Taehyung shrugged and Jungkook smiled widely.

He turned up the radio, hearing *Orbit* playing.

*'I'll stay with you, Even when the dark night comes, I will be in your dreams, All fear will disappear*' he hummed, closing his eyes and placing his palm over Taehyung's hand on the gear.

Taehyung lifted his hand to place a kiss on his knuckles.

They were driving through the city and outside of it. Till Taehyung stopped in the forest, took out his camera and he started to take photos of the sunset, which fastly changed into photos of Jungkook, who was so done with him after a while, he showed him a middle finger.

'Omg! This one is great! My new lock screen!' Taehyung giggled.

'Are you kidding me!' Jungkook wrestled with him for a moment, to take the camera back.

He triumphantly got it and wanted to delete the photo, but Taehyung pouted, so he just rolled his eyes and put the camera on the car bonnet.

He leaned on it.

They looked around. The nature was especially beautiful this year. The colors were more intense... They had a small idea that it could be caused by their power watering them accidentally...

They felt great in the quiet forest, where the sunset was peeking through trees, shining on them.

Jungkook's eyes were fixed on Taehyung's face, which seemed magical in this light.

'I remember the first time I thought you were the sun... Your skin always looked as

if it was kissed by it...' he said quietly and pulled Taehyung's shirt.

Taehyung stood between Jungkook's legs and sat him on the car bonnet.

'Seducing me again?'

'Just admiring...' Jungkook shook his head.

Taehyung leaned and bit on Jungkook's lower lip and pulled it, before kissing him slowly.

'Well for me it sounds seductive...' Taehyung purred, sliding his hand under Jungkook's t-shirt.

'You said "just driving"...' Jungkook reminded him, while smirking.

'I changed my mind...' Taehyung's lips moved down Jungkook's neck. 'Besides we have time till the moon will show up...'

'And why do you need the moon?' Jungkook's hands were caressing, pressing the skin on Taehyung's back.

'If I can't have your "fuck you" photo as my lock screen I wanna one with you in the moonlight...' Taehyung sucked Jungkook's earlobe.

Jungkook slapped his back.

'Idiot...' he giggled and it was followed by a soft moan, when Taehyung laid him down on the car bonnet.

He pressed his hips between Jungkook's legs, while standing.

'No matter how dark the night is, you are lightening it up... You were always the Moon for me...'

'We are sooo cheesy...' Jungkook smiled inside Taehyung's lips. 'Well if my talented boyfriend wants it, who am I to deny him a pic...'

'Exactly...' Taehyung muttered, while his lips went to Jungkook's collarbone.

'But...' Jungkook whispered.

'But?' Taehyung warningly bit the other's skin.

'You need to spoil me first...'

'Oh, baby...' Taehyung smiled, palming Jungkook's hard on. 'I was going to...'

**July 2070, Daegu**

In the middle of the night Yoongi was waiting for an unknown person. Ren pointed this place to him.

But he wasn't stupid. Wooyoung and San were waiting on the rooftops above the street.

A tall man walking fast appeared on the street and walked to him.

For a moment they were staring at each other.

'Ren said, I should meet with you." The men spoke first. 'Even if you are a Min.'

Yoongi raised his eyebrow, but let it slide, because it didn't matter what this guy thought about Mins right now. He was surprised by his young age. He couldn't be a year or two older than him...

'I want to know how to contact you in case we find a Sealer in danger of being captivated by the Army...'

'How can I know it is not a trick to lure me all out?'

'Just tell me how to contact you. I will pinpoint the place... you will do whatever you want after...'

'That sounds even more like a trap.'

'Then tell me what to do?'

'Secure the person. Put her or him to sleep and hide in the old morgue under this address. The person from there will contact us. You don't need to know more...'

Yoongi nodded.

'Do you need anything?'

'We need everything.' the guy chuckled bitterly. 'Equipment. Sleeping medicines. Gasoline....'

'I will try to organize some. I will leave it in the morgue too.' Yoongi turned

around, but stopped. 'Why are you putting them to sleep?'

'Only the ones with separation syndrome. They are not easy to transport... whatever they state is like....'

Yoongi nodded, and walked away, saying:

'Good luck.'

**20th of September 2070, Seoul**

Taehyung opened his eyes slowly, feeling a gentle caress on his cheek.

He saw his 20-year old beautiful boyfriend. The more mature Jungkook was getting, the more he looked like a whole damn candy factory.

'I walked out Bam. I will let him sleep with you some more...' he said.

He was already fully dressed, ready to go for University.

It was an important day. They wanted their parents to chill a bit and it was a perfect occasion. It was Minji and Hoseok's wedding anniversary.

They've planned it thoughtfully.

But right now Taehyung was more interested in the love of his life's addictive presence.

He sleepily beckoned him closer with his finger.

Jungkook giggled and leaned a bit so Taehyung could hide his head under his shirt and give few wet kisses to his tummy.

'I swear, you love my muscles more than me...'

'How dare you say this...' Taehyung muttered offended, while pulling the piercing with his lips.

'What if I get fat?'

'I would still love your tummy...'

'Mhm... sure...' Jungkook said not convinced at all.

'It's not about muscles... It's about the sharp breath you are taking when I am touching it...'

Taehyung's head showed up again while he laid again on the pillow.

'Okay. I will believe you for now, because you are sleepy and pretty...' Jungkook smiled and leaned to Taehyung's lips.

They share a long, slow lazy kiss.

Jungkook brushed his nose over Taehyung's and whispered:

'See you soon...'

'See you soon.' Taehyung smiled, closing his eyes to nap a bit more.

In the afternoon Taehyung was fast to deal with his work. They had to bring everyone to the surprise place. His part was to get Hoseok and Jin.

He already prepared them for it, telling them that it was a surprise for Jungkook, so they won't ask questions on where and why they had to go with him.

The afternoon was dark because of the rain. He almost reached the houses when he felt a bit nauseous. Feeling nervous he looked at the phone and saw a message from Jungkook, from 30 minutes ago.

He wanted to call him right after, feeling something was wrong, when he heard a furious barking of Bam from Jeon's house.

Not thinking much he walked to the house where he saw a terrifying scene. Hoseok was lying on the floor curled up like a baby. His whole body was shivering.

Jin was kneeling next to him, trying to calm him down, screaming to him.

'Where do you feel the pain? Hobi, look at me!? Hoseok!!!?'

Then the phone rang.

Hoseok's phone...

Taehyung ran to then and wanted to threw the phone away, when he saw the caller ID "Hospital."

His guts twisted in pain. He picked it up fast.

'Yes?'

'Jung Hoseok?'

'Yes.' Taehyung lied.

'I'm calling to inform you that your wife, Jeon Minji, was brought in after a car accident. She is in critical condition. Currently under surgery.'

'I will be there as fast as possible.' Taehyung said and ended the call.

'Aunt Minji is in the hospital. Car accident. Critical condition!' he repeated fast to Jin.

Jin got pale and looked at Hoseok. His current state was the best proof of how serious Minji's condition was.

'Call your father, now!' Jin ordered, forcefully picking Hoseok up from the floor, to help him stand. 'Hobi... we need to go to Minji...' he said gently, leading him to the doors.

Taehyung informed his dad about the emergency and while getting inside the car, started to pick up Jungkook's number. It was not responding...

But if he would be in the hospital too, they would call Hoseok as well...

*Please, please, pick up...* he was mumbling in his head like a prayer.

He informed the rest who were helping with the surprise about what happened and ordered them to check all the hospitals and try to reach Jungkook.

Jungkook HAD TO be alright.

Taehyung would know if...

Running through the white corridors in the hospital he was waiting to see him in the waiting room, distraught and scared.

Because that was what Taehyung was feeling.

Fear. Not just his own.

But he wasn't there...

'Where is Jungkook?!' he screamed.

'What?' Jin looked at him. Hoseok lifted his head tiredly.

'He was with her! He picked her up from work! We planned it! Where is he!?'

'I will check!' ran to the receptionist desk to ask about Jeon Jungkook, but no one like that was submitted to this hospital.

Jimin, Dami, and Minho reached the hospital next.

Then Namjoon came and Jin unsealed him. He immediately went inside the operating room, not minding the nurses, who were trying to stop him.

'Yoohyeon is trying to track his phone...' Dami said, breathing fast.

Minho's phone rang and he picked up fast, while Han joined them, running fast, and asking what was happening.

'Yeonjun called, he contacted the Police. There were only 2 accidents in the last 40 minutes. None of them had a person called Jeon Jungkook involved...' Minho was listening for a moment then looked at Taehyung. 'Jeon Minji was the only wounded person in one of them.'

'Yoohyeon tracked the phone!' Dami exclaimed and looked at her phone.

Minho looked at the pin on the map Yoohyeon sent.

'It's the place of the accident...' he whispered.

Taehyung and Jin started to run.

'JIMIN STAY WITH HOBI!' Jin screamed.

'Go with them!' Dami said to Han and Minho.

And they ran after Kims.

(🎶Music tip: *Stay Alive* by Jungkook prod. Suga🎶)

Taehyung was driving as if he was racing against destiny.

He wasn't feeling anything or anyone around.

The heartbeat deafened everything.

He wasn't aware Jin, Han and Minho were with him in the car.

The rain was falling down furiously when they reached the place where the police were cleaning.

Jeon's car looked as if it was rammed several times. But just from one side... The passenger side...

The police were checking the place. Doing photos. Marking the places.

Jin ran to one of them.

'You can't enter...'

'There was another person in the car! Where is he?!' he asked, while Taehyung was already walking to the car.

'The only victim was a woman in the passenger seat...'

'Then who was driving you idiot!' Jin yelled.

A policeman tried to stop Taehyung but he knocked him down without thinking. After that more policemen were trying to reach him but Han and Minho made a shield around the place not letting them in.

*Where are you? Where are you? Where are you? - Taehyung's soul was constantly repeating.*

Taehyung was looking at the car for a moment. Jungkook's phone was lying on the floor near the driver's seat.

There was blood on the side window, but outside. Not enough blood... It wasn't caused by a gunshot...

Taehyung looked around and saw more streaks of blood in different places.

'Where are you?' Taehyung whispered, trying to see through the rain.

He stepped forward walking between the traces of blood.

It didn't look like a deadly wound... It looked like a hard fight...

He stepped on something. He peeked at it, not interested, but his heart sank when he saw what it was.

A black bead...

Then next one a bit further. Taehyung falling on his knees started to find them one after another. Until he reached the rest of their couple's bracelet.

Their first bracelet...

Taehyung gently peeked it up, feeling the whole air escaping from his lungs.

He started to suffocate.

The pain that hit him was too much for him to cry.

He felt as if his whole being turned into stone. As if his soul was sucked out from his body.

Jin ran to him. He was screaming something to him.

But Taehyung didn't understand the words.

*Where are you?*

Han walked to them with teary eyes.

'I... I f-found this...' he choked out.

Taehyung lifted his head with hope that was instantly .

On Han's hand a small thing was lying...

A thing Jungkook was wearing with happiness on his wrist together with the bracelet Taehyung gave him.

A broken red thread...

---

BlairWitch91

# Chapter 49: Eclipse of the Sun

**20th of September 2070, Seoul**

Taehyung couldn't take a breath. His vision got blurry.

Raindrops were running down his hair, face and body.

But his eyes were painfully dry.

The darkness enveloped him, when he heard Jin screaming:

'Taehyung! Breathe! Do you hear me?!'

Someone shook him, grabbing his arms.

'Tae! Breathe!'

Breathe?

How?

There was no air around...

*Koo...*

*Where are you?*

*I have to breathe...*

*I can't without you...*

'Tae!' Minho crouched down in front of him and slapped his cheeks few times. 'Tae! He was kidnapped! Not killed!'

*I know...*

If Jungkook would be seriously hurt, Taehyung would know instantly. His body would have an instant physical reaction, just like Hoseok's body because of Minji...

'Are you going to sit here like a damsel in distress and let him save himself!? Or are we going to do something!?'

Taehyung suddenly took a sharp intake of air.

His eyes changed. Became dark like the ones of the shark.

His fist closed on the beads of the bracelet.

'Call Yoohyeon! Now! Tell her to check the whole monitoring system in the city!'

Jin looked above Taehyung's shoulders to see more cops around. He got up and nodded to Han to put the shields down. He walked to them.

'We are sorry for our reaction.' he said quickly. 'There was a second person in the car. His mother was taken to the hospital, but he is nowhere to be found. You can blame us later, just help us now!'

The young female police officer looked at him and nodded.

'Okay! Tell us the details...'

'A man. 20 year old. 179 cm tall. Slim. Light brown hair. Dark brown eyes.' Jin looked through his phone. 'Here is the latest picture...'

'We will call the searching team with dogs.' she looked around on the mildly busy street that the traffic was currently stopped at. 'But if he was taken inside another vehicle we will have to look through the cameras. This street is usually not busy and there are no cameras here. Now let the crime investigation section do their job before the rain will destroy the evidence.'

'Thank you...' Jin nodded and gave her all the contact numbers and his own personal details to contact.

'You are one of Interdependants...' she said hesitantly looking at Han and Minho, whose power she witnessed.

Jin's eyes darkened.

'We are. Does it change anything?'

She shook her head.

'I will ask some Cops with special powers to help... There are hiding between us. But I know which of them can help...'

'Please do...' Jin looked at her pleadingly. 'Please...'

She nodded but her eyes were sad. As if she didn't have much hope.

Jin turned to the boys. Taehyung was still looking around, trying to notice something. Anything....

'They will start searching.' he informed them.

'We should too.' Taehyung said harshly. 'Meeting at Yoohyeon's. Call everyone.'

'Drop me near the hospital. I have to check on Hobi and Minji...' Jin said. 'Stay focus Taehyung... I don't know how fast separation syndrome will hit you...'

Taehyung didn't answer, letting Minho drive.

Separation syndrome? - Taehyung thought with bitter amusement.

He already had it...

The anger in his veins was whispering to him.

Clouding his mind. Poisoning his body...

Protecting him from the darkness...

******

Jin didn't know what to do or say, when Hoseok, sitting on the chair in the waiting room, lifted his head in hope. Jimin was sitting next to him, holding his hand. The rest, called by Minho, left the hospital.

It was too much. Too much fear at once.

One of his kids was missing. Second one was on the verge of mental breakdown. His best friend was unconscious on the hospital bed and a man, who was like a brother to him, was not at all in a condition to handle all of this.

Jin crouched down in front of Hobi.

'K-kookie?' Hoseok choked out.

Jin looked down and shook his head, shutting his teary eyes.

'Missing...'

Jimin whimpered, squeezing Hobi's hand tighter. Not knowing if he was looking for comfort or wanted to be the one to give it...

Hoseok closed his eyelids. His already shiny cheeks, covered with a fresh wave of moistness.

'It can't be true...' he denied with a faint voice. 'My boy w-would n-never...' his voice broke down.

'How is Tae?' Jimin asked.

'Not good at all, but holding up...' Jin whispered. 'Hobi, I will go to Minji, okay? That's the only thing I can do now...'

'I have to look for my son...' Hoseok tried to stand up, but Jin put his hands on his knee.

'Leave it to the Red String... Minji needs you near. Okay? Wait for her...' Jin looked at Jimin. 'Stay with him okay?'

'Of course...' Jimin whispered.

Jimin could only imagine what uncle Hobi was feeling right now. His soulmate's life was endangered, his son was nowhere to be found and the heart of the boy he treated like a son, was shattered.

Jimin got a job he could focus on - taking care of Jungkook's dad. Because he was cold. Cold inside.

They All knew... This awareness was always with them...

The unspoken universal truth:

If something happens to one of them - they are losing both.

******

Jin entered the surgery room where Namjoon after two hours of healing had his face covered in sweat. All the doctors and nurses were standing under the walls, with arms crossed over their chests and irritated expressions.

Jin walked to them.

'I'm Dr Kim Seokjin. We are sorry for behaving like that, but that's our sister. Hope you will understand.'

The main surgeon glared at him, but reluctantly nodded after a moment.

'You should rest... I know what the work at ER looks like.' Jin said. 'We will manage here. If any nurse wants to stay, we will be glad for help. Thank you for keeping her alive till now... We will take her home as soon as possible.'

'Okay.' the surgeon sighed. 'One of the nurses will stay to guide you later to the

right room...'

Jin joined Namjoon, who was still focused on pressing the right parts on Minji's stomach...

'How is she?'

'Internal bleeding. Left kidney is wounded. Left cheek bones crushed... Concussion. Broken left arm... And spine. Relocated discs in the cervical region...' Namjoon whispered.

'I will take care of the fractures and the neck.' Jin whispered back.

Namjoon, focusing on clearing the organs from internal bleeding, didn't want to ask... He was afraid of the answer. But he had to know...

'Jungkook?'

'Kidnapped...'

Namjoon took a shuddering breath.

'W-we will find him...'

'Yeah...' Jin sniffed, and let the bandages embrace Minji's neck gently.

**21th of September 2070, Seoul**

8 am.

Taehyung hadn't seen Jungkook for 24h.

24 fucking hours...

When they gathered at Yoohyeon's place and were let inside by Jennie, who led them instantly. Yoohyeon and Kai were riding on their chairs through Kai's office full of screens and computers. Yoohyeon was deadly pale, but with determination was hitting the buttons on the keyboard. The screens were displaying all views, from the area around the accident.

Kai was hacking a police database to check if there were new reports or details

about the kidnapping or accident.

When Taehyung entered, Yoohyeon just gulped and started working even faster, blinking rapidly.

Kai instantly gave Minho and Han the task to publish Jungkook's picture in all Missing People portals and social medias.

Taehyung sat next to Yoohyeon, who just pointed to one of the screens.

'These are the closest cameras to that street... Only here and here. She pointed to two streets. There are 4 streets in all directions without cameras too...' she added quietly.

Taehyung nodded without a word.

If he would plan kidnapping... He would plan it well.

There is a question: was it the government? Or was it someone from Daegu chasing after a sign?

Or...

Was it this no-named shithole Taehyung was going to turn into a pile of antimatter?

Dami, Yeonjun and Soobin joined them soon after. They worked the whole night. Trying to do anything... Not knowing what they were looking for...

When Dami heard quiet sniffles on her left. She looked at Soobin and walked to him, before Taehyung could hear them. He was holding to his cold anger and any emotions around would just break him...

'Binnie...' she whispered. 'Go to Jeons... Take care of Bam, okay?' she whispered, rubbing his back. 'Bring him here...'

'Nobody is walking around alone from this point.' Taehyung said sternly, not even looking at any of them. Not letting his eyes drift away from the screen. 'Yeonjun, go with him...'

Dami for a moment looked at him. No matter how they tried to protect him, Taehyung knew them too well...

Taehyung was watching the recordings from the time around the accident. There was not even one van. One bus. One truck... One bigger car... It was a small casual street connected to other casual streets in the neighborhood...

Nothing. Nothing suspicious...

When Jimin reached the place he instantly ran to Taehyung, saying shakily:

'Aunt Minji is out of danger. She should wake up soon...'

Taehyung just raised his hand to stop him from the hug.

'Don't.' he whispered. 'If you can't contain your emotions... it will be better if you will stay with my parents. Please.'

Jimin for a moment was just looking at his best friend. Taehyung was distant. Closed inside his own mind. Not letting anything from outside reach him... He didn't want it. He was afraid that other's emotions would trigger his own...

So Jimin just gulped and nodded. He took a deep breath, closed his eyes and counted to ten.

'How can I help?' he asked.

'Screen ten.' Yoohyeon pointed with his hands. 'Try to find anything suspicious. We don't know what the car looked like... These are the cameras on the routes leading outside of the city...'

They all tried to read through thousands of cars going all the way through the streets... Hoping Jungkook would give them a sign... Anything.

But what if he wasn't able to?

They worked the whole night.

They informed MOI and ICI. They informed the press asking to display Jungkook's photos in the news.

After 24 hours they still didn't have anything in the end.

******

Minji wasn't able to open her eyes. Her eyelids were too heavy... Blurred images were running under them.

She couldn't understand where she was. She still heard the deafening sound of glass shuddering, metal hitting on metal, screech of tires... Jungkook's scream "MOM!".

She opened her eyes abruptly.

'JUNGKOOK!' she screamed. But only an inaudible squawk got out of her throat.

'Minji! Minji! Calm down!' she heard Jin's voice. 'You will get a panic attack! Your throat is hurt! Drink. Slowly...'

She felt a stroll between her lips.

She started to cough, filling the liquid. Right after she wanted to sit up. Furiously trying to free herself.

'Jung-kook! Wh-e-re is h-he!'

Hoseok had almost laid on her, pressing her shoulders to the pillow to stop her from ripping out IV from her arm.

'Calm down... Minji... calm down... Please...' he whispered to her ear, pressing his forehead to her temple.

She looked above his shoulder at Jin.

'Why? Why are... you ...not telling me...? Where is... he?' she choked out, and her eyes filled with tears.

When neither Hoseok, nor Jin said a word, the sobs shook her weak body.

'They took him? My... baby...?'

Hoseok just embraced her gently.

Minji was breathing too fast, between sobs.

Jin fastly prepared breathing mask. When she saw it, she shook her head.

'Two c-cars... B-black and w-white... Suvs... Kia?'

'Speak slowly...' Jin said.

'They hit my side... Few times... The other car... blocked it from the front... Suddenly... My vision... I couldn't see properly...'

'It's okay...'

'Jungkook was... screaming... They opened his doors and took him out... I... l-lost consciousness...' she sobbed.

'I will tell Namjoon... he is with kids...' Jin said gently.

Minji started to cry, clinging to Hoseok.

'I'm s-sorry... S-orry... I couldn't do a-anything... Hob-bi... I c-couldn't...'

'Shhhhh....' Hoseok rocked her gently, while Jin put a mask on her face.

Choking sounds, full of despair, were heard for a long time in a small hospital room.

Jenni opened the doors to see Namjoon. She hugged him instantly.

'How is Minji?' she asked.

'Physically she will be okay soon...' he said, quietly.

'How are kids?'

'Restless. Holding on adrenaline and coffee...'

Namjoon closed his eyes and sighed heavily. He was afraid to even ask about Taehyung.

'They sent Soobin away. He is in the kitchen taking care of Bam and meals...'

'Let me guess... Not being able to control emotions around Tae is not safe now?'

Jennie just looked at him sadly and led Namjoon to Kai's office.

The room was quiet. Only the sounds of clicking and computers were heard. All screens were filled with different moments from yesterday, showing the traffic and streets.

Dami looked at him.

'MOI and ICI are informed.'

Namjoon patted her arm.

'I will call Yongguk either way...' Namjoon pulled out his phone and waited for the other to answer. 'Yongguk... Yes, Minji will be fine. What do you have?'

'It's not the Korean Government. We check with all our contacts. There was no plan like that. There was no one admitted to any jail or detention... Besides, they would want Minji, not Jungkook...'

'I already thought about it too... Can you get in contact with Ryu? Can he get any info from his side in Daegu?'

On the other side of the line silence fell.

'Yongguk?'

'I don't have any way to contact him... if he won't contact me first...' quiet, shaken words were heard.

'What happened?' Namjoon asked instantly, hearing his voice.

'He used to contact me two times a month... But he... he hasn't since the middle of August...'

'You don't have contact with him at all? What about MOI? Pink alert was his safe place, what about them?'

Red Alert at once looked at Namjoon.

'Namjoon... I'm waiting and praying... I'm praying he did that because it wasn't safe to contact us... MOI agents don't know anything. They can't find him either... Safe routes he organized are still working, but he is not there with his colleagues... Jieun is on the verge of breaking...'

'I understand. Inform me... I'm sorry, Yongguk...'

'Don't be sorry. Don't be sorry... it feels like a death sentence...' Yongguk disconnected.

Namjoon hid his phone.

'As you heard... there is no contact with Yongguk's son in Daegu...'

Taehyung's eyes darkened.

'If they captured him, and he knew about us...' he said through clenched teeth.

'He didn't know. Even Yongguk doesn't know. We've never told anyone besides Red Alert... He couldn't know. He doesn't even know what you all look like... Even though I saw Ryu only two times in my life and he was much younger then.'

Taehyung turned to the monitor again, gritting his teeth.

Namjoon looked at the rest.

'Take a break guys...' he said quietly and moved to Taehyung. 'Eat something.'

Yoohyeon was the first to throw her keyboard on the desk and walked away. Dami followed her, worried.

Taehyung didn't look at his father. He was staring at moving cars on the screen.

'Taehyung.'

Taehyung closed his eyes and finally looked at his father. The only person who could control him right now.

Namjoon took his palm and put two pills on it.

'Take it.'

'What's that?'

'They will help you focus and stay energized better than coffee, you hate. We were taking it during long missions...'

'They won't put me to sleep?'

'I don't think anything could put you to sleep right now...' Namjoon whispered. 'Your anger will be increasing gradually... Control it, but keep it.'

'It won't be hard.' Taehyung gulped the pills, drinking coffee right after.

'They say... anger will keep the separation syndrome stable...'

'Yeah.'

'Do we have anything?'

'No.'

Namjoon wanted to bend and kissed his head. But he restrained himself. He didn't know if he would be able to control... One of his sons was missing.

He couldn't lose the other one...

Yoohyeon stormed the bathroom and wanted to shut the doors after herself but Dami was already there.

'Give me a moment alone for fuck sake!' she exclaimed, but Dami just tightly hugged her.

'Yoo...'

'Nobody could just take him like that! He is too strong! Jungkook is too strong!' she said enraged, trying to free herself.

'His mother was on the verge of dying... What would you do if each minute would be priceless for her?'

'Y-you think he went with them?'

'I think he fought... till he could.' Dami whispered.

Yoohyeon's face twisted and tears streamed down her cheeks.

'I want my brother back...'

'We will get him back...'

'We are a mess without him... Taehyung is a mess!'

'I know...'

'Jimin won't be able to fight!'

'I know... That's why we have to shake up Soobin and Yeonjun. We and they are the strike force now...'

'Dami...' Yoohyeon cried on her soulmate's neck. 'I'm scared...'

Dami looked at the ceiling, blinking fast and stroked Yoohyeon's hair.

'I'm here.'

They got back to work when Namjoon got a call from Jin:

He patted Yoohyeon's shoulder.

'Minji woke up. Two cars. Suvs. Black and white. Kia. Probably Sportage or Sorento...'

'There are hundreds of cars like that in Seoul!' Han yelled.

'It is still more than we had...' Yoohyeon said.

Taehyung showed the map. They had to cross only those routes with cameras... Focus on those recordings!'

A minute later Kai exclaimed suddenly:

'First police rapport! They questioned the person who called the police... A lady from one of the houses! She said it was raining heavily, there was not a living soul outside. She heard a few bangs, screeching tires... She looked outside. Two cars. Black and white. That is confirmation of Minji's words. Four people got out of them. All in black. Masked. There was a fight and she called the police immediately because of it... But both drove away before they showed up...'

'Who called the ambulance then?' Namjoon frowned.

Kai looked through the report.

'The ambulance was informed separately... By the emergency button on the phone...'

'Whose?'

Kai read the number.

'That's Jungkook's...' Taehyung said quietly.

'So... he went with them... so they would let him call the emergency?' Yeonjun asked.

Yoohyeon looked through the room at Dami.

'Even if there were four people against him, he wouldn't give up...' Han shook his head. 'He could totally beat their asses!'

'Not against four unsealed Interdependants...' Taehyung whispered, closing his eyes. 'Not being unsealed himself...'

'Yeah...' Kai confirmed. 'Second report. From the Laboratory...' Blood samples belong to five different people. One two wounded women, identified as Jeon Minji. Second one to someone related to her, not figuring in the database. Three others to three different people. One female. Two male.'

'Focus on the cameras now...' Taehyung said. 'Try to locate all black and white suvs around those streets...' he pointed to the map.

**20th of October 2070, Seoul - 30 days later**

For three weeks they checked two hundred black and white cars they managed to identify on recordings. Kai was hacking a police database to know which cars belonged to who. If any of them was stolen around the time of the accident. All of them belonged to Seoul's citizens. Basically to families with children absolutely surprised by sudden visits of young people at their porches.

For three weeks they basically lived in Yoohyeon's place. Going outside just to check out the clues, get clothes to change or take a short nap.

Namjoon, Jin, Minji and Hoseok were moving all the strings inside and outside Korea. They spread leaflets everywhere. In every big city. They sent them to MOI's officers undercover to spread them in Daegu and other cities.

Yoohyeon and Kai were constantly publishing Jungkook's photos on the internet. Hacking websites in Daegu too, because most of them weren't available freely outside of the Republic.

Namjoon called Min Kyung. He sent him a photo and had a long talk with him, asking for help.

He heard in response: *I understand. Of course I will help. I will do everything I can...*

Jungkook's photo was displayed on 3EO's and Government Site on the next day.

Taehyung was barely talking. Only giving instructions or suggestions...

He left Yoohyeon's house only to check some traces with others. Jin, Namjoon and Hoseok were bringing him clothes...

Jimin was not leaving his side, so Baekhyun and Chanyeol were storming Kai's house at every opportunity.

They knew it was planned. It had to be planned. It was one of 2 routes Minji was going back home from work. They had to observe them. The only logical thing that could lead them to Jungkook was Taehyung VK mark. But they didn't choose him... They chose the Sealer. It wasn't hard to guess who Taehyung's Sealer was. The Sealer with VK mark undercover...

If they watched the recordings from the Dam Operation and the Press Conference and focused on Namjoon's surroundings... Even by analyzing postures and

silhouettes someone could connect dots.

It wasn't someone from Seoul. Nobody here would be so invested in identifying VK Holder. And only few Interdependants left in the whole city. In the whole Korea, there was not much *Eadar-eisimeileach* left.

So they tried to analyze earlier days... Suspicious people and cars around.

But the time was running, and they didn't have anything...

They were looking for a needle in a haystack... And they all knew... Jungkook wasn't in Seoul anymore.

******

Jimin closed the doors to his house. Drop the bag to the floor. And stood there not knowing what to do with himself.

They had to go back to their daily life...

But how?

When nothing was the same?

Beakhyun walked out of the kitchen to check what was the noise about and saw Jimin, whose face was covered in tears slowly running down.

He hid them behind his hands, when Baekhyun hugged him.

'We don't have anything...' Jimin cried out.

'We will find him... We just have to be strong.'

'Everything we are doing is pointless! Should we just knock to every fucking house in this country? And Taehyung... he doesn't speak. He barely eats... He didn't cry even once!'

Jimin sobs got louder. And his father was just holding him.

'Why is he like that?! Why won't he let us help!? Why won't he break down, so we can pick him up and push forwards!? Why!?'

After a moment Baekhyun looked at him from a distance, rubbing his shoulders. He brushed his bangs from his forehead, and tearing up he cupped Jimin's face. His thumbs gently wiped the tears.

'When the pain is too great to handle...' he said gently. 'People don't cry... They turn completely silent...'

Jimin swallowed his tears and nodded.

'But on the other hand, when people are too strong for too long - they break. And when it will be the time for Tae... he will need you.'

'I will be there...' Jimin whispered, nuzzling his face into Baekhyun's face.

'Now, go and rest, okay? We are not giving up... We just need to change our course...'

After taking a shower and crying his eyes out, Jimin was sitting on his bed playing with his phone. With shivering hands he opened the app and texted SUGA. There were few messages from last month...

4 weeks ago: **SUGA: Hey... where are you?**

3 weeks ago: **SUGA: Are you sick?**

2 weeks ago: **SUGA: Are you mad at me baby?**

7 days ago: **SUGA: Happy Birthday...**

3 days ago: **SUGA: What have I done wrong?**

Jimin's lips twisted.

**CHIMISLOVE: Hyung...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Sorry...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I know it is against our deal, but...**

**CHIMISLOVE: But I don't know what to do...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Please... Please help me...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I don't know where you are from, but if you will ever see this person...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Please contact me. Please... I beg you.**

**CHIMISLOVE: He went missing 30 days ago...**

**CHIMISLOVE: It's my friend.**

**CHIMISLOVE: No. It's my brother.**

**CHIMISLOVE: Please...**

**CHIMISLOVE: His name is Jungkook. Everybody is waiting for him...**

**CHIMISLOVE: His soulmate is waiting...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I beg you...**

**SUGA: Oh... you are alive...**

**SUGA: Wait...**

**SUGA: What the fuck?!**

**SUGA: Hey, calm down... Okay!?**

**SUGA: I saw this guy's photo already is spread all over the place I live in...**

**SUGA: He is your friend? I will try to look around...**

**SUGA: I will help.**

**SUGA: Don't cry...**

**SUGA: *hug***

**SUGA: I will help and ask people here...**

**CHIMISLOVE: Thank you....**

**SUGA: Don't cry... *hug* Don't cry...**

**CHIMISLOVE: I can't help it...**

**SUGA: Okay, then cry... *hug*... I will be here talking stupid bullshit... So I have a sister you know? She is the same kind of pain in the ass like you... So fucking annoying! And this little hag...**

Jimin laid his head on a pillow, looking at the texts that were coming, even if he didn't have the energy to reply.

Until he fell asleep...

******

Taehyung stood in front of two identical houses not feeling like walking to any of them... Bam jumped next to him excitedly and started to pull the leash, wanting to run to Jeon's house. Impatiently expecting to see his dad...

It almost broke Taehyung's self control.

'Bam! Come!' he commanded sternly, leading him to Kims' house.

He entered the house, keeping his eyes only on necessary things. He took out the spare bag from the closet in the corridor and started to pack Bam's things.

People were talking in the kitchen, but he ignored them.

'If we want to move to Daegu we have to do it in a way nobody will be able to track us...' a female voice spoke.

Taehyung stiffened. He was avoiding Minji like a fire for the whole month... And thankfully this was mutual...

'Considering this, we need to avoid any soldier of the Army of the Republic. We have to exclude any border passage... We can't let them have our marks and names in databases...' Namjoon said.

'Going near Daegu would be a shot in our own foot. We have to choose the right place too...' Hoseok added. 'Securing everybody will be a hard thing to do...'

'We can send Soobin and Yeonjun first... Soobin's parents are already there. They can wait for the rest there...' Minji said. 'Kai, Jenni, Yoohyeon and Dami can join the Pink Alert area for now...'

'Bam?!' Jin called out suddenly. 'What are you doing here, boy? Is Tae with you?'

His father came inside the living room, seeing Taehyung packing Bam's things.

'Tae!' he walked to him, but Taehyung just zipped the bag and stood up.

Jin eyed the bag in his hand and raised his eyebrow.

'What are you doing...?'

'I will stay at Jimin's for a while...' Taehyung said plainly.

Jin's face got pale.

'It's you home, and we need you here...'

'It's not my home if he is not here.' Taehyung answered coldly.

'I understand it is hard, but...'

'NO! YOU DON'T UNDERSTAND! ' Taehyung yelled. 'I CAN'T BE HERE! I CAN'T BE IN THE KITCHEN WHERE HE WAS STANDING! I CAN'T SLEEP IN THE BED WHERE HE WAS SLEEPING WITH ME! I CAN'T!'

Namjoon walked to the living room.

'And we can't let you be... Separation syndrome started to kick in... You can hurt yourself...'

'I will be with Jimin... or others. I just can't be here...'

Hoseok and Minji hesitantly stood in the kitchen door frame.

'Taehyung... we need you here.' Hobi said gently.

'You are planning to move to Daegu. I can't help you with that... And I really can't be here! Can't you give me this little bit of fucking space I need to not go crazy!?'

'We need you...' Minji whispered. 'Because if anything will happen to you too, we won't be able to keep going...'

Taehyung turned in her direction fast, and made a step.

'You dare to say this?!' he hissed. 'You?!'

'Taehyung...' Namjoon said warningly.

He was looking at Minji with eyes full of grief and held back anger. He swallowed the scream and only choked out:

'You should have protected him...'

Minji had tired eyes, full of guilt. She didn't even try to deny Taehyung's words.

'Enough.' Namjoon said tiredly. 'Go if you have to. Come back when you want to...'

Taehyung slowly tore his gaze out of Minji and looked at his disappointed father, relentlessly.

Hoseok turned to Minji and took her inside the kitchen.

'Come. We have work...'

'I will pack your things...' Jin said, holding back his sniffs.

'Just my laptop. I don't want clothes...' Taehyung whispered.

Jin nodded fast, wiping his cheek. Because Jungkook and Taehyung shared their clothes... Taehyung didn't want clothes that had Jungkook's scent on them.

Namjoon clenched his jaw.

'It's not Minji's fault... And you know it...' he whispered, when they were left alone.

'Explained this to my heart, appa...' Taehyung smiled bitterly.

'I'm not going to. I will leave this to Jungkook. He will be the first one to kick your ass for that...'

Taehyung gulped hard.

'And I am waiting for it.'

Jin walked down with Taehyung's backpack and laptop.

'Stay in touch. Pick up your phone all the time.' Namjoon instructed. 'If we will come up with a plan...'

'Contact Dami. She is in charge of Red String for now...' Taehyung caught him off, whistled at Bam and walked away.

Namjoon and Jin looked in shock at shutted doors.

One broken string...

And all bonds were threatened to fall apart.

**31th of October 2070, Seoul - 41 days later - Samhain**

Jimin didn't know what happened on this day. Or more like on this night.

He just knew one thing...

Taehyung stopped eating almost completely after. He lost so much weight, he could easily wear Jimin's shirts.

It couldn't be the news they got about Bang Ryu, who was still nowhere to be found...

It couldn't be also information about the escalation of the conflict in Gumi that this time Daegu didn't let slide and answered with full force, trying to take the whole city under their control.

The only thing that interested him was - when they would be ready to go to Daegu.

Bam was the only living creature he allowed to be close.

Suga texted a few times that he was still searching in nearby areas, but never encountered even someone similar to Jungkook.

**15th of November 2070, Seoul - 56 days later**

'Taehyung! You have to eat!' Jimin screamed.

'Leave me alone Jimin...'

Bam barked.

'How are you going to look for him?! You are weak as a child!'

'I'm not... We are preparing to leave for Daegu soon. I will take care of myself Jimin! I don't need a nanny!'

'You fucking do! You haven't eaten since yesterday! And the only thing you eat is energy bars!'

'That's food right?' Taehyung answered, looking at the map. He was constantly staying by his laptop checking every report Yoohyeon was sending him, or any news they could get from Daegu.

He was analyzing... According to his guts Daegu was fed up with all the bullshit the Korean Government tried to sell them. One more provocation and they will have a full fledged war in a month.

So they either had to go to Daegu before it, or use it as a cover...

'Taehyung! I will call your parents!' Jimin warned him.

'I am not hungry.' Taehyung said quietly.

'That's what your mind is telling you! But your body needs fuel! You look like a wreck!'

'Then don't look at me...'

Threw the plate at the wall enraged.

'Do you think Jungkook would want you to starve yourself to death?! Or look as if the slightest wind would push you to the ground!? How do you want to help him?! How do you want to hold him, being like that?!'

'SHUT THE FUCK UP!'

Taehyung jumped on his feet in rage, breathing heavily.

Bam whined and lowered his ears.

Jimin and Taehyung were looking at each other until Jimin's eyes filled with tears.

'You were preparing us all for the worst... Yet you are the one who is not prepared...'

'We were preparing to die! Together! Not to be separated! Not to not be able to help each other!'

'HE IS NOT DEAD! YOU FUCKING IDIOT HE IS NOT! YOU WOULD BE DYING ON THIS BED AND NONE OF US WOULD BE ABLE TO HELP YOU! DO YOU THINK YOU ARE THE ONLY ONE FEELING USELESS?!'

Taehyung passed Jimin and went to the doors.

'Kim Fucking Taehyung! Where do you think you are going?!'

'Out.'

Jimin closed his eyes. Something was wrong in Taehyung's behavior... And it wasn't just anger caused by the separation syndrome...

He realized too... That Taehyung hadn't spoken Jungkook's name for all this time. He was saying HE, HIM, HIS... But not his name...

As if he couldn't say it...

**16th of November 2070, Seoul - 57 days later**

Next day Jimin called Dami. He was panicking...

'I fucked up!'

'Calm down. What happened?'

'I yelled at Taehyung. We had a fight... he walked out and didn't come back!'

'When?'

'All night and day. And he is still not here!'

'Had he taken his phone? Or wallet?'

'N-no... He ran out... I think he took his jacket but...'

'Have you called uncles?'

'Not yet... But he is not at Minho's and Yeonjun's place. I don't know where he is Dami!'

'What was the fight about?'

'He didn't want to eat...'

'Let me guess... You said Jungkook wouldn't want that?'

'Yeah...'

'Do you have a feeling Jungkook's name is like a fucking ticking bomb when it comes to Taehyung lately?'

'It is.'

'Call uncles. We will look for him... And better his ass be in Seoul or I will kill him myself...'

**1st of December 2070, Seoul - 71 days later**

Two weeks...

Jin and Namjoon reported missing after 48 hours, when Taehyung didn't show up and there was no contact with him.

Jimin brought Bam back to Jeons' house, apologizing to all the parents, being an absolute mess.

But they knew one thing...

Taehyung wasn't kidnapped. He just wanted to disappear...

Yoohyeon skillfully tracked his steps from that day and they knew, he was alright when he reached the first pub. They questioned the bartender and he confirmed a guy like that was there.

He picked up a fight with someone and disappeared.

It was the first, but definitely not the last time...

Taehyung's cold controlled anger changed to fury.

After all cases they could track they came to conclusion he knew exactly how to pick a fight...

His opponents were always people who insulted interdependants or disgusting drunkards, who were hitting on others without their constant.

It wasn't hard for Taehyung to find enemies, when he couldn't reach the real one...

So they were tracking him down for two fucking weeks, before the luck smiled to them.

Yoohyeon had a program that was listening to a police radio station. So when a fight was mentioned they were checking the case and driving there immediately.

They barely recognized their leader.

He was a shadow of the human they knew.

Skinny. Pale. Dirty.

With this absolute void in his gaze...

They could see the deadly amusement in his eyes, when he was fighting against a bunch of really drunk college students.

His lips were covered in blood. He had bruises everywhere. His clothes were torn or cut in too many places.

Yeonjun, Soobin and Han instantly ran to the students separating them from Taehyung, pushing them outside of the alley.

'Fuck off! He started it!'

'And I am ending it!' Yeonjun growled.

One of the guys swung at him, but Soobin grabbed his wrist in the middle.

'Think twice.'

Han make popped his gum and said:

'If in four you were not able to beat him up... I suggest you not even try with us...'

In the meantime Jimin, Minho, Dami and Yoohyeon ran to Taehyung. Jimin reached him first and pushed him on a dirty wall in fury.

Taehyung only chuckled darkly and spitted up with blood, he was barely standing.

'You fucking idiot!' Jimin yelled. 'We wasted two weeks because of you!'

Taehyung giggled like a madman.

'You won't find him... If the DESTINY won't want it...'

'What a bullshit!' Yoohyeon said.

Jimin grabbed Taehyung's arm.

'You are going back home!'

Taehyung jerked his body back.

'I don't think so...'

'I have enough...' Dami gritted her teeth. 'Hold him...'

Jimin looked at her but Minho and Yeonjun, who came to them, grabbed Taehyung from both sides.

She came closer and punched Taehyung's face, right before she hit his neck with the edge of her palm.

His head fell back, but boys saved him from falling.

'You could have spared him that punch...' Jimin frowned.

Dami looked at him with dark eyes.

'That's the price for making us worry like that.' she said quietly. She shook her wrist and started to massage it. 'Fucking shit I should have listened to JK, when he said to be careful when I do this...'

Soobin wiped the blood from under Taehyung's nose with the hem of his hoodie.

'We should take him to his fathers...'

'He won't be happy about it...' Han sighed.

'We don't have a choice... He is in the stage of anger of separation syndrome. We can't control him...' Jimin sighed.

**7th of December 2070, Seoul - 78 days later**

Taehyung opened his eyes, feeling the familiar mix of scents. His dizzy mind recognized the ceiling., so immediately closed his eyes.

He was in his own room...

On the bed they first made love...

When he heard Jungkook's last "See you soon..."

You fucking bastard! This soon of yours...

Please come back Koo...

Give me anything...

Taehyung was pressing his eyelids tightly.

But even now... his eyes were painfully dry.

He was empty...

He registered the touch on his palm and looked there.

Holding his wrist on his lap, Jin was bandaging his palm, gently.

'Was this necessary?' he asked, trying to sound calm.

'I wanted to keep the anger...'

'You won't ranaway from sadness, Taehyung...' Jin's lips trembled.

'It is not sadness I am afraid of...'

'Then what?'

'Silence.'

That was Taehyung's last word.

**20th of December 2070, Seoul - 90 days later**

3 months passed...

'We can't move Taehyung in this state...' Jin shook his head.

For the last two weeks... Taehyung was numb. It wasn't exhaustion.

He was barely a body without anything inside. They had to attach him to IV's to keep him alive.

He hadn't spoken after that one evening. He hadn't reacted to anything.

It didn't make any sense...

Separation syndrome had ALWAYS 3 stages! 3! Not more, not less.

But it seemed as Taehyung fell from the first stage directly into the third one.

And his behavior... Was sucking the hope and energy out of them all. Because no matter how they considered Taehyung and Jungkook special, separation syndrome couldn't be this hard if one of soulmates was not dead.

'They will start this war either way...' Minji whispered. ' In a month or two. But I just see this as a way to reach there and start looking for him there...'

Namjoon looked at her.

'You should go... Take kids with you... Maybe it's just exhaustion... Tae's vitals are really bad after those 3 months. But I believe we can shake him up...'

They were deadly afraid of all assumptions... After seeing Taehyung looking like a doll, they were holding up only with hope and denial...

**20th of January 2071, Seoul - 4 months later**

It was decided that Yeonjun, Soobin, Han and Minho will go with Hoseok and Minji to Daegu. Dami and Yoohyeon were going to help them to cross the border unnoticed through the river.

Jimin refused to go without Taehyung, and Dami said they can't leave those two without protection.

Siyeon and Bora moved to Jeon's house for the time being.

Bam wasn't leaving Taehyung's side. His head was laying on his lap most of the time.

It was even hard to say goodbye to him.

For the first time... Red Alert and Red String didn't know when they would see each other in full squad again.

Yongguk said he will move as many forces as he can... Ryu was still nowhere to be found and it was getting more and more suspicious. All MOI's officers in the country were looking for him and Jungkook.

Without any effect.

On the day of the departure Hoseok packed everything necessary to the car. The plan was simple. Creating an Ice Bridge over the River inside the forest where nobody would expect that. But he couldn't find Minji...

He asked Bora and Siyeon to help him to look for her. Checked Kims' house...

He checked Jungkook's room, but right after closing the doors, when his heart squeezed so much, he couldn't take a breath.

Finally he found the doors to the laundry room in the basement opened. The laundry room was empty but he heard the sobs, in the further end of the room, where old boxes were standing.

He ran there just to see Minji sitting between opened boxes with babies toys and clothes.

She was hiding her face in a plushie tiger Jin won for Jungkook at the funfair when the boys were little. The soft toys were muffling her heartbreaking cry.

Little boy's clothes were laying on her lap.

Hoseok felt tears escaping from his eyes with big, rare drops.

He fell on his knees, and started to stroke soft baby socks, laying on the floor.

When his sobs mixed with Minji, she turned to him, pulled him inside her arms so they could cry together.

They exhausted themselves with the long, calming crying session full of grief, fear and sadness. Hoseok sniffed and cupped Minji's face.

'We have to go...' he whispered. 'We are going to bring him back... But we have to go now...'

'I want to see Taehyung...' Minji whimpered, wiping her nose.

'Okay...' Hoseok nodded, desperately. 'We should give him a forehead kiss before going... Either we will have good news for him soon... Or he will join us.. Yeah? There are no other options... Do you hear me? There are no other options.'

They slowly went to Kims' house and together with Jin and Namjoon.

Taehyung was laying on the bed. Under the IV. There was no change in his state. His head was turned to the window where the moon showed its face, lightening up Taehyung's gray skin and dark bags under his eyes.

They haven't said a word... Taehyung wouldn't answer either way. Hoseok just hugged his motionless body, before letting Minji cup Taehyung's face.

She was looking at him for a moment. She was praying to again see the anger in his eyes. But only the moon was mirrored in his pupils.

So she just leaned and left a long, soft kiss on his forehead.

**25th of February 2071, Seoul - over 5 months later**

It was the day... Daegu declared a war.

They didn't want to wait anymore for something Korea was endeavoring to do. He was spending most of his time at Kims helping uncle Jin and Namjoon with Taehyung. Or at Yoohyeon's to help them keep communication with Yeonjun, Minho, Minji and the rest, after they reached Republic safely.

They stayed in the North part of the Republic. They were preparing the place for all of them and recognizing the situation.

After the war was declared and the military movements of Korea were registered, the first thing Jimin did was grab his phone, wanting to ask his hyung if he was safe. He didn't know where he was, but if there was a chance he was near the danger Jimin wanted to be sure he was alright.

They talked few days ago. He was comforting him in some dark way saying he can't lose hope till he will see the body...

It was creepy. But for sure let Jimin not break down again, because of the shock.

So he grabbed his phone and blinked.

He started to shake his head slowly.

He logged out and logged in again. He searched through the users again and again...

Because he couldn't believe the words at the bottom of the chat.

**SUGA: I'm sorry.**

*Sent: yesterday, 19:48*

**THIS USER DELETED HIS ACCOUNT**

**28th of March 2071, Seoul - over 6 months later**

Jin and Namjoon were used to being woken up at any time. By messages or phone calls.

But the thing that opened their eyes wide and froze the blood in their veins was a scream.

A scream full of pain.

Scream that was lingering in the air.

The next one came right after. And another one...

The sudden, unexpected painful laugh between the screams electrified the hairs on their heads, when they were running upstairs.

To Taehyung's room.

Again the scream.

And the laugh that was scaring them more than anything.

They stormed the room and saw Taehyung writhing on the bed. Shaking from the pain.

His weak body got bruises from the slightest touch.

His forearms were covered in blood, because he jerked the drips from his forearms.

'AAAAAAAAAAA.... ' he screamed again and a giggle left his mouth right after.

He crawled through the sheets and fell from the bed on his knees.

'Taehyung! Talk to me!' Namjoon crouched down next to him.

Taehyung grabbed his shoulders, trying to stand up...

Tears were streaming down his cheeks.

He was so weak, he couldn't stand up, so he just pressed his forehead to Namjoon's chest.

'I can feel him...' he choked out.

The next wave of pain threw him on his knee again.

'What?' Jin asked faintly, embracing him to stop the shaking of his body.

Taehyung's head fell back, but he turned it to Jin and a little smile appeared on his lips.

'I couldn't feel him all this time... Even on Samhain...' he whispered. 'There was only silence...'

Jin looked at Namjoon with wide eyes.

They understood.

Taehyung's separation syndrome wasn't sped up... He couldn't feel Jungkook... This

one person, which he could feel before he was even born...

It wasn't the third stage of separation syndrome...

It was a lack of hope... No matter what Taehyung's mind was telling. When his soul couldn't feel his twin... The twin he could feel no matter what in the corner of his being...

He fell sick.

The next scream of pain, brought Namjoon and Jin to reality.

'I will bring the shots with morphine...' Jin said, fastly raising up, but Taehyung's hand sprang and grabbed his wrist to stop him.

He shook his head and smiled, closing his eyes as if the pain was the most blissful feeling he could embrace.

'I can feel him...'

Namjoon, supporting Taehyung back, with a free hand, brushed bangs from his pale, sweaty forehead. Taehyung was mumbling between screams. He was taking deep breahts between smiles:

'I'm coming for you...

Koo...

---

We are speeding up the action a bit...

Hold on there guys!

BlairWitch91 🩶

# Chapter 50: Lost Souls

***This chapter is linear to the previous one.***

**10th of September 2070, Daegu**

Yoongi, Wooyoung and San through the last two months thankfully had only one case when they had to use the contact Ryu gave them.

First when in Gumi they found Holder, in his 40s, with separation syndrome. He was in the first stage and got pretty aggressive. He was yelling all the time that "she is not dead". His soulmate was caught up in one of Gumi fights and disappeared. The body was not found. But in this state he was an easy target for someone who would want to use him and a threat to other Sealers. They had to pacify him to take him out of Gumi. But it was suspicious itself... that they couldn't find his Sealer or her body... They managed to check his mark and ask about his Sacred Treasure. He said it was a mirror of dreams. They usually were helping people with insomnia or nightmares. They were often helping to calm down people with separation syndrome until it hit them...

Second case was even weirder... In the middle of August Ren pinpointed to a couple.Teenagers. Two girls. She said it is needed to take them out of Daegu as far as possible and hide them. They were barely kids. Not separated, not having any issues. So Yoongi was hardly against it, till Ren said:

'Hypnosis. That's their power... They are barely children. How easy will it be to use them?'

'Will Song agree to it?'

'He will. I will convince him.'

'You want me to kidnap teenagers...'

'I want you to protect someone from being hypnotized and forced to kill...'

'What about their parents?'

'Figure something out... Tell them they would be able to join them later when it

will be safe...'

'They think the city is safe... They think the army is protecting them! You want me to cause panic? Or for them to report us to someone?'

'The only thing I know is that they are on the list! They are the target. They are useful. It's your decision...'

'Fucking shit tell me more!' Yoongi yelled.

'Targets. List of useful powers! The Commanders have it. I have to go. Will tell you more next time!'

It was three weeks ago and Yoongi definitely was losing his patience with Ren now...

But he calculated... What if those kids will indeed be used as a weapon against someone?

So he and Woosan sneakily caught both of the soulmates and explained to them they are in danger without details, using their connection and their parents' safety to scare them. They agreed to be taken out of the city for some time, when Yoongi promised he would take care of their parents.

All of them created a fake scenario that the kids were sent to the private school and power training far away together. Two soulmates literally hypnotized their parents so they wouldn't suffer or look for them.

Yoongi guaranteed them that they would be safe in the north of the country and he would connect them with their parents as soon as possible.

It wasn't hard to scare such young people... They had met not so long ago and they were living surrounded by neverending conflicts in the society.

It was of course a thick lie. But as long as the soulmates agreed and were taken out of the city safely he could bear the guilt...

After seeing them in action, the perspective that he or someone else would be hypnotized like that without being aware of what actually is happening was much more terrifying than the anger of the parents...

But now he was waiting to get Ren in his hands and squeezed his fingers on her neck if she wouldn't spill all the secrets...

It was the middle of September and he wasn't at all pleased she didn't appear for so long. He was even roaming around the city aimlessly, hoping she would approach him.

It was one of those exact days when he walked out of the Crisis Management Office with Woosan and walked slowly around, taking the shady little alleys when he heard a whistle.

He looked around and saw an elegant person with a bun on her head. In the long camel trench she didn't stop walking. She was walking fast so he slowly walked with San and Wooyoung after her. Far enough to not be connected but close enough to not lose sight.

She sat on the bench in the park with a notebook and started to scribble something in it.

They approached the same park and sat on the bench that was placed with its back to the one Ren was sitting on.

'Finally...' Yoongi said quietly.

'We have a problem...' Ren said, not lifting her head from above the notebook.

'Just one? Whoa! You are so lucky...' he said ironically.

'Song disappeared.' she dropped the bomb not minding his malicious remark.

'What? And the rest of his group?'

'Safe and intact... They are not at all at risk. That's why it's strange. They are still working... But he is nowhere to be found...'

'Maybe he just ran away?'

'Maybe. Hard to believe, but maybe... I'm trying to find out if they have him... If not and he just disappeared it will be okay.'

'Why would he be so important to them? His power?'

'I don't know what his power is... He is not mated...'

'Yet he volunteered for the army? Suspicious... Holder or Sealer?'

'I don't know. He was wearing gloves all the time. It's hard to tell...'

'But the Army would check him...'

'I will look through it if I have the chance.'

'Okay. So another problem. Perfect...' San mumbled.

'Have the soulmate we evacuated reached the safety?' Wooyoung asked.

'Yeah. They are in the north... They are helping people with separation syndrome.'

'I want to know the truth, Ren. What's happening inside?'

Ren sighed.

'Hajun and Joryoung with their soulmates... have this small circle, four of them, 2 other pairs of soulmates and 4 Holders.'

'Only Holders? Near the Commanders?' Yoongi frowned.

'Yeah. Suspicious, right? You can imagine how they are able to fight...'

'And the other soulmates?'

'They are... strange... They think there is a possibility for them to use their powers separately. To have equal powers...'

'How would that be possible?'

'I don't know. But they behave as they believe it really hard. They are protecting Commanders because of this. I guess someone promised them something...'

'What on Earth is happening...' San shook his head. 'And the list you mentioned earlier?'

'They have the whole database... With marks, powers... They are starting to use it. They are connecting soulmates forcefully to check their powers. And if they know the powers... They are deciding which and where they can be used... They send connected ones to the right places to train or keep others closer. And of course Sealers... They hunt them like ducks... They keep them safe in a lot of places saying they have to be safe in any case...'

'Where is my uncle and Taeil in all of this?'

'Nowhere. They are outside of the circle. The President is dealing with thousands of things. They keep him busy. And Taeil is on a mission with his group to save Sealers... He really believes they have to be safe... That in the end they are the ones they can help the most...'

'He always did. Since high school...' Yoongi said bitterly.

'So I guess they are using them both...'

'Maybe we should tell them, then?'

'Your choice... But the borders are in constant danger... They Commanders haven't

broken the rules. It's still the State of Emergency... Ask if they harmed anybody - They haven't... Ask if they keep the situation under control and have power to do so? - They have.'

'Everything is in the shadows...' Wooyoung gritted his teeth.

'There is a huge possibility that by telling them we won't gain anything and they will consider us as a threat...' San sighed.

Yoongi was looking over the horizon.

The city was blooming. People were happy and cheerful. If not the moves around their borders and everything that they knew were happening under the surface... The Republic was a Heaven for Interdependants.

He frowned when a sudden thought came to his mind.

'How they haven't discovered you?'

'I am like a fly. They don't see the dagger pressed to their ribs, because I am neither a Sealer nor a Holder to them...'

'You are not an Interdependant?' Wooyoung asked surprised.

'So you get why they don't even care to check what I am doing right? Powerful people mistakenly don't look under their shoes...' Ren answered with amusement.

'And what about Inho?'

'He is locked in his house... He just has some meetings with the President, his wife or Commanders...'

'What state is he in?'

'I don't know I am not allowed to enter with them there...'

'That's more than suspicious...'

'Yeah. But I can't risk trying to get closer to him...' Ren sighed. 'I have to go. I will try to find Song's whereabouts. Keep your eyes open. And I don't know... try to fix Taeil's thinking...?'

'Why is it so important?' Wooyoung frowned.

'I told you before... If Taeil starts to think straight again, his father won't question him right?'

'Right. My uncle always spoiled him.' Yoongi sighed.

'Meet me in 3 weeks in the ruins of the Cathedral. At night. Between 1 and 3 a.m. Bye.'

When the sound of her high heels faded, Wooyoung said:

'She is not an Interdependent! And she is doing all of this? Badass!'

'She hadn't confirmed she was not...' Yoongi corrected him.

'What?' San lifted his eyebrow.

'She said they don't consider her as a Sealer or Holder. And that means... she can't be hiding it.' he explained thoughtfully. 'Or she is indeed not one of us... and that's indeed badass.'

**October 2070, Daegu - 3 weeks later**

Yoongi, guarded from afar by Wooyoung and San, was waiting under the bridge, at the pointed by Ren time. It's been 3 weeks. He was waiting for more than four hours already. She didn't show up.

They tried on the next day too.

And two days later.

Ren didn't appear there and then.

She didn't appear somewhere else either.

Her sudden disappearance... was a really bad sign. She was nowhere near the Commanders, when Yoongi saw them.

Contacts given by Song to Yoongi, didn't know about her either.

What the hell was happening? Why were people disappearing?

When Yoongi was waiting on the other side of the city under the bridge waiting for the person that was nowhere to be able to show up, in one of the buildings in the city center, in the comfortable room on the soft bed a sleeping boy was lying.

The bed was surrounded by Wi Hajun, Oh Joryoung and one of their sidekicks. A Holder named Lee Dasol, who was holding a mirror in her hand.

'It will take time...' she said. 'I need to learn how to use it...' - she showed the mirror.

The sleeping person was attached to drips with nutritions, keeping him in the state of constant coma.

'That's unfortunate we lost the chance to use hypnosis... It would be much more convenient.' Hajun sighed.

They looked at the last person in the room, who was looking at the sleeping boy.

'The mark looks different...' The President said quietly.

'But it is him. There is no doubt... The Sealer of the Lovers...' Joryoung smirked.

'If you want to use him, why keep him asleep?'

'So the separation syndrome will go through the anger and sadness stage directly to numbness... It will be easier to control him.'

'We have a variety of tasks for him ready...' Hajun said. 'And according to our knowledge it won't be easy to use him... We have to... convince him. But the power we will gain... will be worth it.'

'How?'

'That's for us to worry about...' Joryoung said disrespectfully.

'You won't hurt him?'

'There is no need to harm what we want to use...'

Min Kyung sighed deeply, biting his lips hesitantly when suddenly his phone rang. He gulped seeing the caller.

Kim Namjoon.

'What now?' he asked, showing the phone.

'I advise you to play it well, mister president...' Hajun said. 'For our own good...'

Kyung took a deep breath and answered the call. He was listening to the caller for some time, looking at the pale face with fading bruises on face, while talking with Namjoon.

He received the photo and replied to his brother's friend:

*'I understand. Of course I will help. I will do everything I can...'*

**20th of October 2070, Daegu**

After Chim stopped responding Yoongi was staring at the photo he sent him.

Why would this guy be in Daegu?

And they haven't found him in the last 30 days?

What was happening?

He knew this face already. His uncle spread the other photo and leaflets through Daegu with his face. When Yoongi asked him why he and no others that's disappeared, Kyung answered it was a request from Kim Namjoon.

His father's friend. The same person Yoongi remembered vaguely from his father's funeral.

His heart was beating fast when he realized... that if his father wouldn't die and he would actually go to university as planned, met Namjoon and his family... He would also meet Chim... and this guy, smiling in the photo.

So he took it personally... to find this person. He hoped to ask Ren if she knew anything, but she disappeared.

The only thing he could do now was show this picture to San and Wooyoung and ask them to have their eyes and ears open wide.

**November 2070, Daegu**

Yoongi was helping his mother take a few steps around the room and in the corridor. She wasn't speaking much, but she was giving them signs she was listening. With Gahyeon, Wooyoung and San goofing around, she was even able to smile a bit from time to time.

She was slowly eating by herself. When the kids were around them she was fighting for them. Just left alone she was swallowed by the darkness and numbness easily.

The situation around wasn't colorful. Daegu was calm, surrounded by the Iron Wall, but the open parts of the country, near the borders, were often getting into fights with Korean soldiers that were provoking him.

Mediations and negotiations his uncle started with the Korean government were slow. He had to be careful to not agree to anything that would enrage the citizens and turn them against him. The Korean President didn't want to agree to all the simple requests that would show their good will to change the law in Korea and make social awareness programs.

Yoongi could observe how the moves of the Army of the Republic are getting more visible. They were preparing. Locating soldiers in fragile places, endangered by attacks.

He also didn't find any clue about Jungkook - Chim's friend. And he could sense through chats how affected and devastated Chim was. He was going through the thing Yoongi went through with his mom - observing the separation syndrome of the person he loved.

Chim wasn't energetic or flirty as always. He was sad. All the time.

He was suffering and Yoongi had a desperate need to do anything that could help him get rid of this feeling.

But he still couldn't tell him. Especially now... with the next war around the corner...

Taking care of his mom and training Gahyeon were the only things that could divert his attention from his soulmate misery and looking for his friend....

**23rd of February 2071, Daegu**

Yoongi was sent on the border with Wooyoung and San to secure the people in Gumi and help with the evacuation as the Army entered the city and took it over, prepared.

He still couldn't believe it... they were going to be in an open war again.

Of course the declaration of war didn't mean the instant beginning of an open conflict, but it was a clear sign Daegu had enough of threats and was ready to fight for everything.

The amount of people who wanted to fight was ridiculous... not just the army. But most of the trained soldiers were ready to fight alongside the Army.

He understood them, they wanted to protect things they built... but at the same time... would another war solve anything?

He doubted that...

**24th of February 2071, Daegu**

After 48 hours of guiding people and relocating them to safe areas Yoongi fastly entered the house.

'Change! Grab something to eat and we are going back!' he said, running to his room. He dropped his backpack and jacket on the bed, wanting to go under the shower fast and prepare the bathtub of coffee for the next few days, when he suddenly stopped hearing the scream.

'LEAVE HER OR I WILL FUCKING KILL YOU!' Gahyeon's voice was loud and enraged.

Yoongi ran out of his room hearing cars outside of the mension. Lots of huge cars

it seemed...

Evacuation?!

Now?

Why would his uncle evacuate them so suddenly?!

He ran inside his mother's room just to see Gahyeon held by Taeil's friends - Gyeom and Kang. She was trying to free herself harshly. She had an exposed forearm and a red mark on it.

Yoongi could hear the running footsteps of soldiers in the house.

'Oppa! Stop them!!!'

Yoongi's eyes ran to his mother, where his aunt - Min Chorong - just pressed a strangely looking pistol to his mother's arm.

'What the fuck!!!' he rushed at her, but he was grabbed from behind by Taeil. He freed himself fast, throwing him on the ground, kicking his shins hard, but when he turned to the doors Hajun was standing there with a gun pressed to Wooyoung's temple.

'Calm down... and nobody will be harmed. There are 12 soldiers with heavy equipment here... You don't want to go against us...' he said calmly.

'What's the meaning of this!' Yoongi hissed, when he saw his uncle leading San to them. 'What are you doing to mom?'

'Tracking devices...' Hajun said. 'So you won't go anywhere out from here... We know you helped some people to get away from the city. And unfortunately we can't trust you...'

Yoongi looked at his uncle.

'How dare you... In my father's house...'

'I don't want you to get harmed. So it's the only way to keep you here under control...' Kyung said.

'I let Taeil's in to make him safe!!'

'This place is safe. And Taeil will stay here. But you don't trust us and we can't trust you won't disturb us...'

Chorong inserted the small round device in Handong's arm. The same thing was

already in Gahyeon's forearm.

'You will let us insert the device in your body. And we will leave...'

'Like hell I will!' Yoongi yelled.

'I don't know if you are aware, but first of all your mother is under my supervision because you were not at legal age when she was admitted to the hospital a few years ago. So I can take her out of here, no matter if you will consider it legal or not. And second of all those devices that are connected have small explosives inside them. If you pass through a certain area, and this area is currently mapped to the house and area to the fencing, the person will explode...'

Yoongi's eyes widened.

'How cruel you can be...' he whispered, shocked.

'Gahyeon and Handong, can't leave this place. You can calmly let us do this, or we will do this the hard way...'

'Can you at least let go of San and Wooyoung?' he asked.

'And let them try to free you? No, I don't think so...' Kyung said sadly, shaking his head.

Yoongi looked at Taeil.

'You couldn't fall lower...' he whispered with disgust.

'If you would be with us, instead of meddling, we wouldn't have to do this...' Taeil said, looking at the ground.

Yoongi stretched his hand to Chorong, who approached him.

'didn't want soldiers to do this to you and harm you unnecessary...' she said gently, holding his hand and pressing the pistol to his skin.

'How nice of you...' Yoongi hissed and felt the burning sensation while the device was inserted inside his skin.

Kyung walked through Hajun and slowly made him put the gun down away from Wooyoung's head.

'It's not needed. They won't resist...'

'Let me go, fuckers!' Gahyeon stepped on Kang's foot and freed herself, punching the other guy on his chin with her elbow.

They wanted to grabbed her again, but Taeil said quietly:

'Leave her.'

She went to Handong to check her state. She calmingly stroked her head.

'We will be okay, mom...' she said. ' Don't worry...'

She lifted her enraged eyes at Taeil.

'You are a disgusting being, who shouldn't even be called a human...'

'You can say whatever you want, I don't care, Gahy...' he said plainly.

Chorong inserted the devices into Wooyoung and San's arms too.

Kyung nodded to Hajun.

'You can continue....'

Hajun gave a sign to his soldiers and left the floor.

Kyung looked at Yoongi.

'They will clear the house from all the guns. And don't even think about removing it... After it is connected with tissues the removal will cause an automatic explosion... Until you stay here nothing will happen to you. You can leave here peacefully unbothered by anybody...'

'As prisoners?' Yoongi laughed ironically.

'If you want to call it like that...' Kyung shrugged. 'Laptops, electronic devices, tablets, smart watches will be taken away by Hajun... If you don't want the soldiers to look through your things give me your phones now...'

Yoongi looked at Gahyeon and nodded.

She threw her phone into Taeil's face.

Wooyoung stretched his hand with his phone to Kang, but when the other wanted to take it he dropped it.

'Oh, sorry...' Wooyoung said with a fake apology.

Kang glared at him, and bent to pick it, at the same moment Wooyoung rised his knee and broke his nose.

Accidentally...

'Oh my! Are you okay? Sorry, I tripped!' Wooyoung said happily.

Kang glared at him and raised his fist, when:

'Stop it!' Kyung said harshly. 'You will be leaving together. I advise you to get along...' he looked at Yoongi. 'Your phone.'

'In the jacket in my room...' Yoongi said quietly.

'Gahy, go, bring it...' Kyung ordered.

'Don't call me that, fucker...' she mumbled passing him by.

She exchanged glances with Yoongi for a second. He was looking at her intensely. As if he wanted something from her....

She walked through the corridor slowly. Thinking hard. What could she do with his phone?

They didn't have anybody to call now...

The devices were already in their bodies. What did he want from her?

She reached her brother's room and took his phone... What was he usually doing with his phone?

She blinked. Of course! The only thing he could do now was stop the damage and protect the only one he could...

She unlocked the phone with the pin code. She knew what date it was. It was their father's death date. She fastly found the frequently used apps on his phone and chose the one she didn't know.

She wanted to uninstall it at once, but she took one second... just one to type "I'm sorry" to her future brother in law, so he won't think someone just abandoned him. She hoped it would be okay.

She could type "help us" but... she knew her brother. He would never drag here another person who would become a hostage.

So she just said sorry before deleting the account, deleting the app and clearing the history from the phone.

She came back to the rest, gave the phone to his uncle and stood next to her brother.

She tapped his shoe two times, without anybody noticing: *He is safe...*

Gahyeon, Wooyoung, San and Yoongi were exchanging daggers in their gazes with Taeil, Kang and Gyeom. One were hostages already... but they for sure won't give in to the fuckers that were standing in front of them.

'Mr President...' Hajun called out quietly and Kyung walked up to him. 'This place is perfectly secured... We will have it under observation. So it will be best if...' the voice got quieter.

Kyung was looking at Hajun trying to discuss something with him, but in the end he nodded and came to Yoongi.

'Last thing. You will have a guest. He lost his family and memory in the accident. But he is a powerful Sealer. Taeil and his friends will take care of him. Treat him nicely...'

Yoongi glare darkened.

'Anything else?' he asked bitterly.

'If Taeil will get harmed... in any way... I will take your mother away from here.' Kyung threatened, turned around and walked away.

On the next day a military car entered Min's mension's grounds and a body on the stretchers were carried to one of the rooms near Taeil's.

Few hours later the second war was declered.

The soldiers left the house entirely.

Taeil and his four friends were walking around their part of the house, avoiding the rest. Sometimes they were leaving the house.

It didn't matter there were no guns pointed at them... Yoongi, Gahyeon, San, Wooyoung and Handong were hostages.

**28th of March 2071, Daegu**

They couldn't do much besides training combat, taking care of Handong and coming up with ways to not get crazy...

But for a month good things were happening too... Like the fact they didn't let Taeil and their friends lead a peaceful life... Broken devices. Salt in a sugar container. Turning off the warm water while someone was showering.

Just little pranks that were feeding their need for revenge with crumbs.

Woosan and Gahyeon came up with all of them without blinking an eye. Yoongi was observing. He was observing especially two people: Wi Hajun's soulmate - Heyrim - and a woman they called Dasol as he overheard. The two of them sometimes came by, especially Dasol, and were disappearing inside the room where the boy, in a coma, was.

Why? What was so special about him?

And why were they not guarding his room if he was so special?

Yoongi was sitting in the kitchen, solving sudoku (What else could he do?!) when Taeil came. He without a word made a coffee and poured milk into it. He took a sip and started to cough.

Yoongi smirked.

Dishwashing liquid in the milk...

Taeil spilled the coffee in the sink.

'Could you fucking stop with the pranks?!' A bubble left out his mouth when he choked on it.

'Could you fucking stop with the death threats?' Yoongi bit back calmly.

'You don't understand... It's for your own good...'

'Oh sure... You meant for YOUR good. Remember when you asked me about killing you if you ever end up with separation syndrome?'

Taeil looked at him with worry. Yoongi's eyes became cold.

'I will gladly leave you suffering till the end of your days and make sure... you will

live...' he said slowly.

'You don't understand...' Taeil said, gulping hard.

'No I don't.'

'Is fighting for interdependants a wrong thing?'

'Depends on how you fight...'

'Your father started it!'

'My father wanted to protect children! He made a mistake. But he wasn't the one who wanted to show us with all our powers to the world! It was yours! He was always the one who was pushing us forcefully without giving any time for the others to get to know us and adjust! He wanted changes right away!'

'And we are trying to protect what we had built...'

'Separating soulmates? Using Holders? Breaking the fucking Taboo?! That's your definition of protection...'

'We can't win without power...'

'And that is why you are keeping this person here? Who is he? Why is he here?'

'What? He has nothing to do with this... He is Wi Heyrim's nephew. He lost his family and soulmate when they tried to cross the border. He was the only one who survived and he has been in a coma since...' Taeil said quietly. 'They asked us to secure him because Heyrim and Hajun are mainly on the borders with soldiers...'

Yoongi smirked ironically.

'Another person without his soulmate with a separation syndrome... How convenient...'

'What do you mean?'

'Hajun and Joryoung... and their little circle of followers... Targeting people. Using Taboo left and right... Ringing any bells?'

'I don't know what you are talking about... The Holders who work with them...'

'Just stop it, Taeil...' Yoongi cut him off. 'Maybe I would believe those fairytales if other people wouldn't disappear earlier...'

'Disappear? People with separation syndrome are secured...

'To be used by Hajun's Holders when it will be necessary...'

'We have a war...'

'Where is Ren?'

'I don't know such a person.'

'Where is Song?'

'Who are you talking about...'

'Taeil...' Yoongi stood up. 'You are full of shit...'

He shook his head and walked out.

Dasol took out the mirror of dreams from above the sleeping men's head and nodded.

'It's safe now...' she said.

'What will he remember?'

'His memories are closed in a dream. He won't remember anyone or anything... He will believe it was a dream he dreamt during a coma if he would get flashbacks. But it is hardly possible he will...'

'What about the separation syndrome?'

'He should already be in the third stage... He will also be weak for some time because of months of lying still...'

'Good. He will be easier to control...' Hyerim said, looking at his chest. The original mark showed up two months ago... They already were sure it was the right person, but now nobody could have any doubts...

Hyerim sat on the bed and took the sleeping one's hand. She nodded to Dasol.

'Wake him up...' she whispered.

The boy's eyelashes fluttered slowly.

He whined moving his head. A miserable whimper came out of his lips...

'You said he would be in the third stage...' Hyerim widened her eyes.

'It's too late now. As long as he won't be in an anger stage it will be okay... His sadness will be fine to control too...'

Hyerim grunted.

'Koohyung... Do you hear me? It's me, your auntie... Open your eyes, darling...'

The boy opened his eyes. He looked around not recognizing the place, he started to breathe heavily.

He had voices in his head. Screaming. Rain.

*Mom!!!*

*She will die!*

*Your choice!*

'MOM!' he screamed, trying to sit up.

'Oh darling...' Hyerim held his arms. 'Calm down... It's me... your auntie... Look at me...'

'I don't know you!!!' he screamed. 'Where is my mother!?'

Hyerim exchanged glances with Dasol. He should remember... But they could use it...

'I'm so sorry Koohyung... You... had accident... But we could save only you...'

'No... NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!!!!! No, no, no, no!!!' the boy was thrashing in her hold.

'What do you remember?'

'Mom... accident...'

'D-do you remember... Woomin? Your V?'

'Who?!!!! Who!!? I don't know this name...'

'He was your soulmate...'

'Soulmate?' The boy raised his head.

'Yes... he died... in the accident with your family... don't you remember him?'

The boy shook his head.

'Do you know what your name is?' Dasol asked.

The tears were streaming down the men's face, when he was screaming.

He didn't know what this feeling inside him were. He was in pain. Everything was hurting him as if his soul was being torn apart and stretched to unmeasurable length.

Where was this anger coming from? And this sadness?

He didn't know these people.

He didn't know those names.

His head was blank, there was only void and darkness there.

What's my name? He asked himself. Who am I?

There were no answers no matter how stubbornly he was looking for them in his head.

He started to choke on his breath, when he was screaming.

But he lost something. He knew it... there was a great, enormous feeling of loss inside him.

He lost something...

'Put him to sleep!' Hyerim demanded, pressing the boy's arms to the pillow.

'I can't. Not now...'

'Give him the shots then...'

'Your name is Jang Koohyung.' Hyerim said calmingly. 'We will take care of you...'

After getting the shots the boy was only whimpering, squirming in pain on the bed.

Yoongi stormed the room with Wooyoung and San.

'What the fuck is happenign here?!'

'Get out of here...' Hyerim said.

'Excuse Me, lady, but it is my house... And I am not used to torturing people here! What is the meaning of those screams...'

'We just woke him up... He doesn't remember anything. He got confused. Started to cry and scream... He lost his soulmate and his family. I think screams are pretty normal in this situation...' Dasol said calmly yet sternly.

Yoongi was looking at the two of them for a moment.

'His name is Koohyung... please be gentle with him... we don't want to keep him in the room...' Hyerim said to Yoongi.

Yoongi's eyes slowly moved from their faces to the boy, desperately grabbing the hem of his collar, pulling and stretching the fabric.

He was curled up like a pretzel, shivering from pain and whimpers. In the dimmed light and light from the corridor Yoongi couldn't see clearly.

The boy had dark hair... pale almost gray face, chapped cracked lips.

Something clicked in Yoongi's head, but the thought was exchanged with shock, when he looked at the chest, which showed in the hem of the pulled down t-shirt.

He had to hold on to every part of his self control, to not show the reaction on his face.

He nodded to Hyerim and walked out of the room without a word.

Wooyoung and San after him, a bit surprised he gave up so easily.

'What the hell, Yoongs... Will we leave him like that with them? This auntie of his looks crazy af!' San whispered, when they reached the only place they felt safe in - his mother's bedroom.

'We for sure won't leave him alone... This guy is not just some interdependent people! And his name is not Koohyung!'

Wooyoung and San's jaws dropped.

'And I am sure as fuck this woman is not his auntie!! ' Yoongi whispered-screamed.

He was pale. Breathing heavily.

'What?' Wooyoung asked.

'Remember the guy we were looking for since October? Jungkook? It's him!!! They

dyed his hair, but I am sure it is him!'

'The hell?! What is he doing here? He disappeared in Seoul more then 6 months ago!'

'I pretty much can guess what he is doing here... And how did he appear here...' Yoongi gulped, pressing his hand to his forehead. 'They fucking kidnapped him, because...'

Wooyoung and San were looking at him waiting for an explanation, when he angrily pointed to the doors, in the direction of the boy's room.

'He has a VK mark on his chest!'

---

So we are having again one timeline from now on.

The pain Taehyung felt was not the physical pain of Jungkook. It was the deep inner pain he felt hearing he lost his family, soulmate and himself.  Physcial pain is not usually transparent for soulmates. The feelings that reach their souls are. Ofc Taboo is exception here.

I'm so sorry for delay □□□. I am already working on the next chapter darlings!

Merry Christams! ❤□❤□❤□❤□

BlairWitch❤□

# Chapter 51: No Way Out

**29th of March 2071, Daegu**

Yoongi was thinking hard. He had a sleepless night together with Wooyoung, San and Gahyeon. They had to consider what they could do.

There were no electronic devices in the house. Even the smart tv was taken out of here. There was not even a single piece of electronics around.

They couldn't get out. Neither could Jungkook. They could bet he already had the same tracking device...

*Tracking...* - Yoongi snorted in his head. - *They had fucking bombs inserted in their bodies!*

So they couldn't inform anybody. And they couldn't leave the place...

There were no guns either. Even Taeil and his friends weren't allowed to enter the house with guns or phones...

Kyung and Hajun knew exactly that sooner or later Yoongi and his squad would check their luck and try to pacify the rest..

Even if they would get involved in a fight and win with five other people they couldn't do anything after unless they would take them as hostages, which would cause the army entering the mension, taking Jungkook out of here, and probably hide him somewhere they would never reach him.

They couldn't let that happen...

'Okay... we need to keep him safe.' Yoongi finally said quietly. 'We can't suddenly act as if we are okay with Taeil and the rest. They won't believe it...'

'Then what can we do?' Gahyeon asked. 'We will leave him in that room with them?'

'We will pretend that we don't know anything besides what they have told us and act accordingly.'

'I don't think either way they will let us go to him...' Wooyoung frowned.

'They will let him out and that's enough. They try to tell him a story and make him believe them. It would not make sense if he would be closed...'

'Do you think he remembers anything?' San asked.

'I don't know...' Yoongi sighed. 'I hope so... I don't know much, but maybe something will make him remember... I will talk with Taeil and trick him...'

'We should catch some sleep...' Gahyeon said, rubbing her eyelids. 'We have to be on our toes if we don't want to be seen through...'

'Yeah...' Yoongi nodded and bit goodnight to the rest.

When they left him alone he lay down on the bed and recollected Chim's voice.

They even took his ipod... flash drives... stereo. Everything... As if they were sure Yoongi or his friends were able to create something out of wires like MacGyver...

So he only had memories now...

And Jungkook hadn't even had that...

*They are those destined lovers... Falling deeper and deeper in love with each gaze... They have known each other forever...*

Chim's words were running in front of Yoongi's eyes.

*I understand now, Chim...* he thought.

It was making him furious. That someone tried to violate a bond like that...

How cruel was that? Making one forget something that built his whole existence...

How dare they do something like that to them?

To anybody?!

*My cuties...*

Chim for sure loved his friends.

*I will take care of this one, baby... You take care of the other...*

It was the last thought Yoongi had before falling into restless sleep.

**2nd of April 2071, Seoul**

Jimin knocked on Taehyung's room with a plate of small breakfast. He was spending most of the time in Kims house. Whenever he wasn't able to do that Yoohyeon or Dami were taking his place.

'Tae?' he opened the doors lightly, to see Taehyung slowly moving around the room. He was taking small, hesitant steps with determination. 'Will you eat?'

For the last few days Taehyung had small meals and they were helping him to move around after laying still for too long.

Jin and Namjoon were keeping his skin and body under control for months, so they said when he starts to move he will regain his strength fast.

'Hi...' he said quietly. 'Yeah... I will... I have to regain strength... I don't look good...'

'You look like shit!' Jimin said mercilessly, bravely walking in.

Taehyung sat on the bed and took the plate with small sandwiches.

He looked at Jimin, who rested his arm on the wall, observing him.

'You dyed your hair...'

Jimin's hand automatically moved to his head.

'Oh... yeah... we all did...' he said, looking down.

'All?' Taehyung frowned.

'When Yeonjun, Soobin, Minho and Han were going to Daegu... We can be separated, but the Red String is always connected... We can smile and keep going, but... it doesn't mean we give up. So till we all be together again... we will have black hair. As some kind... I don't know... manifestation?' he mumbled embarassed.

Taehyung was looking at him for a long time, forgetting about the food. He had this heaviness inside his chest, but it somehow made him... grateful.

'Will you help me dye mine?' he asked quietly.

'Girls will be here in an hour. Sure we will help if you want...'

'I want to.'

Jimin nodded and his lips quivered a bit, when he whispered:

'You scared us... We all were terrified...'

'I'm sorry... I wasn't....'

'We were terrified, you jerk!' Jimin smacked his head. 'We all were deadly afraid of what Jungkook will do to us, when he will see what we let you do to yourself! He would walk through us like a god of war without asking questions!'

A small smile appeard in the corner of Taehyung's lips.

'He would...'

Jimin sighed heavily.

'You look much better than in September...' he admitted with relief.

Taehyung gulped hard. His expression was suddenly so full of misery, Jimin regretted saying that.

'I...' Taehyung choked out. 'I was in a void... there was nothing around. There was always something there... and suddenly... there was only silence and nothingness...'

'I understand...'

'No... I don't think you do...' Taehyung said gently. 'It was like losing a eyesight... hearing... As if my fingers were touching something but I wouldn't feel that...'

Jimin's eyes got teary. But he was happy... Taehyung was speaking... He wasn't pushing him away anymore...

'I'm still in the void...' Taehyung looked at him. 'There is still darkness and silence around... I'm hanging inside it...' he shut his eyes. 'B-but here is this... thin, fragile thread that is keeping me in the air and protecting me from falling down...' he whispered, with shivering lips. 'I am holding onto it... and pray he is holding it on the other side...'

Jimin sat next to Taehyung and nudged him with his arm.

'He is.' he assured. 'What about separation syndrome? How do you feel?'

'I can control it...' Taehyung said, breathing out deeply. 'I can feel him so I can control it...'

'That's good...' Jimin patted Taehyung's knee. 'Eat! We should pack your things...'

'What?' Taehyung blinked.

'You need to regain strength, right? We are going to the Mountains... You have to train...'

'What about your job?'

'I don't need a big stage to dance...' Jimin shrugged. 'I can work with Uncle Hobi till the end of my life and still be happy...'

'You dropped the job...' Taehyung whispered, shocked by Jimin's sacrifice.

'Well someone have to shake your ass, right? And I won't be able to dance either way if Jungkook will break my legs, after seeing you being a mess...'

Taehyung snorted, and pressed his head to Jimin's shoulder.

'Thank you...' he whispered.

'The sooner you will get in shape, the sooner we will go to Daegu... so get up!'

Taehyung shook his head and started to eat again.

It was hard... to eat... But he forced himself.

Half an hour later Yoohyeon and Dami entered the room.

'I heard you are dying your hair...' Yoohyeon said, shaking the box with the black hair dye. She walked to him and kissed his cheek. 'Good to see you, oppa...'

'You look good...' he said and his eyes traveled to Dami, who was standing in the door frame with an unreadable face expression.

Then she clicked her tongue and she rolled her eyes:

'I still want to punch you for making me worried...'

'How is the situation?' Taehyung asked.

'Minsung and Yeonbin with Jungkook's parents for the last month were preparing the base. They found a good location. They are now tracking the safe routes, Ryu mentioned earlier, and trying to get in contact with his colleagues. They want to find the connections between rescued Sealers and Holders to have an overall look at the situation...' she said fast. 'For now the only city were fights occuring is Gumi...'

She walked to him and put a hand on his shoulder, and looked him deeply in the eyes.

'You are the leader of Red String...' she said seriously, so nobody, especially Taehyung would have any doubt about it.' Get your lazy ass to work!' she patted his shoulder, harshly and finally smiled.

'You are right... I want to go to Daegu as soon as possible...'

'Yeah. He is waiting for you there. They all are...'

Taehyung ate the last bite and stood up, leaning a bit on Yoohyeon.

'We are getting to work, people... There are asses to whoop on our way...'

**4th of April 2071, Daegu**

Pale face. Dark bags under reddened eyes. Black hair.

Mole under the lower lip.

Trained stomach and arms, which didn't have strength in them...

A little hole in the navel...

Piercing?

Did he have one?

A boy was looking in the mirror with tired, sad eyes.

He didn't know this body...

Jang Koohyung.

This name was foreign to him too.

He clenched his hands on the sink, when he felt the panic and tears were coming again.

He felt empty...

And at the same time... he felt as if the longing running through his body would tore him apart.

He tried to breathe, but his lungs were hurting.

Where am I?

Who am I?

He remembered... the sound of crushing... And his own scream: mom!

They died? They all died?

That's what they told him...

They were all... death...

He pressed his face to the cold mirror, clenching his fist over the necklace, resting on his collar.

Shaky breaths left his throat, changing into sobs, that stopped suddenly, when he heard knocking.

He fastly put on a t-shirt and walked out of the bathroom. He sat on the bed and waited for the person to enter.

It was a girl. Aunt Hyerim introduced his friends to him. This one's name was... Yein?

'Hi, Koohyung... Do you feel like eating with us? Want me to bring you something here?' she asked with a nice smile.

He was sick... sick of the four walls, he couldn't recognize. Sick of people around, he couldn't recognize...

Sick of himself... - he couldn't recognize.

He nodded slowly and stood up.

'I will go...'

'Want me to help you?' the girl moved to him, but Jungkook made an instant step back.

'Don't touch me...' he said, gulping hard, and when she frowned, he added: 'P-please...'

'Oh... I guess you are not comfortable...' she nodded, hesitantly. 'Come... the rest is waiting...'

She was walking him through corridors and stairs, blabbering about his "friends". He was slowly trailing behind her, looking around. Everything seemed so expensive and beautiful... Did he know this place before?

They reached the kitchen, where one of the guys smiled at him shortly. Was his name Taeil?

'Hi... maybe I will remind you of our names? It's okay to be confused...'

Confusion was actually the only thing he knew about right now...

Confusion... and suffocating longing...

So he just nodded indifferently.

'I'm Taeil. This is Gyeom and Kang' he pointed to two guys, who were interested only in their food.' Behind you is Yein and here is Bomin.'

The other girl smiled at him.

'Tea or coffee?'

'I don't know...' Jungkook said.

She looked at Taeil questioningly.

'Do both...' Taeil said calmly. 'He will know what he likes better, right?'

*Shouldn't my friends know what I like better?* - this suspicious question popped out in his mind when he sat on the other side of the table.

Yoongi and Gahyeon were getting out of their mother's bedroom with a trace after breakfast, when they heard commotion from the kitchen.

They looked at each other and started to run there without a second thought.

The screams were getting more hysterical and desperate.

"You cannot eat it!!!'

'Why the fuck not!!' Gyeom answered surprised.

'Don't eat it!!!' the desperate screams of an unknown voice were on the verge of tears.

They entered the kitchen just to see Jungkook trying to throw himself on Gyeom and Kang trying to stop him. Jungkook swiftly dodged his hand, twisting it on his back, but Taeil held him from behind.

Jungkook was looking with crazy panic in his eyes at Gyeom, who was holding a bowl with nuts.

'No!! You can't!!! You will die!! Please don't do it!!! Please!!! Don't eat it!!! NOOOO!!!!!'

'What the fuck!!?' Yoongi yelled and knocked the bowl out of Gyeom's hands. 'Are you fucking insane!'

'What is your fucking problem?! I just wanted to eat a peanut!' Gyeom pushed Yoongi, who held his wrist in a grip.

Gahyeon walked to Taeil, moved him out of Jungkook.

'Couldn't you stop this?' she asked with disgust. She looked at Jungkook, who was breathing heavily. 'It's okay...'

Taeil looked at Yoongi and then at Gahyeon.

'It was unexpected...' he gulped. 'He fell into a panic without a reason...'

'Gahy, take him to his room...' Yoongi said, and Gahyeon nodded. She was keeping her distance.

The boy was looking at the nuts scattered on the floor.

What was that? The sudden panic? The premonition that something bad would happen... His lips trembled.

The new girl tilted her head.

'I will show you the way, okay?'

He was so shocked by his own behavior, he only nodded.

When they left, Yoongi let go of Gyeom's wrist harshly.

'Idiot!' he hissed.

'I just wanted a fucking peanut!' Gyeom yelled into Yoongi's face and walked out of the kitchen with Bomin trailing behind her soulmate.

Yoongi glared at Taeil.

'You are dealing with a person with separation syndrome! Anything can trigger him! Shouldn't you know that?! You are "taking care" of soulmates like that for years, aren't you?!'

Yoongi knew this wasn't the case entirely... Reaction like that wouldn't be caused by it... He was observing separation syndrome for years...But he waited for an opportunity like that.

'I-it took me off guard...' Taeil said, looking at the floor.

'Listen, Taeil... His whole family is dead and he is in an unknown place! So find those shreds of humanity in you and treat him properly!'

'He is not closed. We don't want to hurt him...'

'No, you just want to use him!' Yoongi hissed. 'Don't even deny it!' he yelled when Taeil opened his eyes. 'Maybe I am a hostage here and I didn't sign up for this shit! But it is still my house and he is a guest here! You are not!' He looked at Kang and Yein. 'So at least have this bit of a shame and stop with this shit show! Don't pressure him and be careful around him!'

Yoongi walked to the kitchen counter, picked an apple and other fruits and started to cut them into small pieces.

'People with separation syndrome don't eat much. They eat easy food...' he shook his head. 'And he has an amnesia for fucks sake! Do you think he knows how to behave? What does he even remember?'

'Nothing... not even his name... Even the accident in which his family died...'

Yoongi clenched his fist over the knife, stopping himself from pressing it to Taeil's throat, when he heard this lie.

'If you want to help him recover... let him do what he is comfortable with...' he said quietly. 'I will tell Gahyeon, Wooyoung and San they can meet him around the house and should be careful too.' he took the trace with fruits and walked out.

'Don't act like his friends. It will only confuse him more...'

Yoongi was walking to Jungkook's room, thinking fast.

It seemed Taeil indeed didn't try to close Jungkook in his room. Good.

They felt pretty secure with the whole story they created, tracking devices and lack of electronics in the house...

Big mistake.

They didn't consider two things.

Luck.

And fate...

*Some meetings are meant to be,* Yoongi thought, taking a deep breath and knocking to the room.

Gahyeon opened the doors and walked out. They haven't said a word to each other. They didn't want to pressure Jungkook with two many people around at once.

Yoongi put the trace on the bedside table and looked at the boy sitting on the bed, looking at his own hands. He crossed his arms over his chest.

'Here is something you can eat when you want...'

Jungkook lifted his eyes at him. For a moment they were looking at each other.

'Do I know you?' Jungkook asked finally, frowning.

This new person was giving him a... strange feeling.

'No.' Yoongi answered simply. 'I am Min Yoongi and we have never met before... So you don't have to look for any memories or be tense because of the things you don't remember. There is nothing to remember...'

Jungkook relaxed a bit.

'Gahyeon is my sister. There is also Wooyoung, San and my mom in this house. You don't know any of us...'

Jungkook nodded.

'Where are we?' he asked.

'In Daegu... In Korea...' Yoongi added hesitantly, not knowing how severe Jungkook's amnesia was.

'I know we are from Korea. I also know where Daegu is on the map... I know how to write and read and... do math I guess... This kind of knowledge didn't disappear from my head...'

*Because they made you forget only things that are important to you*, Yoongi thought sadly.

'Did I live here before?' Jungkook rubbed his forehead with his hand.

'I don't think so...' Yoongi tilted his head. 'We eat later. We usually sleep longer so you can join us when you want. The house is secure, you can walk wherever you want...'

'I don't even know... how old I am... Where should I go?' Jungkook whispered.

'I guess I am your hyung...' Yoongi said. 'You seem younger...'

'A-aunt said...'

'You don't have to trust her or believe her.' Yoongi cut him off, feeling angry just hearing the word "aunt". 'She can't demand that from you now...'

Somehow Yoongi's serious gaze and simple words made Jungkook a bit more confident.

'Yeah.' he said, taking a deep breath. 'Thank you...'

'No problem, kid...' Yoongi moved to the doors. 'Don't sit alone here... Time is a bitch when you are alone.'

**10th of April 2071, Daegu**

Few days later he woke up covered in sweat. His body instantly curled up when he hid his face inside the pillow, who fastly got wet.

His body was trembling when he tried to muffle his screams and sobs.

Dreams....

Realistic to the point of a movie.

Different faces... different names... different places...

But HE was always in them.

The ONE was always there...

THE ONE and the feelings...

The sense of belonging... safety... adoration... trust... and overwhelming love...

Every time he was waking up from those dreams - and those feelings were disappearing - he felt so devastated, robbed, scared and abandoned.

Everynight it was repeating... Being embraced by dreams and being mercilessly thrown away into a pit of darkness after waking up.

Again and again.

Being blessed and robbed every night...

He was suffocating... He needed air... He needed water... Anything that would stop this screams inside his body, that couldn't came through his throat.

He got up off the bed, almost falling out of it.

He had bare feet. Only in sweatpants and hoodie, he was sleeping in. He was always cold. Always so cold...

Tottering and stumbling he reached the door... He opened them and went further through the dark and silent house. He got lost a few times, holding onto the walls of the corridor.

He got lost?

He was lost... He was lost all the time...

He reached the main entrance and harshly opened them getting out of the mansion. The gentle spring rain fell on his face, but he didn't stop. He was walking in the darkness...

Further...

He was lost...

Where was he?

Wooyoung suddenly jerked his head up from San's shoulder, confused and sleepy.

'What is this noise?' he asked.

The piercing sound of the house alarm was echoing outside.

He got up, and So sleepy right after him.

He looked through the window.

'What the hell?' he squinted his eyes, looking at the front yard. 'What happened this time?'

In the next second he started cursing.

'Fuck!!! SAN!! It's Jungkook!!'

San pressed his face to the glass and his heart sped up.

'If he doesn't know about the tracking device...'

Wooyoung didn't think much, he pressed his hand to San's chest.

'GO!' he screamed.

San flew through the window without bothering to open it. The glass broke out of the speed he was moving with.

Jungkook almost reached the gate. He was almost there.

The guards, who were located around the fencing, noticed the alarm and someone walking to the gate. They pointed their guns at the boy, but he didn't even notice them.

He was still walking...

One of the guards grabbed him, but San flew to him and kicked his face, pushing

him away. He made a fast turn and grabbed Jungkook from behind, stopping him.

Wooyoung reached them and stood in front of them separating two wrestling guys from the guards.

'Let me go!'

San was grabbed over his forearms and threw on the ground skillfully.

Wooyoung turned to Jungkook.

'Calm down!' he screamed. 'You can't get out of here!'

Jungkook blinked surprised and looked around as if he woke up from a dream.

'It's okay! It's okay...' San got up from the ground.

'Sorry... we surprised you...' Wooyoung added, gently this time, raising his hands calmingly, and making a step closer.

People were coming out from the house. Taeil, Kang and Yoongi reached them.

Taeil glared at the guards.

'PUT THAT DOWN!' he yelled, hitting the gun with his hand. 'GET THE FUCK OUT! YOU CAN'T ENTER THE INSIDE OF THE PROPERTY!'

The guard sent him an enraged look and turned around with the rest.

'What's happening here?' Yoongi asked Wooyoung and San.

His glance ran to Jungkook, who was wet, pale and confused.

'HE ALMOST CROSSED THE FENCING!' San yelled and pushed Kang, making him step back.

Taeil got pale. Yoongi looked at him then walked to Jungkook, he hesitantly put the hand on his shoulder.

'Go to the house with San and Wooyoung, okay? Nothing bad happened... The guards weren't supposed to react like that...'

Jungkook was looking at him with wide eyes. But somehow in all this confusion... the older one was somehow giving him a protective, comfortable feeling.

He gulped and nodded.

'Yes... hyung...'

'Take care of him...' Yoongi said to San. 'And turn off the alarm...' he looked at Wooyoung, who stood on both sides of Jungkook and walked him to the mension.

Yoongi waited till they would disappear inside the house.

'Have you told him about the device?' he asked Taeil, holding his anger back.

'We were watching over him...'

Yoongi turned quickly, grabbing Taeil's throat.

'HAVE YOU!?'

'N-n-no...' Taeil choked out.

Kang made a move towards Yoongi, saying:

'We wanted him to trust us...'

Yoongi let go of Taeil as fast as he grabbed him.

'Trust you!?' he spitted with venom. 'Not telling him he can explode if he crosses the gate?! DO YOU WANT HIM TO DIE?!'

'No I don't!' Taeil exclaimed. 'We were having turners watching over him!'

'Oooooh?!' Yoongi said ironically. 'Then how did he get here, huh?'

'I... fell asleep...' Kang looked down, gulped hard.

Yoongi's arms fell helplessly to his sides.

'I always knew you were stupid... But I at least hoped you would take care of your own business...' he said quietly.

'Why do you care so much?!' Kang said defensively. 'You don't even know him...'

'Sorry I am a human with basic decency, unlike you!' Yoongi spitted out, unbothered by the suspicion. 'I will fucking be on his side every time, because you put him in the same shit as me!'

'He is here because his aunt...'

'And you absolutely won't have any business in him being here?' he looked at Taeil with sarcasm. 'VK sign you had an obsession about? Ringing any bells?'

Taeil had the audacity to blush.

Yoongi shook his head.

'I knew it, you are not doing this out of good heart...'

'If he will agree to help us...'

'Well he first needs to survive your "care" to help you...' Yoongi turned on his heels and walked away.

'What are you going to do!?' Taeil tried to stop him, grabbing his arm.

Yoongi pushed him away.

'Whatever I can to give him a bit of calmness before you will use his "help"...' he said with disgust. 'Don't worry... I won't blow away your plan... I won't Gahyeon's and mom's safety...'

Taeil quietly breathed out with relief.

'Yoongs, I didn't want that... You don't understand...'

'Someone told me Holders that use Taboo are changing into animals. That's a huge misconception... No animal enjoys to see other beings in pain... It's so laughable, Taeil!' Yoongi laughed bitterly. 'You are scared to death of going insane out of separation syndrome, but you are not scared of going crazy without it... because of your own choices...'

Taeil stopped in his place, deadly pale.

'What an irony...' Yoongi said, reaching the house. He looked at Taeil one more time. 'Whoever your soulmate is... I pity them.'

Yoongi was walking upstairs still shaking from anger and fear...

What would happen if Woosan wasn't conscious enough to react?

San joined his steps with him, holding a cup with tea.

'How is he?' Yoongi asked.

'Confused as yesterday... It didn't affect him much... I guess what is going inside him is more shocking for him...'

Yoongi nodded, agreeing.

'Yoongs... he was trained in combat...' San said quietly. 'The way he reacted so fast when I grabbed him... He had to be trained... And he was trained well.'

'Yeah... I noticed it before too. He almost broke Kang's hand when he tried to stop him in the kitchen...'

'Will you talk with him?'

'What are the chances that we are bugged?' Yoongi asked.

'Considering no electronics in the house rule and their confidence they trapped us? I would say its 50-50.'

'I will try my luck then...'

'Do they suspect anything?'

'I don't try to be nice to them. I am playing their game but they don't know what I know... They will think I will try to turn him against them, but in fact it won't change much for their plans. They will try to use him whether he will agree or not...'

'I will check on Gahyeon. We will try to fix the window we broke...'

'Sleep at her or choose other room then...'

'Oh yeah, I forgot we are in Richie Rich's mansion...' San giggled.

'Yeah, so take advantage while you can...'

They walked to the room, where Wooyoung just brough Jungkook a towel to wipe his hair with. He looked at them.

'Thanks...' Jungkook said, looking at his hands, folding a towel.

San put a cup with tea on the bedside table and tilted his head to Wooyoung to walk out with him.

Yoongi stayed. He for a moment was looking at the lost boy, wondering what he should tell him.

50-50...

He walked closer and took a towel from his hands. He dropped it on his hair and started harshly wipe them.

Something clenched in Jungkook's heart when he felt those moves.

*A faint sound of his own giggles echoes in his head...*

Did someone done it for him before?

*A sweet feeling of care and happiness... a warm skin next to his... a sound of shower...*

It made him... miserable when the longing doubled.

He wanted to stop the other from the act when Yoongi threw the towel away and rolled up his sleeve, showing his forearm.

'What have they told you about this?' he asked quietly.

Jungkook's hand automatically went to the back of his right shoulder, where he felt a piece of metal.

'That I had this one I came here...' he answered.

Yoongi covered his arm, saying:

'You don't have to believe me, but think about this: there are only five people other than you in this house who have this. Me, Gahyeon, Wooyoung, San and my mother...'

Jungkook frowned.

'They said it helps them find soulmates when they are distraught by separation syndrome and get lost...'

'For sure it helps. It is a tracking device... Mapped to the specific place. When you leave the mapped area... it activates the explosive inside...'

Jungkook's eyes widened.

'Why?' he asked.

'Good question, right?' Yoongi smirked bitterly. 'We are prisoners here... For more than one reason. That's why you can't get out outside the fencing...'

Jungkook's eyes got empty.

'What would it change...' he said quietly. 'I don't have everything anymore...'

Yoongi was battling inside.

50-50.

'How well you can act?'

'Act?'

'Pretend.'

'I'm confused all the time. I don't have to pretend that...' Jungkook replied harshly.

Yoongi was looking at him for few long minutes.

'Come with me...' he said, quietly.

When they walked out Taeil was waiting in the corridor.

'Where are you taking him?' he asked.

'To mom. He hurt his feet... I have a first aid kit there...' Yoongi said without blinking an eye.

'I have one in the bathroom...'

'Do you have the tweezers there? He has something stuck in his foot. Will you take it out?'

'I don't have one...' he said and looked at Jungkook. 'Are you okay? We instructed the guards...'

'Yeah...' Jungkook looked down. 'Yoongi said they didn't know about me...'

Taeil look at Yoongi and nodded.

'Okay...' he sighed. 'Sorry for what happened...'

'Go to sleep. Too much drama for tonight...' Yoongi said, grabbing Jungkook's arm.

Jungkook was walking on his toes with one hand, when Yoongi pulled him.

Clever guy...

When they walked on the second floor, Jungkook said impressed:

'You lie fast...'

'You act accordingly...' you replied the same way.

'Who is Taeil?'

Yoongi was a bit hesitant to answer that, but in the end he said:

'My cousin...'

'And... you don't trust him?' Jungkook blinked, surprised.

'He gave me a tracking device that can blow me in the air... Is it strange not to trust him?'

'You have a point...'

Yoongi quietly opened the doors and entered.

'She is probably asleep... She sleeps a lot...' he said.

'Your mom?'

'Yeah...'

'What are we doing here then?'

'To show you the proof...'

'Proof of what...?' Jungkook was getting more and more confused.

Yoongi locked the doors to his mother's bedroom.

The bedside lamp was turned on, showering the room with gentle dimmed light. The woman on the bed was sleeping lightly. She was thin... Her skin looked like paper.

'Is she sick?' Jungkook asked.

'More than you think... She is better than she was a year ago, tho...' Yoongi said quietly and looked down. 'She lost her soulmate... 7 years ago.'

Jungkook looked at him shocked.

'For first months she was trying to hurt herself. To the point of trying to cut her veins out from her body... She was aggressive even for Gahyeon and me. Then she was crying... all the time... she was begging us to kill her to let her go...' Yoongi gulped. 'Then... she got silent... she was silent for 4 years... Laying like a doll... Being a body without a soul...'

'W-why are you telling me this...?' Jungkook's lips trembled.

Yoongi lifted his gaze at him slowly.

'Do you feel like that? Do you feel as if you want to kill everybody around and yourself? Do you need constant pain? Is there an anger you cannot tame?'

Jungkook's eyes become glossy.

'I feel... I'm drowning... The waves are covering me... with anger and sadness... I want to drown in the darkness... But every time I feel like giving up, and just don't fight the waves anymore... There is a thin thread that is pulling me up... from the void...' Jungkook said, shutting his eyes.

Yoongi made a step forward and leaned to Jungkook's ear.

'You feel like that... because your soulmate... is alive...'

Jungkook made a weak step back.

'How do you know that?' a faint whisper left his mouth. His heart was beating like crazy. Painfully and fast.

'Because if he would be dead, no matter what they would tell you, currently you would be a numb shell, not able to react to anything... Something went wrong in their calculations...'

'Whose?' Jungkook frowned.

'The same people that told you your family was killed in an accident.'

'What?'

'You don't have to believe me... I don't have anything to back up my words besides your state and my mother... So you will have to decide what is right and what is wrong... I can't help you here...' Yoongi said seriously.

Jungkook started to breathe heavily, but if there was a chance... it was true... Well it could also be a trick to make him feel obedient...

He looked at the woman on the bed and then at Yoongi.

'Tell me your version... and I will decide...' he whispered with determination.

Yoongi nodded.

'You were kidnapped 7 months ago from Seoul. They've kept you in a coma. They somehow blocked your memory or you lost it somehow during that time... Your family and friends were looking for you even here... That's how I know your face...'

Jungkook was looking at him with wide eyes.

Yoongi sighed.

'It will be even harder to believe in, but... you have a friend... his nickname is Chim... He loves to dance and sing. You are really close... you, your soulmate and him... Chim is my online friend.'

'That's a huge coincidence...' Jungkook started, but then together with Yoongi said: "But nothing is a coincidence...'

'Exactly...' Yoongi smirked a bit. 'Jungkook.'

Jungkook tilted his name.

'Your name. I only know this...'

'Jungkook?' Jungkook repeated still not feeling anything connected to this name. But his stomach wasn't rebellious when he heard it as it was acting when they were calling him "Koohyung". He gulped. 'Do you know anything else?'

'Do you believe me?'

'I don't know yet... But you give me a... strange feeling... As if I know you...' Jungkook frowned.

The corner of Yoongi's lips lifted a bit.

'Chim is my soulmate... Maybe that's why... But we didn't have the chance to meet... And now when they took all phones and electronica from here I can't inform him where you are...'

'Maybe that's the reason...' Jungkook said thoughtfully. 'What else do you know?'

'Not much...' Yoongi exhaled. 'You probably know someone whose name is Kim Namjoon. And... the fact that your friend is pervy, energetic, annoying, cute and caring little shit...'

Jungkook's eyes got cloudy.

But he started to think about himself as Jungkook... He wasn't thinking about himself as Koohyung even once. But he got used to this name when he heard it.

They both look at Handong's bed.

'You have a lot of things to think about...' Yoongi said.

'I don't have any other things to do...'

'Use the time well then... And look at yourself, carefully Jungkook... You were trained in combat. You have muscles... They did a lot to make you forget... because you are dangerous. Don't let them make a victim out of yourself... You are not one.'

Jungkook squinted his eyes.

'If what I feel is right... and they separated me with my soulmate... he is suffering right now...'

It was making him mad... The sheer thought of this possibility... It was making him furious...

Jungkook turned to the doors.

'You are right. I am not a victim... And he is not one either...'

Yoongi fastly turned to him.

'He?'

Jungkook stopped with his hand on the doorknob.

'What?'

'You said "he". How do you know that?'

Jungkook's hand involuntarily went to the necklace.

'I don't know... It was a... reflex...'

Yoongi smirked.

'Reflex that proves my point...'

Jungkook smirked in return.

'Probably...' he looked at Yoongi and softly said. 'Thank you... hyung.'

Yoongi shook his head.

'If this world wouldn't be fucked up... we would meet either way... don't thank me.'

Jungkook nodded.

'I have to think...'

'Don't cry too much...' Yoongi raised his eyebrow teasingly.

'I wasn't going to...' Jungkook walked out.

He was halfway on his way to his room, when his eyes got wet. A slow tears started to run down his face.

The relief was overwhelming. If it was a lie and this hope will kill him in the end...

He felt the pulling inside him. It was almost physical...

The longing got even stronger...

HE was there. Away from him...

And he was here...

With no way out...

**17th of April 2071, Seoul, Mountain House**

Taehyung was sitting on the stairs, on the porch of the Mountain House. He was looking at the crescent moon.

He was clenching and unclenching his fingers.

They were stiff from pulling a trigger.

He was still training with other weapons with the help of Siyeon, Bora and grandpa.

But the guns were now the most effective thing that he and Jimin could use. Now... when they both couldn't use any powers...

He was regaining his strength. And he wanted the time to run faster...

Two weeks... They were going to Daegu in two weeks...

He will be a step closer to HIM. A small step... but still... closer...

He felt a bit calmer and more determined lately...

As if the moon was not present fully, but in his crescent shape... Just like the one

in the sky.

But it wasn't an eclipse anymore...

He had the moonlight path to follow.

And the red thread that was holding him inside the void...

Yoohyeon and Dami sat on both sides of Taehyung.

Yoohyeon stretched her hand, with closed fist, to him. He opened his palm and she dropped a chocolate on it.

'Eat. You are still skinny...'

He unfolded the paper and without a word ate the sweet.

Yoohyeon put her head on his shoulder.

'You can't sleep?' Dami asked, joining her arm with Taehyung on the other side.

'Sleeping is not my favorite thing now... Besides... the moon is beautiful... as always...'

They were sitting in silence for a while, when a broken whisper left Taehyung's mouth:

'I miss him so much...'

Yoohyeon and Dami folded their arms with him desperately, trying to hold him above the edge of breaking.

'I miss him too...' Yoohyeon said, hiding her face in Taehyung's shoulder, when he shut his eyes.

'I don't miss him...' Dami choked out. 'When we will get him back I will wash his head off and kick his ass so hard, he won't sit for a month...'

'I will make him suffer too... I will force him to watch Glee with me...' Yoohyeon said. 'What will you do, Tae?'

Taehyung with closed eyes smiling painfully.

There were too many things he wanted to do...

Hold him. Hug him. Kiss him. Tell him...

'That's a secret...' he said finally, opening his eyes and letting himself be blind by

the moon.

**🎶Music tip: *"Once Again" Mad Clown, Kim Na Young* 🎶**

*Will I see you again?*

*I'm standing in front of destiny*

*That has passed me by again*

*Was it a dream that we couldn't wake from?*

*You're getting farther away and I couldn't tell you*

*Don't let me cry*

*You're a dream that'll disappear once I touch you*

*Like snow that melts*

*When I missed you, I became you*

*I didn't hold onto you*

*Because I thought you'd come back*

*I thought I'd see you again if I kept longing for you*

*The start and end of my feverish feelings*

*I'm standing at the start and end*

*Like an emergency light*

*I'm the only one with the light on in the darkness*

*No matter how much I think about it, the answer is you*

*But I'm writing the wrong answer in my heart*

*I don't wanna lose you*

*Be without you*

*Anymore*

---

A bit belated Happy Birthday Kim Taehyung <3333 💝💝🎂

Wonderful boy! Be always happy and in love with you Koo!❤🎂

How are you guys? Holding up?

BlairWitch91❤

# Chapter 52: Echoes

**7th of May 2071, Daegu**

Jungkook had a light sleep since he woke up from the coma. Or more like he didn't like to sleep most of the time. But usually, tired of thinking and fighting with his own mind to remember something... anything... he was falling into short naps during the whole day.

He rarely left the room, trying to decide which version to believe in.

But out of the two he heard... he simply hoped the version Yoongi told him was the right one...

Maybe it was a foolish hope... But out of the two - Taeil and Yoongi - he preferred savage, straight forward Yoongi, who definitely didn't try to get close to him on purpose.

And had too much to lose it seems.

Some parts of his story were hard to believe in... The online friend for example...

But wasn't fate always hard to believe in?

So for the last few days, basically since the incident near the gate, he rarely was coming out of the room. He was answering shortly, when Taeil or his friends were coming by. He was a bit more talkative with Yoongi, his sister or his friends, but still not open.

He wasn't against them. But if all this conspiracy theory of kidnapping was indeed true and he was 80% sure it was... he must have lulled Taeil's vigilance that he didn't suddenly get super close with Yoongi.

And he had to plan how to behave... to gain as much as he could from all this.

For him, right now, the most annoying think was the fucking tracking device in his back shoulder... That was the most convincing thing Yoongi had told him... Only five people had them... Because they wanted to keep them here. Even a sick person such as Yoongi's mom...

So Jungkook was thinking to the point of overthinking and questioning everything, even the mark on his chest... He was walking around the room because thinking about laying on the bed even for one more minute was making him sick.

Because even overthinking and being without a single point to hold on to and trust

was better than the moments after waking up from dreams.

He got used to those dreams about battles, death, blood with different people.

But waking up... still in half a sleep state when his body was making an unconscious moves was a torture.

He was waking up, automatically moving his hand to his waist, as if he wanted to put a hand on the arm that used to lay there...

He was dozing off and caughting himself carefully changing his position as if he didn't want to wake someone next to him...

He was waking up and his fingers were going to his stomach, stopping in the midair as if he was expecting the head to be pressed there...

The automatic, unconscious reactions of his muscles... before his mind was coming to reality... were reminding him constantly... that someone was there... and he was not here now...

So when his sleepy mind made his eyelashes flutter, he was again prepared for a heartbreak...

But tonight... it was different.

He woke up feeling he couldn't move or open his eyes... He was struggling to open them, scream or move... but he couldn't.

There was a presence in the room... Someone was around...

He forced himself to breathe deeply and focus on hearing...

When he steadied his breath, he heard an annoyed click of the tongue.

'Tsk! No fun...' he heard. 'You should panic a bit more... You know... I've almost missed you...' A creepy giggle. 'It was so boring without you around...' The sound of movement... just as if the air was moved a bit. 'When had we met last time? Was it 1943? 44? Oh, beautiful times... didn't have much to do then. People tend to kill each other without my help...' the voice said with nostalgia. 'But oh... good times, good times... I managed to accidentally get rid of so many interdependants then...'

Jungkook felt the bending on the bed as if someone laid casually next to him. He had a hard time gulping. Why was this presence... So terrifying? The more cheerful the words were... the more creepy it was...

'Awwww... I forgot You don't have any idea what I am talking about now... Such a pity...' the voice sighed. 'I didn't tell them to get rid of your memory... you know?

They did it by themselves... Honestly! I would prefer it if you would remember what you lost and couldn't do anything about it trapped here! But well, I will let my minions play and think they are doing what they want... They think you are a mass weapon, they can use!'

Another sarcastic giggle.

'I just wanted them to separate you... It's such a tasty, blissful feeling knowing you two soulmates are on the verge of madness... Suffering each minute... Being weak and helpless against fate...'

Jungkook felt the touch over his forehead, sliding through his nose to his lips.

The fear ran through his spine. Bone-freezing fear, which made his insides twist.

Every last piece of him was scared... So scared...

'You know...' the voice whispered. 'The only good thing my mothers did for you... is give you this little irritating protection... At first it was really annoying not being able to use my powers against your mind or soul... But soon after it turned out to be a challenge... I have centuries to come up with thousands of ways... how to make you two suffer...'

Jungkook couldn't breathe or think out of overwhelming fear...

Taehyung woke up covered in sweat. Not being able to breathe properly.

He was trembling...

Where was this fear coming from?

This suffocating panic?

His eyes widened, when he sat on the bed in realization.

KOO!

Inaudible scream in his mind was like thunder.

*No... Taehyung...* he told himself harshly. *Don't make him panic more... Calm him...*

He heard Jungkook's words, said to Jimin: you are two sides of the same coin...

He was heaving harsh, desperate breaths. Until the sudden anger and his own pathetic uselessness went away and he could only feel the fear...

Jungkook's panic started to decrease... He didn't know why, because his terrified mind was still there, screaming internally.

But his heart...

It calmed down...

'It's so thrilling you know... I can almost hear how you scream internally when the chain that binds you is broken...' the voice continued with a pleasurable voice.

*I'm with you...*

'Sometimes I think... my mothers made you play this fate game with me... so I won't be bored...'

*I'm still with you...*

'That's why you won't ever beat me... Chains, which are restraining you to reach the full unmeasurable power...'

*I'm always with you....*

'You know why Holders exist? They are like cork... Stopping the flow... They made them to stop Sealers from using the power...'

*Only you can decide what breaks you...*

'The feelings are stopping Sealers from hurting the ones that hold them back... What a mischievous plan, right? Best collar that could be out there...'

*And nothing can break us...*

'But I got rid of that... Broke the chain. Removed the collar...'

*Fear not...*

'You will think it was a dream so I will tell you... No Sealer in chains can win with me...'

*You are not alone...*

Jungkook felt the hand over his chest and it made him feel sick, but he was focused on the warmth. On the calmness his soul felt...

He couldn't recognize the words... But he could recognize the feelings. Safety... Protection...

His panicked mind calmed down.

'I will show all the Interdependants... they were stupid all those centuries... And when they will break... When they will start to use each other... When they will believe in the truth that they don't need each other... It will destroy them...'

The presence made a distance. Jungkook heard the swish of air in the room.

'Till then... I will play with you... You were always my favorite toy... '

The presence disappeared as unexpectedly as it appeared, leaving the last, lingering in the darkness:

'See you soon... whatever your name is this time...'

When the paralyze subsided. Jungkook slowly opened his eyes.

The fear. The panic... all those things faded away.

He looked at the ceiling and a lazy smirk appeared on his lips.

'Thank you so much... whatever-your-name-is, full of yourself asshole...'

He stiffly moved his hand to the necklace to squeeze it.

'You just confirmed my soulmate is not dead. Yoongi's version is real... The dreams I had are not accidental, you are a psychopath and... even if you can destroy my body you can't do a shit to my mind and soul.'

Jungkook giggled creepily.

'You have to use others to play with my mind... You should know dreams are a part of it too...'

Jungkook rolled to the side and hugged a pillow. He hid his face in it and couldn't stop the slow tear that ran down his cheek.

'You made a big mistake appearing here... You made him respond to me...'

He cuddled the pillow harder, trying to withstand the shivers.

*I'm never alone... Cause nothing can break us.*

When Taehyung felt nothing but his own feelings surfacing, he got up from the futon and started to walk around the dormitory in fury.

Jimin sleepily opened his eyes, and seeing Taehyung walking back and forth like a tiger in the cage, he woke up instantly.

'Fuck! FUCK! FUUUCK!!!!' Taehyung yelled suddenly, grabbed a pot with one of Siyeon's plants and threw it over the wall.

'TAE!?' Jimin jumped on his feet.

Taehyung shoved on the floor everything that was on the windowsill in rage. Pots, vases, gardening tools.

'TAEHYUNG!'

'He was so scared!!'

Jimin's eyes widened in shock.

'He was scared, Jimin!!'

Taehyung hit the wall with his fist.

'I couldn't do anything!!!' Another punch.

Jimin grabbed one of the small training bags and stood in front of Taehyung.

'Hit it!' he ordered.

Taehyung didn't think much. He started to punch the bag so hard, Jimin stumbled back.

Alarmed by the noises, Dragon and Hwasa ran inside the dormitory.

'What's happening?!' Jiyoung asked.

'He was so scared...' Taehyung said, through clenched teeth and angry tears filled his eyes.

Dragon looked at his wife.

'Bring weapons. We have to help him control his anger.'

Hwasa nodded and went back to the house.

Jimin didn't let his gaze leave Taehyung.

'Go on...' he encouraged him, breathing heavily. 'Don't restrain yourself...'

And Taehyung did.

Until his knuckles were bleeding. Until his jaw was hurting from clenching. Until his wrist was hurting from gripping the sword handle when he sparred with Jiyoung, then Jimin, then Jiyoung again.

Until his arms were too tired to lift the sword and his knees got weak.

When he dropped on the ground, breathing heavily, Jimin crouched down next to him.

'How much more?' he asked with a pained voice.

Jimin without a word embraced him with his arm. He didn't know the answer.

Nobody did...

**18th of May 2071, Seoul**

Taehyung zipped his bag and looked around his room. It still was strange to be here... In this room. Looking at his bed. At the window opposite to his, where only darkness was.

He put a little jar with two bears inside into his backpack with the most important things.

Jimin entered the room.

'Finished packing?' he asked.

Taehyung's eyes were stuck on the opposite balcony.

'Some things left...' he answered absentmindedly and moved to the balcony doors.

'Huh?' Jimin blinked, surprised, when Taehyung jumped over the railing. 'Aren't they clo...'

Taehyung pushed the doors and they opened with a quiet sound.

'They were never closed...' he said, sadly.

Jimin looked down and after a moment he followed him.

Taehyung looked around the room. Nothing has changed here. Time stopped. As if not even an hour had passed...

And it had been 240 days...

240 days of torture.

Jimin's eyes teared up, when he looked at familiar things.

Speakers. Heavy boots. Hoodies threw here and there...

Photos on the wall. He turned his gaze away when he saw them...

Jin and Namjoon hid all the photos in Kims house, because they were triggering Taehyung. Either it was sadness or anger...

He had those memories - stopped in time on the paper - carved inside his soul... There was no need to bring him more pain that was already there...

Taehyung moved to Jungkook's bed and took the bowl with floral carnations from there. He handed it to Jimin and started to look through Jungkook's desk. He moved some papers, and checked the drawers. Finally he took out the sketch book. He was looking at it for a while, before slowly opening it.

Jimin came closer and stood next to him.

'This is the first one...' Taehyung said, looking at the picture of two men by the lake, under the stars. One was touching the other's chest. The second man was cupping the other's face gently. 'Jeryn and Taegan...'

Taehyung flipped the page.

Two men with swords riding horses, inside the hundreds of warriors in armors.

'Troy, XII century BC...

Another page.

'Egypt... China...Here, we had met him the first time... Rome Empire...' Taehyung stopped for a moment, looking at the ancient city, swallowed by the lava from Volcano eruption. 'We tried to save them... Pompei...' he flipped the page. 'Babilon... Tarique and Jiyan... Remember?'

Jimin nodded, before the next page appeared. *Siege of Constantinople, 717*. He read on the bottom of the page, when Taehyung changed the picture.

'Genpei-kassen... XII century... Japan.' Taehyung said, and flipped the page. 'Scotland... 1314...' Taehyung stopped, looking at the drawing of three men by the fireplace. He frowned, thinking about something.

'What?' Jimin asked, trying to find in the picture something that would make him this thoughtful.

'We usually dream about each other... but there are rare flashbacks of other people with us... Different people... I was always so focused on his soul in dreams, that I just realized... we were never alone. There was someone out there next to us, each time... one-two people...'

'Does it matter?' Jimin looked at him.

'It does...' Taehyung touched the tall man's face in the picture. What was his name? He tried to dig this info from his memory... Yves? 'We met all of you before... separately... But never like that... Never together at once...'

Jimin's eyes widened.

'You have met me?'

'Not you. Your soul...' Taehyung flipped the page and continued to look through pictures. 'Mexico. XVI century... The Spanish were merciless during the conquista. We didn't stand a chance to rescue our people...'

Jimin's eyes were getting wider and wider, each time Taehyung flipped the page.

'India... XVII century...' Taehyung smirked. 'We were pirates... Fighting with the East India Company. Those fucker thought they could just invade some country like that and destroy the culture that had thousands of years...'

'You were a pirate?!'

'In another life...' Taehyung answered quietly and flipped the page. 'American Civil War, 1863... And lastly... 1944... Second World War... Poland.'

'That's a short period of time...'

'We had never lived long...' Taehyung sighed and checked the loose pages.

They were drawings from their time together. Drawings of Taehyung. Of parents. Of Red String. Of grandparents...

He closed the notebook and took it with him.

'You are not taking anything else?' Jimin asked, surprised.

'I want him, not his things...' Taehyung replied and got back to his room the same way as he entered. 'Aunt Siyeon and Bora will stay here when we leave.'

Taehyung packed a sketch book to his backpack and they heard the whining behind the doors. Jimin moved to open them and Bam ran inside, moving his butt in excitement. He went directly to Taehyung, who crouched down next to his puppy.

'Ready for the journey, Bamie?' he asked, scratching the dog behind his ears. Bam started to lick his wrist in confirmation. 'We are going to take your dad back...'

Bam instantly jumped on him more, and Taehyung cuddled his face to his fur.

'He will be so proud to see what you learned...' Tae mumbled.

Jimin agreed. Bam was training together with them all this time. He wasn't scared of gunshots. He was a clever pup, following the commands, not leaving Taehyung's side, at least Tae ordered him otherways. He was like a pup-member of Red String.

'We are going in two days... we have everything?' Jimin asked.

Taehyung nodded and got up, he whistled at Bam and they went downstairs.

Namjoon was standing in the living room looking at the news. He turned off the volume, seeing them.

'What's going on?' Taehyung asked.

'UN and NATO. They demanded from the Korean government to open the mediation and stopped the military movements. They threaten them to start the restrictions...'

'But Daegu, who declared war...'

'Deagu is not an approved country in international opinion. That's the point. They want to stop another domestic war...'

'But will they? Or they are just talking?' Jimin asked, frowning.

'USA and half of the countries in Europe closed their air space for Korean planes... It can halt the war for some time and make them talk...'

'The meditations were not effective till now...' Taehyung pointed out.

'There is a new UN resolution from last year. It contains that paragraph that Interdependants in all countries should be recognized as a minority of the nation's. It should guarantee them the respect of their traditions, language if they would use a different one then the official one, etc. They would also have special organizations that are protecting minorities rights... It could work... Not change much in general, but change something. Slowly. Give us a bit more protection and make people more aware. Make the law system not so eager to treat us differently. They would be scared of being accused of racism and violating minority rights...'

'It's a good start...' Jimin admitted.

'If it will come to life... it would be...' Namjoon sighed. 'You finished preparations?'

Taehyung nodded and they went to Namjoon's office.

On Namjoon's desk maps were open.

'We will take the 416 through Gangwon, when we are near the coast we will move through the forest as long as we can cross the river....' Taehyung trailed the route with his finger.

'Will we get to Uljin by forest roads? It's a mountainous area...' Namjoon frowned.

'We will manage. It's better even if it will take longer... We don't want to use the main roads anyway... It will be even safer in the mountains. Rare chances of getting caught. Any border guard patrol is a danger that they will write us up....'

'Yeonbin and Minsung would be waiting in the meeting point with plates from Daegu. We don't want to be suspicious, driving cars with Seoul's plates.' Jimin added.

'How many cars?'

'At least three. Yoohyeon and uncle Kai have to take all their equipment... So we can't take much more things...' Jimin said.

'Yoohyeon will go with her parents in the first one. You and Jimin's parents in the

second one. Jimin, Dami, me and Bam with the third one.' Taehyung added. 'Is our moving disguise prepared?'

'Officially we are moving to Busan, because I will write a book there... Kai faked Jin's new medical clinic. Baekhyun, Chanyeol, Kai and Jenie would be opening their new company unit there, involving both of their fields.'

Jimin sighed.

'So in two days?'

Taehyung's eyes were fixed on the wall around Daegu, he drew on the map.

'Yeah, in two days we will be one step closer...'

**20th of May 2071, Daegu**

Jungkook woke up, sleepily sitting up on the bed, being absolutely sure he should walk out...

He blinked, frowning.

Walked out what?

But the automatic reaction and the conviction he felt in his unconscious mind, the way his body reacted...

Had he had a dog?

He sighed heavily. There was no point in torturing himself, wondering about this...

It wasn't the first thing a reflex like that happened to him. Once he woke up and started to do exercises, until he realized he didn't know why or how he knew how to do them. How to make specific moves... He was just doing them. His muscles were acting on his own as it was a routine for them.

It was few minutes past 5 am.

He used to get up at this hour, he didn't know why... But each time he did, he was

standing in front of the window and waited for the sunrise. He was so attached to this gentle light...

It was bringing him a bit of comfort alongside the sting in his heart.

Why?

There were answers for that for sure. Answers he couldn't reach...

When the spectacle of the rising sun was over, he did what he used to do in this unknown house since the visit of a creepy night guest. He didn't know anything about it, but somehow knew his presence.

Jungkook was careful. He rarely was leaving the room when Taeil and his friends were around. Sometimes he purposely spent some time with them, not talking about anything, but listening carefully.

On the other hand when they were leaving the house or at night he was freely joining Yoongi, Wooyoung, San or Gahyeon in whatever they were doing at the moment.

They were nice. They tried to stay cheerful and composed in all this situation... He let them talk about themselves. Not that Yoongi was talkative... but he didn't try to get rid of him. He just let Jungkook sit near or help him.

So Jungkook was eagerly waiting for the moments when Taeil's bunch were leaving the mension.

This time they left past noon. He walked to the kitchen.

Yoongi was preparing a coffee in a sweatpants, still with closed eyes.

'Have you just woke up, hyung?' Jungkook asked.

'Yeah...' Yoongi barked.

'Why?'

'Because when I wake up late I don't have to look at Taeil's face...'

Jungkook snorted.

'And you?'

'Around 5?'

Yoongi, with half open eyes, looked at him with a shocked face.

'Why?! Why would a sane person do that?' he whined.

'To see the sun waking up...' Jungkook said automatically, reaching for a clean glass to the cupboard. But his moves halted in the middle.

*Why do you want to go outside?*

*To see the sun waking up...*

What was this sweet feeling? He heard the voice in his head...

Yoongi looked at Jungkook, who was looking as if he was frozen in time. With wide eyes he was staring in space.

'Hey, are you okay?' Yoongi asked, grabbing his arm.

Jungkook blinked.

'Y-yeah...' He started to rub his right wrist with his left hand.

Yoongi's eyes dropped there.

'You often do that...' he said. 'Is it hurting?'

Jungkook looked at his hands.

'No. It's just a reflex...'

'As if something was supposed to be there?' Yoongi asked.

'I guess...' Jungkook confirmed sadly and finally took the glass.

'What are you doing when you are waking up at this inhuman time?' Yoongi asked.

'Mainly... thinking, exercising...' Jungkook shrugged. 'Wondering why the fuck some unknown people would kidnap me, is my soulmate suffering and what the fuck is my power so some faceless voice would try to play with my mind...'

Yoongi looked at him. He knew what happened, as Jungkook told him that he believes him and they should look for something to use for their own advantage... That's why usually Jungkook was a good one to spend some time with Taeil... he could hear something and they were the ones that tried to get on his good side.

He sighed.

'Come... I will show you where the books are...' he said, leading him through the house. 'You will get crazy only thinking and exercising... And if you want you can spar with Woosan or Gahy...' he squirmed. 'But be careful around her...'

'I won't hurt her...'

'I didn't mean that...' Yoongi made a pitiful face. 'She is merciless...'

They entered a small room that was changed into a library with a fireplace and couches.

'The second door leads to my father's office.'

Jungkook looked at the bookshelves.

'Here are crime stories... Here are romances... Political bullshit...' Yoongi was pointing to the shelves. 'History books... and Interdependants' books...' he pointed to the closed glass cabinet.

'I don't know if I like to read...'

'Trust me. If you didn't - you will start. It's better to follow characters' problems than thinking about your own...'

Jungkook's eyes followed his words, but his eyes stopped above the fireplace. Two crossed swords were placed there.

He felt the itching in his fingers.

'What are those?' he asked.

'Huh? Oh, you mean swords?' Yoongi shrugged. 'My father got them from some rich investor as a gift.'

'Can I?' Jungkook asked, absolutely tempted by the shining of the steel.

'Sure. They have been there for years...'

Jungkook moved to the fireplace, grabbed and took out both of the swords. His fingers embraced both of the handles. He weighs the swords in his hands.

'They are light and blunt...' he frowned.

'They are just decorations...' Yoongi said, sipping his coffee.

Jungkook made a swing with one sword and turned swiftly, protecting his back with the other.

Yoongi's lips parted.

He was observing how the others swiftly danced by himself with swords. Fighting with invisible opponents. Making cartwheels, back flips, turns and launches in the

narrow space of the room.

He finally stopped, looking at the swords thoughtfully, not even breathing heavily. He lifted his eyes at Yoongi.

'Have you ever used them?'

'No.'

Jungkook threw one of the swords to him, and Yoongi, surprised, grabbed it clumsily with his free hand, almost spilling his coffee, held in the other one.

'You should.' Jungkook said mysteriously.

'Why?' Yoongi frowned.

'Do you have anything better to do?'

'Reading. Writing? Playing guitar... Self-pity session?'

Jungkook looked at him with a done face.

'Seriously if you want to practice your swordsmanship tell Woo or San... or Gahy, they will be delighted... Me? I am a couch person... I wouldn't even practice combat if it wouldn't be necessary...'

Jungkook made a forward stab towards Yoongi and the only thing the other could do was to stop the blade with the second sword.

He dropped the mug with coffee.

'What the hell?!'

'It has to be you...' Jungkook said, looking at him seriously.

'Why?'

'I don't know the answer to this question, Hyung... But as you said... I know your soulmate... And I am trained in combat and swordsmanship... So maybe you should trust my guts as I trusted them with you?'

Yoongi gulped. The boy who looked most of the time like a lost puppy, absolutely didn't resemble one now... There was something... in him. Something strange and powerful.

And familiar in a way...

He dropped his eyes on the coffee mess on the floor.

'You will clean here later...' he ordered, before grabbing the handle of the sword in the right way. 'Okay, kid... I will trust you.'

**21st of May 2071, Taebaek Mountains, Passage between Gangwon and Uljin Provinces**

They left Seoul at different times, taking different routes. Kai, Jin and Taehyung were driving. Jennie, Chanyeol and Jimin were responsible for communication. Yoohyeon, Baekhyun and Namjoon and Dami were in any case their offensive force.

The had to use the ways to reach Uljin, the place further from the city of Daegu but inside the Republic, that would allow them crossing the river, which were the border with Korea earlier. When they reached Taebaek Mountains and chose the forest roads that were still close to the main routes, they stopped and waited for others.

'Connection here will be shitty...' Kai said, checking something on his phone. Don't count on GPS, they can go crazy.

'We have maps...' Dami said and gave everyone a map with points on it, where to turn.

'It will take much more time than normally... I will be checking if anyone is around...' Bakehyun said and got back inside the car.

'We are sticking close...' Taehyung said to the rest.

'We will drive first... Baekhyun will be checking with echolocation if there is nothing in front of us...' Jin said.

'Ok, we are moving!' Namjoon said and they got back to the cars.

The forest roads were treacherous and uneven. Sometimes so narrow they had to

maneuver the cars by millimeters to trees. One or two times Yoohyeon and Dami had to make a passage with ice through collapses in the ground, breaking the paths.

It was even worse when the darkness embraced the forest. They had to slow down even more.

Three times they had to stop to remove broken trees from the way, they were doing all this in the light of the cars and flashlights.

The road through the mountains took them half of the day and the whole night.

They were tired, sleepy and on their toes even when the roads in the forest started to look as used more often and much more prepared to lead somewhere...

Just before dawn they reached the meeting point, but nobody was there...

'Maybe they haven't reached yet?' Chanyeol suggested through the mindlink, as nobody got out of the cars.

'Nah, they should be here since evening...' Dami frowned.

'Wait... I have something...' Baekhyun said. 'One kilometer away... South-west. One car. Four people...'

'It's probably them...' Taehyung said and started the car.

'If Minho can't read coordinates properly I will fucking educate him forcefully!' Dami gritted her teeth.

'Calm dawn, babe...' Yoohyeon giggled.

'Language...' At the same time Jin said sleepily, more on reflex than being really angry.

'I'm 23...' Dami burked, sulking for being scolded.

'And I am...' Jin stopped himself from confirming his age. 'Nevermind...'

Navigating by Baekhyun they reached the forest meadow by the next hill. They stopped in the distance and Taehyung blinked once with car headlights.

For a moment the other car was absolutely silent... Then all the headlights, other lights, blinkers, started to dance as if the whole disco was taking place inside it.

Taehyung pressed his lips tightly.

'Yup... it's those idiots...' Dami sighed.

Jimin giggled from the backseat.

'Look how much they've missed us...'

'Bam... you are allowed to bite them...' Taehyung said lightly and they drove closer.

They got out of the car. Where Minho, Han, Yeonjun and Soobin were already waiting for them.

Yoohyoen squealed loudly, jumped out of the car and ran to Soobin.

'Binnie!!!!' she screamed and he picked her up, squeezing her tightly.

Dami and Yeonjun looked at each other and sighed. Yoohyeon and Soobin had a literal bromance... Then Yeonjun smiled and embraced Dami with his arm.

'Hi...' he whispered, stucking his forehead to her temple.

'Hi...'

Jimin was currently squeezed between Minho and Han.

'Jiminie!! You are as fluffy as always!' Han giggled, rubbing his nose on Jimin's hair.

'Idiots! How many times I have to tell you! I won't have a threesome with you!! Let me go, perverts!'

Chanyeol laughed out loud, but Baekhyun just rolled his eyes.

Bam started to run, barking and jumping between them, hearing the loud voices and laughs.

The presence of Jungkook's and Taehyung's dog around made the four boys suddenly get tense. It meant only one thing...

Their gazes traveled to the person standing next to the car, with his hand in his pockets, looking at them with a bit of embarrassment, not knowing how to react.

They knew he would come, but they were afraid to see the skinny, empty shell of their friend again. A ghost of someone they knew...

When they saw Taehyung... in shape... tired, sad, but standing and looking at them with emotions in his eyes, not just dark wells...

Taehyung looked at them. Dark hair... As Jimin said... This gesture was still moving for him. Till they will find HIM, there will always be a dark part of their

souls.

'You look good, guys...' he said, quietly.

Yeonjun gulped, and walked to him, without thinking, his arm embraced Taehyung's neck and pulled him closer.

'Jeeze... you scared the shit out of me, Tae...' he breathed out.

Taehyung hesitantly lifted his arms, until he finally embraced him. Beside Jimin and Dami - his oldest friend.

Soobin was right behind him.

'Hyung...' he said, hugging him.

'You look badass...' Taehyung said.

Soobin giggled shyly, and moved because Han was already patting his back.

Han threw himself on Taehyung, saying:

'If I am so happy seeing you, then I will fucking cry for a week when I will see Jungkook!' he said, squeezing Taehyung hard.

All boys stiffed a bit hearing him, not knowing how will Taehyung react on the name, but Tae just moved and tagged on a choker on Han's neck. He looked at Minho.

'You had finally put a leash on him?'

Minho snorted.

The rest started to welcome the parents, but Minho stayed in front of Taehyung. He stretched his closed fist to him.

Taehyung frowned and opened his palm. His friend put something on it.

'I fixed them...' Minho said quietly.

Taehyung's eyes widened when he looked at Jungkook's couple bracelet and the red string one.

He lifted his eyes at Minho.

'Thank you...' he whispered and gulped hard.

Minho nodded and patted his arm.

The Red String stood in front of Taehyung.

'So?' Han asked. 'Jimin said... you can feel him... Is it true?'

The rest looked at Taehyung with hope in their eyes. For the first time in a while on Taehyung's lips a faint smile appeared.

And it was a confirmation as much as his words:

'I can feel him...'

**1st of June 2071, Daegu**

The more time Jungkook spent in Min's mension the more he didn't like Taeil and his bunch and the more he felt connected to Yoongi and his little family.

Not to mention he had this strange premonition, while sparring with them or training with them swordsmanship that he did it before with someone.

The presence of Gahyeon also reminded him of someone...

There were no more visits from the strange presence and he almost was mad at it...

It seemed when he was in danger or scared... he could feel his soulmate. He yearned for it. He missed it, even if it was just delusions of presence...

It made him calmer, more than reflexes or dreams he had. Those were making the loneliness and longing unbearable...

So he focused on the things he could - on training with Yoongi, San, Wooyoung and Gahyeon. That somehow changed into him teaching them. He didn't know how... but he was used to giving advice in martial arts...

The things he hated the most were "aunt" Hyerim and Dasol's visits. But he used them to try to see through them. Currently Wi Hyerim was first on his list to kill if

he ever had a chance...

And Dasol... after a few times that he saw her. He started to think that she is mentally unstable or she is a religious fanatic... But what was the religion she believed in? He could only pray his suspicions were wrong. She was looking at him as if he was a box with golden coins inside...

He was hardly trying not to be scared of her...

It was a quiet afternoon and Taeil was there, so Jungkook was sitting in the room with a history book about *Eadar-eisimeileach* from Yoongi's library. But suddenly he heard a melody in the house.

He frowned and walked out of the room. He reached the living room were the music wasn't so hearable.

Taeil and the rest were talking in the living room.

'What's this sound?' he asked them.

'Oh, Yoongi is playing piano...' Taeil shrugged.

'Can I go?' he asked.

'You like music, Koo?' Yein asked, smiling nicely.

Jungkook instantly turned to her with squinted eyes, erratic heartbeat, feeling nauseous, wanting to throw her on the wall and hear her screams.

'DON'T CALL ME THAT!!' he spitted in rage, through clenched teeth, breathing heavily. 'DO YOU HEAR ME?! NEVER CALL ME THAT!!!'

Kand got up from his chair.

'Hey, calm down... Okay... We understand...'

Gahyeon walked out of the kitchen.

'What have you done to him again?' she asked, moving fast to Jungkook.

Jungkook's lips were trembling, cold shivers were running down his spine.

'We just tried a nickname for him... and I guess he didn't like it...' Taeil said calmingly to Gahyeon. 'Take him to Yoongs, okay? He wanted to listen to music...'

Gahyeon glared at them and put her hand on her shoulder.

'Yoongi took mom to the music room... I will show you...' she said gently, noticing

how Jungkook's hand went to the necklaces instantly.

When they were on the second floor, Gahyeon whispered:

'I'm sorry... I'm sorry it happened to you...'

'It's okay...' Jungkook took a deep breath. 'It's not your fault...'

'Maybe it is...' she said sadly. 'When I was a kid... I was attacked. My dad... wanted to protect me my whole life... He built a school. It triggered people. They killed him... Mom got sick... The war started... Yoongi couldn't go to university... He couldn't tell his soulmate he is one for him to not drag him in this mess...' Gahyeon's eyes filled with tears. 'You were kidnapped and separated from your soulmate...'

Jungkook stopped her in the middle of the corridor.

'It's not your fault.' he said sternly. 'Of course your father wanted to protect you... That's what fathers do...' he added sadly.

Gahyeon tilted her head.

'Your dad is not dead...' she assured him. 'I am sure he is still looking for you...'

Jungkook smiled a bit.

'Yeah... What is hyung playing?' He changed the topic.

'You need to ask him... He is composing a lot...'

Jungkook stood in the doors to the room. Handong was sitting on the armchair with closed eyes and a light smile, while Yoongi was sitting by the piano, swiftly moving his fingers through the keyboard.

He looked at Jungkook and beckoned him with his head.

Gahyeon sat on the floor, resting her back on his mother's legs, and Jungkook sat next to Yoongi.

The melody changed to another one. Finally Yoongi stopped playing, but Handong weakly lifted her head.

'One more...' she whispered.

Yoongi smiled a bit as if he was happy for every word she spoke. He started to play, but she shook her head slowly.

'No... other...'

'You don't like this one?' Yoongi frowned and started another one. Handong was still shaking her head.

'Your...' she finally said.

'Mine?' Yoongi frowned. 'You mean...' he played few notes. 'This?'

Handong smiled.

Yoongi continued to play. When the song continued, Jungkook for a moment was listening, the more notes passed, the more bittersweet feeling he was getting.

He started to hum the melody, and Yoongi looked at him shocked.

'I know this...' Jungkook said. 'I heard this before...'

'That's not possible...' Yoongi denied automatically, but a second later a surprised, small smile appeared on his lips. 'Actually it is... Only my soulmate and mom heard it. And he recorded it... with the help of his friends... It's called... Serendipity...'

'How appropriate...' Jungkook smiled slightly too.

'*Jeon...*'

Distracted Yoongi heard his mother, but wasn't focused enough to catch the word. He looked at Gahyeon.

'What did she say?'

Gahyeon made confused face, but repeated:

'Something like Jeon?'

'Jeon?' Yoongi frowned and shrugged, he looked at Handong. She still had a faint smile on her lips. But his eyes widened when he noticed her finger was pointing at Jungkook. He pointed at him too, and asked: He?'

Handong nodded.

'Jeon...' Yoongi mumbled the name under his nose few times, before he turned to Jungkook with wide eyes. 'I know who your father is!' he whispered - screaming. 'Kim Namjoon and Jeon Hoseok! Jeon Hoseok is your father!'

Jungkook's eyes dropped on his lap. The lack of any reaction for his own name was depressing... His father's name was Hoseok? He tried to smile even a bit.

'And I know who your mother is!' Yoongi realized. 'I saw her on TV at a press

conference last year! Mr Kim was there too! Wait... her name... Jeon.... Minho? Minji! Jeon Minji! She works for the Military Organization of Interdependants... And if you know them... Mr Kim... husband's... was his name... Seokjin? They were in the hospital after dad's death and at the funeral too! Mom and dad visited them just before, when they were in Seoul... She had to recognize you!'

Jungkook gulped and looked at Yoongi with shining eyes.

'I'm sorry, hyung...' he whispered. 'I don't remember...'

Yoongi's eyes widened, he shook his head.

'I didn't mean to...'

'I believe you... I just don't know those names...' Jungkook said shakily, with teary eyes. 'I just have reflexes... sometimes there are voices and feelings without faces or context... I tried! I swear...'

Yoongi didn't know what to do. So he just grabbed Jungkook's nape and pressed his forehead to his arm.

'I'm stupid. I'm sorry.' Yoongi whispered. 'It's not your fault you don't remember... To be honest I'm impressed you can cope with yourself so well... ' he fastly let go of him. 'I will play some more, okay?'

Jungkook nodded.

'I'm sure You were helping Chim in recording it...' he said quietly and started to play Serendipity again. As he had done with Chim distraught after Jungkook's kidnapping blabbering about stupid shit, he quietly started to blabber about Chim this time. 'He is calling you and your soulmate "his babies"... His tongue is inappropriate in too many ways... They should put some blockade on his phone with emojis usage limitation... I swear!'

Jungkook sniffed and looked at Yoongi's fingers, which were playing a gentle melody, he heard more than ones in his life, and made him recollect an echo of a familiarly unfamiliar angelic voice...

**5th of June, Uljin in the Republic of Daegu**

Minji and Hoseok reached Uljin after two weeks in Andong. Uljin was their hidden base. The safest one. It was an abandoned guesthouse in the mountains. But they started to look through safety routes and discover safeties Ryu organized. First in Yeongyang then in Andong. Getting closer and closer to Daegu itself.

THey found Ryu's people. They checked three safeties with separated soulmates and questioned them to get their view on the situation.

They started to organize a second base in Andong now.

Hoseok and Minji, seeing Jin and Namjoon almost started to cry. Baekhyun and Chanyeol were laughing at them, but they had similar reactions.

Red Alert was reunited with Kai and Jennie as backup.

Since they came here almost 4 months ago boys and Hoseok have worked hard on restoring the canalisation, water supply and electricity in the guesthouse, whenever they were not on their outside missions. It was a huge place. With 3 floors and a lot of rooms. It had to be a wonderful place for mountain lovers before war happened and Daegu was separated from the rest of the country.

Minji was washing strawberries in the kitchen. She was nagging Hoseok to stop on their way to buy them... She washed each one carefully.

She hoped someone would carry it to Tae...

She didn't see him... He was in Uljin city with Minho and Dami, when they arrived...

She was tired. She should go to sleep... but she really wanted to do this simple thing for Taehyung. Even if he won't know she did it...

She really wanted to see him... At least him...

Someone entered the kitchen.

'Can you give it to Tae? I'm going to sleep in a minute...' She said, not turning back, not even knowing who she asked it from.

There was silence in the kitchen for a moment. Before she heard a whisper:

'Mom....'

She froze, hearing this deep voice and this word she hadn't heard for more than 8 months. Her head hung low, when she pressed her palm to her trembling lips.

'Mom... I'm sorry...' she heard.

She shook her head and turned around fast, she pulled Taehyung into her arms.

'There is nothing you should be sorry for...' she sobbed, hugging him, hard. 'You were right... I should have protected him...'

Taehyung had to bend to press his forehead to her arm, when his arms wrapped around her tiny posture.

The thinking Jungkook said to him, when he was flying to Japan was haunting him: *You will take care of our parents.*

He should have done the same... That was his job when Jungkook was away. Take care of their parents. He failed him.

He shook his head too. He allowed himself for this few tears he was holding back constantly.

'I promised you I will protect him... And I didn't...' he choked out, and his voice broke.

'Honey...' she cupped his cheeks. 'You were four...'

Taehyung shut his eyes.

'I was making this promise each fucking day for 20 years... And I failed...'

Minji gulped, blinked and more tears dropped on her cheeks.

'Baby... you didn't fail him. Till you are here... he is holding up. Okay? You know he is... We are trying to get to him... But you can be sure he is trying to get to us too. You know... nothing will stop Jungkook from getting to you.'

Taehyung sniffed, cuddling more to her.

'Wh-what is this c-crying session of the l-leaders?' Hoseok sniffed too, standing in the doorframe. His eyes were filled with emotional tears when he saw Taehyung in good shape and Minji, who was slowly healing the wound left by him in her heart. "I am the crybaby of this household... Why is nobody hugging me?'

Minji beckoned him with her palm and he back hugged Taehyung, closing him in the sandwich with Minji.

When Taehyung calmed down, with his cheek still placed to Minji's shoulder like a baby, he whispered:

'He is okay... I can rarely feel his fear or anger... But I can feel him...' he whispered.

He knew what this information meant to Minji and Hoseok. The same thing it meant to him. It was like a confirmation... Jungkook was there.

Alive.

And they were here.

Getting closer to him.

---

Ufff... 😩

I don't think I will manage to close this book in 10 chapters... 😣

There is a paragraf (the one about history through ages) that took me 4 hours to write... I had to reeducate myself 🤦‍♂️because I lost my historical tables and boards.

But I finally caught up with updates!

I was crying so much at Minji and Tae's moment... 😭😭

BlairWitch91 💝

# Chapter 53: Taboo

**10th June 2071, Republic of Daegu**

*We will not yield.*

*We will not be fooled by promises as before.*

*We are grateful to the UN and NATO for acting in favor of the Interdependents. We hope it will change the world.... At its own pace. But until the Korean Government withdraws the troops across the river and leaves the border towns where they are subjected to senseless and baseless attacks day after day.*

*We demand the withdrawal of the Army. And when minority rights are realistically enacted into South Korean law.... When we see actions not words, the Republic of Daegu will return to Korea.*

*Until then... we will be at war.*

Statement of Min Kyung, the President of Daegu

**13th June 2071, Andong Province**

Red Alert's second base in Andong was a small wooden house in the forest. They were using it basically to sleep, between moving through the main cities in the Republic.

Taehyung, Minji and Minho one after another entered the skyscraper with hundreds of normal apartments for normal people. It took Minji and Hoseok 2 months to trace and get in contact with Ryu's people. And they finally pinpointed this place.

They knocked on the doors on the 10th floor. A short woman opened the door and looked at them calmly but consciously.

'How can I help you?' she asked.

'My name is Jiu.' Minji started, smiling friendly. 'Can we talk?'

'About what?' She barricaded the door with her whole body, as if she didn't want to let them in.

'Something you don't want to talk about in the corridor, when everybody can hear us...' Minji said.

'Then excuse me, but...'

Taehyung fastly took off his glove and showed her his mark.

'Please...' he whispered. 'We want to help... and we need help.'

She was looking for a moment at the mark. Then at Taehyung. Then at Minji.

'My son... is missing...' Minji said quietly. 'We just want to talk...'

She hesitantly turned her head, and exclaimed:

'Girls! Go to your room!'

'What?! Why!?'

'Now! I will call you!'

There were no additional protests. Just fast, almost panicked moves and doors closing sounds.

'Come in...' the woman said and moved from the doors. 'Just speak quietly. Girls are barely 17... I don't want them to panic.'

She looked at Taehyung.

'Who are you and what do you want?'

'You know Song Ryu? You were in his main squad, right?' Minji asked.

'How do you know that?' the woman whispered, shocked.

'We met a few of your people. And few of the people you rescued...'

'It should be a secret...' she started to shake her head.

'Bang Yongguk. Ryu's father. We know all the routes you organized to save people from Daegu.' Minji explained.

'Bang Yongguk? The CEO of ICI? He is Song's father? And who the fuck are you people!?'

'Military Organization of Interdependants...' Minjis said.

'MOI?! How did you come here?'

'Quietly.' Taehyung answered. 'According to your friends you were close with Ryu. We need information.'

'Now? What took you so long?' she asked reproachfully.

Minho frowned at the accusation, but Minji answered calmly:

'We worked from the other side... Our units were around. Till the end of the war we were here too.'

'And you? What took you so long?' Taehyung asked, looking at her. 'You were in the Army... working with them, right? And now you are here? Why?'

The woman looked at him and sighed.

'Lets sit...' she said. 'My name is Naeun.'

She led them to the small living room.

'Me and my soulmate volunteered to ISA, when the Rebellion started. We wanted to protect... Till Dokhyun was leading we trusted him. He never let us do anything shameful. Then the war started... and Inho was leading. It was hell. But we... understood Sealers and Holder who wanted to help. We didn't judge them... But then... ' she shook her head. 'Hajun and Joryoung came. And even in the state of emergency... They were taking people with separation syndrome away from their families. And it was just the beginning... When Ryu came, he opened our eyes. And we started to take risks, to take anybody out of Daegu, before they will be faster... Then it got even more... scary. We got to know a person... Her name was Ren. She gave us lists. Lists of targets... Soulmates with dangerous powers.'

'And after Ryu disappeared?'

'We were working for two more months. Ren's friends helped us to get out girls...' she pointed to closed doors. 'There were the last ones. They can use hypnosis. Their parents stayed in Daegu...' she smiled sadly. 'In October... We lost Ren. She disappeared. We couldn't get any more info. So we left Daegu... till we could. We had to. We had to keep the people we saved alive. We relocated them and hid them in different places. But we had to supply them, help them blend in with the surroundings. And teach them how to help each other and take care of separation syndrome...'

'We understand.' Minji comforted her.

Naeun nodded and looked at Taehyung.

'Is it true? The sign?'

'As true as yours,' he said.

'They are telling: you are legendary heroes...'

'Not really.' Taehyung shook his head. 'We just have some freaky powers. And we are fighting with something even more powerful...'

'Let me guess... This *something powerful* is here in Daegu?'

'Most likely...'

'And Hajun and Joryoung are working for him, hurting interdependants?'

'That is our guess.'

'Will you deal with them?'

'As soon as I will find my Sealer. I will...' Taehyung said coldly.

'What do you mean?' her eyes widened.

Because neither Minji nor Taehyung were able to answer her, Minho said quietly:

'They kidnapped him last year... We need to find him.'

'I'm so sorry...' Naeun choked out.

'We are not here to play. We are not here to help... This time we are here to deal with the shit around.' Minji said harshly. 'We need people that will go against the Army of the Republic in its current form. And we will start with rescuing the places when they are keeping separated soulmates... Do you know any?'

'Most of them are in Daegu. They want to keep them close... On the outside of the city there are just three we know about. We don't know how many more are out there.'

'When we will reach the first one... we will make sure to get to know about the other ones...' Taehyung said dangerously.

'You should wait for my soulmate. He will be here soon... The three places outside of Daegu are: Chilgok, Gunwi and Chengdo. He will give you details... I have to make few phone calls... We have to be prepared. We will help... Can we be in contact?'

'Of course. If anything... contact this person. The phone is secured.' Minji spelled the numbers.

'Whose phone is this?'

'Kim Namjoon's.'

'You mean... THIS Kim Namjoon?!' Naeun said. 'The one from the press conference?! The one from UN?!'

'Yes...' Minji frowned, unbothered by her excitement.

'Why is he here?!'

'He is part of ICI and MOI. He is my father...' Taehyung said calmly.

'Oh my god! You need help! We will help! This guy was the only person that really tried to do something good in the right way! We will help....' she nodded.

**2nd of July 2071, Daegu**

Jungkook was training Wooyoung, San, Gahyeon and Yoongi everyday for more then a month. It was something he could focus on being trapped here. And it was bringing him comfort. As if it was something he knew well and was used to. Being in a group and training with them.

For the last two weeks Taeil and his bunch were rarely in the mension. So the rest became pretty comfortable around each other. Even speaking rarely, Jungkook got pretty comfortable and friendly with others. Woosan and Gahyeon, being energetic crackheads, didn't mind that. Well... they were dealing with Min Yoongi for a while now.

Yoongi and Jungkook usually didn't talk much with each other, but spent a lot of time together.

This morning they were preparing dinner in sync in the kitchen.

'You are good at it...' Yoongi said. He noticed it already before.

Jungkook was swiftly cutting vegetables.

'It's a...'

'Reflex. I get it. They couldn't block your skills... But it seems you were cooking a lot.'

'And you?'

'I just like it. It's a simple, organized thing. My nanny taught me...'

It was comfortable around Yoongi. Safe... When Jungkook was still spending too much time alone, Yoongi almost forced him to learn how to play guitar. Just to fill some of his time. He didn't want Jungkook to get more and more depressed, having too much time to think.

The amount of time Yoongi stopped himself from smacking the younger's head...

But it seemed wrong to him... In his eyes Jungkook was a baby... He seemed younger than Gahyeon. And when he was suddenly getting this lonely, lost look... Yoongi felt like having a kid in the house...

On the other hand when Jungkook was getting serious while training he was freaking scary.

It took them an hour to prepare everything. They could use a dining room, but they like the cozy kitchen more.

'Look who will join us today...' Gahyeon said singingly, walking in.

Wooyoung and San were helping Handong make slow steps, holding her from both sides.

They sat around the table. Yoongi and Gahyeon were helping Handong with the food without batting an eye, as she was helping them when they were little.

She was really weak. But good days like this were happening and they were happy.

'Eat some more, auntie!' Wooyoung gave her some veggies from his own plate. 'Come on! Come on! You have to get strong! In a month you will be walking around gardens with us!'

Jungkook smiled slightly at his silliness. He was playing with his food, looking at the meat.

*Do you eat enough, Angel?*

His heart squeezed when this thought appeared in his head.

*Angel...*

His hand shivered.

San looked at his palm and touched his arm.

'Flashback?' he asked worriedly.

Jungkook looked at him.

'It's better than nothing...'

'What was it?' he asked kindly.

'Just a thought... I think... my soulmate is not on good terms with eating...' Jungkook replied quietly.

'Maybe that's why you cook so well?'

'Maybe...' Jungkook frowned, but the bittersweet feeling stayed with him. Maybe he didn't know the time. But he could now think about an unknown faced Angel...

They heard the cars and a moment later Taeil entered with his four friends. They were excited and their mood was light.

Two weeks ago the Korean Government made the Army back away behind the river. All the time Taeil was behaving as imprisoning them here was for their own good, so he didn't keep them away from news.

Seeing him so excited Yoongi asked:

'What happened?'

'They want to start negotiations. They asked to pinpoint people who will work on law changes.'

'And your father?'

'He is glad, but conscious. He will take slow moves...'

'So what is the point of keeping us here?' Yoongi asked and Taeil's mood went down the drain.

'It's a different thing...' he gulped.

'Are you even want to finish this shitshow one day? Or will we be your prisoners here till we die?'

Taeil for a moment was looking at Yoongi. Then he peeked at Jungkook, turned around and walked away.

The rest glared at Yoongi, but didn't say a word, just followed their friend.

**11th of July 2071, Daegu**

Han, Yeonjun and Dami were observing the facility through binoculars from the car. They changed Yoohyeon, Jimin and Minho 4 hours ago. .

'It's clever of them... They used the infrastructure, which was already there.' Han said, munching chips.

'It's a Mental Hospital here. Prison in Chengdo. And the Medical Laboratory in Chilgok.' Yeonjun listed.

'Secured places with beds, wards, cameras... fencing...' Dami shrugged. 'The government took the properties after the war that were useful...'

'Mental Hospital and Medical Laboratory probably have people with hard separation syndrome... So we can assume in Chengdo there are people that they wanted to keep away or considered useful.'

'Do you think Taehyung hopes that we will find Jungkook in one of them?' Yeonjun asked.

'He does. But he doesn't believe Jungkook is kept out of Daegu.' Dami sighed. 'But we have to know the places in Daegu to enter there... And we have to know how we can enter there...'

'With which will we start?' Han asked.

'Considering the ones that are alright and were just kidnapped or imprisoned - we will start with the prison.' Dami said. 'We need two weeks to prepare the plan... And Yoo needs to figure out the security system to give info to her dad so he can block it.'

'So in two weeks, huh?' Han clicked his tongue. 'They will start to look for us...'

'That's why we have to be careful.'

'Unfortunately, without Jungkook we can't do it unnoticed.' Yeonjun sighed and looked through binoculars again to observe the watch.

**15th of July 2071, Daegu**

Jungkook woke up, but he didn't panic this time, feeling the presence.

But he pretended he was.

He wanted to stay focused and get every info he could.

He was again paralyzed. He couldn't speak or see anything. Just hear.

'Oh, my dear friend... Sometimes I would like to talk to you... I'm really bored... It was funny till now, but lately they want to spoil my mood.'

Someone sat near him on the bed.

'But you know... if they need an enemy to dance for me... I will give them one. It's so simple... too simple sometimes...'

He felt a hand pulling his t-shirt down, and he shivered more. This time it wasn't pretend. It made him nauseous.

'Oh... this mark... It's fascinating how many times I saw it through the ages... And how many times I saw blood on it... I came to the conclusion we are almost brothers...'

Jungkook felt something sharp and cold over his cheek.

A blade?

'I won't harm you... You can't be harmed in the dream, right? I wanted to give you something fabulous, but unfortunately I can't find your soulmate...' A heavy sighed. 'I had a great idea to let you meet and let him see... how you will suffer... But it seems we will have to play alone...'

'Your time is coming, darling... It's just a dream for you... But now, I will be there with you... all the time...'

A creepy giggle that was getting distance.

'Sweet dreams... brother...'

**27th of July, Chengdo**

Chanyeol, standing on the transformator of the electricity lines, put a device on it and connected the right wires to the device.

'I'm cutting the power off. Yoohyeon, are you ready? You will have 45 seconds before their separated generator will be turned on...'

'Hit them. Give them a blackout...' Yoohyeon said through mindlink.

'3... 2... 1... Power off!' Chanyeol pulled the lever down.

The power was cut off in all the area around the prison and inside it.

'Come to Yoohyeonie... Don't be shy...' Yoohyeon was mumbling to herself, sitting in the car near the prison and fastly working on her laptop.

'20 seconds.' Chanyeol said. '10... Power on! Did you make it?'

'The device will transfer the signal to us...' Yoohyeon took the phone. 'Dad... do you have it?'

'Yeah. We have a preview of their cameras. Gimmie 10 minutes. I will call back when I will enter their security system... It's a normal prison. It's not that hard...'

'Okay...'

'We have ten minutes' Yoohyeon said through mindlink.

'Prepare to enter...' Taehyung said, getting out of the car.

'We are doing it fast and quietly.' Namjoon said. 'We are getting the guard inside the cells and freeing the prisoners. They will deal with them later... Jin and I will check if anybody needs help... Taehyung and Dami are getting the info and we are disappearing.'

'Naeun and their friends will come after us here.' Minji added.

'In the meantime dad will hack their mailboxes and database.' Yoohyeon informed them, when her phone rang. 'We have it clear. Cameras are blind. The gate will open in 30 seconds.'

Soobin pointed to the guards on the watching towers with his bow and two arrows of light hit them with paralyzing effect.

Han and Minho embraced everyone with the shields.

Hoseok embraced Jimin and Taehyung, who were holding rifles, with gravity bubbles making them fly through space next to him and Minji.

'We are going in...' Taehyung said.

Two hours later they freed 20 soulmates, who were more than ready to help them with questioning the guards. Only one of them knew one place inside Daegu, which was a hidden prison for interdependants.

Naeun came to explain the situation to the people there with her soulmate. Guards became prisoners. And prisoners took over the prison to keep the secret action confidential for a while and plan how to get back to their normal lives.

In the prison they hadn't found Ryu or Jungkook.

But it was just their first point.

And they gained supporters without even asking...

**7th of August, Daegu**

It was unexpected.

In front of Mins' Mension three government cars stopped. Hajun, Hyerim, Kyung, Joryoung, Dasol and three soldiers came out of it.

Yoongi, seeing them from the window, ran through the house.

'Gahyeon, go to mom!' he screamed. 'Where is Wooyoung and San?'

'In the kitchen with Jungkook' she screamed back. 'What's going on?!'

'Go to mom!'

Yoongi ran inside the kitchen seeing two soldiers pointing at Wooyoung and San, who tried to stop Hyerim from getting to Jungkook.

Jungkook gave Woosan a sign with his hand and stepped forward. Hyerim grabbed his arm.

'We have to talk, Koohyung... We need your help. You will help us, right?'

Jungkook gulped.

'Help you with what?'

'Terrorists are attacking Gumi. The Protectors of Normality... They appeared out of nowhere, stating that if the government won't deal with us, they will.'

'I don't understand...'

'We need any power we can get...' she said, pulling him to the stairs. 'I will explain more...'

'Uncle!' Yoongi screamed. 'Are you going to...'

'Stay out of this!' Kyung ordered.

'TAEIL!!!' Yoongi looked at his cousin.

But Taeil looked as shocked as him.

'We will just check if his power is useful. If not... he won't get harmed more.' Hajun said, walking upstairs with Dasol.

'Are you fucking force him to use Taboo?! He lost his memory! You are keeping him here! Didn't he suffer enough?!' Yoongi screamed. 'Are you a monster like that?!'

One of the soldiers focused his gun on Yoongi.

Kyung didn't answer.

'Please...' Yoongi choked out. 'He is younger than me! Please don't do this! Uncle!'

As if Kyung couldn't stand anymore of his full of giraffe words he walked to him and pushed him to the wall.

'Him or Gahyeon. Choose.'

Yoongi widened his eyes. A choice like that? What kind of tragic choice was that? Anything he would choose was wrong. Anything would lead to tragedy...

'You can't possibly...'

'Choose.'

'W-why... why are you doing this?'

'Not every choice is easy, Yoongi. Stay out of this...'

'At least... don't leave him alone there...' Yoongi choked out with tears in his eyes.

'At least have the guts to look at this choice of yours!'

Kyung was looking for a moment at him. Without a word he turned around and walked upstairs.

'Watch them!' He ordered the soldiers. 'Taeil... stay here.'

Something bad was going to happen. Jungkook knew it.

He felt it... He was there. This unknown presence. But it wasn't Hyerim, Hajun, Joryoung, Dasol or Kyung... Was he invisible? Was he in the shadows on the floor and walls?

But he forgot about the invisible presence when he was pushed to the wall by Hajun.

'What's going on?' he asked.

'It will hurt a bit...' Hyerim said. 'But you will pass out and won't feel the pain after...'

'W-what...?'

Hajun and Joryoung grabbed Jungkook from both sides and held him against the wall.

Hyerim pulled out the scissors from the bag, and she cut through Jungkook's shirt from the collar to the middle of the chest, exposing his mark.

Kyung was standing on the other side of the room. When Jungkook looked at his mark and started to get what was going on, he started to shake his head.

'No...' he protested. 'No... NO!' he didn't ask or plead.

He started to yank himself from the hold. He freed one of his arms and punched Joryoung, he cursed, pulled the gun and pressed it to Jungkook's side.

'Stay still or I will make you stay still!' he growled. 'Ready?!' He turned to Dasol.

She nodded and took off her glove. She made a step forward.

'It's an honor to be chosen to do it...' she said with a small, satisfied smile on her lips.

'I WILL FUCKING KILL YOU!' Jungkook screamed and tried to kick her.

Hajun pressed his gun to his chest.

'Don't make me do this!' he said through his teeth. 'It will hurt just for a moment!'

'TOUCH ME AND I WILL FUCKING DESTROY YOU!' Jungkook screamed in fury, drops of saliva fell on Dasol's face.

She just tilted her head and smirked. She stretched her hand and placed it over Jungkook's mark.

The mark shined in red color.

'NOOOOOOOO!!!!'

Dasol pressed her hand to Jungkook's skin.

Taehyung was sitting with Yeonjun and Soobin planning the next mission, when he felt fury in his veins. Then the feeling full of disgust covered him, before the pain hit. The pain... the overwhelming sorrow.

He fell on his knees.

'No... no... no...' he whispered. 'Koo...'

'TAE!?' Yeonjun and Soobin crouched down next to him, when he pressed his forehead to the cold floor.

He tried to swim... Swim through the pain, anger and sorrow. To reach him...

*Baby...*

*They can't break you...*

Dasol pressed her palm to Jungkook's chest. He screamed in pain.

But nothing else happened.

She frowned and pressed her palm more.

'Nothing...'

'Try harder...' Hajun said. 'He is resisting...'

Dasol was touching the VK mark, and more of red light appeared around her palm.

Jungkook threw his head back screaming in excruciating pain.

Dasol's palm started to feel the heat.

'It's burning...' she said.

From Jungkook's nostrils blood started to run to his mouth.

He felt something. Arms around him... Did he start to have delirium?

But those arms were so... safe...

*They can't break you...*

*You are mine...*

Dasol screamed in pain and took her hand away.

Jungkook looked at her with an unfocused gaze.

'Again!' Hajun said.

She looked at him, gulped and with new determination she pressed her hand to Jungkook's burning mark.

Another scream of pain left his mouth, but it was Dasol, who was thrown through the room on the opposite wall. She curled up on the floor in shivers, mumbling something and crying.

She was biting her nails, as if she was deadly scared.

Jungkook looked at her and whispered:

'I w-w-warned you... I will d-destroy y-you...'

Hajun looked at Joryoung then at Hyerim.

'Maybe she wasn't strong enough of a Holder for him?'

'What if it is not possible?' Kyung said.

'We should check it carefully...' Hajun frowned.. 'His resistance is unbelievable... Bring Taeil...'

'WHAT?! Do you see what he had done to her!?' Kyung pointed to Dasol. 'She wanted it. Taeil doesn't!'

'We will see...' Hajun said and nodded to Joryoung. They put Jungkook on the bed.

He was pale. His whole body was shivering immensely. The blood capillaries in the whites of his eyes were cracked. He had a high fever even if his body was deadly cold.

Hyerim and Joryoung went to Dasol and pulled her from the floor. She wasn't able to walk. Not in her right state of mind. Mumbling '*Please stop... Please stop...*' all the time.

Kyung looked at Jungkook and dropped his eyes on the floor, before closing the doors to the room.

In the silence a shadow of a figure appeared over Jungkook's bed. Without a face... but he knew this voice.

'It didn't go as planned... But it just makes it... more interesting...' he heard before the shadow disappeared.

Jungkook focused on one thing that wasn't the physical pain running through his body. His soul was still untouched... And in his delusional state of mind... he still felt arms around him...

As if someone was sitting behind him... securing him... Whispering to his ears calming words...

*Shhhh... baby...*

*I am right here...*

Taehyung holding himself on his arms and knees threw up on the floor.

'UNCLE!!' Soobin called Jin in panic.

'H-he won't b-break...' Taehyung choked out, through clenched teeth. 'H-he... w-will... never...'

'We know.' Yeonjun said and tears appeared in his eyes.

He looked at Soobin, who was rubbing Taehyung back.

They couldn't imagine... They couldn't deal with the sheer thought of Jungkook's pain. Of the possibility someone tried to use Taboo on him.

But Taehyung did... he embraced this pain, knowing exactly, that Jungkook will pay for every pain in the world, just to protect not just his own soul... but also Taehyung's.

Jin ran to the room and his face went white when he saw Taehyung's state and tears streaming down Yeonjun and Soobin's faces.

He helped his son to get up.

'Come... we w-will wash you...' he whispered, gulping his tears, thinking about his second little boy's suffering.

'They can't use Taboo on him...' Taehyung mumbled. 'They will try... But he won't let them... He is too strong for them...'

'He is... He is strong. He always was...' Jin held back his sobs, with willpower for Taehyung.

Because Taehyung was the only one of them... who hadn't shed a tear.

Yoongi was closing his eyes tightly, hearing screams in the entire house.

Wooyoung and San were glaring at Taeil, wanting to squeeze the last breath from his lungs.

It took a long time before the screams stopped and the even more terrifying silence fell on the house.

When Yoongi saw an unconscious body, carried between Hyerim and Joryoung and Hajun walking behind them his heart stopped.

But it wasn't Jungkook...

It was Dasol.

'We are going back...' Hajun said to soldiers, when Kyung appeared on the stairs.

'What happened?' Taeil asked his father, while Yoongi, Wooyoung and San ran upstairs as soon as the guns were not pointing at them.

'Dasol was using Taboo before... but this time the resistance was too strong for her...' Kyung said. 'If you don't want to stay here...' he put his hand on Taeil's shoulder.

'I will stay.' Taeil said immediately.

Kyung looked at him.

'I will try to stop this...'

'I know.' Taeil passed his father and moved to the stairs.

Yoongi ran inside Jungkook's room and looked at the shivering, burning body.

'San, check Gahyeon.' he said and went to bed. 'Wooyoung, bring water and towels.'

As soon as Jungkook's gaze fell on him and became focused, Yoongi whispered:

'I'm sorry... I couldn't stop them...' he stretched his hand to Jungkook's hair.

'D-don't touch m-me... P-please...' Jungkook mumbled.

Yoongi halted his move.

'I won't... I won't touch your skin...' he promised gently, and took the towel from Wooyoung. He wetted it and started to clean the blood from Jungkook's nose and mouth. 'I'm really sorry...'

Wooyoung brought another wet, cold towel, folded it and put it on Jungkook's forehead, being careful not to make a skin contact.

'Not your fault...' Jungkook whispered. 'Can I sleep?'

'You can...'

When Jungkook's eyelids fell down, Yoongi clenched his teeth and eyes, to get a

hold of his own emotions. Then he took a deep breath, and started to clean the rest of Jungkook's face.

He got up to take another blanket and cover the shivering body, when he noticed Taeil, who was standing in the doors, staring at Jungkook. Then his gaze fell on Yoongi.

For a moment they were looking at each other.

'I was mistaken...' Yoongi said quietly. 'You could fall lower...'

**28th of August, Daegu**

After that day Jungkook stayed in his room for the whole week. Yoongi was scared each day Hajun and his people would return and try again. But it seemed the situation around was taking their focus from Jungkook.

Gahyeon overheard Taeil's friends about the situation with terrorists resembling now more of a war in Gumi and getting closer and closer to Daegu itself.

Taeil and his bunch were not around, probably dealing with the situation there...

When Jungkook came out of the shock he received, he was even more focused on training them. It was hard to break his silence, but he also felt... dangerous now.

In fact Jungkook felt dangerous... He didn't know what that was, but he was absolutely sure nobody could touch him. Not just this shadow that was playing around with them... but literally no Holder other than the one with the VK mark.

His angel...

Feeling him at that moment was the only thing that was stopping Jungkook from crossing the fencing and didn't care anymore.

It was another boring day of their imprisoned life, when suddenly they heard screams in the house.

'Help! Please!! She is hurt!!'

They were in the library, but they ran in the direction where the screams were coming from. They saw Gyeom holding Bomin in his arms. Blood was trailing

down her left arm.

'She lost a lot of blood! Yoongi, please! She got shot! All the doctors are in Gumi! I don't know any healer!! Please!'

Yoongi, Woosan, Gahyeon and Jungkook ran inside Gyeom's room.

'Sit her...' Yoongi said and Gyeom sat Bomin on the bed. 'What do you want from me?'

'You removed Taeil's bullet, right? You can help her...'

Yoongi looked at the wound from the bullet in the biceps of the girl.

'Aunt Chorong removed the bullet...'

'She is in Gumi! Please! Help her! I can't lose her!'

Yoongi sighed. He hated them... but even more he hated the separation syndrome.

'Gahyeon... bring the big medical kit from mom's room. There are pincers there.' he sighed and moved to the bed.

Jungkook looked around the room. Then at Bomin and Gyeom. He took the darts from the board on the wall, noticed only by San, who frowned.

When Yoongi moved away for a moment.

He threw the first dart at the bed. It stuck a millimeter above Bomin's head.

'Wait...' he said.

'WHAT THE FUCK!?' Gyeom screamed and move to Jungkook.

Jungkook showed him the second dart.

'Move an inch... and next time I will aim at her eyes...'

'Are you insane!? She will die!'

'Not if you will answer the questions... What is blocking my memory?' Jungkook asked.

'How do you...?' Gyeom looked shocked.

'What is...'

'I don't know! We don't have anything to do with this!' the other screamed, looking

at the darts in his hand.

'Oh really?' Jungkook threw the second dart and it stuck near Bomin's ear. She flinched and groaned in pain.

Yoongi looked at the absolutely serious Jungkook and his calm gaze fell on Gyeom too.

'It has something to do with Mirror of Dreams! Please...'

'What?' Jungkook asked further.

'They closed it! I don't know how! Dasol was using someone's sacred treasure for this! I really don't know! Your memory is closed! That's it!'

Yoongi put his fingers inside the wound in Bomin's arm. She screamed.

'How to turn off the devices?' he asked.

'I don't know!! Please don't hurt her!! Please! She is suffering!'

'Devices!' Yoongi said feeling the bullet with his fingers.

Bomin passed out.

'Taeil's mother is controlling them! I don't know anything else!'

Yoonig managed to grab the bullet well enough to get it out. He showed it to Gyeom.

'If you want to live I advise you to get out of here as soon as I will stitch her... You know more than well you can be the next one with the device in your body if my uncle ever gets to know about this conversation...'

Gahyeon ran inside the room with the bag. She just looked at Yoongi's bloody fingers and after a minute she prepared the antiseptics, needle with stitches and bandages.

Gyeom was breathing heavily, looking at Yoongi's hands.

'She won't die...' Yoongi assured him. 'The bullet barely got inside the muscles... And she didn't lose as much blood as you thought from this wound. She will be weak, but after a few days she will be okay. Better you will be far away from here then...'

Gyeom gulped and nodded.

'We will help you pack...' Wooyoung said while smirking.

Gyeom's gaze was only at Bomin and everybody felt he was deadly afraid to look at Jungkook right now.

**September 2071, Republic of Daegu**

Red String and Red Alert dealt with another facility were Interdependants were being imprisoned. In the Mental Hospital there were indeed most of the soulmates with separation syndrome. They got to more places in Daegu, which were secret bases of the Army.

During the questioning of guards Taehyung was merciless. The anger in him was rising and it was hard to control him.

But thanks to this they now had a lot of information about Hajun, Joryoung and their followers. About their ideas and secret cult.

They had to take two next weeks to transport prisoners to safeties when someone would take care of them.

They planned the third rescue mission for October. And then they wanted to infiltrate Daegu itself.

And because they were scared the terrorist would trigger another war, they went to Gumi to deal with them. There was something wrong with all those happenings in Gumi... Korean Amry wasn't there. But they couldn't track the terrorists or the source of attacks as the only ones beside citizens there - where the Army of the Republic itself...

So they figured out the attacks were planned, not by some unknown organization, but by the government itself to give the army purpose.

Because soldiers were whispering... Lot of them started to be distrustful towards their orders and commanders. And Naeun and their friends were giving them even more reason to do that.

They took photos in the prison and in the laboratory to have proof of Government doings.

Next to this venom, there was another thing that was spreading through the Republic quietly.

A rumor about a group of heroes...

**2nd of October 2071, Daegu**

San, Wooyoung, Gahyeon and Jungkook were fixing things in the library after training, when Wooyoung frowned looking at Jungkook, squeezing his necklaces from time to time.

He was doing this a lot... as if it was bringing him comfort.

'It's strange...' Wooyoung said, throwing himself on the armchair.

'What is not...' Jungkook sighed.

'The necklace is strange...' he clarified.

Jungkook turned to him, protectively closing his fingers on the necklace.

'Why?' he frowned.

'They dyed your hair. Change your name. Removed your memory. Took all your other things, but left the necklace? Strange.'

San looked at Jungkook.

'Is it something you wouldn't get rid of?'

'I am attached to it... I don't know why. But I feel something is lacking when I take this off... What's your point?'

'They said they "closed" your memories... Not blocked. Not wipe. Closed.' San said thoughtfully. 'In what exactly? Your mind? Shouldn't they be constantly checking you then?'

Jungkook looked at the red, shining stone in the necklace. He didn't like red but whatever... It was beautiful. He felt as if it was important for him...

Gahyon came closer and looked at the necklace. She showed Jungkook a simple ring on her finger.

'My dad gave it to me on my 11th birthday. I never take it off... They knew you wouldn't take it either...'

'You mean...?'

'Dad chose the ring to my liking... Would you choose this necklace for yourself?'

'M-maybe not exactly this... color, but I still don't get you...'

'If it is a gift from someone who loves you, he would choose something you would like, right?'

'I guess. So you think my memories are closed in the necklace?' Jungkook was looking at the red stone.

'Maybe?'

'What would it change if I break it? What if it will destroy the memories inside instead of getting them back?' Jungkook asked sadly.

He hid the precious jewelry behind his shirt.

'I will think about this when we figure out how to get out of here or contact someone...'

**15th of October 2071, Yeongcheon**

Red Alert organized their third database as close to Daegu as it was safe. They managed to free the third place they knew about - the Medical Laboratory. They found them people with hard separation syndrome, probably the ones whose soulmates were dead. And other imprisoned Interdependants, who were taking care of them. It was mainly Sealers and a few Holders.

But still there was no Ryu or Jungkook there.

So they left to Ryu's friends to take care of the prisoners.

The guards didn't know much. They heard only information they already knew about.

They came to their base after that to prepare to infiltrate all the possible ways to enter inside Daegu City.

It was late evening... They wanted to get up earlier to start planning, so all of them went to sleep or rest. After an hour of silence a scream was heard.

'JIN! Help!! Jimin!'

Jimin was laying on the bed, crying hysterically. Taehyung was standing next to

him, trying to hug him or help him in any other way, when he himself got pale.

He stumbled back on his feet and hit the wall, he slid down through it, pressing his hand to his heart and breathing desperately.

He bit on his lips till they started to bleed.

With a painful face he was shaking his head, silently saying: "no..."

Yeonjun and Soobin who ran to the room looked at him.

'It's Taboo! They are trying again....' Yeonjun shut his eyes.

Beakyun tried to calm Jimin, but nothing was helping. No word or touch would bring him comfort now. He curled up and his sobs changed into tears quietly streaming down his face.

**Same Time, Daegu**

It happened like the last time. Suddenly the cars stopped in front of the main entrance to Mins' Household. But this time it was Kyung, Chorong, Hajun and Joryoung and the soldiers.

Before Yoongi could reach Jungkook's room, not even knowing what he could do again. Feeling helpless like an ant when a boot was crushing its anthill, he saw soldiers walking Jungkook out of the room.

Taeil looked surprised too.

'I will ask father what's going on!' he said, seeing Yoongi and running behind soldiers.

Jungkook let himself be walked, calmly. Physical pain was nothing. He could bear it and live with an untouched soul.

He was ready. He was just silently praying it wouldn't hurt his soulmate in any way...

And maybe... there was a little part of him that wanted to feel him again. He was responding to Jungkook when he felt his pain, anger or fear...

Maybe this time Jungkook will be able to feel him again?

This time he was led to one of the empty rooms on the first floor. When Min

Chorong entered she was unsealed. She moved her hand and an iron bars embraced Jungkook's wrists and ankles, pinning him to the wall.

'I'm sorry...' she whispered to Jungkook, when she tore his shirt a bit.

She stood next to the doors and looked at the ground.

Hajun and Joryoung looked at Jungkook and then at Kyung impatiently.

Taeil ran inside the room and looked at Hajun and Joryoung enraged.

'I told you it is not possible if Dasol didn't manage to do it! Maybe only the VK mark can unseal the VK mark. Maybe that is what the legend is about! Maybe that's what makes them special, not some power! We don't need it! Don't make me do it!' he said enraged.

'There is a pack of wolves, which is playing on our field.' Joryoung said. 'They destroyed 3 of our safeties for Interdependants...'

'Taeil...' Kyung said. 'Enough of the discussions...' he slowly looked at him with reddened eyes. 'Bring Yoongi and Gahyeon here...'

Taeil went pale as much as Jungkook, hearing this.

'F-for what?'

'Do as your father says...' Hajun said calmly.

Taeil gulped and went away. After Geom and Bomin left, and Yein with Kang followed them tired of risking, he was all alone. Being a prisoner of this house as much as others. Just without the tracking device.

Yoongi and Gahyeon with Wooyoung and San entered the room.

'You two outside.' Hajun ordered to Woosan.

Yoongi's eyes traveled to Jungkook and the storm of regrets filled his eyes. He turned to Kyung, enraged:

'We know you are a monster! We don't have to look at it! Taeil... ' he looked at his cousin, but there was no insult good enough for him. So he just shook his head.

'Taeil.' Kyung said and gulped. 'Get out.'

Taeil closed his eyes, took an erratic breath and walked out.

Yoongi and Jungkook instantly felt a cold premonition in their guts. A sickening feeling of horror.

Kyung looked at Yoongi.

'You will try to unseal him...' he informed him.

'I would rather die.' Yoongi spitted under his uncle's feet.

'You are his friend, right? You got pretty close. He won't try to hurt you as he did with Dasol... and he would with Taeil.'

'You can fucking shot me! I won't do this!' Yoongi said, shaking his head.

'Remember I have your mother under my control...'

Yoongi gulped.

'She would understand...'

Kyung sighed.

'I didn't want to do this...' he took his phone out and pressed few buttons. He showed it to Yoongi. 'It was a recording from a clean, white small room. With a person tied to a chair and a bag on the head. After Yoongi looked at the recording enough, Kyung zoomed in on the view on the person's hand.

Yoongi's eyes widened.

'You will do it... I don't care if you succeed. But you will do it... or this person will die...'

'It can be fake...' Yoongi said weakly, asking the brother of his father to have mercy. To give him a choice he actually could take.

'If you need proof...' Kyung took the phone and made a call. 'Do it...' he just said.

Gahyeon suddenly fell on her knees, trying to catch a breath. Tears were streaming down her face, when she was staring at Yoongi with wide, shocked eyes.

'Stop it...' Yoongi said. 'STOP IT!!!' he yelled, hiding his face in his hands.

'Enough.' Kyung said, and Gahyeon took a deep breath. 'Yoongi... I am asking you last time. You will TRY or Gahyeon's soulmate will die.'

Chorong looked at Gahyeon, walked to her, helped her get up, even when the girl tried to push her away and walked her out of the room.

Yoongi was pressing his fingers to his eyelids, trying to stop the tears.

Jungkook was staring at the whole scene with wide eyes, when he heard the

whisper in his ear.

*This is the drama I like... So many broken hearts... I told you... I don't have to unseal you or touch you to make you suffer...*

*You all are so ready to sacrifice yourself...*

*But never ready to sacrifice someone dear to you...*

*Chains... You all wear them...*

Yoongi took a deep breath and straightened up. He looked at Kyung with teary eyes.

'I hate you. And I hope you will pay for this...' he sniffed and turned to Jungkook.

The closer he was getting the harder the steps were.

His soulmate's best friend... HIS own friend... A kid, who never hurt anybody...

Why? Why was he forced to give him more pain?

Yoongi wiped the tears from his cheek with the back of his palm and looked at the glove on his hand. He slowly took it off and looked at the mark.

'Hyung...' Jungkook whispered, he had a small scared smile on his lips. 'It's okay...'

Yoongi already felt nauseous from all the guilt, which was coming in waves, weakening his knees.

He had to trust Jungkook's words that he would bring him nothing more than physical pain.

He shut his eyes and without thinking pressed his hand to Jungkook's mark and tried to block his own internal scream with Jungkook's voice full of pain...

After they forced him to try the second time, Yoongi fell on his knees and hands. He threw up, shaking on his whole body.

'It's impossible!! Try it yourself if you don't believe it!!!'

Jungkook passed out. His nose was bleeding again. But he was breathing steadily... Yoongi cried, pressing his forehead to Jungkook's knees.

'You won't unseal him! It's burning the skin!' Yoongi showed them the inside of his

hand which was red and full of blisters. 'Have you ever seen a Sealer like that?!'

'It's enough.' Hajun said. 'We are going...'

Kyung, using the sacred treasure, removed the bars, which were holding Jungkook by the wall.

Yoongi caught his falling body, being careful not to touch his skin anywhere.

Kyung slowly walked out letting Wooyoung and San in. They ran to Yoongi and Jungkook.

'T-take him...' Yoongi gulped. 'He will have a-a fever... Take care of h-him...' Yoongi tried to speak calmly.

They looked at him and took Jungkook from his arms.

Gahyeon ran inside crying hard. She kneeled next to Yoongi.

'I'm sorry... I'm sorry...'

Yoongi shook his head, without a word.

She took his buried hand.

'What will we do now?' she choked out.

Wooyoung changed the towel on Jungkook's head.

'Last time he wasn't unconscious...'

'Last time the Holder, who tried to unseal him, lost her mind...' San noticed.

'He went hard on himself because he didn't want to hurt Yoongi?'

'I don't know...'

Jungkook's eyelashes fluttered. He was blinking for a moment until he recognized Wooyoung and San,

'Hyung?'

'You want to see him?' San asked.

Jungkook nodded.

'He will be here when you wake up...' Wooyoung smiled at him. 'I will make sure of it.'

Jungkook closed his eyes and fell asleep.

Wooyoung found Yoongi in the bathroom bandaging his palm.

'Jungkook wants to see you...' he said quietly.

Yoongi didn't answer, focused on his task. He was avoiding to look at himself in the mirror.

'You didn't have a choice...' Wooyoung whispered.

'Should it make me feel better?' Yoongi asked bitterly.

'Wooyoung was looking at him for a moment.

'If you want to feel better... do what he asked. Go, see him.'

Jungkook woke up a few hours later. It was dark outside. He heard quiet humming nearby.

Yoongi was sitting on the floor, with his back pressed to the bed, and his head threw back on the sheets, he had closed eyes... but tears were escaping down his jaw from time to time.

Jungkook slowly shuffled and slid down on the floor. He sat next to him and joined their arms.

'I'm fine.' he said.

Yoongi pressed his lips tightly.

'It was just pain... You weren't even close to unseal me...' he tried to comfort the

older.

'You shouldn't forgive me. And HE will never either....' Yoongi whispered.

Jungkook was silent for a moment.

'If he is my friend... he will understand. It was my choice as much as yours. You know, hyung...' he whispered. 'When I feel deep... soul wrecking emotions... I can feel him. ' Jungkook closed his eyes and smiled.

Yoongi understood. He remembered when he felt Chim so strong it was almost physical.... But he was so full of guilt and grief right now, he couldn't stop himself:

'Jungkook, listen to me... they won't ever let you go! Can't you just... give up? You are suffering and they will come with worse...!'

Jungkook looked at him calmly.

'Maybe you would be able to control my gift... But it would kill you. You know it's not the usual mark. There is only one man alive who can open it up. Who is strong enough to hold it and use it.'

'How do you know that?! They removed your memory!'

'They can remove my memories. But they can't remove love... Yoongi...'

Yoongi looked at Jungkook, hearing his serious tone and his own name from his lips. Jungkook gaze was misterious, but oh... so full of feelings, when he whispered:

'I was born loving him... And I will die loving him...'

Yoongi gulped.

'I don't understand... What are you doing here? Why? Why is fate so cruel to you?'

Jungkook tilted his head calmly.

'My destiny was decided a long time ago, hyung. I will meet him sooner or later. Our meeting is like a mathematical formula. Commandments of religion, providence of the universe... It's unavoidable...'

'Jungkook, You are not thinking straight!'

'The destiny threw me here, for a reason.' Jungkook said with confidance. 'To save someone...'

'You can't even save yourself! Who can you save then?!'

'You.'

Yoongi looked at him in shock.

'You do not belong here Yoongi. Your soul doesn't belong here... Neither is Gahyeon's, Wooyoung's or San's.'

Jungkook patted Yoonig's knee.

'Get rid of the guilt. It's not nessesery...'

**31st of October 2071, Samhain, Republic of Daegu**

Taehyung was standing on the balcony of the guesthouse - their base in Uljin. They came here for two days to rest in peace.

He didn't need peace... He wanted his live back.

And Jimin was avoiding him. He distanced himself as if Taehyung failed him all the way.

Well, he failed in so many things, why not in his friendship too?

He looked at the full moon over the mountains...

Why was this day especially hard? When the doors to spiritual world were opened. And the souls were more important than everything...

Taehyung was a it tipsy. He didn't drank much, but he was tired... So tired.

So sad and hurt inside...

Five minutes to midnight...

Jungkook was standing in front of his window. He looked at the naked garden, lightened up by the full moon. In the summer the garden was beautiful... Now the only thing he could see was a naked lonely, cherry tree in the middle.

Why was this day especially hard?

Why he felt like he will suffocate if he will stay inside the house?

He turned around and trying to ran from the feelings, he went downstairs.

Five minutes to midnight...

***Music tip: Cherry Blossom Love Song by CHEN***

*Was it the moonlight that was so beautiful?*

*I turn my head around in this dark deep night with my hidden sadness*

*Promises that couldn't be kept*

*Float like the stars*

*A long night wind*

*It feels like your breath*

*It tortures me*

*Are the fallin cherry blossoms so lonely that they resemble you?*

*Deeper than a knife wound a chest engraved with you...*

Jungkook reached the cherry tree in the garden at midnight.

He felt like his soul was crying. His heart was breaking... His lungs were so tightened, the breath was hard to catch.

He missed him. He missed him so much...

The moonlight that was shining on him didn't help. The stars were looking so lonely so far away, so unreachable.

Jungkook was cold, but his skin wasn't. The freezing October's cold was coming from inside. He was shivering each day for more then a year.

He was trembling like a narcoman on detox.

His eyes looked at the naked cherry tree, which was waiting for the spring day, to bloom.

He felt just like these tree.

Naked. Cold. Waiting...

Longing for the sun to give him warmth, to be covered in flowers... To be beautiful and strong again.

He felt so so cold...

The snow started to fall quietly around him... First slowly... then faster...

Jungkook stretched his hand to catch the snowflake.

*They look almost like the cherry petals...*

What was that?

Did he know those words? Had he said that?

He felt like he knew them. Like he had heard them before...

He lifted his face and let the snow fall on it.

On his lips. It was almost like a kiss.

He looked at the snow that was covering everything around. He get closer to the cherry tree and felt something warm on his face.

He hadn't realized he was crying... But the heartbeark and longing was too much to hold inside.

But he did now... He embraced the tree and pressed his forehead to it.

Imagined it was the chest of someone... who used to be so close...

The tree couldn't embrace him back and it made his heart break... because he felt... deep down he knew even without a single memory...

Someone was there... Someone whose arms he knew so well...

He was crying quietly, pressing himself more to the tree until suddenly the strong wind came. Moving the naked branches and from under his palms a purple power shined filling the three. Bringing it to life for minutes. Covering it with pink flowers.

Jungkook's eyes were shut. He didn't know what he was doing. What his power was doing. But Yoongi standing in the window, worried about the yonger, saw the light shining inside the broken boy, surrounding him.

Giving birth to beauty from the pain.

The wind started to tear the petals of the flowers, lifting them in the air, making them look like snowflakes.

Jungkook's sobs were overwhelming. From the moment he came here, he didn't shed even one tear for himself.

When they tortured him.

When they lied to him.

When they told him he was someone he wasn't...

But tonight he was crying...

Trying to recall the name, he knew as well... as his own...

Taehyung was looking at the moonlight. Just a year... and felt like an ages...

The unexpected October's snow started to fall, when he decided to gave himself a present

It was just this one time... when he allowed himself to do it.

To break. To feel the pain.

He took out his phone and found the right files in the cloud Jungkook prepered. He chose the first video their parents were recording for years. The voice filled the balcony.

6 year old Jungkook appeared on the screen.

*'Who do you love the most, Kookie?' Hoseok asked. 'Mama or papa?'*

*Jungkook pouted.*

*'TaeTae...'*

Photos from fanfairs... Of them making pillow forts... Playing in the garden...

Next recording appeard.

*Jungkook was spraying everything with garden hose.*

*'You little!!!'*

The giggles... Jeeze his mischivious, happy giggles... He missed them so much...

*'Tae! Stop!! Stop!!! Kim Taehyung put this fucking serpent down!!' Jungkook's angry face appeared covered in water when he angrily walked to take him down.*

Taehyung laughed and started to cry, watching their moments.

*The crowd was cheering.*

*Taehyung and Jungkook were kissing in the middle of the room.*

*Jimin pissed scream:*

*'You are putting on a show and You haven't invited me?!'*

Taehyung was shivering, weeping, wiping his eyes from time to time. Smiling through tears.

He looked thorugh hundreds of photos and dozens of recordings. With their parents. With their friends. With the two of them...

Then he hesitantly pressed the last one...

*Jungkook faced the camera and said:*

*'Today is a day worth immortalizing.... Today my beautiful and only boyfriend Kim Taehyung turns 20! There is no man as gorgeues and sexy as him...'.*

'Stop it...' Taehyung, laughing, embarrassed, tried to take the camera out of his hands.

*'No...' Jungkook said stubbornly and embraced him with his arm, showing the both of them together. 'Look at the camera and smile for me with this 1 million dollar smile!' he*

*kissed his cheek.*

*'Shut up...' Taehyung grabbed Jungkook's chin and kissed him hard.*

*The camera slid from Jungkook's fingers on the carpet. The rest of the movie was just the floor and the sounds of them making love.*

Taehyung shut his eyes, sobbing, but he waited to the end of the recording...

Between the falling snowflakes he found himself holding a cherry blossom petal. He gripped it in his hand.

The recording came to an end and he heard the sweet voice whispering:

*I love you, Taehyung...*

The phone slipped from his fingers to the ground, when he completely broke down, in the falling snow, which looked like cherry petals.

*In the dim moonlight*

*The scattered, weeping you*

*I'm going to swap everything and meet you again*

*I will hold you in my arms*

*The dream of a hundred days is more beautiful than any other day*

*That I loved you...*

---

I am tired of crying... 😭😭😭😭

The last scene from this chapter... □□

The Cherry Blossom Love Song scene was the first scene I wrote and the beggining of RSF.

9400 words

It's 6 AM. Going to sleep.

Blair Witch91 🤍🤍🤍

# Chapter 54: Serendipity

**1st of November 2071, Daegu**

Gahyeon moved the curtains on the side in her mother's bedroom.

'You know the snow fell yesterday?' she chirped. 'It's so clean and bright outside... It's insane. Nobody expected that! It was really warm outside...'

She brought the bowl with warm water and sat next to bed.

'The weather got crazy suddenly at night. It was snowing and then the crazy wind came... It's calm now and the snow is melting fast, but if you want to go outside we can call boys...'

Handong had good and bad days.

During good days she was slowly speaking a few words and reacted to naughty bunch bickering.

During bad days she was silent. Close in her sad mind.

'I remember when you were doing this for me. You were mean!!! You were tickling all the time!'

She smiled when Gahyeon removed the shirt of the pajama, leaving her only in a thin shirt.

Gahyeon took the sponge and gave a bedbath to Handong's upper body. She was gently washing her skin near the device and Handong was looking at it.

'Device...' she whispered.

'I know... I'm sorry we can't remove it.' Gahyeon sighed. 'Sometimes I wonder what is on your mind about Kyung, CHorong and Taeil... I still can't believe they did that to us... What if we would accidently leave the mapped space?! They really want to kill us...'

'Gahy...' Handong said with a bit of irritation in her voice. 'Device...'

'I know! It's unbelievable! They want to blow us up in the air!' Gahyeon clenched her teeth. 'Sometimes I just want to insert it into Taeil's ass and make it explode! Can you believe what they did to Jungkook and Yoongi? We are nothing but useful pieces of trash to them!'

Handong slowly moved her hand. She was fighting with her mind constantly to

not be swallowed by the darkness again. And she was doing this only for her kids.

She finally grabbed Gahyeon's wrist. Her grip was especially strong...

Gahyeon looked at her surprised.

'Devices... Defect... Prototypes...' Handong said with a determined voice.

'What?! What defect?!' Gahyeon widened her eyes.

Handong opened her mouth, but her sick soul made her body sick as well. She was weak and easily lost focus. When she couldn't focus on the word, she was looking intensely at Gahyeon.

'Wait!? How do you know about them?' Gahyeon frowned. Then she gasped. She brought her face closer to the metal dot on her mother's skin with a red diode in between. On the side there were tiny letters MINC carved.

'Min Inc... We made it?! The corporation?'

Handong sighed with relief and smiled slightly at her.

'When?' Gahyeon asked, thinking fast. Handong lifted her eyebrow. 'Let me think.... If you know about them...' she started to pace around the room, ruffling her hair. 'It had to be before the accident.'

Handong nodded.

'So dad knew about it too..' Gahyeon concluded. 'The branch, which was responsible for military contracts... We closed it after his death...'

Handong looked at her with empty eyes again. Gahyeon blinked, seeing her sad again.

'Oh, mom... I'm sorry...' she whispered and went to finish dressing her up. 'I will figure this out.' she promised, quietly. 'Boys will come soon to entertain you...'

As there was no tv or stereo and they didn't want to leave Handong in silence all the time. They were usually taking her to the music room where she could listen to Yoongi's playing different instruments. Or just watch a real comedy, observing how Yoongi is struggling with not yelling at Jungkook, while the younger sometimes was making mistakes on purpose, just to see Yoongi praying for patience.

Other times one of the five was reading her a book, until she fell asleep.

Actually Woosan and Gahy were dragging her everywhere. Just so she won't be

alone. Once Wooyoung and San kidnapped her from the bed and took her to the library where they all were going to play board games. Wooyoung was pretending she is the player and he was consulting every move with her, making her smile a lot.

Gahyeon bent and kissed Handong's cheek, whispering:

'Thank you...'

She fixed her bed and ran out of the room.

'You are on mom duty!' she screamed to Yoongi, passing him in the corridor. 'I'm busy!'

Yoongi frowned and followed her. He stood in the doors to their father's office, when Gahyeon was looking through the showcases.

'Busy with what?' he asked.

'The devices were invented by Min's corporation.' She said fast. 'I want to check what they actually are.'

Yoongi widened his eyes.

'How do you know?'

'Mom told me.'

'Okay... but... they took the computers...'

'They did. But you know dad hated to look into his laptop too long. And liked to scribble on the paper. So he had printouts about everything...'

'He did. But he would drown in that so they are not here.'

'Some are here. And he was messy. So everything is catalogued in mom's office.'

'It was a long time ago. They could change it...'

'That's what I want to know. When they were invented and for what exactly! So don't disturb me!'

'Okay...' Yoongi said, trying not to get too excited.

He wanted to go prepare dinner, before Jungkook would end his practice with San and Wooyoung. He still felt guilty about what happened. Even if the younger tried to do everything to show him he doesn't need to...

Yoongi didn't use Taboo. He wasn't able to. It seemed nobody was... Jungkook had some kind of protection and his resistance was indescribable...

But still, even causing him just physical pain... and being forced to do it...

Yoongi felt dirty and disgusted with himself...

He should have protected him... And instead the Younger even during that violent act was the one who protected him...

**2nd of November 2071, Uljin**

'We are moving to Yeongcheon.' Taehyung said. 'Uncle Kai and aunt Jenni are staying here. Appa, dad, aunt and uncle Hobi are going to Andong to check on Naeun what news she has and check on some people. They will join us in a week in Yeongcheon.'

'In the meantime we will visit Chengdo Prison to ask people who stayed there about possible entrance to the city behind the wall.' Dami said. 'We will start to observe the city.'

Minji was looking at the map.

'Remember to change squads. Don't take a risk, when we will be in Andong and healers won't be around. Baekhyun and Chanyeol will tell me...' she glared at the youngsters.

'Yes, ma'am!' Han giggled.

'I will go with you to Andong.' Jimin said unexpectedly. 'To be sure you are not risking either...'

Everybody looked at him. He was looking at the floor. Not at anybody around.

For the last two weeks he wasn't speaking much. He avoided all of them actually... He wanted to by himself or with Bam.

Taehyung lifted his eyes at him. But Jimin only gulped, not meeting his gaze.

'Fine.' he said and folded the map. He looked at the rest of Red String. 'In two hours by the cars.'

Baekhyun looked at Jimin.

'Are you sure?' he asked, worried.

'Yeah.' Jimin said shortly and went away.

He couldn't be near Taehyung... He just couldn't. He felt so guilty around him... He wanted to be next to him, but at the same time being there was making him feel nauseous.

It started that night two weeks ago...

When he saw what Taehyung was going through, feeling someone tried to use Taboo on Jungkook again.

Jimin broke down. He felt like there was no way out... As if he was so useless not being able to help any of them... Not being able to do anything actually... And the more he felt like that the more he felt guilty.

As if he himself hurt Taehyung.

And the worst feeling of all was...

That last time he felt his soulmate suffering... it was at the same time Taehyung felt Jungkook.

Jimin shut his eyes.

What if...

Because of these thoughts he felt as if everybody was looking at him... and blamed him for Jungkook and Taehyung's suffering.

Jimin entered his room in the Guesthouse and started to check if he had packed everything. He felt more than heard a presence behind him.

'I am not in the mood to talk...' he said, not even turning back.

'You are not in the mood for anything lately.' Yoohyeon said seriously. 'Why are you doing this to him? Don't he have enough shit to deal with?'

'I thought that the first one at my throat would be Dami...' Jimin replied sarcastically.

'Fuck you! I have known you the longest! You are not like that!'

'Like what?'

'You don't leave friends! You didn't leave Taehyung even in his darkest moments! What happened now?! For what are you blaming him now!?'

'Blaming him?!' Jimin turned around. 'It feels like you all blaming me for what happened to Jungkook!'

'What?!'

'Do you think I didn't realize?! I can't be around Taehyung because I just want to cry and ask him for forgiveness! The guilt is eating me alive! I can't get rid of it!'

'Guilt? You have never hurted him! And he needs you!'

'I did! I can't do anything! I am totally useless! We have been looking for him for a year! He is suffering alone, who knows where!'

'So we all are useless then!' Yoohyeon said enraged.

'You really lost your mind' a quiet, cold voice said from the corridor.

'Oh, here she comes...' Jimin said sarcastically, when Dami walked to him without thinking.

She grabbed his shirt and pulled him harshly.

'First of all, I know this brat! And I bet he is holding up better than any of us here! That's the only thing, which keeps Taehyung sane!' she growled and shook Jimin.

She brought her face closer.

'And second of all: stop lying to yourself. You don't feel guilty. Your soulmate does!'

She pushed Jimin and he sat heavily on the bed, looking at her with hurt, terrified eyes, because she said out loud what he was afraid of.

Dami looked at him from above.

'And that's what makes you a complete idiot.' she said calmly.

She crossed her arms over her chest.

'You feel guilty around Taehyung, because the other is feeling guilty around Jungkook. It wasn't like that when Taehyung felt it the first time, right? And don't you see the obvious? Someone who would want to do that, even being forced, wouldn't feel guilty... Someone who wouldn't care for Jungkook - wouldn't feel guilty. So get your sorry ass together and stop assuming!'

Jimin was looking at her with wide eyes.

'You were so shocked... that you focused on the guilt.' Yoohyeon said quietly. 'But think logically. Dragon-ssi said the Red String will have 5 more members. And your soulmate is one of us.'

Jimin's eyes dropped on his own wrist when two Red-Thread Bracelets were wrapped.

'You don't know what's happening... So stop hurting Taehyung and yourself for now... It doesn't bring anything good.' Yoohyeon said.

'Go to Andong and calm down, Chim.' Dami tilted her head and looked at him softly. 'Then join us and be Jimin, who Taehyung needs right now.'

Jimin closed his eyes and nodded.

'Okay...'

Yoohyeon bent and kissed his cheek.

'Take care. Don't do stupid shit, oppa...'

When the girls walked out, Jimin closed his eyes and took a deep breath.

'Fine, soulmatie. I will wait for your explanation before I will whoop your ass...'

**7th of November 2071, Daegu**

Gahyeon dug out every military project her mother had stored in binders. There was just one branch of Mins' Company who was responsible for military inventions and equipment. Contracts were from all over the world. But there was something fishy about these tracking devices. Her dad was fascinated by guns and was collecting them - yes. But he wouldn't agree to invent a new weapon... These were the contracts he didn't even want...

So after 6 days in the papers, she finally opened the binder from 9 years ago.

'Someone bring a cake for me! I fucking found it!' she whispered to herself, looking

at the papers with sketches of the devices and documentation.

She started with the first analysis made for the tender.

The description was about a tracking device. This was the first type. The purpose of those devices was to track soldiers during missions in case they would be kidnapped or lost in the war zones. Simple transmitter. Undetectable...It should look like a mole, so it was covered in a medical silicone.

'I knew you, daddy...' she mumbled to herself. 'You wouldn't want to produce something that could be used in a wrong way.'

The second type of devices was designed the same way, but their purpose was to keep prisoners under control. Those were mapped to specific areas. They had a paralyzing toxin inside them. If the area was crossed according to the algorithm the device was releasing the toxin, which was affecting the nerve cells instantly, causing damage to the central nervous system until antitoxin was injected. It could stop the prisoner, but not kill him... And it was working instantly so he couldn't run away too far, because the computer would already know he wasn't in the mapped area.

Gahyeon read the whole documentation, but hadn't found anything about the third type of devices. There was nothing about explosive effect.

Gahyeon moved to descriptions of the tests for the first type of devices. It was signed by her father on the bottom for further testing, when the results were positive.

So she looked for the second type of the device. Here the projects were much more complicated with a lot of chemical graphs.

'Okay... so they first tested the toxin...' she whispered. 'They tried with one neurotoxin after another... But none had an effect fast enough... So they combined them? So that's why it took so long to start the tests... Blah, Blah, Blah... Negative. Negative. Positive. BTX and TeNT... whatever it was... was successfully combined and a small amount of toxin would have the right effect. They can kill in 30 minutes without antitoxin... That's not good.' Gahyeon gulped. ' Antidote was prepared along the process of inventing the toxin... That's good news... if you have the antidote.' she mumbled ironically.

She flipped the page.

'Start of the tests: November 2063... 3 months before dad's death?' Gahyeon frowned and looked through the first tests. Inserting the device in the object... Positive. All observations: positive. Not visible changes inside the organism. Toxins secured... '

Gahyeon sighed, rubbed her eyes, took a sip of the coffee, looked at the clock and read further through the documentation of months of tests.

At 4 am she barely saw and knew what she was reading. She had to read sentences a few times to get the sense.

Finally her head hit the desk and she closed her eyes, mumbling:

'Come on, dad... Help me...'

She woke up with a gigantic headache 3 hours later. She sleepily stood up, and took her empty cup, giving herself a mission to bring more coffee.

She ALMOST regretted, she threatened all the boys, she would cut their dicks off, if they would disturb her...

They could at least be useful and bring coffee.

She looked at the desk covered in papers, sketches, analysis and reports, feeling her energy was leaving her body, waving happy "Bye, bye' to her.

She tilted her head, when the title of the file caught her attention.

FIELD TESTS.

She opened it and frowned. She sat heavily on the chair, reading about the tests outside the laboratory, which started at the beginning of February 2064.

*Devices combined with nanocontainers with toxins - positive.*

*Devices synchronized with the system - positive.*

**Test 1:**

Area mapped to 10 square meters. Mechanical object leaving the area.

System alert in 0,01 second - positive.

Toxin released in 0,1 second - positive.

**Test 2:**

Area mapped to 10 square meters. Biological object leaving the area.

System alert in 0,01 second - positive.

Toxin released in 0,1 second - positive.

Monitoring of vital functions in the system - ON.

Antitoxin application in 1 minute - NEGATIVE.

Gahyeon blinked.

**Note:** *Biological object's vital function stopped in 30 seconds. The toxin wasn't the cause. The paralyzing of nerves was present, but didn't cause biological damage to the respiratory or cardiac system. The eardrums in the ears were found to be ruptured. Damage to the lungs. Spikes in blood pressure. Cause: sound intensity or radio impulse.*

**Conclusions:** *Microchips that activate the release of neurotoxins by radio impulse sent from computer, have a defect that causes cardiac arrest and brain damage.*

**Recommendations:** *further microchips tests or changes of activation form.*

Underneath the note there was her father's signature, next to information: TESTS POSTPONED. 16th of February 2064.

*Four days before dad and mom flew to Seoul to meet Kim Namjoon...* Gahyeon thought.

Yoongi didn't take over the company. Kyung did, but Yoongi wanted to sign every main decision. And as the rebellion was around the corner and they dealt with 3EO and ISA, they decided to close the branch responsible for military programs when investors backed away after Jaehyun's death...

Gahyeon looked at the boxes with papers in the corner of the room. The boxes she promised to deal with one day. They were from the time Yoongi was controlling Mins' Corporation...

She just needed one more information...

She dived inside the oldest papers. Until she dug the ones from the military branch. All the reports. All the closed projects...

Last report from the project manager:

*TESTS POSTPONED. 16th of February 2064.*

*NO AGREEMENT TO RESUME TESTING - 28th of February 2064.*

*PROJECT CLOSED - 2nd of June 2064.*

*6 prototypes of devices - Type A. Designation - green. Submitted for archive with documentation.*

*7 prototypes of devices - Type B. Designation - red. Submitted for archive with documentation. Suggested disposal.*

Gahyeon looked at her arm. Red diode. Type B.

Suggested for disposal and nobody ever thought to do it because the war started...

Gahyeon threw herself on the floor and looked at the ceiling.

'Okay, so what does that give me?'

Yoongi and Jungkook were sitting in Handong's room. Yoongi was reading and Jungkook was just sticking to him, so he won't feel guilty.

Suddenly the door opened with a bang, and Gahyeon jumping on her feet, came in, shanting:

'Mom! Mom! Mom! Mom! Mommy!!!!' She ignored Yoongi and Jungkook and stopped near Handong's bed. 'How do you feel?' she asked fast.

'Good.' Handong replied quietly, and sat, resting her back on the pillow.

'Mom! There were just 7 prototypes! And they all have the defect, because nobody ever resumed testing!'

Handong sighed.

'Thank... god...'

'Dad stopped the tests. And we closed the project after his death. There were just 7 of them in the archive!'

'Good...'

Yoongi grunted.

'What are you talking about?'

Gahyeon took a deep breath and started to speak fast:

'Those devices were never supposed to be used! Because they have a defect! They don't exactly explode! They make the cells in the body explode and cause the brain and heart damage. There is no boom!'

'It doesn't change the fact they would kill us...'

'Yes!' Gahyeon nodded happily. 'But! The chip is activated by the radio impulse and that is when the damage happens! That's why they took all the electronic devices from here! Even dad's antique radio from 1910! That's why even Taeil doesn't have a phone here! Because they didn't want to risk the damaged microchips would react to anything and make us explode by accident!'

'Okay. It makes sense. But what does it change?'

Gahyeon sighed frustrated.

'There is no way, they will explode if we don't cross the mapped area... Unless the one who controls them sends the signal directly...'

'You mean... we can take them out?' Jungkook asked.

'Yeah!' Gahyeon frowned. 'I'm 90% sure...'

'So there is still a 10% risk we will explode in the end?' Yoongi asked.

Gahyeon squinted her eyes.

'We can test it on you...'

Yoongi rolled his eyes and said calmly:

'Gahy... you discovered something unbelievable... but we have to think this through. I guess they will stop working as soon as we will take them out?'

'Yeah...'

'And they will know about it?'

'If someone is monitoring it... yeah...'

'And we will have to practically cut them out of our bodies?'

Gahyeon nodded.

'And they still have your soulmate...'

Gahyeon looked at him with wide, sad eyes.

Yoongi put his hand on Gahyeon's arm.

'So we have to make a good plan. And do it at the right moment...'

'What if they will want to hurt Jungkook again?' she whispered.

Yoongi's eyes traveled to Jungkook.

'We have to hurry up then...' he smirked.

**9th of November 2071, Yeongcheon**

Taehyung entered the resting area in their base in Yeongcheon and saw Jimin sitting on the couch. They came back from Andong 2 hours ago.

Bam, who wasn't leaving Taehyung's side most of the time, ran to him excitedly. And started whining for cuddles.

Jimin smiled and started to pet his head.

Taehyung sat next to his friend.

'If I failed you... I'm sorry...' he whispered.

Jimin shook his head.

'It's me who is sorry, Tae... I felt guilty around you... Because of what happened with Jungkook lately.'

'You could have told me...' Taehyung said. 'I would calm you down...'

Jimin looked at him.

'How?'

'If you feel guilty around me... And I still feel comfortable and safe around you... What does that mean?' Taehyung smiled lightly. 'Shouldn't I be scared? Or avoided you too?'

Jimin's eyes filled with tears.

'I'm not saying everything is fine and I am okay with someone hurting HIM...' Taehyung choked out. 'But I won't assume, your soulmate is the enemy, till I know facts.'

Jimin nodded, gulping tears.

'But if he happens to be an asshole... you always have your online friend alternative...' he nudged Jimin with his shoulder. 'I'm sure we can figure something out with destiny...'

As soon as Taehyung said that, something clicked in his head.

'He deleted his account suddenly...' Jimin snorted with bitter laughter.

Taehyung gulped.

'Deleted an account? When?'

'Around February? I'm not sure...' Jimin shrugged. 'What does it matter?'

'We were once wondering...' Taehyung said slowly. '...what is the probability of you having a crush on your online friend, if he is not your soulmate...' Taehyung looked at Jimin. 'And he deleted his account a month before I felt HIM again...'

Jimin blinked. He realized Taehyung still couldn't say out loud Jungkook's name, but it wasn't important right now. What Taehyung just said?

'That would be a HUGE coincidence...' Jimin said, stretching words.

They looked at each other thinking the same: nothing's a coincidence.

'If they are together...' Jimin started slowly.

He pulled out his phone and they started to run to Yoohyeon.

'Can you track the deleted account?' Taehyung asked.

'Even if it was removed - yeah.' Yoohyeon nodded.

Jimin gave her his phone.

'We used this app and shared this link to an online drive...' Jimin told her and showed her the history of his chat.

'Okay... I will see what I can do...'

'Is it possible you will track the place where the phone is?'

'I'm not a wizard...' Yoohyeon shook her head. 'If you don't have a phone number - no.'

'Check what you can...' Taehyung sighed. 'Thanks! We are going to plan the observation... Call us if you find anything.'

'What am I even looking for?' Yoohyeon asked.

'Jimin's soulmate...' Taehyung replied.

'And Jungkook together with him...' Jimin added.

Yoohyeon huffed.

'I will make it quick.'

**10th of November 2071, Daegu**

Yoongi couldn't sleep and it was pissing him off.

He was constantly thinking about the decision that had to make and the risk they had to take...

There were so many "what-ifs".

What if they were wrong?

What if Kyung fixed the devices in the meantime?

What if they will try to take Jungkook away from here if they will delay the escape?

What if it will be too hard for mom?

What if they won't find a place to hide?

And the worst one:

What if they kill Gahyeon's soulmate?

Yoongi - too tired to sleep - turned on the side and just layed there, sulking he can't even sleep anymore...

His tired mind was tricking him. He heard knocking on the glass.

It repeated...

He opened his eyes and almost got a heart attack, seeing a person all in black on his balcony...

His balcony on the **second** floor.

He jumped on the back and made a few steps backwards, wondering if he should run or just hit the guy with the bedside lamp, when the person waved energetically, seeing he was up.

The slim men took off the hood and mask.

That's not how assassins are behaving right.

Another, this time irritated knock, was heard in the room. The men pointed to the doors.

Yoongi squinted his eyes.

He moved to the window, not to the balcony and opened it slightly.

'Who the fuck are you?' he asked.

'Imagine me with long, blond hair and you will know...' a sassy reply came.

Yoongi checked out the slim body in black outfit and heavy boots and reached the face. His eyes widened.

'REN?!'

'Shhhh!! Do you think the watchmens let me in here to surprise you?!' Ren whispered.

'But you were a girl?!'

Yoongi opened the balcony doors.

'Because powerful men tend to let their secretaries slide a lot, thinking they are stupid. It is easier to melt in...' Ren came inside, shivering.

He looked quite... different. He looked like a thief or spy. Thigh black pants, black combat jacket, hood over the head.

If not his face and specific notes of voice, he heard in some words, Yoongi would never guess it was him.

'Where were you?' he whispered.

Ren closed the doors and sighed:

'They caught me... I was actually lucky. They caught me pretending I am a girl and spying on them... They took me to some kind of laboratory where they were imprisoning Interdependatns and made me work for them as the help there. There were people with light separation syndrome there and forcefully separated Sealers...'

'For what they caught you?'

'I was looking for Song. I tried to get any info about what they did to him or where they hid him... One wrong move and Joryoung's soulmate started to be suspicious of me. At the beginning of October last year I came too close to discover why they caught him and not the rest of his group. And that was it....'

'Could they haven't killed you!' Yoongi breathed out.

'Yeah... Well they need free help to clean and cook, so that they can shut their mouth without a second thought... They can't let too many soldiers see the places where they keep Interdependants... They would finally revolt...'

'How did you get out?' Yoongi asked.

'Three weeks ago some group of Interdependants, connected to MOI, freed the laboratory... It took a week to sneak inside the city again... I was waiting to meet you somewhere but my contacts from the Crisis Management Office said nobody saw you for the last 9 months... So I came here and for the last 4 days was wondering why the hell the house is surrounded by guards and the only person who gets out is Min Taeil... What the fuck is going on Min?!' He checked Yoongi out. 'As I can see you are able to walk! Why the hell haven't you grabbed your sister and tried to sneak out or made Wooyoung and San fly above the fencing?! What do they have on you?'

Yoongi looked at him with a done face. He showed him his forearm.

'First - tracking devices that can make my body change into fireworks... Second - my mother...'

'Whoa! Whoa! They can explode if you leave the house?!'

'If I cross the fencing - yes.'

'That's not good!'

'No shit Sherlock!' Yoongi snapped sarcastically.

'Can you take them out?'

'Gahyeon discovered we can a few days ago... '

'Then what are you waiting for?!'

'Will you stop disturbing me?' Yoongi glared at her. Him!

*Ren was a HE!* - he reminded himself sternly.

'Okay so what is stopping you...';

Yoongi sighed and closed his eyes hopelessly.

'They have Gahyeon's soulmate... What if they kill him? Use him against her? Force her to come back... Or just... made her suffer?'

Ren's jaw dropped. He was staring at Yoongi with wide eyes and even paler face than usual.

'So yeah! I am battling with myself! Risking Jungkook, Wooyoung and San's safety, because I am fucking afraid they will irreversibly destroy my sister...' he spilled out everything what was on his heart and breathed out.

'Who is Jungkook?' Ren asked dumbfounded, before he facepalmed. 'That's not important right now!'

'So you see I have to...'

'YOONGI!' Ren grabbed his arms and shook him. 'They don't have Gahyeon's soulmate! They have TAEIL'S!'

Yoongi's lips parted. He was staring at Ren as if he suddenly had three heads and 8 arms.

'What?' he asked weakly.

'That's what I discovered! That's what I overheard and that's why they closed me! I was lucky it wasn't Hajun, but Joryoung, who was questioning me! I made something up, but managed to not... spill the truth...' Ren whispered, making a weak step back.

Yoongi saw a bit of fear and pain in his eyes...

What they had done to him during questioning?

'Are you okay?' Yoongi asked quietly.

Ren nodded without a word.

'I was looking for Song... and I discovered they caught him not because they knew what he was doing... They discovered his mark. It was the perfect leash for your uncle... I told you, he would do anything for Taeil... So they...'

'Song... is Taeil's soulmate?'

'Yeah... That's why he is hidden somewhere not in any other interdependants prison. He is their gem... they can't lose him.'

'I understand, but... it doesn't change the fact that they have Ghayeon's soulmate as well... I saw the recording. I saw the mark...'

'The mark can be changed. The recording can be fake.' Ren said fast.

'Do you think I didn't consider that?!' Yoongi said, irritated. 'SHE REACTED! They hurt that person and she looked as if her soul was breaking! In front of my fucking eyes!'

Ren frowned, looking confused for a moment.

'Who was in the room at that moment?' he asked, thoughtfully.

Yoongi sighed.

'Uncle... aunt... Hajun...'

'Here is your explanation. Hajun have the power to bring pain. Make someone suffer... Suffocate. Bring death even... Make someone panic. Play with mind. You know what his sacred treasure is? What Hyerim is using?'

Yoongi shook his head.

'Scythe. They call her the Messenger of Death in the Army.'

Yoongi gulped.

'What if you are wrong? What if they have my sister's soulmate?'

'THEY DON'T!'

'HOW CAN YOU BE SO SURE!'

Ren, with irritation, harshly took off his glove and showed the back of his palm to Yoongi.

Seeing Yoongi more shocked than before, Ren closed his eyes, when they got wet.

'During questioning I was protecting three things. What I guessed about Song. That I am interdependent... and THIS mark. Because if they would discover it... they would use me against her just like you were afraid of...'

'How did you hide it...?' Yoongi whispered.

'First with make up. Then with hanna. When the situation got hard... I got a fake tattoo to cover this one. I was lucky... It lasted for the halftime in the prison. After questioning they didn't come back to me...' Ren looked down.

'Since when do you know about her?' Yoongi couldn't speak louder. He was still too shocked.

'I was in elementary school with you and her...' he said. 'In the normal one... Not the fancy one for Interdependants... I was in the field when they attacked her. That's when I saw her mark... I will never forgive myself for being so shocked and scared.'

'Same...' Yoongi understood this feeling perfectly. He wasn't there either.

'I was standing, not knowing what to do while Taehyung helped her...' Ren laughed bitterly, shaking his head.

'Taehyung?'

'Yeah. The boy who was on the basketball team with me... Then she and you were taken from that school. Taehyung disappear too. When I finished that school Dokhyun sent me abroad to military school...'

'Dokhyun?!'

Ren looked at Yoongi hesitantly. Then he sighed heavily and whispered:

'My name is Na Ren. I am Dokhyun's nephew.'

Yoongi sat heavily on the bed.

'Can you spare me more shocks, please?' he whined, hiding his face. 'Explain...'

'Do you really think it is the time for my life story?'

'We are talking about the leader of ISA! The one who led us through the Rebellion! Yes I think it is needed!'

'I had two fathers. One of them went through all the procedures to have me... But something went wrong, he died during the C-section. My second father, Dokhyun's brother... couldn't stand it. Couldn't fight the separation syndrome... So he killed himself. Dokhyun didn't... manage to stop him. After that I was raised by him. Then fucking Inho appeard and I was send abroad. That's it! Inho was the only one who would know I am an Interdependant. That's why I was avoiding him.'

'He didn't know you came back to Korea?'

Ren shook his head. He crouched down in front of Yoongi.

'Yoongi... You have to get out of here. I will help. Make a plan. Tell me the time tomorrow... I will help you sneak out of the city and hide.'

'Tomorrow?'

'I will need two days to organize everything... You don't have any reason to stay here anymore, right?'

'Well... we can be wrong and still explode...' Yoongi snorted.

'At some point they will decide to kill you here either way or do something worse... Maybe the risk is worth it...' Ren said.

He went to the doors.

'I have to go...'

Yoongi looked at him.

'Don't you want... to meet her?'

Ren looked at him sadly.

'Not yet. The city is dangerous. If anything happens to me... after the meeting, she would just suffer more, right?'

He didn't wait for Yoongi's response. He opened the balcony and disappeared in the night.

Yoongi stood up and closed the doors. He looked at the slim figure in black climbing down the building. He pressed his lips tightly.

'They together will be a pain in the ass...' then he smirked. 'She will doll him up just for fun...'

It was absolutely unexpected... So many good things happened in few days...

Desirable discovery of divices defect by pure accident. Ren appearing unexpectedly with so many beneficial infos...

Stroke of fate...

But he was calling it...

**Serendipity.**

---

⭐⭐*Serendipity - occurence of making poleasant and desirable discoveries by pure accident. The occurrence and development of events by chance in a happy or beneficial way.*⭐⭐

NUE'EST Ren!!!

I love his part in "Let me out". I love Let me out overall, so... But Ren is a cutie!

Just look at him!

Gahyeon will be the death of this poor guy!

And big applouse for Gahy! UwU Girls are wilding!

How was the chapter dear readers?

Feeling better now?

BlairWitch91❤❤

# Chapter 55: Mizpah

**10th of November 2071, Yeongcheon**

Yoohyeon entered the kitchen, where Tae and Jimin were sitting, with her laptop.

'Okay, so... I don't have much.' she sighed. 'The email that the app was attached to is not attached to any other emails or accounts. Probably it was made especially for this purpose and the information there is faked...'

'How do you know?'

'Name: Suga. Second name: August. Birthday date: 2022-02-02...'

'That's not the birthday date he told me about...' Jimin frowned.

'Exactly. And either he made it up or you were texting with an almost 50 year old pervert...' Yoohyeon said.

Jimin glared at her.

'Oh believe me he is not a pervert and he is an absolute dick when it comes to personal details...'

'Oh, so... the disk you were using... Here we have something more useful... The files were uploaded using the wifi, so we have the router IP. But it is currently shut down. I can't localize it... But usually this IP was used in this district...' she showed the map of Daegu. 'From different devices. All are turned off. Can't detect them...'

'Okay... we have to start somewhere and that's a place as good as any other...' Taehyung said. 'Thanks, Yoo...'

'No problem.'

'One team will start the observation from the North, the second one from the West, near Gyeongsan...' Taehyung pointed to the map. 'We will keep away from the gates for now... They don't think someone will cross such a high iron wall.'

'We have to check the surroundings and movements near the gates around these areas...' Jimin said.

'Yeah, we will start with this. We have to wait for the Red Alert either way... They should be back in  a week from Andong. After they will help there... Naeun said, she will pinpoint someone who knows the city well... Then we will decide which

side to cross. Till then we will observe the gates from afar.'

'No matter what will happen, we are not crossing the wall without them?' Yoohyeon wanted to make sure.

'Yeah. So whatever Dami will say, tame her...' Jimin patted Yoohyeon's back.

'We are going to check the gates near the wall where we would want to cross it for now.' Taehyung decided. 'Dami, Yoohyeon, Minho and Jimin in one team. Me, Yeonjun, Soobin and Han in the second one.'

'Okay.' Yoohyeon nodded. 'I will tell the others...'

**11th of November 2071, Daegu**

Yoongi waited till the afternoon. When Taeil left the house, all gathered in Handong's room. They still considered it the safest place in the house even being 90% sure they were not bugged.

'If we want to get out... We have to decide fast. And do it soon...' he said without beating around the bush.

Jungkook looked at him instantly. With hope in his eyes.

'I'm okay with it, but why so suddenly?' San frowned.

Yoongi glanced shortly at Gahyeon and then turned his eyes at San.

'Last night Ren appeared...' he said quietly.

'WHAT?!' Wooyoung whispered-screamed. 'How?! Where was she?! How did she find us?!'

'Well she...' Yoongi started and stopped. 'Eeee... you know... Ren is not quite the person we thought she was...' he said, scratching his head.

'Meaning?' San asked.

'Ren is guy.' Yoongi spilled the tea.

Wooyoung blinked and shook his head as if he misheard.

'Wha?'

'Ren... the blond chick in killer high heels?' San made sure.

Yoongi nodded.

'Yeah...'

'A-are you sure it's the same person?'

'YES. I. AM!' Yoongi said, irritated.

'That's WOOOOW!! Jeeze! I respect him so much for those high heels!' Wooyoung said, putting his hand over his heart.

'And as I thought he is an Interdependent too. He was just masquing well...'

Yoongi told them the whole story, hiding just the fact about Ren being Gahyeon's soulmate. The situation was fragile... and he shouldn't be the one to tell her...

Not to mention she would pester him to let them meet and Yoongi wasn't going to suffer from her whining...

'So? Are we going to do this?' Yoongi asked, looking at each of them.

'We won't be sure more in a week...' San said and sighed. 'Gahy, how much time do you think we will have after removing the devices?'

'If they are tracking them constantly - around 10 minutes. If they just look at it from time to time? Around 30 or more. I wouldn't consider more...'

'So... after the removal of the first one... We will have like 10 minutes to get out of here, till they will try to check the house?' Wooyoung asked.

'And then we will have to be really fast with the rest...' Jungkook noticed.

'You remember that there is still the chance... I'm wrong....' Gahyeon whispered.

'So we will have to decide who will go first... and who will do it...'

'We will just cut them out like that?' Gahyeon asked, unsure. 'What if Taeil will hear out screams and wake up?

Yoongi frowned.

'We can just knock him out or barricade his doors...' Wooyoung shrugged.

'To risky...' Yoongi shook his head.

'Sleeping pills?' Jungkook said suddenly.

'What?' Gahyeon looked at him and he pointed to Handong who was stretching her hand to her night table.

'Sleeping pills! Mom, you are a genius!' she said. 'We can just put them in every drink in the house!'

'Okay. We can do that...' Yoongi agreed. 'The question is... who...'

'I will...' Jungkook said, but Yoongi already pointed his finger at him.

'Shut up, kid! It definitely won't be you! You have a soulmate, remember? It can't be San, Wooyoung or Gahyeon either...'

'Bullshit! You have a soulmate too!' Jungkook said angrily.

'Having a soulmate can't be an argument!' San said, standing in between them. 'We will let destiny decide... We will draw.'

Wooyoung gulped but nodded.

'Okay, but I will be the one who will cut it out.' Yoongi said. 'I'm the most skilled with wounds...'

'We need the second person too. We have to be fast.' Jungkook reminded him. 'So I will do it... I'm skilled with knives...'

'I will bring matches.' Gahyeon said quietly, but then a whisper was heard.

'Yoongi... Me. First.'

Yoongi turned to her instantly.

'Sorry, mom, but it is not going to happen...' he said, shaking his head.

Handong glared at him and moved his hand as if she was chasing the others out of the room.

'Alone.' she said sternly.

'I won't talk with you alone! It is out of the question mom! No way...'

'Yeah! What are you talking about, mom!?' Gahyeon stood next to him. 'We are taking you with us!'

Handong was giving them a determined, hard look. She closed her eyes and started to breathe heavily, as if she was frustrated with herself.

Yoongi walked to her and started to calmingly stroke her shoulder.

'It's okay mom... Calm down. Don't stress...'

'No more of your sacrifices.' Handong said fluently. Her voice echoed in the room with power. 'My. Kids. Won't. Risk.' she gulped.

'Risking your life is a sacrifice!' Yoongi screamed.

'Half of me... is already... death... Yoonie...'

'It's not true! You are getting better!' Gahyeon said.

Jungkook came closer and said calmingly:

'It's okay, ma'am... we won't let them risk... We will figure this out...'

'Stay out of it...' Yoongi warned him.

Handong turned her head to Jungkook. He took another deep breath.

'You... don't remember... but I do...' she said. 'Minji... Jin... Hoseok... Joon...' she teared up. 'Our kids... won't suffer... more...'

'Mom...' Gahyeon said with a shaky voice. 'You are not thinking straight... You are tired...'

Handong gritted her teeth. She looked at each of them.

'Your... soulmates... will suffer... like me...' she shut her eyes. 'Don't do it to them!'

She laid heavily on the pillow.

'Me first. It's not... request!' she looked at Yoongi with strength.

Yoongi was looking at her for a long time, before turning to Gahyeon.

'You are 90% sure?' he asked.

'Y-yeah... but...' she gulped, tearing up.

He pressed his fingers to his eyes.

'Okay, mom... It's the fucking last hard choice you made me make!' he whispered and walked out not looking at any of them.

Gahyeon sat on the bed next to Handong. She crawled on it and laid down next to her mom, hugging her, without a word.

Jungkook took the sleeping pills from the night table.

'We will make sure, Taeil will drink them...' he whispered.

They left them mother and daughter alone.

'Everything will be okay... Every misery has its end, right? Is it time for karma to show us good things?' Wooyoung said, when they entered the kitchen.

'I trust Gahy...' San said. 'She is a brainiac... She figured this out.'

They took all drinks from the fridge. Water from cabinets.'

'Leave something for us.' San said, taking few bottles.

Jungkook took the bottle with pills.

'One or two?' he asked.

'Give him four.' Wooyoung said mischievously.

'I will crush all of them then...' Jungkook said. 'Hopefully when he wakes up... we will be far away from here...'

'If he will wake up earlier... then we will just punch him.' Wyooung said happily, nodded to himself, while whistling.

******

Ren appeared around midnight.

'Are you able to help us tomorrow night?' Yoongi asked him.

He knew it... that if he had more time he would find a million excuses not to take risks...

Ren looked at him.

'Okay...' he breathed out heavily, thinking fast. 'When you leave the mansion, go to the end of the street. I will be waiting there. We will go through Apsan Park. We will leave the urban area and hide inside the forest as fast as we can... Wooyoung and San will be able to cross the wall?'

'Sure... But my mom is sick. It will be hard.'

'We will manage. Don't worry about it...' he calmed him down. 'I will have cars hidden from Chengdo side. We can go to Chengdo... People who were saved from prison have some safeties there...'

'As soon as we get out of here it will be okay... We will figure out later where to go.' Yoongi sighed.

'Take water and wear warm clothes.' Ren said. 'We will have to walk a lot.' he said, going to the balcony doors.

'We will get mom first. Then Gahy. Jungkook... and me. Wish us luck...'

'Luck is on my side for a while now...' Ren winked at him.

'Do I have to remind you, you were captured and imprisoned for a year?'

'But I was saved, right? And now I am here...' Ren smiled. 'Stop being a pessimist Yoongs!' he disappeared in the night.

Yoongi squinted his eyes.

'I will stop being one, when life will give me a reason to.'

**12th of November 2071, Daegu**

Around 2 am Jungkook was laying on the bed for a long time before he finally managed to fall asleep. He should rest... He knew he should.

But his heart was beating so fast...

Getting out of here...

It was making him afraid. Stressed. Excited.

Will he be able to see the Angel soon? Will he find him? Will he get his memory back if he runs away from here? What if he won't?

He brushed the stressing thoughts on the back of his mind, because he knew he should sleep. He closed his eyes and recollected all the feelings he felt being here...

All the comfort that his soulmate brought him even from afar.

And finally he felt the relaxing feeling of heaviness in his limbs and started to doze off, when the known paralysis came.

For a second he panicked.

Not now! Oh, god! Please, not now! Not when we are almost out!

'How are you, lil bro?' the presence asked. 'Awwww... panicking again? How cute...'

And Jungkook realized... that if he wanted him to be satisfied and go away he shouldn't calm down this feeling. It was important... Especially now.

'So you know... I'm looking for your soulmate! Are you happy? I hope so! It's a gift for you! Next time I want him to watch how they torture you!'

Jungkook felt the coldness near the bed. As if a thick, cold mist was getting closer.

'But I am getting pretty frustrated here... It was soooooo easy to catch you... And now when he is on my playground I can't find him... Do you think he doesn't want to see you?' the presence asked with a mocking voice. 'Maybe I should put you as bait, huh?'

Jungkook felt the suffocating feeling as if his lungs couldn't take in the air. Then the feeling vanished and appeared again a second later...

'So frustrated... ' the presence said and an anger appeared in its voice. 'That I don't care... how will you explain THIS!'

Jungkook felt a stinging, burning pain in his thigh. A dagger went deeper and deeper inside the muscle and then was twisted.

But he couldn't scream. He was paralyzed. Not even a single sound left his mouth. But he was screaming... he was screaming internally.

But it was just a physical pain. He was not paralyzed by fear, nor his soul was in pain. He knew his soulmate wouldn't feel this...

And somehow... he was relieved he wouldn't...

The shadow stopped pressing the dagger deeper and left in Jungkook's leg.

'You know... I have a scar from centuries ago... A scar in this place...' he moved the night left and right. 'A scar... made by YOUR soulmate... with YOUR sword... So you should thank HIM for this pain... don't you think? Don't soulmates share

absolutely everything? Even the revange?'

Jungkook was catching harsh breaths and the Presence was absolutely enjoying his state. He could feel the creepy happiness.

'By the way... my name is Nonahi... Not that you will remember this tomorrow... But you see it means... '*everything*'... I really deserved everything... When I... introduced my wife to my mothers... they offered me this power as a wedding gift... "*the bond to share for a lifetime*"... I thought: Why not? We were heroes... Beloved heroes... Worshiped. We were saving people. We were famous in the whole ancient world... We were like gods! But it started to be too much... Too much need around. Too many pleads and requests... So I started to decide what I WANT to do. Not what is right. I started to consider what is better for ME! Who was giving me more! And my wife didn't like that... She started to refuse to unseal me. DO YOU GET IT?! SHE REFUSED!!! SHE WAS BLOCKING MY OWN POWER!! POWER WHICH WAS GIVEN TO ME! Not to her! She was just a Holder! Just a freaking chain around my chest! Suffocating me! Stopping me! How dare she decide to unseal me or not! I'm still mad when I remember that! Frustration of being caged! Muzzled!'

The rumbling stopped and the giggle was heard.

'Oh, just like you know, so you get the drill... Isn't it... maddening? So... one time I used the opportunity... I poured all my power inside the sacred treasure she was holding... I sucked her soul inside it... She went absolutely crazy without her soul... So she stabbed herself with my Sacred Treasure which contained mine and her power... And she broke the chain between us. Isn't it cute? She is always with me... Inside me...'

The shadow took out the dagger form Jungkook's leg.

'Sometimes I like to look at my palm... the mark looks almost like her screaming face... It reminds me that I am not chained anymore...'

The Presence started to walk around the bed.

'You won't happen when you are not chained? You are unlimited... I always could use all kinds... but you don't understand what that gives me... So I will tell you, so you won't foolishly think ever again, you can beat me...' Jungkook felt the lips on his ear. 'Every soul... in this sad world... is my toy...'

The presence moved, leaving the overwhelming need of sleep.

'Sleep now... I have more scars I can paint on you...'

Jungkook knew he shouldn't fall asleep. He shouldn't because the blood loss from

the wound would be too big...

'Don't worry... It won't kill you... You will wake up in an hour...' a creepy giggle said and shadows left the room.

The paralysis vanished too. But Jungkook was sleeping...

*********

An hour later Jungkook opened his eyes. His head was spinning. He felt an overwhelming weakness.

He sat on the bed and looked at the sheet soaked with blood. Good, it wasn't in any vein... He shook his head and groaned in pain, trying to stand up.

'FUCKING SHIT!' he cursed.

No! He had to manage! They were getting out of here in 24 hours.

And he will rather die than let the plan fail!

He looked at the wound. It wasn't that bad. The bleeding wasn't that hard anymore.

Thanks for Interdependants' regeneration ability!

He took the pillow cover and pressed it to the wound.

Clenching his teeth he reached Yoongi's room. The walking was painful, but he forced himself. He will walk, because he could. And he had to be able to run too!

'Hyung...' he breathed out and pressed his back to the wall, when he entered the room. 'Yoongi!'

Yoongi sleepily sat on the bed with still closed eyes.

'Hmm...'

'Hyung... help...'

Yoongi at once opened his eyes. He jumped out of the bed.

'What happened?!'

'My leg... He came...'

Yoongi turned on the lights. He fastly helped Jungkook to lay on his bed.

'Fuck! I have to bring medicine from mom's. Don't lose consciousness!'

'I won't!'

Yoongi ran to Handong's bathroom, where all the medicine from the times she was hurting herself were. The powder to stop bleeding. The antiseptics. Bandages... Morphine.

How many times will he have to sew wounds before this madness will end?! He wasn't a fucking doctor!

Gahyeon lifted her head from the pillow. She was sleeping with Handong to comfort herself.

'Oppa?'

'Jungkook is hurt...' Yoongi said fast and ran out of the room.

Gahyeon went right after him.

Yoongi first made a shot with morphine.

'Fucking shit! How will you walk?!' he whispered, shaking his head.

'I will. Don't worry...' Jungkook said through clenched teeth.

Gahyeon without a word started to clean the wound. They both were pretty skilled. They had a nurse around mom, but they went through training to take care of her and during the war. They knew what to do...

'You will get another wound on your shoulder from the device, how...' Yoongi said.

'I will! Don't think about how! I have to get out of here!'

'We can wait...'

'No we can't! In a week it still won't heal. And HE will come back... what will he do next time. I will get wound after wound... We are getting out of here till I have just this one!' Jungkook gritted his teeth.

Yoongi sighed.

'Okay...' he started to work around the wound.

'Don't worry...' Gahyeon said, helping him. 'Wooyoung or San will carry him if needed...'

'They already have to carry mom...' Yoongi shook his head. 'This is getting more and more risky...'

'Maybe... but it is the first time since 9 months I don't feel like a ghost, closed in this house... And... you know... They won't kill us. If anything they will just trap us again...' she said, smiling bitterly.

'Oh... yeah... I'd rather die...'

'Exactly...' Gahyeon nodded, while Jungkook was falling asleep. 'If we let him sleep through the day, he will be better in the evening. But he is right. Each of us would run even with bullets in our legs...'

Yoongi glanced at Jungkook.

Yeah... the kid was strong.

And in his place Yoongi wouldn't back away either...

**13th of November 2071, Daegu**

It was 2 pm.

Yoongi, Jungkook, Wooyoung, San and Gahyeon were standing in a small circle in Handong's bedroom.

Jungkook was almost as pale as Handong. But his leg was tightly bandaged. He was dragged with painkillers and he knew how Taboo hurt...

This was nothing...

Yoongi took out a sharpened small pocket knife and disinfected it. He sighed and turned to Handong.

'Are you sure, mom?' he whispered.

She nodded calmly.

'Is Taeil sleeping?' San asked.

Gahyeon nodded.

'Like a baby. I broke the lamp near his bed and he didn't even change his breathing pace...'

'Okay...' Yoongi moved to Handong's bed with the knife and tongs.

'After you cut the skin from four sides. You should be able to pull it. It's stuck in the muscle so it will hurt...' she looked at Handong, who pressed her own hand to her mouth.

She looked at Yoongi with so much gentleness and love, he couldn't even swallow. They gave her the last one shot of morphine they had.

He looked at her arm and took a deep breath. His hand was slightly shivering when he pressed the blade to the white delicate skin. He made the first small cut, and Handong groaned.

The rest were looking through the doors, being outside the room.

He made a second cut faster and gulped. The third and fourth ones made the drops of blood run down the arm.

He took the pliers and put them inside the wound. He heard his mom's muffled screams, when he was tearing the tissues to grab the small device inside.

'Make it fast...' Gahyeon whispered, tearing up. 'No need to think now...'

Yoongi closed his and pulled the device out of the wound. He was counting milliseconds in his head. He was waiting for an explosion...

Yoongi peeked from barely opened eyelids, expecting a white light everywhere and his father welcoming him in heaven.

He looked around and blinked. Everything was like a second ago... Expect the fact he was holding pincers with a device covered in blood and flesh.

'It worked!? IT WORKED!' Gahyeon squealed. 'Wooyoung! You next! Go! Go!'

Jungkook was already next to Handong's bed, limping slightly on his way. He pushed Yoongi and fastly bandaged the small wound. Next he helped Handong put on two blouses and the jacket.

Gahyeon took the pincers from Yoongi and disinfected it. In the meantime San pecked Wooyoung's lips, before cutting his arm in four places, just like Yoongi did before.

Wooyoung clenched his teeth, breathing through them. Gahyeon grabbed the device with pincers and pulled it without a thought.

At the same moment she did that and Wooyoung screamed, San pressed his lips to his, swallowing the sound.

Gahyeon pressed the gauze to his wound and kissed his cheek.

'Wasn't that bad, right?'

Wooyoung gulped hard.

'I want another one if I am getting spoiled like that...'

Yoongi came out of shock hearing that.

'Get a grip, idiot!'

Jungkook helped Handong to get up from bed, while Wooyoung was putting on the jacket.

'Ready?' Wooyoung asked and took her in his arms. Little wings in his sandals moved and he floated in the air.

Yoongi opened the window.

'Ren has black hair now. Short. Don't get confused... He will be waiting at the end of the street...'

Gahyeon just removed the device from San, while Jungkook was holding San from behind, pressing his palm to his mouth so he could scream without a sound.

'Yoongi!' Gahyeon hurried him up, while Jungkook was bandaging San, who was breathing heavily, taming the pain.

San grabbed Gahyeon from behind. He cuddled her and did the same thing with her mouth, as Jungkook did to him, to muffle his scream, when Yoongi cut her skin and pulled out the device.

Jungkook was standing near the patch.

The adrenaline was so high they were doing everything fast, quiet and with instinct only. Gahyeon put on her warm clothes and took a backpack, before San grabbed her waist and flew with her through the window.

Jungkook and Yoongi looked at each other.

'You first...' Yoongi said.

Jungkook didn't argue this time. He turned around and took off his shirt.

Yoongi made a cut on his back shoulder, while Jungkook clenched his fists and teeth, to stop himself from screaming in a second.

'On three...' Yoongi whispered. 'One... Two...' he pulled the device hard. The red dot stopped blinking.

'You said "three"' Jungkook breathed out heavily. 'Jerk...'

'Always works.' Yoongi said. and but a gauze and bandaid on Jungkook's back.

Jungkook put on his shirt, hoodie and jacket.

Yoongi showed him his forearm.

'What if we damage the vein?' Jungkook asked quietly, taking the knife.

'Then I will bleed more...' Yoongi rolled his eyes. 'Shut up and pull this fucker out!'

Wooyoung flew back to the room, when Yoongi bite on his hand not to scream, while Jungkook pulled out the tracker from his forearm, who started to bleed awfully.

'Shit!'

'I will just bandage it tightly!' Yoongi said. 'GO!'

'But...'

'GO! San will be here in a minute! GO!'

Jungkook grabbed the backpack.

'Get on my back... I won't carry you like a princess... Mrs Min is light as a feather...' Wooyoung showing his back.

Jungkook shrugged and Wooyoung piggybacking him flew through the window.

Yoongi managed to bandage his arm, put on clothes, take his backpack and lock the doors frominside. They locked all the doors in the house to slow down the searching...

San came inside.

'Gahy and your mom are with Ren. Ready?'

'Nothing keeps me here now...'

He jumped on San's back and they left the Mins' house with one person inside.

Sleeping peacefully - Min Taeil.

*********

Ren was standing still around the corner of the street. He chose this place for a reason. It was the small back alley of a rich houses district with high fencing to protect privacy. There weren't any lights there. Well currently half of the city lights were turned off to save energy... It was to their advantage.

He was peeking at the time. He had a backpack on his bag. He had three phones, spare water, five maps and a compass. And only one gun...

Two cars he hid were waiting outside the wall.

Yoongi was 5 minutes late already... Ren started to bite his nails, when Wooyoung gently and quietly, landed a few meters away from him. He was holding a woman in his arms.

'I had to make sure you are the one...' he said. 'Jeeze! You really are a dude! I thought Yoongi pranked us!'

'Pranked?' Ren frowned. 'Yoongi?'

'Right.' Wooyoung made a face.

He put Handong down on the street. 'This Mrs Min Handong. Yoongi's mother. Ma'am I will leave you here for a moment...'

Ren came closer and smiled at her.

'We will hide in the shadows, ok?' He led her to the wooden fencing. 'It's good to rest now... We will have to walk for some time...'

Wooyoung flew away and a moment later San landed with a red haired girl.

'Ren - Gahyeon. Gahyeon - Ren.' San introduced them. 'I'm going for Yoongi!' he jumped and disappeared in the sky.

'Oh, you are so pretty! No wonder they believed you were a girl!' Gahyeon smiled.

Ren blushed instantly.

'Hi...' he said, crouching near Handong.

'Are you okay, mom?' Gahyeon walked to them.

Handong nodded. Gahyeon embraced her with her arm while Ren was peeking at her with the corner of his eyes.

Wooyoung came back a moment later, and a guy slid from his back.

'Jungkook... this is Ren. Our friend.' He said and they walked closer.

Ren stood up.

'You are wounded?' he asked, seeing Jungkook carefully putting his feet.

'I won't slow you down.' Jungkook assured him, quietly.

'With San and Wooyoung it is not a problem. I'm just thinking about how we will go... It will be better for you and Mrs Min to go fast first and then slow down. We have to get out of the city faster so we can slow down later, outside the wall. But doing that will put us further from the cars...'

'I don't know the city. You do... I'm okay with whatever...' Jungkook said.

'How did you get inside this mess?' Ren asked.

'Literally, because of this...'

Jungkook pointed out a leaflet on the ground, which was stuck under Wooyoung's shoe. The leaflet with the VK mark and the legend...

'What do you mean? You were looking for the sign?' Ren giggled.

'No. He literally has one.' Gahyeon said, simply. 'On his chest.'

'VK mark Sealer from legends.' Wooyoung patted Jungkook's pack.

Ren's jaw dropped.

'You are kidding me right?'

'Nope.' Wooyoung shook his head with a smile.

'What is this shitshow!?' Yoongi asked before even getting down from San's back. 'Do you think it's so kind of getting-back-together? It took us 25 minutes! If you don't want to get out of here I am going back to sleep!'

'Jeeze, more grumpy than usual!' Gahyeon and Ren said at the same time.

They looked at each other and Gahy showed her teeth with a full smile, while Ren only smirked.

Yoongi grunted and glared at Ren, who fastly said:

'Wooyoung and San... take Mrs Handong and Jungkook to the end of Apsan Park.' he said, giving one of the phones to Wooyoung. 'When we enter the woods we can run, but through the streets it is better you won't be seen. For us it will take around 30 minutes to get there. Wait for us...' Ren said.

Jungkook opened his mouth.

'You will need your stamina later... After we will get out of the city, we still have 7 km to walk. In the darkness. Inside the woods...'

'He is right.' San grabbed Jungkook and before the other could protest he flew in the air with him.

Wooyoung took Handong and flew after him.

Ren, Yoongi and Gahyeon walking fast through the streets, pretending just to be friends on the night walk.

It took them 2,5 hours to reach the wall inside the woods, surrounding the city. San and Wooyoung were carrying and flying with Handong from time to time.

It was hard. They were tripping constantly. And they were in the middle...

Jungkook slid through the iron wall, breathing deeply. He was covered in sweat and he thought the fever probably started.

But he was out of prison. The nature was surrounding him... the forest was cold, wet and... fresh.

Ren gave him a bottle of water.

'You're holding up. You are trained. You walk fast...'

'I think I am used to running through the woods...' Jungkook said.

'You think?' Ren frowned.

'They blocked my memory...'

'Are they that scared of you?' Ren snorted and it made Jungkook smirk.

'It seems they do...'

Ren helped Jungkook to get up.

'Kook... Can I call you that? If you have to slow down or need help... just tell us. Okay? If we will have to drag your unconscious body it will just piss us off, you know?

Jungkook tilted his head curiously and smiled lightly:

'You have the same kind of direct, dark humor like Gahy...'

Ren blushed.

'Well... I will take it as a compliment...' He took his backpack and said. 'Okay... Yoongi, take the other phone. There are only each other's numbers there. Here are the maps. They have marks pointing to the place where the cars are. They are covered in branches between trees. The keys are hidden on the back tire from the left side. In phones... there are saved data with localisation of them but don't use the coordinates if it won't be absolutely necessary... When we cross the wall, we will be like 7 km from 902 road. The wall is blocking it. That's why it is not in use... The cars are around there...'

Everybody looked at the maps and memorized them, before hiding them in pockets. Yoongi, Ren and Wooyoung were holding flashlights.They had only three.

'Ready?' Ren asked.

Wooyoung and San grabbed Gahyeon and Handong and flew above the high iron wall effortlessly.

They were walking for an hour already, when Jungkook stumbled and Yoongi stopped. He lightened up his face with a flashlight. Even his lips were white. He light followed to his leg. His pants were soaked with blood.

'I knew it! Your wound opened!' he growled.

'Just half an hour left... I will manage... Don't slow them down...' Jungkook said quietly, pointing with his head to the rest who were a bit further.

Yoongi took out his belt and tightened it above Jungkook's wound.

'It will slow down the bleeding but we have to take care of it fast...' he said.

'Thank you...'

'Shhh!!! Quiet!' Ren said suddenly. 'I think I heard...'

Voices. Sirens. Dogs barking.

'We have to run!' Ren said. 'We are half an hour from the road! Wooyoung, San! Take Gahyeon and Handong! And go!'

'How did they find us?!' San asked. 'Here?! Inside the woods!?'

'I don't fucking know! GO!'

Jungkook turned into the voices direction and frowned.

'Let's split!' Ren insisted. 'They are going right at us!' He grabbed Gahyeon's hand and took out the gun.

'San take Jungkook! Wooyoung take mom!' Yoongi started.

A bullet and right after it some kind of green power hit the trees around them.

'RUN!!' Ren screamed. 'To the west and then all the time and then to the south!'

He pulled Gahyeon after himself, running.

'Woo! Take mom away from here!!' Gahyeon screamed.

The bullet ran above Handong's head, so Wooyoung grabbed her and flew above the trees.

San followed him when he saw the power chasing after him.

Jungkook grabbed Yoongi's wrist and pulled him to run, going only on adrenaline rush.

'You won't fucking die because of me here!' he said.

'Gahy!' Yoongi yelled, when she and Ren disappeared in the darkness.

'You will call them! I'm slowing you down! They will reach there faster!'

Jungkook was breathing heavily, but he was running and forcing Yoongi to run too.

'Jungkook! We will get lost!'

They heard the bullets... Voices getting closer...

Suddenly Yoongi realized something.

'Jungkook! We can't go there! There is another road there! They came from there!'

Jungkook stopped.

He looked around.

'They are tracking me...' he whispered.

'What?'

'The necklaces... The kidnapping... How did they find us this fast? Outside of the city?'

Yoongi's eyes widened.

'Go! Find the rest!' Jungkook screamed and started to run. 'Find my soulmate! Come back for me!'

'WHAT?!' Yoongi stood for a moment in shock in the darkness, when Jungkook went on some kind of suicide mission to rescue them. 'YOU FUCKER! COME BACK HERE!'

Yoongi started to chase after him.

**(🎶 Music tip: *βios /β*ίος / ***Bios by Hiroyuki Sawano, Mika Kobayashi*** from Guilty Crown🎶)**

Jungkook was running. He was running as if his life depended on it. He was afraid he would lose him in the flashlight.

Even when he was wounded, Yoongi couldn't reach him... When he saw Jungkook slow down. He was sure his bleeding finally was too severe...

But Jungkook slowly turned his figure to the west.

Jungkook's heart was beating fast. To fast. He couldn't breathe... His vision doubled.

The shadows were getting longer. There was something so soothing in the patches of moonlight through the trees...

He heard the barking of dogs and he wanted to go there...

He started to run there. Chasing the moonlight.

Yoongi was screaming after him...

'Jungkook! You are going right at them!'

But he would be safer without him around...

'WAIT! WAIT!!'

But it wasn't Yoongi's voice...

Jungkook had a sudden need to stop...

This voice...

He didn't manage to halt his moves, when someone clashed with him. He instinctively started to fight and pull out.

'JUNGKOOK! IT'S ME!! IT'S ME!!!'

Jungkook tried to fight. But he was weak. He couldn't pull away.

To his clouded mind came trembling voice, chanting:

'It's me... It's me... It's me...'

The arms which held him, blocking his moves... weren't hurting him.

They felt...

Familiar...

He slowly stopped trying to get away from the grip. He looked at face. He didn't

know it...

A slim hand was pressed to his chest...

'It's me...'

He didn't know the face...

But those eyes...

A hand slid through his neck on the skin, behind the shirt.

He felt a known comfort...

He knew those eyes...

'Koo... it's me...'

Jungkook blinked and, when the gentle jade light started to beam through his clothes, he whispered:

'I... know... you...'

*They were standing in front of each other on the deserted planet in the soulmate dimension. Surrounded by eachose and scenes from all their life, displayed like a movie on the screen.*

*Taehyung looked around. It was never like that...*

*'What is this?' he asked.*

*Jungkook also looked around.*

*'Memories... Closed inside the necklace...' he said slowly. 'My mind power broke it, when you unsealed me... Memories - they've taken away from me...'*

*Taehyung looked at his face... He was deadly pale...*

*And so... so beautiful...*

*There was too much to say now...*

*And yet no words were coming out.*

*Jungkook turned his eyes to him and they were filled with tears.*

*'We can't stay here... They are in danger...'*

*Taehyung nodded and closed his eyes, to hold his emotions. He knew Jungkook would feel them either way. But there was too much to feel right now. Here they were always together... It felt as if they were never apart...*

*But they were... And it was too much of a pain to release now...*

*Jungkook took the red seed from his chest.*

*'It's not just a protection...' he said and opened it like a music box. He put the smaller jade seed inside it and gave it to Taehyung.*

*'You know what to do...' he said. 'I have to fix this...' Jungkook pointed out the memories.*

*Taehyung gulped and took the seed, brushing his fingers over Jungkook's.*

*'I will take care of the rest then...'*

*'Taehyung...'*

*Taehyung raised his eyes at Jungkook, who was smiling at him with a teary, bunny smile.*

*Jungkook shook his head.*

*'Just wanted to say your name...'*

*Taehyung smiled lightly and closed his fingers on the seed, making the soulmate dimension sparkle in jade light.*

When Yoongi saw Jungkook struggling with someone, he wanted to go there to help, when an arrow was pointed right in his face.

'Stay where you are...' a quiet voice said.

'Why were you chasing after him?' the second guy asked, with a light surrounding him.

'BAM! Sit!' the third man said to the dog, he was holding on to the collar.

The dog desperately wanted to go to the wrestling men. He was whining and squealing.

Yoongi looked at them. They weren't from the Army... but he knew those uniforms...

'You don't understand! You will hurt him! This boy has amnesia! And he is wounded!'

'Taehyung won't hurt him...' the man holding a bow said.

Yoongi looked between the men to see the wrestling stopped. A bright jade light was coming out from Jungkook... It wasn't red as Yoongi remembered.

'What is he doing to him?' he asked.

'Unsealing... Even if Jungkook doesn't recognize him... He will recognize his soul...'

'YOU ARE UNDER ARREST! PUT THAT DOWN!' The soldiers of the Army of the Republic surrounded them, holding guns.

But before anyone could react an enormous beam of jade light ran to the sky, lightening everything around. It was entangled by the red threads...

The effect of releasing such a power caused them to stumble back. Some kind of shield embraced three men, Yoongi and the dog.

Yoongi fell to his knees. He couldn't take his eyes from the blinding light.

He understood now...

The power Jungkook had inside him wasn't something a human being could hold...

Unless it was someone designed to hold it...

When the lights soaked inside the ground, Yoongi saw a person floating above the ground as if there was no gravity.

The man, they called Taehyung, was securing Jungkook's submassive body with his left arm, bending his knee to make a seat for the unconscious boy, who was embracing the other's neck.

In his right hand a sparkling sword was held above his hand.

Taehyung opened his eyes, they were full of anger. Grief. Rage.

Lost time. Overwhelming longing. Jungkook's pain...

Jungkook's blood...

He felt the power flowing through him. The power was different from the one he knew, but at the same time familiar. Just more dangerous and uncontrollable.

The soldiers started to scream. Guns were pointed at him instantly.

Not leaving Jungkook's body even for a second, he combined all kinds of powers.

The air and earth were moving for him now.

He felt Jungkook in his arms after so long, nothing could touch them now...

The shots were pointed at them instantly but he only swung his sword once and he destroyed them all.

The light around him was so bright even Yeonjun and Soobin couldn't keep their eyes open.

'ATTACK!' Oh Joryoung screamed.

Different powers were used against him, to stop him. But Taehyung was just flying through them like a meteor. Cutting them with his sword. One after another.

Yeonjun was keeping Soobin close on the ground, when Taehyung's unlimited power was around.

He heard the voice in his head:

*Yeonjun, take the rest to base. I will clean here...*

*Are you sure?*

*Yeah... Keep an eye on that guy until I will question him... I put him to sleep for now.*

*Understood.*

*Inform Dami's team to come back asap. Go.*

*And you?*

*I have to take Jungkook to my fathers...*

Yeonjun didn't ask: how? Taehyung was moving so fast he was barely seeing him right now. He was just a patch of light between trees with a deadly sword in his hand.

He repeated to the rest what Taehyung said and slowly stood up.

Soldiers around them were all down. Taehyung moved further inside the forest, driven by fury.

He and Soobin took the sleeping person under his arms and dragged him to the car.

When Taehyung was sure no soldier was left inside the forest, he flew above the commander. He looked at him from above.

They were all alive. They were paralyzed... But the case was the marks were slowly fading away from their chests and hands.

Jungkook's pure power wasn't killing if it wasn't necessary... It wasn't causing the Separation syndrome...

It was erasing the gift of *Eader-eisimeleach*... The ability to use the power of the soul.

Taehyung put the sword on the empty scabbard on his back. He grabbed Jungkook under his knees and flew into the night sky.

**13th of November 2071, Andong, 7:00 am.**

**(🎶Music tip: Coming home by NCT U🎶)**

Taehyung slowly fell to the ground, in front of the small house in the forest. His feet touched the grass.

He kneeled holding Jungkook.

'DAD! APPA!!' he screamed, using both his voice and power to call them.

Namjoon and Jin ran out in their pajamas on the cold November air. They stood in the doorframe and their eyes widened, when not minding their own bare feet, they ran through the frozen ground.

They fell on their knees near him and Jin fastly unsealed Namjoon. Who pressed his both hands to Jungkook's wet from blood body.

He sniffed, while moving his hands, and pouring his power inside.

Jin lifted his disbelieving gaze at Taehyung, but his son wasn't looking anywhere else... only at Jungkook's face.

Taehyung's fingers were gently caressing his forehead, cheeks, nose...

'He lost lot of blood...' Namjoon said. 'I will restore some... We need to give him nutritions too...'

Jin nodded. He could go for the medicine, but instead he wrapped Jungkook with his bandaids gently. Giving him everything he had... with love and a bit of tears.

Namjoon wiped his eyes with the back of his palm, staining his face with a bit of blood. He turned his head to scream.

'MINJI!! BRING BLANKETS!! HOSEOK!!! WARM WATER TO DRINK!'

Few minutes later Minji ran out of the house, with closed eyes, holding blankets in her arms.

'What's happening?' she asked, walking to them fast, when she stopped in the middle.

The blankets dropped on the ground.

And right on them one drop after another falling from Minji's eyes.

She pressed her shivering palm to her mouth.

Hoseok walked out holding a cup, he noticed an absolutely frozen Minji and his eyes slowly ran to the people kneeling near the entrance.

A cup smashed with a bang on the platform.

He shook his head in disbelief.

Minji turned to him, sobbing, she demanded a confirmation.

'H-hobi... It's... It's... Jungkook... It is... right?'

'It's him...' Taehyung whispered, not looking at anything else beside Jungkook's face.

Hoseok couldn't say a word... His lips were trembling. He hid his face in his hands and cried out loud, bending in half.

Namjoon looked at Jungkook... Colors were slowly coming back to his face.

His lips started to have a naturally pink color.

'I healed all the wounds he had...' he whispered, not being able to say anything louder, through tears, coming out from his throat.

Jin touched Taehyung's shoulder gently.

'You can wake him up...' he said softly.

Minji was embracing herself, trying to stop the shivers, when she was looking at how Taehyung touched his mark and said: *Seal.* The sword on his back lightened up, and started to sink inside Jungkook's body like a gentle rain.

Jungkook took a deeper breath and slowly opened his eyes.

Jungkook met Taehyung's gaze and he slowly reached his hand to Taehyung's cheek to wipe a lonely tear.

'Don't cry, Angel... I'm with you...' he whispered.

Taehyung pulled him closer, hugging him tightly to his chest. Taking his breath away. Jungkook wasn't any better. He wrapped his arms around Taehyung's neck. His arms tried to tighten his grip around it several times, pulling it closer, even if it was impossible.

Minji looked through tears, bent to grab the blankets and went to the boys with it. She covered Taehyung's back, wrapping it around Jungkook's body too. Making

them warm together. She kneeled next to them and ruffled Taehyung's hair and hid his face in Jungkook's hair.

'Hi, honey...' she whispered, weeping silently.

'Hi, mom...' Jungkook choked out, having his face still pressed to Taehyung's neck. Inhaling his sent.

Hoseok sat on the other side of them and took Jungkook's hand, which Jungkook squeezed tightly.

Jin embraced Taehyung with his arm and put his head on his shoulder. Namjoon was looking at his completed family, being an absolute mess and stroked Jungkook's arm.

'Welcome home...' he whispered, sniffing.

Pressing his nose to Taehyung's warm skin, Jungkook muttered:

'I'm home...'

---

**MIZPAH** *(PRON. miz-pa) it is a Hebrew word which means: the deep emotional bond between people, especially those separated by distance or death.*

If I could I would describe with details which moment of Bios song is right for which paragraph like in movie! □□

This is the possition Taehyung was holding Jungkook during unsealing level one.

And if someone want to see similar scene, with the music from Bios vibes. Here it is. I love it so much.... 😭😭

https://youtu.be/Jh8hOCm6Dhg

Cause above video is blocked here it is. the same scene from 01:10 to 02:00

https://youtu.be/W3RPhCw5g2g

I could have put here such a cliffhanger, but I stopped myself...

Love for me <---------- put here.

Do you like the new cover? 

And are you okay now? 

BlairWitch91💙💙

# Chapter 56: On Your Own

Nonahi - The Lord of The Shadows - was standing on the iron wall, looking at the ray of jade light, coming out from a forest shrouded in darkness. Reaching the sky. Lightening the darkness around.

'*Leannan* are reunited...'

He smirked.

'The war began.'

**13th of November 2071, Yeongcheon, 6:30 am.**

Yeonjun was driving. He looked in the rear view mirror to check on the bluemold-haired, sleeping guy, sitting next to Minho.

Bam had already claimed his new friend's lap as his property... His head was not leaving it, but at least he stopped whining, what he was doing, since Taehyung took away his dada, before he could even greet him.

His butt was laying on Minho which was also a clear sign they weren't on good terms now, since Minho was the one who kept him on the leash.

Bam hid his nose under the new guy's palm.

Minho frowned. It was strange... Really strange for Bam. Besides Taehyung and Jungkook's closest people, he didn't trust anyone...

Did he feel Jungkook's scent on him or something? This guy didn't try to attack them and try to help Jungkook too, not knowing who they were... And what had he said? Amnesia?

Jungkook lost his memories?

Well Yeonjun said the right thing. Even if he won't remember Taehyung or them, his soul would recognize their souls.

Minho's eyes followed through his posture to the men's face.

'He is wounded...' he said when he noticed streams of blood going from under the sleeve of his right hand.

'We will be there in 15 minutes...' Yeonjun said. He peeked at silently sniffing Soobin. 'Baby... I love you to the core, but can you stop? I will burst into tears in a second if you won't...'

'And I will if you two will, so hold it together, will you?' Minho kicked Soobin's seat.

'Jungkook...' Soobin choked out.

Yeonjun teared up.

They called Dami half an hour ago. And the only thing she said was: 'Bullshit! We are going back. I will whoop your ass for this. It's not funny.'

So Soobin called Jimin. And he has been crying since then.

'Taehyung found Jungkook... He has him. He took him to his parents...' Soobin choked out.

Jimin was silent for so long, Soobin thought he disconnected by accident.

'Jimin?'

'Thank you...' that's all he heard.

In the next second Minho's phone rang and he picked it up.

'TELL ME IT'S NOT A JOKE!!!' Han yelled.

'It's not.'

'IF YOU ARE LYING TO ME YOU ARE BAN FROM SEX!'

'I'M NOT! It was a total accident! Or destiny! Call it however you want! Taehyung got Jungkook and we got a guy who was with him.'

'What guy?'

'A guy with fancy weird blue hair...'

'Sent me a pic...'

'For what!?'

'Because we will be there in an hour and I wanna see now!'

'In a minute I will ban YOU from sex...' Mingo growled.

'No, you won't...' Han said sassily. 'You are not that cruel... HEY! WHAT ARE YOU DOING?!'

Minho frowned, when Dami growled through the phone:

'He will call you back! When I won't be forced to listen to it!'

Minho looked at his phone as if it suddenly got Dami's stern and judging gaze.

'Is she on her period or what?' he asked, pouting.

'She seemed fine to me in the morning...' Soobin sniffed again.

'Can you stop discussing my best friend's body issues?' Yeonjun asked absolutely done with Minho at this point. 'Do you all realize how close we were to miss him?!'

Minho took a picture and sent it to Han, asking:

'What do you mean?'

'When we were going in the night we decided by the drop of a coin, which team is going where...' Yeonjun whispered, shaking his head in disbelief. 'If our Team would go there and Dami's team would be here... We wouldn't find him...'

He looked at the road recollecting the chain of dominos, which led them to that forest, at that exact time...

*Sudden change of plans.*

*The drop of coins, which decided that Taehyung, Minho, Yeonjun and Soobin are going to the closer destination.*

*And because they were going closer... Taehyung decided to take Bam with them...*

*It was around 3 am. They were driving around, checking the roads and how many cars in the night were passing them by. Making notes they checked the whole west east side of the iron wall. It was around 5 am when the traffic got a bit heavier. And they wanted to observe how the closest to Yeongcheon gate was working.*

*So they drive them, not getting too close.*

*But then... sudden commotion around the gate and column of military and government cars, passing them on the road, made them frown.*

*There were no military movements from this side of the city...*

*Yeonjun was driving, so he looked at Taehyung, who nodded.*

*'Be careful... Keep distance.'*

*So Yeonjun turned the car and they followed the cars. When they saw the soldiers - with guns and unsealed soldiers with their weapons - getting out and running to the forest, they stopped too.*

*'They are chasing after someone...' Taehyung said. 'Let's check. Stay close... Don't get involved...'*

*They hide the car and are surrounded by Minho's shield with Bam near Taehyung's leg, staying quiet and careful even hearing all the screams, gunshots and dogs barking.*

*They were keeping their distance from soldiers, observing, trying to figure out what was going on from their screams.*

*Taehyung started to strangely spacing out, looking through the darkness of the forest at the patches of moonlight.*

*They were walking between trees, when Bam started to act as he didn't before. He started to pull the leash and growl with a low tone. What was strange... he didn't listen to Taehyung.*

*'Bam...' Taehyung said warningly, but the dog whined and started to pull the leash desperately.*

*The dog barked loudly.*

*'Shhh! They will hear us!' Minho whispered nervously.*

*Taehyung spaced out again and looked at the squealing dog. Then in the darkness between the forest. He bent and took off his leash.*

*'What are you...?' Yeonjun gasped, when Taehyung said:*

*'Bam! Search!'*

*The dog sprang like an arrow between the trees and Taehyung followed him, throwing the leash to Minho.*

*When after few minutes of running they saw the dog going in different direction and Taehyung following the shadow in the different one, their eyes widened and Minho grabbed the dog, at the same moment they found a guy near the place when Taehyung grabbed a person and their hearts stopped for a moment, when they heard his voice:*

*'JUNGKOOK! IT'S ME!'*

Yeonjun snapped from the flashback, parking in front of their base. Now, when he was thinking about it... Taehyung had to recognize something strange in Bam's behavior and trusted it. Because the dog could recognize Jungkook's voice when they weren't able to hear it between all the sounds. And he could smell his scent or his blood on the path... They were following Jungkook in the darkness without even knowing about it...

Change of plans. Drop of Coin. Bam.

Most would call it - coincidence.

But all of them knew... It was the destiny of The Lovers.

The Red String that was connecting them, constantly pulling them closer...

'I will bring the first aid kit...' Minho took Bam to the house.

Yeonjun and Soobin carried the unconscious guy to the small living room and laid him on the couch.

'What are we doing with this guy? Are we closing him in the basement or...' Minho asked, coming back to them.

'I... don't think so...' Soobin whispered, with wide eyes. He just took the glove from the guy's wounded hand, and was staring at the mark on his palm. He slowly looked at Yeonjun.

*YM.*

They knew this mark all too well...

Minho, who was looking through the first aid kit, lifted his gaze at them, wondering why they got so silent suddenly, when his phone rang. He automatically picked it up.

'IS THAT BLUEMOLD HAIRED GUY WITH YOU?!' Jimin yelled.

'Yes... we are treating him right now... then we will...'

'I DON'T CARE WHAT TAEHYUNG ORDERED YOU! IF YOU WILL PULL EVEN

ONE HAIR FROM HIS HEAD I WILL FUCKING END YOU!'

'Whaaa!! Why is everybody yelling at me today!?' Minho gritted his teeth.

Yeonjun, hearing Jimin's scream, took pity on Minho and took the phone from his hand.

'Don't worry. We just took off his glove...' he just said.

'D-does...' Jimin stuttered.

'Yes.' Yeonjun said softly.

'W-was he with... Jungkook?'

'Yeah... Behaving pretty protectively towards him if you ask me...'

A long silence fell on the other side of the line, but finally Jimin whispered:

'Treat him well...'

'We will patch him up and put him in your bed.'

'We will be there in an hour...'

'Should we wrap him with a ribbon for you?' Yeonjun couldn't help, but tease him. All that was happening was rubbing on his nerves. He needed a bit of release...

'FUCK YOU!'

Yeonjun gave the phone back to Minho after Jimin disconnected and the three boys looked from above at the sleeping guy.

'Welcome... Jimin's soulmatie...' Minho smirked.

Soobin kneeled near the couch to take the jacket from the unconscious guy's arms and started to look at the wounded. He squirmed.

'It almost looks like a gunshot wound...' he said.

Yeonjun squinted his eyes and gasped suddenly.

'I saw this guy before!'

'What? When?!' Minho looked at him.

'We stole his car! Inside the mist when we were rescuing Taehyung's parents!' He

started to giggle. 'Oh my god! Jimin wil be so pissed when he realizes!'

Soobin cleaned the wound and put on new bandaids.

'Will have to do till uncles will come...' he sighed.

They carried him to one of the bedrooms where Jimin, Taehyung, Minho and Han were sleeping. They put him on Jimin's bed. Left his backpack near it and quietly closed the doors.

**13th of November 2071, Andong, 7 am.**

Jungkook was trembling.

Taehyung was trembling.

There was so much with them...

So much guilt. So much relief. So much held back pain, anger... tears.

They didn't have words either...

They were clinging to each other desperately and yet they couldn't calm down.

Even being surrounded by the safety of their parents arms...

But no matter how he wanted to stay here - inside Taehyung's embrace - Jungkook felt uneasy. As if there was something important that he overlooked.

'Taehyung...' he whispered.

He still couldn't believe it. How could he forget this name? He wanted to repeat it over and over again...

He gulped.

'Taehyung... where is Yoongi?'

'The guy with blue hair, who was with you is with Yeonjun and the rest in safety...' Taehyung whispered back, still hiding his face in Jungkook's neck, shutting his eyes tightly.

'And the rest?'

Taehyung frowned. He moved to look at Jungkook carefully.

'Rest? There was only one person with you...'

Jungkook shook his head.

'Gahyeon, San, Wooyoung, Ren and Mrs Min... Where are they?'

'Mrs Min?' Namjoon moved to look at him. 'You mean... Min Handong?'

'Yes... Yoongi's mom. We were imprisoned in their house... We ran away, but they tracked us too fast... and...' Jungkook's eyes widened. 'We got separated in the forest...' he grabbed Taehyung's arms in panic. 'We got separated!'

'Hey, hey, hey!' Taehyung pulled him closer. 'Calm down...'

Jungkook shook his head and tried to get up.

'I have to find them...'

Taehyung held him still.

Parents moved a bit to give them space.

'First of all: it's WE. And second of all: no! You are too weak!'

For a second Jungkook felt the irritation. This was the second he understood what Nonahi said when he told him, how frustrating it is when someone else is deciding when and how you can use your power.

But after this second passed, he, as well, understood something Nonahi didn't...

Care.

And trust.

'Taehyung...' he cupped the other one's cheek. For a moment he tasted the sweet name on his tongue, before speaking softly: 'I'm not weak when I am with you.'

Taehyung slowly lifted his gaze at him.

'I wouldn't survive with them. They haven't left me there... They are friends... And if you are looking for the five missing pieces of Red String - it's them!'

Taehyung's eyes widened.

'The President, Commanders and the Army will chase after them.'

Jungkook pressed his forehead to his and whispered:

'You are right... It's WE. And WE can't leave them now...'

Taehyung with a miserable gaze was looking at him, fighting with his protective instinct.

He just got him back... The least he wanted to do was put him in danger again...

But Jungkook's desperate grip on his shoulders forced him to think in a reasonable way.

It was Jungkook... His unbreakable men.

Taehyung sighed.

'How do you feel?' he asked demandingly.

He was ready to hear: I'm fine. Instead he heard something what, contrarily, made him calmer:

'Extremely pissed... So better give me someone to beat up.'

Taehyung snorted.

They both brushed aside for now all the things they should talk about, all the things they needed right now, all the things they wanted to say...

For their friends.

'Okay...' Taehyung breathed out, once more hugging Jungkook closer, to give himself a bit more courage.

Their parents, hearing their discussion, stood up, and helped them to get up too.

For a moment Jungkook's eyes fell on Minji. He suddenly hugged her.

'They told me you died...' he whispered with a trembling voice. 'They blocked my memories and told me all of you died...'

Minji shut her eyelids to stop the sudden tears, calming stroking Jungkook's hair.

'No, honey... you saved me...'

'When you say... President...' Namjoon suddenly said with a cold voice. 'You meant Min Kyung?'

Jungkook turned towards him.

'Yes... Yoongi's uncle.'

'So he knew where you were...'

'Yes.'

Namjoon's eyes darkened.

'I'm going with you...'

'We all are.' Hobi said, exchanging gazes with Namjoon.

'Wait... I think the necklace is a tracker...' Jungkook said, taking it off. 'I don't know how else they could have found us so fast...'

Jin took the necklace with the blue stone.

'I will wake up Baekhyun and Chanyeol. They will be able to say if it is...'

Jungkook looked at his torn, dirty clothes.

'I need a uniform...'

Hobi ruffled his hair.

'This time... you will wear mine.'

'My swords?'

'All your things are in Uljin...' Jin said sadly.

'Not all...' Hoseok said. 'I have your katana in the car...'

Jungkook looked at him.

Hoseok shrugged, looking at the ground..

'I was ready for your comeback any moment...'

Jungkook took a step and hugged his father tightly, without a word.

Simple - *I missed you* - wasn't enough to describe the feelings.

'We should get going... any minute we are losing track of them more...' Taehyung said and Jungkook nodded.

'I will prepare cars.' Namjoon said. '30 minutes.'

Taehyung found it extremely hard to let Jungkook go away from his eyesight even for a moment. He started to tremble as soon as he didn't see him for the 3 minutes which Jungkook spent in the bathroom.

Jungkook had the same reaction. No matter how fast he wanted to move. It wasn't fast enough. For 3 minutes in which he hadn't seen Taehyung and he suddenly felt as if he was kidnapped again or he was dreaming. Or he was about to wake up in an unknown bed, absolutely sure it was just his imagination or a trick made by Nonahi.

It was another kind of torture.

When he walked inside the room in the uniform, he looked at Taehyung and frowned:

'You dyed your hair...'

'You too.'

Jungkook shook his head.

'They dyed them...' he sighed. 'Never mind... We should get going.'

'You forgot about something...' Taehyung stopped him.

Jungkook looked at himself, when Taehyung made a step closer, took his hand and tied the red thread bracelet on his wrist. Then he took the bracelet with black beads, which he was wearing on his wrist next to the white one and put it gently too.

Jungkook looked at the bracelets and closed his eyes, to hide the pain.

Now he knew why he was touching this place constantly.

'I...' he choked out, having the sudden urge to apologize.

'Shhh....' Taehyung pressed his lips to Jungkook's forehead. 'We will talk later...' he whispered. 'If you tell me now... I fucking kill all of them...'

Jungkook took a deep breath.

'Let's go.'

**13th of November 2071, Yeongcheon, 8 am.**

Yoongi opened his eyes and looked at the unknown ceiling.

He didn't know where he was and who was around...

His forearm was neatly bandaged. His bag was near. He wasn't tied...

The situation didn't look bad at first glance... Okay, so Jungkook was with his soulmate - good. But was his sister, San and Wooyoung here too?

Yoongi felt something under his head and reached under the pillow. There were two things there.

An ipod... and a folded photo. Wanting to look at the photo he accidently pressed the button on ipod. The screen lightened up, showing the title: *Nevermind*.

His eyes widened... Could it be...?

With trembling hands he unfolded the photo. He instantly recognized Jungkook. And the same guy he saw in the forest, but with different hair...

But he focused on the blond person between them. Was this...?

Yoongi couldn't take his eyes away. He didn't know if a minute or an hour passed, but he finally snapped from his thoughts, hearing the buzzing.

He finally located the sound which was coming from his backpack. He fastly got up and took the phone out. Ren said there were only their numbers saved. He saw the name: Phone 1.

He picked up in a hurry.

'Ren?! San?!' he whispered-screaming.

There was silence for a moment.

'It was reckless, Yoongi.' he heard his uncle's voice. 'Now I can't do anything anymore... They got Taeil...'

'Uncle... please... let them go...'

'I can't...' Kyung said shortly. 'Your mother is with me. Wooyoung and San too. I will call the second number right after this. Catching Gahyeon is a matter of time... Bring the boy to the gate on route number 1.'

So they didn't have Gahy, Ren or Jungkook...

'Jungkook is not with me.' Yoongi whispered, gritting his teeth.

'You have an hour...'

The line fell silent.

Yoongi squeezed the phone and wanted to throw it on the wall. He started to pace quickly through the room.

'Fuck!' he mouthed, pressing his fingers to his eyelids. Wondering what he was supposed to do...

He was locked in the room with unknown people. If Jungkook would be here - he wouldn't be closed, right?

Jungkook's soulmate probably hated him, and his own soulmate too.

His sister was somewhere out there and he was praying Ren would stop her from doing anything stupid.

And San, Wooyoung and his mom were captured not even 8 hours after their escape...

He looked through the window and saw a car on the driveway. He was on the ground floor...

Yoongi didn't think much. He grabbed the backpack and on his toes he moved to the window.

He stopped and looked at the bed he woke up on. Besides the necessary things he took just one thing from his house - his notebook. He took it out now and found one of the pages. He slowly tore it out.

He put it under the pillow next to the photo and ipod, looking at the title, one final time...

He wrote it after the fatal incident when he tried to use Taboo on Jungkook... He hoped... one day he would be forgiven for this moment of shame in his life...

He scribbled on the clean page one sentence for Jungkook and put it on the sheets.

He gulped and quietly got out through the window.

**13th of November 2071, Daegu, 6:30 am. (Earlier)**

Gahyeon was being pulled, running through the dark forest. Ren turned off the flashlight, so they wouldn't be seen in the darkness.

They were tripping, falling and running blindly.

And she was just praying Wooyoung and San already took her mom far away from the danger.

'Just a bit more...' Ren breathed out, when the trees got rarer.

'Yoongi...' Gahyeon choked out.

'I swear... We will find him... But first... We have to make you safe...'

They slowed down when they saw the road through the trees.

'Okay...' Ren gulped and looked around. 'Wooyoung and San should be already...'

His words were stopped by the car, getting out from the forest road.

'It's them!' Gahyeon exclaimed with relief.

She wanted to run on the road, when suddenly, three government's cars stopped nearby, blocking the way.

Ren pulled Gahyeon on the ground.

'Stay!'

'But...!'

Few soldiers with rifles aimed at the car. San was behind the wheel. Wooyoung and Handong in the backseat.

'Get out of the car with your hands up!' one of the soldiers yelled.

From one of the cars Kyung got out.

'COME ON, GUYS! NO MATTER HOW FAR YOU WILL GO I WILL FIND YOU! HANDONG HAS A SECOND TRACKING DEVICE!'

'What?' Gahyeon whispered. 'NO! I would know!' She froze. 'Unless it was the first type... it would look like a mole...'

'YOONGS! I DON'T WANT TO HURT YOU! YOU HAD ALREADY HURT ENOUGH OF SOLDIERS IN THE FOREST!'

Wooyoung and San finally got out of the car with their hands up.

'It's just us.' San said.

'Where are the boy, Gahyeon and Yoongi?'

'We don't know...' Wooyoung said.

Chorong walked to them and helped Handong get out of the car.

'Mom...' Gahyeon whispered and wanted to get up, but Ren held her on the ground.

'You won't help her being a hostage yourself!' he whispered-screamed.

'They will take them!'

'And we will follow them! Okay?! Trust me!' Ren asked, pleadingly. 'Please!'

'I barely know you...' she whispered, tearing up.

'Then believe in the trust your brother has in me...' Ren gulped.

Chorong led Handong to Kyung.

Handong looked at her brother-in-law with disgust.

'Leave... the... kids...' she said through her teeth.

Kyung looked at her, almost tearing up. He still remembered the times when the

four of them were one team of friends.

'I'm sorry...' he pointed with his head to the car and Chorong together with one of the soldiers pushed Handong inside. Other soldiers took Wooyoung and San to the other car.

'No...' Gahyeon said, with tears dripping from her eyes.

Ren hugged brought her closer, embracing her with his arm.

'Search the forest. You have an hour...' Kyung said to the soldiers. 'After that I will make them come to me either way.'

'We need to go...' Ren whispered to Gahyeon and quietly stood up. He stretched his hand to her. 'Come... We will follow them. We have to outsmart them... We need to find another car somewhere.'

Gahyeon nodded and took his hand. They started to ran through the forest as far from the government cars as it was possible.

**13th of November 2071, Yeongcheon, 8 am. (currently)**

Yeonjun got out of the shower. Soobin was dozing off on the couch and Minho was in the basement where they had their supplies.

He looked through the window in the front yard expecting Dami's team to be here soon. He frowned when something in the picture was not fit right with him. Then his eyes widened.

THE CAR WAS NOT THERE!

He left the keys inside!!!!??????? Yeonjun realized. He was so in his thoughts he did!

'HE STOLE THE CAR!! GUYS!! GUYS!!! FUCKING HELL!!! I FUCKED UP!'

Soobin jumped on his feet.

'Huh?! What?'

'The guy!! Stole our car!!!!'

Soobin blinked without understanding a few times, before his jaw dropped.

'But why?!' He ran to the bedroom and unlocked it.

'Maybe he thought we kidnapped him! Who cares! That's not important right now! We don't have another car to go after him!'

'What's going on?' Minho came ran from the basement.

'The guy ran away!'

'Oh! No!!' Minho grabbed his head. 'We lost Jimin's soulmate in an hour! Chim will kill us!'

'Guys! He left that!' Soobin came with the paper in his hand.

*Jungkook,*

*My family is in danger. Stay safe. Hope we will see each other one day again...*

*Yoongi*

'Aaaaa!!!' Yeonjun took out his phone. 'TAEHYUNG! WE HAVE A PROBLEM!!! ... You see...' Yeonjun stuttering explained the situation.

Minho quickly closed Bam in the bedroom, where Taehyung was sleeping, so the pup would be calmer.

'Wear the clothes! We have to run after him! And find some car on the way...' he said.

'But we don't know where he went...' Soobin said.

Yeonjun disconnected and gulped.

'Okay... so we are fucked. Taehyung is calling Dami... and that means... Jimin will know in minutes...'

**13th of November 2071, Road from Andong to Daegu (currently)**

Namjoon, Hoseok, Taehyung and Jungkook were in one car, while Baekhyun, Chanyeol, Jin and Minji were in the second.

Jungkook was looking at the necklace on his neck. Baekhyun gave it back to him after a hard hug. He said nothing he could detect could indicate it is a tracker.

'I still wonder how they found us if they didn't track me...' Jungkook frowned.

'I still can't believe you were in Mins' house all this time! I asked that fucker for help!' Namjoon hit the steering wheel furiously.

'I was lucky they put me there at some point... They woke me up in March. After they blocked my memory completely...' Jungkook said. 'Yoongi, Gahyeon, San and Wooyoung were protecting me... Yoongi told me my family is not dead. And I trusted him... I had to trust someone to not get crazy...' Jungkook whispered.

Taehyung glanced at him and turned right after to hide the pain the statement caused him.

'Min Gahyeon is Jaehyun's daughter...The girl Taehyung saved when he was eight...' Namjoon said.

'You all are connected...' Hoseok shook his head in disbelief. 'Fucking destiny has its tricks...'

'That's not just it...' Jungkook said and looked through the window. 'Yoongi is Jimin's soulmate...'

'What?!' Namjoon and Hoseok yelled in surprise.

Jungkook looked at Taehyung, who stayed silent.

'We suspected it...' the other whispered. 'That you are somewhere around Jimin's soulmate... There was a moment... We reacted at the same time...' Taehyung slowly turned his dark gaze at Jungkook. 'What had he done to you?'

Jungkook shook his head.

'Nothing. His uncle forced him to try using Taboo... The protection hurted him. And he is bothered by it more than me... I knew nothing would happen... He didn't. It caused more damage to him than to me...' he said calmingly, looking at Taehyung softly. 'He didn't do anything wrong...'

Well, Taehyung had a bit of a different opinion in this matter... Jungkook was his. Nobody could touch him and cause him pain... And so many people did...

Taehyung's phone started to ring.

'WHAT?!'

Jungkook gestured to him to put the phone on the speaker.

'He stole the car and left the note to Jungkook! It says his family is in danger...'

'Have you talked with him?' Jungkook asked.

For a moment Yeonjun fell completely silent, hearing Jungkook's voice for the first time in a while. Realizing he was really around.

'We... We didn't. We didn't even know he woke up!'

'So he either wanted to look for Gahyeon... or... Wait! Ren gave him a phone! Maybe they had called him...'

'Yeonjun, try to find a car! Our car had GPS. I will tell Yoohyeon to track it. She will send you a message with a destination. We are on our way!'

Taehyung disconnected and called Yoohyeon.

'Yoo!'

'Tae, is it...?'

'Yoo, track our car!' Jungkook cut her off. 'Yoongi stole it from Yeonjun and went somewhere! We have to know where!'

'STOP YELLING AT ME! I CAN HEAR YOU PERFE-...' Yoohyeon stopped in the middle of her outburst. A massive gulp was heard from the other side. 'K-kookie...?'

Jungkook pressed his fingers to his eyes.

'Yeah, puppy... It's me. Can you do that for me?'

'S-sure... I will call dad... Are you okay?'

'I am now...'

A dramatic sniffing, who strangely sounded like Han, was heard.

'Who is Yoongi?' Yoohyeon asked.

Jungkook and Taehyung exchanged glances. They knew Jimin was in the car...

'The guy who boys took to Yeongcheon...' Taehyung said carefully.

'THE GUY FROM THE PHOTO MINHO SEND US, STOLE OUR CAR?!' Yoohyeon screamed and a second later the squeal of brakes could be heard.

'Chim, what are you doing?!' Yoohyeon yelled.

'We passed a car like ours 15 minutes ago!' they heard Jimin's scream.

'Why are you turning?'

'FUCK! Send us the car's coordinates!' Taehyung said to Yoohyeon. 'Give me Jimin!'

'Jimin... don't be stupid!'

'It could be him!' Jimin cut him off.

Taehyung opened his mouth, but Jungkook touched his wrist.

'Jimin-ssi...' he said calmly. 'We are on our way... We won't let Yoongi hyung go anywhere anymore...'

Jimin was silent for a moment.

'Come fast. I have to hug the hell out of you, brat...'

Jungkook smiled painfully.

'On it.'

Few minutes later all the phones of Red String and Red Alert get the current location of the car Min Yoongi was in.

Taehyung nodded to Jungkook and unsealed him using both seeds.

'Stop the car...' he said to his father.

'Why?'

'We will be there faster...' Jungkook said and Namjoon stopped.

'How?' Hobi asked confusedly, looking at Jungkook through the rear view mirror.

Jungkook smirked.

'We will fly...'

Hobi frowned, not understanding.

Taehyung grabbed Jungkook's hand and they just jumped in the air, before Hoseok or Namjoon could even turn to look at them.

**13th of November 2071, Road from Gyeongsan to Daegu (currently)**

Gahyeon and Ren were walking through the forest, keeping an eye on the main road.

It's been more than an hour since they saw Kyung taking Handong and Woosan with him.

An hour when Gahyeon was holding her backpack in her hand, walking in silent stubborness. She was sniffing from time to time.

Ren didn't know what to do... They had to reach the first house and "borrow" some car...

He was just sure he couldn't let go of Gahyeon's hand.

'They will force me to go back to them, either way...' Gahyeon whispered finally.

'I won't let that happen...'

'They have my mom and brothers!'

'They don't have Yoongi!'

'They will force him to go there! And you know it!'

'That's why we have to stay outside to know where they are taking them...'

Gahyeon stopped and pulled her hand back harshly.

'WHY DID YOU EVEN SEPARATE ME FROM THEM!? From the very first moment I didn't know what was happening around and you were just pulling me! What the fuck, dude! What's your fucking problem! I barely know you!'

'Gahyeon... I know you are nervous, tired and sad...' Ren said quietly, trying to calm her down. 'But you have to stay safe!'

'WHY IS IT EVEN CONCERNING YOU! You popped out of nowhere!'

Ren closed his eyes.

'It's not the time to explain...'

'When will be the time then!? Maybe you work for them?!'

'I don't...' Ren said, fighting for patience.

'And what beside your words do you have as proof!?'

Ren grabbed her shoulders and shook her.

'I'M YOUR FUCKING SOULMATE!! IS IT ENOUGH OF A PROOF FOR YOU?!'

Gahyeon blinked.

Ren pulled his glove off and showed her his mark.

'IS IT ENOUGH?! CAN WE MOVE NOW!?'

Gahyeon's eyes dropped to his palm. Her lips parted. She tightened the grip on the backpack she was holding, absolutely frozen.

After a few minutes when Ren was glaring at her and she looked like a stone figure, barely breathing, she squinted her eyes.

She grabbed the backpack and hit Ren's shoulder.

'THEN WHAT...' Hit. 'ARE YOU!' Hit. 'WAITING FOR!' Hit. 'FUCKER?!'

Hit. Hit. Hit.

'Whaa...?' Ren tried to move to protect himself from hits with his hands.

'Unseal me this instant!'

Ren blushed.

'B-but we just met...'

'I'M NOT TELLING YOU TO MARRY ME!' she screamed and hit him again. 'Unseal me!! It can be useful, you dumbass!'

'Oh...' Ren's eyes widened. The pink color on his cheeks got darker. 'Right...' he grunted. 'How do I do that?'

Gahyeon lifted her eyebrows.

'You parents didn't teach you?' she asked gently.

'Let say they didn't have the chance...'

Gahyeon's eyes softened.

She unzipped her jacket and took Ren's hand. Ren gulped, when she led his hand under the hem of her hoodie. He dropped his eyes on the ground, when she pressed her hand between her breasts, in the middle of her chest.

'Look at me...'

Ren slowly and anxiously looked at her.

'It's instinctive...' she whispered and he got lost in her eyes. In her soul. 'Say *unseal* at the end...'

Few minutes later Ren saw the dark green light and felt the small object in his hand.

He took his hand out and looked at the spectacles with light green glass.

He frowned. Gahyeon was looking at him.

'What are they doing?' Ren asked, putting them on.

Gahyeon's eyes sparkled when she smirked.

'Telepathy. Teleportation. Telekinesis.'

She grabbed Ren's hand.

'Now we are talking!'

And she made them disappear.

They've stopped suddenly miles away. When Ren's phone started to ring. They had wobbly legs so they had to focus to keep their balance.

He frowned looking at the caller.

'It's the number of the phone I gave to Wooyoung...' he said and sighed. 'They want to lure you...'

'We have to know where they take them...' Gahyeon said and picked up the phone. 'Hello, you shitty excuse of an uncle...'

'Yoongi was nicer...'

'Nah... he is just more pissed... Why would it be nice to you?'

'I have your mother...'

'I know.'

'Gate on the road number 1. Yoongi is on his way already. Tell me where are you?'

'Are you kidding me?'

A sighed was heard.

'You have an hour then...'

'Or what?'

'Wooyoung will watch how they use Taboo on San...'

'YOU FUCKER!' Gahyeon yelled.

'I'm sorry Gahyeon... I tried to protect you. Now they have Taeil too. I can't do anything...'

'BURN IN HELL!' she disconnected, breathing heavily.

She teared up and Ren pulled her closer.

'Come... we will see what's going on. They think we will be there in an hour... We can be there much faster and observe.'

'Yeah... if it will be safe we can use the powers to get them back...' Gahyeon raised her head from his shoulder. 'Okay... I hope we will reach my stupid brother before he surrenders.'

They joined their fingers and Gahyeon teleported them again.

**13th of November 2071, Gate on the road number 1.**

**(🎶Music tip: The Last One Standing by Two Steps from Hell🎶)**

Yoongi was driving.

His was clenching his fists on the steering wheel.

A loop. A fucking loop he was in...

He thought he was getting out of it... Things were getting better... Just to be pulled down again and again.

He just hoped they wouldn't get Gahyeon and Ren... While driving he texted on the second phone number they should stay away.

He knew what his uncle wanted... He hoped Jungkook would come for them...

Not going to happen...

They were working to advantage of Jungkook's archenemy... Jungkook's soulmate won't just agree like that to let him risk...

He hit the steering wheel.

He was so close... So close! To meet Chim!

But maybe it is supposed to be like that? Maybe that was for the better, he won't drag him inside his family's mess.

Yoongi was driving with one thought. He hoped they would let go of Wooyoung and San in exchange for him. He knew they wouldn't let go of his mom... And if he would have a hint of luck... they won't lay a hand on Gahy or Ren.

Minutes were passing by. Each of them was getting him closer to being a prisoner again... To stay inside the loop. To not meet his soulmate...

At least Jungkook was safe...

At least him.

His hands started to sweat when entered road number 1. Just few miles were separating him from his mother and friends...

If they laid a finger on them...

Yeah, Yoongi could think like that and boil inside, wishing them death, but what could he actually do?

No guns, no powers...

He was defenseless and alone. Tired of fighting on his own again...

And he stopped the car being defenseless and alone in front of the blockade of cars on the road.

The Iron Wall was towering over them.

The Wall which was created to protect...

The same wall which became his prison.

He shut his eyes and recollected the face from the photo. At least he could carry this image in his heart now...

'Get out of the car! Hands up!'

Yoongi took a deep breath and shut down the engine. He got out of the car, but didn't raise his hands. He stood a few meters away from the blockade.

He glared at the crowd. He recognized Hajun. Hyerim , who was holding an enormous black scythe, was standing next to him. There behind his uncle, who was in the front. He had a ring on his finger... It meant his aunt was unsealed.

There was also Dasol in the crowd, with again, forcefully stolen sacred treasure probably. His aunt in the back was holding his mother's arm.

Wooyoung and San were held by the soldiers too.

'Enough of this childish play... come here, Yoongi...' Kyung said tiredly.

Yoongi clashed his eyes with him.

They were standing in front of each other like two gunfighters.

'Release San and Wooyoung...' Yoongi demanded.

Both of his friends instantly jerked up their heads.

Kyung sighed heavily.

'You have nothing to bargain with Yoongi... Don't make it harder...'

'You are a traitor!' Hajun said.

'Traitor of what? You?! I've never sworn anything to you... and your beliefs. Let them go. You don't need them...'

'Where is the boy?' Hyerim asked.

'I don't know... We got separated in the forest...' Yoongi said calmly.

**(🎶Music tip: Together We Fight by Devel Sullivan🎶)**

'You are leaving me no choice...' Kyung moved his finger and the ring changed its shape to metal chinese, which crawled through the ground.

'Uncle... Can you at least do one human thing?' Yoongi gritted his teeth. 'You have me... Let. Them. Go.'

The chains started to embrace Yoongi's ankles and chest.

There was a moment of hesitation and grief in Kyung's eyes. Or Yoongi hoped so...

The chain pulled him towards the troops, making him stumble.

His heart was ready.

In the end he did what was right. He didn't have any weapons. Just a simple outfit. He was born as one of the most powerful people in this city.... And he ended up being imprisoned by his own family...

He was in the reach of gunshots now. He automatically tried to resist the pulling, so another chain embraced his shoulders.

His mother screamed...

But before he could look at her, he heard the steps and a person, covered in black outfit from head to toe, fast as the wind appeared.

Sharp knives it was carrying, cut through the chains one after another.

The mysterious ninja stood in front of Yoongi and he swung his ninja swords, glaring at his uncle.

The person had a slander figure. Petite even...

'What do you think you are doing, brat?' Hajun yelled, but the person didn't answer. 'MIN! I have enough of this! Get him!'

More chains came in Yoongi's direction, but the person in front of him cut through them with his swords, dancing almost, moving beautifully.

'AIM!' Hyerim yelled and the soldiers raised their guns.

'NO! You will hit Yoongi!' Kyung screamed.

Yoongi was terrified. Nobody could stand a chance against so many bullets. This person wasn't using any power. And no matter the speed and grace the small person was moving with, it was a lost battle.

'No!' Yoongi stepped forward. 'Go away!'

The other ignored him, furiously protecting him against attacks from his uncle.

'Stop it!!' Yoongi yelled, glaring at his uncle. 'You got me! Don't hurt anybody else!!'

'Well, little soldier! You heard him...' Hajun angrily moved and grabbed the figure, who swiftly moved away from his grip, cutting through his shins.

'He can kiss my ass!'

'Are you fucking insane!? They will kill you!' Yoongi yelled.

The person again stood in front of Yoongi. Not backing even before the armed troops.

'You really think I will let you go, after finally finding you?'

The sudden, quiet words made Yoongi step back.

'What?'

The person looked back at him with teary eyes, he could see, between the hood and the mask.

'SHOOT!'

Yoongi heard the terrifying order, yelled by Hyerim.

'NO!' Kyung screamed.

'NOOOOOOOO!' Handong cried out.

Yoongi heard the gunshots, still being captured by the eyes of the person.

An eyes who were showing a soul, he recognized...

The gunshots never reached them, because the wall of ice appeared like a shield in front of them. In the next second a next shield embraced Jimin and a woman with a spear appeared.

'JIMIN! I WILL FUCKING KILL YOU!!!' she screamed.

Jimin took the material out of his face and head.

Dark hair.

But the face from the photo...

Angry, teary gaze.

'Stop it this instant! IT'S AN ORDER OF THE PRESIDENT! YOU ALL ARE UNDER ARREST!' Kyung screamed.

'In opinion?' A guy with guns in both hands moved his hands. They all were covered in transparent shields he made. 'First you should beat us...'

A second girl stood in front of Jimin and her palms shined from the ice.

'Four people?' Hajun smiled mockingly.

'Can you even count?' Dami rolled her eyes, when an arrow of light broke the last of chains around Yoongi's ankles.

Three more guys appeared.

At the same moment the commission on the other side was heard. Gahyeon and Ren appeared out of nowhere behind Wooyoung and San, and pushed the soldiers who were holding them away.

They disappear right after they give Woosan the much needed moment to take the guns away from their opponents hands.

In the next second Gahyeon the two of them appeared next to Handong.

'Hi, auntie!' Gahyeon said and punched her in the face, while Ren grabbed Handong and they disappeared with her.

Yoongi and Jimin were looking at each other. Jimin tsked his tongue.

Secured by Minsung's power and protected by the rest, he came closer to Yoongi, while unzipping his uniform.

'You are a warrior, right?' he said harshly, exposing his chest and mark. 'You need a weapon... So use mine...'

Jimin took Yoongi's hand and pressed it forcefully to his own chest.

Yoongi knew what he needed to do. His soul responded to Jimin's soul. A white and purple light started to glow around them.

He was captured by Jimin's eyes.

He finally... meet him.

Chim.

*I'm here...*

And he heard the answer only he could hear and understand.

*I was waiting...*

*They were standing on the clouds, surrounded by the dark blue sky, decorated with thousands of stars.*

*The view Yoongi was seeing every time he heard Serendipity.*

*Here... in their soulmates' dimension Jimin's hair was blond and fluffy.*

*Yoongi couldn't stop staring at the guy in front of him.*

*And Jimin was looking at the seed, but definitely not at Yoongi.*

*He split the seed in two and gave it to Yoongi.*

*Yoongi took it. He always had so many words... yet he was speechless now.*

*Jimin lifted his eyebrow.*

*'Go! We have a battle to win!'*

*'I... '*

*Jimin smirked, and winked at him.*

*'Don't burn yourself... I hope you know how to use them...'*

*'Jungkook, taught me...' Yoongi said.*

*'Useful brat...' Jimin said, smiling softly.*

*He stepped forward and closed Yoongi's fist on two parts of the seed. 'Yoongi... That's your name, right?'*

*Yoongi nodded.*

*'We will go together this time, because...'*

*Jimin lifted his hand to Yoongi's cheek and whispered:*

*'Yoongi... You were never supposed to fight on your own.'*

When Yoongi and Jimin looked around they were surrounded by soldiers. He was holding two identical sets of ninja knives, just like Jimin. But one was sparking with purple lightning. And the second was covered in white flames.

Wooyoung and San reached the middle of the circle, where they all were standing.

A guy covered in warm yellow light glared at Yoongi.

'Dude, next time, just ask for help!' he said sulkingly.

Ten of them were standing in the circle. Yoongi tried to look behind the soldiers to locate Gahyeon.

'And what are you going to do now...?' Hajun asked. We have as much unsealed Interdependants here as you... And we have not unsealed ones with guns as well...' he moved towards them with Hyerim on his side.

'You had your moment of bravery but it's our country and currently you are an enemy of the state.'

'That actually doesn't mean anything here... You create enemies where you want...' Dami said coldly, pointing her spear at him.

'I tried to be nice...' Hajun said and a dark power started to surround him. 'But I don't have any use for Holders... I will think about the Sealers, tho...'

A deadly power started to crowled on the ground, when the whistle in the air was heard.

Like a missile, Jungkook flew through the air, and grabbed Hajun, lifting him in the air and dropping him right after.

He looked down at the commander of the army with disgust from above.

But everybody else was looking at him.

He was floating in the air and enormous black wings, coming out from his back, were beating the air around him.

A second later Taehyung, holding his sword, cut through the circle of soldiers surrounding the Red String members, and flew in the air. His Sacred Treasure was sparking with all the colors. With all combined powers.

The same black wings were on his back. When looked from above at the situation to calculate.

The rest were looking at them.

Yeonjun realized he didn't see the wings earlier, because Taehyung was surrounded by the light and moving too fast.

Yoongi looked around, to check if only he was a surprised one here, but no. All the people next to him were looking at two floating in the air people with black wings, with dropped jaws and widened eyes.

He read a lot in his life...

There was a legend... about men with wings that saved the ship with Interdependants from Eastindian Company... in the Indian Ocean... But it was never associated with Leannan - The Lovers.

Because they were called in that legend.

*'Angels of Destiny...'*

---

Told you the second seed is awsome... ¯_(ツ)_/¯

Yoonmin meeting wasn't as epic as I had in my head in the end  *sighed*.

Okay... I know you were waiting, so I won't say a lot.

Here it is...

The much awaited chapter...

How was it? 

BlairWitch91❤

# Chapter 57: Battle of Interdependants

**13th of November 2071, Daegu**

**(🎶Music tip: エルザ降臨 - Yasuharu Takanashi🎶 )**

'Han! Make a dome-shield around you! Give me time!' Taehyung said and Han instantly made a hard step and his power spread under the feet of Red String members and covered them, separating the Army of the Republic from them.

Taehyung looked from above at the scene. He didn't know who they were dealing with. Who should he match with who, so he had to trust his people. He guessed that the guy, who Jungkook attacked at first, was the most dangerous.

That's why he left it for his incredible boyfriend, who just slowly took out his katana from the scabbard on his back, still looking with hatred at the man, who was getting up from the ground.

*'Dami...'* Jungkook said through their mind link.

Their upgraded power allowed them to freely use mind communication.

Dami just glanced at her younger brother, flying in the air like a freaking angel with dark wings and again focused on the opponents around her.

*'Do you see the bitch with dire flail?'*

Dami found the woman holding a weapon with two metal balls with studs on chains, hanging from two sides of the metal rod.

*'Yeah...'*

*'It's Dasol. She likes to forcefully use Sacred Treasure and torture sealers...'*

*'Oh...?' Dami muttered with a dangerous tone.*

*'She is yours.'* Jungkook said. *'Tae... the woman with the scythe - Hyerim - is Hajun's soulmate. They are dangerous. That's all I know...'*

The soldiers opened fire. But Jungkook moved his free hand and the wind caught all the bullets, he clenched his fist and in the next second they changed into dust.

He dived down getting closer to Hajun. He left the rest to Taehyung. He had to take care of the most dangerous one.

Hajun spread his hands and a wave of dark dust flew in Jungkook's direction. He cut through it with the sword, who shined with golden starlight power. He held him at bay to give Taehyung a moment to calculate.

Taehyung located the woman Jungkook talked about. So she was the one for him then. He fastly looked at the situation and risked it with all the information he had.

*'Jimin - take the woman on the left with rope darts.'*

*'Understood.'*

*'Wooyoung and San, you can fly right? Cover them from the air. Deal with the unsealed soldiers...'*

*'Who made you in charge?' Wooyoung frowned.*

He was beaten up. Tired and annoyed. In his mind he should be loyal to Yoongi, and a new person who suddenly popped out, ordering him around was getting on his nerves.

*'Then stay on the ground and don't get in our way...' Taehyung said in a dark, amused tone.*

At the same time, an annoyed Yoongi opened his mouth to tell Wooyoung to listen to him, Jungkook growled:

*'Disobey my man one more time and I will make sure you won't ever fly again.'*

Wooyoung's mouth made an "o" shape.

*'Oh! Oh! He is...? I didn't realize...'*

*'Wings weren't enough of a hint?' Yoongi rolled his eyes.*

*'Can you freaking focus?!' Dami asked them, being already done with new crackheads around.*

*'SIR! YES, SIR!' Wooyoung saluted to Taehyung.*

*'I sincerely apologize for him...' Yoongi sighed.*

*'Here! I don't need it...' Jimin threw his spare gun to San.*

In the meantime Jungkook was making spirals around the dome making the soldiers focus on him and ran out of ammunition. He was dodging or striking back all the powers that were thrown at him.

*'At this point Jungkook will deal with all of them by himself...' Yeonjun said.*

*'He is pretty pissed...' Mingo agreed.*

*'I will lose my shit in a second! Taehyung let me out of here!' Dami growled, gripping on her spear tighter.*

*'Yoohyeon - take Chorong. Yeonjun the Sealer on your left. He is using air power. Soobin - the Holder with the cards in his hand.' Taehyung ordered fast. Take them in different directions. Don't get caught up in a mix of powers!'*

Taehyung looked at Yoongi from above.

*'Will you handle your uncle?'*

*'Yeah...'*

Tae nodded to him.

*'Minho, Han - back them up! In three - separate shields.'*

*'One - Jimin said looking at the green haired woman, flipping the rope with the dart at the end. A whirlwind of wind started to appear around it. So she was the soulmate of the air Sealer.*

*'Two - Dami growled, bending her knees, ready to jump.*

*'THREE!' Taehyung dived down.*

With his sword he casted aside the scythe and grabbed the collar of Hyerim's robe. He threw her far away from the rest.

Han dispersed the dome shield and his power flew to Dami, Yoohyeon, Soobin and Yeonjun. While Minho pressed his vambraces and copies of it showed on Yoongi, Jimin, Wooyoung and San's forearms, shielding them.

Wooyoung and San instantly jumped in the air, aiming with guns in both hands at the soldiers, who opened fire.

Yoohyeon was already in motion. She made an ice path and slid through it, grabbin Chorong in the process of taking her further from the circle.

Dami threw the spear at Dasol. The blade scarred Dasol's cheek, while Dami started to run. She whistled and the spear came back to her. Enraged, Dasol chased after her, not thinking that it was exactly what Dami wanted.

Soobin shot an arrow that changed into a rope, during the flight, wrapped around

the card's Holder and ran back in a different direction than Dami to separate his opponent from the soldiers.

Yeonjun made an X sing with his arms and spread them, throwing the Air Sealer with the blinding light away.

Han and Minho got inside the combat with the closest soldiers - disarming them and taking as many guns as they could. Throwing them up for Wooyoung or San to catch them and get rid of the further ones.

Jimin threw the lightning towards Kyung and pushed him forward, getting closer to his enemy. Kyung landed with his face on the ground right under Yoongi's feet.

'Welcoming gift!' Jimin screamed.

Yoongi threw a fast glance at him before, gripping his daggers tighter, while Kyung got up from the ground.

At the same moment it all happened and Jungkook heard the signal, he had a green light, he flew to Hajun and kicked his face with his heavy boots, throwing him on the ground again and stood in front of him with a dark, dangerous gaze. He lifted his katana.

'Get up...'

*****

Gahyeon and Ren landed in the forest on the side of the road where the battle had just begun.

Handong touched Gahyeon's face with relief and her legs gave up.

Gahyeon kneeled near her and Ren crouched down on the other side.

'Mom, just breathe...'

Handong opened her mouth and teared up.

'I'm fine. I'm fine! Ren is my soulmate... It's okay! We are fine and Yoongi will be too!'

Gahyeon said fast, taking off Handong's jacket, not noticing how Ren blushed, because of her casual way of spilling the tea.

'Mom! I need you to focus... They inserted the second device... It can look like a mole you never had before...' Gahyeon was checking Handong's neck. 'I don't know when they inserted it, but they will track you every time, if we leave it!'

Handong moved stiffly... She touched her lower back and started to scratch it.

Gahyeon moved to look there and lifted her shirt while Ren with red face was absolutely focusing on his soulmate's mother's face.

'Umm... had they injured you anywhere?' he asked gently.

Gahyeon smiled a bit to herself. He was cute...

Handong shook her head.

Gahyeon looked at the reddened place, her mother was scratching. She pressed the place with her finger. It was firm and something was under the brown mole.

'It's here. I need a knife...' she said.

Ren looked around.

'I will get one. Can I leave you?'

Gahyeon looked at him and for a second they were looking at each other.

'Yeah...Just come back...' she muttered.

'I will...' Ren whispered and ran between the trees to reach the road.

*****

Dami dodged the dire flail direct attack and a second metal ball of it covered her in sand power, blinding her for a moment.. She swung her spear at it and changed it into ice spikes to direct them at Dasol right after.

Dasol looked at her with a bit of madness and shock. Her face got scratches from the ice all over her face. Small paths of blood started to appear on her skin.

'Never fought against a real Holder, bitch?' Dami smirked. 'You are just a fake not knowing what this weapon can do...'

Dasol threw herself on Dami, who just moved aside a bit and with all her strength stuck the spear in Dasol's foot.

Dasol screamed. She hit Dami on the jaw with her head and pushed her away.

Dami saw stars for a second.

'You can play? Fine with me...' she threw her punch on Dasol's face, and a sound of crack was heard.

Dami made a knife of ice in her hand and cut through Dasol's left hand.

'I will cut you piece by piece...'

*****

Jimin stood in front of the green haired Holder with rope darts.

He felt so much power in him. He was shining with fire and purple lightning.

The darts were dancing with wind around the Holder. She was controlling them with her hands. When they made a direct attack at Jimin from every direction, chasing after him, he understood why Taehyung sent him to deal with her.

His flexible body reacted automatically. Dodging the darts and the ties with spirals, backflips, fast turns.

He grabbed one of the ropes and sent the lightning through it. He got close enough to make a frontal kick right into the face of the woman.

His hands were punching with fire. His legs were kicking with lightning...

He felt light. He felt dangerous.

The Greenhaired tried to cover herself with a windshield, but he set his own body on fire, and raised the pressure around him, so all the wind she created around herself was being sucked into his own power.

She widened her eyes.

'My Lord...' she whispered, she looked around, seeing all their soldiers being literally on the ropes of the Red String. 'Help us...'

'Nothing can help you now...' Jimin said and grabbed and two lightenings just hit the ground on both her sides.

*****

Yoohyeon stood in front of Min Chorong.

She didn't know who she exactly was.. She didn't even care...

'W-wait... I...' Chorong made a hesitant step back. 'I don't want to hurt you...'

'Too late...' Yoohyeon said. 'You already did...'

'I don't even know you...'

'You hurt my brother... Hurting one of us... Is hurting all...'

Chorong's gaze in panic ran to Jungkook.

Yoohyeon snapped her fingers and ice copies of her appeared around Chorong. Each one held a different weapon.

Chorong moved her hand and her body was covered in iron armor. The next move of her hand created an iron weapon around her. She held a whip and a dagger in her hand.

'Iron Creating Magic won't help you...' Yooyhyeon said, stepping closer to her slowly.

The sharp wave of ice power, which she created with a slight move of her wrist, hit Chorong's armor, cutting through it, like a knife through butter.

The armor broke in half and fell to the ground.

'M-my son...'

'Have you thought about Jungkook's parents when you imprisoned him?'

'You don't understand...'

An elegant silver saber made of ice appeared in her hand, while she was walking slowly.

Chorong made a move with a whip and Yoohyeon cut through it, just in front of her face.

'I don't have to...'

*****

Yeonjun, covered in the golden starlight fastly got to the Air Sealer. He knew how to deal with him. Jungkook taught him how to fight against air power.

His opponent tried to use the air to get fast, but Yeonjun got his own hidden powers. Using the unnatural speed - the speed of light - was disappearing from his opponent's view, just to appear right in front of him.

He gave him a quick hit with an open palm between the other's eyes, blinding him with light for good. The Air Sealer instantly switched to taste the air to know where he was, but Yeonjun got further from him and threw the light ball of power on him. The shooting star threw the Sealer far away.

He looked around to check if anybody needed help, and moved after his knocked out opponent.

In the meantime Soobin was shooting down the cards that were thrown at him by the Holder.

One landed on the ground and created a hole just under his feet. He jumped away at the last second.

The other card flew above his hand and a water with the strength of a waterfall fell from it right on his head. Wetting him and blinding.

He pointed an arrow at it and shot it down, dispersing its power.

He didn't notice the next sharp card flying at him, he almost got hit with on the face, when a hand appeared right before him, catching the card, which had an image of a bars on it, between two fingers.

Soobin looked at the new person.

'Be careful. Don't get hit by one... He can imprison you inside the card...' A black haired boy said.

'Who...' Soobin opened his mouth, still aiming at the Cards Holder. This time five arrows appear. Each of them is covered in different colors of light. Soobin was wet and pissed... He let go of the bow string, not aiming at the cards, but directly at the Holder. '...are you?' he breathed out.

The yellow arrow started to make spirals of light around the Holder, tying him down. The green ones hit the ground under his feet making an explosion. The red one hit the arm of the guy setting him on fire and the purple one stuck in his side, giving him an electroshock.

Before the person next to Soobin was able to answer, San flew down and stood in front of them.

'Ren! Where is Gahyeon?!'

'In the forest with her mom...'

Soobin looked between them and fastly concluded:

'You are one of us...' he turned his head. 'Minho! Shield him!'

Minho kicked the next soldier, throwing him on the ground and quickly ran to them.

'Hi!' He grabbed Ren's forearm and on the other hand a vambrace appeared, covering him in an invisible shield.

Ren blinked in surprise how fast they were acting

'San! I need a knife!' he said urgently.

Jimin, hearing him, grabbed the spare knife he had around his ankle and threw it to him, at the same time dodging the darts arrow that was already too slow to even touch him.

'Here!'

'There is someone else?' Minho asked Ren.

'Yeah! Yoongi's sister and mother!'

'I'm going with you!'

They ran out of the road and disappeared inside the forest.

San looked at Soobin.

'Hard time with the guy?' He looked at the Holder.

'He has some dirty tricks on these cards...' Soobin gripped harder on his bow, looking how the Holder pressed the card with a bandage image on it to his own body and stood up with his strength restored.

'We will see if he will be so funny looking up...' San smirked and pressed his hand to Soobin's chest. And a brown harness appeared around the other's body. San grabbed it from the beginning and lifted Soobin in the air.

'Whoa!' Soobin exclaimed and aimed with his bow at the Card Holder from above.

No cards could reach him now.

'Has something extra with these arrows?'

'Starlight. Moonlight dust? Rain of meteors? Fire? Electricity? What do you want?'

'Starlight?' San asked curiously.

Soobin smirked. He pulled the bowstring back. No arrow appeared this time, but when he let go of it a rain of shooting stars fell down from above to the ground, hitting the Holder one time after another.

'Cool... Do that on my wedding night...'

'Will do...'

*****

Yoongi looked at how Kyung got up.

'I don't want to fight you Yoongi... You know I didn't have a choice...'

Yoongi's eyes were cold. Dark. Hurt.

'And you haven't left one for me either...' he said and swung with his sword.

Kyung stepped back, and the ring in his hand changed into a sword, blocking Yoongi's hit.

'I did what I could! I put Jungkook near you as far from them as possible!'

'You knew who he was! You could have helped him! Instead you imprisoned all of us!'

Yoongi let go of all the grief and anger. He was using both powers. Both daggers in his hands.

'They would kill Taeil's soulmate!'

'You risked all of our lives! You lied that you have Gahyeon's soulmate! You forced me to use Taboo!' Yoongi cut through Kyung's chest, setting his clothes on fire.

Angry tears appeared in his eyes.

'Did you kill my father too?!'

'NO!!! Yoongi! I didn't kill Jae! I was protecting Taeil. They would kill him and his soulmate if they would suspect I want to protect all of you!'

'I don't believe you anymore!'

Kyung made the sword in his hand multiple times to counter Yoongi's attacks.

'They would kill you if they didn't think I am doing everything they want!'

'And that's why you chased us like dogs when we ran away?!'

'They knew Handong had a second tracker! I was powerless! And they captured Taeil, because you left him sleeping there!'

'Why did she have a second one then?!'

'Because we were afraid she would run away or get lost in her first stage of separation syndrome after we took her out of the hospital! I swear!'

'Bullshit!' Yoongi growled and threw back Kyung's blade and pressed his dagger to his neck.

He was breathing heavily. Tears of betrayal were falling from his eyes.

Kyung lowered his hands.

'You don't want to hurt me Yoongi...' he whispered.

'No, he doesn't. And He won't. Because he is not like you...' a dark, low voice said from behind Yoongi.

Namjoon took a step and threw a steel, heavy punch on Kyung's face. Making him step back a bit from Yoongi.

'I asked you for help...' he growled.

Yoongi with widened eyes looked at that, confused about what to do next. He was a bit relieved someone disrupted his anger.

'Yoongi...' he heard a gentle call and felt a hand on his shoulder. He looked back. 'I'm Jungkook's dad. Go. Help others...'

Yoongi gulped and nodded when Hoseok smiled reassuringly to him. He looked around and joined Han, who was nearby in the combat with soldiers.

Namjoon and Hoseok stood above Kyung, whose nose was covered in blood. He looked at them with an unfocused gaze.

'You would do the same for your sons...' he choked out.

'You know who we are... You could have asked for help. Give hints. Anything...' Hoseok said, holding back his anger.

Kyung shook his head.

'I couldn't risk... Taeil...' he suddenly threw iron shurikens at them. 'And I still can't!'

*****

Taehyung was playing with Hyerim like a cat with a mouse. He let her swing the scythe left and right, threw the deadly power of plague at him, just to slightly move his hand and disperse it all at once.

She was getting more angry as much as he was getting bored.

Yes. Her power was disgusting and angry. It could cause excruciating pain, madness or even death in different ways.

It was dangerous...

But not for him.

He didn't move an inch from his position. Floating slightly above her.

Breathing heavily she lowered the scythe a bit.

'He was calling me *auntie*... I could tell him I am his mother and he would believe me, you know...' she laughed mockingly. 'And when Dasol was using Taboo... You should hear his screams... He was crying like a little bitch...'

Taehyung slowly lifted his gaze at her. He shivered in anger but he stayed cold outside.

When he saw Hyerim opening her filthy mouth again, he moved his hand and her lips glued together. She made a noise in panic.

'Shut up.' he whispered. 'I didn't allow you to speak.'

He lightly stood on the ground and walked to her.

She swung her scythe at him, but he caught the stick with one hand and the jade

light appeared. The scythe started to glow and change into light.

Hyerim started to scream - or she tried, through her sealed mouth. She fell to her knees and started to scratch her palm as if the mark that was always there started to burn her.

No matter how much Taehyung would make her bleed. How much he would beat her up - it would turn back time. It wouldn't turn him back the time he lost... It wouldn't erase Jungkook's pain or his suffering.

So he just wanted to deal with her fast and clean, and go somewhere he could finally break down.

'You will never be a Holder again...' he informed the woman while the mark on her hand started to fade away slowly. Line after line.

She started to shake her head.

When a shadow... appeared under her knees.

*******

Dasol was laying on the ground, catching desperate breaths.

Dami raised her spear and stuck it inside her palm with a mark.

'SEAL. IT!' she growled.

Dasol cried out in pain.

'M-my l-lord...' Dasol called out.

'NOW!'

'S-seal...' she whispered and the dire flail turned into light and a colorful dust raised in the air.

In the next second under her beaten up body a shadow appeared...

*******

'What?' Jungkook said mockingly, looking at Hajun, who was again getting up from the ground. 'Not so easy now? Want to tie me again?

Hajun got up and, with his fist covered in the black power, he tried to hit Jungkook's face.

Jungkook grabbed his wrist and snapped it down, with no effort.

'You are just a dog, under his command...' Jungkook shook his head. 'You all can't do shit, right?'

He swirled his katana and cut through Hajun's back.

It was practically an execution.

Hajun - no matter how powerful Sealer he was in comparison to others - couldn't stand against one of the Lovers.

'You wanted to see this power right?' Jungkook said and a jade light covered him from head to toe.

Hajun covered his eyes with his arm.

'You can't even look at it... And you wanted to use it?' Jungkook laughed at him.

He grabbed Hajun's neck and squeezed it. He lifted him a bit on his toes, when he started to choke.

'Where is he?' he hissed.

Under Hajun's feet a spiral of shadows started to appear.

Hajun smirked.

'Here...'

Jungkook felt the cold shiver. At once he threw Hajun on the ground and hit him with the power, while jumping in the air and screaming through mindlink:

'TAE!!!'

Taehyung was already in the air as they looked from above.

Under the bodies of Hajun, Hyerim, Dasol, Kyung, Chorong and Card Holder and Air Soulmates, shadows were spreading making them sink inside them.

But what was more worrying for them was a tsunami of shadows coming out from the iron wall direction, piling up, ready to run down at any moment.

'FUCKING COWARD!' Taehyung growled. 'HAN! DO IT!'

Confused Red String, Namjoon and Hoseok looked above wondering while the main opponents were disappearing just when they won with them.

Han, hearing Taehyung's scream, intertwined his fingers and connected the middle ones, whispering in old Interdependants language:

*'Dìon... Seasmhachd...'*

A silver power started to run around the field covering people sinking inside the people. *Dion* - protection, and *Seasmhachd* - endurance, - filled their bodies.

At the same moment the tsunami fell down. Taehyung dived down and stack his sword in the ground.

A walls one after another... Wall, made out of pure powers. Started to rise above their heads.

Ice. Air. Water. Fire. Light. Sound. Sand. Snow. Plants. Iron. Rock. Lightening.

The wave of shadows hit the first wall and crushed it.

But Taehyung was constantly making new ones...

Second one... Third one was down...

Jungkook, floating meters above the place Taehyung was kneeling, holding the sword, was breathing heavily. He closed his and forced his heart to calm down.

Next walls of Taehyung's power got destroyed, but the wave slowed down.

When it reached the last one, Jungkook was ready, holding his grandfather's katana.

When the shadows, slowed down, but still unstoppable, broke the wall of stone, Jungkook connected his hands on his sword.

The spiral waves of jade powers hit the shadows.

Two powers, one gray one and one jade one clashed above Taehyung's head.

Jungkook's katana melted in his hands, but he spread his arms and pushed the shadow force back.

The shadow dispersed in the jade light, but the aftermath of the power made the road crack, the trees bent and everything started to fly above people's heads.

Minji and Hoseok, standing back in back, in the middle of the field, spread the gravity power over the Red String, holding everything up in the sky.

They slowly made the rocks, the trees and all other objects fall to the ground.

Breathing heavily Jungkook fell to the ground and stood next to Taehyung, looking around.

He still felt it...

Clap. Step.

Clap. Step.

Clap. Step. Clap.

'I am impressed...' a voice said and shadows gathered in the middle of the road.

Taehyung made an instant step forward so his body would be perfectly aligned in one line with Jungkook.

'Sorry to spoil your fan, but I pretty much like my minions... Can't sacrifice them yet...'

'Sacrificing others is your only power...' Jungkook said.

'Oh, don't be so petty...' The man waved his hand mockingly. 'I just came to introduce myself... I am Nonahi. The son of Fates. The Lord of Shadows...' he made a theatrical bow.

Han got up from his knees, he was thrown to with his power just like the rest of Red String.

'Yeah?' he breathed out. 'We just call you a Loo...'

'You are nothing more than that to us...' Jimin swiftly jumped on his feet too.

Nonahi squinted his eyes. The movement of his hand was almost invisible. The shadow arrow ran towards Han, but Jungkook sent the jade lightning to bounce it back before it reached him.

'Hmmp...' Nonahi looked at Jungkook. 'Finally you can play...' he smirked slowly. 'See you next time!'

He disappeared as fast as he appeared.

Namjoon, Yoongi, Wooyoung and San were staring at the place where he was standing.

'Na Inho...' Wooyoung whispered.

'No doubt.' Yoongi confirmed.

'We were so stupid...' San shook his head.

'No. You weren't. It's just that he is good at long term manipulation...' Namjoon let go of the air in his lungs. 'He had centuries to learn...'

All of them were standing still absolutely tensed and frozen from the sudden visit when they heard a noise and the iron wall trembled.

Taehyung and Jungkook immediately jumped in the air.

Over the wall a dome of shadows was created, closing the city inside an eternal darkness.

'Oh God...' Namjoon whispered.

Jin, Minho, Ren, Gahyeon and Handong get out of the forest.

'Is everyone okay?!' Jin screamed.

'Only the army soldiers are in a bad state...' Soobin replied to him, looking at the ground at soldiers who they disarmed or harmed.

'We will check whose life is at risk and heal those...' Namjoon sighed. 'They have to choose what they want to do after...'

'Mom!' Yoongi breathed out, running to Gahyeon and Handong.

Jimin looked after him shortly.

Taehyung and Jungkook looked at each other. Jungkook, waving his wings gently, fell down and crouched down on the car roof.

A second later Taehyung stood next to him still holding the sword.

Minji, Hoseok, Namjoon and Jin looked at them, finally letting their appearance sink into their minds.

Black as the darkest of nights wings...

The immeasurable power which was coming out of their presence.

Namjoon parted his lips.

'Angels of Destiny...'

Minji gulped.

'Ummm... Am I seeing right?' she asked Jin.

'Jeeze! That's why Kookie always called Taehyung an angel!! Makes sense...' Hoseok clapped.

'No! It doesn't make sense at all! THEY HAVE FUCKING WINGS!!!' Jin exclaimed.

'Language, dad...' Taehyung smiled a bit.

'In Genesis... when they said... "J*eryn and Taeghan flew through the island killing enemies*"...' Hoseok mumbled, looking at Jungkook. 'They meant... literally?'

Jungkook nodded shortly.

'We have to get out of here as soon as possible and as far as possible...' Jungkook said. 'You are not safe here...'

'For now we all are going to Uljin.' Taehyung decided. 'Take necessary things from Yeongcheon...'

They both jumped from the car and made their wings disappear leaving few black feathers on the ground.

'Okay, we will take care of it...' Namjoon nodded.

Minji went to Handong, smiling at Gahyeon calmingly.

'I will take care of Handong... I'm Jungkook's mom... And you should probably go introduce yourself...' she squeezed her shoulder encouragingly, nodding to Ren.

They stood next to Yoongi, San and Wooyoung, who were observing the rest.

Jimin, Dami, Yoohyeon, Yeonjun, Soobin, Han and Minho were standing in a semicircle looking at Jungkook and Taehyung, who were in the center.

They couldn't take their eyes off of Jungkook now. When the silence and calmness was present around.

Taehyung placed a hand on Jungkook's lower back, pushing him a bit forward.

Jungkook took a deep breath and lifted his gaze at his friends, still trying to hold his emotions, who were threatening to drown him, back.

The first who broke down weren't Jimin... or Soobin... or Yoohyeon...

It was the one who didn't cry even once all this time.

Dami.

She made a shaky step forward. Raised his fist which was trembling and hit Jungkook's chest, without any force in the hit.

'You idiot...' she cried out and hit him again.

Jungkook closed his eyes, embracing her.

'Don't scare me like that...' Dami whispered, gulping tears, hiding her face in his chest.

Jungkook opened his eyes filled with wettness and beckoned Yoohyeon with his finger.

Sniffing, she came closer to them. He embraced her with his second arm. Pressing his cheek to her hair.

Dami took a deep breath and punched Jungkook's stomach, this time harder.

'I hate you...' she sniffed and stepped back.

Yoohyeon went to her and wiped her tears gently.

Jungkook just showed her his bunny smile, because Han, Minho, Soobin and Yeonjun were already jumping on him from all the sides. Pulling him from all directions.

'I can't believe it is you!' Han screamed. He looked at Taehyung above Jungkook's shoulder. 'It's him right?!'

Taehyung nodded.

The boys were yelling and sniffing for a moment until the last person grunted impatiently.

They all turned to Jimin and then stood next to Taehyung, giving him space.

For a moment Jungkook and Jimin were looking at each other. Then Jimin slowly moved his eyes to Taehyung.

'Can I?'

Taehyung sighed heavily.

'This one time... Exceptionally...'

Jimin nodded, already tearing up. He quickly stepped to Jungkook, grabbed his head and connected their foreheads. Smiling through tears, he whispered:

'My baby... I missed you...'

'Jimin-ssi...' Jungkook choked out, giggling, while tears were heard from his throat.

They hugged each other tightly.

'I was worried...' Jimin whispered to Jungkook's ear.

'I was in good hands...' Jungkook whispered back, looking at Yoongi from above Jimin's shoulder.

'You are okay?' Jimin asked, cupping Jungkook's face.

'I will be soon...' Jungkook smiled painfully.

'He...' Jimin started.

But Jungkook's gaze was so full of pain already, Jimin held his words back. He just nodded:

'You both will be...'

'Okay. Enough is enough.' Taehyung walked towards them.

Jungkook turned to Yoongi and the rest. Jimin, Dami, Yoohyeon, Minho, Han, Yeonjun and Soobin were standing next to him and Taehyung.

'Guys...' Jungkook started, pointing with his hand. 'Meet Gahyeon, Ren, San, Wooyoung and Yoongi. The rest of the Red String...'

'Figured.' Yoohyeon giggled.

'Wait...' Taehyung squinted his eyes. 'Ren?'

Ren blinked.

'T-Taehyung?! Kim Taehyung?!'

Gahyeon looked at Tae and her eyes widened.

'It's YOU!'

San looked at Ren.

'You know each other?'

'From elementary school...' Ren explained.

Wooyoung was looking with a smirk at Jimin only. Jimin glared at him in response.

'What?' he asked.

Wooyoung smiled widely.

'I AM YOUR GREATEST FAN!'

Yoongi stuck his elbow in his side.

'Shut the fuck up or I will shut you up!'

Jimin frowned, not understanding what was going on, but then Gahyeon, observing Wooyoung's gleeful smile, squealed loudly in excitement.

'OMG! OMG OMG!!!' You are oppa's soulmate, right?!'

She jumped to Jimin and embraced him with her arm.

'I have so much tea to tell you!'

Yoongi glared at Ren warningly.

Understanding that from now on it is his responsibility, Ren sighed and walked to detach Gahyeon from Jimin.

'Gahy... Not now...'

Yoongi was just standing praying for the ground to swallow him and change him into a rock.

For a moment Taehyung was just observing but finally he walked to stand in front of Yoongi.

'I have to punch you at least once...' Taehyung said.

Jimin instantly got tensed. Just like the rest feeling something was wrong.

Yoongi nodded and gulped.

'I understand...'

Shaking his head, not nervous like others, Jungkook walked after Taehyung and

stood behind him. He put his hands on his shoulder and said, quietly:

'Tae...'

'You don't understand...'

'Do something for me first... Look at him. And SEE him.'

Taehyung sighed, but he couldn't refuse the gentle request. He lifted his gaze and looked Yoongi in the eyes.

Confused, Yoongi didn't know what they wanted from him. So, being annoyed, he just lifted his eyebrow.

There was a moment when he focused on Taehyung's eyes and his presence felt a bit familiar to him... Like once with Jungkook.

Taehyung blinked suddenly.

'Yves?' he whispered, shakily.

'Huh?' Yoongi frowned.

Taehyung pulled him into a hug.

Yoongi had his hands lying alongside, not knowing what to do now.

'Who is Yves?' Jimin asked, getting closer.

Jungkook looked at him sadly.

'One of the souls from our pasts...' he looked at Yoongi. 'A brother.'

'One of your pasts?' San asked. 'And what actually is Red String?'

Yoohyeon patted his back.

'A shit load to explain... But we will. Let me start with our names...' she introduced everybody around.

Taehyung moved away and stood closer to Jungkook.

'But that's not the biggest tea!' Han said suddenly. He and Yeonjung took Jimin under his arms and stood him in front of Yoongi.

'Look at him!'

Yoongi was absolutely done with everybody at this point.

'I have enough of this shitshow...' he crossed his arms over his chest.

'Me too...' Dami backed him up.

'Look at him!' Han repeated excitedly.

Jimin daggered him with his eyes. While Yeonjun was grinning at Yoongi.

'WE STOLE YOUR CAR!' he finally explained, not being able to hold the excitement.

'No, dude... I stole yours...' Yoongi shook his head.

'NO! WE DID! FEW YEARS AGO! We left you in the caffe sleeping soundly!' Han explained.

Jimin got pale.

'No...' he whispered.

'YES!' Yeonjun laughed.

'NO!!!!!' Jimin scratched his cheeks with his nails.

'YES!!!' Han confirmed. 'YOU EVEN COVERED HIM WITH YOUR JACKET!!!'

'NOOOOOOOOOOOOO!' Jimin exclaimed in despair. 'AAAAAAAAAA!!!!' he angrily walked away. 'I CAN'T BELIEVE IT!' He kicked the tire of the car. 'UUUUGGHHHHHHHHH!' He hit the car bonnet with his fist.

'You will hurt yourself!' Yoongi protested.

'SHUT. UP!!!!' Jimin yelled at him.

Yoongi stepped back.

'Are you mad at me?'

'WHOA! YOU ARE A GENIUS!'

'Why?'

'BECAUSE I WAS FEELING EVERYTHING YOU WERE GOING THROUGH! AND 15 MINUTES AND I WOULD MISS YOU AGAIN!!! 15 MINUTES!! BECAUSE YOU WANT TO DO STUGGLE WITH EVERYTHING BY YOURSELF!!!'

Jimin kicked the tire a few times again and walked to the car.

Yoongi followed him with his eyes. San patted his back.

'And he doesn't even know yet... You were chatting with him for years...' he whispered with fake compassion. 'Have fun explaining!'

Jin, Namjoon and Hobi came back after taking care of the soldiers.

'Is it the end of the teenage drama for now?' Jin asked.

Taehyung looked around.

'Everybody is staying unsealed from now on...' he suggested. 'We should go to Uljin together. Me and Jungkook will fly to secure you...'

'Are you sure?' Namjoon frowned. 'You can...'

'No.' Jungkook shook his head. 'We have to secure you. Maybe he is after us. But the easiest way to get us is through you...'

'Fine.' Minji sighed. 'We will be fast. The road to Yeongcheon is about 30 minutes. After we take things from there we can go straight to the Mountains. We will be in Uljin in 5 hours.'

After Jungkook got to know about Gahyeon's power, he decided that he will empower her teleportation power and teleport half of them directly to Uljin, so they could just use 3 cars they had.

Jungkook and Gahyeon made two turners while the rest was packing.

First they secured Mrs Min, Wooyoung, San and Yoongi to let them rest and calmed down. Then sent Jin, Namjoon, Yeonjun and Soobin.

Minji, Chanyeol and Han took the first car. Hoseok, Minho and Dami the second one. Baekhyun, Yoohyeon and Jimin were supposed to be in the last one. Jungkook and Taehyung were supposed to protect them from above.

Jimin threw the last things to the bag and reached under his pillow. He took out the ipod, the photo and... a paper?

He frowned and brought it closer to his face.

He read the words.

And again.

And again. Letting them sink in.

Letting the realization sink in together with them.

There was no signature... but he didn't need it.

He knew was here. He knew who wrote it.

He sat heavily on the bed.

And a tear fell on the title.

***The Truth Untold***

---

*sniffing slightly*

Tell me my dearest Readers... Did you like the chapter?

Nonahi is anagram of Na Inho.

Shang Chi from Marvel Movies: the sister of Shaun is fighting with rope darts. It's really awsome...

Praise me? □□

BlairWitch91❤□❤□

PS: Are you ready for some puryfying tears?

# Chapter 58: The Truth Untold

**13th of November 2071, Republic of Daegu**

**(🎶Music tip: The Truth Untold by BTS🎶)**

*This garden is filled*

*With blossoming loneliness*

*I tied myself*

*To this sand castle filled with thorns*

*What is your name?*

*Do you even have a place to go?*

*Oh could you tell me?*

*I saw you hiding in this garden*

*And I know*

*Your heat is real*

*Your hand picks the blue flowers*

*I want to hold it but*

*This is my destiny*

*Don't smile on me*

*Light on me*

*Because I can't go to you*

*There's no name to call*

A car was moving fast through the road. The landscapes were changing, becoming one mix of colors and smudges in front of Jimin's eyes.

He had his temple pressed to the cold glass. He recognized the shapes, but nothing was going through his mind. As if he wasn't even there... Inside the car his dad was driving.

Yoohyeon was sitting in the front seat, turning to look at Jimin from time to time. She was worried.

He suddenly got so silent... As if he closed himself inside an invisible glass cage, when nothing could reach him.

'Minie...' Baekhyun looked through the rear view mirror. 'Are you okay?'

In all the chaos he didn't know anything that happened on the battlefield. But he knew his son enough to realize something was wrong.

'Yeah...' Jimin whispered, but his fingers squeezed the paper he was holding. 'M'fine.'

Bam, who was sitting next to him, crawled to him more and pressed his nose under Jimin's palm.

Jimin bent and hid his face inside Bam's furr.

'I'm fine...' he repeated.

He was holding the paper with the lyrics, left under his pillow, desperately.

A messege to him...

An unspoken confession...

The Untold Truth.

The words were jumping under his closed eyelids. He read them so many times, he memorized them.

They couldn't leave his distraught mind...

*You know that I can't*

*Show you me*

*Give you me*

*I can't show you my weakness*

*So I'm putting on a mask to go see you*

*But I still want you*

*A flower that resembles you*

*Blossomed in this garden of loneliness*

*I wanted to give it to you*

*As I take off this stupid mask*

Jimin felt the tears escaping his eyes again.

The words held so much pain... Violent reality... Guilt...

*But I know*

*This can't go on forever*

*I must hide*

*Because I'm ugly*

*I'm afraid*

*So pathetic*

*I'm so afraid*

*In the end, will you leave me too?*

*So I'm putting on a mask to go see you*

*What I can do is*

*To make a pretty flower*

*That resembles you*

*Blossom in this garden, in this world*

*Then breathe as the person you know*

*But I still want you*

*I still want you*

*Maybe back then*

*If I had just a little more*

*Courage*

*And stood before you*

*Would everything be different now?*

*I'm crying*

*At this sandcastle*

*That's disappearing*

*And breaking down*

*As I look at this broken mask*

*And I still want you*

And the most suffocating part of them was not the feelings of pain, regret, hurt and hope behind them... but the fact that they were the proof.

The heartbreaking proof...

Of who Min Yoongi really was...

And what he went through.

*****

When the last car parked in front of the guest house Jungkook and Taehyung flew to the ground.

'Han! Minho! We have to secure this place...' Taehyung said when their friends got out of the car.

'DAD?! What are you doing here?' Minji exclaimed surprise when 4 people ran out of the building.

Jungkook turned around just to see Jiyoung, Hwasa, Siyeon and Bora run to him.

He was instantly indulged in hugs and whispers of greatfulness.

Jiyoung cupped his face.

'I was never this happy in my life...' he breathed out.

Jungkook gulped.

'I... Grandpa... your sword... I lost it.' he whispered.

Jiyoung pulled him into a hug.

'Don't worry about it...'

Hwasa stopped squeezing Minji, who was overwhelmed in her mother's arms.

They all were holding up with sheer willpower.

'What are you doing here?' Hoseok repeated Minji's question, when the rest started to hug Taehyung with the equal force as Jungkook a second before.

'I had a feeling...' Jiyoung said. 'I should deliver the usual equipment and supplies a bit earlier than planned...'

Hoseok didn't ask further. He was too tired and too grateful they all were together right here and now. He just hugged his father-in-law tightly.

'Grandpa... good you are here...' Jungkook said. 'We need to secure this place the best we can... Come with me!'

Taehyung waved at Minho and Han with his hand and they went in different directions.

An hour later the whole Guesthouse, its gardens and frontyard area was covered inside by Minsung's dome shield. Baekhyun and Chanyeol installed the sound traps all over it so whatever would come through it would alarm them.

And from the inside Dragon painted an illusion with his power. Anybody who would look at it wouldn't see the road that led to the Guesthouse or the building itself. To the normal eye, on the side of the mountain was just a deep dark forest...

Like a painting created by a skillful paintbrush.

Jungkook and Taehyung installed the traps too. Quick sands here and there. Trees which were able to act for them as the guardians, ready to crash anybody who would dare to enter the area. Underground wells, which could swallow and drown any living creature. The places where air was poisoned with plant toxins.

They did everything they could, but after using every single bit of their power just to bounce back Nonahi's shadows - they still felt as if it wasn't enough...

It wasn't the end of the chaos tho...

Jin and Namjoon were running through the rooms checking everyone around. They healed the wounds left by devices.

They fixed Dami's twisted wrist, which she didn't tell anybody about, till Yoohyeon literally threatened her to break the second one.

Kai and Jennie were locating everybody in the free rooms, trying to supply them with everything they could. Clothes. Food. Towels.

Hwasa, Siyeon and Bora were in the kitchen preparing the food.

Taehyung and Jungkook felt the need to check on everybody around them personally. To check if fracking Lord Loo didn't leave any hidden traces on anybody.

In all the commission Jin eyes ran to Taehyung, who was walking through the corridor to check on Jimin this time.

He was sweating badly. Clenching and unclenching his fist. Looking around in panic from time to time and then as if he was telling himself "It's okay" harshly, getting a grip.

Jin realized... that Jungkook, who he caught a glimpse of a few minutes ago, was doing exactly the same...

He took a deep breath of realization.

He stopped Taehyung in the middle of his walk.

'Tae...' he said gently. 'It's enough. It's okay...'

Taehyung blinked surprised.

'What?' he asked, confused.

'We will manage.' Jin said strongly, holding him by his elbow and leading him to the lower floor. 'You secured everything... It's enough.'

'But...'

'Taehyung.' When Jin called his name with this stern and a bit shivering tone, Tae looked at him with shining eyes. 'You and Jungkook are behaving like drug addicts in front of the dose they can't take.'

Taehyung gulped, shutting his eyes.

'You won't be able to think straight if you won't get a bit of balance.' Jin leaned and kissed Taehyung's forehead. 'Wait here.'

'Come with me.' Hoseok grabbed Jungkook's arm.

'Dad... I need to check if Yoongi...'

'I will do it.'

'But...'

'Kookie.' Hoseok said just his name and Jungkook shut his mouth. 'Turn this protection mode off before you break...'

All the parents agreed with Jin. Their boys were at the point when their sanity threatened to fall apart if they would keep each other distanced for a second longer.

'You can't deny your own needs... You already went hard on yourself. Let us take care of the rest...'

They turned into a corridor leading to the Guesthouse's patio and garden.

Jungkook shivered seeing Taehyung standing on the patio. His wings were on display. Folded on his back elegantly. He was looking at the corridor while breathing heavily.

'Go.' Hoseok whispered, ruffling Jungkook's hair and pushing him forward.

Jungkook didn't think much.

He made the first step. Then the next one.

His steps were getting faster as he was going through the corridor.

He covered the last meters by desperate running, holding the sobs that were threathening to escape from his throat.

It took Taehyung a second to wrap his arm around Jungkook's waist, before he jumped into the night sky, spreading his dark wings.

*****

The Night and Silence fell on the Guesthouse in Uljin.

Under the painted illusions and shield... the sounds of night were still heard. Even the gently falling snow made the benches move with a soft tone.

Ren was sitting standing in the garden, breathing deeply. The snow was falling on his face when he tried to calm down and sort all that happened in his mind.

And comprehend what was about to happen...

He took off the glasses from his nose. When he was putting them on it wasn't the power that was making him delighted.

It was the feeling of someone being right next to him.

A feeling... he actually never had felt before.

In one day he was a lonely wolf, trying to do the right things... and in the next second he was surrounded by people, who... it seemed... genuinely cared about him.

'Can't sleep?' Gahyeon stood next to him and looked at the sky too.

The falling snow looked like little diamonds... It was similar to the scenery she saw in the soulmates' dimension. Beautiful...

'I haven't really tried...' Ren replied, desperately trying not to look at her.

'Crazy day, huh?'

'It's shocking it is still the same day...' he smiled a bit.

'I don't know where we are... Or who actually are those people around... but I wasn't this calm for years...'

Ren nodded, agreeing with her.

They were standing for a moment in silence.

'So?' Gahyeon asked finally. 'Who is Ren?'

'It's a long and boring story...'

'I have time.'

'It's a hard question. I will think about the answer, while you tell me: who is Gahyeon?'

'Min Jaehyun and Handong's daughter. Yoongi's sister. Woosan's crime partner... Ren's soulmate.'

Ren gulped and looked at her.

Gahyeun tilted her head, looking at him playfully. She grunted and looked down:

'Sorry for hitting you... Multiple times...'

Ren snorted.

'Come.' she made a few steps into the garden. 'It's easier to talk when you walk... It's my bedtime story time and Wooyoung and San are too busy, using the opportunity to check the new bed...'

'I didn't want to know that...' Ren whined.

'Sucks to be you...' she giggled.

He matched his steps with her.

Ren started to talk, looking at the frozen garden. After a while he stopped feeling his stomach twisted, when cold fingers touched the inside of his palm.

Gahyeon squeezed his hand.

'You were holding my hand for the whole day...' she whispered. 'It's... strange... when you don't...'

Blushing madly Ren pulled her further, whispering shyly:

'Don't worry. I won't let go...'

*****

Yoongi was sitting inside the room they gave him.

His mom and sister were safe. Surrounded by the genuine care of Kims and Jeons. When he saw how caring they were he realized... how the real family should look like. Minji and Jin were making sure they were comfortable and healthy.

Jungkook's father brought Yoongi a soup to eat.

Kim Namjoon healed the wound on his forearm, putting his strong and gentle hands on his skin. Asking if he needed anything...

Yoongi thought he just needed sleep... But it was bullshit his body and mind were trying to give him while his heart and soul were being torn apart...

He looked at two daggers laying on the bedside table, before dropping his reddened eyes at his hands.

He looked at the mark that was darker than yesterday.

Probably because...

... he touched his soulmate's soul...

So... the dark-haired angel was really Chim...

He was so beautiful. Fierce... Soft...

Yoongi felt as if he would suffocate in a second... It shouldn't be like that...

He should be happy.

Yet... he knew... he just knew...

What a disappointment he was for his soulmate.

An enemy.

A cruel creature that tortured his best friend...

He should leave...

But where?

There was no place like home for him anymore...

Taeil was captured. His uncle was a traitor...

He was staring at the mark when his sensitive hearing sensed the almost non-existing noise of a doorknob. He raised his head.

Chim... no...

His name was Jimin, right? Was standing in the door.

He looked broken. And it devastated Yoongi even more.

But he couldn't look down.

The soft black locks. The simple black t-shirt and blue jeans.

His small face. His soft, delicate hands. His petite figure...

Yoongi was greedily taking the view. Everything inside-out... was so precious to him.

Jimin let go of the door and they slowly closed beside him.

The moment the sound of the lock was heard Yoongi felt like a gunshot.

What finally forced him to divert his gaze... was Jimin's eyes that were slowly covered by moist and gloss.

Yoongi opened his mouth to say something. But he - always so full of words - was suddenly empty. He didn't know what to say...

But he should at least... apologize...

He gulped and tried to speak, hesitantly raising his head.

At the same time Jimin opened his mouth, which was trembling visibly, but nothing came out of them. He bit them to stop the trembling.

Yoongi couldn't stand his misery.

'I...'

'Hyung...'

Yoongi thought he imagined it. It was barely a breath out whisper. His eyes widened.

'Hyung...'

A hesitant step. A desperate inhale.

Jimin's shivering hands reached to the hem of his t-shirt and started to pull it up.

Yoongi's heart sped up.

'Wha...'

'I was praying... it would be you...' Jimin whispered.

The soft fabric of the t-shirt exposed white skin of Jimin's side. And the dark ink that painted it...

*Nevermind*

Yoongi's breath, or more like tears, were caged inside his chest. He heaved a breath.

*Never mind It's not easy but engrave it onto your chest*

A part of the lyrics he wrote...

Yoongi shut his eyes.

'I... I couldn't tell you...' he choked out.

'So you choose to suffer by yourself?! How long have you known?!'

'Since the moment you told me you felt your soulmate heartbreak...'Yoongi whispered. 'You described the moment... after my father died. You knew my feelings too well for it to be a coincidence...'

'It was almost 6 years ago! 6 years!

'There was a war going around...' Yoongi shook his head. 'I didn;t want to... I couldn't drag you inside it...'

'YOU FUCKING IDIOT! I WAS INSIDE THIS WAR ALL THE TIME! I COULD BE WITH YOU! DOING SOMETHING BESIDE WHINING!'

'No! You don't understand! Jimin! You were the joy I needed...' Yoongi said. 'Every fucking day of this nightmare would be unbearable without you... You were my penicillin! You were all the time! In the most frightening, worst moments! You were there!'

Yoongi hid his face in his hands.

'I just wanted at least one person who I care about... to be safe and happy...' he whispered.

'You were lying to me... all this time...'

'I didn't lie... I just couldn't tell you the whole truth... I didn't lie when I told you, your soulmate can feel you. I didn't lie when I told you, you will meet him... I didn't lie when I told you your soulmate will catch you... I didn't lie when I told

you you can comfort and protect me no matter where I am! I wrote *Serendipity* for you only! And I started to compose again for you only! Because I wanted to hear your voice!'

More tears run down Jimin's cheeks.

'And I didn't lie...' Yoongi whispered. 'That I was scared too... that I will lose you before meeting you... And in the end I did...'

'What are you talking about? I am here, aren't I?'

'They forced me... to hurt... Jungkook... When all I wanted to do was to protect him... Because I knew how much he meant to you...' Yoongi shook his head, shutting his eyes.

Jimin made few harsh steps, grabbed Yoongi's chin and said through clenched teeth:

'STOP. IT! I have known Jungkook since he was six! I know when he treats someone as a family! And I know Taehyung even better than him! And trust me! He wouldn't let you live if he had any doubt about that situation! SO STOP IT! You are not ugly! Nor you need to hide before me! I CAN TAKE IT! I WILL TAKE EVERYTHING YOU ARE! BUT I AM JUST SO FUCKING MAD! You went through all of it by yourself!'

Jimin cupped Yoongi's face:

'Do you know... if you wouldn't have kept all those restrictions about personal details! If you wouldn't hide it, Red String would take you out of there?! WE WOULD HELP! You would be with us! And your sister too!'

'And what would happen to Jungkook if I wasn't there?' Yoongi whispered, calmingly. 'If I wouldn't know Ren, Wooyoung and San? How would he escape? You don't know what they've done to him...'

Jimin's lips twisted.

Yoongi hesitantly put his palms on Jimin's.

'It doesn't matter that I was struggling for years... You were with me when I needed you... And I could help him at the right time... Just as you all helped me when I needed it the most...'

'I know....' Jimin joined their foreheads. 'It's enough... Yoongi...' he whispered. 'Promise. No lies. No secrets. Not fighting on your own anymore...'

Yoongi nodded with closed eyes.

'I promise...'

Yoongi felt the bend of the bed and a leg touched his leg. An arm was joined with his arm. A forehead was pressed to his shoulder.

They were sitting like that for a long time, gulping tears and trying to calm the storms inside them.

'I was waiting...' Jimin whispered, taking Yoongi's hand in his own. He put it on his lap and took off one of his bracelets. He tied it around Yoongi's wrist. 'I was waiting to give it to you...'

Yoongi looked at the bracelet made out of red thread with two beads attached to it.

'It's a Red String's bracelet...' Jimin explained. 'We all have it... We all knew... my soulmate will be part of the team. You were one of us a long time ago...'

'I was waiting to...'

'Baby.' Jimin said unexpectedly.

'I am not a baby! I am older than you!' Yoongi frowned.

Jimin squinted his eyes.

'No. Call me like that, idiot. You used to call me that...'

Yoongi blushed. He indeed did... He gulped.

Jimin lifted his eyebrow impatiently.

'Don't get on my nerves, brat...' Yoongi squinted his eyes.

'Haven't even started yet...' Jimin squinted his eyes too.

They looked each other in the eyes. Looking at each other angrily and challengingly. But then Yoongi's eyes softened a bit.

'I missed you, Chim...' he whispered unexpectedly even to himself. 'Your dumb texts... Flirty presence... Cheerfulness... Sweetness... I missed it.'

Jimin's lips trembled.

'I prayed...' he confessed. 'I prayed that the grumpy, always annoyed, savage person I fell in love with... was the boy I dreamed about...'

Yoongi's eyes widened in shock.

'I... I don't deserve you...'

Jimin cupped his cheek and Yoongi met with a gentle gaze.

'The only thing you don't deserve... was that hell...'

A thumb wiped a tear that escaped from Yoongi's eyes.

Jimin tilted his head.

'Now... smile for me...'

'I'm not the smiley type...' Yoongi choked out feeling that a salt drop felt inside his mouth.

'Then good that I am...' Jimin said, smiling through tears.

A corner of Yoongi's lips lifted and before he could think about it, he slowly joined forehead with Jimin and a wide, gummy smile painted his lips in response to Jimin's soft smile.

The amount of time this guy made him smile...

Their hands found each other on their laps.

'Yeah...' Yoongi closed his eyes.

'Jeeze...' Jimin let out heavily. 'I am tired...' he fell on the bed.

In the next second Yoongi was wondering, why the hell he was suddenly looking at the ceiling. This second of distraction caused Yoongi ten years of his life when his heart sped up to inhuman speed, while Jimin somehow glued himself to him.

'W-what... are you doing?'

'Making sure You won't be a chicken anymore.' Jimin mumbled, hiding his face into Yoongi's arm, while his leg landed, thrown through Yoongi's legs.

'You really are eager to be in my bed...' Yoongi was so nervous that his savageness was his last resort...

'Shut up. Be glad I didn't use cuffs.'

'Kinky.'

Yoongi just didn't consider who he was dealing with... He remembered it when Jimin jerked his head up, squinting his eyes.

'Do you remember what happened last time you tried to outflirt me?' he asked warningly.

'Do you remember you wanted to see my dick right away?'

Jimin smirked.

'Of course I do...' Jimin put his hand on Yoongi's stomach.

Yoongi gulped.

'I... I give up....' he choked out.

Jimin snorted, shook his head, threw his arm around Yoongi's chest and his his face in his arm again, mumbling:

'Chicken.'

Yoongi was lying stiffly, looking at the ceiling, like a vampire in his coffin. The only difference was his racing heart...But he finally realized a steady breathing next to him. He hesitantly turned his head and looked at Jimin's sleeping face.

He turned a bit and Jimin's arms instantly wrapped around him tighter. Yoongi shyly put his arm around the other's body.

'You don't have to keep me this tightly...' he whispered and, recollecting one of their conversations, he slowly leaned and kissed Jimin's forehead.

'I am finally here, baby...'

---

Surprise! Cause I couldn't wait to write it! 😍

BlairWitch91❤

# Chapter 59: Anta Qadarii

Jungkook didn't ask where Taehyung was going. He didn't raise his head from his neck. Didn't open his eyes. Didn't actually do anything besides having his arms tightly wrapped around Taehyung's neck and breathing his scent into his lungs.

The cold air was surrounding them. The snow was falling on them.

He sometimes felt how Taehyung was wrapping his arms tighter around his body, as if he wanted to make sure he was still holding him.

It was breaking Jungkook's heart. Just like shivers that were running through Taehyung's body from time to time. And the way he slightly was tilting his head to brush his lips over Jungkook's temple.

Their closeness didn't bring them even a bit of peace as it supposed... Quite the opposite. They felt like people, who starved for days and suddenly were given food.

They see it. Feel it's sent. Almost feel the taste in their mouth...

They wanted to reach for it... but were afraid... Deadly afraid someone will snatch the food away from them as soon as they stretch their hands... Leaving them devastated by the hope that sparked inside them.

Nothing felt real.

The arms. The scents... Even the sound of their breaths.

They were so scared... Terrified, it was just a dream that they shut themselves even from each other. Leaving just this one shaken red thread that was connecting them all this time - keeping them sane.

Feeling their own pain and the pain of the other one was too much to handle at once. So they just shut themselves.

Jungkook didn't know how much time passed, when Taehyung wings suddenly changed their furious movements to the gentle ones, when they started to fall down.

He felt the moment Taehyung's feet touched the ground softly and made him reach the ground too.

For a moment they were standing like that. So close yet parted by months of separation. Not moving at all. Trying to regain the shreds of control over themselves.

Finally Jungkook opened his eyes slowly and looked above Taehyung's shoulder, just to close them right after.

A familiar garden, dusted with snow, sparkling in the moonlight...

Twin houses, sleeping in the quiet city... The dark windows looked so sad and scary.

'I didn't know where to go...' Taehyung whispered, leaning his face to Jungkook's shoulder.

Jungkook moved a bit and took Taehyung's hand without a word.

He gulped hard, making the first step towards Kims' house. Each step was making it harder to breathe, being too fast and not being fast enough at the same time.

When Jungkook reached the patio doors, he moved his hand and the lock made a click. The door opened, showing the cold and dark inside of the house.

Taehyung looked at Jungkook's profile, when the other was staring inside the darkness not moving at all. With his eyes not seeing the things he was looking at, but memories... Memories this place held...

Taehyung looked down and squeezed Jungkook's cold palm, while making a move with his own. All the candles in the house lightened up suddenly, dispersing the darkness slightly. Showing a bit of light here and there.

He pulled Jungkook inside and closed the doors. It was really cold here. Nobody lived here for a while...

With a heavy heart Taehyung brushed away the inside panic that couldn't leave him and gave Jungkook the time alone.

'I will secure the house and turn on the heating...' he whispered, when they reached the living room. But he stopped when Jungkook walked to the shelf, looking at the turned down photo frame.

With a shivering hand he reached for it and stood it up.

It was one of their photos together with their parents.

Jungkook looked around and saw all the photo frames turned down or the signs on the walls where the pictures once were.

Taehyung didn't know what to say...

How to assure him they didn't try to remove him from their lives. They didn't try to forget...

He opened his mouth several times, just to close them and swallow hard.

He desperately tried to push away the memories of the total darkness around him. The times of absolute eclipse that imprisoned him inside the void.

But he was wrong... Jungkook understood what the turned down photos meant. He stood up the frame, whispering:

'Maybe they did me a favor... blocking my memory...'

Taehyung looked down and took an erratic inhale.

'I will check the house...' he choked out and moved upstairs fast.

Jungkook's eyes, which were glued to Taehyung's smiling face in the photo, ran to Taehyung's figure on the stairs.

He looked stronger... but thinner. Jungkook clenched his fist. He was hit by the memory after they woke him up. The feeling of his soul being torn apart to the point he didn't feel it at all. Taehyung had to feel like that... for months.

Jungkook shut his eyes tightly and his lips started to tremble when he imagined Taehyung's state.

He was sick. He was devastated. He suffered...

And Jungkook wasn't here...

Because he wasn't here...

After checking every window and every door inside the house and securing it with every shred of power he had left, Taehyung turned on the heating to the maximum, because he was freezing. He knew it won't help at all... but at least it was something he could focus on for a few minutes.

After that, almost running he came back to the living room, and instantly turned his steps to the kitchen where the lights were on.

He found Jungkook cutting something on the kitchen top. All the cabinets were open as if he looked through each of them.

'There is nothing besides canned peaches and instant noodles here...' Jungkook sniffed.

'I can order something...'

Jungkook shook his head furiously.

Taehyung made a step towards him.

'You didn't eat, right?' Jungkook sounded almost angry, yet Taehyung could hear only suppressed tears behind his tone.

'Koo...' he made a step.

'You HAVE to eat!'

Taehyung moved to him and put his hand over Jungkook's palm.

'Koo...'

Jungkook let go of the knife. He took the piece of a peach in his hand and lifted it to Taehyung's lips.

'Eat!' he demanded.

Tears filled Taehyung's eyes, seeing him this desperate.

'Koo...' he choked out. 'I... I c-can't...'

Jungkook's eyes shined with gloss.

'Please...' he said with trembling lips.

Taehyung shook his head, closing his eyes. He gently took out the fruit from Jungkook's fingers and put it on the cutting board.

Jungkook looked as if he would break there at this exact moment, but Taehyung cupped his face.

'You will go to my room.' he whispered, taking deep breaths between, holding himself at the edge of the breakdown. 'You will take a shower. You will wear my clothes.' he stroked Jungkook's cheeks with his thumbs. 'And you will wait for me. I will order the food and we will eat later. I promise. Okay, baby?'

Jungkook nodded. Just because he didn't want to bring Taehyung more pain. He

felt as if Taehyung suffered so much more than him.

So without saying a word he turned around and walked away. Feeling the guilt, feeling him to a suffocating level...

Taehyung looked after him. He knew they couldn't go on like that... They had to open those doors and let the storm in, before it would burst inside hurting them even more.

Jungkook, wrapped inside as many layers of Taehyung's clothes as he could, was standing on the balcony letting the freezing air inside the warm room. He was looking at the moonlight with arms crossed on his chest as if he wanted to protect himself.

He calmed down... Or more like he was prepared...

He knew when Taehyung appeared. He could feel him like he could feel his own heartbeat.

Taehyung leaned on the doorframe of the balcony with his arm. Looking at Jungkook's figure bathed in the light which resembled his skin tone. Looking ethereal as always.

So beautiful.

He heard a desperate inhale and a gulp. And he knew what was coming...

They had to open the wound and let it bleed, before it heals... but his eyes widened, when he heard:

'I'm sorry...'

Taehyung froze.

'I'm so sorry, Taehyung...' Jungkook cried out. 'When they appeared... I didn't think about you. I didn't think about anything... Mom was in a critical state, bleeding heavily. She was dying... I was fighting, I swear! I was! But when they couldn't go through me... they pointed a gun at her... And I just... I didn't think about you... I just wanted to save her... I'm sorry... I went with them... I left you... You can be angry... You can yell at me...'

Taehyung shut his eyes.

'I'm sorry...' Jungkook painfully dug his fingers inside his arms. 'You...' he was afraid to even finish the next sentence, when Taehyung suddenly disturbed him with his steady, quite, deep voice:

'One year...'

*Of course*, Jungkook though, with his heart aching. *In a year a lot can change...*

But then Taehyung continued:

'... a month... 22 days... and 22 hours...'

Jungkook shut his eyes, when more tears started to roll down his face.

He wanted to yell, not just cry. Scream the pain out. When he thought about each day Taehyung suffered. But then his heart stopped its painful beating when he heard:

'I was born loving you... And I will die loving you...'

Jungkook's whole body was trembling when he tried to muffle his sobs and Taehyung had enough of him hurting himself like that. Hurting himself with guilt that shouldn't even be there...

He even for a second didn't think how much he himself suffered...

He came closer, gently turned Jungkook around and pulled him into his arms, placing his hand on his head to press his face to his neck.

Jungkook was crying, letting go of his pain, longing, relief. He was crying after lost time. Lost memories. He was crying for Taehyung. He was crying for himself.

Taehyung was gently rocking him in his arms.

'I would wait for you till the end of all my lifetimes...' Taehyung closed his eyes, when warm tears ran down his cold cheeks.

'I wasn't angry at you even for a second, baby... You didn't do anything wrong...' he whispered, pressing his lips to Jungkook's temple gently.

Jungkook's shaking arms fell down to his side, before he hesitantly allowed himself to raise them to Taehyung's waist. His fingers desperately gripped the hoodie on the back.

'They made me forget your n-name... Y-your face...' he whimpered. 'Your v-voice...'

Taehyung pulled him closer.

'But I didn't f-forget YOU...' Jungkook was choking on his words. 'You were in everything... In the whisper of the wind... In the l-light reflexes on the water... In the rising s-sun...'

Taehyung wanted to stop him for a moment. Just for a moment to catch a breath before the waves of pain would drown him, but he couldn't... He had found this strength inside him now.

'I was waking up looking for you... I was waking up... feeling you... I felt you... Taehyung... I s-swear I d-did...'

'Of course you did...' Taehyung whispered almost inaudibly.

When Jungkook started to shiver uncontrollably, Taehyung embraced his waist and lifted him. Jungkook wrapped himself around him like a koala. He went inside the room and sat on the bed with Jungkook on his lap.

He let him cry letting every word pierce his heart and wash the pain away.

'I'm sorry... I missed you... I missed you...' Jungkook was chanting between sobs. 'I missed your v-voice... Your h-hands... Your smile... Your l-la-laugh... I'm sorry...'

'P-please... s-stop... Don't say s-sorry anymore...' Taehyung sobbed out loud, not being able to stand it anymore. 'They hurt y-you! I know they did! You were in p-pain! I let them take you! I let them hurt you! They were hurting you constantly and I wasn't there when you needed me the most!'

Jungkook raised his head in shock. He started to shake his head, denying Taehyung's words.

'No... N-no...'

'And... a-and I wasn't s-strong enough...' Taehyung cried. 'I b-broke down... I hurt all of them... I b-blamed m-mom...' he hid his face inside Jungkook's shoulder not being able to look at him. 'It's me... I d-didn't p-protect... you... It's my f-fault... I wasn't t-there... when they were h-hurting you...'

Jungkook grabbed Taehyung's shoulder and tried to move him to look at him, but Taehyung tightly embraced him, not letting him do it.

Licking the tears from his lips he whispered to his ear, stroking his hair:

'Tae... You were with me... You made me survive. Nothing can b-break us... Remember?'

The grip around Jungkook tightened even more.

'Maybe I didn't remember your name or face...' Jungkook's gentle palm cupped Taehyung's cheek and finally Taehyung looked at him. 'But I remembered the angel... and I knew... I love him.'

Jungkook's fingers slowly moved to Taehyung's bangs and brushed them aside, making Taehyung's eyes visible. His finger caressed his eyebrows... the space between them... before sliding down Taehyung's perfect nose.

Jungkook was observing the journey of his fingers taking in every inch of Taehyung's face. Memorizing it once again... Painting it under his own skin... Carving it inside his soul...

He outlined the shape of his mouth...

'I love you... No matter what they would do. No matter what you would do - I love you, Kim Taehyung.'

Taehyung got lost inside Jungkook's shining, wet eyes.

Those eyes...

This soul.

The unshaken. Eternal. Unbreakable... love.

'Kiss me.' Taehyung whispered.

Jungkook slowly cuddled his cheek to Taehyung's. His fingers were dancing on his jaw softly, while his lips brushed over the skin.

Calming. Prolonging the moment just like before their first kiss...

His eyelids fluttered and went down...

His nose slid down the curve of Taehyung's face.

Taehyung tilted his face and they dived inside each other deeply. Tasting each other's tears until their lips united in sweetness only they could feel.

Their tongues and mouth union finally gave their hearts a bit of rest and peace.

The faith and proof they were craving for.

They breathed out softly, but their lips were still close enough to feel the warmth. Even with closed eyes they still could see each other perfectly.

'Don't steal my lines...' Jungkook whispered.

Taehyung laughed through tears and leaned his head on Jungkook's shoulder tiredly. Jungkook's hand traveled to Taehyung's hair to become intertwined with his soft locs.

(This wonderful art is made by Instagram user: **onig.ri** . Beautiful, amazing talent and imagination.)

It wasn't the end. But they could keep going now...

There were no secrets between them... So they had to tell each other about everything. Every hard moment. Every hard decision. Every single hint of pain and every tear...

Taehyung wanted to know... about Yoongi. San, Wooyung, Gahyeon and Ren. And about Jungkook's suffering. So he could share the pain with him.

Jungkook wanted to know about their parents, Red String. What they all went through. And about Taehyung's eclipse... to understand his suffering.

The night was passing by while they shared everything with each other, speaking quietly.

Stroking each other's hair and hugging each other.

Wiping each other's tears... on the bed they made love for the first time.

Their bed.

**(🎶Music tip: The Power of Love by Gabrielle Aplin🎶)**

The moon was low in the sky... Holding himself tightly for the last few minutes just to say hello to his beloved sun. Waiting to see it and be bathed inside its warmth.

The sky was painted with orange and purple, filling the bedroom with the softest light. Exposing all the little objects that held so many memories.

Jungkook dozed off, but Taehyung couldn't stop looking at him. Laying so close to him. His fingers were grazing through his cheek and lips, lightly like butterfly wings.

They were exhausted and overwhelmed.

Their wounds were still fresh...

Taehyung knew he should let him sleep... But this one time... he threw away his protectiveness...

'Jungkook...' he whispered.

Jungkook sleepily opened his eyes. His palm instantly traveled to Taehyung's hand on his face and he brought it to his lips.

He kissed Taehyung's gentle fingers and cuddled his cheek to it.

'Jungkook...' Taehyung's muffled voice was delicate like silk and full of desperation. 'I need you...'

Jungkook's eyes sparkled with gentleness.

'Give yourself to me, baby...' Taehyung whispered, touching Jungkook's cheek with the tips of his fingers.

Jungkook embraced his wrist and led it to his chest. Pressing Taehyung's palm to his heart.

Taehyung could feel how steady and strong his heartbeat was.

'I can't give you something... you already own...' Jungkook said.

He turned on his back and his hand reached Taehyung's lips to caress them, while the second one slowly led Taehyung to the hem of his blouse.

'Take me, Taehyung...'

Taehyung leaned towards Jungkook. He focused on his face, while his hand was gently caressing the skin of his tummy.

He kissed Jungkook's forehead slowly.

His nose.

His right cheek. His left cheek...

He traced his jaw with soft, slow kisses.

Jungkook grabbed the hem of Taehyung's shirt and took it off of him.

They didn't rush. Stretching each move. Letting slow motion sink under their skin.

Taehyung was nibbling and pulling Jungkook's lips, letting their saliva mix. Their tongues caress each other.

Their clothes were slowly thrown on the floor, allowing their fingers and nails to feel. To recollect and remember. To design new memories.

Their skin was burning as if every touch was making an invisible tattoo over their bodies.

They were inked by each other's scents and touch.

They were painting each other by this one, eternal, death defying love.

Jungkook's lips traveled through Taehyung's chest. Leaving one kiss after another. His hair was caressing the places he kissed, making the sensation linger.

Even when the feeling was making him shiver... Taehyung didn't close his eyes. Looking at Jungkook's soft locks scattered on his abdomen, when his lips wrapped around his member, making him moan.

He was kissing him, licking him so slowly.

Worshiping him more than anything else.

Every touch was like a prayer. Their names in the air were like a psalm sung by the choir. Echoing in the room.

Taehyung laid Jungkook on the pillows, taking his breath away with his kiss.

With an open mouth he traced the path to Jungkook's stomach and cuddled his face to his navel. He almost teared up when Jungkook took this sharp breath, when he did that.

As if there was not even a day when he hadn't done that to him...

His hands were calmingly stroking Jungkook's tights when he pressed his face between Jungkook's legs.

'Tae...' Jungkook moaned, feeling Taehyung's tongue between his asscheeks.

Taehyung didn't stop. Didn't even think about it. He was lovingly preparing him with his tongue and lips. Licking and kissing. Pushing Jungkook higher and higher.

'Take me now... I need to feel you...' Jungkook whispered desperately.

Taehyung sat on the bed and stretched his hands to Jungkook without a word. Their fingers intertwined when Jungkook sat on the bed.

Taehyung pulled him closer and made him sit on his thighs.

Jungkook wrapped his legs around Taehyung's waist and his arms around his back. Entwining him like an ivy.

They could feel every inch of each other like that. Cuddling to each other intimately.

Finally feeling safe...

Taehyung grabbed Jungkook's hips and their eyes met.

'Look at me all the time...' Jungkook asked, when he felt Taehyung slowly - inch after inch - entering him.

'Even when I don't look at you... I see only you, Koo...' Taehyung whispered tenderly.

Jungkook's eyes sparkled with tears.

He connected their foreheads while they were moving slowly. Brushing skin on skin. Feeling each other.

'*Tá mo chroí istigh ionat*' Jungkook purred.

Taehyung felt overwhelmed, hearing the old language.

The language of the Lovers. The language in which their souls were making vows to each other for the first time.

And the meaning behind them...

*My Heart Is In You.*

'Koo...' he choked out. *'A chuisle mo chroí...'*

Jungkook smiled at him sweetly before connecting their lips.

*The pulse of my heart.*

They let go. Let go of any restraints. Letting their souls sparkle. Jungkook's skin slowly was adorned by the moonlight glitter. And Taehyung's skin responded with the golden sunlight.

But they didn't see it, lost in each other's eyes.

Making the magic without any power.

Protecting each other with charms and spells only they could whisper and understand.

Letting themselves soar to the sky without any wings, just by the hands of the other one.

Just to fall in those arms that were always there to catch them.

*I'll protect you from the hooded claw*

*Keep the vampires from your door*

*When the chips are down I'll be around*

***With my undying death defying love for you***

*Envy will hurt itself*

*Let yourself be beautiful*

*Sparkling light, flowers and pearls and pretty girls*

*Love is like an energy*

*Rushing in, rushing inside of me*

*This time we go sublime*

*Lovers entwined divine divine*

*Love is danger, love is pleasure*

*Love is pure, the only treasure*

*I'm so in love with you*

*Make love your goal*

*The Power of Love*

*A force from above*

*Cleaning my soul*

*The power of love*

*A force from above*

*A sky scraping dove*

*Flame on burn desire*

*Love with tongues of fire*

*Purge the soul*

*Make love your goal*

---

**Anta Quadarii in arabic means You are my destiny. You are my chosen one.**

*Gaelic (Irish) - A chuisle mo chroí (Mu Kooish-la mu kree) - "The pulse of my heart" or "My pulse."*

*Gaelic (Irish) - Tá mo chroí istigh ionat (Taw mu kree iss-chig un-it) - "My Heart Is In You."*

I don't know what have you expected... So I really hoped you don't mind this chapter.

Because I honestly - love it. 🕋🕋🕋🕋

BlairWitch91❤

# Chapter 60: United

**14th of November 2071, Daegu**

Yoongi woke up from his slumber, absolutely sure that if he opened his eyes he would see his own room's ceiling. Cursing inside because of a heartbreaking dream, he was tempted to get up and destroy everything in his sight.

His eyes were itchy. His body was heavy...

He wanted to stay inside the dream and never wake up, but the worry about Gahyeon, mom and Jungkook made him just sigh.

But he took a deeper breath and he felt the heaviness around his chest, he frowned and parted his eyelids. He looked down just to see the crown of raven black hair.

A head pressed to his chest trustingly.

He blinked and his eyes widened.

It wasn't a dream. He wasn't in Daegu. He didn't imagine meeting Jimin. And he definitely wasn't anymore, a prison in his house. And that meant Jungkook was out of there too...

But why the hell was he in one bed with Jimin? How? HOW? HOW!!!?

What was he supposed to do now? Should he got up? Should he wake him up? Why was this guy so absolutely unbothered, sleeping in his arms?

In his arms...

Yoongi felt a strange feeling in his face. A bit of stretching near his lips...

He hesitantly stretched his hand to brush the bangs from Jimin's forehead to see his face, but instantly took it back when the doors opened with a bang.

'Oppa, do you want something to eat?' Gahyeon peaked inside and her lips parted when the view sank inside her mind. She smirked. 'Oh.'

'GET THE FUCK OUT!? HOW MANY TIMES HAVE I TOLD YOU TO KNOCK!?' Yoongi wanted to get up, when Jimin's arm literally pressed him back to the bed, not moving an inch from his position.

'You don't have any business in being this embarrassed...' he mumbled sleepily. He moved his head and put his chin on Yoongi's chest looking at him. 'Or do you want

me to give you one?'

Yoongi gulped, looking at Jimin's raised eyebrow. He couldn't find a comeback to that...

Gahyeon snorted.

Yoongi focused on his sister.

'WHY ARE YOU STILL HERE?!'

'Enjoying the view.'

'GET OUT!'

'Jeeze... you are loud.' Jimin pressed his palm to Yoongi's lips. 'Don't make me shut you up in another way...'

Yoongi glared at him.

'Good morning, Jimin-oppa!' Gahyeon said cheerfully.

'Good morning, Gahyeon...' Jimin said kindly, not letting his sassy gaze from Yoongi.

'Want to eat now?'

'We will come in a bit...'

'Okay!' She sent a flying kiss to his brother, who looked at her as if he imagined her head as a trophy on one of the walls.

Yoongi grabbed Jimin's wrist, to take his hand away from his mouth and it didn't escape Jimin's attention how gently he had done that.

'Don't you have your soulmate to eat his brains out?' he asked Gahyeon.

'Ren is a cutie not like you. He is still sleeping and he looks too sweet to wake him up...'

Jimin turned his head to look at her, pressing his cheek to Yoongi's chest.

'Aren't you a whipped cream?' he teased.

'And look who's talking...' she smirked. 'I at least am not glued to him first thing after meeting him.'

'Touche.' Jimin answered absolutely unbothered.

'God - I don't believe in - please, let me die and get some peace.' Yoongi said seriously, looking at the ceiling.

Jimin giggled and said to Gahyeon:

'Can you leave us alone now?'

'Of course.' She glared at Yoongi. 'At least one of you has some manners...'

'FUCK YOU!'

'Not going to happen.' Jimin and Gahyeon spoke simultaneously and Yoongi almost burst into flames.

Feeling the danger now, Gahyeon fastly closed the door, leaving Jimin to face the grumpy cat alone.

'Do you always wake up angry?' Jimin asked, before Yoongi could open his mouth and spit fire.

'I didn't wake up angry! Told you she is a little hag!'

'The little hag you are protecting with your own life...' Jimin smiled at him and Yoongi was a bit speechless.

'She is my sister.'

'She is a person you care about no matter how much hardship it brings.'

'Stop it.'

'What?'

'Reading me.'

'Why?'

'It's... embarrassing.' Yoongi pressed his head to the pillow.

Jimin slightly changed his position and his legs entangled with Yoongi's. Their socs were rubbing over each other, making Yoongi feel a strange tingling in his stomach.

'How can you do that? Being this close?' he asked. 'You don't know me.'

'I do.' Jimin said calmly. 'You are a savage blockhead who didn't understand I was describing him, talking about my soulmate...'

'Right back at you.'

Jimin smiled into Yoongi's shirt.

'I am still offended that you didn't want to see my dick...'

'I HATE YOU!' Yoongi growled, trying to get up, but Jimin hovered over him.

'I am fine with that.' he smiled. '*Just let me loooove you...*' he hummed.

They were looking at each other for 3 long, hot minutes, during which Yoongi couldn't even blink. He was enchanted.

'Sing.' he whispered.

'*The whole world is different from yesterday... Just, just, with your joy... When you called me... I became your flower... As if we were waiting...*'

This voice. Those words.

Yoongi thought that he can't get more peace and feel more bliss, then when he heard this for the first time. But he wasn't ready for the adoration that burst out inside him, when he heard it so close to his ear. Without any barriers.

'Maybe I don't hate you that much in the end...' he said reluctantly, when Jimin put his head back on his chest.

Jimin showed him his palm with spread fingers and Yoongi intertwined his own with him.

He frowned looking at their connected hands.

'They are indeed small...'

'SHUT UP!'

And for the first time in a while Yoongi laughed out loud.

******

Gahyeon walked to the kitchen where Wooyoung, San, Han, Yeonjun and Yoohyeon were. She was whistling under her nose, having a grin on her face.

'What are you so happy about?' San asked, while frowning.

'I just saw something super cute!' she said. 'And... My brother was involved in it! Which comes as a shocker...' she added, after a second thought.

'Cute Yoongi?' Wooyoung spilled the drink on his glass. 'What?! When? How? Can I see it?!'

'If you want to risk your life...' Gahyeon shrugged. 'I annoyed him enough so he will gladly snap on someone...'

'What cute thing?' Yoohyeon asked, sitting next to Gahyeon. 'And why is it strange?'

'Because Min Yoongi is not cute. He doesn't want to be cute. It goes hardly against his personality...' San said.

'Remind me of someone...' Han mumbled under his nose, smirking at Yoohyeon.

'Leave my Queen out of it...' she stuck her tongue and turned to Gahy. 'What cute thing?'

'I went to his room... and he wasn't alone!' she squealed.

'Jimin was with him...' Yeonjun guessed.

Gahyeon nodded.

'And what?' San whispered all tensed, widening his eyes.

'They were cuddling!'

Han raised his eyebrow.

'Just cuddling? You should be glad your brother was still in clothes. Jimin is not a patient person...' he giggled.

Wooyoung looked at him with a wide smile.

'I knew it! Ahahahahahah!! Omg! It will be totally awesome to see...'

Minji and Jin walked inside the kitchen, helping Handong, and Wooyoung shut his mouth respectfully.

'How are you Mrs Min?' San asked, making a place for her.

She smiled at him.

'I think some of us will sleep late today...' Jin said. 'Did you make something to eat already?'

'Yeah, no worries, uncle...' Yoohyeon said.

Yoongi walked to the kitchen in a white t-shirt and black sweatpants. It wasn't anything strange as they all were wearing borrowed clothes. Yeonjun shared his with Wooyoung. And Minho gave some of his to San and Han brought some to Ren. Without a second thought Yoohyeon and Dami let Gahyeon choose the one she would like from theirs.

They didn't have many things around, but it was still more then at the beginning, because Hwasa and Dragon were delivering something from time to time. And running from Mins' Mansion the rest for sure didn't think about clothes. So it was obvious for Red String to share every needed thing.

So Wooyoung didn't think much about it, before Han leaned to him and whispered:

'Jimin's clothes.'

He choked on the squeal he had to suppress, but it didn't stop him from hiding his face in the bowl of cereals while throwing to Yoongi:

'Nice clothes, Yoongs...'

Yeonjun snorted and Yoongi looked at Wooyoung as if he wanted to smash his head on the wall.

'Thanks! I like them.' Jimin walked after Yoongi, like an unbothered king he was.

Yoongi glared at him, then at the ceiling and just ignored his need to ranaway, plopping next to his mother by the table.

He didn't know why Jimin had this unfadable need to expose everything about him and why the hell he couldn't bring himself to react anyhow to that, besides sighing heavily and letting him do whatever he wanted...

He met him yesterday...

But maybe - just maybe - if he will throw away any physical aspects... hell yeah he knew this annoying, cute guy for six years now...

He was with him in any hard, heartbreaking and soul wrecking situation - lifting him up.

So yeah, Yoongi accepted this explanation and stopped wondering why the fuck he can't say "No." to Jimin or push him away in any way.

'I think we should change the place of meals to the restaurant part next time...' Jin

suggested. 'When everyone is up, it will be hard to fit in here...'

'We will combine tables there after breakfast' Yeonjun offered.

Soobin entered the kitchen covered in snow from head to toe, pouting hard.

'WHAT HAPPENED?' Yeonjun jumped to him.

'Bam happened.' Soobin said gravely. 'He was pulling me all the time. Not listening at all. Until I tripped and he was still doing everything to pull me further...'

Yeonjun looked at him with a mix of care and amusement. He kissed his red nose and brushed the snow from his jacket.

'Why is he not listening? I know he has his own hierarchy about who to listen to and it means: Jungkook. Taehyung. Uncle Namjoon. Jimin. And then everybody else, but it was never like that when he was with one of us...'

Jimin sighed.

'Bamie!' he called and crouched down.

Sulking dog went to him, dragging the abandoned leash after himself.

'Awwww... are you still sad?' Jimin hugged the dog. 'Don't be mad at us, pup...' he was petting Bam's head and sides. 'Daddies didn't abandon you! They are just making your siblings...'

Jin choked on the coffee he was drinking and Minji instantly patted his back.

Han, Wooyoung, Gahyeon and Yoohyeon burst out laughing.

Soobin blushed a little.

And Yoongi hit his head over the table top, mumbling:

'Kill me...'

Handong, smiling softly, reached her head to his hair to ruffle it without a word.

'And look what I have here for you...' Jimin purred to the puppy, who instantly dived with his nose to his pocket. 'No, no, no... You will get the treat after breakfast or Kookie will whoop my ass, because you gained too much weight recently...'

Bam looked at Jimin with the look of betrayal on his face.

Because it went completely quiet Yoongi peaked up from his shoulder just to see

Jimin pointing at him with his thumb.

'Bamie, meet your second godfather!' Jimin looked at Yoongi and got up. 'This is Taekook's baby. It is our responsibility to babysit him!' he said seriously.

'Our?' Yoongi squinted his eyes.

'Yes, Yoongi.' Jimin confirmed calmly. 'Our. It's our nephew...'

Yoongi got up, ignoring the fact how his tummy flipped when Jimin said his name again. Why did it sound absolutely different from anybody else?

'Listen! Is this revenge?!' he asked.

'Revange?' Jimin blinked innocently. 'For what? For not telling me for 6 years I am your soulmate?'

For a second Yoongi wanted to snap... but he couldn't when Jimin looked at him with raised eyebrows. And... he was a tiny bit afraid that his... mild teasing... can change into a spill the real tea festival with perfect description about dick showing and all of that...

Yoongi blushed a bit and grunted.

'Yeah.'

'Not at all...' Jimin said what was an obvious lie, patting Bam's head. 'I am giving you a shock therapy so you will fastly switch from you to we and from mine to our.'

'Told you he is not a patient person...' Han whispered to San's ear.

'Yoongi is not either... Usually he would already walk through the person who would get on his nerves this much...' San whispered back.

'Jimin! I heard you on the upper floor! Leave the poor boy alone!' Bakehyun said, walking to the kitchen.

'Poor boy?!' Chanyeol exclaimed after him. 'Beak! Don't be so soft!! We have to carefully check this guy, before he would be even allowed to get close to Minnie! No way my son will...'

Chanyeol entered the kitchen, screaming after Baekhyun.

Jimin moved a bit closer to Yoongi ready to have the teasing word battle with his appa...

But Chanyeol stopped abruptly and his lips parted. His eyes dropped to Yoongi's palm to confirm the mark. Baekhyun blinked, surprised as well.

'It's you...' he whispered softly.

'IT'S YOU!!?????' Chanyeol yelled, walking to Yoongi. 'You are okay?! I am so glad?!'

Yoongi was absolutely shocked too and it was getting deeper when he was hugged.

'Oh my!! The guy who saved San!' Wooyoung jumped on his feet.

Minji frowned and looked carefully at three boys.

'Oh... it is indeed you, boys...' she smiled. 'Good you are safe...'

Jimin blinked, looking at his appa, hugging his soulmate. He grunted impatiently.

'Can you explain what the hell is happening?' he asked.

Chanyeol carefully, looked at him and giggled nervously.

'You see... umm... well... when we were in Daegu on a mission... These things happened. And we met there for a short while!'

'What thing?' Jimin squinted his eyes.

'Umm...' Chanyeol looked worried at Baekhyun. They didn't tell Jimin about that situation...

'Yoongi shot the person who almost shot this person...' San explained calmly, pointing at Chanyeol.

Chanyeol shut his eyes afraid of Jimin's anger, but his son only got pale. He stepped back, but Yoongi instantly went after him.

'Hey! Hey!' he said worried, shaking him a bit. 'It's nothing. It was years ago... During war. And he...' he pointed at Baekhyun. 'He saved me. Jungkook's dad saved San... We all are okay now... Jimin! Do you hear me?'

Jimin blinked, looking at Yoongi. He gulped and regain a bit of control:

'So my fathers met you before me? Perfect.' he said, pretending to be angry. 'Bam!' he called and walked out of the kitchen.

Yoongi instantly turned to walked after him, when Wooyoung said teasingly:

'You are already so...'

Yoongi just looked at him.

'Not a word.' he said.

And Yoohyeon, Yeonjun, Han and Soobin understood why San, Wooyoung and Gahyeon had a bit of worried faces and respectful postures. The cold tone, he spoke in, froze everybody around.

Min Yoongi was soft enough to let them play around, but he had his limits.

After few heavy minutes when everybody went silent, Yoongi walked out saying to Baekhyun with steady, calm voice:

'I will take care of him.'

Yoongi found Jimin sitting on the patio stairs, throwing snowballs to Bam, who was running after them,

He sat next to him. He squirmed, when the cold snow touched his pants.

'You will have a wet and cold butt...' he said.

'You can warm it up later.' Jimin bit back, but there wasn't usual sassiness in his tone.

'Chim...' Yoongi sighed.

'I am not mad.' Jimin disturbed him. 'My fathers didn't tell me, appa was in this kind of danger... And I didn't know they saved you either. It's just frustrating... Secrets. Do you all really think you protect anybody like that?' he shook his head.

'At that moment... I wouldn't pull the trigger... I hesitated...' Yoongi whispered heavily. 'It was the first time... I knew I would kill someone... And they won't be coming back... But then I felt you.'

Jimin looked at him.

'What do you want to hear?' Yoongi whispered desperately. 'I am not the fluffy, smooth type of a guy who will shower you with sweetness... But at that moment...' he choked out. 'I knew... even if everybody would leave... you won't...'

Jimin touched Yoongi's cheek.

'I told you I am not mad. You saved my father...' then he grinned widely. 'It just makes you hotter and more irresistible, you know?'

'Irresistable?' the corner of Yoongi's lips lifted a bit.

'Yeah...' Jimin breathed out and brought his face closer.

Yoongi gulped.

'If you want to stop me... it's a good moment...' Jimin whispered.

There was a second Yoongi wanted to move away. A second which was washed out by curiosity, longing and sudden need to calm a small flames of anxiety in Jimin's eyes.

The other was nervous too, even cupping Yoongi's cheek, when their lips were inches apart and he initiated the contact... he was still anxious...

'Why am I so soft for you?' Yoongi breathed out, and his arm wrapped slowly around JImin's waist.

'Cause I am your 'baby'... You can set the whole world on fire, but you would still make sure even one flame wouldn't touch me...'

Their faces were getting closer and closer.

'Stop me... Yoongi...' Jimin asked, looking at Yoongi's lips.

'But you promised to teach me...' the other whispered, slowly tilting his head. His lips parted.

'Are you fine with it?'

'Shut up and show me how to kiss you....'

A bit of nervous irritation in Yoongi's whisper made Jimin smile. If he wasn't dying to do it, he would for sure use this opportunity to tease him.

But at this moment, when he felt Yoongi's breath enveloping his lips... When he was absolutely lost in the dark eyes, he felt like he imagined. Like he once described it to Taehyung: it was the feeling of safety given by someone who was there to catch you.

So he slowly leaned forward and pressed his lips to Yoongi's, still cupping the other's face. But Yoongi didn't try to move even a bit. He parted his lips for Jimin, who slowly and softly was pulling, rubbing and caressing his upper or lower lip in a sensual, tender, patient way.

Yoongi felt everything inside him was tingling and started to heat up. His arm around Jimin's waist involuntarily tightened, when he moved his lips along Jimin's.

Jimin breathed out softly and slightly pressed his tongue between Yoongi's lips. Not doing anything more, waiting patiently until Yoongi will make up his mind if he wants to go further.

Yoongi's heard the erratic, harsh beating of his pulse in his ears. It took him actually a moment to shyly move his tongue and touched Jimin's, inviting him inside his mouth.

At this moment... he realized the last 24 hours didn't matter. It didn't matter he physically met his soulmate not even a day earlier...

Because he fell in love with Jimin's sexy, sassy, sensible, sensitive, funny, bold and caring personality years ago.

So he pulled him even closer and let him teach him how he should be kissed.

**14th of November 2071, Seoul**

Jungkook woke up suddenly, with fastly beating hard.

His hand traveled to his waist at once.

He let out a shaky breath when he felt an arm there.

When arms tightened around his body... When he felt the naked skin rubbing over his back... When the movement of his leg got a lazy reply and a feet caressed his calf... When he heard a breath under his ear and right after the lips were pressed there calmingly, he laughed with relief, trying to chase away the tears that threatened to appear again.

He fastly turned around in Taehyung's hold, pressing him to the pillows and laid down on his chest. He cupped Taehyung's face and started to kiss all over it, before aggressively pecking his lips multiple times.

'You are here...' he smiled widely.

Taehyung giggled, pulling a duvet over Jungkook's naked back to keep him warm.

He kissed his jaw and neck softly to hide his face for a second. He was waking up each hour just to ask the same question and calming down right after entwining himself around Jungkook protectively.

They couldn't taste each other enough. Making love to late morning hours and finally falling into restless sleep.

Taehyung's palm traveled with his fingertips through Jungkook's spine until it reached his asscheeks.

Jungkook grabbed his wrist.

'No.' he said sternly.

'Why?' Taehyung pouted, sucking on his neck. It was the first time he heard this word from Jungkook. And he didn't like it.

At all...

Jungkook had a long battle with himself, enjoying Taehyung's lips and teeth on his collarbone, but he was on a mission. He couldn't cave!

'Because...' he breathed out, moving away. 'YOU HAVEN'T EATEN YET, JERK!!!'

That's how an hour later Taehyung ended up backhugging Jungkook, who was sitting between his legs with the trace on his laps. Taehyung had already eaten the heated up takeaway and was full, but Jungkook wasn't satisfied, so he went to Jeons' house, where Siyeon and Bora were living lately and brough every snack and fruit he found.

This time he turned to Taehyung with a piece of peeled tangerine, to stick it inside his mouth.

Taehyung sighed and obediently ate it, before choosing something else from the trace and feeding Jungkook.

'So you're telling me, Yoongi hyung is a savage badass?'

'Yeah. He is like Dami... but a bit more soft...' Jungkook added after a second and giggled. 'Even if he wants to hide it constantly...'

Taehyung heard the whole story already, and he couldn't express how grateful he

was for Min Yoongi's existence...

'And the others?'

'Hmmm... Gahyeon is like Yoohyeon in many ways... Maybe like a mix of Yoo and Jimin...' he frowned, thinking about it. 'I don't know Ren much actually, but he is well trained, intelligent and shy... Wooyoung could be Han's twin brother. And San is calm like Minho, but fierce like Yeonjun...'

'What we know about them?'

'Well, I just had few hours before getting back memories and connecting all the strings, but San and Wooyoung can fly and move with incredible speed as you know. Gahy and Ren can use Telepathy, Teleportation and Telekinesis. Which makes sense if you look at the big picture... Red String needed a communication couple. Like uncle Baek and Chan in Red Alert.

'We have protection from Minsung... Yoohyeon and Dami, Jimin and now Yoongi are frontiers. Yeonbin and Woosan are backups... Yeah... makes sense.' Taehyung said thoughtfully.

'Good grandpa came to Uljin... Him and mom can help us get together better...'

Taehyung hid his face in Jungkook's hair.

'What do you think he will do now?'

'Wait.' Jungkook replied quietly. 'He wants us to come to him...' he gulped. 'He knows we will do it at some point... He captured the whole city of people...'

Taehyung sighed heavily, for a moment blocking his mind, who already started to analyze and plan. He needed more information.

'We have to go back soon...' he whispered.

'Mhm... After you eat!' Jungkook said, and turned around with another tangerine in his fingers.

'I will get too lazy to move after eating this much...' Taehyung whined.

'I will ride you.' Jungkook assured him without a second thought.

Taehyung's lips parted. He blinked and smirked lazily right after.

'That's not what I meant, but sure baby, now you convinced me...' he leaned his head and took the rest of the whole tangerine in his mouth and munched it quickly.

Jungkook pouted.

'I could have said it earlier...'

They gave himself few more hours to get more stable, to assure themselves they were together again. Exchange giggles and laughs. Sweet, long kisses and hot whispers...

Then two winged figures, holding hands, jumped into the sky, bathed in the light of the setting sun.

**15th of November 2071, Uljin**

It was right after midnight when Yoongi got a mini heart attack, when two men suddenly dropped from the sky on the patio.

All of them were sitting in the living room in the Guesthouse, exchanging information, when suddenly two winged idiots decided to make a show.

Taehyung and Jungkook walked inside the living room holding a lot of bags from...

McDonald.

Yoongi winked. Did he imagined it?

'We got an idea during flight... so we brought food...' Taehyung said, raising his bags.

'Oh my God?!' Wooyoung jumped. 'Are you kidding?!' He sniffed. 'You truly are heroes...'

'Well, we took everything they got, so choose what you like...' Jungkook said, throwing bags on the coffee table and looking around.

Finally, Jimin pointed with his eyes to the armchair Yoongi was sitting on.

Jungkook walked there and dropped to his knees.

'Bamie... Come on, buddy... I am sorry...' he said quietly.

The dog didn't move, still turned to Jungkook with his butt.

Taehyung looked down. Everytime he heard Jungkook saying "sorry", he wanted to grab something and throw it on the wall.

As if sensing his inner turmoil, Yoongi looked at Taehyung. Everybody was busy diving inside the bags.

'How is it still warm?' Soobin frowned.

'Knowing our freaky kings, they were keeping temperature around it all the time...' Yoohyeon patted his back.

Yoongi stood next to Taehyung, leaving Jungkook near the armchair, trying to please his puppy quietly.

'You okay?' he asked, trying to sound bored.

Taehyung was looking for free seconds before wrapping his arms around him tightly. He hugged him hard, pressing his face to Yoongi's shoulder.

'DUDE! YOU HAVE TO STOP THIS HABIT OF SUDDEN HUGS!' Yoongi exclaimed, trying to freed himself.

Giggling Jimin, back hugged him from the other side.

'You haven't said that to me...'

'You are an exception!' He tried to chase Taehyung, but he froze when the other whispered:

'Thank you. For protecting him...'

Jimin's arms tightened around him, hearing that. He hid his face on Yoongi's back.

After meeting Jimin, Yoongi stopped analyzing a lot of things. Like the fact he felt like ruffling Taehyung's hair as if he was his younger brother.

Jimin, Jungkook and Taehyung, and not just them, but all their parents as well, treated him like some kind of hero and savior. He wasn't one. He looked down shyly and mumbled:

'I couldn't do much, but you are welcome...'

Taehyung moved away, but Jimin didn't. He stayed like that and Yoongi... Yoongi came to the conclusion he won't ever be able to stop him from doing that,

because... he simply didn't want to...

Taehyung sat next to Jungkook on the floor.

'Look, Bam...' he called to the puppy. 'Dad is finally home...' he said and kissed Jungkook's cheek. 'But I won't let you hug him! He is mine...'

Jungkook giggled.

Taehyung started to cuddle with Jungkook and finally the jealous dog, waved his tail and crawled out from under the armchair.

He wanted cuddles too so he barged on Jungkook's lap, whining and squealing, licking his face.

Taehyung rested his arms on the floor and closed his eyes, listening to Jungkook's laughter and sweet words.

'That's the cutest thing I saw in a year...' Hoseok sniffed and Minji habitual with his emotional ass, just wiped his nose with the sleeve of her blouse.

'Pull yourself together, Hope...' she said, but there was too much softness in her voice to have any effect. Because she was too captivated by the view. She couldn't stop looking at her two boys - united with each other and everyone as it was supposed to be...

Jungkook was home...

A tear escaped from her eye, but Hoseok caught it on his finger before anyone else could notice. He pressed his lips to her temple.

'Pull yourself together, Minji...' he whispered. 'You know I can't stand your tears...'

She punched his stomach, mumbling: *Shut up...*, before turning to him completely and hiding in his arms.

'I know it is late...' Hwasa said to Taehyung and Jungkook. '...but we explained what Red String is to the rest. So maybe it is the time?' She showed Taehyung the pocket with four red-thread bracelets.

Jungkook peaked from above Bam's head at Ren, Gahyeon, Wooyoung and San.

'If they want them... they can have them.'

'Jeeze, being the part of the ass kicking squad, who put the whole Daegu to sleep with a mist trick?! Count me in!' Wooyoung said.

'Yeonjun, could you?' Taehyung asked, too comfortable being so close to Jungkook, to get up.

'Sure.' Yeonjun went to Hwasa and looked at the bracelets. 'Which ones?'

'With transparent white like beads...' Jungkook said. 'The other pair with three small green beads are for Gahyeon and Ren.' he looked at them, while Yeonjun tied the red bracelets around San's and Wooyoung's wrists.

'Kook, you have a bracelet for me for years? Is there even a point in saying "no"? she shook her head.

'There is always a point in a choice...' Jin smiled at her. 'Even if the choice is obvious...'

'Yes! Yes! I want it if Ren wants it.' she said, spreading her arms.

'I wanted to be a part of this group, since you saved me from the Laboratory...' Ren said. 'Even if I didn't know who you were...'

'Okay, then!' Yoohyeon grabbed the bracelets and walked to Gahyeon. 'By the way...' she said, looking through her shoulder at Yoongi. 'Aren't you really, really rich?'

Jimin widened his eyes, grabbing his cheeks:

'Oh my!!!! I got myself a sugar daddy!!'

'JIMIN! I SWEAR TO GOD... BE QUIET!' Baekhyun exclaimed, while he hid his face in his hands.

'Yup... really rich...' San confirmed.

'Disgustingly rich...' Wooyoung nodded.

'...till yesterday...' Gahyeon stopped them, before they could go on. 'Probably we don't have access to the company or our bank accounts now...' she sighed. 'The only cash we have is the one in our backpacks and it is not much...' her cheerful face changed into a sad one.

Yoohyeon tied the red bracelet around her wrist and smirked widely:

'You know what is beautiful about virtual money?' she hugged Gahyeon with her arm. 'You can always transfer them...'

Gahyeon blinked and Yoohyeon winked at her.

'So... in my opinion... you are still really rich... and when this shitshow would be over... you fund our vacation...'

Gahyeon's eyes sparkled.

'It is a deal, sister...'

'Enough is enough...' Dami separated them and gave the second bracelet to Gahyeon. 'Here. Tie him...'

'You meant... tie it on him...?'

'Well... understand it as you want...' she smirked and pulled Yoohyeon to the table.

Gahyeon turned to Ren, who already was a blushing mess.

Why? Why? Why?! Why had her cheeks covered in pink suddenly too?!

She smacked his arm.

'I am telling you again! I am not asking you to marry me!!!'

'I know, I know!! Why are you hitting me again?!' Ren whined.

'Because you make me shy!'

'WHAT?! SINCE WHEN?!'

'SINCE NOW!!'

They were looking at each other angrily, before Ren tsked his tongue and stretched his wrist to her.

'Tie me or tie it on me. I don't care...' he said, making everybody around, gasp in surprise at his sudden boldness, while his cheeks were red a second ago.

The pink on Gahyeon's cheeks got darker, but she tied the red thread bracelet on Ren's wrist gently and fastly took a step back.

A second later she felt Ren getting closer without a word and taking her hand, but to her luck everybody turn their attention to Namjoon, who asked:

'Speaking about the money, boys...' Namjoon said. 'How did you pay for so much food?'

'We called Yoongguk and he said to sent him the bill...' Taehyung shrugged.

Namjoon went pale. He took a deep breath and yelled:

'YOU CALLED ICI TO PAY FOR MCDONALD'S?!'

---

I bet You had missed a chill chapter. So here is one for you...

And... Still Awwwing at this...

Isn't it Yoonmin?

Thanks dear Ophelia for showing me this and others <333333

And this beautiful cover was a gift from @67890an . Thank you Dear for your amazing work <3.

It will last till the last chapter before I will return the DNA cover.

BlairWitch91 ❤

# Chapter 61: Together We Stand

**15th of November 2071, Uljin**

'Calm down, uncle...' Jungkook giggled, seeing how Namjoon's face became first white and then red. Then his face saddened. 'We haven't called him for that... We called him to tell him about the situation in Daegu so he will start to act... We will need ICI and MOI to stabilize the situation... and government... and... everything else...' he sighed.

Taehyung straightened up and his arm touched Jungkook's. He automatically put his hand on Jungkook's knee, while Jungkook was still petting Bam.

'He asked if know anything about Ryu...' he said quietly.

'I didn't know you haven't found him yet...' Jungkook looked at Minji.

'He wasn't in any location outside of the city we managed to free while looking for you...' Minji shook her head. 'But we had never entered Daegu...'

'Well we did...' San said.

'You can say we were practically in the middle of it...' Ren said calmly. 'Who is Ryu?'

'Bang Yongguk and Song Jieun's son... He went to Daegu undercover...' Namjoon explained.

'Song?' Ren frowned and looked at Yoongi. Strange coincidence...

Namjoon looked through his phone and showed Ren the last picture of Ryu.

'He probably changed his look, but...' Namjoon stopped, when he saw how pale Ren got.

'We know him...' he whispered with pale lips. 'We all do...' he pointed at Yoongi, San and Wooyoung. 'We worked with him... But we knew only his nickname... He was called "Song".'

'And he disappeared... around August-September last year...' Yoongi looked at the photo.

'Just before my kidnapping?' Jungkook asked.

Only he had the courage to do that. It was a forbidden word. Every member of his

family instantly tensed up, trying to tame raging anger.

Ren looked directly at him.

'Exactly before they kidnapped you...' he said absolutely sure. 'And I know why... Because it was the same moment they got the President to act as they wanted...' he turned the phone to him. 'This guy... is Min Taeil's soulmate.'

The silence fell in the room.

'You said that's why they closed you...' Yoongi whispered finally. 'Because you discovered Song is Taeil's soulmate...'

'That's why they got only him and not his team... But I didn't know who he was exactly.' Ren shook his head.

'So Kyung protecting Taeil, protected Yongguk's son...' Jin said, looking at Namjoon.

'It doesn't justify him.' Dami said harshly.

'We can forgive, but never forget...' Yoongi said bitterly and Dami turned to him.

'Forgive? Fucking what?'

She came closer to him. She threw a warning gaze at Jimin who tensed up.

'Nobody will ever force you to forgive or forget.' she said sternly. 'I am not going to... None of us will.'

'Had you ever been in a situation without a choice?' Yoongi asked quietly.

Jimin looked at Jungkook, looking for help, but Jungkook just smiled calmingly and let Dami give Yoongi the piece of harsh love. Something his hyung could understand and accept...

'Even without a choice nobody should stop looking for a solution. And he did.' she fiercely pressed her finger to Yoongi's chest. 'So stop forcing yourself to feel anything but rage! You are the GOOD one here. We don't need proof for that. Your hatred won't change that! You don't have to be a saint and force yourself to care for them because they have the same blood as you!'

Yoongi furrowed his eyebrows, but it didn't have any effect on Dami.

'I won't babysit you! And you can be my grandfather but I won't fucking call you oppa!' the finger pressed deeper inside Yoongi's chest. 'So get a grip fucker! This is your new family. We will help because that is who we are... That's who YOU are.

But we are not fucking saints to forgive left and right!'

'Jeeze... she is Yoongi 2.0.' Wooyoung whispered to Gahyeon with wide eyes.

'We all went through a lot in different ways...' she stepped back and said quietly. 'Nobody can hurt you like people, who you called a family... We keep up with their shit as long as we can. But bonds that are the source of this kind of pain, should be broken.'

Yoongi was looking at her calm, stern face and it gave more peace than every head pats, hugs, and tears would do.

Yoohyeon and Yeonjun at once were behind Dami, reading her body language or something in her words, that alarmed them.

She looked at Yoohyeon and rolled her eyes. She pinched her nose and flicked Yeonjun's forehead.

'What have I told you? Don't panic...'

Jungkook and Taehyung looked at each other. Dami didn't like to talk about it. Her family. As soon as she was 18 she moved out of her parents house. Minji and Jennie helped her to get a dormitory and job, while she started Uni.

It was a decision she had to make... But it hurt her. Giving up on her alcoholic parents was probably the only thing she ever gave up on.

Taehyung mind linked Yeonjun: *Leave her. She is fine. She will get pissed if you start to coo at her...*

Jungkook in meantime said out loud with shocked and offended face:

'Oh my gosh... nooonnaaaaa.... Had you turned into a softie when I wasn't around?'

Dami turned to him with a speed of lightning, ignoring everybody else around.

'What had you just said?' she asked in disbelief with a cold tone.

'Noooonaaaaa....' Jungkook said, stretching the words, with a smirk. 'Soooftieee... Oh my, should we call you now a doll? Such a pretty plushy doll...'

'This is the day Jeon Jungkook died...' Han sniffed, hiding his face in Minho's arm. 'I don't want to look at this...'

Dami whistled, stretching her hand, and the spear standing in the corner of the room flew to her hand. She threw the ice daggers at Jungkook, who petting Bam with one hand just stretched his free hand and the daggers melted in the wave of

warm air.

'You think I won't beat you up, after you slightly level up?' Dami said.

'Slightly...' Minho snorted.

Dami threw the spear at Jungkook, who caught it right in front of his chest.

Taehyung smirked. Jungkook was so freaking hot...

'Okay, I will beat you up with bare hands...' she said, rolling her sleeves.

'You can try...' Jungkook bit back.

'Are they always like that?' San asked Soobin.

'Trying to kill each other? Pretty much, yeah...' the other shrugged.

Dami moved to Jungkook, but Jin stood in between them.

'Enough. You will play tomorrow in training. We have some things to discuss...'

Dami glared at Jungkook, she pointed her finger at him.

'I will get you tomorrow, brat...'

Jin shook his head and looked at Namjoon:

'Tame the children!'

'Why me?' he whined.

Yoongi facepalmed.

'What kind of circus is this?'

'The circus I am suffering in daily!' Dami growled and dropped herself on the couch near Yoohyeon.

'Can we get back to the main topic now?' Minji said. 'So Bang Ryu is Min Taeil's soulmate, captured by Hajun, so he could control Kyung. I guess we know different sides of the same story then... We need to solve the puzzles now.'

'Yeah, I have a question... Who is this Lord of Shadows in general and why does he looks like Na Inho?' Wooyoung asked.

'And why the hell did he seem to know Jungkook and Taehyung? I don't think they had ever met...' Ren added.

'More importantly... why the hell a person who lost his soulmate can still use his power?' Yoongi frowned, peeking at his mom. 'Na Dokhyun died years ago...'

Gahyeon looked at Ren with worry on her face, but he still was calm, so she just squeezed his hand without a word.

Taehyung pressed his fingers to his eyelids.

'Okay...' he sighed. 'Basic story time then. I guess you haven't told them the details?' He looked at his parents.

Namjoon shook his head.

'So you know about this sign only things you had read in legends?' Taehyung made sure.

The rest nodded.

Yoongi confirmed it too. He only knew things Jungkook could assume during his amnesia. That the shadow who was targeting him, was after the person with VK mark.

'So to understand who Lord of Shadows is... you have to understand who *Leannan* are first...'

'Stop calling him that...' Jimin gritted his teeth. 'He is not some fancy lord. He is just a toilet... Lord Loo suits his shitty character perfectly...'

Wooyoung snorted.

'I thought it was a joke...'

'Nah. We call him that.' Han said proudly.

'And he almost killed you because of it...' San noticed.

'Self-centered, delicate bish.' Han spread his arms, unbothered.

Jungkook looked at the floor. Yeah, Nonahi was self-centered... To the point his self love was dangerous.

Taehyung started to tell the long story about Leannan souls meeting and fighting through ages. From Jeryn and Taeghan to Jungkook and Taehyung.

The more stories he revealed and the more moments from their childhood Yoongi, Gahyeon, Ren and Woosan heard, the wider their eyes were getting.

'So the dreams were teaching us, giving hints. All our past lives were learning

something new about this... enemy and our powers.' Jungkook explained.

'And... I guess at different points of time we had already met each of you...' Taehyung admitted hesitantly, looking at Jungkook, who nodded.

'Not always we can tell who... souls are evolving and well, you all are totally different people, just as we are. I am pretty sure Wooyoung and San were pirates as we were...' he smiled, looking at them.

'Pirates.' Jin shook his head, snorting in disbelief. 'My son was a pirate...'

'Like Yves you mentioned?' Jimin asked.

'Yeah we remember him the most, cause he had the hardest impact... Left the deepest... scar....' Jungkook whispered, looking down.

'What?' Yoongi asked nervously. 'Who was he? What had he done?'

'No... Not a scar like that.' Taehyung shook his head instantly. 'He was Talon's - it means my previous self - older brother... But I guess he loved Jasper more...' he giggled, looking at Jungkook.

'He died, saving Jasper's life.' Jungkook whispered, still looking at the ground.

Jimin looked at Yoongi with miserable eyes. But there was... something like gratefulness and pride in them too.

All of them knew... Saving one of the Lovers meant saving both of them.

They were literally one soul in two bodies.

The silence in the room was broken by Gahyeon.

'Okay, so to sum it up this whole Lord is your archenemy, who sacrificed his soulmate, what pissed the Fate, Gods, or whatever it was and now he is chasing after you like a plague, cause his mothers gave you the same power as he had? And he wanted to be the only one?'

'Pretty much yeah...' Taehyung nodded.

'What a small-minded asshole!' she fumed in anger.

'But getting back to current times... what does Na Inho have to do with this?' San asked.

'I don't think Na Inho ever existed...' Ren whispered.

Jungkook looked at him and nodded.

Soobin frowned.

'He introduced himself as Nonahi right?' He put his hand on the bow and started to draw the light letters in the air.

N O N A H I

N A  I N H O

'It is just an anagram. When you move letters you will get Na Inho from Nonahi...'

Yoongi was looking at Ren.

'Ren? You know the most I guess?'

The boy nodded and sighed.

'He appeared out of nowhere... Around the time Min Kyung created ISA and uncle Dokyun was in charge of it... As his soulmate... he had the mark on his hand and all... Few weeks after he appeared, I was sent abroad.'

'But wasn't Dokhyun a Sealer? As I am aware Lord Loo is a Sealer too?' San frowned.

'At his point I don't think he is either... He devoured his soulmate's soul... I guess he can use both sides of the power...' Taehyung answered, deep in thoughts. ' He is a hybrid...'

'Okay I get it! He could fake the mark. He could manipulate him into thinking he was his soulmate. But If he would use Taboo, Dokhyun wouldn't be able to use power, and he was! He was using it!' Yoongi said.

Jungkook shivered when he recollected something. He got deadly pale and his eyes were staring in the distance not seeing anything.

Taehyung shifted and cupped his face, thinking he had a flashback again.

'Koo...' he whispered.

Jungkook blinked and gulped.

'He said it...' he said almost inaudibly. '*Every soul... in this world... is my toy...*'

Taehyung froze.

'He said his power is unlimited... That he could always use every kind... As we can... But he can also use every sacred treasure. Use every soul as a weapon...' Jungkook whispered desperately.

He grabbed Taehyung's shoulders, shaking him a bit, being absolutely terrified.

'Every... soul...'

Taehyung shook his head in disbelief.

'He doesn't need a mark, bond, connection or soulmate... It is not even a Taboo. He can do it to every Sealer or Holder! That's why they gave us protection he can't win against! So he won't be able to use you or me!'

Seeing Jungkook this terrified and Taehyung as well, they all felt a freezing cold in their veins.

Minji looked around at their pale faces and she grunted:

'That's what the second seed is for?' she asked, changing the topic and letting boys snap from all the dark scenarios they were creating in their heads right now.

Taehyung for a second longer was looking into Jungkook's eyes. He leaned and pressed their foreheads together.

*We will figure this out...* he said calmingly in their minds.

He tore his eyes away from Jungkook's face and looked at Minji.

'When it is dormant it mainly is just a protection...' he said. 'When it is unsealed it allows us to fly, to use any kind of power - literally, without limits. We always could use max 2 kinds at the same time. But with this level of unsealing we can use it all.'

'You can heal?' Namjoon asked.

'Others. Not each other like you. Your power is feeding your cells and heals you too. We can heal others to some point by manipulating particles.' Taehyung explained. 'What else? I can use the same level of power as Jungkook is, not just by using sacred treasure...'

'And the second seed unseals my pristine power... I can erase the Eadar-eismaleach gift from Interdependants without breaking their bond... The death of the soulmate, which causes untreatable separation syndrome is the worst punishment. That's why we don't kill. We don't punish souls... We punish people who use them. So they are not able to use power any more... ever.' Jungkook said with a dark tone.

Namjoon nodded in understanding.

'So Na Inho... never existed and Lord of Shadows, just got close to Dokhyun who

was in charge of ISA to get close to the source of power...' Chanyeol said.

'He probably also was the one who started the rebellion. We knew Dokhyun, governor and those Holders killed with headshots were killed by Interdependants... Inho was free from Dokhyun and at the perfect moment to quietly take over the power in the city ....' Taehyung said.

'At that time he had to collect his little cult...' Ren frowned.

Minji looked at him.

'Who is there?'

'Commanders - Hajun, Hyerim, Joryoung and his soulmate.' Ren recited.

'You can stop counting them...' Taehyung said with a deadly cold tone. 'They are no longer interdependants... Who else?'

'4 Free Holders: Dasol, Do, Aecha and Eunseo. Dasol is the worst out of them. The soulmates who are using Air power and rope darts are Geyong and Jiah. The one who used cards, Nabi, is the soulmate of creation user named Chinhwa. Chinhwa can be a problem...'

'Non of them are a problem... If Dasol is the worst one the rest are just flies...' Dami gritted her teeth.

'So Naeun was right about their little cult... And she mentioned Ren - I guess she meant you... But she said you were a girl?' Minji looked at the boy who blushed.

'He was! Pretty one!' Wooyoung giggled.

'Shut up!' Ren glared at him.

'But you are really pretty...' Gahyeon smiled at him.

'Can you too... sh... be quiet?' he mumbled.

'You know a lot...' Namjoon said thoughtfully.

'I was infiltrating the Crisis Management Office in the Republic...' Ren explained.

'For who?' Yeonjun asked.

'Myself.'

'Why?' Soobin looked at him.

'Wanted to help Yoongi...' Ren gulped.

'Why him?' Yoohyeon tilted her head in interest.

'Personal reasons.' Ren replied shortly, avoiding Gahyeon's gaze.

'Personal reasons name Gahyeon...' Yoongi teased, absolutely happy the tables had turned.

Ren looked at him.

'I will kill you in your sleep...' he said deadly seriously, with squinted eyes, while his cheek became a bit pink.

Gahyeon absolutely content with Ren's explanation came to the rescue saying:

'To kill him you would first take Jimin off of him...' she said with a malicious smirk, looking at her brother.

Yoongi's mouth fell open at the betrayal, but before he could even come up with a reply, Jimin responded to Gahyeon:

'Remember to take off the cuffs you will tie him to the bed with, before he will decide to visit our room...'

Her face was covered in red, while Jimin lifted his eyebrow ready for the next round.

Yoongi grabbed Jimin in front of himself like a shield and said to Gahyeon:

'From now on my fights are his fights. Have fun, little hag!'

'Your family dinners would be something I would watch on tv more eagerly then the Kardashians...' Han said, pressing his hand to his chest.

Handong, sitting on the couch next to Hoseok, giggled.

Baekhyun looked at Jin with glossy eyes and pout on his lips:

'Do I have to listen to this?'

'Welcome into my miserable world my friend...' Jin patted his back.

'HEY! We were never like this!' Taehyung protested.

'Just because you don't communicate verbally, doesn't mean we can't read all the dirty things flowing between the two of you whenever you are in the same room...' Namjoon said sternly and Taehyung shut his mouth.

'You know what?' Hwasa said, standing up from the chair. 'My brain just leaked

through my ears... I am going to sleep...'

Dragon took her hand and said:

'8 am sharp! All of you in the garden!'

'For what?' Wooyoung whined.

'It's the middle of the night...' Yoongi frowned.

'Training.' Taehyung said, standing up and helping Jungkook.

'What training?' San asked.

'Power training. Obligatory. No whining.' Dami glared at him. 'Better be in shape...'

They slowly went to their rooms, leaving the living room in quiet darkness.

Jin turned off the lights on the corridors and joined his hands with Namjoon, who was waiting for him on the stairs.

'Tomorrow we have to start to plan...' he said quietly.

'I know. Yongguk will need information... God, help him to get to the government this time...' Namjoon sighed.

******

Yoongi, covered in a duvet, was impatiently running his fingers through the fabric.

He didn't know what he was irritated by, but it was getting stronger with each minute passing by.

He turned on his side and pulled the duvet over his head, stubbornly wanting to fall asleep.

It's been two hours ffs!

He shut his eyelids tightly and steadied his breathing, when he heard a click and his eyes opened wide, but he didn't move, still hidden under the cover.

'Bammieee...' he heard a whining whisper. 'Why are you not with your dads? Jungkook wouldn't kick you out of the room today for sure...'

Yoongi heard the dog's squeal.

'Don't tell me they sent you here as chaperone...' the whisper got irritated.

Then a long sigh was heard.

'But you have to be a good boy, okay? Be quiet and don't wake up uncle Yoonie or I will be in a tough situation here, you know...'

*Uncle Yoonie*, Yoongi snorted in his mind.

He heard the door locking and sneaky steps. The duvet was lifted from one side and Jimin jumped few inches above the floor, seeing Yoongi wide awake.

'You really love this dog, huh?'

Jimin gulped, trying to behave as if he didn't just get caught red handed sneaking inside Yoongi's bed.

'We all love that dog...' he said haughtily. 'Move.' he ordered.

Yoongi checked him out. He had tiny shorts exposing his legs and white t-shirt.Yoongi shook his head and took even more space in the middle of the bed.

'Nope. Fit yourself here...' he pointed to the snippet of a free sheet on the edge of the bed.

Jimin glared at him.

'You asked for it yourself... ' he said finally and put his knee on the sheets, exactly between Yoongi's thighs, before half lay on him and entwined their legs.

He grabbed Yoongi's arm and threw it around his own waist, to secure himself from falling from the bed. He got his arms around Yoongi's neck. Their faces were inches apart.

'Dare to complain, and I will press more...' he warningly raised his tight between Yoongi's legs.

'Who would complain?' Yoongi smirked.

'I thought you would be sleeping already...' Jimin sulked.

'Honestly... thought you would get here faster...' Yoongi chuckled. 'What took you so long?'

'Idiot! I was waiting until you will be sleeping so I won't have to go through the battle "what are you doing here?" Jimin pouted.

'I know exactly what you are doing here...' Yoongi rolled his eyes.

Jimin tilted his head and bit his shoulder.

'Ouch! What the hell?'

'Then why were you waiting, lazy cat?! You could come to my room!'

'I don't know which one it is... What if I would accidently walk on Taehyung and Jungkook? I would need a bleach to wash my eyes!'

'Dude, if you would walk on them, your eyes would be blessed with the top level view!'

'Not everybody is a peeper like you...' He squinted his eyes.

'Shut up! I am an approved peeper!'

Yoongi choked on his breath.

'What? They know you are observing them?'

'Of course they do! Sometimes I even help them...'

'Wait... what? I don't want to know about it... Or I do? I don't know!' Yoongi whined.

'What are you fucking thinking!' Jimin shook his head. 'You will know after spending some time with them! It's like watching a real live drama!' Jimin said excitedly. 'You know... you can't keep an eye contact with Kookie for more than a minute or Taehyung will bring living hell on earth to you? Or when you see Jungkook's pissed expression it's usually enough to look at Taehyung to know where it came from...'

'I don't think Taehyung is making Jungkook mad often...'

'He is not... But Jungkook gets pissed when an inch more of Taehyung's skin, then he approves, is showing. And he is sending this death glare to him then...' Jimin giggled. 'I'm telling you - best entertainment!'

'If they are this possessive, how the hell are you 'helping them'?

'Oh you know...' Jimin shrugged with a smug smile. 'Sometimes they are not aware they are not controlling their facial expression when looking at each other.... So to give you an example, once Taehyung was talking and explaining something to Han during training, and well, he looked all hot, sternly, dom daddy like, not gonna lie...'

Yoongi looked at Jimin with a done face. Jimin grunted.

'And well... Jungkook ended his sparring with Yeonjun and was just standing there looking at Taehyung, licking his lips, playing with his tongue absolutely mesmerized, and his hand on the sword handle...'

'Without details, I beg you!'

'Ok, so... I took a pic of him...' Jimin said as if it was absolutely normal. 'And sent it to Tae with a description... *Look what you are doing to this poor boy*...'

'I am amazed Jungkook didn't kill you...'

'Why would he kill me? He was grateful! I sped things up for him! Taehyung just saw the picture and he suddenly really needed a private training session with Jungkook in the forest...' Jimin giggled.

'You all are insane...' Yoongi sighed heavily.

'Yet here you are... getting annoyed I was late to get inside your bed...' Jimin smirked.

'Who said I was annoyed?' Yoongi pulled Jimin by his waist closer.

'Your tone.'

Yoongi squeezed Jimin's side and when he had done it he recollected what was under the shirt.

'When did you get the tattoo?'

'After our talk about what we would like our soulmates to be... Around Valentines 2069 I guess... Aaaa! It was hard to deal with falling in love with you and waiting for my soulmate who - happened to be you! So in case he would appear... I just wanted to keep a memory of those feelings for Suga I guess... AAAA!!! I am still mad!!!' Jimin started hitting Yoongi's arm. 'How! Dare! You?!'

Yoongi grabbed his wrist in the air and sealed Jimin's lips with his own.

Jimin was so shocked he just blinked surprised before parting his lips, embracing Yoongi's neck tighter.

After a while their lips parted and Jimin looked at Yoongi with daze.

'You are a fast learner...'

'I am a rapper. I have good tongue technology...'

Jimin smirked.

'Indeed...'

'Just wanted to check if it will shut you up...'

'Sure, suga plum... Just because of that...' Jimin said with a sneer.

'Well you stopped being angry...'

'Calling me 'baby' would have the same effect...'

'But I wouldn't enjoy it as much...' Yoongi replied.

'You know what else would you enjoy even more?'

'Don't even go there...' Yoongi warned. 'I forbid you to mention glow. Eiffel Tower. Your dick. My dick. How cute your butt is and so on... You are going to sleep!' he tucked Jimin in.

'B-but...' Jimin pouted.

'No.'

'Fine.' he sulked obediently, and put his head on Yoongi's arm. 'But just so you know... if your sister will lose her virginity faster than me I will make a living hell of your days till the end of our life!'

Yoongi let out a choking noise and looked at Jimin, furrowing his eyebrows.

'Okay! Time for some rules, you little brat! Rule number one: don't mention my sister's virginity. EVER!'

'Ooooh?' Jimin purred warningly. 'Rules you say? Sorry, but last time I agreed to your rules you were hiding from me for six years. So no.'

Yoongi sighed. Yeah well, Jimin could have a tiny bit of a trauma about rules...

'So can you kindly not mention my sister's virginity? Please?'

Jimin lifted his eyebrow.

Yoongi pressed his lips tightly and he felt his cheek getting warmer when he added:

'Please, baby...?'

'Better.' Jimin said, content and closed his eyes. 'Anything for you, hyung...'

*****

Jungkook and Taehyung appeared in the garden just after Dragon and Minji, who together with Siyeon and Bora were preparing the weapons they had here.

Jungkook walked to them and looked at the swords and knives. He checked few of them and sighed. Nobody seemed to fit in his hand as well as his grandfather's katana. He had his spare sword tho... it will have to do.

Dragon looked at his saddened face, and at Taehyung who was rubbing his back comfortingly.

When the rest joined them with Hwasa, Jiyoung said to Jungkook:

'I have something for you... wait here.' he walked to the cars, while Hwasa looked at Yoongi, Gahyeon, Ren, San and Wooyoung.

She was checking them out thoughtfully.

'Jimin, Dami, Yeonjun, Han and Minho - bring me your spare uniforms. You guys, come with me. I will adapt them for you.' she disappeared in the house.

'How will she adapt them?' Gahyeon asked.

'She will paint...' Taehyung smiled.

Jiyoung came back with a long package in his hand and handed it to Jungkook.

'I ordered it for your 21st birthday...' he said, quietly.

'But I...' Jungkook was looking speechless at the package.

'You weren't here I know. But it didn't change the fact we knew Taehyung wll find you...' Jiyoung smiled at Tae. 'So me and grandma designed it for you... I thought it would be the spare one...'

Jungkook unwrapped the paper and looked at the black sword. It had the shape of his grandfather's katana, but the blade was sparkling with black silver.

'It's made with diamond and steel. It's light as aluminum and sharper than any normal blade... I hope it will serve you well...'

'Thank you...' Jungkook whispered and hugged Jiyoung. 'Thank you, grandpa...'

'Let it protect you and others...' Jiyoung whispered and hugged him back.

Then he fetched something from his pocket. He pulled out a small object.

'I have a friend, who can do a bit with shields and invisibility...' he said. 'I couldn't give it to you last year...' he said to Taehyung. 'It can change shapes and hide the sacred treasure so you won't have to worry if someone will see it. It will hide it, make it smaller and light.' in his hands the small scabbard started to grow. 'It for your sword. Nobody will know you carry sacred treasure with you if you won't want it...'

Taehyung blinked.

'Thank you, grandpa...' he said, when Jiyoung nodded, and made a move with his finger so Taehyung would turn around. He replaced the scabbard on his back with a new one.

'I wish I could do more...' Jiyoung smiled sadly, ruffling Taehyung's hair. 'But it is not my fight...'

'It's more than enough...' Jungkook said, tightening his grip on his new katana.

The rest came back. All in their Red String's black uniforms with red string bracelets on their wrists.

'Okay, people! We will see what you are made of!' Minji clapped her hands.

They were training the whole morning and half of afternoon with a small break for lunch. In a short span of time they had to combine powers of the new five with others. Learn each other's dynamics. They weren't working on the skills tho. Jungkook's training with Yoonig, Wooyoung, San and Gahyeon for half a year and Ren's military school experience made them skilled enough.

But they had to trust each other's powers and learn how to use it to their advantage. How Gahyeon and Ren could fastly teleport any of them from one

point of the battle field to the other, keeping the communications steady between everyone so Jungkook and Taehyung wouldn't have to use their mind link.

They had to learn that San and Wooyoung could lift anybody in the air and get the upper position advantage, which Soobin and Yeonjun honestly loved.

And - and it was discovered by accident during their sparring - how Yoongi or Jimin could upgrade Dami's spear and Yoohyeon's ice power with lightning to get the double devastating effect.

And the new five had to learn they don't need to watch their backs cause Minho and Han were always there. They didn't just make shields... The trick Han was using, was also giving them endurance to enemies blows.

They were getting tired, but at the same time they were gaining confidence in each other.

They were about to end their training for the day, when Kai ran to the garden.

'There is a transmission from Daegu uploaded!'

Na Inho was sitting behind the desk...

Yoongi winded his eyes. It was his father's home office...

'He is in my house...' he gritted his teeth.

'*Greetings from the city of darkness...*' he said slowly. *'I just wanted to officially inform you about Min Kyung's dismissal... And I guess that makes the rest of this republic yours again... Mr President of South Korea... Except this city... It's mine. I worked hard to get it. If you are still wondering, who was behind the terrorist attacks, that started all of this - it was me. What can I say - I was bored. Leading you all like donkeys on the rope was pure amusement.'*

*'If you are wondering what is the current situation of the citizens of this city - I have to tell you - it is not good. They live in eternal darkness. They will surely run out of water soon... And well, Interdependants who will try to go against me - will be executed. Some of them already tried, even after warning...'*

'It's fucking been only 48 hours...' Namjoon whispered, shaking his head. 'Does he want to kill all of them?'

'That's exactly what his purpose is... getting rid of as much of Interdependants as he can.' Jungkook said bitterly.

*'Anyone who will try to get close to the city - will die.' Na Inho informed them. 'Every try of getting inside the city will be punished by the massive executions of citizens inside...'*

Taehyung closed his eyes.

*'And I will start with Min Kyung, Min Chorong, Min Taeil and... someone who apparently is Bang Yoongguk's son...'*

'Fuck! He knows!' Minji hit the desk with her fist.

'Of course he does... He can read minds... He just let him be till now, and let his minions play...' Taehyung said with disgust.

'Where are they?' Yoongi asked. 'I don't see any of them...'

'Cause they are not needed anymore...' Jungkook said, quietly, looking at the face he saw in his nightmares for years.

*'But!!!!' Inho said excitedly. 'It's not like I won't give you a chance to save those people! Let's play a game! Remember the VK sign you all were so excited about? Two saviors you were praying for? I will play with them... And only them... Well if you are scared you can take your friends to see them die...' he shrugged.*

There was a moment of silence, before Inho looked directly at the camera.

*'I know you are watching, my dear brother... Let's meet soon... And this time - I will make sure, you will never be reborn again.'*

Jungkook felt a bitter taste in his mouth and he realized he bit his lips to the point it started to bleed. He was shivering from anger.

The transmission ended with a demonically beautiful smile of Na Inho.

Taehyung and Jungkook were looking at the screen for a long time in silence.

Then Yoongi turned to Jungkook at the same moment Dami turned to look at Taehyung.

'Don't even think about it!' Yoongi said sternly.

'Try to take one step without us and I will cut this pretty face of yours...' Dami threatened.

'We won't go without you...' Jungkook said calmly.

'Yeah we need you to save people from the city....' Taehyung added.

It wasn't the positive response Dami, Yoongi and the rest were expecting, but before they could burst out, Taehyung turned to Namjoon and Kai.

'We need satellite pictures and maps. MOI has to be at least 2-3 miles from the city

ready to act.

'Okay.' Kai nodded.

'I will call Yongguk...' Namjoon confirmed.

'Maps are in the restaurant part...' Minji said and walked out fast, with Taehyung and Jungkook tracing after her.

'How much time do we have?' Hoseok asked, joining them.

'He didn't pinpoint the time. But now when he has his toys, aka us, he won't be patient. If he gets bored, he will start to hurt them to lure us out faster...' Jungkook whispered. 'So not much time. A day. Maybe three...'

'Depends on how many people we want to sacrifice and how much time we will have before the military will try to free the city, causing more damage to its citizens...' Taehyung added.

'Yoongs, how was the wall created?' Taehyung asked, when they spread the maps on the tables.

'With my aunt and uncle's powers.'

'So it's the iron creation power... ' Jungkook said. 'Okay, it will be easy then...'

'How so?' Yoongi blinked.

'You and Jimin will melt it with fire...' Taehyung explained, not even lifting his eyes.

'Dami, Yeonjun, Soobin and Yoohyeon will take care of the dome of shadows...' Jungkook said. 'They have to hit it with full blow...'

'Will do.' Dami said confidently.

'Ren and Gahyeon, uncle Baek and Chan will have the toughest job... They will have to connect with people and calm the panic leading them to the gates...'

'We still don't know when Ryu is...' Namjoon said.

'I guess he has the closest people and hostages where he is... In Mins' Mension.' Jungkook peaked at Yoongi.

'Well at least we know where to go first...' Gahyoen gulped and Ren rubbed her shoulders, embracing her with his arm.

'Can we get in contact with anyone inside? We have to know how the army of the

republic will react... Who will they be loyal to?' Minji noticed.

'At this point, they are just hostages like others...' Taehyung shook his head. 'But sure... any information would be useful...'

They were planning and changing scenarios to the late night evening. Namjoon, Minji, Baekhyun and Chanyeol were constantly on the phones. Connected to Yongguk, President, UN Counselor...

They didn't know what they were dealing with. They simply treated Inho as an Interdependent Terrorist. When Namjoon told Yongguk the whole truth, the others had a hard time believing him, but in the end, who he was and his motives weren't important. They couldn't negotiate with him.

He had just one goal - to destroy two innocent boys.

*******

Jungkook was sitting on the edge of the bed, with Bam's head on his lap. He was stroking it absent-mindedly.

Taehyung sat heavily next to him.

'Should we have this talk finally?' he asked.

Jungkook nodded.

'Do you want to run away?' Jungkook whispered.

'Yeah...' Taehyung whispered back, and slowly took Jungkook's hand in his own. 'Yes I want to run away and hide you in a safe place...'

'We have a choice...' Jungkook choked out.

Taehyung nodded.

'Let's say... we will sacrifice the whole city of people... Take parents and the rest and ranaway on the other side of the world... what will happen?'

'We will steal some time for ourselves... A year, maybe two... Before he will start to haunt them. One by one...'

Taehyung closed his eyes and through clenched teeth asked further.

'And if we will be ready to buy more time sacrificing them... What next...'

'H-he won't kill us... It's not entertaining for him anymore...' Jungkook whispered. 'H-he will separate us... Me... or you... Make us suffer. Then he would let us meet again... Give us hope... To break us again later... And again... And... again...'

Taehyung took a deep breath.

'Okay... so between those two tragic options... I prefer the current one... And you?'

'Honestly? I prefer to die in a fight than being afraid each day that I will lose you...'

'Not that we expected other answers, right?'

'He is more powerful than I thought...' Jungkook whispered, putting his head on Taehyung's shoulder.

'It doesn't matter how powerful he is right now... We have to stand against him...'

Jungkook nodded and gulped.

'Can we go for a walk? Do something normal?'

Taehyung titled his head and kissed Jungkook's hair.

'Sure, babybun... I will spoil you...'

They were walking with Bam through the forest in the snow, enjoying the gentle moonlight till late at night hours. When they came back the lights in the living room were still turned on and they heard their parents voices, still discussing something.

Bam ran to them hearing Hoseok's voice and probably wanting to warm himself by the fireplace, but the two of them slowly walked to their room.

They didn't want to think about all the plans right now.

They took a shower together, washing each other with touches full of tender. Cleaning each other's hair and leaving sweet kisses over the skin.

They just wanted to see each other's smiles so they were teasing each other and tickling each other till they fell asleep after a hard, nerve-wracking day.

Taehyung woke up not many hours later... Feeling instantly Jungkook was missing next to him.

He sat on the bed in panic, but when he saw Jungkook standing next to the

window and looking at the fading darkness outside, he breathed out.

'Koo...' he whispered and threw his legs on the side of the bed, sitting on the edge.

'Sorry... I woke you up...'

'It's okay... But You should sleep, baby...'

Jungkook turned around slowly.

He looked at Taehyung, taking in every part of his face, his arms, chest covered by the simple t-shirt... His whole figure.

His eyes were full of longing, tenderness... and fragileness.

Taehyung stretched his hand.

'Come here...' he said softly. 'What is bothering you?'

Jungkook tilted his head with a grateful, soft, a bit sad smile and took few steps to take Taehyung's hand.

Instead of standing between Taehyung's spread legs as always, so Taehyung could hug his waist and cuddle to his tummy, Jungkook kneelead in between them and sat on his heels.

He took both of Taehyung's hands and squeezed them gently, looking at them, caressing the back of the palm with his thumb.

Taehyung squeezed his fingers and raised their joined hands to kiss Jungkook's knuckles without a word.

He was waiting, patiently waiting to hear about the weight, lingering over Jungkook's heart.

Finally, Jungkook hesitantly lifted his eyes at him to see what was always there - patience, gentleness and this never fading love.

He gulped and whispered:

'Taehyung...'

'You can tell me everything, Koo...' Taehyung assured him.

Jungkook took a deep breath, but his eyes started to be shiny:

'Taehyung...' he breathed out. 'W-will you marry me?'

Taehyung's eyes widened. Lips parted. He blinked, surprised. Then he smiled lightly.

'Idiot... of course I will. I told you a long time ago...'

Jungkook shook his head and squeezed Taehyung's fingers harder.

'You don't understand...' he teared up. 'Will you m-marry me... NOW?'

The shocking and painful realization filled Taehyung's gaze, when he was looking at the desperate need in Jungkook's posture.

It was different... Jungkook was different...

It wasn't him being impatient.

It wasn't about him being anxious or possessive.

It was him being scared...

It was him being... ready.

They tried...

They tried to find even one of their lifetimes when they survived the meeting with the shadow. And they never did... Unless he wanted them to suffer fate worse than death...

Taehyung slid from the bed and squeezed himself in front of Jungkook, kneeling in front of him.

He touched Jungkook's forehead with his own.

'No matter how, where and when...' he whispered. 'I will marry you and only you, Jeon Jungkook.'

A painful smile appeared on Jungkook's lips, letting the tears hide between them.

Namjoon, Jin, Hoseok and Minji were sitting in the small living room area, talking quietly. Rubbing their eyes tiredly. It was almost sunrise... They knew they should have caught some sleep... They were about to hit the bed, when Jungkook and Taehyung walked in. They were holding hands almost desperately, as if they were

afraid to be separated in the next second. Signs of dried tears were on their cheeks, and it was enough to pain the parents' hearts.

'Mom...' Taehyung said and Minji lifted her head automatically even if it wasn't said by Jungkook.

'Dads...' Jungkook looked at Namjoon, Jin and Hoseok.

All parents slowly stood up, alerted by their serious voices... Something was wrong...

Taehyung looked at Jungkook for a long moment and when they both felt the inner peace and determination, he turned his head to their three fathers and their mother.

'We have a request...'

---

Don't ask me why I am an emotional mess.... I guess you all know why... 😭

Sorry for being late!

BlairWitch91 ❤

# Chapter 62: Caim

**16th of November 2071, Uljin**

'We have a request...'

The worried expression on parents' faces softened.

'What request?' Jin asked gently, smiling lightly.

They would do anything to make the boys easy. Help them feel more confident. Namjoon was ready to get the whole MOI and all armies of the world to surround the city of Daegu if that was what boys would need.

The heavy burden was on their sons' shoulders... They would give up anything to take some of it on themselves...

Jungkook felt Taehyung slowly caressing the inner of his palm with his thumb and took a deep breath.

'Before we go to Daegu the day after tomorrow... we want to make vows... tie the knot... get married...' Jungkook's voice was getting quieter with each word, but there was no hesitation in it.

'Can you make that happen?' Taehyung looked at Namjoon, while gulping.

In the first moment the four parents in the room felt excited butterflies in their stomach. A soft sweet feeling.

Hoseok almost let out a squeal... Jin teared up...

But when the shock, caused by the words passed, they noticed their boys' pale faces. Their desperately intertwined fingers... Their bodies glued closely as if they wanted to hide in each other.

Namjoon understood first. His eyes widened with pain. His gaze met Taehyung's, who whistand it with equal misery in his eyes. Namjoon's eyes slowly traveled to Jungkook, whose eyelids were reddened. He looked so... tired.

Jin turned away from them, covering his mouth with his palm to stop the shivering.

Minji gritted her teeth and lifted her gaze from the floor at her barely 21- and not even 23- year old sons.

She grunted holding to the denial and anger.

'We understand... But it is not the right time, guys...'

'B-but...' Jungkook opened his mouth.

Minji shook her head and raised her palm to stop him.

'No discussion. There are still lot of things to do.'

Not looking at them she passed Jungkook and walked out.

Confused and distraught, Jungkook looked at Taehyung, not knowing what to do and how to react.

Taehyung squeezed his hand calmingly, leaned to his ear and whispered:

'Wait here. I will take care of everything...' he assured him gently and walked away after Minji.

Together with Taehyung's presence, Jungkook's peace started to vanish. His eyes fell to the floor.

'Can you tell us, why now?' Namjoon asked quietly.

'No matter what I say... it will hurt you...' Jungkook replied and his eyes fell to the floor.

Hoseok knew that if Minji wasn't strong enough at the moment, to give their sons comfort, he had to be. They were two sides of the same coin... They were keeping each other in balance.

'We are your parents... we are prepared to get hurt...' he said calmly.

Jungkook lifted his eyes at him.

When his silence was prolonged, Jin took a deep breath and turned to him.

'You are scared.' he stated.

'I'm terrified...' Jungkook whispered, gulping his eyes.

'Is it a way to give you more peace?' Hoseok asked hopefully.

Jungkook could confirm and let it stay like that, not hurting them more. But they deserved the truth... So he shook his head.

'Kookie, what do you want?' Namjoon whispered.

Jungkook smiled sadly, thankful for this important question. The question he could answer.

'I want to hear him rightfully calling me 'husband'. And I want to have the chance to call him that...'

Jungkook looked at Jin.

'You were right... We desperately want to experience as much as we can, till we can...'

'And you think you won't have the chance later?' Jin pressed his lips tightly to stop their trembling.

The silence was enough of an answer. Hoseok took a harsh breath and walked to Jungkok to hug him.

'Don't say such things...' he whispered, hiding his face in Jungkook's hair. 'Jungkook, you are the most powerful...'

'It is still not enough...' Jungkook's whisper stopped his words, but he hugged his father tighter, when Hobi wanted to move away. 'I am afraid... it is not enough...'

Taehyung found Minji aggressively taking out things from the fridge.

'What do you want from breakfast?' she asked as if the previous topic didn't exist.

'Mom...'

'We already talked about it and I told you what I think... I won't repeat myself.'

'Mom...'

'Yongguk is using every possible way to stop the government from storming Daegu. Thankfully, they listened to him this time. They are trying to buy time and negotiate with Inho. But we know he doesn't want anything, so he probably is amused by their tries...'

'MOM, CAN YOU LISTEN TO ME FOR A SECOND?!' Taehyung exclaimed.

She dropped the spoon on the counter angrily and turned to him.

'Tell me honestly! Why!? Why is this marriage necessary NOW!? Right at this moment!!!'

Taehyung knew she didn't want to hear the truth. She was hoping he would lie and let her stay in denial.

But he couldn't... The fake cheerfulness would be worse than honest tears.

'Because there can be no other moment.'

'SHUT UP! YOU WON'T FUCKING DIE!'

'WHAT IF I WILL?!' Taehyung raised his voice to match hers. 'WHAT IF I WON'T EVER HAVE THE CHANCE TO HOLD HIS HANDS AND VOW TO HIM? I DON'T CARE IF YOU ALL WILL THINK WE ARE STUPID AND CRY YOUR EYES OUT! IF I WILL DIE TOMORROW I WILL DIE AS HIS HUSBAND! WHATEVER YOU APPROVE IT OR NOT!'

Minji stepped back with miserable shock on her face.

'You think you can't win with him...' she whispered and her eyes filled with tears.

'It doesn't matter!' Taehyung said with tears in his throat. 'It doesn't matter what happens tomorrow! Because we can see and live only today! Do you think I am not mad or scared it is all like this?! Do you think the thought that I will meet him in the next life is comforting?!'

Taehyung was breathing heavily.

'No! It is not! Cause it won't be HIM! Same soul - different person! We have just THIS life! As Kim Taehyung and Jeon Jungkook! So can you help us?!'

'T-Tae...' she whispered and tears rolled down her cheeks.

'We need this! We need your blessings and prayers... Even for a day we want to be happily married... We won't ask for anything else for ourselves... Just for this...' Tears filled his eyes, but he tamed them.

Minji took a deep breath and exhaled.

She slowly spread her arms and after a moment Taehyung hid inside them.

'We will perform the Caim Ceremony...' she whispered to his ear, stroking his hair with one hand, and wiping tears from her cheek with the other. 'I will tell the grandparents to prepare everything while you go for training...'

'Thank you...' Taehyung whispered.

'But get it in your head... We will do this to give you something to furiously fight for... It is the only reason I accept.'

'Okay...' Taehyung mumbled in agreement.

But they both knew it was just an excuse Minji gave herself.

Jungkook and Taehyung had already everything to furiously fight and live for... and it still could not be enough...

**********

Everyone felt something was off during the training Chanyeol, Baekhyun, Siyeon and Bora were supervising. They were trying to focus on sparring and fights, but they were easily distracted by the nervous and heavy atmosphere in the Guesthouse during breakfast.

They dropped it on MOI, ICI and Government Moves getting closer to Daegu, which meant they would move soon too. That's how they explained Dragon, Hwasa, Kims and Jeons tension.

But it was strange that in this situation the training was shortened and finished when they were called for lunch by Jennie.

Yoonig wanted to take the opportunity and take a nap, preferably together with Jimin and far away from the circus, but after they ate Hwasa called Jungkook, Taehyung and Jimin.

So, while the rest stole his idea for the afternoon, he was waiting under the doors of the living room for Jimin.

His soulmate walked out alone from the room with a pale face, looking as if he would break down in a second.

When he saw Yoongi, who was leaning on the wall on the opposite side of the corridor, he walked straight to him and embraced him tightly, hiding his face in the other's chest.

Yoongi felt the panic crawling up his stomach to his throat, while his arms wrapped around Jimin's back.

'What happened?' he asked.

'They are getting married.' he choked out.'Tonight.'

Yoongi froze from shock.

'W-what? Is this the right time for this?'

'No. And that's the problem...'

Yoongi didn't have to see Jimin's face to know he was crying. He was confused... until Jimin said:

'They think it's their last chance... F-fuckers...'

'You mean...'

'I always t-thought... It will be the happiest day of my l-life... Seeing them getting married... That I would cry buckets... Prepare dirty, funny speech as Taehyung's best men... M-make Kookie wear absolutely shameful things for their wedding n-night... a-and...' Jimin sobbed. ' a-and tease the hell out of them with everyone... N-not like that... Yoongi... N-not like that...'

Yoongi rested his chin on Jimin's head and stroked his back calmingly, closing his eyes.

He misunderstood... He thought having this kind of enormous power Jungkook and Taehyung would be unbreakable... Infinite. But they were younger than him... Having only those moments with each other against fate...

'T-they asked me to tell others...' Jimin sniffed. 'Could y-you come with me?'

'Sure, baby...' Yoongi whispered. 'We will do it together...'

'I'm scared of Dami...' Jimin cried out.

'I will handle her...'

'Oo-k-aay...'

'Stop crying...'

'I c-caaaan't....'

'You still can write dirty and funny speech and make them laugh... Make them laugh as much as you can...'

'That's true...' Jimin sniffed.

'And only you are capable of pulling the shameful first night for them in this situation...'

Jimin gulped and raised his head. His teary eyes looked at Yoongi with adoration.

'You are so smart...'

'I am.'

'Handsome. Sensitive... Brave...'

Yoongi brushed Jimin's bangs from his forehead.

'Sure...' he agreed.

'And rich.'

'No doubt.'

'There is only one more thing on my perfection list. So tell me do you have a big d...'

Yoongi pressed his finger to Jimin's lips to stop him.

'Did you calm down?'

'Yeah.'

'Ready to tell others and force them to be happy about it?'

Jimin took a deep breath and nodded.

'I am ready!'

*******

In the evening Dami knocked on the door and walked inside the bedroom when Taehyung yelled: *come in!*

Taehyung was sitting on the bed, with his back pressed to the headboard. Jungkook was sitting between Taehyung's legs, hugged by him. He was holding a phone which was displaying some of the old recordings.

They were probably watching their videos and photos and the thought pierced Dami's heart.

Jungkook looked at her and gulped. Taehyung stopped the recording, saying:

'Don't yell...'

'I am not going to...' Dami sat on the edge of the bed. 'The rest is helping with the preparations to Caim...'

'Are you mad?'

Dami shook her head.

'I knew you would pull a shit like that one day...' she smirked.

'Do you think it's stupid?' Jungkook whispered.

'You are stupid. Yes.' she flicked his forehead. 'But this? Honestly? No. I don't think it is stupid. You have the right to do whatever the fuck you want. For whatever reason seems right to you. You didn't ask for this shit to happen to you...' she whispered bitterly.

'We don't even have rings...' he whispered looking down.

'You don't need them. You have this...' she put her hand on his chest, where his mark was.

Jungkook was looking at her for some time, before pulling her into a hug. Taehyung embraced her together with him, hugging him in the process.

'That's the weirdest hug I have ever got!' Dami choked out, out of breath and Jungkook giggled. 'What are you doing when others are working for you?' she asked when they let them go.

'Watching our glory days...' Taehyung smiled. 'You had such tiny arms a few years ago! Like sticks!'

'Shut up! Better show me Jimin. I am sure he didn't grow up one bit...' She fitted herself on the bed next to Taehyung.

Soobin came few minutes later and gladly took the spot from the other side of the couple. Then Han joined them and jumped to them, putting his head on Dami's lap to see the screen of the phone.

Looking for Dami, Yoohyeon peeked inside the room and seeing them squeezed on the bed, she came closer to check what they were watching. She disappeared for a few minutes and came back with Minho, and Yeonjun, who were carrying the TV from the living room and her laptop.

'Jimin is coming with snacks...' Yeonjun said, throwing himself across the bed, next to the spot Bam was laying, caressed by Jungkook's feet.

Yoohyeon installed everything and connected the laptop to tv. She displayed the cloud with recordings and photos Jungkook told her about.

Jimin with Yoongi, Ren, Gahyeon, San and Wooyoung brought tons of snacks and drinks from the kitchen. Wooyoung and San squeezed themselves on the armchair while the rest sat on the floor.

They were watching videos and photos, laughing hard and telling Yoongi and the rest of the stories behind them. Teasing each other, screaming in shame and regret. Cooing at the babies they once were.

The Gueshouse was filled with laughter and noises of youth, disturbed by occasional excited screams:

*'Remember this, remember?!'*

*'Is this?! Oh my GOD?! Is this Yoohyeon?!'*

*'Jeeze, what have they done to piss you off this much here, Dami?' San laughed.*

*'Existing.' she answered with blandly, munching chips.*

*'Me tripping episode 1098302...' Soobin sighed.*

*'Me catching you episode 1110221...' Yeonjun laughed at the next photo, winking at him.*

*'Awwwww... Taekook being simps for each other episode +infinity...' Jimin said.*

*'Half of this is your doing!' Taehyung threw a gummy bear in his face.*

*'And you are enjoying it right now so where is my 'thank you'?!!'*

Minji and Jin were standing in the doors, leaning on the frames, looking at them with sad smiles.

They looked at each other. They already planned everything.

Jiyoung and Hwasa were waiting...

Namjoon, Hoseok joined them.

Looking at the picture in front of him Hoseok took out his phone and took a few photos. First photos of completed Red String...

He looked at the smiling faces, which held deep, hidden sadness in their eyes and smiled lightly. He didn't want to think it could be the only photo of the complete 14...

After a moment Baekhyun and Chanyeol leading Handon came to them. And Kai and Jennie after that.

They gave themselves a bit more time listening to their children's voices and laughs.

Their children, who, at this moment, were just... young souls.

'Oh no!' Taehyung protested, when the recording of his 20th birthday started. 'This one we won't watch!'

'Whyyyy? Jungkook was cute...' Gahyeon whined.

'Cause we forgot to turn off the recording later...' Jungkook said with a done voice.

Jimin gasped and threw himself through the bed, trying to stop Taehyung from changing the recording.

'I HAVE TO see this!'

'NO.' Taehyung and Jungkook exclaimed, stopping him with all their might.

'HYUNG!' Jungkook screamed, pleasingly to Yoongi.

Yoongi sighed, got up from the floor and grabbed Jimin in half, taking him away from the bed.

Jin had enough. He grunted.

All of them looked at him. The silence fell in the room, when the youngsters realized all the parents were present.

The mood changed to a heavy one.

Namjoon smiled slightly at Jungkook and Taehyung.

'We are ready.'

**********

*Eadar-eisimeileach* had to registered marriage according to laws or religions they were committed to in their countries. But for them it was just a formality, required by rules they obeyed. The papers were not important for them as the marks on

their bodies were enough of a proof of love and connection.

To mark and celebrate the moment of marriage between soulmates, *Eadar-eisimeileach* traditionally performed *The Ceremony of Blessings*, which was called *Caim.*

It had to perform in any place surrounded by nature. The Masters of the Ceremony were at least two other soulmates, but usually it was attended by many eye witnesses, who were able to give proof of the marriage knot being tied.

In beautiful clothes and surrounded by nature, Caim was a sacred ceremony containing many rituals of blessings, prayers and protection that could be performed.

Jiyoung, Hwasa, Minji, Hoseok, Namjoon and Jin did everything they could to make it as wonderful as possible even without festive garments and cheerful bells.

They instructed everyone what they should do at what moment.

In casual clothes one by one they were walking out of the Guesthouse in pairs. Siyeon and Bora were standing next to the exit giving each one of them white candles.

Bakhyun and Chanyeol. Kai and Jennie. Yoongi and Jimin. Dami and Yoohyeon. Ren and Gahyeon. Yeonjun and Soobin. Minho and Han. Wooyoung and San and finally closing the procession, Siyeon and Bora, walked to the forest at the end of the garden.

They made two columns, standing in front of each other. Lighting up the way to the circle...

The snow started to fall gently on their heads, so Yoongi and Jimin spread their power, protecting the flames.

Jungkook and Taehyung were standing in the doors looking at the flames held by their family, showing them their way.

They looked at each other. Their hands were trembling, especially since they knew they had to let go for now. But they were calm. Calmer than anybody else around.

'Ready?' Namjoon asked quietly.

They looked at him and Hoseok, who were standing behind them with white blindfolds in their hands.

Taehyung and Jungkook turned to them and bowed.

'Lead us through tough times with your wisdom and love.' they recited simultaneously.

'As we lead your first steps, trust us to lead you on your new path.' the fathers answers, tying blindfolds on Taehyung and Jungkook's eyes.

They turned them to the exit. Namjoon took Taehyung's left hand and stretched it forward. Hoseok took Jungkook's right hand and put his palm on Taehyung's. Then he stood on Jungkook's left side and Namjoon took the place on Taehyung's right side. They held their free hands and walked them slowly to the forest.

It was the symbol of trust in the parents and promise of protection to the children.

They walked between two columns of people, holding the candles until they reached the end of the path where Jiyoung and Hwasa were standing at the edge of the circle made out of... ice flowers.

Yoohyeon decorated the ceremonial circle making the different flower shapes from ice. It was sparkingling beautifully in the moonlight and candlelight.

Namjoon and Hoseok took off the blindfolds from their sons eyes and passed them to stand inside the circle near Minji and Jin.

The rest moved, making a circle around the ceremonial one. The trees around were sparkling with little lights made by Yeonjun and Soobin, making it seem as if the pine trees were inhabited by little fairies with colorful wings.

Taehyung and Jungkook looked around at the beautiful scenery. They didn't expect this much effort. They just wanted to absolutely belong to each other in every meaning.

Jiyoung and Hwasa smiled at them lightly.

They were holding a simple stone, big as a palm. The oathing stone was a way of honoring the spirit of the place and charm, for luck and prosperity. It was a way to invite spirits and ancestors to bless the place the wedding was being held. They believed it helped transfer the oaths to the spirit energies and was a bridge between the couple, ancestors and, thanks to that, immediate sacred place. The oathing stone was supposed to start the roots of the future in the wisdom of the past at the beginning of a soulmates' new life.

This part was usually performed by the eldest soulmates, who attended the wedding as the representatives of ancestors.

Jiyoung nodded to Taehyung, who put his right hand on the stone.

'All the souls of past and present, please be invited to witness the words I will

swear with an honest heart.' he said and took the hand away.

Jiyoung nodded to Jungkook, who put his left hand on the stone.

'All the souls of past and present, please be invited to witness the words I will swear with an honest heart.'

'Let the spirits protect you.' Jiyoung invited them and together with Hwasa moved to stand between others.

Maybe it was the wind but the snow moved around them for a second, covering their shoes.

Minji, Hoseok, Namjoon and Jin looked at the couple. The four of them were the Masters of Ceremony.

'As all relationships have good and bad moments. Leave all the bad thoughts and hurts that you ever had towards each other - behind.' Namjoon said.

Minji looked at Handong, who was standing on the side with a wine glass and encouraged her.

Handong was hesitant when they asked her to do this - she didn't want to spoil the ceremony. But as the water user, even without the power, they considered water given by her as the cleanest one.

So she took a deep breath and slowly walked to Taehyung and Jungkook with the glass filled with water. She gulped and with a trembling hand lifted the glass to Taehyung's lips.

'Let the water... c-clean you.'

He smiled at her gently and embraced her palms, helping her hold the glass still. He took a sip.

She turned to Jungkook, who inclined his hand, whispering:

'Thank you...'

He drank the water and she moved to stand between Yoongi and Gahyeon in the circle of people.

'You can step inside the sacred circle...' Hoseok said.

Taehyung and Jungkook turned to each other.

'Allow me to enter this sacred circle with you, with a free wilI. I vow to speak

sincerely with an honest words, heart and body.' Jungkook said.

Taehyung kneeled on one knee and started to untie Jungkook's shoes to take them off. He slowly got rid of them and the socks, smiling slightly when he recollected the moment Jungkook had a hard time believing taking off socks for each other is not a big deal...

He caressed his bare feet lightly, embracing them with a bit of their power, so Jungkook won't get cold.

'I believe in the honesty of your body...' Taehyung pressed his lips to Jungkook's stomach. He got up. '... heart...' he left the kiss over Jungkook's chest. '...and words.' he pecked his lips softly.

Taehyung repeated Jungkook's words and Jungkook kneeled in front of him, slowly taking off his shoes. He made Taehyung's bare feet warm with his power and kissed his stomach repeating his words.

When he lifted his head for a moment and was caught by Taehyung's gaze. They both blushed. The time stopped for a second.

Taehyung made a move with his hand and helped him to get up. Jungkook leaned his head to kiss his heart and stayed like that for a moment.

Every beating of this heart was so precious to him...

Taehyung squeezed his hand and Jungkook lifted his head to leave a kiss on Taehyung's lips.

'... and words...'

They turned to their parents and entered the circle.

Jin gulped, seeing them coming closer, holding hands.

They bowed to the Masters of Ceremony and recited together:

*We swear by peace and love to stand,*

*Heart to heart and hand to hand.*

Four parents froze for a second looking at their young sons. Too young to get married... Too young to feel they have to, cause there won't be another time for them...

**(♪Music tip: Redeeming Love Theme by Brian Tyler, Breton Vivian♪) <- must on repeat**

Jungkook slowly lifted his eyes at Minji.

'Please...' he whispered inaudibly. 'Mom...'

Her eyes shined with tears, when she harshly inhaled and turned to Jin who was holding a small bowl of red paint. He came closer so she could dive her fingers inside the paint.

Jungkook leaned to her so she could kiss his forehead. Then she pressed her finger to his forehead and she started to draw a symbol. A heart which started the knot, while speaking:

*Blessed be this union with the gift of the East.*

*Communication of the heart, mind and body*

*Fresh beginnings with the rising of each Sun.*

*The knowledge of the growth found in the sharing of silence.*

Jin turned to Namjoon, looking at his hands, who took some paint from the bowl and blinked fast, when his soulmate moved to their son. Namjoon kissed Taehyung's forehead and started to paint the same symbol on it, speaking:

*Blessed be this union with the gifts of the South.*

*Warmth of the heart and home*

*The Heath of the heart's passion*

*The light created by both to illuminate the darkest of times.*

Hoseok came to Taehyung and with red from the paint fingers, he started to draw the second symbol. The reverse heart, intertwined with the first one.

*Blessed be this union with the gifts of the West.*

*The deep commitments of the lake*

*The swift excitement of the river*

*The refreshing cleansing of the rain*

*The all encompassing passion of the sea.*

Jin stood in front of Jungkook and made the reverse heart on his forehead, completing the first blessing:

*Blessed be this union with the gifts of the North*

*Firm foundation on which to build*

*Fertility of the fields to enrich your lives*

*A stable h-home... to which you may always return.*

He stepped back and stretched his hand with the bowl to the boys.

Taehyung tilted his head and waited until Jin looked at him.

'Okay?' he whispered.

Jin almost laughed at who was comforting who here... His eyes filled with tears when he nodded.

'Okay. Continue.'

Taehyung and Jungkook took a bit of paint on their fingers and started to draw the infinity symbol connecting two hearts drawn by their parents.

Jungkook started:

'*I take you my heart...'*

*'At the rising of the moon...' Taehyung smiled softly at his moon.*

*'And the setting of the stars.'*

*'To love and to honor...'*

*'Through all that may come.'*

*'Through all our lives together'*

*'In all our lives...'*

*'May we be re-... reborn...'*

Hearing how Taehyung's voice broke down a little, Jungkook felt his heart clenched and he couldn't go further.

It was the moment Yoohyeon couldn't contain her tears anymore. They slowly ran down her cheeks. She peeked at Soobin who was biting his trembling lips and Dami calmingly squeezed her hand.

Jimin's eyes were itching, but he swore to himself he wouldn't close them. He had

to witness every second of this moment. Even if Jungkook's expression was so devastated as if he wanted to scream out loud that it wasn't fair.

'*That...*' Taehyung started for him, pulling him out from the moment of weakness.

'*That we may meet and know...'* Jungkook whispered.

*'And love again,'*

*'And...'* Jungkook gulped. *'... and remember...'*

Jungkook finished the symbol on Taehyung's forehead.

The Infinite Heart Knot.

The symbol of Undying Love.

They were looking at each other. Their hands fell to their sides.

They didn't want to "remember"... or "meet again". They wanted to be themselves and live this exact life...

Seeing them frozen, Namjoon continued, pulling them from their miserable thoughts, helping them go through.

*There they stand, hand in hand, and exchange wedding rings...*

*Today is the day of all their dreams...*

Jungkook looked at him. It wasn't the part of the ceremony they planned... They didn't have rings...

Taehyung looked confused as well, while Minji continued:

*And all of their loved ones are here to say,*

*Fate bless this couple who marry today.*

Hoseok and Jin took off their golden wedding rings from their fingers.

Hoseok put the ring on Jungkook's hand and closed his fingers on it.

'But it's yours...' Jungkook whispered.

'And I am passing it to the only man who deserves to call my son his husband...' Hoseok smiled and tears brimmed in his eyes.

Jin nodded to Taehyung to confirm his ring was for Jungkook.

Jungkook turned to Taehyung and slowly took his hand. Holding the ring, ready to slide it on Taehyung's fingers, he looked at him.

And suddenly... they stopped seeing their surroundings. They saw each other through the years...

*Four year old Jungkook clumsily running to hug him as fast as he got out of the car...*

*Seven year old Taehyung covering him with a blanket, when he fell asleep on the floor...*

*Ten year old Jungkook yelling at him for forgetting his second breakfast and sharing his own with him right after...*

*Twelve year old Taehyung helping him solve math problems...*

*Them having a snowball fight in the Mountain House...*

*Them watching a sunrise on the rooftop in the school...*

*Taehyung leaning to his lips for the first time...*

*Them crying under the shower together...*

*Jungkook giving him the necklace...*

*Taehyung playing with Bam in the park...*

*Jungkook taking off the shirt for him in the candle lights...*

When they were looking into each other's eyes, as if the whole world disappeared, they didn't mind their whole family's cries and heartbreak, caused by the sudden view of Jungkook and Taehyung tears running slowly down their cheeks.

They could see and feel only each other.

'I knew your soul before I could spell your name...' Jungkook whispered. 'And I would walk through this lifetime again just to get to know you again. The silly you, soft you... smart you... caring you... forgetful you... shy you... clumsy you... You, who cannot wear his shoe properly for his dear life... You, who cries watching The Little Mermaid... You, who can see the world in an absolutely extraordinary way... You, who has the untreatable overprotective syndrome... and the one who forgets to eat unless someone will stuff your mouth forcefully...'

Taehyung laughed through tears.

'I don't want a lifetime... where you are not you, Tae...' Jungkook choked out.

Taehyung squeezed his fingers desperately.

'So as I am now... I, Jeon Jungkook, give myself to you for all of our tomorrows. And I will love you, Kim Taehyung, each passing second more... from now on as your husband.' Jungkook slid the ring on Taehyung's finger. 'With this ring, I marry you and bind my life to yours...'

Sniffing, Jin handed Taehyung his ring.

Taehyung took Jungkook's hand and kissed it.

'I knew you were mine from the moment you were born. But I didn't know you would be the everyday joy of my life. I don't regret even one bruise I got from stopping your fights... Your fierce and brave self... Your inner wisdom, which somehow is not able to solve the easiest equation... Your sensitive, cute nose... Your jealous, possessive ass... I love all of it. The hands who can wipe the tears as fast as they can smack my head...'

Jungkook smiled.

'I saw all the versions of your past self, Koo... but this one... standing in front of me, walking with me, is the one I am falling in love with every day more... No matter for an hour, a day or years....'

Taehyung slid the ring on Jungkook's finger.

'I, Kim Taehyung, promise you, Jeon Jungkook, that my heart will be your shelter. I vow to be the arms you can fall into... With this ring, I marry you and bind my life to yours, as your husband. Let it be the symbol of my everlasting love and the promise of all my tomorrows.'

They held each other's hands, lost in each other's eyes.

Jimin, holding his tears back with shere willpower, looked around and saw everybody looking as if they just received a big, untreatable wound in their chests.

So he composed himself for his brothers, took a deep breath and exclaimed impatiently:

'YOU CAN NOW KISS YOUR HUSBAND, KIM!'

Wooyoung looked at him, with red from sniffing nose, and joined him:

'YEAH, WHAT ARE YOU WAITING FOR, JEON?!'

Jungkook laughed through tears and while Taehyung pulled him by his waist he threw his arms around Taehyung's neck.

Taehyung lifted him a bit above the ground and their noses brushed over each other.

'Spoil me, my husband...' he whispered into Taehyung's lips.

Taehyung joined their lips together in a sweet, long tender kiss.

Their gentle power spread through the forest. Waking up the sleeping trees, which for a moment bloomed with green leaves and fresh flowers. The wind mixes the petals with falling snow, circling the couple inside the sacred circle.

Hoseok looked at Jin with the corner of his eyes.

'For once... let them be Jinnie...' he said softly.

Jin sniffed.

'They are married. They can do whatever they want...' he shrugged with a slight pout on his lips.

Namjoon brushed his back comfortingly.

Taehyung put Jungkook on the ground. Their lips parted slowly.

Minji walked to the boys and kissed their cheeks, when they looked at her.

'You can light up the candle...' she said quietly. She nodded to Jimin.

He came closer with a lantern, which Dragon gave to him. Yoongi and Dami came with him, holding two candles.

Jungkook and Taehyung walked to the edge of the circle when the three of them were standing from the other side.

Dami and Yoongi gave them the candles.

'Light up the candle as the symbol of your union.' Jimin said. 'Let this flame lighten and warm up your shared path.'

Jungkook and Taehyung joined their candles and put it on the candle wick inside the lantern. They gave the candles back and Jimin closed the lantern, saying:

'I will keep it safe...' he winked at them and the three of them got back to the circle.

Jungkook and Taehyung stood in front of their parents again.

'Let as bless your new marriage with the Prayer of Protection.' Namjoon said.

Jungkook and Taehyung bowed their heads.

Their parents made an invisible circle with their hands around their bodies - The Caim Blessing.

All the people around held their hands together closing the couple within the circle of protection, speaking the prayer:

*Circle us Fate,*

*Keep love within, keep hatred out.*

*Keep joy within, keep fear out.*

*Keep peace within, keep worry out.*

*Keep light within, keep darkness out.*

*May you stand in the circle with us,*

*today and always.*

---

Okay I used the box of tissues. If anybody though its cringy - its his/her problem... 😭😭😭😭

It was emotionally hard chapter for me...(っ˘̩╭╮˘̩)っ

Caim is an antient blessing.

The original Caim Blessing.

Some of rituals are coming from irish gaelic or scottish gaelic traditions like the oath stone, the lightening the candle and caim, the blessings and words are also traditional or modified by me a bit. The Infinite Heart Knot is one of gaelic traditional knots too. Its popular tattoo.

The blindfold by parents. The water drinking. The shoes taking and the promise of honesty. The knot painting over foreheada is my addition.

BlairWitch91❤

# Chapter 63: Battle Cry

**16th of November 2071, Daegu**

Nonahi was sitting inside Min Jaehyun's office with his elbow resting on the desk. There was a childish pout on his lips.

Hyerim, Hajun, Dasol, Air Users - Geyong and Jiah, Creation Users - Nabi and Chinhwa, and 3 other Holders were standing in front of his desk.

Kyung, Taeil and Chorong were between them, held by them and guarded. They didn't let them meet. They were separated and closed in different rooms. Taeil knew there was still a room where his soulmate was, but it was closed and guarded by one of Inho's servants.

The silence was getting heavier.

Their Lord was getting annoyed... He was always this guiding, gentle leader, but after the battle near the gate, he changed into a maniac who didn't care about them...

Dasol was holding her wounded hand. Her face was hurting. She desperately wanted to get that ice holder...

They didn't know why their Lord didn't heal them this time... Previously he always made sure they were in good shape...

A heavy sigh left Inho's lips.

Hajun gulped.

'M-my Lord...' he whispered. 'Can you... help us?'

Inho looked at him, bored.

'With what?'

'WITH THIS!!!' Hyerim showed her palm. 'We can't use power!!'

'Oh... well it's irreversible...' Inho shrugged, not interested.

'WHAT?! BUT YOU ARE THE MOST POWERFUL...' Hyerim yelled.

Inho snapped his fingers effortlessly and she lost her voice in an instant.

'W-why did you save us then...?' Hajun asked with wide eyes.

Inho scratched his chin.

'I can still make use of your power... It's to my liking...'

Hajun looked at Hyerim with a pale face.

'But... We are your people...'

'So?'

'What about us? You promised you will show us how to use our power separately...' Nabi said.

'Oh, to do that I need to get rid of *Leannan*...' he smiled slightly.

'Lies.' Kyung said quietly. 'Even they can't do that. It's impossible...'

Inho smirked and replied calmly:

'It is possible...' he moved his hand and a flame appeared above his palm. 'As you can see...'

Four soulmate eyes sparkled in interest.

'And Dokhyun's death was necessary for that?' Kyung snapped. 'What's with your separation syndrome...'

'Inho looked at him calmly and ignored him right after.

'It's been 48 hours...' he pouted.

Kyung didn't exactly know who Inho was. He wasn't part of the cult. But he was scared of his childish, maniacal side. He was behaving like a child whose parents took PS from and now he was sulking...

Inho looked at Kyung.

'I thought you and the whole city would be enough... You are not so important it seems... How to make them come? Any ideas?' he asked excitedly.

'They are not from here. They don't know people here... If they don't care about the city we can wait for a long time. All their friends are with them...' Dasol said.

'That's true... Maybe they matured enough to finally not care about thousands of strangers dying...' Inho said as if he was talking about the weather, not about a massacre.

Even Hajun moved anxiously.

'What are we waiting for?' he gulped. 'Your power allows us to make this city prosper only for interdependants till it will be so powerful we would be able to overthrow the Korean government...'

'I am not interested...' Inho pouted. 'I was waiting for them for 100 years...'

'Why are they so important?' Dasol asked.

'Cause I am bored and they can entertain me...' Inho said, looking around. His eyes fell on Jaehyun's picture with a four year old girl on his shoulders. And in a second photo with Handong holding a two year old boy in her arms.

'Oh?' a slow smile appeared on his face. 'You all are useless...' he giggled. 'But I know what will give me their anger...'

He excitedly stood up.

'Where is the closest Orphanage?'

'What?!' Chorong exclaimed, shocked. 'You wouldn't dare?!' she screamed, making steps. 'INHO!!!'

'Awwww... you still think we are friends...' he said sadly. 'Your love and protectiveness for children was always so cute, Chorong...' he walked to her.

Kyung moved to her side and glared at Inho as if it would have any effect.

Inho stretched his hand and stroked Chorong's cheek gently at the same time a malicious flame appeared in his eyes.

'But don't play saint, my dear... If you would truly care for their good you wouldn't make Jaehyun's children orphans... Right?'

Kyung froze.

Chorong's face got white and terrified.

Inho looked at Kyung.

'Oh? She hadn't told you?' he asked sadly. 'She was so irritated Jaehyun never listened to you...'

Kyung stepped back and Taeil held his arms when he almost fell on the ground, looking at his mother.

'Tell me it's a lie...' he whispered, tearing up.

Chorong lips were trembling.

'The accident didn't mean to kill him...' she whispered.

Kyung was shaking his head not believing in her words.

Inho was looking at them with a smile.

'How is it? Having a soulmate who you hate but at the same time can't be separated? Isn't it a... torture?' he turned around. 'Well, I have some business in the city...' he shrugged leaving the destroyed family in the room. 'Chinhwa... close them together. Taeil to another room...' he ordered and disappeared in the shadows.

**17th of November 2071, Uljin**

There was no wedding reception or loud cheers. Dancing, music or wedding games. After the ceremony, shortly after midnight, they gathered in the living room and made a toast with champagne, Jennie somehow got, from who knows where.

Taehyung and Jungkook hugged each of them, thanking them wholeheartedly.

'We should get some sleep...' Taehyung said. 'Tomorrow we are making the final plan...'

'Wait a damn minute! I know it is not a normal situation!' Jimin disturb him. 'But there is a tradition, which I am sure parents overlooked!' he glared at Jin.

He went to give them shots of pure vodka.

'You have to drink this.'

'And what is the meaning behind this tradition, huh?' Taehyung asked, looking at the liquid inside the glass.

'That no matter how disgusting and bitter the life will be, you can make it sweet for each other.' Jimin said absolutely satisfied with his explanation.

'There is a tradition like that in some countries...' Namjoon started. 'But it is not Interdependants' tradi-...'

Jimin glared at him and he closed his mouth.

'You have to drink this up in one go. And kiss after...'

'Yeeah!!! GO!! DRINK DRINK DRINK DRINK!!!!' Wooyoung, San, Minho, Han, Yeonjun, Gahyeon, Ren, Yoohyeon and Soobin started to cheer loudly.

Namjoon was disappointed but not even slightly surprised that Chanyeol, Baekhyun, Hoseok and Kai joined them right after.

Dami and Yoongi at once let out a heavy sigh.

'And remember...' Jimin said sternly, pointing at them with his finger. 'Without tongue it doesn't count!'

'JIMIN!' Jin exclaimed.

Jungkook lifted his eyebrow at Jimin's satisfied face and Taehyung just rolled his eyes seeing Hoseok pulling out his phone.

Taehyung peeked at Minji who just smirked.

'What?' she asked teasingly. 'Don't you wanna kiss your husband?'

Taehyung blushed hard.

DRINK! DRINK! DRINK! DRINK! - cheers were getting louder.

'What is with this pressure?' Jungkook asked nervously.

'Fuck it.' Taehyung mumbled to himself and lifted his glass.

Jungkook crossed his arm with Taehyung and they drank the shots till the bottom, making disgusted faces right after.

KISS! KISS! KISS! KISS! KISS!!

Jungkook grabbed Taehyung's nape and pulled him hard to dive inside his lips. Taehyung widened his eyes when he felt the liquid together with Jungkook's tongue inside his mouth. He warningly grabbed his waist and brought him closer.

He took over the kiss, sucking on Jungkook's tongue.

Jungkook slowly became meek in Taehyung's hands. The grip on Taehyung's nape softened, when he caressed the hair there. Taehyung moves his hands through Jungkook's back to stroke them slowly. They closed their eyes, forgetting the world around.

Yoongi peeked at the parents and then at Jimin, whose eyes were running from the couple to the watch on his wrists and back.

When Jungkook moved forward leaning on Taehyung automatically,

Dami whistled loudly, piercing everybody's ears and Han whined loudly, when newlyweds were harshly brought to reality.

'Whyyyy?! DAMI!?'

'1 minute 22 seconds...' Jimin sighed and glared at Dami. 'And they could have the record...'

Dami looked at Yoongi.

'Tame him!'

'If you didn't manage for years, how can I?'

'Well you have a dick he wants, I don't. Figure out how.' she replied.

Wooyoung and Gahyeon burst out laughing and Yoongi just looked at the ceiling.

Jimin looked at Yoongi teasingly. But Yoongi could see - deep down in his eyes - he was holding to his crackhead side desperately. Because that's what all of them needed right now.

So he grunted and looked at Dami pulling the most savage face he could:

'Well for sure we could do better than them... And you...'

Dami parted her lips at the challenge.

'Ooooh! Now you said it! We can do much, much better than you, dude!'

'Prove it then.' Yoongi said with a smirk.

Jimin literally had heart eyes, looking at Yoongi.

'NOT TODAY!' Namjoon barged between them. 'You can do a whole tournament when we won't see it, know about, hear about it and be able to stay blissfully unaware!'

'I'm in.' Wooyoung shrugged.

All this time Taehyung and Jungkook were just staring into each other's eyes. Still feeling each other's lips and taste.

'You brat...' Taehyung purred. 'You didn't swallow...'

'Well. I hate this taste.'

'So I had to take a double?'

'You are my husband. Suffer...' Jungkook smirked, brushing Taehyung's hair back.

'Gladly.' Taehyung mumbled, stroking Jungkook's back softly. 'I know you will make it sweet for me...'

'I will...' Jungkook promised. His eyes saddened suddenly. 'We took the whole day for ourselves... We need to prepare them...'

Taehyung closed his eyes and joined their foreheads together.

'I know.' he whispered.

Closed in their own bubble they didn't hear the bickering around till Namjoon raised his voice. They looked at the others.

'Thank you, guys. Dads, mom, grannies, aunties and uncles... Thank you so much.' Jungkook said, smiling at them.

Everybody went silent.

'In the morning we will plan. And in the evening we should pack. We want to be in Daegu the next day. We don't trust he will wait more...' Taehyung said.

'Yeah. We should sleep.' Dami said sternly. She looked at Jungkook. 'You promised that we will go at him head on as soon as we will know who it is. We know now. No need to wait.'

'Exactly. Gonna deal with him, so I can throw a real wedding party!' Jimin said.

Jungkook and Taehyung looked at each other, but didn't correct them.

'We don't have much time to sleep.' Dragon sighed. 'But we should try, at least catch some rest. '

Cheerful mood faded away as unexpectedly as it appeared.

One by one all of them moved without a word to their rooms, bitting by quite 'goodnights'.

Yeonjun and Minho looked at the door Jungkook and Taehyung closed slowly.

'Isn't it strange?' Minho asked. 'If they are this scared, shouldn't we all be

panicking?'

'I thought about that too...' Yeonjun frowned. 'If they think they won't survive this... we should already have our faraway letters written...'

'Then why are we all so calm?' Minho said.

'Cause they made us.' Dami stood next to them. 'I think they are spreading this calmness for us... They are made out of this annoying protective material... They think they won't let us get hurt...' she tsked. 'Idiots.'

'Well, whatever they plan will be... we can modify some parts...' Yeonjun whispered.

'Indeed.' Dami nodded. 'Night, guys. Go cuddle your boyfriends...' she walked away.

'We didn't need your permission!' Minho exclaimed after her and she just showed him a middle finger not even turning back.

Yoongi strayed from the group of people walking upstairs as soon as he saw Jimin walking to the right corridor. He was holding the lantern. He didn't say anything to anyone. Just walked away to his own room.

Yoongi reached him before he managed to close the doors.

Jimin just looked at him and turned around, leaving them open.

He attentively put the lantern on the windowsill. He was looking at the fragile flame vulnerable to every move of the air.

Yoongi slowly closed the door without a word. He leaned on them, looking at the trembling shoulders and dark petite figure, lightened up just by a single flame from a small sacred candle.

The heavy silence fell on the room.

'You did well...' he whispered. 'You gave them a taste of joy this day should have...'

Jimin, staring at the candle, moved his hand over the lantern and the flame got brighter and stronger.

'If it would depend on this flame... I would make sure it would burn till my last breath and turn everything around into ashes...' Jimin said with a dark tone.

Yoongi knew what he meant. If this flame was what defined Taehyung and Jungkook - Jimin would protect it till his last breath.

He walked to him and stood behind him closely. So close Jimin felt his warm breath on his own nape.

'Lean on me.' Yoongi whispered.

Jimin let his back rest on Yoongi's chest. He closed his eyes, making the tears escape from them. He felt the gentle hands embracing his waist.

'I've never thought that doing what right is so fucking hard...' Jimin choked out.

'It sucks. Hurts you. Is painful.' Yoongi said quietly, tightening his grip. 'But not doing what's right destroys your soul...'

'We won't lose them... right?' Jimin asked, shakily.

Yoongi was silent for some time, until he turned Jimin and wiped his tears with his wrist.

'I just know one thing. There is no one like them... And we are not going to Daegu to lose. But to fight. The rest is beyond us.'

*******

Taehyung turned on the bedside lamp and looked at Jungkook who was standing near the doors, playing with the sleeves of his shirt and biting on his lips.

He was suddenly so shy around Taehyung.

Maybe if they could just give into desire he would be more bold...

But they couldn't. They needed deep rest (even if it would be short) and full focus.

Taehyung peeked at Jungkook and internally '*awwed*' at his timid silhouette.

He walked to him and cupped his face, letting his gaze roam around Jungkook's face with even stronger adoration than before.

'Hi...' he purred sweetly.

'Hi...' The corner of Jungkook's lips rised a bit.

'You remind me of someone...' Taehyung said thoughtfully.

Jungkook frowned.

'Who?' he asked, almost sounding angry.

'My beautiful husband.' Taehyung whispered.

Jungkook blushed, feeling the new kind of thrilling feeling when Taehyung called him like that for the first time. He didn't know earlier, this mixture of feelings. Desire combined with adoration. Devotion melted with need. Sudden heat intertwining with sweetness.

The strong sense of belonging and possessiveness, he always had, was immeasurable right now.

And he could see the reflection of those feelings inside Taehyung's eyes.

Everything changed, not changing at all at the same time...

'That I am...' he whispered. And overwhelmed, added seriously: 'I am your husband, Taehyung.'

'Fuck...' Taehyung breathed out unexpectedly. 'I can't anymore...'

He attacked Jungkook's lips with desperate hunger. Pressing him to the wall with his own body.

Jungkook's eyes widened, when his back hit the wall. When Taehyung's tongue forcefully filled his lips. Biting and sucking on it.

He moaned, feeling his husband's hard on rubbing between his legs.

'I can't control when I hear you saying this...' Taehyung whispered with a tightened throat. He pulled Jungkook in another breathtaking kiss.

Jungkook felt Taehyung's hands on his waist. Squeezing it desperately, leaving his fingerprints on him, before he started unzipping his pants.

*One time,* he thought. *At Least this One time with my husband...*

He closed his eyes and answered the kiss with equal force, pulling up Taehyung's hoodie and t-shirt.

'They will hear...' he warned, when Taehyung took off his shirt and threw it to the floor, just to reach for his pants.

'Let them hear...' Taehyung muttered, with a deep, dangerous voice, pressing his lips to Jungkook's neck.

It was desperate, Intoxicating, narcoting daze...

They threw all the control away.

Jungkook wanted to be owned completely.

Taehyung wanted to own him completely.

When Jungkook's hand slid down Taehyung's tummy, the other grabbed them, lifted his arms above his head and pressed himself even more to Jungkook's body. Rubbing their erections together.

'Tae....' Jungkook moaned.

Taehyung intertwined their fingers together. Being so sensitive he felt the ring on Jungkook's finger.

It was making the flame inside him hit the sky.

He couldn't get enough of Jungkook's lips - the lips he knew so well. His favourite taste - yet it got a sudden new sweetness and spice.

He couldn't control... nor did he want to...

They were breathing heavily and sweating badly, while their skin was rubbing together. Jungkook lifted his leg and placed it on Teahyung's hip so the other could sink more between his thighs.

'Who am I?' Taehyung asked,

'My husband...' Jungkook kissed him again.

'I need to have you...' Taehyung parted their lips, choking out desperately.

'You have me.' Jungkook purred into Taehyung's neck, leaving kisses on it.

Taehyung let go of his hands and lifted him.

Jungkook embraced him with his arms and his legs circled around Taehyug's waist.

'You have more of me than I own myself...' he whispered.

Taehyung's moves halted. He got lost inside Jungkook again.

Jungkook's finger caressed Taehyung's cheek.

'Don't stop now, Kim...' he whispered inside Taehyung's lips, but instead of kissing him, he reached for Taehyung's hand

He slowly led his fingers inside his mouth and started to suck on it. Taehyung practically squeezed him with his own body, securing him beside the wall. But he was enchanted by the feeling and view. He was trying to catch his breath, but couldn't, feeling Jungkook's saliva and tongue playing with his long fingers.

He slowly took out his fingers and replaced them with his lips, while his hand reached between Jungkook's asscheeks.

'Bite me.' Jungkook whispered and Taehyung pressed his teeth to his shoulder, making him hiss from the bite and sucking and from Taehyung's fingers sliding inside him. He threw his head back, making room on his throat for Taehyung's lips.

The rubbing of their hard members together was making him already too dizzy. He could feel leaking precum painting his stomach.

And Taehyung's long fingers, curling and pushing inside him were just pushing him higher.

'S-stop... T-Tae...' he mumbled.

'No.' Taehyung said sternly.
'I... I don't want to... come without you...' Jungkook whimpered. His body coiled in Taehyung's arms as if he wanted to run from his merciless fingers.

'But you will...' Taehyung said, hitting deeper inside Jungkook's hole.

'N-no...' Jungkook shook his head, slipping inside the pleasure.

Taehyung bites under his ear, making him scream in bliss.

'Come for me. I will count...' he purred to Jungkook's ear.

Jungkook shook his head.

The tip of Taehyung's tongue touched the inside of Jungkook's ear and his body jerked forward from the electrifying feeling, making his dick, caged between his and Taehyung's tummy, rubbed painfully over the skin.

'Three...' Taehyung muttered.

'Aaaah...' Jungkook breathed out.

Taehyung was observing him with a hungry gaze and parted lips - wet from their saliva, while his third finger joined two other stretching Jungkook more, making him wet, reaching deeper until the hem.

'T-...' Jungkook cried out something incoherently.

'Two.' Tae smirked. 'You will come for me right, Koo...?'

'N-no...'

Even when his vision was blurry. His breath was caged inside his lungs. His stomach sank desperately from holding the air. His lips were parted and trembling... He knew Taehyung would make him come either way...Maybe he was teasing. Maybe he wanted to push Taehyung's limits... Or maybe he just wanted to hear...

Taehyung leaned his lips to Jungkook's and muttered:

'You are my husband... And you will come for me, Jungkook... One...'

Jungkook's back arched and he screamed into Taehyung's open lips, who were just millimetres apart but didn't touch him, observing every little second of Jungkook's wrecked expression.

Taehyung didn't let him come down from his high. Jungkook was still trembling and whimpering, when he felt Taehyung's hard dick sliding inside him at once to the hem.

Jungkook screamed.

Taehyung moaned, feeling the hot, tight ass, still clenching from the previous orgasm around his member.

'T-too much...' Jungkook whispered, in daze.

Taehyung thrust inside again.

'Should I stop?'

'No!' Jungkook begged, bringing him closer.

'You don't know what you want?' Taehyung asked with a hint of amusement, not stopping his moves.

He could feel Jungkook's legs desperately tightening around his waist. His nails

scratched Taehyung's back, leaving red, painful strips.

'You...' Jungkook said. 'Want more... of you...'

'He looked above Taehyung's shoulder and saw the reflection of his back and ass. His own legs and arms entangled around him desperately.

Taheyung's hips movements, thrusting inside him mercilessly. His moving muscles... He was so beautiful... Taking him like he wanted. Owning him like he needed.

Taehyung knew Jungkook was too sensitive right now. He pushed him into overstimulation. Every inch of his skin was aching from the touch. Every move of his dick inside him was bringing him an overwhelming mixture of pain and pleasure.

'Please... Tae... more... please... ' Jungkook was mumbling, between his whimpers, absolutely intoxicated by Taehyung's presence. 'Deeper... Tae...'

Taehyung embraced him tighter and walked with him to the bed. He put him on the sheets gently. Laying on him.

'Don't stop...' Jungkook cried.

'Shhh....' Taehyung kissed his forehead. 'I won't...'

He moved slowly again, but Jungkook let out another moan, and pressed his lips to his collarbone, biting, kissing, licking...

'Baby... Look at me...'

Jungkook's unfocused gaze fell on Taehyung. It was the first time he let himself slip like that. Absolutely giving into Taehyung's control.

'Want to make me happy?' he asked, caressing his face, calming him down, still keeping him on the edge with slow moves.

'I... want...to...'

Taehyung smiled.

'Tell me... and I will make you come again... Okay, baby?'

Jungkook nodded obediently. He gulped and embraced Taehyung's harder.

'I love you, Taehyung...'

'Good boy...' Taehyung kissed him deeply and thrust inside him harder.

Their moans. The sounds of body hitting on body. Whispers with soft, breathless confessions... intertwined in the air.

Jungkook moaned with a pitched voice, hiding his face inside Taehyung's neck, trying to pull him even closer, feeling Taehyung coming inside him.

Taehyung inhaled Jungkook's scent and kissed his shoulder. His neck and ear lazily. Too tired to open his eyes.

Too tired to think of tomorrow.

They should think of tomorrow... And it was the last thing they wanted to do right now.

Feeling sudden heaviness inside Taehyung's silence. Jungkook tilted his head and brushed his nose over the other cheek, comfortingly.

Taehyung's eyes filled with tears, which rolled down his cheeks.

Jungkook kissed them slowly. His fingers were stroking Taehyung's back, soothing the nail marks he left.

'There is no tomorrow.' he whispered calmingly to his husband. 'Only now.'

Taehyung nuzzled his face into Jungkook's chest and whispered gratefully:

'I love you, Koo...'

******

On the next morning everybody was already in the restaurant part of the Guesthouse, when Taehyung entered.

'Have anybody seen my husband?' he asked.

Jungkook back hugged him, grinning widely.

'Oh, here he is...' Taehyung said singingly.

Yoongi looked at him with an absolutely done face.

'You knew he was standing behind you...'

'Will you shove this in our faces from now on?' Dami asked, squinting her eyes.

'Yes.' Taehyung and Jungkook said unisono.

They sat by the table and spent an hour eating what they have and enjoying each other's presence.

But after breakfast jokes were brushed aside.

Everybody switched to their serious modes, when the dishes were exchanged with maps and markers.

They were planning for hours, trying to predict scenarios. They had to reach Mins Mension, and evacuate as many people from the city as they could and... well survive.

'If we will sneak in this way...' Ren started.

'There is no point in sneaking in...' Jungkook said. 'He will know whenever we enter quietly or loudly. And we will just lose time...'

'So we are just going full blow right away?' Yoohyeon frowned.

'Precisely. 'Taehyung confirmed. 'We should be there tomorrow morning...'

Namjoon's phone rang and he picked it.

'It's Yongguk...' he said and put the phone on the speaker.

'Namjoon... did the sun rise at your place?' the leader of ICI asked.

Namjoon froze.

'What?'

'I am 5 km from Daegu... It's still dark here. I don't know if the imbeciles from the government triggered him or if it is just a demonstration of power, but the dome of shadows is not just above the city anymore...'

'Fuck.' Namjoon whispered.

'That's not all...' Yongguk said. 'He published a recording on 3EO's site...'

Namjoon gestured to Kai, who ran for his laptop.

'Ryu?' Namjoon asked.

'No...' Yoonguk's heavy reply came. 'But we need you here I guess...'

Kai opened his laptop and played the recording. Taehyung and Jungkook came closer.

*Inho, like a vlogger, was walking around Jaehyun's office.*

*'Sending greetings...' he said. 'I was a bit bored for the last few days... So, I just decided to roam around the city for a bit...' he smiled. 'And by the way... no I don't want anything from you, Mr President...' he glared at the camera. 'One more soldier will try to cross the wall and I will make a never ending night for the whole country...'*

*He moved and bent over the backrest of the leather couch.*

*Back to the main topic... I just wanted to introduce you to my new, little friends...' he smiled widely.*

*On the couch a little boy and a little girl were sitting. Around 4-6 year olds. They were crying. Cuddling to each other.*

Jungkook and Taehyung froze. Their eyes widened.

*'Aren't they... similar?' Inho lifted the strand of the girl's hair to his nose and inhaled.*

Jungkook shivered in anger.

*'I am going to play with them... let's say... in 8 hours... You know how they will end up... RIght?'*

*He ruffled the boy's head.*

*'Oh, have I told you? I know your names now!' he bowed mockingly. 'Have a nice day... Jungkooks... Taehyung...'*

The recording ended. The silence fell in the room. Everybody slowly turned to Jungkook and Taehyung.

Jungkook gripped his fingers in a fist so tightly it hurted his inner palm.

'AAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!!!!!!!!!!!!!' he screamed and all glass objects and windows just shuddered into crumbles.

'Jungkook calmed down!' Minji screamed.

Jungkook just brushed all the maps from the table and threw them on the floor.

'Taehyung! Calm him down!' Jin demanded, when the furniture started to float in the air.

Jungkook walked out.

Taehyung lifted his gaze from the monitor at his parents and the Red String.

'If you want to go with us, pack what you need.' he turned around. 'You have an hour.'

'Taehyung!' Namjoon called him. 'You need to calm down!'

But the Red String was already in motion, walking after Taehyung.

'Nah...' Taehyung whispered. 'He just fucked up. Cause we need this anger...'

******

♪**(Music tip: *Battle Cry* by Imagine Dragons )** ♪

Dami and Yoohyeon were sitting beside each other on the bed. Fully dressed. With forehead pressed to each other. Counting minutes to departure.

Soobin was standing on the balcony looking at the mountains. Yeonjun quietly walked to him. Stood next and found his hand.

Han was zipping his backpack when he felt Minho's arms embracing him from behind.

'Want a quickie?' he asked teasingly, trying to chase the fear away.

Minho nuzzled his nose into his hair.

'Nah... just a hug...'

Baekhyun and Chanyeol were standing in Jimin's room. Yoongi was anxiously standing next to him, waiting till he finished packing.

Without a word Chanyeol walked to Jimin and hugged him.

'Be careful...' he whispered.

'You too...' Jimin mumbled.

Chanyeol pointed at Yoongi.

'Better bring your ass back safe and sound!'

Yoongi nodded.

Baekhyun rolled his eyes. He ruffled Jimin's head and walked to Yoongi. He kissed his forehead.

'Take care... of yourself and of him...' he whispered.

Yoongi's heart skipped a bit. He gulped.

'I w-will...' he choked out.

Chanyeol took Baekhyung's hand and they left them alone.

Jimin took a deep breath and walked to Yoongi. He stood in front of him.

'I wanna a different kind of hug this time...' he demanded.

Yoongi lifted his eyebrow.

'What kind?'

Jimin embraced his neck.

'With ass grabbing...' he smirked.

'You are insane.' Yoongi shook his head and circled his arms around his waist.

'It can be your last chance you know...' Jimin pouted.

'It's absolutely impossible...' Yoongi denied.

'Oh really?' Jimin pressed his lips to Yoongi's in a heated kiss.

He let their tongues play, pressing himself more and more to Yoongi, until he felt the other's hands shyly lowering.

Yoongi, felt the soft, squishy butt and let out a:

'Fuck...'

Jimin moaned quietly and Yoongi's fingers squeezed him involuntarily harder.

Yoongi kissed him again and mumbled.

'If it will be my one and only time I will be eternally pissed in heaven...'

'If I die a virgin I will haunt you...'

'Wouldn't want it other way around...'

Hoseok and Minji walked to the kitchen when Namjonn was pressing his forehead to Jin. They were standing with closed eyes and intertwined hands. Hobi and Minji looked at each other and just walked to them. They embraced them, finding comfort in the group hug.

They could understand each other without words. They could share the pain and fear.

Their own... and their childrens.

Wooyoung and San walked to the car, with bags. They put everything in the trunk and San closed it. They looked at the cloudy sky. Their favourite place.

Wooyoung counted to three in his head and said fuck it...

'We still have 15 minutes...'

A slow smile appeared on San's lips. He licked his lips...

'Don't whine when you won't be able to fly straight...' he said and grabbed Wooyoung to throw him over his arm and find some quiet, private place.

Gahyeon walked out of her room. Her mother had to stay here with Jennie, Kai

and Bam. She just said goodbye to her. And told her not to worry. Even if she herself was freaking out.

But when she lifted her gaze, he saw Ren in the corridor.

He stretched his hand.

She looked at it.

'I told you. I won't let go...' he said.

Her lips trembled and she gave him her hand so they could walk together.

Jungkook seemed calm but the anger was running through his veins like an avalanche.

He looked at Taehyung, who came out of the bathroom and walked to the bag with his uniform.

He walked to him and wanted to focus on something.

'Let me...' he said and took out the uniform.

Taehyung looked at him and nodded.

Jungkook carefully started to put different parts of the uniform on him. As if he was dressing him in armor... Attentively tying strings. Buttoning buttons.

Without a word. Fastening the holders and belts with precise moves. Finally he gave Taehyung the sword.

'Your turn...' Taehyung said.

'I am already...'

Not letting his gaze from Jungkook's eyes, he grabbed his waist and brought him closer.

Taehyung started to check every belt and button. He pulled the straps over Jungkook's forearm harshly and fastened them harder. Jungkook stood his gaze calmly.

They didn't need to talk. They were too tuned to each other to not know what the dark flames in their eyes were hiding under determination.

They knew each other too well to not understand each other's silence and tension.

When Taehyung finished, he took Jungkook's hand. Their eyes dropped on the rings on their fingers.

Jungkook squeezed Taehyung's cold fingers.

'Stay by my side.' he whispered.

'There is no other place for me...'

Fifteen minutes later 6 cars left the Guesthouse in Uljin, still bathed in the morning sun and covered by fluffy snow, heading to the south.

Where the sky was dark as the darkest of nights....

---

I need to divide this chapter in two. I will take my time with the second part. Hope I will update on Sunday.

It's hard chapters.

And tbh I was listening to Queen 'Who wants to live forever' while writing smut. It had the proper amout of desperation...

BlairWitch ＜3

# Chapter 64: Fall

**17th of November 2071, Daegu**

Daegu was surrounded by military and law enforcement. Yongguk was looking at the dark dome spread beside the wall, surrounding it for another miles. The eternal night was hanging over Yeongcheon, Gyeongsan, Chengdu, Gunvi and Chilgok. It didn't cover only the land of the Republic of Daegu. It spread over Sengju, Goryeong as well.

The sun hadn't reached here and it was already afternoon. In his entire life he had never seen something like that. Nor had he ever read about something even mildly similar...

The dome at first glance was made from shadows - grey, dark grey, black - which were moving like a liquid, but if it was touched (and there were idiots, who tried to touch it) it was like made out of glass.

He sent some MOI's officers to check it. After it was hit with any kind of power it was becoming hard as steel and everything was bouncing back from it.

'Mr General... I don't think it will help... Again.' he said, trying not to roll his eyes.

'Previously we used missiles with smaller hitting power...'

'And the dome spread another 50 metres...' Yongguk reminded him.

'We have to try... There is a whole city of people under the control of one maniac with an army...'

'I don't think he has an army on his side...'

'How so?' General looked dumbfounded. 'He is in charge.'

'It doesn't mean interdependants will listen to him, seeing what he is doing... They are not regular soldiers under the threat of a field court...'

'You mean... THIS IS THE DOING OF ONE MAN!?'

'Basically.' Yongguk sighed.

'So taking him down will destroy the whole problem...'

'He is the problem. Yes. Taking him down? It is out of your reach, sir...'

'Will your man deal with him?'

Yongguk shook his head.

'They can help with everything else...'

'That's just more reason to try everything we have! Prepare the bombs!' he said to his assistant.

Yongguk didn't have the energy to explain to him again that they will just waste equipment. Every unit from Korea was here, including Pink Alert. But they still couldn't do anything till Namjoon came here.

He couldn't help but roll his eyes, when the order was screamed and few minutes later four jets aimed at the dome. Of course nothing happened. The dome swallowed the missiles and dispersed them as if it was from plastic.

Just that a second later as if it was feeded it spread for another 50 metres forward...

Jungkook and Taehyung.

When he heard those names from Na Inho's lips his heart clenched. The kids who were buying McDonald's few days ago...

How could they stand against this force?

He hoped Namjoon had a good plan on how to sneak inside the city...

Yongguk didn't allow himself to think about Ryu. His son was so close to this psychopath... Being caught up directly inside the middle of this war. Yongguk closed all his fear and anger for a year... He wanted to see his son. And make him safe.

'Cars are approaching.' he heard someone inform the General.

At the same time his phone rang. He picked up the phone and nodded.

'It's Kim Namjoon's and two of Moi's units. Let them in.' he said to the General.

He turned around and few minutes later he saw six cars, entering the crisis management area one by one.

Namjoon and Minji got out of the first one. Taehyung and Jungkook from the last one. They looked at the dome.

They came closer.

General and Namjoon looked at each other. It was the same guy who was on the dam, but this time he didn't say a word.

'The situation is...' he started.

'Take your people further from here.' Minji demanded.

'Excuse me?'

'You heard me. Move further away.' she repeated clearly and slowly.

'If you don't want to be caught up inside the mix of powers, better move around 5 km from here.' Namjoon explained. 'Interdependent will evacuate the people from the city to you. You have to make them safe...'

'I don't think you are aware of the problem...'

Namjoon ignored him and said to Yongguk:

'Let all the agents know to be ready to get closer to the city.' he said and turned around to go back to the car.

'What the hell, Kim!' General exclaimed, walking after him. 'This dome is indestructible! How do you intend...'

Namjoon grabbed his throat.

'Move. Or I will move you by myself.' he growled.

At the same time Jungkook jumped in the air, spreading his wings. Taehyung flew above the cars, observing him and everything around.

Jungkook for a moment was looking at the dome from above. He took out his katana from the scabbard at his back.

'Get inside the car.' he said through mindlink to Minji and Namjoon.

Minji looked at him and nodded. She pulled Namjoon and they ran to the car.

Taehyung looked at Jungkook far away from him, floating in the darkness and they both knew. They were looking at each other. See only each other inside the night.

He nodded.

And Jungkook fell down from the sky like a meteor. His katana was covered in dazzling golden starlight.

He was falling. Faster and faster. Speeding up.

He swirled the katana and hit the top of the dome.

The tip of the sword touched the shadows and pierced them effortlessly. Jungkook's power sunk inside the dome. The small crack appeared, getting bigger. Running in zig zags down the dome. Illuminating the cracks from inside like a small rivers of lights. Flowing down one next to the other in all directions.

Until the whole dome of the shadow-glass dome shuddered in pieces and changed into dust that covered the whole area.

The cars moved forward at once. Taehyung flew into the wall direction and Jungkook joined him breathing heavily.

'Okay?'

'Yeah.' he nodded, the anger was still heard in his voice.  'One down.'

They looked at the iron wall with a smaller glass ceiling over it and the city closed underneath it.

The General was standing with a dropped jaw, covered in dust from the dome, who was nowhere to be found in a span of minutes. He gulped.

Yongguk looked at him with the corner of his eyes.

'I advise you to listen to them...' he just said and screamed. 'All units beside the wall!! ASAP!!!'

Nonahi was standing beside the windows in Mins' Mension, where his faithful bunch ran inside Jaehyun's office.

'My Lord!' Chinhwa exclaimed. 'The dome! They broke it...'

Nonahi smirked.

'They are here... Finally.'

'What are we supposed to do!?' Dasol asked.

'Wait. They will come... You will free the hostages as soon as they cross the gate...'

'What?' Hajun opened his mouth.

'I don't need them.' Nonahi shrugged. 'Then... you can do whatever you want...' he turned to Hyerim and Hajun. 'Except the two of you.'

He moved his hand and they both screamed. From their chests two identical scythes were ripped out.

They screamed in pain and fell to their knees. They wove and begged, but the next move of Nonahi's hand took their voices away, leaving them crying and yelling without a sound.

'Twin souls...' he explained to the others, holding two scythes. 'Holders' souls can be a weapon too... That's the power you can get... when the chains are broken...'

Next to him a shadow appeared. A shadow without a face. Just a silhouette without a body. But when Nonahi handed him one of the scythe, he took it.

Nonahi breathed out in content.

'Let's see... how much time it will take me to kill you this time...' he smirked to himself.

He turned to the window again looking like the dome of shadows was falling apart.

'Maybe I will make it... a bit special this year?'

******

**(Music tip: Heart of Courage, by Thomas Bergersen, Two Steps from Hell )**

Six cars stopped in front of the gate they once fought. People fastly got out of them, taking the necessary things in hurry.

Jungkook and Taehyung flew down.

Everything was happening fast and quietly.

The wall was towering over them, adorned with the dome made of nightshadows.

'Baekhyun!' Minji said and he immediately spread his arms. The purple echolocating map started to draw itself in front of him. Creating the image of the whole city and the people inside it. Every move, every echo. All buildings. Each heartbeat was displayed with the move of his wrists.

'Soobin! Yeonjun!' Taehyung called them.

Soobin stood in front of the wall, he closed his eyes and breathed out deeply, before he gripped the bow and aimed in the sky, spreading his fingers between which three arrows appeared.

He felt calmer, when Yeonjun stood behind him. His left arm embraced his waste while his right hand was laced on the bowstring of the light.

Another three arrows appear between Yeonjun's fingers.

All the light arrows were getting brighter and brighter empowered by him. He touched Soobin's cheek with his own. His power ran through his soulmate body lightening the bow like a lightbulb with too high voltage.

Soobin opened his eyes full with determination and they both at once tightened the bowstring before releasing six deadly arrows into the sky.

The fell on the shadow over the iron wall like six falling stars.

They made a star shape over the shadows, stucking inside it and started to connect themselves with electricity sparkles.

The star started to glow, sinking inside the shadows.

'NOW!' Taehyung screamed.

Wooyoung and San grabbed Yoohyeon and Dami by the harness they were wearing and flew with them in the air.

They dropped them on the shadows. Yoohyeon's feet and Dami's spear instantly started to spread the ice underneath them. Crawling inside the cracks of light made by Yeonjun and Soobin. They had to do this, so it wouldn't fall down on the city.

When the lights were pushing and tearing apart the shadows and the ice was filling the cracks together with it making it look like a spiderweb, the dome was held over the wall just by those two powers.

'READY!' Dami screamed in her mind.

San and Wooyoung grabbed the girls in the air again.

'On three!' Yeonjun screamed at Yoohyeon.

Both Sealers clapped their hands together and the light and ice shuddered the shadow ceiling into the pieces.

Yeonjun dispersed them with the light and Yoohyeon made the frozen parts rise in the air and threw them outside of the city border, so they fell on the surrounding forest.

In the meantime Hwasa came with the paintbrush to Baekhyun's map and started to draw routes and signs on it. But the things she painted in the air were shown on the real streets in the city. She drew the corridors leading to the gates, so people won't panic and run in all directions. She drew the leading arrows over the streets leading to the corridors.

Namjoon came to Gahyeon, Ren, Siyeon and Bora.

'Ready?' he asked. 'Calm voice. Simple orders.'

Gahyeon and Siyeon nodded.

Gahyeon touched her temple with her two fingers and Siyeon took her hand. She joined her power with Gahyeon.

'Ren...' Yoongi looked at him seriously, when Ren took Bora's hand. 'From now on, you are Min Ren. People will trust you like that... Use my father's name.'

Ren widened his eyes, but nodded, gulping.

Gaheyong looked at her brother with full of emotions, grateful eyes.

She looked with determination at Siyeon and started connecting one mind after another as far as she could reach, as many as she could reach. Speaking to people inside the city.

Next to her Ren was doing the same with everyone she missed.

*My name is Min Gahyeon...*

*My name is Min Ren...*

*The city is at risk of being destroyed...*

*The evacuation of the citizens will begin in five minutes...*

*Stay calm.*

*Follow the signs to the gates.*

*Follow the light.*

*You will be taken out of the city.*

*Protect children.*

*Rescue units are waiting...*

*Be fast...*

*Don't panic.*

In the citizens mind it was like an echo of the voices. Like an echo of whispers they couldn't deny. The need to listen to the voice, make them stop what they were doing... Make them get up from their seats... Made them get out of their houses on the street. Made them look at the sky, where the spiderweb of light and ice was shuddering the darkness for them.

When the last whisper was heard inside their minds, they started to grab the children and do what the voices said:

*Run.*

Jungkook looked at the iron in front of him. The iron high as the skyscraper. The wall that made the city a prison not a shelter.

Yoongi and Jimin stood on both of his sides.

'Take it down.' he said quietly.

Jimin looked at him shortly. He desperately wanted to hug him, but Jungkook's eyes were dark as the ocean and as deep anger was visible in them. He could

almost see the red reflexes in them.

Yoongi stretched his hand to Jimin and they walked to the wall.

Taehyung was repeating the orders, with steady loud voice:

'As soon as the wall will be down, we are going to Mins' house. San, Wooyoung you are taking Yeonjun and Soobin! Ren and Gahyeon are teleporting with Yoohyeon, Dami, Minho and Han. The two of us will take Yoongi and Jimin! Minho, Han, you know what to do when we get there!'

Taehyung looked at the Red Alert. Her eyes fell on Minji.

'Secure the people...'

'I know. Don't think about it. Focus on him. We will deal with the rest. We have backup...' she pointed with her head to her parents and sister and to Yongguk with his people coming by foot, using powers or in cars, Pink Alert was there too.

Taehyung walked to Jungkook, Yoongi and Jimin. He and Jungkook exchange glances., before looking at the rest.

Taehyung grunted.

'When you will get the hostages and deal with his people if they will be there... Don't wait. Get out as soon as possible...'

Members of Red String looked at each other.

'And by all means... Don't get close to us when we are near him.' Jungkook added coldly. He looked at Dami. 'No matter what.'

Jimin grunted.

'Wouldn't it be better if we all...' he started.

'Jimin...' Taehyung said quietly, putting his hand on his best friend's shoulder. 'We know what we are doing...'

Jungkook looked at Yoongi and pointed to the wall with his head.

'Burn it, hyung...'

'Sure, kid.'

They fistbumped each other, and Yoongi forcefully dragged Jimin away from Taehyung.

'Let them think they can have everything their way...' he whispered to Jimin's ear, while taking out his two daggers from the harnesses over his hips.

Jimin nodded and took one of them. They connected their free hands. They sent their fire power through each other's bodies, making the daggers shine with red heat.

The steel harder than the iron. The heat that could melt it.

They stuck it inside the wall, which suddenly was set on fire. Spreading left, right and up. Until instead of iron they saw only flames. White flames, eating the iron made by Chorong and Kyung. Devouring it mercilessly. Melting it into nothingness.

'The flames will die down in a short while!' Jimin screamed, while Taehyung embraced him from behind and jumped into the air, while Jungkook did the same thing with Yoongi.

Gahyeon took Minho and Yoohyeon's hands and disappeared suddenly while Ren teleported Dami and Han.

Wooyoung and San were already in the air with Yeonjun and Soobin, trying to catch up with two winged men.

The parents gulped seeing them disappearing inside the night that still was present in the sky.

Jin looked at Hoseok. They refused to say goodbye.

It wasn't the fucking goodbye!

In the moment the flames died, Minji and Hoseok put their hands over the road and lightened the signs and walls painted by Hwasa's imagination.

Lightening the darkness in the city with their light.

'We are going in!' Minji screamed. 'Yongguk! Control the military! They can't get closer than 5 km from the city!'

'5?! Why?!'

'The backlash effect of Inho's and boys' power will destroy buildings and everything around! We need to evacuate everyone far away from here! Send MOI inside the city too! We will need help!' she replied and ran after Hoseok, Jin, Namjoon, Chanyeol, Baekyun, her parents and her sisters inside the city.

*******

**(Music tip: Protectors of the Earth by Thomas Bergersen, Two Steps from Hell )**

Jungkook flew above the fencing of Mins' property, but Yoongi stopped him.

'Wait.' he said. Jungkook halted in the air above the gate.

Yoongi swung his dagger and the lightning hit the gate from above, destroying it to pieces.

'Don't worry about destroying something... It's just bricks.' he said and Jungkook nodded.

They stopped in front of the building.

The rest were appearing near them one by one.

Inho was standing on the rooftop, looking at them from above. With his hands inside the pocket of his jeans. In a casual t-shirt. He absolutely didn't look like the evil itself. More like a handsome middle aged friendly guy from the neighbourhood.

Jungkook lifted his head to look at him.

Nonahi mockingly made a bow.

'My dear, Leannan...' he said, and turned his eyes to Taehyung. 'I don't think I had a pleasure with you, Mr Holder...'

Taehyung gritted his teeth.

'Wooyoung, San. Rescue the children. Gahyeon, Ren - the rest of the hostages.' Jungkook whispered. 'Dami and the rest... deal with them...' he added, when Chinhwa, Dasol and others walked out of the house.

'Don't worry...We will catch up...' Nonahi smirked at Taehyung maliciously. 'I, for sure, want to see the same pain on you as I saw on your lover's face... I am certain it will suit you...'

Taehyung jumped into the air with a scream, raising his sword.

Jungkook was right after him. He sped up and when the shadow with a scythe in his hands appeared in front of Nonahi, he swung his sword and pushed it back with the power from his free hand, to make a clear way for Taehyung, who reached Inho, grabbed him and took him into the air.

Inho just spread his arms at him as if he was welcoming him, and let him take him further from where the others were.

The battle in the air...

Began.

*******

Dasol and 7 other people stood in front of Dami and 7 members of Red String, while Ren, Gahyeon, Wooyoung and San passed them and went inside the house.

Dami smirked looking at Dasol's scratched face.

'This time you won't be lucky bitch...' he said, and Dasol in fury, holding haladie - a sword with two blades on both sided, sparkling with water drops, ran at her.

But Yoohyeon came in front of Dami and with a frontal kick, hit Dasol's face.

'I will take her this time.' she said fiercely, and when Dasol swirled her sword and water came at Yoo, the other moved her wrist and her sabre appeared, while with the move of her fingers she changed the water into ice and directed it back at Dasol.

Dami shrugged and moved to turn to Chinhwa, who was already running at her. She was the Sealer, Ren talked about. The dangerous one. The creation user...

'Spikes.' Chinhwa whispered and from the ground rock spikes rose, under Dami's feet. She made a cartwheel and jumped away.

So that's how her power worked. She was using words to create what she wanted... Just as the cards her soulmate was using, was creating the thing that was drawn on it.

'Fuck.' Dami cursed. Jumped in the air and fell at Chinhwa raising her spear. 'Han!! Help me here!'

Yeonjun moved to Do - a free Holder with stolen sacred treasure. It was Urumi, which was giving him a strange sand power feeling. Urumi were flexible sword whips. The blade itself was made of extremely bendable metal that, when not in use, could be wrapped around the waist like a belt.

He will have to be fast...

When Yeonjun moved his power around the guy, he realised that the weapon could be deadly - but the person who was holding it - wasn't. He was too slow and didn't actually know how to use this Sacred Treasure.

Yeonjun sighed, absolutely disgusted by the Holder, who dared to use Taboo and avoiding Urumi moves, he first hit the chest of the opponent, who fell on the ground, before sending a ball of light at him.

With the corner of his eyes he could see Dami, having a hard time with some women. He wanted to help her as soon as he deals with this shit in front of him.

Gahyeon, Ren, Wooyoung and San ran inside the house. They started to search the rooms one by one until they encountered the locked ones.

San shot the lock and they opened, showing the person tied up to the chair and blindfolded. Skinny. Dirty. Without shoes. With bruises and torn clothes. Signs of ties on his ankles...

'SONG!' Ren ran inside. He touched his arm, but the person instinctively jerked back. 'Ryu... Your name is Ryu right? Your father... is waiting... I will take you out of here...' he untied the blindfold and the person squinted his eyes at the light. 'Do you remember me? I'm Ren...'

Ryu shook his head slowly.

'It doesn't matter... I will take you to your father...' Ren started to untie the ropes, looking at Gahyeon. 'Take care of the rest!'

Woosan pulled Gahyeon further. They reached the rooms on the upper floor. It was Gahyeon's bedroom, but on the bed two six-year-olds were sitting in the darkness. They screamed when they turned on the lights.

'It's okay! It's okay!' Wooyoung ran to them. 'We won't hurt you...'

They weren't wounded or harmed. Just deadly scared. To the point they were screaming and crying constantly, not letting anybody touch them. Hugging each other closely. Running away when Wooyoung stretched his hand.

'Do you want to fly?' He tried to convince them gently.

They screamed louder, absolutely terrified in the state of hysteria.

'They won't listen...' San sighed and took one of the colourful blankets. 'Sorry...' he whispered and wrapped the blanket around the girl, taking her forcefully from her brother in his arms. She was kicking him and crying, but he held her in the safety of his arms, pressing her to his chest.

Gahyeon opened the windows for him, so he could fly through it.

Wooyoung already wrapped the duvet around the screaming boy, calling out to his sister.

'I will take you to her...' Wooyoung promised and hugged him. 'I promise...' he looked at Gahyeon. 'Will you be okay?'

'It's my house... I will...' she said seriously. 'And Ren will be back in a minute...'

'Be careful...' Wooyoung whispered and flew with the boy in his arms.

Gahyeon ran in the corridor and checked the next closed room. She moved her hand and used telekinesis to move the lock and open them.

It was a strange scene...

Kyung was sitting, with his back pressed to the wall. Looking in the space with his face deadly pale and mortified. He looked like a human doll without a soul.

And Chorong was kneeling in the middle of the room. Crying, beginning, repeating sorry, with her forehead pressed to the floor. Scratching the carpet with her nails. Almost crawling into her mate's direction. But kept at bay by Kyung's death-like gaze.

'Get out of my house...' Gahyeon said, throwing the image from her head. 'You can walk, right? So get out!'

She turned around and ran this time knowing where - to Taeil's bedroom. She opened the doors and looked at her cousin.

He was sitting on the bed, looking at his hands. Tears were streaming down his face. His eyes were red and his whole body was shaking.

He lifted his eyes at her.

She huffed in frustration.

'You really fucked up this time, Taeil!' she said, walking to him. 'I should leave you here!' she grabbed his waist, helping him to get up.

'G-gahy...' he choked out.

'But for those one hot choco you brought me when I was sick at age of 7 - I will help you.' she sighed.

'G-gahyeon l-listen...'

'We saved Ryu... That's his name. Your soulmate's... He is out of here now...' she calmed her cousin down and teleported them.

Ren appeared suddenly in front of Bang Yongguk. Helping to stand the guy much taller and tougher than him, whose hand was hanging low without any strength.

'RYU!!!!' Yongguk ran to him. He looked at Ren. 'Thank you!' he got his weight on himself. Hugging him tightly.

'I have to go back...' he said, but Gahyeon appeared next to him with Taeil. 'Take care of him!' she said and wanted the step back, but Taeil grabbed her shoulders.

'M-my parents...' he whispered.

'I freed them...' she assured him, impatiently.

'My father won't help her...' he choked out.

'What? Who?'

'M-mom... H-he won't...'

'She is his soulmate, you idiot...' Gahyeon wanted to smack her older cousin's head. But Taeil was mumbling as if he was out of his mind.

'S-she... I n-need to h-help them... Before I will lose b-both...'

'I don't have time for this!' Gahyeon turned around. 'Don't enter the city!' she snapped.

'S-she... k-killed...' Taeil fell to his knees and hid his face in his hands. 'U-uncle...'

Gahyeon froze. She slowly turned around and looked at Taeil from above.

Her eyes filled with tears.

'What?'

Taeil didn't answer.

She gritted her teeth. The flames appeared in her eyes. She moved, but before she could teleport by herself Ren grabbed her hand and joined her.

Taeil threw his head back and screamed in despair. He bent, crying, when his gaze was caught by the dark sad, tired eyes of the person with long, dirty hair in the arms of Bang Yongguk.

Wooyoung and San were flying above, observing the city under their feet. People were running and moving through corridors made by Minji and Hoseok. Following the signs made by Hwasa. Listening to orders given by Siyeon and Bora. The weaker ones or more panicked ones were guided and rescued by people in black uniforms.

Namjoon and Jin were outside of the gate they entered through, near Yongguk, treating the wounded, who got cut up in the panic or hurt by the crowd. But importantly checking the state and treating the people with separation syndrome, rescued from the prisons by Miji and Hoseok, guided by Baekhyun to the pointes and commanding other MOI's units with the help of Naeun.

Bogum and Lisa were helping to treat people too and a few other rare healers.

Jennie and Rose, shapeshifted into horses, were running in and out of the city carrying mostly children out of it.

Wooyoung and San flew to Jin.

'We can't calm them down.' San explained, trying to hold still the child in his arms.

Lisa came closer and looked at the crying girl. She put her hand over her forehead and the child calmed down a bit.

'It's just a hysteria attack. But at this point she will either hurt her vocal cords or dehydrate herself... I will take care of them...' she nodded to Jin. 'You have the most serious ones...'

She took the now calm girl, who seemed to be sleepy and looked at the boy. She pointed to the nearest car and Wooyoung sat the boy in it, leaving the rest to the healers.

He joined San, but Namjoon grabbed his shoulder.

'How are they?' he asked, gulping.

A massive bang, as if a building had just been blown up and crumbled to rubble, could be heard in the distance.

Immediately behind it, the sky lit up in a sudden flash of lightning.

'Wilding I guess...' San whispered and grabbed Wooyoung's hand.

They flew away, keeping their flight low in the air to not be caught in the fight over their heads

Ren and Gahyeon appeared near Mins Mension where everybody was fighting.

Soobin was sending arrows one by one at Aecha and Eunseo. Two other Holders with dangerous Sacred Treasures they couldn't use properly. One was an old style revolver spilling bullets with toxic liquid and the second one had a pick, which was moving the ground when it hit it, making it liquid or rocky.

He sends the arrows one by one to shoot down the bullets and to destroy the rocks,

moving backwards.

'I would appreciate help here!' he screamed.

Gahyeon wanted to ran to the house, but Ren stopped her.

'I will kill this bitch!!!' she screamed, tearing up.

'Gahy! Not now!!!'

'SHE. KILLED! MY FATHER!!!!!!!!!' she cried out, through clenched teeth.

Ren cupped her face.

'I know! But it is not the time! They need help!' he said sternly.

'THEY WILL MANAGE!'

'No! They need us! Chinhwa is dangerous! I told you! If she will say *Dragon*, a fucking Dragon will appear!! Do you get it! Even Dami won't deal with her by herself!' he joined their foreheads. 'You don't want to lose more people...'

Gahyeon breathed out, shakily. She nodded.

'Leave them. What happened to them it's their choice...' he whispered. 'Go. Help Soobin. I will help Dami...'

Soobin's opponent with a pick, Eunseo, hit the ground again, and under Soobin's feet a ground started to melt into liquid.

'I'm here!' Gahyeon teleported, grabbed Soobin's waist and they disappeared and appeared behind Eunseo.

The ground hardened and rock blocks started to appear and flew in the air, chasing after them. Gahyeon was throwing them back with telekinesis.

'I will deal with him!' Gahyeon said, wiping her tears away.

Soobin nodded and focused on shooting arrows at the liquid bullets from Aecha and the Holder herself.

Taehyung fought using his swords and powers to push away Nonahi, who was swinging his scythe with a demonic smile on his face.

'Good! Good!' he laughed. 'You know how to play!!'

Taehyung kicked his stomach and sent the fire at him. The other was covered in flames, but the dark wind came and dispersed it in a minute.

Jungkook pierced the shadow with the other scythe with his katana and made it explode with fire.

Nonahi, like a rocket, flew at Taehyung and kicked him, sending him flying to the ground.

Taehyung covered himself in one shield after another when the force pushed him on one of the skyscrapers. It crumbled from the effect of him hitting it.

Jungkook with a scream fell at Nonahi from above. Rising his leg and kicking his arm. Nonahi with the air power was sent inside the river, making everything around splash in water.

For a second it was silent. Jungkook was looking at the dark water, when Nonahi flew from it, spinning the water around himself.

Taehyung bounced back from the crumbling building and reached Nonahi, sending the air, which scattered the water spirals.

Jungkook attacked Inho right after.

They were constantly charging at him. One one was pushed back, the other was already striking back with another hit, another counter.

Driven by rage and taste of revenge in their mouth.

The buildings were crumbling around from the effect of their power. The glass was shuddering in the windows.

But they didn't stop. Every punch, kick, hit of power was sending Nonahi on the ground or further in the sky.

But he was always coming back. As if he was unaffected...

But he was. His power was indeed immeasurable, but he was breathing heavily. He was bleeding. He was bruised and hurt.

And that meant - he could be killed.

'WHOA! I am impressed!' Nonahi laughed, between taking the breaths.

Jungkook and Taehyung were floating near each other looking at him.

'Maybe... you will be able to kill me... ' he laughed and spread his arms. 'In next thousand years...'

Shadows one by one were appearing around him. Images of him with different weapons.

'He is using the souls around...' Jungkook whispered in mind to Taehyung.

'But the shadows are not that strong...' Taehyung replied. 'And the treasures they hold are not from Sealers... I will deal with them...'

'Physically he is weak...' Jungkook nodded. 'I will make him busy...'

******

Dami was breathing heavily. She was pissed. Even with Han's protection she had to dodge more of Chinhwa's traps that it was good for her calmness.

The tiger with sabre claws. The giant robot, she had to freeze. The fucking bunch of bloodthirsty bats, who were entangled in her hair.

The little bombs. Here and there. The sudden well under her feet.

Han was shooting Chinhwa with his gun, but each time the bullet was close to her targets were appearing in front...

Dami froze the ground but Chinhwa whispered:

'Skates.' and started to move elegantly through the ice...

Dami slides to her lifting her spear.

'Guardian.' Chinhwa whispered and a rock golem appeared in front, taking Dami's blow.

But then Ren jumped from nowhere on Chinhwa's back and she, being 150 cm tall, stumbled surprised.

He entangled a stripe around her neck and pulled it, making her choke.

She tried to whisper something, but Ren yelled:

'You want to know how to use power without a Holder?!' he pulled harder, while Dami reached them and stuck her spear inside Chinhwa's foot, immobilising her. The girl started to freeze from the bottom.

'You have to kill him!' Ren yelled. 'That's the secret, you have to kill him with your own power and your own sacred treasure! Sacrifice his soul and stain your own!!!!!!!'

Nabi standing nearby, focusing on Jimin and Yoongi and Minho, turned around.

Chinhwa was trying to grab the stripe from her throat.

But her eyes ran to her soulmate.

Nabi's eyes widened in shock. He looked at the deck of cards in his hand, then at Chinhwa.

He gulped and started to ranaway.

Chinhwa was already frozen to her tight, but seeing her greedy, thoughtful eyes Dami shivered from anger.

'You think about this bitch?!' she punched her face. 'You piece of shit!!!' Another punch.

She was punching her till her face was covered in blood and she lost consciousness from the lack of air.

Ren let her go and Dami froze her completely with blood-colour ice.

'Thanks...' she breathed out to Ren, who nodded in response, gulping in relief.

'I was really afraid she would come up with a dragon...'

'Good she wasn't really creative...' Dami spit with blood on the ground, holding her ribs. She looked around. 'We should help the others...' she grabbed her spear and moved to Yoohyeon.

Minho was guarding Yoongi and Jimin, shooting the cards thrown by Nabi at him till he ran away, probably scared his own soulmate would kill him.

Yoongi and Jimin were fighting with the air soulmates - Jiah and Geyong.

Jimin was again dancing with the rope darts and the air, while Yoongi with the daggers was moving fast, sending the air waves and attacks on fire or hitting Geyong with the lightning from above or through the ground.

Both Jimin and Yoongi were bruised and bleeding. The air soulmates were too fast together. And even Minho's shield didn't managed to stop few of their hits.

Yoongi knew he wouldn't be able to get into direct combat with the Sealer, who could command the air.

Jiah managed to kick Jimin - she knew his abilities now, and he was pushed back. She ran to her soulmate, who stretched his hand to her.

They stood together in front of Yoongi. He lightened up both daggers with Lightning and fire.

'Yoongi...' he heard Jimin's gentle voice in his head. 'On the ground...'

He automatically turned around and saw Jimin running at him at full speed.

'Trust me, hyung...'

Yoongi fell to his knees and pressed his back to the ground. He almost heard Jimin's hard final step, when the other made a spin and flew above his folded body.

There was a second when their eyes met when Jimin's body effortlessly changed its possession in the air, and Yoongi stretched his hands with the daggers.

Jimin grabbed them, not stopping, and landed directly between Jiah and Geyong, knocking them down with his elbows.

He fell on his knee and stuck the daggers into their chests, setting one on fire and the second one paralysing with the lightning till his heart stopped.

He was breathing heavily when he lifted his head at Yoongi, when slowly got up from the ground.

He checked Jimin out.

'That... Was HOT.' he just said and helped him to get up.

Jimin looked at the lifeless bodies.

'You okay?' Yoongi asked.

'Not really...' Jimin gulped.

Yoongi brushed the blood from his lips.

'You are strong. You will deal with this feeling...' he whispered gently. 'I will help...'

Jimin saw so much understanding in his eyes. The sadness, regret, reconciliation with his own demons.

He nodded and smiled sadly.

'I know you will...'

He looked around.

Yoonyeon just cut off Dasol's hand with a mark. And her sabre sparkled with eyes when she froze what's left of her. The sacred treasure disappeared.

Gahyeon reached Eunseo and touched his temple with her fingers. She hit him with telekinesis, making his head explode in pain and pass out.

Soobin aimed a paralysing arrow at Aecha and it finally hit her. Yeonjun just kicked the guy he was fighting with and he hit the wall, bleeding badly.

They all were breathing heavily looking around.

Wooyoung and San flew above them.

'They are above the city centre!!!' They screamed. 'It doesn't look good!'

The rest of the Red String looked at each other.

Dami nodded.

'We are going!'

Gahyeon was contacted by Chanyeol. It was the easiest to contact her with her telepathic powers.

'Minji and Hoseok are asking where are you?'

'We are going to the city centre!' Gahyeon replied.

'Just like them... Be careful.'

********

Minji and Hobi were running through the city covered in dust from crumbled buildings. From time to time the light of different powers was lighting the sky. They saw once or twice figures flying with incredible speed, kicked or pushed back. Just to charge again.

The shadows soldiers started to appear in the air. Circling around Taehyung and Jungkook in the sky.

They both knew something was wrong, when different people - mainly Holders or non-Interdependants - started to scream in pain or pass out.

They reached the city centre when the sounds of fight. Metal clashing over metal. Power hitting the power. Angry, frustrated screams and amused laughter was heard.

It was loud as on New Year's Eve here, and as colourful when the powers was lightening the sky.

First they saw San and Wooyoung dropping Jimin and Yeonjun over the top of the buildings.

Then Gahyeon teleported Dami and Yoongi. And Ren brought Han and Minho. Yoeonjun holding Soobin using the speed of light appeared on the street a few seconds after.

Another building was destroyed and Minji threw the lightballs over their heads to protect them from falling pieces.

They all lifted their heads to look at the aerial battle.

Thinking how they could help...

Not knowing - they just destroyed everything.

******

**(Music tip: Caradhras - Nick Phoenix, Two steps from hell)**

Taehyung was dealing with shadows that were appearing constantly. But they were getting weaker and weaker.

He realised that the further the people's souls were, the weaker Nonahi's effect on them was.

So even if he was surrounded he was dealing with them one by one. Sending the sacred treasures hidden in every human being back to them when the Shadow-Holders were destroyed. Nonahi could use even souls, who didn't have the gift of *Eadar-eisimeleach*. Moulding them into weapons...

Jungkook was a warrior. Best fighter. Nobody could stand against him in swordsmanship. Neither could Nonahi. His right thigh was bleeding. His left arm was harmed too.

But his power was unwavering.

Jungkook could easily win with him if Nonahi wasn't so powerful, that each movement of his power, demanding all Jungkook's strength just to withstand it and counter it back.

Nonahi, breathing heavily, threw his head back and laughed out loud.

'You are doing pretty good, guys... I have to admit!'

His sweaty face and bloody lips, Jungkook managed to punch a few times, spread in smile.

'But, oh well... I guess it's the final party...' he ironically spread his arms and his eyes darkened. 'Thank you for the entertainment tho...'

'Your phantoms are getting weaker while the souls are getting further! You won't be able to fight for long! And we will keep going till dawn!' Taehyung spit and cut through the last shadow.

'You are right...' Nonahi agreed amused, but the malicious smirk on his face was worrying Jungkook. He was plotting something. 'Or more like... you WOULD be right...' he added. 'If they wouldn't be here...'

Nonahi snapped his fingers and seven shadows were created flying in different

directions. First went through Minji's body, taking out the seven light balls from inside her. She passed on the ground and Hoseok fell to his knees screaming loudly.

Second shadows appeared after Dami, reaching inside her and taking out the spear. She dropped her own spear on the ground and fell on her back, looking at the sky with unseeing, wide-opened eyes.

Yoohyeon screaming in pain from her soulmate's soul and crying, hit the ground.

Soobin was running through her when the same happened to him, affecting Yeonjun.

The same happened to Minho, Ren and Wooyoung.

One by one Six Holders were down and their Sealers - not being able to stand the pain of their partners - together with them.

Yoongi managed to dodge the shadow and set it on fire.

But then he felt the pain inside when Jimin screamed. He looked around and saw Nabi - the card holder who ran away - throwing a card at him.

'NOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!!!' Jungkook screamed, he flew down, kicking Nabi's face and threw him on the nearest wall.

Nonahi laughed louder and looked at Taehyung.

'I really hate Holders...' he said. 'You are like walking chains...' he shook his head. He looked at Sealers - crying and screaming in despair. 'And honestly seeing Sealers desperate like that... just reminds me of how stupid they are... They could be free. But they willingly... choose... prison....'

Another shadow appeared and this time Yoongi - being in pain - didn't manage to avoid him.

Seven shadows with their friends' powers stood behind Nonahi.

He lightly moved his fingers and the scythe he was fighting with all this time was exchanged with Dami's spear.

'As you already predicted... the closer the souls are... the stronger the shadows get...' he said slowly.

Jungkook was kneeling next to his father not knowing what to do. All his family was lying unconscious or in excruciating pain around him.

Everything became dark in front of his eyes. All Interdependants around fell the ground trembling.

Jungkook looked at the sky and an amused, lazy, absolutely relaxed Na Inho.

'TAEHYUNG!!' he screamed in fury.

'AAAAAY!!' Taehyung replied in confirmation and charged at Nonahi covered in the mixture of their powers.

Jungkook moved his wings and soar to the sky, cutting through the air. Cutting through shadows. They had to be fast. They didn't know how long the rest would last.

And how long they themselves would fight against not just Nonahi but the strongest powers they knew for years.

This time they charged at him together from both sides, dealing with shadows one after another on their way. But they were repairing again, holding the daggers, the spear, protected by the vambrace, shooting arrows of light, pulling them down with the gravity light.

Nonahi was changing the weapons with the move of his wrist to counter their attacks. Taehyung used the voice power, screaming "*COME AT ME*!" and the shadows were lured out, running in his direction clearing the path directly to Inho for Jungkook.

Jungkook kicked Inho in the abdomen, raising his sword and letting it fall at the other's hand but Nonahi blocked it with Yoongi's daggers.

A disgusting smirk appeared on his face.

'Have you said *goodbye*?' he asked.

Jungkook's eyes widened.

He turned his head fast and saw Taehyung surrounded by seven shadows, fighting fiercely. An arrow stuck in his calf and the other one was already pointed at his back, while he was fighting against the other shadows, cutting with his sword. Burning, freezing, pushing them back.

'No...' Jungkook whispered and his heart stopped for a second. He pressed his feet to Inho's chest to jumped to his husband.

But when he turned around he at once saw that the spear from one of the shadows disappeared and daggers appeared there. At the same time he felt his body get pierced.

He looked down at the tip of the ice spear that was sticking from inside his chest.

'And what now... Chosen One?' Nonahi whispered near his ear.

Jungkook felt the disgusting presence glueing itself to his back.

The short, sharp breaths were all he could take through his pierced lungs.

He started to suffocate.

His mouth was filled with blood... his eyelashes flattered. His eyesight got blurry.

The red drops started to trail down from the corner of his mouth.

He was losing and regaining the sharpness of his vision.

He heard Taehyung's shocked, enraged, pained scream.

He felt the furious explosion of his power, which swallowed the shadows with flames, drowned them with water, dispersed them inside the light.

Taehyung's wings moved fast when he was flying to him...

Jungkook had to think fast.

He was dying... the Sacred Treasure, which Taehyung was holding, will disappear together with him...

'You really thought even for a second... You can beat me?' Nonahi giggled. 'But it was fun... for real. Thank you...'

The cold laughter filled the air. He looked at Taehyung who stopped not much away in the air, not knowing what to do. Not being able to comprehend what his eyes were telling him.

He was shivering. Freezing inside.

'LOOK!!' Nonahi screamed at Jungkook. 'Look what you choose!!!' he pressed the spear deeper. 'You could've the power like me!! But you choose the mortal life and the scraps!!!'

Taehyung was looking for a solution... How to get Jungkook back... How to save him...

Nonahi turned his eyes to Taehyung.

'That's what I like the most... The pain. The despair in your eyes. The heartbreak. The suffocating feeling... I will get bored with it. Looking at the pain when I kill

one of you... When I don't need to fear anything...'

Jungkook raised his eyes at Taehyung. He spoke in his mind.

*You cannot save me...*

*What are you talking about...*

*Listen to me... Tae! Listen... You cannot save me... but you can save them and send him back to hell...*

*Jungkook...*

*Do... it... You will reach him till he is busy talking...*

*No...*

*Reach him through me...*

Taehyung looked at the spear sticking out from Jungkook's chest. If he will give him another wound...

No. He couldn't.

Not the one he always protected.

Not his Koo.

Not his friend. Soulmate. Lover.

Husband...

*You know I am right... He won't suspect an attack from the front...*

Nonahi laughed when tears ran down from Taehyung's eyes.

'THAT'S IT!!! THAT'S THE VIEW!!!!!'

*Come on Angel... You can do it... - Jungkook whispered gently. - At least give us the freedom in our next life...*

Taehyung gulped, clenched his teeth and gripped the sword harder.

*I am sorry... Tae... for the separation syndrome...*

Jungkook was losing consciousness.

Another sorry. He will fucking made it a forbidden word, Taehyung gulped his

tears. His body shook in shock.

'AAAAAAAAAAA!!!!'

With a scream he raised his sword and didn't let himself be disturbed by the maniacal laugh.

'Come on!! I will take you down in front of his eyes, before he will let out his last breath!!!'

Taehyung didn't even glance sideways. He was coming to the eyes he knew.

The gaze that was his anchor.

Surrounded by laughter, Taehyung reached, entangled in the air, bodies.

The tip of his sword touched Jungkook's collarbone. Went into a soft flash, making him spit with blood. Pierced through his back and reached the heart of the demon.

Jungkook with the last crumbs of his strenght and will, lifted his hand and embraced Taehyung's wrist. He sent his whole power through the Sacred Treasure. Combining their full power, which sunk inside Nonahi's body.

Nonahi blinked in surprise. He smiled as if he won either way.

'Told you... not a Sealer in chains can win with me...' he choked out.

He let go of Jungkook... He let go of the spear that he was holding...

He stepped back in the air.

'It's not chains.' Jungkook mumbled with closed eyes. 'It's a choice...'

It was always a choice. Whenever a Holder was coming closer. He was asking to be let in. Not the other way around. He wasn't closing his Sealer. He was freeing him... so his soul could soar.

The rays of powers were one by one coming out from Nonahi's body.

He started to scream.

But when one of the rays pierced his hands a shadow in the figure of a woman appeared. She was a pure fury. She started to tear him apart one by one. Until he was changed into nothing. Exploding with darkness and covering everything with a black night.

Jungkook felt a slow gentle movement of the wings... His own were laying motionlessly on his back.

Felt the arm circled around his waist protectively...

Felt the tears on his neck...

He felt when Taehyung took out the sword and let the sacred treasure fall to the ground.

*So it's the end...* He thought.

Didn't seem bad tho... Dying in Taehyung's arms...

So warm... like falling asleep...

But he wanted to be spoiled... One more time...

'Taehyung...' he whispered, he felt more blood inside his mouth... making him choke.

His hand tried to embrace Taehyung's shaking back. His husband's whole body was trembling with a terrible cry.

Jungkook opened his eyes.

His eyes widened.

'W-what...?'

Taehyung was holding him close. Embracing him tightly...

Because... the spear was going through his chest too.

He purposely aimed at Jungkook's collarbone to pierced himself with the same spear that was stuck inside his lover's body.

'W-what... h-have you... d-done?' Jungkook choked out and salty tears escaped from his eyes.

Taehyung sobs stopped. He took a deep breath. His wings were moving slower and slower.

He raised his head from Jungkook's shoulder and looked at him calmly.

He connected their foreheads.

'You really thought I would let you go somewhere I could not follow?'

Jungkook's eyes were filled with tears but he smiled, when he slowly brushed his nose and lips over Taehyung's, colouring them with blood.

Dami's spear disappeared from their chests, probably because the Holders were released from under Nonahi's power.

All the powers, all the sacred treasures were released, showering everything with colourful rain. Getting back to the souls they belonged to.

Jungkook smiled slightly.

It looks almost like fireworks...

His eyes closed, being too heavy.

'See you soon... ' he whispered, letting himself be filled with all the love he had inside for this one man, who could handle him.

Letting his soulmate felt all of the adoration, tenderness, undying, neverchanging - love.

Feeling the same feelings were filling him from his toes to his head.

The moment the spear disappeared from their chests, the blood started to overflow.

Taehyung didn't have enough strength to use his wings anymore...

So he embraced Jungkook's numb, still warm body with them and let them fall.

---

8490 words.

One heartbreak.

BlairWitch91

# Chapter 65: Legends of Legendary Heroes

**17th of November 2077 - 6 years later - Daegu**

Yoongi and Jimin were standing in the graveyard.

Two red roses were placed on the cold stone. Two names were engraved on one tomb. They didn't want to separate them...

Jimin with a match lightened the white candle inside the lantern on it.

'We will visit soon again...' he whispered, getting up from his knees.

Yoongi combined his fingers with him, when they looked at the names engraved on the tomb.

'We should get going...' Yoongi said and Jimin nodded.

They got back to the car in a heavy, hurtful silence.

They missed Namjoon, Hoseok, Minji and Jin... Taehyung and Jungkook 's parents moved abroad, not being able to stay around all their children's friends.

Jimin got a text and smiled.

'Better hurry up or we won't ever find the care for our sons again... You know Dami and Yoohyeon, Minho and Han already said that there is no money we could pay them so they will agree...'

'They definitely have your genes...' Yoongi sighed. 'Well, good Yeonjun and Soobin can't say "no" to you...'

'And good Woosan are big children that are willing to play with small children...' Jimin giggled.

Their three year old son Min Taegguk (little devil) and his little brother - two year old Min Jaehyun (little crybaby), were hard to deal with, when their appa or dad weren't around...

They named their children after people they cherished the most...

To heal the wounds they've left and commemorate the joy they brought to their lives.

Evening Daegu was calm. The restoration of the city was still in process after years... They moved here to rebuild their lives. To rebuild the city and bring it to

its old glory.

They parked in the garage beside Mins' Mension and slowly walked to the house.

Yoongi opened the door, informing loudly: *We are back!!*

Little tornado instantly stormed the living room to reach his appa's knees.

Yoongi lifted him.

'I hope you were behaving, Taeggukie...' he said sternly.

'Pure angel...' Ren's sarcastic voice was heard from the kitchen doors.

Ren was Dami's right hand. And Dami took Minji's place in MOI. He just got back from work.

Jimin raised his eyes at the person leaning on the kitchen door frame. He was in a black uniform....

The red bracelet was entangled on his wrist. They all still were wearing them....

But this uniform...

Jimin stepped back... Gulped.

*Battlefield.*

*Chaos.*

*Blood.*

*Darkness.*

*Death bodies...*

Taegguk cupped Yoongi's face and made him forcefully look at him.

'Uncle promise you will tell us the legend!' he whined.

'What legend?' Yoongi mumbled.

'Legend of Legendary Heroes!' the little boy smiled brightly.

Yoongi lifted his stern gaze at Ren. The other instantly looked down.

'Oh really?'

He was thankfully saved by his wife.

'I will say it now... Three children at once is too much...' Gahyeon's tired voice, coming from the kitchen, exclaimed. She came to the living room with her small 5-month bump.

She was sucking her thumb.

'Is it kicking?' Yoongi asked, worried.

'Huh?! I meant him!' she pointed at Ren with her thumb which was bleeding.

'You cut yourself?!' Ren panicked and grabbed her wrist gently.

Jimin looked at the red drops covering Gahyeon's finger and his head spinned.

*Blood.*

*More blood.*

*Everything was covered in the red liquid.*

*Cold bodies.*

*Bodies without heartbeat...*

*His hands covered in blood.*

*Screams.*

Yoongi glanced at Jimin when he stumbled back.

'Dad?' Jaehyun took Jimin's hand, who was deadly cold.

Jimin's eyes were running from one photograph to the other. The wedding photos without two faces are so dear. His sons on the pictures without their uncles...

No. No.

NO!

It was all wrong...

It was wrong.

WRONG!!!!!!

Yoongi turned to him but he was too late to catch him before he passed out.

'JIMIN!!!!'

**17th of November 2071, currently, Daegu**

**(Music tip: *Legends Never Die (Remix)* by League of Legends, Alan Walker, Against The Current, Mako)**

The darkness was everywhere. It was surrounding them. It was in them...

They needed light...

They needed to move...

Soobin groaned and with a body, still shivering from the aftermath of the pain. He turned himself on his back. He choked on the dust from the building, he felt the bow in his hand and lifted it above his head. His fingers were shivering when he tightened the bow string with two arrows. He aimed at the sky. When through the pain he still saw two angels.

He released and let them spread the light through the darkness.

Two entangled bodies were floating in the sky. The sword fell down right after they started to fall.

'YEONJUN!!!!' he screamed.

Yoongi lifted himself from the ground on his hands and knees, spitting with blood and dust, coughing.

Two arrows were going into the sky, they passed two figures.

'Go...' he heard a whisper.

He looked to his side and saw Hoseok, whose lower half of the body, was clung to by debris. Jungkook's father moved his fingers and a sparkling light came out of them...

'Go... Please...'

Yoongi hit the ground with his fist and screaming with determination he picked himself up.

'DAMI!!!!!' he screamed.

San looked at two bodies that were falling from the sky, getting the speed.

They would crush over the land in no time...

Seeing how the fall made them apart made him just more determined. He raised up and jumped into the air.

His fly was uneven, shaken. But he had just one aim.

He saw Yoonig lifted by the gravity power, was going alongside him.

Dami was lying on her back breathing heavily. Grabbed her spear and supporting her body on it, she stuck it to the ground, pressing her forehead to the handle.

'YOO!!!' she called her soulmate.

'O-on i-it!!' Yoohyeon choked out.

Yoongi caught Taehyung under his armpits.

At the same time he saw San grabbing Jungkook, making him fall slower.

Under his teeth a slide from ice made by Dami was created.

Under San's feet Yoohyeon made the same creation.

Securing the body in his arms, he hit the slide and went down it with an enormous speed.

At the same time they caught the bodies, Yeonjun hit his hands on the ground and the pillars of light were appearing around, one after another. Raising from dirty, dusty streets, between buildings, hitting the sky. Dispersing the darkness.

Chasing away the night.

Gahyeon heard quiet groaning and cry from nearby and on her knees she, crawled through the rubble to the place. She moved a few of them and saw Jimin.

He was in some kind of delirium.

Sweating. Whispering. Crying.

His body was wiggling to all sides.

She saw a card on his chest.

A card with a sleeping person closed inside the prison. Being attacked by nightmares. She grabbed it and threw it away. She patted his cheeks.

'JIMIN!' she called out.

Jimin's eyelashes flattered.

...min!!

Tae... Kook...

Jim...!

JIMIN!!

He was constantly receiving light pats on his cheeks.

He opened his eyes to see Gahyeon hovering over him.

'Get up!!' she cried out.

Minho and Han were waiting on the bottom of the slides to catch the bodies. Together with two others they secured the ground, who was instantly soaked with blood.

Yoongi put Taehyung's body on the ground, and San laid down Jungkook nearby.

'REN! WOOYOUNG!' bring his parents!!!' he screamed, when he spread the uniform and saw the wound in the middle of the chest. Few centimetres under the heart.

'He is not breathing!!!' Han yelled, checking Jungkook.

Neither was Taehyung.

San tore out his shirt and started to press it to the wound over Jungkook's collarbone, while Han started to perform CPR.

Minho was doing the same with Taehyung, breathing the air inside his lungs.

Yoongi pressed his hands to Taehyung's chest and started to press. More blood came out from the wound.

'Fuck!!!' he cursed, but didn't stop. 'COME ONE!! TAEHYUNG!!!! FIGHT!!!'

Gahyeon appeared near holding Jimin's hand. She had twisted ankle and fell down on the ground instantly, when, pale as the sheet Jimin, fell on his knees, beside Jungkook and helped Han.

Jimin started to press rhythmically on Jungkook's chest, counting in his head.

'KOOKIE! DON'T DO THIS TO ME!!!' he yelled, without stopping.

In the meantime Han tried to stop the bleeding over his stomach, between giving him the air.

Yoohyeon and Dami surrounded them with the air wall to slow down the bleeding to some point.

'MOVE!!' They heard a roar and Namjoon appeared together with Jin, holding Ren's hands.

He looked between the bodies and fell near Jungkook.

'Shock him!' he screamed at Jimin.

'What?!'

'Do it!! NOW!!!' he screamed in fury.

Jin dropped near Taehyung, while Yoongi didn't stop putting the pressure over his chest. He pressed his ear to Taehyung's mouth, while his bandages started to get entangled around Taehyung's chest and even went in and out from inside, through

the wound.

He lifted his hand to Yoongi.

'Stop' he whispered. 'He is breathing....'

Yoongi raised his hands, covered in blood, breathing heavily.

Wooyoung dropped from the sky with Lisa in his arms.

A second later Ren appeared again with Bogum.

Four healers. Two bodies.

'AGAIN!!!' Namjoon screamed at Jimin. 'Harder!'

Jimin pressed his hands to Jungkook's chest and shocked him with electricity.

Jungkook's body arched up.

'GIVE THEM SPACE! Help others!' Dami screamed.

Minho, Han, San and Wooyoung instantly started to check over other members. They ran to Minji and Hoseok to help them and release them from the remaining pieces of buildings.

'ONCE MORE!' Namjoon screamed, pressing his hands to Jungkook's stomach, while Jimin pressed them to his chest.

He shocked the unconscious body again.

Bogum kneeled next to Jimin and pressed his hands Jungkook's sides, letting his power sink over his lungs. While Namjoon was strengthening his son's heart.

'WE GOT HIM!!' Namjoon screamed and Jin breathed out with relief, while his fingers were buried inside the wound.

Lisa was working alongside him, strengthening the tissues and cells to work faster inside Taehyung's body.

'We will need blood!!!' Jin screamed.

'Take mine. O Rh-.' Ren said, coming closer.

'I am fine too...' Gahyeon breathed out. 'AB RH-...'

'Same as Taehyung's... Go to Jungkook...' Jin said to Ren. 'He will need more. Jimin and Hoseok can give him too.

'How do we transfer it?' Lisa asked. 'There is no equipment here...'

'San!!! Bring Dragon here!!!' Namjoon screamed but before San could fly, a car at full speed entered the area.

Dragon, Baekhyun, Hwasa and Chanyeol jumped out of it.

'We need equipment!!' Jin said fast. 'For now IV's, needles... everything to transfusion.'

Dragon checked his phone and looked for the photo with the medical equipment, looking at it he started to create the copy with his fingers.

Lisa and Bogum ran to him and took the IV's fast. They connected Ren and Jungkook directly and the same happened to Gahyeon and Taehyung.

'Not too much...' Jin warned, still focused. 'Lot of people here can change you...' he whispered.

Dragon was creating one thing after another.

Hwasa started to paint bigger and less complicated things... Like the stretches. Bandages.

Baekhyun and Chanyeol gathered everyone and started to check their state.

Baekhyun called Yongguk to bring the medical team here.

Yoongi sat heavily on the ground, looking at his bloody hands and Taehyung's face.

Jimin, too weak from relief, stepped back from Jungkook's body. The tears were making small rivers through the dust on his face. He sat near Yoongi.

And started to whisper under his nose the blessing from their wedding: *Circle us Fate... Keep love within, keep hatred out... Keep joy within...*

Yoongi took his hand and squeezed it, mixing together Jungkook and Taehyung's blood on their hands.

*...May they stand in the circle with us, today and always...*

Lisa and Bogum were constantly changing the people, who were giving blood to restore the one Jungkook and Taehyung lost. They were fortunate to have so many people with Jungkook's blood type and so many that could give theirs to Taehyung.

In between they were supporting Jin and Namjoon.

The ambulances from Busan came an hour later, during which Jin and Namjoon were fighting over their boys' lives.

Namjoon got in the first one with Jungkook and Jin in the second one with Taehyung.

Baekhyun and Chanyeol carried Hoseok, whose legs were broken because the rubble fell on him, and put him on the stretchers. Minho and Han carried Minji, who was unconscious, but didn't seem to have any visible wounds.

Lisa checked on her and said her life was not at risk, so Dragon and Hwasa took them inside the cars and drove with them to the same hospital where the boys were taken.

The young souls, who went through so much, were sitting on the ground here and there. Beside their soulmates and friends.

Tired. Exhausted.

With the fear still lingering inside their veins.

Gahyeon looked at Yoongi. She didn't know how to tell him the truth. She didn't want to do it right now... So she just hid her face inside Ren's arm and let the tears fall.

Baekhyun crouched down near Yoongi and Jimin. He ruffled Yoongi's hair and wiped Jimin's tears with his sleeve.

'It's over.' he whispered.

Yongguk took Ryu to the hospital. The other boy - Taeil - disappeared somewhere inside the chaos.

'Where is he?' Ryu whispered when they were driving. He barely could move after being tied up most of the time in his imprisonment.

'Mins boy? He walked away. I guess inside the city...'

'Will he come back?'

'Do you know him?'

'I don't know.... He seemed... familiar.' Ryu replied weekly.

'Your mother is flying from Seoul to Busan in a helicopter... She will be here soon...' Yongguk said gently.

'I missed her...' Ryu was a grown up 29 year old guy. Yet he felt like a little boy now. 'Good you are here, dad...' And fell asleep pressing his temple to the glass.

And for the first time since he disappeared, Yongguk's lips twisted and tears rolled down his face.

**18th of November 2071, Busan**

One by one the members of the Red String were taken to the hospital. Even the ones, who were okay, were checked thoughtfully, cause as soon as Minji regained her consciousness she literally terrorised all the doctors in Busan Hospital.

Gahyeon had her ankle twisted.

Wooyong relegated his shoulder.

All of them had smaller or bigger cuts and wounds, but mainly they were just bruised and tired.

Red String refused to go to Uljin until they all could go together. So Yongguk booked a small hotel for them.

Ryu had to stay in the hospital. They told him the physiotherapy will be necessary for him.

Hoseok woke up in one of the hospital rooms. He couldn't move his legs.

He looked at the clock on the wall.

It was after 3 am.

Jin was hovering over his legs.

'Boys?' Hoseok choked out.

'They will live...' Jin whispered with a shaky voice.

Hoseok teared up and asked further:

'Minji?'

'Making hell in the corridors...'

'Red String?'

'Young and kicking...'

'The rest?'

'All intact.'

Hoseok squinted his eyes looking carefully at Jin, who was cutting the cast on his legs. He could see his grey face. He was exhausted and deadly tired. He barely could use powers...

'D-don't...' Hobi whispered. 'You did enough...'

'Shut up.' Jin said sternly. 'I don't trust they did it well!'

'It can wait... Jinnie...'

'You are a dancer. You need your legs!'

'Jin...' Hoseok gulped.

Jin cupped Hoseok's face, his eyes teared up.

'You n-need to teach our grandchildren how to dance!' he choked out. 'You need to spoil them and run after those little devils, okay? I won't! I am too handsome.'

Hoseok sniffed and cried out.

'Will they be really okay?' he asked shakily.

'Y-yeah...' Jin pressed his forehead to his best friend's forehead. 'They are safe... They are finally safe....'

He straightened up and wiped his snort.

'So, shut up and let me heal you, so you can go and see them!'

Minji and Namjoon were sitting on two chairs, placed between two beds. They were holding their sons hands, carefully not moving the IV's attached to them.

Taehyung's Sword was placed neatle near the bedside table.

'How bad is it?' Minji asked.

'It was really bad...' Namjoon whispered. 'Really, really bad... We practically lost them Minji... Just that Red String gets them back for us... If they would fall from that hight as San described. If Yoongi wouldn't do a heart massage for Taehyung so fast... If Jimin wouldn't be there to give Jungkook the shocks... It was seconds...'

Minji put her head on Namjoon's shoulder, sniffing.

'When will they wake up?'

'Three-four days I guess... then we will check if they are absolutely fine. And take them home...'

Minji nodded, caressing Jungkook's fingers with her thumb.

'Yeah... we should finally go home, Joonie...'

'Jungkook has to finish university...' he agreed and smiled lightly.

'Taehyung needs to open his studio...'

'Should we allow them to have one of the houses?' he frowned.

'Should we spoil them like that?' Minji asked.

'When were we ever not? But you will talk about this with Jin...' Namjoon giggled and Minji joined him when their laughs changed into quiet sobs of relief.

**20th of November 2071, Busan**

Jin rubbing his eyes was going through the corridor, drinking disgusting hospital coffee. The four of them were changing in the boys hospital room even when all the checkups were going well. But they didn't want to risk anything... So always two people were in their room.

He left Jimin sleeping on the chair in the room to get a coffee, when he heard the noise of things falling on the floor and Jimin's surprised scream.

Jin ran inside the room, and saw Jimin who fell from the chair and tried to get up,

screaming:

'Taehyung?!'

Taehyung rolled over the bed and was laying on the floor. He tried to get up and crawled to the second bed...

'Tae?!' Jin ran to him and to his surprise his son had still closed eyes. Sleeping... 'Ugh!!!' he growled, when he saw the IV's were torn out from his arms. And Taehyung still wanted to move closer to Jungkook's bed. 'YOU IDIOT!!!' Jin hissed. 'Can't you wait for two more days!?!'

He helped Taehyung to get up, supporting his weight with his body. He looked at still shocked Jimin, above Taehyung's shoulder.

He sighed heavily and tsked his tongue.

'Join their beds...' he said, giving up.

For the first time since days on Jimin's mouth a wide smile appeared.

'Oh!! They will be healthy and horny in no time!' he clapped his hands and eagerly started to move everything to be able to join the beds.

Jin looked at him, not amused.

'Don't taste my patience...'

He put Taehyung, with the help of Jimin, back on the bed.

He attached IV'S to his arm again and put on bandaids. He tiredly fell on the chair and closed his eyes right after.

'Wake me up if something happens again...'

Jimin with a soft smile was looking at his two cuties on the bed. He peeked at Jin and moved a bit to join their hands in the middle. He leaned to Taehyung's ear and whispered:

'Jungkook is okay, Tae... Rest.'

He smirked when the slow movement of the hand caught his attention.

Jungkook's fingers were sliding through Taehyung's palm. Caressing. Searing, Until they found their place between Taehyung's fingers, squeezed them and got back to sleep.

**********

*Jungkook and Taehyung opened their eyes. They were surrounded by all the colours of the world. Standing in front of each other. Taehyung in a red shirt and Jungkook in a blue one. The jade light was surrounding them.*

*The moon and the sun were high in the sky. Red string leading from Taehyung's pinky to Jungkook's pinky was floating gently in the air.*

*Two golden rings were shrinking on their fingers.*

*They were in the soulmates' dimension.*

*They looked around.*

*'What are we doing here?' Taehyung asked.*

*'I don't know. I didn't open it...' Jungkook said, frowning.*

*'Wait... Are we dead?!' Taehyung asked in panic.*

*'You are not.' An ethereal voice spoke.*

*They turned around to see three women materialising themselves from the air.*

*'We called you here.' the tallest one said.*

*Norns - the daughters of destiny.*

*'Why?' Jungkook asked.*

*The youngest smiled at them.*

*'To thank you...' she whispered. 'For fixing our mistakes...'*

*Three goddesses bowed to them deeply.*

*'Was it your doing? We survived?' Taehyung asked.*

*The middle sister shook her head. She was holding the thread of their lifetime, which she spun.*

*'Destiny doesn't work like that...' she said. 'There could be millions of outcomes. In some you won with him without being wounded. In some you died... Every choice, and every action of the people of that day... created the aftermath... Millisecond of hesitation. Or*

*the lack of it. Determination. Bonds... Everything leads you to the here and now.'*

*'Red String doesn't connect just soulmates...' the youngest said. 'It lead you to meet the people you have to meet to become who you are...' she moved her hand and dozens of red strings came out of Jungkook and Taehyung's chest. Entangling together, going in all directions. Spreading to the dimension.*

*They could feel... They could recognize all their family and friends by the single red strings... Or more like the feelings they were moving inside them.*

*'For all that you have done for us... For all the suffering you went through... do you have any request?' the oldest asked.*

*'If we are alive. And our family is alive... We don't. 'Taehyung said, grabbing Jungkook's hand.*

*'Yeah... we will manage by ourselves...' Jungkook smiled.*

*Norns seemed to be genuinely surprised. They bowed again.*

*'As you wish...' they started to turn when something clicked inside Jungkook's mind.*

*'Actually...' he stopped them. The youngest smiled at him encouragingly. He pulled Taehyung to them and whispered something.*

*All three Norns frowned.*

*'It's impossible!' the eldest snapped.*

*Jungkook lifted his eyebrow.*

*'Just like fighting for over a thousand years with an overpowered demon you created!' he bit back.*

*The sister had the audacity to blush.*

*'We will see what we can do...' the middle one said reluctantly and they disappeared.*

*Jungkook peeked at Taehyung.*

*'Ready to wake up?' he asked.*

*Taehyung pulled him by his waist.*

*'Maybe in a day...' he purred and pressed his lips to his husband in a sweet kiss.*

**25th of November 2071, Uljin**

Jungkook and Taehyung woke up on 21st of November 2071. They were weak and falling asleep easily but they were waking up whenever someone was visiting them.

Their room was filled with flowers. Soft toys and balloons.

After a lot of cries and laughs and hugs.

After Jin, Namjoon and hundreds of doctors confirmed their state was fine, their parents took them back to Uljin.

All of them started to pack. They wanted to go back to Seoul. And of course they were taking Daegu's bunch with them.

Yoongi was sitting frozen on his bed, while Gahyeon, with a shivering voice, supported by Ren, told him what Taeil confessed.

He was too shocked to even move.

There was a feeling of betrayal and anger in him. The sadness and regret that surfaced after so many years.

They didn't know what happened to Taeil, Chorong and Kyung and he wasn't going to waste more time on them.

He was going to start his new life. With Jimin, his friends and family.

And freedom he always craved for.

So he just shortly hugged her sister and told her to let go and live.

But when he was left alone, letting Ren take care of her, he curled up in bed and let all the feelings from 6 years ago come back to him.

He missed his father.

He always missed him...

Back then... Jimin saved him.

Now... he felt a small body embracing him from behind. Pressed to his back. Giving him warm.

'Shhh...' Jimin whispered. He pressed a kiss on his hair. Ear. Neck. 'I'am here...'

So he grabbed the small hand he adored so much and held it like an anchor.

Few hours later he was snatched from his sleep, when Gahyeon in panic ran inside his room.

He wanted to snapped at her at once, but she screamed:

'Mom disappeared!!!'

He jumped off the bed and Jimin right after him.

'WHAT?!'

'She is not in her room!' We are looking for her everywhere!!'

They ran to the corridor. They were looking through the floors when San screamed from the ground floor:

'Hey!! She is in the garden!!!'

'What is she doing there!' Yoongi, feeling the overwhelming relief, ran downstairs.

Gahyeon and the rest followed him to the garden.

Handon indeed was standing there.

But she wasn't alone...

She was standing between Jungkook and Taehyung, who joined their hands, closing her inside the circle.

They were embraced by the dark blue power.

Handong's hair was floating in the air. She was standing with closed eyes.

The cold rain started to fall down, but she was smiling.

When the waves of power settled and the short, unexpected rain stopped to fall, on Handong's fingers were then water-blue rings.

With tears in her eyes she slowly turned to Yoongi and Gahyeon. Her eyes were fully conscious and sparkling without the dull tone with them.

'Yoonie... Gahy...' she chuckled through tears. 'Babies... I am so sorry...' she said fluently.

Gahyeon gulped and ran to her. She embraced her tightly, rocking her in her arms.

'You were so brave my girl...' she whispered.

Yoongi was frozen. He looked at Taehyung and Jungkook questioningly.

'Every Holder has a sacred treasure inside him too....' Jungkook said. 'We can't bring back your father...' he said sadly.

'But asked Norns to give your mother a piece of him, so she could feel his soul around...' Taehyung continued.

'She will still get sad and miss him.' Jungkook explained. 'Just like you... She will still get hurt and happy from memories...'

'But she won't be closed inside her mind and sadness anymore...' Taehyung smiled.

Handong walked to her son who was still stuck in his place. The paralyzed by fear that it was just a dream. Handong embraced him.

'Your dad is proud of you.' she said. 'He will wait for me. But I am here to remind you daily... how much we both love you...'

And after crying from pain and suffering for a loss, Min Yoongi cried again on this day.

From gratefulness and relief.

Cuddling to his mom.

**12th of March 2072, Seoul**

They all got back to Seoul. They had to pick up and restore their lives. Jungkook returned to Uni at the beginning of March joined by... his hyung - Min Yoongi.

Namjoon, Minji and Yongguk had their hands full of work. The work they enjoyed this time. Working on rightful laws. Bringing back Daegu to Korea.

There were also people they had to close in prisons, so MOI was pretty busy.

The government was rather open this time to the dialogue after they saw the force Interdependants held.

It was better to be on their good side...

For the last four months Jungkook and Taehyung were mainly regaining strength. They were forbidden to have tough exercise but the physiotherapy was a must. Especially Jungkook's shoulder.

It's not like they were complaining about it... Being spoiled by parents. Mainly watching movies in bed wasn't a bad thing to do at the beginning.

But after a while they got bored so they had to come up with a calm entertainment.

Yes. They could kiss, but not other things...

Jin said they had to be careful as their hearts may have been fixed and working, but were still fragile.

They allowed boys to use their power only once since November. To wipe the marks from Chinhwa, Nabi, Dasol and other free Holder, who weren't killed in Daegu.

So to let go of the past and dark times they started a project.

Sitting in bed they were recollecting all their past lives.

Taehyung was writing them down with details and Jungkook was adorning them with sketches of the people who went through hell like them, but weren't as lucky... and well skillful... as them.

After three months they could close this chapter.

Taehyung put the cup with hot choco near Jungkook's hand on the desk.

'Have you finished?' he asked.

'Yeah... The cover is done... We can print it...' he lifted his eyes and smiled at his husband.

Jungkook sipped his choco and Taehyung bent right after to kiss him.

He licked the choco taste from his lips.

'Taste...' he purred.

'Mhm... Want to see?' Jungkook muttered in response.

'Your tummy or the cover?'

'Hard question...' Jungkook said thoughtfully.

'If your tummy... then yes.' Taehyung moved his fingers like a magician and a piercing appeared between them.

'I have to put it in...'

'You have to put it in - indeed...' Jungkook smirked.

'Dad said we are restricted till the end of March...' Taehyung pouted and Jungkook sulked right after.

They both sighed heavily at the same moment.

'Okay! Show me the cover...' Taehyung said, stroking Jungkook's nape.

Jungkook pressed a few buttons and displayed the picture.

The cover of the story they wrote together. The cover of the stories their souls went through...

The cover of the book which was entitled:

***Legends of Legendary Heroes***

---

4771 words....

And this cover is actually a card from Tarots deck, except the title...

We are heading the end soon...

Jeezeee.... 😩😩😩😩😩

BlairWitch91❤

# Chapter 66: Renaissance

**April 2072, Seoul**

Taehyung walked inside the library and smiled at the old librarian he knew from his university years.

'Hello, I am looking for my husband...'

She blinked surprised. She checked him out.

'One of the professors?' she asked suspiciously.

'Definitely he is not a professor...' Taehyung chuckled.

'I could be - if I would want.' he heard a stern voice from behind.

He turned around just to see Jungkook with arms crossed over his chest and raised eyebrow.

'Of course, babe...' Taehyung agreed with just a slightly mocking tone.

Librarian's eyes were running from one young man to the other.

'Aren't you too young to be married?' she frowned.

'Yes we are...' Jungkook sighed with a miserable expression on his face. He walked to stand near Taehyung. 'But you know... old families... forced marriage planned since we were born...' he shook his head pitifully.

'But we got used to each other in the end...' Taehyung said sadly. 'What else we could do...'

'Yeah... I had to put up with him leaving socks everywhere...' Jungkook pouted.

'And I had to get used to his terrible cooking...'

Jungkook sent him a death glare. He sent a forced smile to Librarian and said sweetly:

'But he agreed to have sex just once a month so it is bearable...'

Taehyung gulped and decided it's a good moment to end the skit. He grunted.

Librarian looked at them sadly and nodded with compassion.

'XXI century and things like that still happen... It's good that you can cope with each other. Planned marriage can still be a beautiful relationship...'

'We will work on it...' Taehyung nodded, embracing Jungkook's waist, smiling at the Librarian.

He turned them to the doors, feeling how Jungkook pinched his palm, hard.

When they sat inside the car, Jungkook immediately hit his arm.

'Terrible cooking?! Terrible?! HOW DARE YOU!?' Hit. 'If I wouldn't feed you, you would starve to death!'

'Sorry! Sorry!!' Taehyung chuckled. 'I seriously couldn' come up with any flow of yours on the spot...'

Jungkook reluctantly stopped hitting him.

'Sweet talker.' he burked. 'Shut up...' he mumbled, turning to the window with red ears.

'You are still getting shy around me and I love it...' Taehyung kissed his ear fast and started the engine. 'Wanna go eat?'

'No.' Jungkook pouted.

'You can feed me...'

'Okay.'

Taehyung giggled at how adorable his husband was and drove to the nearest Panda Express.

Jungkook was happily stuffing Taehyung's mouth with the food while the other was telling the story from the work in between bites and lazily picking something from the plate from time to time, with chopsticks he was giving it to Jungkook.

'How is hyung doing?' he asked.

'Trying to fit in. Get used to normal life... but secretly enjoy studying...' Jungkook said. And of course pissed he is my junior...' he laughed out loud. 'It's the first month so a long way before him... He is okay with me, but Yoohyeon and Soobin are like his little fanclub and he is running when they are starting to scream after him in the corridor... He is either in the library or music studio...'

Jungkook, Yoohyeon and Soobin had to pick up their studies and finish their 3rd and 4th year to graduation. Han was in his last year, so he basically wasn't doing

anything beside whining about how much studying he had.

The situation wasn't all colorful at the beginning when they came back to Seoul. Jungkook and Taehyung were shielded by everyone from all worries but of course they got to know everything from Jimin secretly. It still took them whole December to convince him, cause he was a worrywart. They had to text him each 3 hours or he was calling them on facetime all panicking.

So, as much as Jimin, Yeonjun, Soobin, Han, Minho, Dami and Yoohyeon - besides University issues and getting back to their normal life - were okay, it was harder for the rest. They didn't know where to go. How to act. They were uncomfortable.

New city. New life. Nothing familiar around...

But they were friends not bonded by the time - but by what they have been through, so with all the support Yoongi, Ren, Gahyeon, Wooyoung, San and Handong were safely closed inside all the chaos, love and understanding.

First of all Jennie rented the house for Handong, Gahyeon and Yoongi, Woosan and Ren. It was especially hard for Ren. He didn't know how to act thrown suddenly inside the family.

But Handong was so in love with him, Gahyeon was pouting about it half of the time. The shy, cute, brave, intelligent and polite boy for the first time in his life was spoiled to the core.

And Yoongi was just enjoying the attention that wasn't on him... Cause yeah - Jimin.

Jimin practically lived with them, helping them with everything. But mainly he was glued to Yoongi. Taking him for walks, for rides, to have sleepovers and dinners with his parents. Visit Taekook, Yeonbin, Minsung or Dami and Yoo. Being everywhere. Showing him what he never experienced - normal youth.

And when Jungkook, Taehyung and Hoseok said it is enough and he should start to think about himself and get back to dancing - Yoongi of course backed them up.

He wanted to see that...

At first Handong and Gahyeon from Seoul were trying to fix what they could and solve the company problems and he was helping with what he could. But then Namjoon convinced him to finally apply for University and Handong was more than fierce about not taking "no" from her son this time.

Wooyoung and San were quickly embraced by Jimin and Hoseok and pulled inside their Dancing group. But as they were already used to working in Mins' Corporation they were helping with what Gahyeon assigned to them, usually being

involved in business trips to Daegu.

Ren and Dami started to work with Minji in MOI, learning how the organization was working and how it was managed. Ren being a Military Academy Graduate easily fitted there. And Dami - well she was Minji's right hand.

After more than a year of living together in a way it was strange for Red String to be divided into small groups so their group chat usually looked like a circus...

But definitely it was calmer this way, allowed them to be closer with their soulmates and wasn't at all changing the love and friendship they all shared.

The small details mattered... The scars they gained together mattered.

The future they planned mattered. They all wanted to go back to Daegu one day. After all of them will finish their studies.

They wanted to go back to the place where everything started.

And everything ended.

To restore the city and bring it to its full glory.

Even if the same city was the cause of their nightmares. Of course their minds and souls weren't absolutely fine and unbothered by what happened.

For the first month Taehyung and Jungkook were waking up with nightmares whenever the other was not around even for a second to use the bathroom at night. Especially Taehyung... To calm him down Jungkook had to let him check if the wound Taehyung made in his body healed properly.

Apologizing. Crying and kissing the place.

Every time.

And every time Jungkook let him do it, while stroking his face and hair.

They weren't the only ones...

Jimin developed hatred towards red roses and nobody knew why, but he hated them to the core and whenever he was seeing them or smelling them, he felt nauseous, frozen and pale. And only Yoongi knew he still had Taekook's lantern in his room. Obsessively making sure the flame was burning... When the first candle ran out, he took the next one and lit it with the same flame Jungkook and Taehyung lit up during the Caim Ceremony. He had never let it fade...

Soobin, Gahyeon, Yoohyeon and Yeonjun couldn't stand the darkness... They even

slept with turned on lights.

Dami, Dami was getting nervous, looking around as if she was followed whenever she was in a place with too much shadows. She was instantly in combat mode then... Even if the shadows were made by trees in the park...

Ren, Han and Minho were getting anxious and nervous when they saw even the drop of blood.

And the ones who saw the most in their lives during the war: Yoongi, San and Wooyoung... They had a lot to deal with in their dreams...

It was getting better with time and they all knew about each other and were there for each other, praying that they will all get better - together.

Hyerim, Hajun, Joryoung and his soulmate - were in prison. After Taehyung and Jungkook wiped their powers - Chinhwa, Nabi, Dasol and the rest of the cult, who survived that night were put there too.

Namjoon and Minji were secretly looking for Kyung and Chorong.

Yoongi... Yoongi didn't care. He didn't want to waste even one more day for those people. But there was a part of him... a part that wanted to look for Taeil and see how he was doing.

Sometimes when they were talking about the past he could see in Gahyeon's eyes the same thoughts.

Jungkook finished describing their lunch time and said:

'Oh, oh! We were walking Yoongs around the campus and look at what I sneakily got!' He pulled out his phone.

Taehyung's jaw dropped.

'Whoa! He can smile!'

'He is pretty smiley around Jimin...' Jungkook giggled.

'Oh look what I got last week!'

'Omg! You can capture such amazing moments!' Jungkook for a moment was whipped for his husband's photography skills, before he focused on the photo. 'Well, well, look who is whipped...'

'This is so satisfying!' he sighed. 'Revenge for all those years, Jimin was teasing

us...'

Taehyung ironically lifted his eyebrow.

'Teasing? Revenge? Jimin? I am waiting for the day Jimin will want me to take their naked pics...'

Jungkook went pale.

'Or me to record their sex tape...'

Taehyung stroked his arm compassionately.

'We have to hope Hyung will stop him...'

'Yeah.'

They were sitting for a moment in mortifying silence. Then they shivered at the same moment.

Tae started to scroll down his phone gallery smiling at its content. What meant 90% of Jungkook and 20% of everything else, when he caught Jungkook's glance.

The other was resting his cheek on his palm and touching his lips with his fingers.

'What?' Taehyung asked, blushing lightly.

'You were looking damn hot in black hair...' Jungkook whispered, then his gaze softened. 'But I am glad my silver-hair angel returned...' he stretched his hand to Taehyung's hair.

'Awww...' Taehyung cooed at him. He kissed Jungkook's light brown hair. 'Well I am glad, my baby is back too...' Then he squinted his eyes. 'Wait?! Are you saying I'm not hot now?' Taehyung smirked and leaned his head. 'Should I change your mind?'

'Don't even go there...' Jungkook whined. 'We are still restricted... And we are in one bed each night... It's a torture! At this point I am gonna die...' he faked cry.

'I am pretty sure dad is doing this now, just because he is afraid we will present a grandchild to him this early...'

'And he dares to call himself a doctor...' Jungkook rolled his eyes.

'Yeah... he should know me better...' Taehyung grabbed Jungkook's chin and held it, while whispering to his lips. 'I want to have you only for myself for some time...'

Jungkook felt the annoying heat under his skin. It was really a torture lately. He rubbed his thighs together. And his hand traveled up Taehyung's inner thigh.

'Taee...' he muttered, almost pouting. 'They won't know... Come on...'

Taehyung glared at him, stopping his hand and intertwining their fingers, because he knew a second more and he would get so aroused that his sensible thoughts would fly through the window.

He wasn't at all amused by Jungkook's behavior... Because one night earlier he himself was a needy horny whiny bitch and Jungkook had to whistand his husband's attempts and calm him down.

They were holding up just because of two things.

One - they of course didn't want to risk the other one's health.

Two - their parents deserved it, after what they have been through and what they saw. Seeing their children's lifeless. For all the years they lived in fear...

So yeah, they had to keep each other in balance... And it was hard when either of them didn't want to control himself.

'Koo... don't make it harder for me...' Taehyung whined too. 'If the checkup will be okay today and dad will be an asshole again I promise, I myself will tie you to the bed...'

'Promise?' Jungkook looked at him, and reached for his drink. He sipped his coke, looking at Taehyung with puppy eyes, while his tongue played with the stroll, making Taehyung's focus disperse in nothingness.

Taehyung stood up fast and threw money on the table. He took Jungkook's hand and pulled him to the exit.

On 14th of February they officially registered their marriage, according to Korean Law. But as they could officially call the other's parents as theirs (which they were doing shyly through the years on special occasions) it happened to be funny as when they were calling "dad" Jin, Hobi and Namjoon were replying to them. So they had to come up with a system. So they informed them that from now on "dad" is referred to Jin, "appa" is referred to Namjoon and Hoseok was delighted to be promoted to "papa Hobi". Unless they wanted to call ALL them then they just screamed "DADS!". And mom... well mom was just "mom". Scary "mother of angels of destiny".

'What if he refuses?' Jungkook asked, sulking.

'We will ask appa...'

'What if he refuses as well??'

'We will ask papa to convince them...' Taehyung said, smiling widely.

'And if it still won't work?'

'Oh? Then? Then we will send mom...'

******

They got back home and Jungkook started to prepare dinner. Lately he also was on a mission to make Taehyung less hazardous in the kitchen. Of course taking all safety precautions. So Taehyung was wearing an apron, gloves and kitchen glasses. He was allowed to stir dishes and peel veggies.

Today was a big day because Jungkook allowed him to cut meat...

But he still was looking like a hawk at Taehyung's fingers, which were so precious to him, through the whole process.

'Be careful with a knife...'

'Stop staring. It makes me nervous!' Taehyung snapped 'I can cut people I will manage with meat...'

'Okaay...' Jungkook mumbled and turned to do what he was doing, but right after Taehyung finished - being proud of himself as fuck - he secretly grabbed the knife and hid it.

The music was loud in the kitchen and they were singing their hearts out, turning the volume down just to pick up the call from Han, then from Yoohyeon and from Wooyoung, who wanted to share how Jimin was cornering Yoongi the whole afternoon without mercy.

As they ate already they prepared the dinner mainly for their parents, who should come back soon.

Jungkook went to take a shower before the movie, while Taehyung was responsible for cleaning.

Washing dishes was part of cooking as Jin told them the first time he took them to the kitchen when they were little. Now they knew he just didn't like to clean after, so he used them as his minions...

Taehyung chose the movie, played and fed Bam, and peeked at the clock. It was pretty late... He frowned and quickly checked Jeons house but Minji and Hoseok weren't there either.

His frown deepened so he took out his phone and texted on their family chat:

**TAE: Where are you? Why is nobody home yet?** (-_-)

**APPA JOON: We are going for a meeting to Daegu...**

**TAE: What?! What's with this emergency!**

**TAE: You haven't told us! What happened?!**

**APPA JOON: Nothing happened. Calm down...** □♂□

**PAPA HOBI: Jeeze tell him the real reason, Joon...** □□□□

**TAE: What reason!?**

**MOM: The reason is that we don't want to be around you today...** 😒

**MOM: And tomorrow...** 😒

**TAE: HUH?! What have we done!?**(-_-;)

**PAPA HOBI: Nothing.** 😒😒

**PAPA HOBI: Yet.** 😒

**APPA JOON: And we wanna stay blissfully unaware of what you will do...** 😒😒😒

**MOM: We will come back on Wednesday...** 😒

**TAE: Wait... Where is dad?**(☞ಠ_ಠ)☞

**PAPA HOBI: Driving with his eyes fixed on the road.** ←(>▽<)ﾉ

**PAPA HOBI: Mumbling angrily. (≧▽≦)**

**PAPA HOBI: Praying silently.** □□□

Taehyung blinked when the whole convo sunk inside his mind.

**TAE: Does it mean...** (ﾟoﾟ人))

**APPA JOON: Yes.** 😒😣😣😣

'Jungkook?!' Tae screamed through the house, scaring Bam.

'I'm reading!' Jungkook came running downstairs, with the phone in his hand.

**TAE: If it is an April Fools Day Joke... (ò_ó)**

**TAE: And you will suddenly come back...**

**TAE: Blame yourself for what you will see. 😎**

Taehyung turned off his phone and threw it on the couch. He looked slowly at Jungkook whose hair was wet after a shower and he was wearing only tiny shorts and a big t-shirt.

Taehyung took off his shirt and threw it on the floor.

Jungkook checked him, gulped, and stepped back. He pointed a finger at his husband, who made a step closer.

'Take a shower first...'

'I will take something else...'

For a second they were glaring at each other before Jungkook turned around and started to run away, giggling crazily, when the tiger started to chase after him conquering two steps at once on the stairs.

Taehyung grabbed him from behind and spinned him.

Not like Jungkook really tried to run away. He was laughing, while Tae dragged him to their room and closed the doors. He threw him on the bed.

Jungkook rolled on his belly, trying to crawl away, but Taehyung grabbed his ankle and pulled him closer.

He climbed on the bed and laid on Jungkook, pressing his erection to his husband's plump ass. He thrust and the hard material of his jeans rubbed over Jungkook's soft panties.

Jungkook moans between giggles, turning off his phone and throwing it away.

Taehyung was moving sensually between his legs, giving him the premonition of what would be inside him in minutes. His hand traveled up Jungkook's naked thigh.

He was kissing his neck, but Jungkook threw him off of himself and while laughing he started unbuckling Taehyung's jeans.

They were laughing and giggling. Taking off clothes. Making their skin red.

Feeling not the desperate lust, but freedom. Tenderness, joy and desire.

The overwhelming need of being together without having the fear under their skin.

When they turned on their phones on the next afternoon on their group chat they saw the unread messages:

**PAPA HOBI: Remember that dance studio is sacred, forbidden place!!!**

Few minutes later.

**PAPA HOBI: Tae?**

Few minutes later.

**APPA JOON: Tae? Where are you?**

**MOM: I will call them…**

**MOM: Those little shits!!!**

**MOM: They turned off their phones!**

**PAPA HOBI: Why are we texting? We are in one car…** 

**APPA JOON: Cause Jin is about to pop off and I wanna reach the hotel alive…😓**

Few hours later:

**DAD JIN: We reached.**

**DAD JIN: First of all - you so-called PaRenTs - you all are stupid… 😡**

**DAD JIN: I was seeing the notification all the time!!! ಠ_ಠ**

**DAD JIN: Second of all…**

**DAD JIN: You can be married brats, but...(☞ ಠ_ಠ)☞**

**DAD JIN: Just so you know...**

**DAD JIN: I will check the whole house with an ultraviolet lamp when I come back...**

Taehyung and Jungkook looked around the living room. They let Bam go to the garden and well... they used the opportunity to check the endurance of the kitchen table and fluffiness of the couch...

They were laying on it right now, cuddling, when Taehyung found his, turned off, phone under his butt.

'Cleaning?' Taehyung squirmed.

'You will have to unseal me if we want to make sure dad won't find anything...'

'Good appa doesn't heard what we are using powers for...'

'Yeah... they would be pissed if they knew we actually could make each room soundproof if needed...' Jungkook giggled. 'And for how long we are already doing it...'

Taehyung kissed his nose and neck.

'What should I text back?'

'Hmmmm... Give him the outraged emoji and...' Jungkook started instructing with thoughtful face, brushing his calf over Taehyung's thigh.

TAE: 😡*angry*

**TAE: For your information - we are staying in our room!**

**TAE: Bam is here!**

**TAE: He would get nervous and confused from all the sounds and scents!** 

**TAE: We won't traumatize our baby!** 😒

**PAPA HOBI:** (/*0*)/

**PAPA HOBI: Jin! That's why you didn't want to take Bam with us?!**

**MOM: You are an evil mastermind...** (ﾟoﾟ人))

**MOM: I am impressed... 👏**

**DAD JIN: I don't know what you are talking about...**

**DAD JIN: We didn't consider taking Bam with us from the beginning!**

**APPA JOON: Yes. We did, honey...**

*APPA JOON is texting...*

**DAD JIN: SHUT UP!**

**DAD JIN: I am glad my angels you are so responsible...** (•–• ) \(• ◡• )/

**DAD JIN: Have fun!**

**DAD JIN: Don't burn the house down😑**

Taehyung squinted his eyes.

'We wouldn't burn the house down...'

'Yeah... What a distrust...' Jungkook mumbled and his hand traveled down Taehyung's naked spine.

Taehyung threw the phone behind the couch and slid on Jungkook's body.

'Totally...' he sat on his chest. 'They are forgetting we can control fire...'

Jungkook eyed his abdomen, thighs and his member and licked his own lips. His hands reached and cupped Taehyung's buttcheeks.

'Want a treat, baby?' Taehyung asked, looking at Jungkook from above and slowly stroking his dick.

Jungkook lowered himself a bit on the couch.

'Yeah...'

'And you will suck me well?' Tae asked, stroking Jungkook's lips with his thumb.

'Mhm...' Jungkook's nails dug into Taehyung's skin.

'Show me how well...' Taehyung's fingers slid inside Jungkook's mouth and the younger one started to suck on them hard, looking at the slow movements of Taehyung's hand over his member, which was so close to his mouth.

When Jungkook's lips and chin and Taehyung's fingers were covered in saliva, Jungkook breathed out and purred:

'Will you finally fuck my mouth?'

'Aren't you eager?' Taehyung said, amused and moved to straddle his thighs around Jungkook's head.

'To have your dick in my throat...' Jungkook lifted his eyebrow. 'Make you cum, sucking the hell out of you? Yeah... you can say I am pretty eager...' he said, eyeing the tip of Taehyung's member so close to his lips.

'Why?' he purred.

'Cause I love when my husband is a mess when I have his dick deep inside...'

Taehyung's eyes darkened and having a hard grip on it, he caressed Jungkook's lips with the tip of his cock.

'Open.'

Jungkook opened his mouth and sticked his tongue. His eyelashes flattered and went down when Taehyung put his dick on his tongue and slowly slid through it, till he reached the back of his throat.

Jungkook whimpered, swallowing around him and Taehyung let out this deep, guttural moan. He moved his hips getting in and out of Jungkook's cherry lips.

Jungkook loved Taehyung's deep, aroused moans and when he was focused on his own pleasure. And the praises...

'You are so good, baby... Your tongue feels so good... Let me fuck you more...Fuck!'

And he was getting them till Taehyung hips started to tremble and he came inside his throat with a relief groan of bliss.

Jungkook swallowed and slowly pulled out, took a deep breath and started to clean Taehyung's sensitive member with his tongue.

Taehyung shook his head, conquering the shivers and moved away. He bent to kiss Jungkook and sat on the couch pulling him up.

With a satisfied smile Jungkook wasn't expecting to be sat on Taehyung's lap. Taehyung slid inside his ass unexpectedly, embracing him from behind.

'Now... baby... make yourself comfortable like that...' Taehyung muttered, kissing Jungkook's shoulder and neck. His hand reached to the front and started to stroke

Jungkook's cock. 'Remember the first time you did it? We were sitting like that...'

Jungkook nodded, pressing his back to Taehyung, resting his head on the other's shoulder, and closing his eyes.

'I promised you one day it will be my hand...' he was squeezing and pumping Jungkook's dick up and down.

Jungkook was moving his hips slightly, squeezing around Taehyung's member inside him. Feeling how it was getting hard again slowly.

'And after you will come like that...' Taehyung licked Jungkook's ear. 'With my dick deep inside. I will fuck you again.... Cause you sucked me so good baby I can still feel it on my dick...'

'Y-you know...' Jungkook breathed out, letting the slow, tantric rhythm mess up his mind. '...why I have been feeding you with p-pineapples lately?'

'Why?' Taehyung asked amused about the topic, brushing his lips over Jugkook's neck.

'Cause I read they made cum taste sweet and wanted to check if it is true...'

Taehyung gulped, and sucked a painful, harsh hickey under Jungkook's ear, making him mewl and moan.

'You sucked the cum out of me like a little vampire yesterday and today...' Taehyung moved his hips harder and Jungkook's body jolted in a sudden hit of pleasure. 'So is it true?'

'Y-yeah... FUCK! Tae! Too f-fast!!'

Taehyung's hand sped up its pace and his other hand was making Jungkook's hips move on his cock faster.

'Sorry, but you just made me hard again with your dirty mind, Koo... So take the responsibility...'

**July 2072, Seoul**

In the middle of one summer night, half of Red String's members had deja vu when Jimin suddenly texted:

**CHIM: Hello....** □□□

**CHIM: It's me... *insert Adele***

**CHIM: Guys...**

**CHIM: I can't sleep... 😩**

**CHIM: I hate the world. I hate life. 。:゜(;´∩';)゜:。**

**CHIM: Help me!**

**CHIM: Is anybody awake?**

He didn't have to wait long.

**YEONJUN: WHAT HAPPENED?!**

**SOOBIN: ARE YOU HURT?!**

**DAMI: It's you again... 🤦"facepalm:**

**DAMI: I should have known that...**

**DAMI: Yoo is sleeping...**

**DAMI: And I advise you - it better stay this way! 🔪 *knife***

**HAN: NIGHT CHITCHAT!!! YAAAY!!**

**MINHO: We were in the middle of something... 😒 *done face***

**MINHO: Better you have a good reason...**

**WOOYOUNG: You were in the middle of what exactly?! 😏😏*Smirk***

**REN: Do I need to be here? 🤔**

**SAN: Yes.**

**GAHYEON: Yes. 😠**

**WOOYOUNG: Expand the topic please! (人*´∀｀)。*゜+**

**SAN: And why the hell you are checking the chat in the middle of "something" Han?**

**DAMI: Yeah. Minho... Are you this boring? 🤔🤔🤔**

**MINHO: I hate you. And I will choke you in your sleep. 😒**

**HAN: About the chocking...**

**TAE: OMG! You already got sidetracked?**

**TAE: Disappointed. Not surprised... 😖😖**

**KOOK: What happened, Jimin-shi?**

**YOONGI: Jimin...**

**CHIM: I'M NOT TALKING WITH YOU!**

**CHIM: GET THE FUCK OUT FROM HERE! (•ˇ_ˇ•)—→**

**YOONGI: Chim... open the door...**

**CHIM: If I would want to talk with you I would text back on our private chat!**

**CHIM: Take the hint idiot!**

**KOOK: Hyung! What have you done to him?! 😰**

**GAHYEON: Yeah, what have you done?→_→**

**SAN: What have you done? ←_←**

**WOOYOUNG: What have you done? 👀👀👀**

**YOONGI: NOTHING!! GET LOST!**

**HAN: Oh...**

**SOOBIN: What had hyung done to you Chimchim?**

**CHIM: Nothing. 😰**

**CHIM: Literally.**

**CHIM: He didn't do...**

**CHIM: ANYTHING!!!!!! (ノ◔,_┐◔)ノ彡┻┻**

**HAN: Oh.**

**SAN: Yeah. Oh... 😶**

**WOOYOUNG: So...In this case...**

**WOOYOUNG: What haven't you done, Yoongs? 😈😈**

**KOOK: And what HAVE you done JIMIN?(☞ಠ_ಠ)☞**

**TAE: Yeah... I am smelling some kind of mischief Chim!**

**YOONGI: Thank you!!!!**

**YOONGI: HE DYED HIS HAIR!!!!!**

**CHIM: I HAVEN'T!!! I JUST GET BACK THE NORMAL BLOND!!!**

**YOONGI: WELL I HAVEN'T SEEN IT BEFORE!!!**

**MINHO: Boring...**

**HAN: No, no, wait a minute, babe...**

**YEONJUN: I am sensing the hidden agenda too... ←_←**

**SOOBIN: Jeeze... he just dyed his hair!**

**REN: Yeah... What's the big deal?**

**GAHYEON: Kyaaaaa!!!! You two innocent beans are so cute!(≧▽≦)**

**SAN: Okay... To summarize... Jimin is blond...**

**TAE: And Hyung saw him in blond...**

**KOOK: What have you done after seeing him, hyung?**

**YOONGI: I...**

**CHIM: HE CLOSED HIMSELF IN THE BATHROOM!!!!!! (ノ｀Д´)ノ彡┻┻**

**CHIM: THIS FUCKER SAW ME! SAID "WHAT THE FUCK"!**

**CHIM: AND CLOSED HIMSELF IN THE BATHROOM!!!! 🔪🔪🔪😤□**

**DAMI: I hate all of you. But that's amusing... □□□**

**SAN: (๑←_←) *GLARING KNOWINGLY***

**YEONJUN: (;;;□_□)*GLARING KNOWINGLY***

**KOOK:(๑←_←) *GLARING KNOWINGLY***

**HAN: (□_□□) *GLARING KNOWINGLY***

**MINHO: (ง'̀-'́)ง*GLARING KNOWINGLY***

**TAE: (-_-メ)*GLARING KNOWINGLY***

**GAHYEON: You really are... impolite... oppa...**

**REN: Yeah, you should at least say he looks good...**

**WOOYOUNG: AHAHAHHAHA! That's not the point!! (☞ﾟ∀ﾟ)☞**

**WOOYOUNG: 😎😎😎😎*smirking x 10***

**WOOYOUNG: WHAT HAVE YOU DONE IN THE BATHROOM YOONGS?! 😳**

**REN: Oh. My. God. 😫**

**HAN: Jimin... Why are you angry?**

**HAN: You are the LOVE MASTER!**

**HAN: You should know why he closed himself in the bathroom! □□□**

**HAN: Ahahahhaha!!!!**

**CHIM: That's the point!!!!😤**

**CHIM: He closed himself in the wrong room!!!!□♂□**

**CHIM: HE SHOULD CLOSE HIMSELF IN MY ROOM!😭**

**Yoongi: JIMIN OPEN THIS FUCKING DOOR THIS INSTANT!!!**

**CHIM: For what?**

**CHIM: You won't do anything...😒**

**DAMI: That's a challenge, bro...**

**GAHYEON: Yeah, well... Just go to sleep, oppa.**

**CHIM: Oh...**

**YEONJUN: WHAT OH?!**

**CHIM: He kicked the door...**

**CHIM: Hard.**

**SOOBIN: 😱*scared***

**KOOK: Well...**

**TAE: What goes around comes around... □(. ❛ ᴗ ❛.)□**

**KOOK: Have fun Chimchim... ಡ_ʖ ಡ**
□

**TAE: Don't come for butt massage to us...**

**CHIM: How can you be so cruel!**

**CHIM: I would massage your butt!**

**CHIM: FUCK! He broke the door!**

**GAHYEON: Mom will kill him...**

**REN: Why did you invite Chim for the night in the first place?**

**GAHYEON: I wanted my dear brother to see his new hair! ( □▽□ )**

**REN: ...**

**CHIM: HELP!**

**YOONGI: Jimin is out of reach now...**

**YOONGI: Night.**

**DAMI: Thanks... it was worth my sleep...**

**SOOBIN: Yoo didn't wake up?**

**DAMI: Nah. She was pretty tired.**

**DAMI: Still sleeping like a princess she is...**

**DAMI: Night, guys!**

*Dami left the chat.*

**HAN: So Ren... When will we get the details?**

**REN: Huh? 😶**

**MINHO: About your first kiss...**

**REN: Huh?😶😶**

*Gahyeon left the chat.*

**TAE: Did she get shy?**

**SAN: Gahy? Never.**

**REN: Yeah. She just left me on the battlefield alone. 😭😭**

**KOOK: But I would like to know the answer too...**

*Ren left the chat.*

**WOOYOUNG: I will get it from Gahy, guys! Gimmie some time!**

**YEONJUN: Why have you asked about it suddenly, Han?**

**HAN: I wanted to know when we will do it...**

**YEONJUN: Do what?!**

**HAN: The tournament...**

**KOOK: *STAR EYES* (☆▽☆)TAE! TAE!!! I HAVE AN IDEA!**

**TAE: I am scared...(Θ‿Θ✿)**

**KOOK: We need to trick parents to participate!!!!**

**TAE: ARE. YOU. CRAZY?!**

**KOOK: YES I AM!(≧▽≦)**

**TAE: And I am with you! Cause! Freaking hell, let's do it!!!**

The next morning Yoohyeon sleepily opened her eyes and checked the chat.

**YOO: Have I missed the night chat again? ಠ‿ಠ**

**YOO: Is Jimin alive?**

**GAHYEON: Yeah... Unfortunatelly...**

**SOOBIN: Dami forbid to wake you up...**

**YOO: I am glad she did...**

**YEONJUN: She said you were tired.**

**HAN: What happened? Why were you so tired on the weekend?**

**YOO: ...**

**WOOYOUNG: My senses are tingling... (ಠ_ಠ)□☆ﾟ.*･｡ﾟ**

**REN: You seriously should get some help, bro... □♂□**

**YEONJUN: Why were you tired, Yoo?**

**YOO: Bro...**

**YOO: She did me so good yesterday...**

*Yeonjun left the chat.*

**SOOBIN: Yoohyeonie□□□... You promised to not surprise me like that...**

**HAN: Wow!! I want details.**

**GAHYEON: Same.**

**WOOYOUNG: Won't mind...**

**DAMI: Yoohyeon.**

**YOOHYEON: Oh no...**

**DAMI: □□ *creepy smile***

---

Aaaaaaaa!!!! I wanted to write more!!! But I have classes!

Next chapter will be longer!

Blair_Witch91❤□

# Chapter 67: The Wait is Over

**July 2072, Seoul**

Jimin opened his eyes and felt every muscle in his body was aching. Sun was absolutely merciless, making the inside of the car a hot pot, even so early in the morning.

'Close the shades for fucks sake...' he heard a groan.

He opened one of his eyes and lifted his head.

He was laying on Yoongi.

Without a shirt...

Yoongi was without a shirt too...

He was kneeling-sitting-laying on him on the front seat of the car... - what explained his hurting muscles after falling asleep in this uncomfortable position.

But why the hell was he sleeping with Yoongi in the car?

They had a fight last night... and...

Last night...

Oh...

******

Jimin was absolutely unbothered by the fact that the door trembled in its hinges after Yoongi kicked them.

He was done and sulking.

He focused on the chat, making a drama at least there. Soobin's reaction was so amusing...

Yoongi could be kicking the doors till his dying day for all he cared...

But the lock unexpectedly broke and Jimin jumped on the bed. He didn't expect Yoongi to break the doors to the guest bedroom in Mins' rented house...

He was a bit impressed but that's it.

He lifted his eyebrow at his soulmate. Shook his head without a word and looked at his phone screen, ignoring him.

'Jimin...' Yoongi started.

Jimin lifted his hand without a word and showed him a middle finger.

Yoongi gritted his teeth and walked quickly to the bed. He snatched the phone out of Jimin's hands and texted something. He turned off the phone and threw it away.

'Can we talk?'

'No.' Jimin stood up from the bed. 'I'm going home...' he grabbed his backpack and walked out.

'WHAT THE HELL! Why are you so fucking angry about?!'

'Do I look angry?' Jimin passed him calmly.

'No! That's how I know you are!'

'Well I am not...'

Wooyoung and San's room opened slightly and Yoongi turned to them.

'If I will see a word about this in the chat I will kick you out!' he threatened.

The doors closed instantly.

Jimin was beside the front doors already and Yoongi ran after him. He grabbed his arm.

'What do you want from me?! Appearing here out of nowhere at 9 am! With all those people around?! And you close yourself in the room right after!?'

'Well you closed yourself first... without a word...'

'Sorry to break it to you but I am not used to getting fucking aroused out of nowhere! What have you expected me to do!?'

'Saying I look like a snack... Closing me in YOUR room together with you... Pinning me to the door... I have plenty of ideas actually...' Jimin opened the car door.

'Congrats! I don't!' Yoongi closed the door before Jimin could get inside the car. 'Your shocking therapy can't always be effective!'

'Lucky for you it ends now.'

Yoongi started to panic. He pressed Jimin to the side of the car.

'Can you be a bit more understanding?!'

'Understanding?' Jimin frowned. 'I think it's you who doesn't understand something here... HYUNG.'

'What?'

Jimin brought his face closer.

'That if I can make it hard for you...' his eyes dropped to Yoongi's middle before coming back to his eyes. 'I can also make it better...'

A jolt of desire, challenge and heat ran through Yoongi's veins, his eyes dropped to Jimin's lips, but the other pushed him back.

'But if you prefer to deal with everything by yourself as always... Have fun.' Jimin said harshly and smiled maliciously, before getting inside the car.

Yoongi gulped. It took him a second to run around the car when Jimin started the engine. He sat in the passenger seat.

'Get out.' Jimin just said.

'Take us somewhere where Gahyeon is not looking through the window...'

'The fact that you care about it just pisses me off more...'

Yoongi grabbed Jimin by the nape and kissed him harshly.

There was something exciting in breaking Jimin's resistance against his tongue. But when he bit the lower lip and Jimin opened them letting out a sigh, Yoongi wanted to burn the other's anger inside the lust.

And he succeeded when Jimin joined him fiercely.

Breathing heavily Yoongi moved away.

'I don't care if they will see me drooling over you. But I am going to undress you and this is only for my eyes...' he whispered into Jimin's lips.

Jimin squinted his eyes.

'If this is a trick to divert my attention...'

'We can have this fight till dawn or you can make it better for me... Your choice.' Yoongi whispered into Jimin's ear.

Jimin was still a bit hurt and angry, what, to be honest, was making it all more exciting.

But would he lose an opportunity like that?

Hell nah!

'Belt.' he ordered and pulled away from the driveway.

Yoongi dropped his eyes to the belt of his pants.

Jimin bit back his laugh.

'Seat!-belt.' he cleared his throat.

Yoongi sent him a warning glare, and buckled up his seat belt.

Jimin was driving through the city breaking all the speed limits. The loud music was blasting from the speakers, not allowing Yoongi to say or explain anything. Jimin was focused on the road. Maneuvering between other cars smoothly, without hesitation, but Yoongi still was holding the handle tightly.

They drove on the highway outside the city. They were driving for half an hour. Even the side lamps disappeared. Jimin turned into one of the smaller roads and drove some more, turning left and right.

They stood up in the middle of the fields on the field road between crops. The night was hot and loud from all the small bugs noises. The scents of the dry hay and hot from the sun ground was filling the car.

Jimin turned down the volume of the radio and leaned his head on the headrest, turning off the engine.

He closed his eyes and sighed.

'I am not mad anymore.' he said simply. 'I was just disappointed, okay? You are right. I shouldn't project on you my imagination. But at least you could have said something...'

He was answered by the quiet "click" of seatbelts unlocking.

'Well sorry I was speechless...' Yoongi said irritated and in the next minute Jimin was pulled from his seat on his lap. 'Appearing unexpectedly looking like a freaking hot angel is a sin!'

Jimin lifted his eyebrow.

'Oh yeah? Not taking care of this angel is a sin too!'

'So we are sinners...' Yoongi brushed Jimin's blond locks back from his forehead and grabbed the fist full of them. 'You are damn hot Park Jimin...'

'I know.' Jimin smirked.

'It's not good for my dick or heart...' Yoongi said.

'And here you are wrong again, hyung...' Jimin pressed his lips under Yoongi's ear. 'It can be really good for both...'

Jimin's hand reached the side of the seat and moved it, making more room for them. Before he lowered the backrest fully.

He looked at Yoongi lying under him from above and circled his neck, licking his lips.

'You said something about undressing me?'

'Are you ready?' Yoongi asked, concerned, sliding his hand under the hem of Jimin's t-shirt.

Jimin wrapped his fingers around Yoongi's wrist and led it up. Helping him to get rid of the cloth.

'Oh, hyung... we won't have our first time in the car...' he giggled deeply. He grabbed Yoongi's shirt and took it off.

'We won't?' Yoongi asked, breathing heavily, while his hands were slowly stroking Jimin's naked sides and stomach.

'Nope... but we can do so many other things before...' Jimin assured him, smiling sinfully and leaned to kiss him, while his hand reached for Yoongi's pants.

Yoongi's hands cupped Jimin's butt and started to knead it. His lips moved down Jimin's jaw to his neck and sucked there.

'Mhmm.... Then show me... Love Master...'

Oh, yeah... Jimin smirked to himself. That's what happened...

He felt the hand caressing his spine and kissed the place his cheek was sleeping on a second ago...

'Can you please turn off the sun?' Yoongi whined.

Jimin, being the sweetheart he was, straightened up to block the sun rays falling on Yoongi's face.

'Oh thank you, baby...' Yoongi breathed out, relieved.

Jimin looked at his face with closed eyes. At the messy hair of his soulmate. The hickey he made on his neck and chest... and stomach. And the sudden change of his positions made him realize...

A cat-like smile appeared on his lips.

'Are you hard again?'

Without opening his eyes, Yoongi replied, as if he was stating the fact:

'You are sitting on me. Of course I am.'

'Awww... that's the most romantic thing I ever heard...'

'You are naughty and weird... No wonder you consider this romantic...'

'Well if my pretty ass is making you hard first thing in the morning it is romantic! It is the deepest proof of you simping over me!' he said.

'Mhm...' Yoongi slowly opened his eyes.

When Jimin made him come for the first time he was a bit stressed and was wondering how they would clean themselves... But well... he shouldn't have underestimated Park Jimin...

His soulmate was eager to clean him with his tongue. So Yoongi's mind was now full of visions of Jimin's licks over his stomach, abdomen and dick...

And for fucks sake... he never expected Jimin's wasn't lying... His dick was indeed really pretty. Yoongi wanted to play with it all the time. Stroke it to the point of Jimin moaning like crazy, and stopping unexpectedly when he was ready to cum.

Jimin was eager to kill him each time he had done that, but for sure it was just leading to another round of angry kisses, rubbing over each other frotting.

So now... looking at Jimin's perfect skin covered in love bites he left all over it... his hand instinctively slid inside his pants and cupped the naked ass. Car wasn't his favorite place now... He was eager to be anywhere else to check that ass thoughtfully...

Jimin lifted his eyebrow at him feeling the touch. His eyes slowly traveled from Yoongi's eyes down his chest to his stomach and lower.

Yoongi's pants were spread open and unbuckled, so Jimin could perfectly see his hard cock, sticking above the underwear.

Jimin lifted his eyes back to meet Yoongi's gaze and the other looked at him challengingly.

'Your fault. Make it better, baby...'

Jimin slid down from Yoongi's lap lowering his head to his crotch, while purring:

'Anything for you... hyung...'

**September 2072, Seoul**

In the middle of September Yoongi was unexpectedly called to Namjoon's office in University. He was wonderwing was that all about, when he sat on the chair in front of Taehyung's father's desk.

'How are you?' Namjoon asked casually.

'Fine.' Yoongi shrugged then laughed. 'You know I am fine, uncle. We saw each other on Sunday...'

'Oh, yeah... I remember... Well mainly Jimin eating your brain but sure...'

'Yeah, it's his main entertainment...' Yoongi smiled shyly.

'And how is University?'

'For now? Pretty boring with general subjects. But they let me use the studio and take additional curses so it's not that bad...'

'You have pretty good results in professional subjects... You should think about speed up courses at this point and some internships...'

'I am... When Jungkook graduates, I will take third and fourth year courses together to cover them in one year.'

'Clever. Internships will give you more for sure...'

'I am already planning some recordings...'

'Oh that's great!' Namjoon nodded. 'Who do you want to work with?'

'Jimin. Jungkook. Taehyung... And others. For now...'

Namjoon blinked in surprise.

'And you? You can rap, right?'

'I will mix it... I am just waiting for Wooyoung and San to bring my equipment here from Daegu. We finally located it and got it back...'

Namjoon went silent and Yoongi lifted his eyebrow.

'Why am I here, uncle?'

'About Daegu... We found them...'

Yoongi's eyes widened.

'Well... we located Taeil and Kyung... We haven't decided yet what to do with them...'

'What are they accused of?' Yoongi moved anxiously on the chair.

'According to Korean law? Nothing. Kyung was president in the Republic at that time. He never did anything against the law of the Republic... And Taboo Taeil used... It's still - a law against the soul - not written anywhere...'

Yoongi knew... Kyung's crimes were hidden. He committed them against him, against Jungkook... They hurt them all. With his own reasons... Interdependants would interpret those crimes... But non-Interdependants couldn't understand them truly.

And Taeil... beside using Taboo in times of need... Well his only crime was ignorance.

'And Chorong?' Yoongi asked quietly.

'I guess Taeil knows where she is... but we can't find her...'

Chorong was the only one they had a true crime proven for. A murder of Min Jaehyun.

Yoongi was silent.

'We won't do anything without your knowledge...' Namjoon said. He moved a paper with an address to Yoongi. 'This Taeil's location...'

Yoongi took the paper.

'Thanks.' he said, standing up. 'Uncle...'

Namjoon looked at him calmly.

'Min Kyung... was punished by fate already I guess... But Taeil...' he shook his head. 'I don't think he deserves punishment beside what he already got... Neither his soulmate should be punished... through him...'

Namjoon nodded in understanding.

'I agree. Come talk to me when you want...'

'I will. Thank you.'

*******

On the next weekend Yoongi was driving with Jimin to Daegu.

He needed his soulmate around... And for sure he didn't want to encounter Jimin's anger if he would go alone...

So they went to Daegu and parked in front of one of many construction works at the shift ending type.

They got out of the car seeing one of the workers in a helmet waving at his colleagues.

'Taeil.' Yoongi called.

Taeil turned around startled, hearing his voice. He got pale and gulped.

Two cousins were looking at each other for a long time without a word.

Jimin looked between them and coughed:

'Do you have time for a coffee?' he asked.

Taeil looked at him hesitantly.

Yoongi's hand traveled to Jimin's lower back protectively.

'Meet Jimin. My soulmate.'

'Nice to meet you...' Taeil said, nodding his head.

'Coffee?' Jimin repeated.

'Sure.'

They went in silence to the nearest working caffe and sat there. Jimin ordered the coffees and waited patiently.

'How are you?' Yoongi asked.

'Do you care?' Taeil asked quietly, looking at the table.

'Not really.'

Jimin rolled his eyes.

'You are working on the construction?' he asked.

'Yeah...' Taeil blushed. 'After the war was over a lot of developers appeared. The city is being rebuilt slowly. They don't ask much. It's easy to learn... and I am helping them with finances sometimes...'

Yoongi looked at him. That was a huge change for a person who was born in luxury and spoiled to the core. Always getting what he wanted. It seems he was finally growing up and remaking himself...

'And how is your father?' Yoongi asked reluctantly.

Taeil shrugged.

'Devastated. Mental breakdown. On the edge of separation syndrome... He is living with me.' he looked at Yoongi challengingly. 'Want to take him?'

Yoongi shook his head.

'We know where he is... For now... ICI decided to let him be... Till he will keep the low profile.'

'So why are you here?' Taeil asked.

'To check on you.'

Taeil's eyes widened.

'Why?'

'Cause it is not really your fault you were mixed by Fate in the most cruel way. It's your fault and decision you took trying to deal with it somehow, yes. But I know you... You were not prepared for something like that... You were always spoiled... Taking the easy way... Hope you will finally move on...'

A bitter smile appeared on Taeil's lips.

'You are right... I was weak... I hate that you were always right. I fell to the bottom... and didn't even realize I was there till it was too late.'

Yoongi was looking at him calmly. Taeil lifted his eyes at him.

'And hated you. Cause you were someone I wasn't brave enough to be...'

'There are things I won't forget or forgive, Taeil...' he stated. Yoongi's hand found Jimin's under the table and squeezed it. 'But we are both too young to be stuck in the past...'

He pulled out his phone.

'Give me your number.' he asked.

Taeil gulped and with a trembling voice he recited the numbers.

'Mom and Gahyeon are dealing pretty great with what's left from Mins' Corporation. When it will be the time... you will be needed there.' he said, hiding his phone.

'You don't have to...' Taeil shook his head.

'It's not my decision. I was never the one for the business life. Gahy and mom will decide...'

'How is Gahy? And auntie?' Taeil asked.

'Mom is much better. And Gahy...'

'She is happily destroying the sanity of her soulmate...' Jimin grinned.

'Yeah. That.' Yoongi nodded.

Taeil looked at the cup in his hand and smiled sadly.

'I guess... that's karma... I'm honestly glad... You both found your soulmates.'

'Thanks. Call me if you need anything...' Yoongi stood up, holding Jimin's hand. 'Take care...'

Jimin stopped him for a second and turned to Taeil.

'Your soulmate.' he said.

Taeil lifted his eyes at him.

'He is healthy. He is doing fine. I think you want to know that...'

Taeil's eyes were full of pain and sadness, when he nodded, before whispering:

'Thank you...'

*****

Yoongi got inside the car and rested his head on the headrest, closing his eyes.

Jimin softly stroked his arm.

'You haven't asked about his mother...'

'He wouldn't tell me. He would feel as if he should, but couldn't willingly put him in danger...' Yoongi replied quietly. 'And being put inside the inner turmoil of not having a choice... It's another kind of torture...'

Jimin nodded, understandingly.

'Can we visit a place?' he asked.

'Yeah...' Yoongi started an engine. 'Where do you want to go?'

'What flowers did your father like? And please! I beg you not red roses!'

'I don't really know... water flowers I guess... He was always buying mom lilies.'

Jimin nodded, and caressed Yoongi's cheek softly.

'Let me meet your dad, Yoongi...'

Yoongi's eyes softened and he bent slowly to kiss Jimin. It was giving him so much calmness.

'Okay...'

They drove to the graveyard and Jimin bought flowers near it. They were walking slowly, and Yoongi looked at Jimin attentively, when the other's hand started to sweat and squeeze his tighter.

Jimin gulped hard seeing the grave, but he nevertheless kneeled and put the flowers on it.

Yoongi was wondering why was Jimin so pale so he joked:

'Dad... meet the Satan itself... Park Jimin...'

Jimin glared at him at once.

'Don't worry Mr Min... I am gonna take care of his savage, reckless ass...' Jimin patted the graveyard.

They paid respect for some more minutes and Yoongi took Jimin's hand. When they were walking slowly back, he asked:

'Will you tell me finally?'

'What?'

'Red roses. Graveyard. You are nervous... Almost panicked.'

Jimin gulped.

'It's... about that day... About that dream...' he whispered.

Yoongi looked at him.

'What dream...'

When Jimin was silent Yoongi pulled him to the bench and made him sit on his lap.

'Tell me.'

So Jimin hid his face in Yoongi's neck and whispered everything that was weighing

on his heart. About the nightmare caused by the card.

Making Yoongi's heart fluttered hearing the moment about them being married. Making his heart ache about his panic, sorrow and fear. And finally making him fall in love even more, being impressed about how devoted to Jungkook and Taehyung, Jimin was.

********

At the end of September Red String knew something was going to happen...

Cause when on one evening when Taehyung made a chat room without Jimin and texted:

**TAE: Hey people, what are we doing for Chim's birthday?**

Yoongi was the first one to reply.

**YOONGI: Nothing.**

It started the real war.

**KOOK: HUUUH?!! WHAT DO YOU MEAN NOTHING?!**

**GAHY: YOU REALLY ARE HOPELESS!**

**YOO: I LIKED YOU!**

**YOO: AND IN THE END YOU ARE A JERK!!!??**

**SOOBIN: YEAH! YOU CAN DO NOTHING! WE WON'T!**

**SOOBIN: IT'S OUR JIMINIE!!!**

**YEONJUN: TOTALLY.**

**YEONJUN: YOU SHOULD BE THE ONE WHO IS ORGANIZING HIS BIRTHDAY!**

**MINHO: YEAH DO WE NEED TO TEACH YOU THAT?**

**HAN: AND YOU SHOULD KNOW CHIM LOVES LOUD PARTIES!**

**HAN: MY HEART IS BREAKING...**

**DAMI: I AM… SPEECHLESS.**

**WOOYOUNG: Wow.** (๐←_←)

**WOOYOUNG: I thought you can't get colder…**

**SAN: How can you treat your soulmate like that?**

**REN: I thought you left this merciless ass in Daegu…**(0□0;)

**TAE: I am offended on Jimin's behalf…**

**KOOK: I decided not to give Jimin-shi to you!**

Yoongi looking at his phone lifted his eyebrow, rolled his eyes and texted back.

**YOONGI: First of all…**

**YOONGI: Yoohyeon… I am a jerk. Why are you surprised?**

**YOONGI: Soobin. It's MY Jimin. Not yours.**

**YOONGI: Dami… I am glad for once you get to know the feeling of being speechless.**

**YOONGI: Ren, my merciless ass is wherever I am so deal with it…**

**YOONGI: And Kook. Jimin is already mine. So there is nothing you can give me.**

When he saw 12 notifications of people writing he quickly typed.

**YOONGI: So let me correct myself now.**

**YOONGI: The twelve of you are doing nothing for Jimin's birthday.**

**YOONGI: Am I clear?**

The notifications stopped. And after a second…

**TAE: Why? (☞ ಠ_ಠ)☞*looking suspiciously***

**YOONGI: Cause I am taking him.**

**KOOK: Taking him where? (-_-;)□□□**

**YOONGI: Not your business.**

**WOOYOUNG: And for what?(□∀□)**

**YOONGI: That's even less of your business.**

A moment of silence and:

**TAE: *gasp*** (□o□;

**KOOK: ←_← *glaring***

**SOOBIN:(。/ω＼。) *blushing***

**REN: w(°ｏ°)w*jaw drop***

**GAHY: ヾ(*’Ｏ’*)/*squealing***

**WOOYOUNG:(≧▽≦) *squealing louder***

**SAN: 😏😏😏😏*smirk***

**MINHO: *clapping being silently impress***

**YOO: ＼(。◕o◕。)/.*awing***

**YEONJUN: *nodding in approval***

**DAMI: ಠ_ಠ*Being done***

Yoongi sighed heavily.

**YOONGI: I am so happy I shut your mouths.**

**YOONGI: Taekook, can you pack everything Jimin will need?**

**KOOK: Sure thing hyung 👍🏻. *still in shock* *thumb up***

But he overlooked one person:

**HAN: Will we get details? ☻*hopeful***

**YOONGI: □*middle finger***

Yoongi disconnected.

**WOOYOUNG: That probably meant "no".**

**WOOYOUNG: ( T_T) \ (ˆ-ˆ )*back patting* don't be sad Han...**

**HAN: I'm not.**

**HAN: I know Jimin too well...**

**YEONJUN: Yeah. He won't keep his mouth shut for his dear life.**

**DAMI: What if Yoongi will threaten him that he will be banished from sex?**

**MINHO: Oh yeah... that would be worse than death for Jiminie...**

**HAN: So we won't get details? □□**

**SAN: Maybe there is a way...**

**HAN: What way?!**

**SAN: Yoongs is pretty talkative while drunk...**

**TAE: Oh... ☻*smirk***

**31st of October 2072, Seoul**

After the celebration of Samahain Taehyung and Jungkook came back home. Their parents moved together to Jeons' house as Jungkook's 22 birthday gift, leaving them Kim house to rule over.

It didn't change much actually. They were just spending most of the time in Jeons kitchen now...

But it was comfortable at night. Much more...

For both - Parents and children.

Minji and Hoseok reorganize the house. They took the rooms upstairs while Jin and Namjoon took the downstairs bedrooms as their own.

So they ate dinner together, attended the Samhain and came back home.

The second half of October was amusing. Jimin was dying to spill the tea and Yoongi was enjoying that he couldn't...

But they all knew... When Jimin and Yoongi came back from their weekend, who-knows-where, Jimin was like a little glowing firefly. Jungkook wanted to close him inside the jar and shake it to see more of the sparkly dust...

And Jungkook noticed... that sometimes... Yoongi was nowhere to be found during class breaks and then Jimin magically appeared to visit for lunch in the cafeteria...

Only once... Probably because he would burst out the other way... Jimin whispered to Taehyung and Jungkook, something like:

'Orgasm denial...'

Jungkook blinked.

'Dude I hate it! And I LOVE IT!' Jimin whined.

Jungkook looked at Taehyung and pointed a finger at him.

'Don't you even think about it!'

Taehyung smirked.

'I prefer overstimulation...'

Jungkook grunted and blushed.

'Yeah...'

Jimin threw himself on the chair.

'I wanna tell you so much!' he squealed and faked crying.

'San said you should get hyung drunk if you want him to spill the tea...' Taehyung said. 'So maybe one day...'

Jiimin hit his fist on the table.

'I will make it happen!'

So it was really amusing and joyful to watch the Yoonmin couple, learning each other.

Jungkook unfortunately had to study after the Samhain Ceremony, so he just checked on Taehyung in the bedroom. He shook his head and covered his husband with a blanket seeing he fell asleep only in shorts and a tiny t-shirt.

He patted Bam's head and let him sleep on the carpet near the bed.

'Watch over him for me...' he whispered and kissed the nose of the puppy.

He went to the study room and started to finish the project, editing the video.

He shivered when he realized that one year ago... he was standing, hugging the cherry blossom tree in Mins Garden. Being absolutely broken. Without anything beside longing and pain.

He gulped, breathing deeply, thinking about where he was now. In the comfortable safety of his house... near his husband...

But the anxious feeling didn't calm down... He took off the headphones and heard the quiet whines of Bam. He stood up fast and opened the doors. The puppy was scratching the doors. Jungkook jerked his head and fastly ran upstairs with a quickly beating heart.

Taehyung was tossing on the bed. Crying silently.

Jungkook walked to him fast. Angry at himself. He should have known... It was Samhain after all. Their souls were fragile on this day.

He sat on the edge of the bed. His heart clenched. He saw it so many times already. He caressed Taeyung's cheek and hair. Walking him up slowly.

'Tae...' he whispered. He kissed his forehead. 'Come back to me...' He kissed his lips. 'I'm here...'

'I'm sorry...' Taehyung whispered.

'You haven't done anything bad baby...' Jungkook purred, stroking Tae's cheeks with his thumbs. 'You were brave... You have done what I couldn't.'

He reached for Taehyung's hand and pressed it to his chest. To his own beating heart.

'Taehyung... I'm here. Open your eyes...' Jungkook learned over time that it was better to wake Taehyung up slowly. He was calming down faster later... 'See me...'

Taehyung's eyelashes flattered. His fingers gripped over Jungkook's shirt.

'Hello, my wonderful husband...' Jungkook smiled gently. His fingertips were trailing over Taehyung's face. 'It was just a bad dream...'

Taehyung's face twisted when he stretched his arms. Jungkook hid inside them and rolled over, so Taehyung was laying on him. Giving him the much needed feeling, he was securing Jungkook the best he could with his body. He stroked his hair and back calmingly, until Taehyung's breath and heart calmed down.

'I will never forget this view...' Taehyung whispered, shutting his eyes.

Jungkook kissed his head.

'I know.... I am sorry, Tae... At that moment I knew you would never be able to get over it... and I still made you do it.'

Taehyung lips pressed kisses over Jungkook's collarbone and shoulder.

'It was the only way. And now we are finally free... ' he sighed.

They were laying down like that for some time. Tae was listening to Jungkook's heart while the other was stroking his hair.

'Have you finished the project?' he asked.

'It's not for tomorrow.'

'But you have an exam...'

'I can have a retake...'

'No.'

Jungkook rolled his eyes, when he heard the stern denial.

'Okay. Wait a second...'

He got up from the bed and disappeared for a few minutes. He came back with water for Taehyung and books. He sat on bed, resting his back on the headrest, and put the notebooks near. He put on the glasses.

'Come...' he patted his laps. 'I can study like that...'

Taehyung smiled softly. Jungkook in glasses was always melting him. He kissed the soft, sweet cherry lips of his husband and laid down, pressing his head to Jungkook's tummy, while the other took one of the notebooks and read, repeating the lessons.

Jungkook was stroking Taehyung's hair, mumbling the words from a book under his nose, and checking his sleeping angel from time to time.

The nightmares were rare. But he knew they didn't and won't disappear. But they were here for each other... And that was what mattered.

**December 2072, Seoul**

Gahyeon was packing her bag, when Ren knocked on the door.

'I don't like it...' he said.

She looked at him calmly.

'I know. But Dami, Yoohyeon and aunt Minji are coming with me and mom. You don't have to worry.'

'I am always worried if it is about you...' Ren said sternly.

'Ren...' she sighed and stretched her hand. He took it and let her pull him closer. 'It's just two days... If Dami and auntie are coming with me you have to stay. We have to be connected to MOI...'

'I know... But I don't have to like this.' he said. 'And you know the rules Taehyung and Jungkook set. We are not going to Daegu sealed if separated...'

'I remember.' she stepped back.

Ren looked her in the eyes and slowly unbuttoned two upper buttons of her white shirt. He got used to it... Unsealing was pure and warm.

But seeing the skin and the edge of the bra... Yeah he couldn't actually stay composed.

Gahyeon tilted her head. Ren slowly looked at her.

The more calm he was. The more nervous and shy she was getting.

The whole year was like that. Considering her bold, savage, joyful personality -

and well - Wooyoung's influence - he was waiting for her move. So they were sticking to holding hands and shy, short hugs while watching the movies...

But lately, after observing the different dynamics of so many couples around... different personalities and types of behavior... he realized that Gahyeon... was the princess locked inside the golden cage for so long she didn't have much interaction with people. Not to mention experience... She could talk, yes. But her words were usually where it was ending.

Not that Ren was super experienced... He was just usually shy around her...

Their eyes met, and Ren stopped the unsealing. Instead he cupped Gahyeon's face and his eyes dropped to her lips.

She made a tiny step forward, getting closer to him. As if she wanted to dare him without a word.

He pressed his lips slowly to hers. It was a soft, sweet kiss. Their lips were brushing and nibbling on each other shyly. Making their knees a bit too wobbly. And their heartbeats a bit too fast.

They were standing like that, kissing for a long time, when they heard Handong's calling from downstairs.

Ren's hand slid to her chest and he unselead her, parting their lips slowly.

'Come back safely...' he whispered.

She took the glasses from his hand and put them on his nose, smiling lightly with a pink color on her cheeks. She cuddled to him shortly, mumbling:

'I will...'

Ren pressed a kiss over her head and moved away. When he was near the doors she grunted. He looked at her.

'You know...' she said, pouting. 'I wanna win the tournament...'

Ren's lips parted before he shook his head in disbelief while laughing.

'I will think about it...'

******

Handong was sitting behind the desk in the office of CEO of Min's Corportaion in Daegu.

Gahyeon was standing near her, when Minji, Dami and Yoohyeon walked Chorong inside.

Chorong was sitting on the armchair in front of her and Yoohyeon froze her ankles and wrist to the chair.

Chorong looked at Handong in all her glory. In the shape she wasn't for years. The pain and sorrow was in her eyes. Still visible. Unfading.

But she was there. Ten water rings were shining on her fingers even if she couldn't use any power.

Chorong on the other hand was looking like a human wreck. Her eyes were unfocused. She was skinny and dirty.

Handong stood up.

'What I suppose to do with you?' she asked, quietly. 'Is there even a way to pay back for so much suffering?'

Handong looked at Minji and they exchanged millions of hurtful thoughts.

'Hurting out children... Kidnapping... Imprisoning... Aren't you a mother?' he asked with disbelief. 'Kyung deserved to burn in hell for doing all of that... but YOU?! Is there a punishment for you?! You hurt even HIM! Your own soulmate! As if you wouldn't know him! JAEHYUNG WAS KYUNG'S ROLE MODEL!!! And you killed him!!!'

'Always in his shadows... Always being scolded... Treated like a child...' Chorong mumbled under her nose, shaking her head. 'He was suffering...'

'And when you took away his brother, he wasn't!?' Handong lifted her arm, but Minji stopped her, hugging her from behind.

'Don't fall to her level...' she whispered to her ear. 'We have girls around...'

Handong for some time was taking sharp breaths before she nodded.

'You took away my children's father... The love of my life... So just this once... Don't lie and tell me... Did Inho... manipulate you?'

Chorong gulped and shook her head.

'Not the way you could blame him for... Hints. Words... But not mind manipulation...' she said honestly, and tears streamed down her face.

Handong lifted her chin.

'Do you regret it?'

'Every day...'

'But it won't fix anything, you know... Where is Kyung?'

'I haven't seen him for 5 months.' she cried out. 'H-he is just keeping the separation syndrome at bay... meeting me for an hour every 6 months...'

'Where is Taeil?'

'He sometimes visits. Without a word... Make sure I am alive...'

'Cause he doesn't want his father to suffer from the separation syndrome...' Handong said coldly. 'I won't forgive him. But he got the punishment he deserved. But you...' she nodded to Minji.

'You will be put in jail. Kyung too. We let you meet to prevent the separation syndrome when he will need it.' Minji informed her.

'Taeil?'

'Taeil is like a second son to me. And I will take care of him.' Handong said. 'Not like you did it for my children. But you will never see him again.'

Minji nodded to Dami and Yoohyeon.

'Take her out of here...'

Gahyeon moved closer to her mother and embraced her with her arm. Handong pulled her into a hug and whispered:

'I know it won't fix anything...'

'Yoongi said we shouldn't sacrifice more of our time for those people... And I am gonna listen to him...'

Handong chuckled through tears.

'You are gonna listen to your brother for once? I am proud...'

**February 2073, Seoul**

Ren was packing his things in MOI's headquarters, ready to leave the office. Usually he was leaving with Dami or Minji, but he had to finish the report. He was holding his phone near his ear, talking with his unbelievable girlfriend.

'Yes...Yes. I am already at the doors, sweetheart. I will be there in 30.' he disconnected.

Yeah he had a girlfriend...

Officially now! Since New Year's Eve! And a lot of nice kisses...

For training of course...

He lifted his head and saw a man in doors. He blinked.

'Ryu...'

'Hi, Ren... You were a pretty girl...' the other smiled. 'And still as pretty...'

'I'm taken.' Ren said and they laughed.

They hugged each other shortly. They didn't know each other well. But there were things that they were strongly connected by.

'How are you?' Ren asked seriously.

'Fine. Getting better. Coming back to shape...'

Ren was looking at him attentively.

'Do you know the details?'

'Why they kidnapped me? Why they kidnapped Jeon Jungkook? Imprisoned you? Who was actually Na Inho?' Ryu looked down. 'Yeah.'

'What do you think?'

'I don't know... I don't know what I would do in His place... But I feel so heavy sometimes... There is so much guilt there...'

Ren was silent. He was waiting.

'Do you know... anything about him?' Ryu asked.

'He is... trying...' Ren said hesitantly. 'Getting better too, I guess...'

Ryu nodded.

'Thanks...' he turned around.

'Wait.' Ren stopped him and made a phone call. 'Yoongs... can you give me Taeil's number?'

Ryu's eyes widened.

'No. I won't call him...' he said irritatedly. 'Ryu is here... Okay.'

Ren took a pen and paper from the table and scribbled the numbers on it. He gave it to Ryu.

'You will do what you want.'

Ryu was looking at the paper.

'You know... Yoongi and his soulmate... they get to know each other before meeting each other... It's not the bad way...'

'Yeah... Maybe one day...' Ryu said quietly.

Ren patted his back.

'I need to go to my girlfriend... Or she will kick my poor balls for being late...'

'Another savage Min?' Ryu chuckled.

'You have no idea... Getting inside this family is...' Ren shook his head. 'Amazing.'

**August 2073, Hawaii**

2073 was busy from the very beginning. Mainly for Yoongi who wanted to speed up his studies and took all courses he could covering his second, third and fourth year, to graduate together with Jungkook, Soobin and Yoohyeon in March 2074.

Jimin was supporting him, especially since he was getting best marks and during practical projects he was acing them.

The recordings. Mixtapes. Lyrics. Producing music. Working with singers and rappers. He was made for it... And it was showing.

The studios all over the country were interested in him, but he was more

interested in making his own brand.

And Jimin... yeah after they released recorded, remastered *Serendipity* he was not just recognized as an amazing dancer and choreographer, but also a gifted singer.

Jungkook as the one who directed the MV for them was getting recognition too. He just preferred to keep a low profile, not getting involved too much.

He and Taehyung planned to have their own studio taking care of family photos and events. It was important to them. They wanted to lead a peaceful life, giving people memories they could enjoy.

But during the short vacation Gahyeon - promoted to CEO of Mins Corporation by her mother - fulfilled her promise to Yoohyeon and organized their vacation.

But flying for a week to Hawaii with a bunch of people was pure chaos. Whole Red String. Red Alert, Handong and Yoohyeon's parents made a loud crowd of more than 20 people...

Gahyeon rented the whole beach house and private beach for them.

When Wooyoung saw the beach, setting sun, golden sand, he dropped to Gahyeon's knees and said:

'It's a paradise!!! Kick Ren out and marry me!'

Ren was right behind him and kicked his back, making his face fall on the sand.

'What did you say?'

'Have you just kicked my baby?' San frowned, walking to them angrily.

'It will be a mess...' Namjoon faked a cry, hiding his face in his hands.

'TAE!! TAE!! Come here...' Jungkook giggling crazily was running from the waves and Taehyung was just taking photos of him looking at the sunset.

'It's so beautiful...' Soobin sighed.

Jimin and Yoongi disappeared somewhere for a bit.

They have a late night dinner on the patio lit by torches and fairy lights. It was loud and crowded. Cheerful laughs were mixing with the sound of waves.

They brought wine and drinks after eating and were just talking. It was around 9 pm when the lights turned off suddenly.

Only the torches were lighting up the night. Jungkook and Taehyung stood up a little nervously.

'Is it something with the power?' Taehyung asked, but then through the patio doors Yoohyeon and Yeonjun walked in with the cake.

Big white cake. Adorned by the flowers... With two figurines on the top.

They stood it in front of Jungkook and Taehyung and they saw the VK symbol on the top too.

'Your wedding cake!!!' Jimin clapped his hands excitedly. 'You didn't allow me to throw the wedding reception so here it is!! I will do it partially through the years!

Jungkook and Taehyung looked at each other, shocked and then at all of the people around. Holding the glasses with champagne.

'Congrats on being married for almost two years!' Yoohyeon said, smiling widely.

'You know!!' Jimin said to everybody. 'When I asked Jungkook what tradition he would choose if he would have a traditional reception he said: feeding Taehyung with the cake.'

Taehyung looked at Jungkook softly.

'That's so like you...' he whispered.

'Aaaandddd... we can say a lot about you...' Minho said, pulling out Jungkook's katana.

'But definitely not that you are normal...' Han continued and gave the sword to Jungkook.

'You can't cut the cake in the normal way either!' Yeonjun finished.

'It's clean.' Jin assured him, when Jungkook hesitantly looked at him.

Of course Jin cleaned it personally, when he heard what the bunch planned!

'CUT THE CAKE!' Dami whistled.

'I'm ready!' Hoseok turned on the camera.

Jungkook and Taehyung were blushing but Jungkook took the katana with both hands and Taehyung stood behind him. His husband embraced his hands on the sword handle and "accidently" he pressed it more into Jungkook's crotch.

'Ups...' Taehyung chuckled deeply into Jungkook's ear.

'Behave.' Jungkook said warningly. 'Or I will need to redo this recording dad is making...'

They lifted the sword and cut the first piece of the cake. Soobin put it on the plate for them and handed it to Jungkook.

Jungkook took the fork and with an absolutely soft and whipped smile he fed it to Taehyun, who held his wrist to lend to the sweet and tasted it.

'SHARE IT!!' Wooyoung screamed.

Taehyung wiggled his eyebrow and before Jungkook could say anything he kissed him, giving him all the sweetness from his lips.

Their family started to clap loudly.

'Now cut the rest and gimme some!' Jin said, sticking out his plate.

'Yes dad!' Jungkook said, and cut a huge piece for him.

Jin nodded approvingly.

'You are the perfect son-in-law.'

'Dad... your sugar...' Taehyung started.

'Shut up.'

Jin said and walked away with his cake.

Hoseok took tons of photos with Taehyung, Jungkook, the cake and everybody around.

The party was getting longer and more tipsy.

At midnight Jimin stood up and said to Han.

'Bring it.'

Han ran to the house excitedly.

Unexpectedly a bit tipsy, Yoongi chuckled. And looked at Dami.

'Ready to lose?'

'Oh bring it on...' she looked at him challengingly.

Jin looked around suspiciously.

'Lose what?'

Namjoon gulped.

'THE KISSING TOURNAMENT!!!!' Han ran holding a trophy over his head.

It was a golden trophy ordered by Handong who was playing a referee tonight. When she heard about it she wanted to enjoy it. Especially... since Gahyeon told her...

The trophy was also filled with cash...

'Jimin...' Yoongi pointed at the trophy. 'I want that.'

'Hey, you are already rich!' Wooyoung protested.

'I want the trophy. You can take the cash...' Yoongi shrugged.

'So instead of wedding games... we have the kissing tournament!!' Jimin said.

'And the best part of it is...that...' he bowed to Taehyung to let him speak further.

'Mr&Mrs Jeon, Mr&Mr Park and Mr&Mrs Kim and of course Mr Kim Namjoon and Mr Kim Seokjin... are... PARTICIPATING!!!!'

Jin turned to Namjoon.

'WHAT?!'

'Honey... I- I... had to...' Namjoon gulped.

'YOU AGREED TO THIS?!!!!'

'Just because Hoseok and Chanyeol blackmailed me! They said they will spill to kids about that time in college...' Namjoon brought his face to Jin's ear and whispered something.

Jin got pale. He looked at Namjoon with wide eyes.

'They wouldn't...'

'We would.' Hoseok and Chanyeol assured him unisono.

'Oh come one, Jinnie!!!' Minji clapped. 'Just let the kids have fun! Not that we hadn't done it during college...'

'Agreed.' Baekhyun nodded.

Jennie and Kai giggled.

'OUR KIDS WEREN'T AROUND THEN!' Jin got red.

'Not like they are saints...' Baekhyun looked at Jimin with a not-amused face.

'Love you daddy...' Jimin sent him a flying kiss.

Yoongi grunted and Jimin looked at him curiously.

'You don't have a daddy kink, what's the matter.' he said as if it was absolutely normal.

'Maybe I will develop. Shut up...' Yoongi burked.

'WHY ARE YOU DOING THIS?' Jin looked at Hoseok.

'Minji forced me,' he shrugged.

Jin looked at Minji.

'Why are YOU doing this?' he repeated.

'I have my reasons...' she replied calmly and Jungkook smirked.

The reason was... in MOI there was a love drunk puppy in love with his mom. A young kid, Jungkook's age. He was writing cards for her and leaving her soft toys and flowers. Not speaking to her, just silently crushing.

When Jungkook discovered it by accident he asked his mother if he should talk with the kid, but she said he was not dangerous. He didn't have a soulmate and it was just a baby-crush. But she asked Jungkook not to mention it to Hoseok, and that's when Jungkook got suspicious.

Apparently, his father... was rather dangerous when it was coming to "his girl" and the innocent kid wouldn't survive...

'AND YOU?!' Jin looked at Baekhyun.

'Chanyeol promised me something for that...' the other shrugged.

Jin looked at Chanyeol, who looked inside his glass.

'I just want to do it...' he said, not looking at Jimin.

Yeah. Jimin used his father's beloved "rag" again. Jeeze... this stupid shirt should turn into dust at this point... Jimin lost count how many times he saved it from the trash can... But well. Came in handy now...

And well after Hoseok and Chanyeol were sharing the miserable fate, it was easy for Taehyung to convince them that Namjoon should suffer with them...

Kai was so hyped up after knowing the rest will participate that Yoohyeon didn't even have to start the topic. He demanded they will include him too.

'OKAY!! So the longest kiss is winning! Every second counts. No breaks allowed! Tongue included!' Jimin spoked about the rules and gave Handong the timer.

'Who's starting?' Han asked.

'WE CAN!' Jungkook lifted his hand, eagerly.

Taehyung looked at him surprised.

'Why?' he asked quietly.

Jungkook leaned to his ear.

'Cause we can disappear on the beach when they will be busy and do much more interesting things...'

Taehyung looked at him impressed.

'Oh, jeeze... I love you so fucking much...'

Jungkook winked at him.

'I know...'

'Okay the first couple is pointing to the next one and so on...' Jimin said and nodded to Taehyung and Jungkook.

Jungkook embraced Taehyung's neck not caring about the tournament, already thinking about the waves and sand and them being alone.

Taehyung's arms wrapped around his waist when he leaned his head.

'START!!!' Handong said.

Han frowned and scratched his chin.

'They practiced...'

'3 minutes 54 seconds!' Handong said and noted on the card.

Taehyung looked at Jin.

'Your turn...' he said.

Jin huffed in anger, and pulled Namjoon's shirt.

'I will freaking kill you, Joonie!' he said.

'Or you can win the cash...' Namjoon said cleverly.

Jin squinted his eyes.

'Start!' Handong said and Jin literally jumped on his husband. Namjoon caught him when his legs wrapped around his waist.

'WHOA!!!' Taehyung and Jungkook started to clapp, shocked.

Taehyung pulled the camera and started to take pictures.

'Our children will see that!' he said while giggling to Jungkook.

After the kiss was super prolonged, Jungkook and Taehyung quietly started to take steps back to the stairs to the beach. And disappeared while giggling and holding hands on the beach.

After a lot of kissing the tournament was finished... Jin stopped being angry after Handong gave him the trophy.

Yes. Mr Kim Seokjin and Mr Kim Namjoon won the tournament with the results of 7 minutes 36 seconds.

Hobi pouted.

'They were always winning...'

'Don't sulk baby... we were winning in something else...' Minji winked at him.

Dami and Yoongi were glaring at their identical result.

'Something is wrong...'

'Yeah we should repeat it...'

'Not repeat. Train...' Jimin grabbed Yoongi's hand and pulled him to the house. 'Taekook started an hour ago...' he added, giggling.

'Well I am absolutely content with my second place...' Wooyoung sighed.

'And I am with my third...' Soobin looked at Han, lifting his eyebrow.

Han pouted.

'HOW? You are practically a virgin!'

Soobin smirked.

'There is just one difference between me and You Hanie... What's happening in my bedroom... Stays in my bedroom...'

Soobin and Yoohyeon high fived each other.

'And now excuse me...' he said quietly, proud of himself. 'I need to take care of my hyung...'

Yeonjun embraced Soobin's waist and turned around to send Han a proud gaze and stuck his tongue out.

Han squinted his eyes.

'I underestimated them...'

'But still... I am shocked Taekook are the last ones...' Minho frowned.

'Yeah... even though we were better and we just started...' Ren said.

San smirked.

'I don't think they lost... I think they moved the party somewhere else...'

Jungkook and Taehyung had their own private party on the ocean shore.

Surrounded by waves, when their bodies were diving inside the sand...

Under the palms.

The night.

And the starry sky.

**March 2074, Seoul**

The day Jungkook, Soobin and Yoohyeon graduated and Min Yoongi skipped two years together with them.

As the top student and most prominent, new discovered, music genius, he was asked to give the speech.

He didn't expect to see all the Red String and Red Alert in the audience.

But they were there. With his mom...

Everybody was there.

Namjoon handed him a diploma. Hugged him shortly and showed him the lectern.

Yoongi in a stupid hat and even more stupid robe looked at the crowd of students, parents and professors.

'I actually...' he laughed awkwardly. 'Didn't prepare a long, motivational speech... I am not Professor Kim...' he smiled at Namjoon and the audience laughed. 'There were times... I thought I will never be blessed enough to attend college... It's a privilege. And I was grateful beyond words for people that led me here. Supported me through it. Inspired me to create... Write... Compose... It made me realize... It is never too late to gain the skills and knowledge... Change one's course of action... I didn't want to be the top student. I am sure there are students with more knowledge around. But I am glad I could compose and the music I write was recognized...It means a lot. I can promise you I won't waste this chance. And bring astounding and amazing music and words to this world. As an Interdependent and as human...'

He stepped back from the microphone, but stopped and got back.

'One more thing...' he said and looked through the crowd until he found Jimin. He smiled with his astounding, gummy smile. 'Park Jimin?'

Red String looked at Jimin, whose eyes widened at Yoongi's bold, unexpected call. A few minutes later he slide from the chair holding his heart, while the Red String started to clap and whistle after savage Min Yoonig, from the lectern, in the dean's presence, said:

'I hope your fourth finger is empty today... cause I am gonna put a ring on it.'

---

8100 words...

Epilogue next time? I don't know. Depends on how long the scenes will get xD.

YEAAAAAA!!!!!!! WHEN I SAW IT I HAD TO MIXED IT SOMEWHERE!

BlairWitch91❤❤

# Epilog: See you soon!

**2074**

The whole 2074 was a year when all of them were taking big steps into adulthood. Their relationships and bonds were getting even deeper.

As they all were planning to move to Daegu they were preparing the plans for their future there. Jimin's parents started to move their company there. They were sound engineers and Jungkook often worked for and with them during bigger projects and recordings.

As a linguist Yeonjun was now working as a translator - often with Yongguk or Namjoon - but Gahyeon was trying to snatch him for Mins' Inc.

Soobin was beginning his job as a teacher. He loved to work with children. Especially the youngest ones.

Namjoon, Minji, Dami and Ren were already involved in ICI's and MOI's affairs in Daegu.

Namjoon wanted to continue his job as a professor and he was in the middle of talks about his nomination as the Dean of the Daegu University, which was getting back on track. Minho, who was a graduate of International Relations, became his assistant.

Jin decided he will open private practice so it wasn't a problem to him in the long run.

Hoseok was mainly focused on Jimin who was a rising star of the music industry together with his genius fiance. As he was busy with choreographies for him and other artists, Han was the one who was managing his Dance Studio.

Working in Mins Corporation didn't stop San or Wooyoung from getting involved in Jimin's performances as they loved dance and were incredible performers.

Yoohyeon... well she was one of the best programmers in Korea, she didn't have a problem with getting the projects, while working for her father, military, ICI, MOI... or Gahyeon...

Jungkook and Taehyung didn't open their studio right away. They did a lot of different projects together and separately, but they wanted to start their own company after moving to Daegu. So they used this year to find projects abroad and travel.

Taehyung had done photos for a lot of magazines. Some of his artistic works were pretty famous. Jungkook directed a commercial for one of the travel companies working under Mins Inc. while they were in Dubai.

They visited Egypt, India, Greece, Scotland, Mexico... It wasn't fancy travelling if it wasn't connected to business when they have too carry all the equipment. Just travelling itself... They often used the oportunity to spent nights on the beaches, in the tent in the forests or meadows, on the lakes shores, while walking through different places. There were moments they were almost like gypsys. Pretending to be street singers or dancers. They used the money they earned on their photos, recordings or while making the small projects - to travel, keeping a low profile... And enjoying the absolute freedom and nature...

They visit all the places they knew from their dreams... And they even met with Yoongi and Jimin in Japan while the duo were attending the festival there.

But the most amazing moment was when they found...

*Erv.*

The legendary Island of *Eadar-eisimeleach*...

It wasn't easy to find it. But they knew where to go... It was impossible to reach it another way beside the ship... Or wings.

It was a small island on the Atlantic Ocean. Located on the map under Iceland and west of Ireland. There were no human beings there.

The air was fresh. The forests and grass were greener than anywhere else...

They were walking between the memories of buildings and people that were long forgotten.

And the lake where everything began... was calmly waiting for the first rays of the morning sun. Just before the dawn, when the silence was the most divine music...

Norns were free from their prison and there was no magic there anymore...

But it was everywhere else.

In the wind. Between trees. Inside the ground.

In them.

Walking on the lake shore, with their ankles covered by the water and tightly joined hands, they were paying respect to the place where their ancestors came

from.

'We should show it to appa one day...' Taehyung said. 'He will be overwhelmed...'

'Yeah...' Jungkook smiled lightly. 'I am glad he told us... that Mrs Jisoo and Mrs Rose adopted those kids...'

The kids Nonahi once took as hostages, were taken care of and loved... And when Namjoon told Jungkook and Taehyung that... they didn't even know they needed this knowledge, to get rid of invisible weight on their hearts.

'Ready to come back home?' Taehyung asked.

'Yeah we have to...' Jungkook smiled. 'We have the wedding to prepare...'

'Gahyeon, Mrs Handongs and Jimin are already at it... We should just be quiet to not get involved in the chaos...' Taehyung chuckled.

'When are Jimin and Yoongi coming back from the States?'

'Yoongi is working with MAX and Jimin is recording something new, so who knows? In a month?'

'Yoongi wants me to record '*Stay alive*'. It's a promotional song for an anime...'

'Will you do it?'

'Yeah. There won't be an MV or performances. So there is no problem. I don't want attention other than yours...' Jungkook smiled.

'Yeah, that's why no matter what Gahyeon will promise us we are not modeling for their fashion brand...'

'We will send Yeonjun... and Minho... Anybody else actually...' Jungkook giggled.

He put his head on Taehyung's shoulder.

'I want a normal... daily... crazy life... With people who know me.'

'Yeah... for the first time... we should get old together...' Taehyung pressed his cheek to Jungkook's hair.

The rush in their blood they felt all the time during their childhood and teenage years calmed down. They were embracing every normal day absolutely content with it. Welcoming every daily struggle. Enjoying domestic, lazy days.

Planning an absolutely simple life, which - they knew - would be extraordinary either way.

They were still the Red String... The most powerful MOI's unit in history. They were ready to act if needed.

But to be honest, they weren't bothered by it... There wasn't anything that could threaten them anymore.

'I'm glad we are not selling the houses... I would miss them...' Jungkook frowned.

As future plans were on the run, they decided that Red String members would be shareholders of the houses as their bases in Seoul.

Jungkook and Taehyung with their parents were looking for new houses in Daegu. They had to be close. They were too attached to each other...

And of course... the rest of their people were thinking exactly the same...

Yoonguk was laughing at them that they should just buy the whole estate...

Living more than an hour away from each other was not considered!

Taehyung looked at his phone.

'There is no connection here... They all will freak out. We are out of reach for more than 12 hours and flying back to Ireland will take us next 3...'

'Yeah. We should get going...'

Their intuition was right. When they were back to the small family guesthouse in one of small vilages, they were staying in, their phones were blown up with notification about missed phone calls and messages.

'*Call Yeonjun*?' Jungkook asked, seeing Dami's text with thousands of exclamation marks.

'Something happened.' Taehyung stated and nervously called Yeonjun.

Jungkook was looking at him anxiously, gulping hard.

'Yeonjun? Are you okay? Is Soobin okay?!'

Yeonjun was silent for a second, which just made Jungkook and Taehyung more panicked. But finally he choked out:

'We succeeded...'

Jungkook grabbed Taehyung's arm and squeezed it.

'I will be a dad...' Yeonjun breathed out.

Taehyung let out a surprised laugh.

'Oh my... That's wonderful!'

'Wonderful?! I am panicking... And Soobin is... jeeze, he is glowing...'

Jungkook smiled widely and teared up a bit.

They knew Yeonjun and Soobin were starting the pregnancy procedure just after Soobin's graduation. Because Soobin didn't want to wait. He loved children so much, and they knew he was perfect for being a father. He was this kind of patient and gentle person...

And now The Youngest of them was carrying a baby.

'Calm down, Yeonie...' Jungkook said. 'We are so happy... I can't wait to see you!'

'Yeah, come back... Yoohyeon wants to move here... I will kill her I swear!'

Jungkook giggled.

'Her bestie will be a dad... she needs time to process this...'

'Does the rest know already?'

'No... Just Dami, Yoohyeon and you two... That's why I need you here! Someone needs to help me calm down the circus...'

Taehyung and Jungkook looked at each other and gulped, when in front of their eyes a premonition of armageddon made by the cheering squad appeared.

Boom!

Jimin...

Boom!

Han...

Boom!

Wooyoung...

Boom!

Gahyeon...

'We are coming back right away!' Taehyung said quickly. 'Hang in there!'

Jungkook started to run around the room, throwing things into their bags.

'Thanks!' Yeonjun almost cried.

'Take care of Soobin! Tell Dami to barricade doors and stop Yoohyeon from spilling tea!' Jungkook yelled.

'Don't panic.' Taehyung added.

'Too late!!!!'

'You will be a dad. Get your shit together...' Taehyung said sternly.

Yeonjun sniffed.

'I needed that. Thanks. Gonna cuddle my babies now...'

'Yeah... Congrats once more...' Taehyung smiled.

Taehyung and Jungkook smiled at each other widely after Tae disconnected.

'Jeeze!! They got married 3 months ago! They don't waste time!' Jungkook giggled.

'And we will have a baby present during Yoonmin's wedding...' Taehyung shook his head, still a bit in shock.

'The next year was shaping up to be chaotic? Now? Now it's a freaking merry-go-round...'

**15 of June 2075, Seoul**

In the middle of June Min Yoongi and Park Jimin got married.

It was a big celebration, planned for a year.

No matter how Yoongi would prefer just a quiet Caim Ceremony his fiance, mother and sister wouldn't let that happen, so he was just nodding to them, closing himself inside his genius lab most of the time.

A big tent was spread all over the garden in Mountain House, Dragon and Hwasa

offered as the celebration place.

Everything was covered in lights. The trees' trunks, the branches, the house. White flowers and candles were everywhere. The dancing place was prepared between tables.

The arch where the official was standing was made of flowers and leaves.

The first part of the wedding was the one according to Korean law. The Caim Ceremony was planned for midnight.

Just before the ceremony started most of the people gathered around Soobin, who was holding a little girl in his arms.

Three months old Choi Isseul "Issie" was born on 23rd of March 2075.

They all were cooing at her. Wanting to see her gummy, sleepy smiles and frowns. Everybody wanted to have a minute for themselves with their first little one.

Soobin and Yeonjun were visibly tired and super happy.

'We should sit... It's starting...' Taehyung, as Jimin's best man, informed them. He looked around and saw Jungkook standing already near Yoongi under the arch.

'I will tell others... ' Dami said to Taehyung, while Yeonjun took the baby and walked with Soobin to the rows of chairs.

Yoohyeon ran to them.

'Jimin is ready...' she said.

'Omg! I am so nervous!' Han said and Minho laughed, taking his hand.

'Idiot! Your wedding will be next year...'

'And yours?' Han looked at Wooyoung, when they sat next to them in the first row.

'We will just inform you after coming back from Vegas one day...' San shrugged.

'I would like to see that... Gahyeon won't let that happen...' Ren, appearing behind him, patted his back.

Wooyoung checked him out and beamed in a smile.

'Jeeze you are still so pretty!'

'We will let her organize Caim...' San replied unbothered.

'You better!' Gahyeon stood next to Ren, with her arms on her hips. She looked at Wooyoung, still staring at Ren. 'Stop looking at him!' she pressed her hand to his face and turned it forcefully.

'Possesive...' Ryu chuckled behind them.

Gahyeon looked around and saw a lonely person standing in a far away place of the garden. Ryu's eyes followed her gaze.

'Don't worry...' he said. 'He is not here to cause trouble...'

'I know... But this dick doesn't have to stand so far away!' she frowned and walked to her cousin aggressively.

After a few minutes everything calmed down. Everyone was in the right place.

Baekhyun walked Handong to the first row where Minji, Hobi, Namjoon and Jin were already sitting.

Yeonjun blew in the air a bit of his power and the light around them started to dim a bit.

The music started to play.

**(♪Music tip: A Thousand Years by Christina Perri♪)**

'Don't be so nervous, hyung...' Jungkook whispered to Yoongi, who was brushing his sweaty hands over his pants. 'You both were waiting for so long for each other...'

'I am not nervous...' Yoongi said and gulped. 'I just want him to be here already...'

'Well...' Jungkook turned to the aisle. 'Lucky for you... he is coming...'

Jimin holding Chanyeol's arm was standing at the beginning of the aisle. Wearing the white sparkly attire. He was tearing up a bit. But he was forcing himself to not step impatiently or run all the way and just let his father lead him.

Jungkook and Taehyung exchanged glances and, with a knowing smiles, looked at the moment the world disappeared for Jimin and Yoongi.

Chanyeol with twisted lips, trying to conquer his pout, kissed Jimin's cheek and gave Yoongi his hand. Jimin smiled brightly and stood next to him.

The official from the Civil Office Department started the ceremony.

'You can exchange vows...' he said after the official statements.

Jimin grunted.

'I wanted to be the first one... cause I know you will make me cry... and I will look ugly...' he said and Yoongi bit back his smile.

'You never look ugly...' he said.

'Shut up...' Jimin mumbled and shook his head.

People laughed. But Yoongi just squeezed his fiance hands.

'I was waiting for you... and I would wait for you for a thousand years more...' Jimin started after taking a deep breath. 'There was a time I didn't know your name or your smile... Yet, I was enchanted by the unexpected moments of care and sweetness you tried to hide under the sharp tongue. But jeeze! I love your tongue!'

Yoongi looked at their connected hands, biting back his embaressed smile.

'I know you expected a funny, absolutely embarrassing speech and I was tempted to do it, but in the end... I just have few things to vow to you...'

Jimin lifted his head and looked at Yoongi seriously:

'Min Yoongi, I vow to risk my life each morning to wake you up...'

The sudden amusement after Jimin's statment changed quickly into emotion, when he continued and his voice trembled:

'I vow that I won't ever demand from you to be perfect... I want all your flows. Your anger. Your insecurities. I will embrace them and I will fight with them. I promise you fights till down if needed... till we will both agree that I am right...'

Yoongi laughed.

'I promise to never let you fight on your own against the world. And always bring your stubborn ass to my side where it belongs... I love you, Yoongi and I promise you will never be alone....'

Jimin squeezed Yoongi's hands, when he saw the other eyes were glossy.

'Hey! Pull yourself together!'

'I'm not crying... My eyes are sweating...' Yoongi said and Jimin smiled brightly hearing the obvious lie.

Yoongi cleared his throat and said:

'First I should... thank your parents...' he looked at Chanyeol and Baekhyun. 'For letting you grow up to be this energetic, annoying, loud, kinky, funny, bratty, cheerful, petty idiot...'

At this point the Official didn't know what was happening, but the rest of the guests were absolutely moved by the way Yoonmin was coping with each other.

Jimin's heart skipped when he realized Yoongi used the same words he used when he asked him what he wished his soulmate would be.

'Because, Park Jimin... You are the most crazy and beautiful miracle of my life...'

Jimin's eyes widened. He really thought Yoongi will just... go through it as fast as he can, not that he would hear something like this.

'I can't believe I am saying this out loud... when all those people are looking at me, but I...' Yoongi hand for a moment let go of Jimin's to touch his cheek. 'I hopelessly... DO love you... When I fell in love with your voice... It was just the beginning of the endless things about you I can discover and fall in love with...'

Yoongi pinched the cheek he was carresing to stop the sudden trembling of Jimin's lips.

'So, I promise that I will turn to you every time I face a problem... Never again let you wait too long... I promise I won't whine too much about being dragged to every place you want to see and not oppose too hard when you come up with another crazy game... I vow to apologize for your inappropriate behavior on your behalf... And... '

Yoongi peeked at the crowd and said quietly:

'I promise you I won't banish you from sex even for spilling too many details...'

There was an excited scream heard from the guests, which strangely sounded like Han...

Jimin's mouth fell open. He blinked surprised. His eyes shined like stars...

Yoongi lifted his eyebrow impatiently.

'OH MY GOD! Fuck it!' Jimin said and threw himself at Yoongi.

He embraced his neck and kissed him in front of a shocked face of the Official.

Taehyung and Jungkook were biting their lips hard not to burst out laughing.

Baekhyun and Chanyeol, who were quietly wiping the tears a second ago, covered their faces with their hands, absolutely embarrassed.

The Official glanced at Taehyung looking for help.

Jungkook snorted, not being able to hold it back longer.

'Give them a second...' Taehyng whispered, showing five fingers to the guy.

Yoongi finally stood Jimin on his feet and grunted:

'Y-yeah...'

Jimin smiled at the Official as if nothing have happened.

'Rings...' Jungkook cued the guy quietly.

'You can now exchange rings...' The clerk composed himself.

Jungkook handed the ring to Yoongi and Taehyung gave another one to Jimin.

After the traditional words, The Official announce:

'By virtue of the law given to me before the Korean government, I pronounce you husband and husband.'

He looked hesitant at the couple, but Jungkook again prompted kindly:

'Kiss.'

The guy looked at him.

'They won't mind...' Jungkook assured him.

'Y-you can now kiss your husband...' The Official said to Yoongi.

'I am terribly sorry for my him, sir...' Yoongi said to him, fulfilling one of his promises, just after it was made, but Jimin pulled him by his shirt and kissed him again.

The crowd started to clap, cheer and whistle, before the newlyweds went together down the aisle and the flowers were thrown at them.

The wishes and congratulations took long. Hugs, kisses and cries. But finally they all sat behind the tables, under the lights.

The Official was invited too, but he quickly excused himself with an important family matter.

After the dinner and first toast the lights suddenly were turned off completely. Only above Isseul's head small balls of colorful light, casted by her fathers, were floating to not make her nervous.

Everybody excitedly turned on their seats to face the dancing place.

Taehyung and Jungkook were sitting by the table with Yoongi, Jimin and their parents.

They felt the movement of the newlyweds, moving their chairs.

'Where is the mic?' Jimin whispered to Taehyung.

'I guess near speakers...' Taehyung said and stood up as well to help him find it. 'You want to say something before?'

'Mhm...'

'Oh God... I hate this part...' Yoongi sighed.

'It's just a dance, hyung...' Jungkook giggled.

'Yeah, but he totally went overboard... He is the dance monster, you know it...'

'Calm down. Calm down. No worries... he will lead you...'

'Yeah but I suppose I'm on the other side already... And I don't know if I will stand in the right place! He was supposed to jump on me! What if he falls? What if I won't catch him?!'

'Jeeze!' Jungkook laughed and grabbed Yoongi's wrist. 'Believe me wherever you will stand he will aim right! It's Jimin we are talking about!'

Jungkook led Yoongi on the other side of the dancing place.

'Don't worry... You practiced! Won't be that bad after you will start...'

'I didn't...'

'What?'

'I didn't practice...'

'What?' Jungkook repeated dumbfounded.

'I am too lazy...'

'Are you kidding me?!' Jungkook asked dumbfounded. 'Are you going to just stand there and let him dance around you?!!!!'

'Actually... no...' Yoongi stood behind Jungkook, holding his shoulders. 'You will just take my place...'

'HUUUUUH!?' Jungkook wanted to whoop his ass for the suggestion. How could he do this to Jimin!

But at the same time Jimin's voice was heard from the speakers.

'You all are aware I love dance... Especially the private one I am going to give my husband tonight...'

'WE KNOW!' Wooyoung screamed when the guest giggled.

'But you know it will require a LOT of energy and I am tired from all those emotions, so... I will just rest now and give you the best love story my eyes knew for years...'

Jungkook gulped.

'I know they are already an old married couple... But seriously, when were they ever not?'

Jungkook froze, realizing what was going on.

'Oh no...'

'Chim...' Taehyung's muffled voice was heard through the mic.

'Shut up, TaeTae! I warned you... Haven't I? I will do it partially year by year...'

The sounds of wrestling were heard in the darkness.

'This is the worst thing you have ever done to embarrass me...' Tae whispered.

'Oh yeah? Forgot the time I made you think I kissed JK because you didn't want to?'

'I'm out...' Jungkook wanted to turn around, but Yoongi's hands stopped him forcefully.

'No you are not.'

'Why are you doing it hyung?!' he whined.

'If it won't put me into the center of attention I approve...' Yoongi giggled behind him.

Finally a pitched sound of mic was heard and Jimin huffed:

'Han... music. Yeonjun... Lights...'

The beam of light exposed the dancing place. Yoongi and Jungkook were struggling on one side of the circle of light, and Taehyung and Jimin were fighting over the mic on the other side.

Taehyung lifted his eyes at Jungkook who was standing in front of him and they both froze.

Jimin snatched the mic from Tae.

'Ladies and gentlemen... lets invite them to their first dance...'

Clapping was heard and a slow song started to play.

**(♪Music tip: Until I Found You by Stephen Sanchez, Em Beihold♪)**

Yoongi disappeared and Jimin ran away from Tae's reach as well, saying at the end:

'Don't worry uncle Hobi... Minho will record it for us...'

The song was playing, but Jungkook and Taehyung were for a moment absolutely shocked. Their hands were sweating. Their cheeks were red.

Taehyung hesitantly tilted his head and smiled a bit and...

As always... Their magic happened.

They could only see each other. In elegant suits... with all the little lights around. Abit of an evening mist on the grass. Romantic song in the background.

They made a slow hesitant step towards each other. Then the next one. And finally they were so close, there was no more room between their feet.

Jungkook's hand touched Taehyung's fingers and traveled up through the soft fabric of the sleeve, until he reached the shoulder, while at the same time Taehyung's reach for his second hand and cupped it with his own. Taehyung's hand rested in the curve on Jungkook's waist, when he pulled him a bit closer and they started to sway slowly to the music.

'I decided I will kill them later...' Jungkook whispered, mesmerized by reflexes of lights sparking in Taehyung's eyes.

'I will hide the bodies...' Taehyung purred in response, not being able to look anywhere else. Absolutely bewitched by Jungkook's dilated pupils.

Their bodies switched to the perfectly synchronized rhythm they knew for ages.

The soft, small steps of their feet predicting each other's movements. Knowing the way of the other breathing pace...

Feeling the strong, calm puls under each other's skin... Running through the veins... but beating to the rhythm of the other one's heart.

Jungkook's fingers caressed the hair on Taehyung's nape gently.

Taehyung's eyes dropped to Jungkook's lips, so to tempted he brought his face closer and pressed their cheeks together, singing quietly to Jungkook's ear:

*'...I said, 'I would never fall unless it's you I fall into...'*

Jungkook's lips brushed over his cheek.

Yoongi stood next to Jimin, and Jimin instantly embraced his arm and pressed his head to his shoulder, looking at smiling Taehyung, who made Jungkook body bent back, making their noses touched. They smiled at each other softly and happily.

'It's my favorite love story...' Jimin whispered.

Yoongi kissed Jimin's head.

'I know...'

'I will keep this flame safe...'

'We will...' Yoongi corrected him. 'And they will keep ours for us...'

'Yeah...' Jimin sighed. 'I love you.'

'I already said it today...' Yoongi peeked at Jimin defensively.

Jimin smirked.

'And I will make you say it more...'

'Later.'

'Much later...' Jimin nodded, letting the sight of his favorite couple having their first married dance, erase the memories of fear and despair...

**August, 2075, Seoul**

Taehyung and Jungkook wanted to use the first weekend to look for suitable places for the studio in Daegu.

They already chose the house... Not like it was hard... When they were looking through offers for fun they checked... and what a "coincidence" it was - Kims' old house. The house they grow up in. The house with the cherry tree in the garden - was put on sale.

So they didn't think much... It was in the city suburbs... Not so far away from the city center and from the farming areas.

Their parents looked for a place nearby.

Gahyeon, Handong, Ren, San and Wooyoung already moved to Daegu.

Gahyeon rented a small guest house on Min's mansion grounds to Wooyoung and San so they would be close, but have their own space.

Ren was hesitant. He wanted to rent an apartment for the time being, but he got a head smack from Handong and was fastly engaged with Gahyeon, so he won't even think about living anywhere else then in Mins Manor...

Yoongi and Jimin decided to restore one of the houses owned by Jaehyun and move there. Yoongi - to be away from the business circus and compose in peace. And Jimin - to be closer to Taehyung and Jungkook.

But currently Mr & Mr Min were in their honeymoon journey working more than resting, but enjoying the music festivals all over the world.

Dami and Yoohyeon chose the apartment close to the city center, halfway to Mins and Kims. Soobin and Yeonjun were still looking. They had to consider that they wanted to have more children and what would be the best place for them.

Han and Minho were waiting. They wanted to depend on their decision on where Hoseok would have his dance studio, so Han would have an easy way to work there and Minho wouldn't have far away to University and Namjoon's office.

Taehyung and Jungkook were discussing two places for the studio, when Jungkook's phone rang.

'It's Soobin...'

'Hyung! We have an emergency!'

'What happened?' Jungkook looked at Taehyung anxiously.

'Well... you know... We planned to go to Daegu tomorrow to look at the houses we wanted to check... Yoohyeon and Dami were supposed to take care of Iseul, but Yoo caught a cold and I don't want Issie to get another infection. She just recovered from one... And you know I love how Han is playing with her, cause I think they are absolutely on the same level of development, but I don't want to leave her with him alone for now... And my parents - you know - my mom is so dramatic...'

'Soobin... you want us to take care of Iseul?' Jungkook and Taehyung exchanged gazes.

'Can you? We will be back Sunday evening!'

'Ummm... Are you sure?' Jungkook hesitated. 'She was never alone with us...'

'You for sure will do better than Minsung! And you know... hyung... Dami is doing great with her, you are saying you won't manage?'

Jungkook looked at the phone with squinted eyes and Taehyung knew what was coming.

'Okay. Should we go to you or you will bring her to us?'

'We will bring her and everything she needs and instruct you. We want her to get used to different places and people around so she won't be stressed...'

'Bam won't be a problem?'

'Nope. She is not allergic...'

'Okay. Bring her then...'

'Thanks, hyung!'

Taehyung looked at Jungkook slowly.

'Well... we knew it would happen one day...' Taehyung sighed and squeezed Jungkook's hand under the table.

Of course they were taking care of Iseul. Of course they were carrying her around and playing with her. Taking her photos. Bringing her gifts...

But never just the two of them.

They were avoiding staying with her alone.

Just the two of them together... with the child. It was causing some kind of heaviness and fear inside their veins.

It was this one fear they never got rid of...

What if they try... and will lose their children again? Maybe Nonahi was a pile of dust now, but it didn't erase all the danger from the world.

'We just need to go through it...' Jungkook gulped. 'If anything, parents are home, so we can just let four of them teach us everything...'

'Maybe dad stops being on the verge of a stroke at any mention of becoming grandfather...' Taehyung joked and pulled Jungkook from his seat on his lap.

He put his head on Jungkook's shoulder, embracing his waist.

'I will unseal you...' he whispered. 'It will make us feel more certain...'

'Yeah.' Jungkook hid his nose into Taehyung's hair. 'Nothing can touch this child.'

Few hours later after an hour-long essential-course from the parents, Jungkook and Taehyung were standing above the grow bassinet with a stand set standing in the middle of the living room, where Yeonjun put it. On the couch there were like 3 bags of everything Issie "would need".

'Why 3 bags?' Jungkook whispered hesitantly.

'As I can say anything... one is for food. Second is with clothes. And the third one is with diapers...'Taehyung gulped.

'For not even two days?' Jungkook whispered, looking at him terrified.

Taehyung spread his arms as if he didn't know.

Bam was sitting next to their legs looking at the bassinet with the same confusion on his face.

'They say she slept in the car so it's good not to wake her up...' Jungkook said, he leaned to look at the child.

'She is so small...' Taehyung cooed at her.

"She will wake up when she is hungry...'

'Do you know how to do the milk?'

Jungkook looked at him, squinting his eyes.

'There is an instruction on the pack! And another instruction written by Soobin on our fridge!'

'Okay... jeeze! How can I know!? It's stressing me out!'

'That's why you will do it...'

'What? No!'

'It's like a freaking instant coco!'

'What if I poison her!?'

'Then better start to think how to get me pregnant somehow, cause we won't send Soobin back without a child!'

Taehyung snorted with laughter and Issie moved in her sleep. Jungkook bit his lips to suppress his laugh, seeing his face and pointed to the kitchen doors.

'Get out!' he whispered.

The milk making, thankfully, wasn't that hard. And feeding the baby either. Carrying her around when she started to be whiny apparently didn't cause Taehyung problem either.

But then...

'What is this smell?' Taehyung frowned.

Jungkook blinked.

'Should we change her?'

'Do you know how?'

'Soobin instructed you...'

'Yeah but he told me so many details I don't know how to start!'

'Okay! Okay...' Jungkook took his phone. 'There has to be some guide on you tube...'

'Are you out of your mind?!'

'You prefer the other solution?'

'YES!'

Issie started to cry.

Jungkook fastly picked up a number.

'Mom... RED ALERT!'

The best rescue unit was there in no time. Four people ran inside as if the house was on fire.

'What's happening?' Jin asked.

'We have to change her I guess. We don't know how... HELP!' Taehyung said, walking to him.

Minji looked at him, giggling like crazy.

'Ask Hoseok... he is the Master of changing...'

'No, no, no!' Jin stopped them. 'We are not helping them!' he said to the rest of the parents.

Taehyung squinted his eyes.

'Jungkook. I have to talk with my father... The betrayal!'

Jungkook fastly walked to him and Taehyung gently gave the baby to him.

'We are not helping. We will instruct.' Jin said to him and pushed Jungkook to the bedroom. 'They gave you the changing mat?'

'I don't know there are so many bags around!' Taehyung pointed with his arms.

'Look inside them then, idiot!' Jin huffed. 'For now we will use the blanket and towel.' He grabbed the bag with diapers and all necessities.

Namjoon and Minji helped Taehyung to look through the bags and segregate the things Yeonjun and Soobin left them, telling him what to use when and how.

'What is this?' he asked, talking out a small device with wires.

'Nasal aspirator. To clean her nose...'

'How does it work?'

'You suck the snot inside the wires...' Minji said and when Taehyung looked at her terrified she dropped on the couch laughing her lungs out.

'Don't stress him...' Namjoon giggled.

'Appa... I don't want to...' Taehyung whined.

'Oh trust me... it will be a real blessing...' Namjoon patted his back. And lead him into the bedroom, where Jungkook was instructed by Hoseok how to turn the baby on the side lightly to take out the used diaper.

He was a bit green, while cleaning the baby.

'She just eats milk...' he whispered. 'How?'

Jin was sitting on the bed, enjoying the horror on his face.

Issie was absolutely content now, smiling and wiggling her little legs and arms. But

she started to pee happily, and Jungkook grabbed Hoseok like a shield and hid behind him. When the pee landed on Hoseok's shirt, he closed his eyes and breathed heavily.

'I. Will. Disown you...' he said, praying for patience.

Jin laughed.

'Flashbacks to all the time Tae did it in Namjoon's face!'

'Bringing that back wasn't necessary!' Namjoon burked.

'Totally.' Taehyung agreed, blushing slightly.

'Excuse me.' Hoseok said, gravely. 'I need to change...' he walked out with his head held high.

'Okay... now clean her again... and we are putting in a new diaper... Make sure it's sticking tightly. You don't want to know what happens when it's not...'

Jungkook nodded eagerly and checked the stickers several times.

'HA! I MADE IT! TAE! I MADE IT!' he lifted his gaze at Taehyung, smiling widely.

Taehyung smiled in response.

'Now we will put this oooonnnnn...' Jungkook said with a baby voice and buttoning up bodysuit. 'And here little lady you are ready!!!' he lifted her, holding her under her bum and head. 'All clean and happy now, right?' he said, singingly pressing her to his chest.

Namjoon peeked with the corner of his eyes at Taehyung.

His son was absolutely bewitched right now. He was staring at Jungkook with his eyes full of softness, longing... love.

As if there was nobody else in the room, but Jungkook holding the little girl.

Namjoon embraced Taehyung with his arm.

'I know this face...' he said, quietly.

Taehyung had a hard time moving his gaze away from his husband, but finally his eyes met Namjoon's.

'Huh?' he asked in daze.

'Hoseok had this face when he saw Minji carrying you around...' Namjoon said

softly. 'And 3 months later she was pregnant...' he added teasingly.

Taehyung blushed a bit and walked to Jungkook. The other looked at him and gave him the girl.

'You can play with her a bit but she will go to sleep soon again...' Jin said, standing up. 'If anything, call us again...'

'Are we leaving them?' Minji frowned.

'Yup...' Jin nodded. 'They should be scared now and deal with it themselves...'

The three of them looked at Taehyung and Jungkook standing with the baby near the window. Talking to her quietly, playing with her little hands and feet.

Next evening Jungkook opened the doors for Yeonjun and Soobin. He had a dark bags under his eyes. Dirty t-shirt and hair sticking in all directions.

He let them in without a word.

Yeonjun looked at Taehyung sitting on the couch with Iseul, rocking her in his arms with closed eyes.

'You looked as if you hadn't slept...' he said carefully.

'We haven't.' Taehyung mumbled.

'Why? Was she whiny?' Soobin frowned, walking to the couch to take his daughter.

'No. We just didn't know if we should sleep...'

'So we didn't go to sleep to watch over her...' Jungkook continued.

Soobin laughed.

'Hyung!!! If she needed anything she would announce it!'

'LOUD.' Yeonjun nodded.

'We will know next time then...' Taehyung nodded, and started to help Yeonjun to pick up Iseul's necessities.

'Oh? Are you willing?' Soobin beamed a smile.

Jungkook shrugged.

'After the first time? She is still alive and in good shape. Why not?'

'That's great cause...' Yeonjun said and started to talk about how much help they would need when they will start to renovate the house they bought.

Jungkook and Taehyung were just nodding till after the young parents, doors were closed.

They sat heavily on the couch and Jungkook's head fell to Taehyung's arm.

They were sleeping in no time.

**(♪Music tip: When you say you love me by Josh Groban♪)**

They walk up in the middle of the night with Taehyung laying on Jungkook on the couch. They sleepily moved to the bathroom to take a long bath.

Jungkook was sitting behind Taehyung, with his chest pressed to the older's back and his cheek to his shoulder.

He was still half asleep.

'Koo?' Taehyung whispered.

'Hmmm?'

'What are we so scared of?'

Jungkook slowly opened his eyes and looked at the droplets of water running down Taehyung's skin. His fingers trembled and when he embraced Taehyung tighter.

'What if we will lose them again?' Jungkook whispered almost inaudibly.

Taehyung slowly turned inside the bathtub and cupped Jungkook's face.

'They weren't us... Koo. It wasn't you. It wasn't me...'

He brushed Jungkook's hair from his face.

'You want it, baby...'

Jungkook connected their foreheads.

'I'm scared, Tae...'

'Me too... But I believe in you... So believe that I will protect you... and them...'

'I know.' Jungkook whispered and closed his eyes.

'This is the last fear we have to win with... Or it will change into regret...'

Jungkook nodded.

'I love you...' he whispered into Taehyung's lips.

Taehyung caressed his cheek and asked quietly with a fade sound of tears in his trembling voice:

'Do you want to have a child with me, Koo?'

The silence was prolonged for a moment, until a sweet whisper was heard:

'Yes...'

Jungkook connected their lips in a long, desperate kiss.

It was amazing how it was suddenly different for them.

The heaviness and desire.

The fear and the longing.

The need... and the sweetness...

When they got out of the bath, Taehyung was drying Jungkook's hair with the towel, while the other was clinging to his body, kissing his shoulder.

When Taehyung laid Jungkook on the pillows...

When he hovered over him...

When he disconnected their swollen lips and looked at him from above...

When Jungkook brought Taehyung's hips closer, making him sink inside him even deeper...

The decision...

The awareness...

It was enough to make them tremble as if it was the moment of breeding itself.

Soft, careful, slow.

Yet hard and determined.

They couldn't take their eyes off of each other. Even in this position and embrace they knew all too well, it was thrilling.

Their fingers intertwined above Jungkook's head.

Their sweaty bodies entangled in every way possible.

Their voices, so gentle and breathless, were getting higher...

They were breathing heavily inside each other's lips, that were millimeters apart.

Jungkook, feeling Taehyung's last deep thrust, wrapped his legs around his husband's waist and desperately brought him closer.

Taehyung was kissing his lips lightly... whispering one time after another.

'I love you... Koo... I love you...'

*****

After a week they composed themselves enough to sit together in front of Jin in his doctor's office.

Jin looked at them and sighed. He turned his chair to them.

'I was expecting this visit for some months already...'

'We want to start the pregnancy procedure...' Taehyung said bravely, squeezing Jungkook's hand.

'Which of you?' Jin asked.

Jungkook blinked, surprised.

'Don't be so shocked.' Jin giggled. 'It can be any of you... Who is more comfortable with it or is mentally better prepared...'

Taehyung opened his mouth.

'It's me.' Jungkook said with determination to Jin. 'I am the one to be spoiled. And he is the one to spoil me and suffer. That's how it is between us and that's how it will be this time too.' he huffed with a small pout.

'Okay...' Jin lifted his hands. 'As you wish...'

'Beside...' Jungkook sighed. 'After what happened... Taehyung has to be the one to protect... He just needs this...' Jungkook squeezed Taehyung's fingers. 'He can't feel defenseless...'

Taehyung looked at his father, playing with Jungkook's fingers calmingly.

'It's true...' he admitted. 'I would freak out... Not being able to defend Jungkook during those months...'

Jin was looking at them sadly for some time, but he nodded in the end.

'Okay. So. Let me give you some cold water on your head... No sex for 9 months.' he glared at them. 'When the pregnancy is normal and healthy sex is safe till the 7th month but here after they insert the uterus-environment inside it would be too much to risk.'

'Jeeze! It's about the baby! We won't do anything to harm it!' Jungkook squinted his eyes.

'I know. I am just warning.' Jin printed out a few things. 'You will contact my colleague. I will assist during the procedure... After the environment will synchronize with your body... We will start IVF. We need samples from both of you and you have to choose the egg donor. They are anonymous... so you will just look through papers...'

Taehyung sighed with relief.

'The rest will happen inside the laboratory and when the little ones will be ready we will just insert them into the tummy... But guys... you have to be ready, you will have to try more than once...'

Jungkook gulped.

'Okay...'

'Are you okay, dad?' Taehyung asked, seeing Jin wiping his eyes, looking at the print outs. 'We can forbid children to call you grandpa if you want...'

Jin laughed through tears and shook his head.

'I am happy...'

He walked to them and embraced them both.

'I am happy, boys...'

**October, 2075, Daegu**

Taehyung was painting walls inside their new house and Jungkook was sitting on the floor in the corridor, putting together furniture. He was peeking at Taehyung from above his hammer and nails..

His husband was standing in the doors to his old room with arms crossed over his chest, squinting his eyes.

'What color should we choose here?'

Jungkook grunted, got up and stood next to Taehyung, mimicking his pose. Frowning at the inside of the room - yet empty room.

'Depends...' Jungkook said, lightly.

Taehyung looked at him.

'On what?'

'If you want children to have one room or two separate ones...' Jungkook shrugged.

Taehyung blinked.

And blinked a second time.

'W-what...'

'They called me in the morning when you were in IKEA... And say we can check right away or on Monday...' Jungkook looked at him with puppy eyes. 'And I would die till Monday...' he whined.

'WHAT?!!!!'

'I'm sorry!!! You know a normal pregnancy test wouldn't work and I wanted to

knowwww....'

'You brat!!! I will whoop your ass!'

'You can't! I am pregnant!' Jungkook giggled, stepping back.

Taehyung stopped. The thought sinked inside his mind...

'OH MY GOD!!!' Taehyung grabbed Jungkook and spinned him. 'Are they sure?! Is everything okay?! Are you okay?!!'

'Everything is fine...' Jungkook cupped his face. 'Everything is fine, Tae... It will be okay...' he breathed out. 'I scheduled another checkup for Monday so we can go together this time...'

Taehyung hid his face in Jungkook's neck, swaying with him. Tears escaped from his eyes. Then he jerked his head up.

'You said "children"?'

Jungkook smiled brightly.

'Twins.'

'Are you kidding me?!!!'

'Nope! I wouldn't dare...'

Taehyung hugged him, but at once was careful to not squeeze him too much.

They looked at the empty room. Taehyung back hugged him, securing his tummy with his hands.

'Light blue?' he asked.

'Green?'

'Peach?'

'Maybe just white? We will decorate it...'

'Hmm... white with colorful wallpaper?'

'With stars and rainbows and unicorns?'

'Sure...'

'Okay...'

'Twins?' Taehyung asked dumbfounded again.

'Two heartbeats...'

'Don't make me cry...'

'We should keep them in one room I guess... Twins don't like to be separated right?'

'Definitely. We didn't like it, they won't like that either...'

'True. You will be a wise father, Taehyung...' Jungkook whispered.

'You will be the best one... Have you eaten? Come. I need to feed my babies...'

'Spoiling time...' Jungkook giggled. 'I love it...'

**December 2075, Daegu**

At this point Jungkook was sure Taehyung was a monster.

A prison guard...

And the sweetest soul in one.

And Jungkook was selfishly happy about it.

He was enjoying being spoiled by Taehyung on a whole new level.

And from the moment Taehyung got to know... he didn't betray Jungkook's expectations.

He was making sure Jungkook took the vitamins and hormones. He was reading parental guides to him out loud. He was bathing him even if Jungkook could do it perfectly by himself. He was carrying the bags with cameras and lenses whenever they went. He didn't allow Jungkook to work by himself.

For the first three months he was so panicked that something would happen, he requested Jin to move on with them.

But finally Jin said everything is going well and Jungkook and the babies are fine,

and he is going back to his own husband and house.

Taehyung was sulking a bit, but Jungkook agreed with Jin, and he absolutely couldn't refuse Jungkook anything at this point.

Taehyung heard a happy squealing from the bathroom and peeked inside.

'What?' he asked, seeing Jungkook standing on the scales.

'I'M GETTING FAT!!!' Jungkook flashed him a 1000 volt smile.

Taehyung went to him and looked at the scales.

'Wow...' he said flatly. '500 grams...'

Jungkook smacked his arm.

'This 500 grams are your children! So show some respect!'

'It can be the whole pizza you ate for dinner as well...'

Jungkook pouted.

'Jerk...'

'Awww....' Taehyung instantly hugged him and rocked him from left to right. 'You are so cute, baby...'

'Leave me alone...' Jungkook sulked.

'Nope. Where you go I follow...' Taehyung said and kissed Jungkook's nose.

'I don't like you.' Jungkook pouted.

They went to bed. Taehyung back hugged Jungkook and slid tight between Jungkook's tights, pressing his hand to Jungkook's tummy protectively.

'Are you comfortable?' Taehyung asked.

'Yeah...' Jungkook sniffed.

'What happened?' Taehyung lifted himself.

'Nothing...'

'Baby... don't cry. Are you mad? 500 grams it's amazing!'

'I'm getting fat and my ripped tummy won't be there anymore! And you won't love

it anymore! And you won't...'

'Koo...' Taehyung laughed and turned him on his back. He kissed his face. 'I told you... I love your tummy. I am obsessed with it no matter how it looks and now... I love it even more...'

He pulled up Jungkook's overly stretched t-shirt and started to kiss the gentle bum that was showing.

'I want to kiss it even more now...'

'Really?' Jungkook pouted.

Taehyung pressed his cheek to his tummy, stroking the skin.

'Really... Can't wait to feel them...'

**January 2076, Daegu**

Jimin ended the phone call laying on the couch. He looked at the boxes around him. He ordered everything that was needed for the babies...

Yoongi's black card was amazing...

Taehyung and Jungkook told him they will have a boy and a girl. So now he knew what kind of baby clothes he should buy and he was already planning the shopping. With uncle Hobi!

Yoongi was locked inside his genius lab and Jimin pouted. He left something on the desk in their office room.

He dozed on the couch and woke up an hour later to see Yoongi sitting beside him.

With squinted eyes.

Tightly pressed lips.

And papers in his hands.

'Slept well?' he asked, with a fake-cheerful smile.

'Mhm... You would know if you would nap with me...' Jimin winked.

'Our napping is not napping at all...'

'True...'

'Babe... Can you explain... ' he showed him the papers. 'What is this?'

'Leaflets...'

'That much I know. What were they doing on my desk?'

Jimin flattered his eyelashes.

'Giving you the idea?'

'About the pregnancy?'

'Oh, you are so smart!' Jimin sat up.

'Explain.'

'Me. You. Baby. What do you want me to explain more?'

'Why now? Are Taekook's babies on the way not enough of a chaos for you? The whole team is like rats on drugs!'

'Well... Why now? Cause you are 30. You are getting old...'

Yoongi looked at him with a done face.

'And if we want to continue saving the music industry it's the perfect time for me to get pregnant and get back to shape fast after...' Jimin spread his arms.

Yoongi brought his face closer to Jimin's.

'And the real reason?' he asked sternly.

Jimin looked at the ceiling.

'Every Kim needs a Min in his life.'

'KNEW IT!' Yoongi stood up quickly, pointing at Jimin. 'YOU WANT TO HAVE A BABY SAME AGE AS JUNGKOOK AND TAEHYUNG'S KIDS!'

'Of course! It's reasonable! They will be best friends. Second family. Safe place. What other things do you wish for your child?' Jimin smiled with an innocent, angelic smile.

'You already planned the counter for whether I say, right? In this small, satanic mind of yours?' Yoongi squinted his eyes.

'I did.' Jimin smirked.

They were glaring at each other for a while.

'Fine.' Yoongi threw his arms in the air. 'You can't be the bigger pain in the ass then you already are so, whatever...'

'Are you sure about that?' Jimin laid on the pillow, smiling mysteriously.

'Yes. I am.' Yoongi smiled in response.

'Challenge accepted.'

'I want to see how you will spoil your nephews with big belly...'

'No.' Jimin denied lazily. 'You just want to see me with a big belly...'

Yoongi rolled his eyes and bent to cup Jimin's face.

'You can start the procedure...' he whispered.

'I love you...' Jimin kissed his lips. When he didn't hear a response he hit Yoongi's arms. 'Say it!'

Yoongi's thumbs caressed his cheeks. And instead he said something even sweeter:

'I hope the child will be like you...'

**18 May 2076, Daegu**

Jin ran to the hospital with Namjoon, Minji and Hoseok.

'What happened?' he asked his colleague when he was leading them to the room.

'Jungkook tripped on the stairs... It didn't cause much damage, but the membrane of the uterus-environment ruptured, so it is safer to do the C-section now...'

'Will the children be okay?' Minji asked, worried.

'It's just 4 days before the schedule. They will be fine... It would be worse if we would leave them inside. There is a risk of suffocation... But I have a request...'

'Yes?' Namjoon asked.

'Can you tame the husbands somehow? Cause I guess with all the threats I heard I should be dead in the next 30 lifetimes...'

Hoseok snorted with laughter.

'Which one is worse?'

'Worse? They are both insane!'

'Okay let me do it...' Minji said, lifting her hands. She bravely walked to the room.

'Hobi, Joon! You are staying here! You know what will happen in a minute...' Jin sighed heavily and walked after Minji.

The obstetrician looked at Namjoon terrified.

'What will happen?'

Namjoon let out a long heavy breath.

'Red String is coming...'

Inside the room Taehyung and Jungkook were unsealed. Jungkook was breathing heavily. He was fuming in anger and arched his body in pain.

'MOM! Where is the fucking doctor!?'

'CALM THE FUCK DOWN!' Minji said and Jungkook shut his mouth instantly.

'If he won't come here in a second I swear I will rip...' Taehyung started, but Minji glared at him.

'You: shut up! They are preparing for the C-section... Give them freaking time to do it.'

'But...'

'No buts... Babies are fine...' Jin said calmly, walking in. 'I talked with the doctor...'

'Can you do something?'

Jin cupped Taehyung's face.

'Tae, there is no need... In a few hours you will have all your babies here safe and sound. Okay?'

'Painkillers?'

'Jungkook will get the anesthesia soon.'

Jin looked at the monitors. And put the hand on Jungkook's tummy.

'For now, just breathe... It hurts you because of the environmental rupture, not because of contractions... Tae... sit behind him for now. It will be better for him to breathe and his back won't hurt as much...'

Taehyung fastly got on the bed and supported Jungkook's back.

Jungkook's breathing pace calmed down.

'I can feel them...' he whispered and smiled. He was often doing this when he was unsealed. He took Taehyung's hand and pressed it to his bum...

He closed his eyes while Taehyung was caressing his tummy and said:

'I can feel all three of you...'

Jungkook opened his eyes. He saw Hoseok rocking a small pink blanket in his arms with Minji standing next to him, while Jimin and Yoongi were cooing at the small creature in the blue one.

He saw a head pressed to his hand.

'Hi, daddy...' Jimin smiled, when he realized Jungkook opened his eyes.

Taehyung lifted his head instantly.

He had tears in his eyes, and he couldn't say a word. He bent over Jungkook and kissed his dry lips.

'Tae... how are the babies?' Jungkook mumbled.

'They are perfect. Just like you...' Taehyung choked out.

Jin caressed Jungkook's head.

'You had high pressure. They had to sedate you for the surgery. But it is okay, now...'

'They stitch you. I healed the rest. You are completely fine... You just need to rest...' Namjoon squeezed his hand.

Jungkook looked at Taehyung.

'So why are you so pale?' he asked, weakly. 'Don't... scare... me... you jerk...'

Taehyung kissed his lips several times while smiling.

'I'm sorry... I panicked when I saw your blood...'

'Here... drink something...' Jin gave Jungkook a stroll with water.

Jungkook's mind was getting clearer. He wasn't in pain... He tried to sit and Taehyung helped him.

'Give me my children!' he demanded after a few minutes. He glared at Taehyung...'And you?! Why are you not caring them?! I WILL DIVORCE YOU I SWEAR!'

'I did! But I was so worried about you, dad said I will drop them, so I totally freaked out, and...'

'GET YOUR SHIT TOGETHER!' Jungkook yelled.

'LANGUAGE!' Jin facepalmed.

Hoseok laughed and walked to Taehyung. He gave the babygirl to him.

Jimin smiled, giving the little boy to Jungkook.

'Jesus Christ! Just let them calm down...' Namjoon sighed, shaking his head. 'Get out of here everyone... Tell the rest Jungkook is completely fine. And babies are too. They have to stay alone now... You too, Jin...' Jin gasped, but Namjoon just lifted his hand. 'No. Out.'

Jin lifted his chin and walked out.

'Congrats' Yoongi said, and dragged Jimin out.

'But I don't know the names yet!' Hoseok whined, while Minji was pulling him to

the exit.

Jungkook was lookin at the baby in his arms. At his small, red face. Big eyes.

'Did they cry a lot?' he asked, quietly.

Taehyung sat next to him on the edge of the bed.

'Yeah... Both were screaming their lungs out... But after they fall asleep they are like little angels... You see, they haven't woke up...'

Jungkook looked at the face of the girl and caressed her tiny nose, making her squirm in her sleep.

'They are beautiful...' he whispered.

'How do you feel?' Taehyung asked.

Jungkook lifted his eyes at him. He knew him. No matter what... He was Taehyung's priority.

'I am okay, angel...' he said sweetly. He leaned a bit and Taehyung bent to him to give him a soft kiss.

Jungkook rocked the boy in his arms lightly and asked:

'Okay! Okay! I was waiting 5 months!! Tell me now!'

After they knew the gender of their babies, they had the agreement that each of them will come up with a name and won't tell the other till the end. The draw, who will be the one to name the girl and who will name the boy.

Taehyung licked his lips and kissed the forehead of the girl.

'Okay... I introduce you - Kim Dal-hee...'

Jungkook's eyes widened.

Dal - 달 - meant *moon*. And hee - 희 - meant *shine*.

'She is a part of you and me...' Taehyung whispered, blushing a bit.

'Well...' Jungkook choked out overwhelmed. 'Good to know we are thinking the same after so many years...' he moved the blanket a bit to show the face of the boy. 'Dalhee... meet your brother... Kim Hae-min...'

Taehyung laughed shortly with too many emotions.

Hae - 해- meant *sun*. And min - 旼 - meant *gentle*.

'Hi, babies...' Taehyung whispered, kissing Haemin's little forehead. 'Welcome into the world...'

**30th of December 2076, Daegu**

Taehyung's birthday was a busy day. Jungkook and Taehyung with their little miracles, were helping Yoongi to tame Jimin's sassy ass.

Well not like they didn't understand what Yoongi was going through two days after Jimin came back from the hospital with a new member of their family.

7th months old, Dalhee and Haemin in their father's arms were curiously lifting their heads to look at the small bean in the crib.

Min Haneul was born on 28th of December 2076. Of course Jimin, knowing his nephew and niece names, gave them the matching piece they needed...

Haneul - 하늘 - meant *sky*.

Haneul was sleeping even when two other babies were curiously, stretching their arms towards him.

Jimin giggled.

'Oh... My son loves to be the center of attention!' he carresed Hea-min's cheek. 'Don't worry little one, he will catch up with the two of you in no time...'

**13th of October 2080, Daegu**

'Skyyy! Honey! Don't eat it! Let me peel it for you, okay?' Taehyung called out to Jimin's son.

Yup... they were first-call babysitters since that one day, 4 years ago... It didn't happen often. Because Jimin and Yoongi usually took the baby with them whenever they went, even abroad. And now when they had the second child they were even more glued to their home.

But both families liked to give babies opportunities to spend time with each other. So even the cleaning days were a good reason.

Yoongi took Jimin for the weekend outside the city, just as Taehyung and Jungkook enjoyed Jungkook's birthday.

Little Issie was often visiting too with her parents.

But the new generation was bigger now.

Min Yeonsang. - Haneul's cousin. The child of Gahyeon and Ren, who was born on 21st of September 2077.

Lee Yena, a rebellious daughter of Yoohyeon and Dami, who was born on 16th of November 2077.

Little Lee Chae-rin, who everybody including her fathers - Minho and Han - were calling Leerin, who was born on 4th of May 2078.

Choi Beamguy - second son of Soobin and Yeonjun, who was born on 7th of August 2078.

Choi Jongho - son of Wooyoung and San, who was born on 17th of February 2079.

And their little one - Haneul's brother - Min Jaehyun II, who was born on 22nd of September 2079, and currently was under the care of his grandparents - Baekhyun and Chanyeol, cause Jimin and Yoongi didn't want to test Taekook's sanity.

Gahyeon and Ren's second child was born on 25th of February 2080, it was also a boy - Min Hyunjin.

The youngest one was currently Lee Taehyun, second child of Yoohyeon and Dami, a boy born on 3rd September this year.

Haneul gave the orange to Taehyung who peeled it up for him. They all were calling him Sky.

Haemin ran inside the kitchen and stood next to him.

Taehyung gave the peeled fruit back to the boy and Haneul instantly shared it with Hae.

Taehyung smiled at that. He knew what's coming.

'Dalie!' Hae yelled. Both three-years old ran to the living room where Dal was sitting playing with crayons, with Bam sticking to her side.

She looked at two boys running to her. Haneul stretched his hand with a piece of fruit to her and she opened her mouth to take it, without stopping her artistic work.

Hae plopped on her side. And stuck his arm with her, looking at her picture, while Haneul took another crayon and helped her color.

Haemin and Dalhee were really clingy and cuddly twins. On their third birthday they made separate rooms for them, but they of course were finding them together in one bed in the morning.

Probably thanks to that, they didn't often run to them in the night.

And when Haneul was present, they both wanted him, so in the end he had to sleep between them.

Jungkook came back from grocery shopping and all the babies ran to him. He had to bend, lift and kiss each cheek of each child, before they even let him take off his jacket.

'Are you drawing, guys?' he asked.

'Yup...' Hae nodded seriously.

Jungkook sniffed Sky's head.

'You smell like orange...' he giggled.

'I eat...' the boy smiled brightly.

Dal was clinging to Jungkook's leg quietly.

'What happened, sweetheart?' he asked, caressing her head.

'You haven't kissed appa...' she sulked.

Yes. Dal was the true supporter of her appa...

'Yeah. You haven't. And now I am sad...' Taehyung pouted and dropped his head.

Jungkook sent him a death glare.

'You made appa sad?' Hae's eyes filled with worry.

'No, I didn't.' Jungkooks said calmly.

'Yes, he did.' Taehyung mumbled.

Haneul looked at Jungkook with wide eyes.

'You don't want to kiss uncle?'

'I...' Jungkook gulped. 'Want to...'

Three little faces looked at him demandingly with puppy eyes. As if they were saying: then what are you waiting for.

He sighed and walked to Taehyung, who tried to hide his teasing, satisfied smile. Jungkook kissed the corner of his lips.

'I am still sad...' Taehyung said.

'You need to say sorry...' Hea instructed his dad.

'Mhm...' Jungkook agreed and squinted his eyes at his husband.

'Dad stops being mad when you kiss his nose...' Dal said to him helpfully.

'Oh yeah?'

Taehyung nodded.

'And cheek...' Haneul wanted to help too.

'Should I do it all?' Jungkook asked the children.

'YES.' The trio said unisono, absolutely serious about it.

Jungkook kissed Taehyung's nose. Then cheek and whispered warningly:

'Don't even dare to play more...'

'Kiss me properly and I won't...' Taehyung smirked, mumbling back.

Jungkook lightly pecked his lips.

'See?! he is not mad anymore!' he turned to the kids, clapping happily, before Taehyung could dare say anything.

'YAAY!!!' The children ran to them happily.

Taehyung grabbed and lifted Hae and Sky and Jungkook picked up Dal.

'Want to go for a walk with Bam?'

He was replied by three happy voices and one bark.

**15th of December 2082, Daegu**

Jungkook was smiling at the pictures of two little twin girls Taehyung took and showed him.

Min Soyeon and Min Sumin "Minmin" were barely a month old. Gahyeon gave birth to those little sweethearts on 15th of November. Another little girl - one year old - Choi Yiren - born 4th of March 2080 was sitting between them looking like a little smiley elf. She was the youngest child of Soobin and Yeonjun.

'Okay... I will give it to them....' Taehyung kissed Jungkook's cheek. 'Soobin's parents are coming and they want to see...'

Jungkook nodded and checked on Dal and Hae, who were watching cartoons.

He went back to the kitchen knowing they will come soon to him for fruits or snacks.

Instead he heard a broken glass.

He frowned and walked where he heard the sound.

'Dal? Hae?'

His heart started to race when nobody replied to him.

'DALHEE?! HAEMIN!?'

He walked to his bedroom where the doors were open and saw the broken glass. From the jar with two bears in it...

'Babies?! Where are you?' he asked worriedly, looking through the closets.

He finally found them in the closet in their room. Hae was embracing crying Dal, hiding her from Jungkook.

Jungkook fell to his knees.

'What happened? Dalie, why are you crying?'

'A-appa... will be s-s-sad... an-d m-madddd...' she cried.

'No he won't darling... It was an accident right?'

'H-he l-loves t-those b-bears...' she hiccuped.

'Don't yell at her please...' Hae said with a trembling chin and big eyes.

'I won't. Dal why had you taken the jar?'

'Cause it's pretty...it's like you and appa... I'm s-s-sorry...'

Jungkook spread his arms.

'Come here, guys...'

Both children embraced his neck.

'We will fix it...' he said. 'I will show you how, okay?'

Dal nodded eagerly.

'We will even make it better for appa, okay?'

Jungkook took the broken glass and pieces and two bear figurines. He hid the figurines and promised the children they would make a new jar for appa on the weekend.

Dal was so scared she fell asleep tired of crying and Haemin who was absolutely tuned to her, was on the verge of crying sticking to her, till Jungkook let him facetime Haneul for a few minutes.

When Taehyung came back, Jungkook told him about everything. His eyes got sad. And he hugged Jungkook tightly.

'I loved it... Cause you gave it to me...' he whispered.

'I know baby...' Jungkook stroked his back. 'But I also gave you a daughter and son so go hug them, wash them, sing them and put them to sleep...'

'On it.' Taehyung kissed him, using the opportunity there were no curious eyes around.

'Tonight's plan is on?'

'Sound proof barrier over children's room? Of course it is...' Jungkook winked at

him.

On the weekend Jungkook, Dal and Hae made a new snowball for their beloved person. This time with two big bears and two little ones...

**18th of May 2083, Daegu**

On the day of Dal-hee and Hae-min's 6th birthday the faded marks were shown on their bodies. On Dal's chest - what meant she was a Sealer. There were two letters: ED.

And on Hae-min's hand. He was a Holder.

During the party they organized for them, Jimin noticed Haneul was scratching his chest too often. So he called him to check on him. And right after he called Yoongi, Jungkook and Taehyung.

'I guess he was triggered...' Jimin giggled.

'Oh, god....' Yoongi facepalmed.

'What happened?' Haneul asked. 'Why are you worried appa?'

'Nothing... Absolutely nothing...' Yoongi smiled and took his hand to take him back to the rest of the children.

Jimin, Jungkook and Taehyung looked at each other and high-fived each other, stopping themselves from squeaking.

On Haneul's chest a mark was shown - HH. Exactly the same mark as on his beloved bestie - Haemin's.

Their sons were soulmates.

'Well... they are not you. They will discover what that means by themselves...' Jimin smiled, joining the rest in the garden. 'Are you unsealed? Do you see their powers?'

Jungkook's eyes shined with jade for a second.

'Dal is a healer. She has a bandage like Namjoon appa... but a purple one... And

Haneul... ' Jungkook blinked. 'A mask? Black mask. But his power... it's creation power... Similar to the one with cards... remember? They can create everything...'

Jimin grunted.

'If Yoongi asks I don't know anything about it... And we will just let them discover it by themselves.'

'Sure thing...' Taehyung agreed.

They all walked between the people around.

Yoongi was glaring at Ren with crossed arms over his chest.

'Excuse me. What? Why is my sister pregnant again?!'

'Cause we had sex?' Ren shrugged.

'And you don't know what contraception is? For fucks sake! You have 2 sons and 2 daughters!'

'I do. But Gahyeon said the more children who annoy uncle Yoonie the better...'

Yoongi's mouth fell apart, but before he could snap, four year old Jaehyun clung to his leg.

'Appa...' he said pleadingly. 'Can I get more cake?'

'Jae... you ate enough... Your tummy will hurt.' Yoongi picked him up. 'Maybe mango?'

'Okay...' he said sadly, putting his head on Yoongi's arm.

The garden was loud, with all the members of Red String and Red Alert. The grandparents and great-grandparents, all aunties and uncles and of course the little generation:

8 year old Isseul, 7 year old Dal, Hae and Haneul. 6 year old Yeonsang and Yena. 5 year old Chaerin and Beomgyu. 4 year old Jongho and Jaehyun. 3 year old Hyunjin and Taehyun. 2 year old Yiren. And the little ones in the stroller - 6 months old - Seoyeon and Sumin, who everybody was calling Minmin.

After the celebration was calmed down. And Taehyung and Jungkook helped their twins hide all the presents. They gave them another special one.

The children were sitting beside each other on the patio, when Taehyung unsealed Jungkook fully. Their wings spread on their backs.

Hae and Dal gasped.

'Angels...' Hae whispered.

'So pretty...' Dal jumped to touch the wings of her appa.

Jungkook stretched his arms to Haemin.

'Come, my sunshine...'

Taehyung lifted Dalhee.

'Ready, moonie?'

'Look up, kids...' Jungkook said.

'Don't look down...' Taehyung added.

'Eyes on the stars...'

'Don't be scared.

They jumped into the air, embraced by their little moon and little sun to show them the starry sky.

**1st of August 2083, Daegu**

Dal and Hae were standing holding hands in front of the house, while Tae was packing the car.

'Are you happy you're going to great-grandparents for a week with papa Hobi and grandma Minji?'

'Yes!!!' Dal exclaimed.

'Haneul is coming too?' Hae asked worriedly.

'Yes, honey, we will pick him up on the way...'

'Yaay!!! Sky is coming!' she grabbed Hae's arms. 'I love Sky!'

Hae looked down shyly.

'Me too...'

Taehyung smiled under his nose.

'Did you say goodbye to dad?' Tae asked.

'We don't say goodbye!' Dal denied sternly.

'Yeah! We say "See you soon!" Hae nodded eagerly.

'You know it's your appa who started this tradition?' Jungkook stood in the front doors.

'Really?' Dal looked at him with star eyes.

'Mhm...'

'Why?' Hae asked as the curious and attentive child he was.

Jungkook crouched down and took their hands in his own.

'Cause I couldn't stand being away from him and every goodbye was making me sad and scared... So he told me that we will say "See you soon" from that moment. And you know what?' Jungkook kissed his children's little fingers. 'He always kept this promise... No matter what... He always came back. He always found me... Even when I was really, really lost...'

'And you are not scared anymore?' Dal asked with puppy eyes.

Jungkook shook his head with a soft, fragile smile.

'I am not....'

'Cause he loves you...' Hae tilted his head.

Jungkook lifted his eyes at Taehyung.

'Yes, Hae... cause he loves me...'

Jungkook wiped his eyes.

'Some dirt comes to my eyes...' he grunted. 'Okay, kids!' He spread his arms. 'See you soon!!!'

'See you soon, dad!!!' Dal and Hae embraced his neck.

Taehyung let them have their moment.

'Okay! Get on!' He was buckling up their seatbelts on their safety seats, when Haemin asked.

'You really love dad, appa?'

'Yes. I do...' Taehyung flicked his chin, with a smile.

'More than us?' Dal frowned.

'Well I know him longer...' Taehyung teased her and she pouted, just like Jungkook.

'That's not fair...'

Taehyung giggled.

'If there is any feeling I can compare to my love for him... is my love for you, babies...' he replied seriously.

Dalhee and Haemin nodded, satisfied with the answer.

'Now, wait a second... and we are going...' Taehyung said and fastly came back to Jungkook, who was standing still in the doors.

'Some dirt?' he asked, cupping his face.

'My stupid ass got emotional...'

'I will spoil you to the core the moment I will come back...'

'You are spoiling me everyday, Taehyung...' Jungkook smiled, pressing their foreheads together. Maybe it was the full moon's fault but he felt so emotional.

'I love you.' Taehyung whispered and kissed him, softly.

'I love you more....' Jungkook sighed in response, with closed eyes.

'See you soon, Koo...' Taehyung smiled.

Jungkook smiled back and giggled at his husband's words.

'See you soon.'

**(♪Ending credics: DNA by BTS♪)**

**FIN.**

---

Oh my god....

Oh my GOD.

I can't.

Let me just thank you and I will cry buckets...

12k words. I seriously couldn't finish...

*crying*
😭😭😭😭😭😭😭😭😭😭😭

There was so many of you who were with me, that is even hard to pinpoint all of you. But my lovely: Smiling Life - you were my first warrior here. The one I always new will be here. Cutiepienanu - Your letters saved more then once. Dawn and Last Braincell - I love you and need you daily to be crackheads with me. LostSoul - my calming darling. Aroha, Aslin, Innocent, Sofi, Dhi_Sj. My greatest thank you are going too you. You were with me from the beggining to the end.
And I can't cry more... You totally were living inside the story with me and let me know about it.

But there are so so many people that love this story so much. My warrior Kiara. 6789an the author of this amazing cover. Abishihta. Snowpearl... PaulBTSArmy, SolenAdea, Pawtae.... Ilove mames... My forever fellow author 6 is never enough. My praising me on every accation - Siya. Chakho7Fates ... Fly30Love. Itsrosie, Sameera, O_o_ophelia, The Purple pumpkin... Velmurugan, _H_H_H who leaves me the reactions. Crincklebunny, Desywrites, my cute lawyer. Kumu, Fire and Water, illuminating_dark who gave me this amazing compliment about standards...And It's just those I remember most... i can't use proper names and tag you all here cause I don't want to spoil your reading. Hope you understand either way. 😭.

And to the ones I don't know. Thank you for reading. Hope you enjoyed. We share the love for this story.

This was a beautiful. Sad, emotional, funny, happy, crackhead journey. And I couldn't be more sad or more happy about this moment.

Let me sniff in the corner.

Take all my love.

And thank you for everything. Lot of you love me, but mainly I thank you so much for the love for this story... It is and probably will always be my favourite, beloved child. Thank you.

**BlairWitch91 ❤**

# Spin off 1: Dance with the Devil - part 1

**August 2083**

The Mountain House was calming down after another exciting day. Hwasa and Dragon plopped down on the couch in the living room exhausted to the core. Having three seven-year old clever and lively kids around brough as much happiness as longing for silence. So they gladly pushed the rest of responsibilities over the younger ones. Minji, Hoseok, Namjoon and Jin could now have the battle with the trio about 8 pm being too early to bathe and sleep.

'Jungkook and Taehyung weren't this exhausting....' Jiyoung sighed. 'Actually having the whole Red String wasn't this exhausting!'

'Because you weren't an old fart and they were older when you finally met them.' Hwasa put her elbow into his side. 'Besides they always had their little world for themselves and goals only known to them.'

'I love those little devils but I am happy they live so far away.' Dragon sighed.

'You will miss them as soon as they get inside the car.' Hwasa snorted and sipped her tea.

They both looked at the ceiling hearing a loud noise from above.

'WHAT HAPPENED?!' they heard Jin yelling from the other part of the house.

'Nothing! Situation is under control!' Hoseok yelled back and they heard loud giggles.

'Sure.' Hwasa and Dragon said under their noses and looked inside their cups , pretending they didn't hear anything.

.

.

.

.

Hoseok entered the bedroom and blinked, surprised, seeing only Haemin sitting on the bed. He blinked and looked around. He was sure he left all three of them in this exact bed 10 minutes ago.

'Where is your sister and her partner in crime?' he asked.

Haemin shrugged.

'They are just checking something...'

'What are they checking?'

'Something.'

'Sweetheart... where are they?' Hoseok asked patiently.

'Dunno.' Haemin shrugged.

Minji stood behind Hobi.

'Hae! Don't try to play innocent! You know where they are! They left you here as a decoy!'

'What is decoy?' Haemin blinked innocently.

'You...' Minji took a deep breath. 'You know exactly what it is!'

Haemin could look like a little angel and for sure he was the most reasonable and careful out of the three but he was the master of manipulation.

Haemin got out of the bed and walked to the shelf with books.

'Young man, if you think I will let it go just because you will ask to read you a story...' Minji started, but Haemin just took out a dictionary.

'Ma, I am just checking what "decoy" means...' he looked at her with puppy eyes.

Hoseok sighed, defeated.

'I will look for them...' he turned around. 'Let's give Jin and Namjoon a second to take a shower in peace.'

Minji squinted her eyes.

'Don't you want to join your besties, Hae?' she asked cleverly.

Haemin focused on the dictionary, looking for the word.

'Was it your idea?'

'What idea, Ma?'

'Whatever those devils are doing.'

'Ma, I don't even know what they are doing...' Haemin gave her best innocent look.

'You want to play it like that?' Minji nodded. 'Fine.'

She walked to the corridor, put her fingers inside her mouth and whistled loudly.

'I give you 2 minutes or Haemin is sleeping with me tonight!' she yelled.

Hoseok stopped walking through the corridor and snorted.

'That will be faster.' he nodded, smiling widely.

They heard a noise above their heads and fast steps. Then the doors to the attic opened and Dalhee and Sky ran downstairs.

'YOU CAN'T DO THAT, MA!' Sky protested.

'Yeah! We have a schedule!' Dalhee backed him up.

Minji looked at pyjamas covered in dust and spiderwebs on both - Haneul and Dal.

'The schedule applies to those in bed at the right time. And I didn't see any of you there.'

Dal and Sky looked at each other and at once passed Minji, running to the bedroom they shared.

Hobi grabbed their collars, stopping them in place.

'Not in this state! What were you doing?! Sweeping the attic?!'

'Not our fault it is so dusty...' Sky burked.

Dal looked at herself and him. She knew that if grandpa Jin will see them like that after he just bathed them, not to mention, dirty the bedding and Haemin, they will for real need to sweep the attic like some slaves.

She lifted her head and looked at Hoseok.

'We will wash ourselves, papa...'

He squinted his eyes.

'Without whining?'

She nodded eagerly and quickly stepped on Haneul's foot when he opened his mouth.

'We will change into fresh pajamas and go to sleep with Haemin.' she confirmed.

'I will believe it when I see it.' he said, crossing his arms over his chest. 'If not, me and Ma will have Haemin for ourselves.'

Shy pouted. Dal grabbed his hand and pulled him.

'Deal!' she screamed.

Minji slowly walked to Hoseok.

'You gave up too fast.' she said, dissatisfied. 'They still didn't explain what they were doing.'

'I didn't give up. I just used the opportunity so they will willingly do what they always complain about. It doesn't mean they are let off the hook.' he said cleverly.

Minji rolled her eyes, but smiled a bit. Hoseok was always like that. It was easy to be deceived by his cheerful personality and overlook how clever he was. And he was using it mercilessly.

She looked at the ceiling.

'What the hell were they up to?'

.

.

.

.

Dal and Sky washed and, in their new, clean pajamas, got back to the room. Sky went to the piece of paper hanging over the wall and said:

'Hae! It's your turn!'

'I already checked!' Hae nodded and patted both sides of the bed.

Their parents came up with a long term schedule of "who sleeps in the middle" a long time ago to avoid constant cries and fights, because the trio were attached to each other so much it often turned into wars. After one schedule was set and children were convinced it was for their whole lifetime and applied to all situations when they would happen to be in one room, children agreed to it and allowed their parents to keep this part of their sanity.

Dal sat on Haemin's left side and Sky laid down on the right.

Haemin looked at them.

'Did you find them?' he whispered.

'Just few.' Dal whispered back with a pout.

Sky took out a package of photos from behind his shirt.

Haemin grabbed the first photo when Jin stood in the doors.

'What were you doing in the attic, brats?' he asked.

Sky pulled the blanket to hide the photos.

Jin squinted his eyes.

'What do you hide there?'

'N-nothing.' Sky said quickly.

Jin sniffed around.

'What is this smell? I know it....'

Hoseok stood next to him.

'Hobi, do you smell it?'

'Yeah. Smells like bu...' Jin glared at him, and Hobi grunted. 'Like a lie.'

'Do I want to know?' Namjoon screamed from the corridor.

'Bring your butt here, Joon! Your grandchildren started to lie!'

'When they do something sweet they are your grandchildren and when they mess up they are suddenly my grandchildren...' Namjoon mumbled and walked to the room.

Three men stood in front of the bed when three little seven-year olds pretended to be clueless angels.

'Hae, you do not need to stay with those two criminals. Come to grandpa...' he said.

The only response from all three was a glare.

'You do not have much time before grandma will finish showering.' Hoseok warned them. 'Do you want to have us on your side or not?'

Three children looked at each other and took hidden photos out.

'Granny said there were photos from your Uni times in the attic. And I wanted to see them.' Haemin said.

'So your two little minions went to fulfill your wish?' Hoseok lifted his eyebrow. 'It could wait for tomorrow!'

'But when Hae is curious about something he can't sleep!' Sky protested.

'And if he can't sleep we can't either.' Dal looked at Namjoon with puppy eyes.

Jin shook his head.

'It's late. Have some mercy on us! We are old!'

'You are not an old grandpa! You are so beautiful!' Haemin said. 'Look! You look the same!' He showed the photo from years ago.

Jin sighed.

'What is so interesting in those photos?'

'We wanted to know how you looked when you were our age!' Dal smiled.

'We weren't your age when we were at University, Dal. We were much older.' Namjoon explained.

Haemin looked at the photos and looked through the few Dal and Haneul sneaked in.

'It is mostly Ma and auntie Bora. Why are you not there?' he asked.

'I guess those are from first year. We met later...' Hoseok smiled lightly and took a photo showing Minji and Bora when they were 19.

Dal frowned.

'You weren't always together?' she asked.

'No, sweetheart... We met when we were young adults.' Namjoon explained.

'So you weren't playing together in parks? And on swings? And fanfairs? A-and... you didn't have sleepovers like us?' Sky asked, absolutely shocked.

Jin laughed.

'Absolutely not, honey. Most people do not know each other from the moment they

are born.'

Haemin and Dalhee looked at Haneul totally terrified by the thought.

'That's the worst!' they exclaimed together.

'No. It is not. Destiny brings people to each other at the right moment.' Namjoon sat on the bed. 'It is precious when it is early in our lives, but it is always a new journey to go on when it happens later on.'

'B-but... how did you find each other?' Dalhee asked.

Hoseok, Namjoon and Jin grinned.

'Well, we meet one by one somehow.'

'It's scary.' Sky cuddled to Haemin's arm. 'What if you wouldn't find each other?'

'We are Interdependants, Haneul.' Namjoon smiled. 'We are connected by the Red String of Fate. It helps us to find the way.'

Hoseok lifted his eyes and looked at Minji, who was quietly leaning on the door frame.

'Even if some of us do not appreciate the help at first.' he smiled tenderly.

'I did!' Minji protested. 'I just took my time to do the research.'

Three little heads turned to Minji.

'Research? Isn't papa your soulmate?' Dal frowned.

'That's not really wise to waste time like that...' Hae frowned too.

'Right?!' Hoseok nodded, agreeing with them.

'I...' Minji cleared his throat. 'Listen kids, it was really wise to get to know the person before admitting he is my soulmate! I had to calculate how much struggle it would bring...'

Children were looking at her, clueless.

In their little world it was really simple: You find your soulmate - you get them and don't let go.

Sky leaned to Haemin.

'Stupid.' he whispered.

'It was not stupid that I didn't tell him!' Minji huffed. 'I... wanted to know him before I told him.'

Haemin was thinking hard and because the conclusion was escaping his mind he looked at Namjoon.

'Did you wait too?'

'Oh, no.' Namjoon laughed. 'There was no way to hide it! And there were a lot of reasons not to!'

'Because Jin always got too much attention on himself.' Hoseok giggled. 'Joon had to claim what's his to scare them away.'

'It was just being a drama queen.' Jin glared at Hoseok.

After getting this confirmation the children looked at Minji judgingly.

'Not every case is the same.' she said defensively.

Hoseok ruffled three little heads.

'And it doesn't matter guys. Because destiny would always bring together what meant to be together.'

Children looked at the photos then at Minji.

'How did you find each other?' Haemin asked, curiously.

Minji slowly looked at Hoseok.

Jin looked between them and then at his grandchildren.

'Lay down. Put your heads on the pillow and we will tell you a story.' he offered.

'Jin...' Minji protested.

'Please, Ma!' Dalhee looked at her beggingly. 'We want to know.'

Hoseok helped to cover them with a duvet when they calmly laid down and hopefully looked at him.

'I have loved dance since I remember. All kinds and shapes of it. And life with Minji... is definitely the most beautiful dance I ever experienced.' he said and smiled. 'But when we met... It could look like dancing with a clever Devil. She was soooo stubborn!'

The children giggled and Minji walked energetically to the bedroom.

'Okay, Hope, enough with the crap! Listen children...' She sat on the bed, and Jin and Namjoon giggled. They sat on the armchairs ready to pinpoint all the moments Minji would like to avoid. 'You need to understand that... meeting your soulmate doesn't mean falling in love. But it indicates to you that you are at the beginning of a journey. The most important one. And... it's a bit scary... Exciting, but scary.'

The little trio nodded seriously.

'How did you know he is your soulmate?' Dal asked.

'I discovered it by accident... but oh, I met him a little bit earlier.' Minji smiled to herself. 'It was the end of Autumn... Exams, competitions, and foreign student delegations... Holiday Seasons rush... Winter Ahead...'

.

.

.

.

***NOVEMBER 2044, 39 years earlier***

19 year old Minji entered the college cafeteria during the lunch break. She wouldn't normally make an effort to come here because her department was at the far end of the campus and the weather was rainy and windy. The end of November didn't have mercy. But Bora insisted, probably because she knew Minji, even though the older one, was pretty irresponsible with her eating habits.

Minji looked through the tables and found Bora sitting with a tall man from the first year.

She made a few steps when a laughing guy bumped into her.

She stopped, lifted her chin and was going to ignore it with a disappointed sigh, leaving her lips. She managed to pass him when she felt a hand on the shoulder.

She opened her mouth to get a piece of her mind to this guy, but before she managed to do that she heard.

'I'm really sorry for that. Are you okay, sunbaenim?'

Minji turned to the person.

'Are you in the first year?' she asked.

'No. I am the second.' the guy blinked surprised by the sudden question.

'Then don't call me "sunbaenim" I am not your senior.' she said calmly. 'I'm okay. Thank you for asking. But it would be safer if you don't fool around in a place full of people, don't you think?' she glared at him, inclined her head and turned around without additional delay.

'How cold.' she heard someone say playfully, behind her back. 'Are you okay, Hobi?'

'Huh? It's your fault in the first place!'

Minji rolled her eyes and kept walking to Bora's table.

'What was that about?' Bora asked.

'They were goofing around.' she shrugged. 'You know I have a full schedule. You could buy food and come to eat in my department.'

'I did last time. It can't always be your way.' Bora glared at her.

The guy grunted.

Bora looked at him.

'It is Park Chanyeol. We are in the same Sound Engineering department. This is my older sister, Minji.'

'Nice to meet you.' she said and looked at the glove on his hand.

'It's an honour to meet you, sunbaenim. I didn't really think I would have a chance to meet you in person.'

'You may not remember him, because you are usually abroad during summer, but I met Chanyeol a few years ago during one of the Training Camps.'

'We are the only Interdependants in our Department I guess.' Chanyeol scratched his head. 'What about yours, Minji-nim?'

'Drop the honorifics, it's too troublesome...' she sighed, opening a pack of chopsticks. 'I am not sure about the second year students. I do not interact much with them during general courses.'

'Yeah, Minji is too busy to talk with people.' Bora giggled.

'It's not that...' Minji sighed. 'I'm rarely around between lectures, after or before

them. Especially at this time of the year.'

'What are you...' Chanyeol tried to ask, when a burst of laughter filled the cafeteria.

Minji looked above his arm in that direction where a bunch of guys and girls were laughing just to see the guy who bumped into her earlier in the middle of it.

'Who is this guy?' she shook her head in disapproval.

'Oh, it's Jeon Hoseok. The star of the Art Department Dancing Section.' Chanyeol turned for a second to check it.

'Well, I guess it suits him.' She focused on eating. 'He is extremely flashy.'

.

.

.

Minji was sitting in the Student Council meeting, focusing on the last words from the previous Student Council President who was about to graduate in March. That's why elections were held before all the exams so the fourth and fifth years students could focus on them.

'As for the Candidate for the next Student Council President we propose Kim Namjoon from the second year or Kim Hanna from the third year. Are there objections from any of the candidates?'

'I'm sorry, but, as a Med Student I am not capable of carrying more duties than basic ones.' Kim Hanna said. 'And I think Namjoon-nim is much more suitable for the role.'

'Namjoon-hubaenim are you agreeing with the candidature?'

'I am not opposed to it, but I am Interdependant. Won't it cause problems between students or Professors? Is this the right course of action for the Student Council?'

Minji lifted her eyes at the person. He admitted it so simply and gently. He wasn't wearing a glove, so he was a Sealer, so he could hide it for a lifetime if he wanted to. But nevertheless admitted it as if he wanted to stay true to himself.

'You are an active and top Student, Namjoon-hubaenim. You were also an Exchange student in Oxford University for half a year as a first year student. It's really admirable. There is no reason to doubt your candidature. We believe it will

broaden the horizons of many.'

'If that will be the Council's will, I will accept it then.'

'Let's vote then. If we won't achieve a majority for your candidature we will propose other candidates and hold a proper election. Let's vote.'

The student council President was chosen swiftly, Minji knew why. Because there were not many who wanted to take as many responsibilities on themselves during their study years. It was more complicated for the vice-presidents. The supportive function was much easier to handle.

'Now, as for the Head Representatives of the Departments. We chose candidates between top students from all the sections.'

Minji was listening to the list when suddenly she heard her name.

'Sport Department - Kwan Minji.'

She lifted her head.

'Sunbaenim, but I am not in the Sport Department. I am in the Internal Safety section of the Political Science Department.'

'Yes, but the head of the Sport Department candidate is chosen upon their sport achievements and you are the winner of last year's Archery Academic Championship and Country Youth Aikido Championship.'

'Are there not other candidates?' Minji asked.

'Our University is top in Basketball but the current Captain refused. Also you were the Aikido Club manager for the past year so your skills are proven. Besides having more Interdependants as representatives is the balance we are looking for.'

Minji sighed in her head. Again this shit...

'I understand, Sunbaenim. I will accept the nomination.'

The meeting was long. The organization of the new Council and passing down responsibilities wasn't a simple task.

'As for the main task for the upcoming month is preparing the University for visitation for Students from Tokyo university. Professors asked to prepare the agenda for their two weeks stay, keeping in mind the promotion of the University Student Exchange program. The Art Department and Sport Departments will be the main one involved. The Linguisting Department will support all the members. It's just before the exams, so we will assist you as much as we can...'

After the meeting the auditorium was getting emptier. Minji was packing her things, when someone stood above her seat. She lifted her eyes just to see Kim Namjoon.

'President.' she inclined her head.

'Eeeh, things got messier, huh?' he sighed while smiling shyly.

Minji was agreeing with this statement on a personal level.

'Do you need me for something, Namjoon-nim?' she asked.

'Just wanted to introduce myself properly. I'm Kim Namjoon, a Law and History Department Student.'

'Kwan Minji.' She stretched her hand.

'You are Kwan Jiyoung's daughter.' Namjoon stated.

'Yes, I am.' she confirmed, lifting her eyebrow.

'He often talked about you.' Namjoon smiled. 'I knew who you were for some time now.'

'That old man...' she sighed with irritation.

'He is quite a unique person...' Namjoon giggled.

'You mean all of his 99 personalities?'

'So I didn't imagine it?'

'You definitely didn't.' she replied with a done face.

'I didn't expect his daughter studying in Daegu to be honest.'

'That's exactly why I am studying here.' Minji sent him a sour smile.

'Overly Protective?'

'"Overly" is an understatement here.' Minji stood up and they started to walk towards the exit.

They talked about some parts of the basic Interdependants Course provided by Kwan's Family and upcoming University Events before they parted their ways.

And that's how Minji properly met Kim Namjoon.

.

.

.

.

Hoseok was sitting by the long table with some students from his Department. The Art Department was always lively and cheerful. It was also full of gossip.

'I can't believe they chose her.' one of the girls said.

'Yeah, just because she has some achievements. She is just in her second year!'

'They said she comes from some famous Interdependant's Family...' the other one said.

'Oh, so that's why? I knew something was fishy about her. They always favorize her so much...'

Hoseok frowned.

'Who are you talking about?'

'Oh, the girl who is now the Sport Department Head. She is not even from that Department!'

'Her Aikido section doesn't like her at all. She always beats the shit out of them.'

'Isn't that what Aikido is about?' he asked.

'Yeah, but you know Interdependents have advantage! And she is so bossy and merciless...'

'Will you quit it?' Hoseok said harshly while frowning.

'What's gotten into you, Hobi?' Sehun asked. 'You saw her right? That girl you bumped into last week. She was really cold.'

Hoseok recollected the calm girl from a week ago. It just made him even more irritated.

'She wasn't cold at all. She was just calm and really polite.'

'Either way she looks from above at everybody!' the girls said. 'She barely speaks with anyone.'

'And that's the reason you are bad mouthing her? What if someone would do that to you?'

'I hate that they favor her because she gots connections... She was chosen as the representative of Archery and Aikido even though she was a first year...'

'Doesn't it prove that she is just that talented and hard working?' Hoseok glared at the girl. 'If she wouldn't be, even being the daughter of a president wouldn't get her anywhere!'

'Well maybe you are right, but...'

'But what? If you are that jealous maybe instead of gossiping you would work on yourself?'

'That's mean! You know... They are scared out of their mind around her. They said she beat some seniors in her first year! And she is one of them! Interdependants are...'

'Are what?' he frowned.

'Calm down, Hoseok, you are not like yourself.' Hobi's colleague patted his back.

'Like me? Well I am interdependant too and I do not recollect having advantage just because of it.' Hoseok snapped.

'You are?' the girl blinked.

'Yeah, does it change anything?' he glared at her.

'Is it about me?' A calm voice spoke from above Hoseok's head. 'Sorry to interrupt, but you're all awfully loud.'

Hoseok lifted his head.

The girl was looking calmly at the people around the table. Her eyes stayed a bit on two girls faces, before she turned, saying:

'That's all I wanted to say. Respect other people's lunch break and keep it down before the Regulations Committee will notice.'

She walked away and two girls breathed out a sigh of relief.

'She is so creepy!'

'What part of this was creepy?' Hoseok huffed. 'She is in the Student Council, she just gave us a warning. Even if she has probably heard everything you said.'

Hoseok stood up. 'I am going to the gym.'

'Why are you so nice to her?' the guy asked. 'Is she your type?' he joked.

'Isn't it common sense? I hate such baseless badmouthing.' he shook his head and walked away.

.

.

.

Minji knocked shortly and opened the door to the Student Infirmary located in the Medical Department part of Campus, just to see a rather confusing scene.

She heard a groan and widely opened her eyes seeing Jeon Hoseok without a shirt standing beside the desk and the other guy, who was standing behind him embracing him from behind. Entangling his chest with his arms tightly.

'Ouch! Ouch! It hurts!'

'I told you not to overwork! Hold still!' The next second she heard a few cracks and even more whines, when the second guy squeezed Hoseok, even lifting him a bit.

Hoseok sighed with delight.

'Much better...'

'How often should I adjust your vertebrates!?! This is the last time, I am telling you! You can break your spine for all I care!'

Minji grunted.

Both guys looked towards the doors and widened their eyes.

'I am here to collect the checkup results for the archery section. Is the nurse around?' Minji said steadily.

'I...' the guy in white uniform gulped, before suddenly smacking Hoseok's head. 'Why are you freaking naked! She doesn't need to see that, you perv!'

'But you told me to take off the shirt!' Hoseok said defensively. 'You stripped me yourself! I don't even know where you dropped it!'

'Shut up and dress up!'

'I am here only for checkups.' Minji said with a business-like voice. 'You can

continue whatever is going on here as soon as I get them.'

'I am terribly sorry! I am Kim Seokjin. A volunteer assistant of the nurse. This crackhead just came here to be fixed. Again.'

'I don't need this much information.'

'Oh, come on!' Seokjin smiled, while looking for the papers. 'You are Minji, right? I am Namjoon's soulmate. He told me about you. The Dragon's Daughter.'

'She is THAT Daughter?!' Hoseok exclaimed in the middle of pulling his shirt over his head. Minji, hearing his loud voice, looked at him instinctively and she felt as if all blood ran from her body to her head. Her hands, her feet, all of her body was suddenly terribly cold.

Hoseok dressed properly and stretched his hand.

'We passed each other a few times before. I am Jeon Hoseok. They call me Hope or Hobi.'

Minji pulled herself together and shortly squeezed his hand.

'Nice to meet you.' She said and looked at Seokjin. 'Thank you for the papers.'

She turned around and left the infirmary in a hurry.

That's how Minji properly met Kim Seokjin.

But what is more important is that she saw the mark on Jeon Hoseok's chest. A mark identical as the one which was covered by the glove on her right hand.

And now she had to think what to do with this unexpected information.

.

.

.

*'HUUUUUH!!? YOU HAVEN'T TOLD HIM?!!' Dal screamed, looking at Minji in shock.*

*'WHYYY?!' Sky whined.*

*'Because he was a half naked crackhead caught in a suspicious scene with another crackhead and I was totally unprepared! Besides, why would I?' she crossed her arms over her chest and looked at them from above.*

*'To... be together?' Haemin said with a "duh!" face.*

*'I had to decide if I wanted to!'*

*'But... isn't like... sure?' Haneul cuddled more to Haemin's side.*

*'You are scaring them, Minji...' Jin giggled.*

*'You can say it is like that in the long run. But you do not jump on a person, who you just met, right?' Minji sighed.*

*'I wouldn't mind tho...' Hoseok laughed and Minji sent him a killer glare.*

*'See! He wouldn't mind!'*

*'He is just saying this now!' Minji rolled her eyes. 'You wanna know what next?'*

*Children nodded and calmed down.*

.

.

.

Minji was deep in thoughts sitting in the library. Instead of studying she was looking through the window. It was a week and she was still processing the fact she discovered who her soulmate was.

An extremely flashy guy. Her total opposite.

Well, she could as well leave it to destiny. She didn't have to do anything...

There was no point in thinking about it.

They can as well part and meet in the next 10 years. She heard stories like that.

'Can I sit here?' she heard a quiet voice.

She looked up and saw Kim Seokjin.

'Sure.' she said.

He took out some heavy medical books.

She looked around. There were plenty of other places around.

'I need to seriously study.' Seokjin said. 'It is not really nice but can I use you as bug repellent?'

Minji blinked, surprised and snorted.

'Because they do not approach me?'

'Exactly.' Seokjin said with a wide smile. 'You are like divine protection.'

'Sure. But if you are disturbed so often why won't you study at your place?'

'Usually I do and Hobi is really considerate and quiet at those times, but I don't want to drag those rocks to my dorm and back.' Jin sighed, patting the books.

'Meds students have it hard, huh?'

'I started those studies to please my parents, but I was hoping I could switch to something lighter during the course.' Seokjin sighed. 'But then I met Namjoon and... well I looked at a lot of things differently.'

'Did you meet during the summer camp in Mountain House? It's often the case.'

'Hmm? Oh no! Namjoon and Hoseok are friends from High School. They went through your father's training together. I was there on the other one. Your father talks about you a lot...'

'It seems so...' she sighed.

'He gives you as the example of everything.'

'That's exactly why I refuse to help him with people my age. It's embarrassing.' she mouthed and looked through the window again.

Seokjin opened his notebook and took out the pencil but then grunted.

'About the thing you saw in the infirmary...'

Minji laughed quietly.

'Is it such a big deal? You seem embarrassed.'

'Because it WAS embarrassing!' Jin huffed. 'I told him so many times to be careful...' he sighed. 'Hobi is devoted to dance. He practices too much. Well he is a genius to be honest. But he overlooks his health a lot. He is still a human with bones! He comes with aching muscles, sprains, bruises.' Jin shook his head. 'And he always laughs it off. Usually patching him is not much of a hassle, but when something happens at Uni I can rely only on my basic student knowledge and hope I won't break him.'

'And "usually" you are not?' she asked, surprised.

'Umm... no. When I unseal Namjoon I can heal so... me or Joon takes care of bigger things.'

'Is he that clumsy?' Minji lifted her eyebrows. She got a bit interested.

'No. Not at all. But he is... fearless.' Jin sighed. 'When he dances he forgets that his body sometimes needs preparation before he tries something new.'

'You are quite worried about him.'

'Somehow we quickly get along. It is hard not to get along with Hobi to be honest. I met him on the first day of Uni. He is my roommate. Because I met Hoseok I met Namjoon too. And well Hobi is the one who basically made us a couple. The three of us are stuck together since then.'

'He made you a couple? How?' Minji frowned.

'Well he has known Namjoon for a long time. And I guess he discovered it at the very beginning of me and him being roommates because he saw my mark, but he kept quiet about it. There was never something out of order in his behavior. Normal things. We sometimes met at lunch with Namjoon or to play games in the dormitory or go somewhere together. I am not saying I wasn't drawn to Joonie. I couldn't hold back from teasing him because he was always so shy to look at me. But we also had long talks and were studying together. But I have a handsome face...' Jin stated simply and Minji snorted automatically.

She cleared her throat.

'I guess you do.' she nodded seriously.

'Yeah. Sometimes it is a pain to be this beautiful.' Jin sighed, indicating how hard his life was because of it. 'So at the end of first semester I had few problems with too much attention on me. You know girls were interested and I couldn't really focus anywhere beside the dormitory. So I started to avoid getting out. I was just going to lectures. But even during group work or practice lessons it started to be troublesome. Nothing extraordinary, just I know when someone has their attention on me because of that... Well, Hobi noticed. It was quite a show he pulled. First he made Namjoon worry about my health and then everything else, saying that at this point I will die as a hermit or be kidnapped or someone will give me a drink with a drug and trick me into a fake pregnancy...'

'Eeee...' Minji frowned, not knowing what to say.

Jin nodded in understanding.

'Yeah. Hobi is a drama queen.'

'At the end he just said "it would be safer if you would be in a public relationship" and glared at Namjoon.'

'He did what?!' Minji giggled.

'Yeah. He was drilling holes in his head, even I started to have a premonition of what was coming, but Joonie is an innocent cutie.' Jin sighed. 'So he just asked "Should we find him a girlfriend or boyfriend?" and I think Hoseok had enough after a few months of keeping it a secret, because he snapped. He smiled in a really sweet and creepy way, and said: "*Jin, borrow me your glove for a sec...*" and I asked: "*For what*?" and he said "*So I can slap your stupid SOULMATE with it*!". Then Namjoon passed out so we really had to pat his cheek a few times to wake him up.'

Minji was laughing at the cute story. She felt a bit of anticipation. He was glad she heard something about her soulmate and she was wondering how she would handle this situation. Well probably she would just deal with all Jin's admirers in a much more straight and dangerous way. Because she was always taking the problem head on, she had a bad opinion.

Not that she was worried about it.

'Okay, we should study.' she said seriously and Jin nodded.

.

.

.

.

The coach sighed and said to the archery group:

'That's it for today. Su-yun, you should work on your arms if you want to be chosen for the group contest.'

'Yes, sir.' the first year said meekly.

'You can use the gym to train. Good work, everybody! See you next week.'

'I will clean, sir.' the girl offered.

'Okay.'

Minji went to the changing room and changed into her casual clothes. She passed the gym to see Su-yun, who finished cleaning and took her bow.

She sighed and went into the gym.

'It's not your arms but your concentration that is wrong.' she said simply. 'Come, I will show you.' she said, stretching her hand for the girl.

Su-yun looked at her scared. She gave Minji her bow.

'But isn't this bow set differently than yours?' the girl asked when Minji stood in front of the target.

'It doesn't matter to me.' Minji said. 'I was learning archery with a traditional bow.' she said and said with a strict tone. 'Now, when you stand in proper posture, watch your feet. You are shy, right? But here you can't be. Straighten your back, lift your chin. Your eyes are deceiving you, don't follow them. Focus on the arrow. Breath out.'

Minji shot the arrow precisely in the middle and gave it to the girl.

'Your turn.'

The girl took the bow and was trembling slightly, with Minji observing her every move. Minji frowned.

'Hey, what have I told you? Don't be shy! There can be hundreds of people around but it doesn't matter to you now.'

'I'm...' the girl started.

'I know. You are stressed because I am standing behind you. That's the minor amount of pressure you usually get with all the noise around.' Minji touched the girl's ankle with her foot. 'A bit more forward.' she grabbed her hips. 'This part has to be firm. Now throw away everything from your mind. All the noises. Hand, arrow, target. That's what matters. Nothing can touch you here. It's your time to shine. Be more bold! You are in a battle with this target! Your life's on the line!'

'That's scary...'

'Of course it is! So get it before it gets you! Noise, words, pressure - doesn't matter. You need to destroy it before it destroys you! Now. Shoot!'

The arrow hit a bit on the left from the bull's eye.

'You injured it. It's still coming at you. Kill it now!'

The girl took another arrow, and snorted quietly.

'You are like a scary military commander, sunbaenim.'

'Yes. Because I want you to live!' Minji said. 'Shoot! It's a battlefield!'

The girl shot again.

'You have quite a unique perception, sunbaenim.' she smiled.

'I know. But this way it's more fun. Don't you think?' Minji smiled.

'Can I join?' They suddenly heard an excited voice. 'That sounds awesome!'

Minji turned around to see Hoseok in the door of the archery practice room.

'Sorry, I didn't want to disturb you, but it really looks like fun.' he smiled.

'We are not playing. We are training.' Minji lifted her eyebrow. 'It's too dangerous to give an arrow to a novice.'

Minji felt a bit irritated that he was here so unexpectedly. She wasn't used to be surprise.

'Hey! I was at your father's camp! I had a bow in my hand before.' Hoseok looked to the side. 'But he was always so freaking scary that I couldn't concentrate at all...'

'15 ones for training. Ignore your surroundings.' Minji instructed the girl, patting her arm, and went to Hoseok. 'What brought you here, Hoseok-nim?'

'Oh Gosh! Please do not call me that!' he said with disgust.

'I am not on a first name basis with you, Hoseok-nim.' Minji said with a malicious smile.

'And we can change that really fast, right? They call me Hobi.' he stretched his hand.

Minji looked at his hand for a little to long it seems, because Hoseok said:

'Or am I getting too familiar with the Head of the Sport Department, First Place Aikido Champion, Minji-sunbeanim? Well My Lady I will gladly call you that as long as I won't be referred to as Hoseok-nim.'

Minji squinted his eyes at him. His words were all flowery and kind, but they were also cleverly coated with a bit of malicious teasing.

'Cut it out. I hate it.' she said, squeezing his hand.

'Thanks. So, I am here to deliver Namjoon's notes from the last Student Council Meeting to you. As you had training and couldn't attend.' he took out the file from his bag.

Minji frowned. Why would Namjoon send him here? Did they discover something?

'Why you?' she asked.

Hoseok looked at her and blinked, surprised by the question and a bit suspicion in her posture.

'Because the Sport Faculty is my second department so I know it better than him and I was heading this way either way?' he replied, wondering why she was on guard suddenly.

'I understand. Thank you.' she said and turned around.

Hoseok dropped the bag.

'So can I shoot?'

She looked at him.

'No.'

'Oh, come on! One arrow! I wanna kill the target on the battlefield!' he said, all fired up, clenching his fist.

Minji snorted.

'Why do you care so much?'

'I love to try new things. Everything is useful. Even this stand.' He took the posture of an archer and then made a graceful move with his hand and made a turn. 'Can change into a beautiful part of choreography.'

Minji squinted her eyes at him.

Hoseok sighed.

'Your father was looking at me exactly the same way. I was so hyped up during the camp that I wanted to try everything. It was so much fun. But I guess... it looked as if I didn't treat him seriously so I fell into disgrace...' he pouted.

Yeah, Minji could tell how her father would react.

'Well it looked really flawless. This move.' she said and took out her bow. 'You have three arrows.' she informed him.

'Cool! I can teach you something too as a pay back,' he offered.

'No need. Treat it as a compensation for a hard time my father put you through.'

'No matter how tough it was, it was fun. Your dad is really devoted to training youngsters. That's why he is strict. Like you.' Hoseok looked at her.

Minji handed him the bow and an arrow, holding two more in her hand.

Hosek took the proper posture, straightened up and aimed. He had to have good muscles on his back and arms because the arrow was steady.

He was looking to the front, looking at the target.

She frowned.

'Well?' she nagged him. 'Shoot.'

'I feel like something's missing,' he mumbled.

She checked out his stand.

'No. You stand properly. Your elbows are okay...'

'I mean... It doesn't feel right without your father yelling at me from behind...'

'Just release the arrow!' she said, lifting her eyebrow.

Hoseok did without aiming and it flew above the target. He was ready to hear "You suck." but Minji didn't say anything.

'Umm...' they heard a voice. Minji turned to Su-yun. 'I finished, sunbaenim.'

Minji lifted her eyes at the girl's target and analyzed it.

'It's much better. Keep going.' she nodded.

'Thank you. I will take my leave. Goodbye, sunbaenims.'

Hobi waved at her cheerfully.

Without a word Minji handed him the second arrow.

'If you want to fool around, do it quickly so I can go.'

'Yes, sir.' he giggled and aimed. 'Do you really imagine the invisible battle each time you aim?'

'Being good at something is not enough. The real thing will always be overwhelming till you won't experience it. You never know how your body reacts to a punch till you really will get punched. And till you won't, there is no way you can level up your pain threshold. Battle simulations are better but as they are rare

this is all I can lean on. I won't know how to deal with stressful situations till I encounter one.'

'Are you planning to be a General with this thinking?'

'No. I do not. Generals usually are not on the battlefield. Will you shoot this arrow finally?'

Hoseok took a deep breath and released the arrow. It hit 8.

'Not bad.' she said and gave him the third one, but he returned the bow to her. 'What? You got bored already?'

'Nah. But I have a crazy idea.' he informed her and walked through the gym.

He leaned on the target with his back.

'Do it like in the movies!' he screamed. 'You know aim at my head just precisely to not kill me.'

'First of all it is against all the safety measures. Second of all, why would I do that?'

Hoseok smirked.

'What? Are you scared? Too stressful? You are a champion aren't you?'

'Even my aim can slip.'

'Well, I seriously pray it won't.' Hoseok giggled nervously. 'But I got intrigued! How is it to be a target?'

Minji's heart was beating like crazy. Aiming at a living being? Too dangerous. This was so idiotic! Risking life like that! Idiot! And for fun!

'Are you going to do that? Or are you not as good as I thought you are?'

Minji looked angrily through the gym at Hoseok's calm smile and lazy posture. She quickly aimed and, pressing the bowstring to her cheek, she was looking Hoseok in the eyes.

Oh, so that was the difference? Her hands got sweaty. She was afraid to release the arrow. She had to find the resolve to do that. She had to find the courage to face the possibility she would hurt someone.

On the other side of the gym, Hoseok was sweating badly. He was an idiot, he knew. He could die any second. But he wanted to collect the experience. And now

when he was looking at Minji, who was so calm and collected with these dark and dangerous eyes aiming at him, he just could think how interesting she was.

He parted his lips to ask her if she was going to do it, but then he widened his eyes and froze. He knew he had to freeze or it could end in disaster. He saw the arrow flying fast right into his face but he just ended up looking straight into Minji's eyes.

The loud noise when the arrow hit the target right next to his ear, made him finally breathe out. He felt his knees get a bit weak. He rested his hands on his knees and took a deep breath.

Minji was walking to him angrily.

'If you were scared, why have you done it!?'

'It seemed like a fun idea...' he choked out. 'I think I peed myself a bit...'

'It's not fun to take risks like that!'

'Well I believe you wouldn't shoot if you wouldn't be sure you will aim right.' he mumbled. 'And observing your postures and moves gave me some future ideas...'

'You are so strange you know...' she sighed. 'Go home!'

She picked up the arrows and hid the bow. She wore her coat while Hoseok took his jacket and bag. She turned down the lights and closed the gym.

She got irritated when Hoseok was waiting till she had done it. Then he took her bow cover from her shoulder and carried it.

'I will take this.' he informed her. 'Are you heading to the dorms or the station?'

Minji was a bit confused right now. What was this situation? Maybe she was seeing too much in this? Maybe she was so conscious about it because she knew what was on Hoseok's skin? If she didn't know what would be her reaction?

She switched to her cool armor.

'Listen, Hoseok. Could you kindly enlighten me about your motivation? I am perfectly capable of carrying my stuff by myself. You're supposed to just drop some papers and thank you for that. You had your fun, which is still strange for me, but okay. It is time to say "bye".'

'Well...' he seemed a bit embarrassed. '... I wanted to talk to you...' he mumbled.

'About?' she lifted her eyebrow.

'Just talk.' he shrugged.

'Why?'

He mumbled something under his nose.

'I didn't hear you!' she scolded him.

'I was jealous.' he mumbled in a sulking manner.

Minji's mouth fell open. She made a slow step back.

Hoseok looked at her with a corner of his eyes.

'Namjoon talked with you. Jin talked with you. They said you were so cool and nice. I wanted to talk to you too...'

Minji pressed her lips tightly.

'Listen. I know lot of Interdependants admire my father and come to me to greet me. And honestly it is annoying.' she said coldly.

Hoseok frowned.

'Huh? You twisted it as much as you could. I don't care who your father is. You talked with my friends, why wouldn't I want to talk with you, too. Interdependants normally wants to know other Interdependants. Because there are not many of us.'

Minji still was looking at him sternly.

'Besides, I know you are capable of carrying your things. But why can't I do it for you? It's just polite and Mrs Jeon raised a good boy! And sorry for being like that, but I really thought your way of explaining was interesting and I wanted to try it. So can we simply walk in the same direction for a bit?'

'Fine.' she huffed and picked up her walk. She was feeling a bit like an idiot.

They were walking through the campus in silence.

'Actually I wanted to talk with you for a while.' Hoseok said. 'I am sorry you heard that talk in the cafeteria.'

'Why are you sorry? You haven't said anything wrong.'

'Still...'

'I am used to it.'

'That's why I am sorry. Even with this girl here, you were strict but you were also nice enough to help her improve. And just because you keep your distance from people doesn't mean you are scary.'

'I don't talk to people because I do not have much time to play around.' she sighed. 'Stop worrying about it. It's just bullshit, every Interdependants are facing. So you are in Sport Department too?'

'My second faculty is Sport Education.'

'Not only Dance?'

'Dance is my life. But I thought I have to have something stable, because a dancing career can be really fickle. And teaching sport education doesn't seem like a bad idea.'

'That's wise.'

'It will be a little tricky to manage when the Internship will pop out. How about you?'

'I have an Internship in the Military Organization of Interdependent for a while now.'

'Wow, that's amazing.'

'For now I mainly do the paperwork, but it is educational. So you have been friends with Namjoon for a long time?'

'Yeah. We have known each other for years!' Hoseok nodded, excitedly.

'Jin told me how you exposed them...' she said teasingly.

'Hey! Namjoon can be so slow sometimes, you know! Like he wouldn't say a word he would just stare for years! I didn't have patience for that...'

'You could just tell Jin...'

'He would say I am joking and would stay in denial.'

'So you just played destiny.'

'Don't make it sound like that!' he whined. 'I prefer to think I was part of the plan!'

'So? What would you do if you would discover who your soulmate is?' she asked, with a steady face, looking to the front as if it was just a normal question.

'Hmm... that's one of the issues with Interdependants, right? I don't know how I

would react. There are people who just go straight ahead and people who just panic and observe. There are also those who leave it to destiny and just let the situation evolve. I think I am like that. I would take opportunities that I would get, to get closer.'

Minji wanted to nod in agreement feeling a bit relieved, when he giggled and slapped his forehead.

'Who am I kidding? I would be too excited to sit still and wait. I would look for ways to get closer to them.'

'Like what?' she frowned. 'Go to them and inform them who you are?'

'What? Totally not!' he shook his head. 'I would be afraid to disappoint them or pressure them. I would reveal it after a while of knowing that person. But it can backfire... ugh!!!' He scratched his head in frustration. 'Like they could think it was calculated from my side... It's so complicated!'

'You are overthinking this.' she mumbled. 'So what if it would be calculated? If you wouldn't try to be someone else for their licking, nothing wrong in that.'

'That's... comforting.' he said thoughtfully. 'You clear way of thinking is really cool.'

*Ha. Ha. Ha.* Minji thought in her head. *Totally didn't just trick you into answering this question to assure myself. Sorry, Hoseok. I am not that cool...*

They stopped in front of the girl's dormitory. Hoseok handed Minji her things.

'See you around.' he said simply.

'Yeah. Take care.' she waved and walked in.

.

.

.

For the next two weeks Minji didn't meet Hoseok anywhere. Even if she was in the cafeteria he wasn't there. It's not like she was sulking about it. She was just waiting for opportunities as he said. And her workload doubled with the approaching Foreign Students Visit. The Student Council was really busy.

She was sitting with Bora and Chanyeol by the table when she spotted Namjoon and Jin at the entrance to the cafeteria, looking around for a free place.

Namjoon leaned to Jin and said something to him. They walked in her direction.

'Hey!' Namjoon said. 'You have a minute. You have practice today so you won't be at the meeting. I wanted to discuss something with you.'

'Sure. Should we go somewhere or is it fine here?'

'It's fine here!' Jin huffed and forced Namjoon to sit by the table. 'This idiot has to eat! Sit here and discuss. I will bring your lunch!'

Bora and Chanyeol laughed.

Minji introduced everybody.

'Jin is fierce.' she said, while Namjoon took out his notebook.

'He is like that when he is stressed. He switches to doing whatever he can do in a situation he can't help with.'

'You mean the mood?' She looked through the cafeteria.

'Yeah. It's not so hard in Universities as in schools, because people are busier, but it doesn't mean the whispers and prejudices are not there. 14 years is not much since the Reveal. They just start to wake up from shock and get curious. And the more news is coming about us the more false rumors follow them.' Namjoon sighed. 'As Sealers are less obvious to spot they are not so much in the spotlight. So Jin suggested we distance ourselves on campus. It wouldn't be so easy to understand that the President of the Student Council is an Interdependant. But I do not intend to hide who I am, and it is against all of my principles. If we don't normalize it year by year it won't ever be considered something normal.' he gritted his teeth.

'That's true.' Chanyeol nodded.

'But the heavier the mood the bigger chance Interdependants will stick together and be considered outsiders. It is just a circle like that, ain't it?' Minji sipped her shake.

'It can be helped. It is natural to seek a safe environment. Convincing people one by one so they pass it to others is all I can see now as a solution. And there are people with common sense, minding their own business.'

Jin came back with a tray and shared it with Namjoon.

'It's too much, Jin.' Namjoon sighed and brushed Jin's palm lightly.

'Shut up. I need to find the second idiot later. The rest is for him.' Jin huffed and

started to eat.

'I will go with you. I need to discuss everything with Hobi after talking with Minji.' Namjoon lifted his eyes at her and showed them the description on paper. 'So each Department came up with an idea to entertain the delegation. And the Dance Section has this proposal. It is flashy and we will need to have permission. Do you think we can get it for that?'

'They want to do a surprise performance in the cafeteria?' she read through the document.

'They want to stage it here, before inviting them to the main dance studio. It would be a good first impression, don't you think?'

'Will they be able to do that with so many people around?' she frowned.

'Hobi said they will choreograph it with the public in mind.'

*It is flashy... just like him...* - she thought.

'They will need good sound effects and a bit of space.' she said.

'Oh, let me see...' Chanyeol said. 'We can help with organizing the music.'

'It was supposed to be a music-dance performance. Like a scene from a high school rom-com. It won't take longer than 5 minutes.'

'If they can guarantee safety I think it's okay. We can convince the teachers.'

'Will you back me up? Council said they are not against it if teachers will agree to it, but nobody really wants to be the one talking with them.' Namjoon pouted.

'You want me to go with you?'

Jin grabbed her hand.

'Please, go with him. I beg you! This idiot tries to take everything on himself!'

'Calling me an idiot, again.' Namjoon sighed. 'My IQ is...'

'148. I know. Still, you are an idiot!' Jin sneered at him. 'Making me worry all the time!' She turned to Minji. 'Pleaseeee!' he said dramatically.

'Sure. It is not a big deal...' she shrugged.

'Can I stay with you? You are so cool.' Jin put his hand on her shoulder. 'I feel like you can take care of everything... And those two idiots are hard to handle alone!'

'She can.' Bora said.

'Shut up.' Minji flicked her forehead.

'I finished.' Namjoon said and sighed. 'I'm full.'

Jin judged the trey.

'Okay. I will let it be because you get sleepy when you have too much.' He packed nutri drinks and kimbap into his backpack. 'We can go.'

'I will ask Hobi for details.' Namjoon informed Minji. 'I will text you, when I schedule the meeting with teachers.'

Minji made a decision in a span of a second. She learned to use opportunities a long time ago.

'Shouldn't I be there too? So I know the whole plan to have proper arguments?'

'If you are not busy...' Namjoon said hesitantly.

'Yes! You should be there!' Jin grabbed Minji under her arm and pulled her up. 'Maybe he will get scared of you!'

'Calm down, Jin...' Namjoon sighed. 'Bye, guys!' he waved to Bora and Chanyeol.

'Calm down. Calm down! Don't tell me to calm down, Namjoon-ah!' Jin was mumbling under his nose. 'He doesn't listen to me at all!'

'You mean Hoseok?' Minji looked at Jin with the corner of her eye.

'Who else?! This dimwit!'

'Jin, you are worrying too much...'

'You can't demand from me to be fine with it.' Jin glared at Namjoon and turned to Minji. 'Hobi, never had a problem with being surrounded by people. And they like him a lot. But since he blurted out he is an Interdependant people has some problem with that. So he stopped going to the cafeteria that much and he is skipping his meals. And considering his devilish dancing schedule I am not happy about it!'

'He eats Jin.' Namjoon sighed. 'He just takes lunch to his dance studio. You know the other dancers don't have a problem at all.'

'Of course his friends from the dancing section are fine because they know he practices more than them and he is really devoted. But he started to practice even

more after that!'

*He should have kept his mouth shut at that time*, Minji thought.

They walked through the campus to the Art Department Building and found the right studio.

'Oh, they are in the middle of the dance practice...' Namjoon checked the watch. 'I hope they will finish soon. It is impossible to break Hobi's concentration during the practice...'

They opened the door and stood there.

Dancers were in some kind of formation in front of a huge mirror. Hoseok was the lead dancer. He had a white undershirt soaked with sweat and huge loose pants. Minji was looking at his serious focused face and it dawned on her mind that this guy had a great body. His control over his every movement was on another level. Who would have thought this flashy, cheerful guy could be so serious.

'Stop. We are out of sync!' he said suddenly. 'Jiwoo, you should be already here, take a longer step and do not miss the beat! Ga-in, your arm when you do this movement should be vertical like that.' he presented. 'As if you were stabbing yourself with a knife on the heart!'

'Hey, Hobi! I have your lunch here...' Jin yelled.

Few people sitting near the walls looked at them, but the dancers didn't dare to look away from the mirror.

'Will we be even able to talk with him till he finishes?' Namjoon sighed.

'He doesn't even see we are here...' Jin said with a sour face.

'Once more!' Hoseok clapped.

'And you dare to call me strict.' Minji said loudly with a lazy tone.

Hoseok turned to the doors at once.

'What are you doing here guys?' he frowned. 'And girls...' he glanced at Minji.

'It's lunchtime, Hope!' Jin showed him the package. 'People need to eat!'

Hoseok looked around at the dancers.

'You want a break?' he asked.

Few of the dancers scratched their hair, without saying anything.

'Oh, okay... go grab something. We will return to it after lunchtime...'

'It was a good practice...' a guy patted Hoseok's back.

'You could have said it is time for a break, sunbaenim...' Hoseok looked at him with a pout.

'But the concentration was good. I didn't want to disturb.'

They left one by one.

Minji could swear she heard a few quiet "thanks" while they were passing them.

*What kind of terror was going on here?* - she thought amused.

Jin went to one of the chairs and started to unpack the food. Namjoon took the notebook from the bag and started to read it.

'I haven't expected you here...' Hoseok said to Minji. He came closer, brushing his sweaty face with the hem of his shirt.

'I tagged along.' she shrugged.

Hoseok glanced at Jin in fear, before leaning a bit to her ear.

'Have you... told them about that arrow fun?' he whispered.

Minji smirked.

'Why? Are you scared?'

'You have no idea...'

'Hey?! Since when are you two so close?!' Jin asked.

Hoseok stepped back.

'We just talked once.' he said simply.

'So why are you invading her personal space? She doesn't like it!'

'And since when you are Minji's expert, huh?' Hoseok lifted his eyebrow.

Jin stuffed his mouth with a kimbap.

'Shut up. You do not know the concept of space at all, mister "everybody's Hope". That's why girls can misunderstand you and approach you too often!'

'I'mjustkind...' Hobi said with his mouth full.

'Too kind! And don't speak with food in your mouth!'

Hoseok swallowed and looked at Namjoon, sulking.

'Can you tame your soulmate, bro?'

Namjoon lifted his eyes, not interested at all.

'No. You should have thought it through before you slapped me with Jin's glove.'

'I didn't think I would be adopted by him like this...' he mumbled before glancing at Jin's stiff posture.

Hoseok went to Jin, who was looking for something inside the package and said: 'It's okay Jinnie... you don't have to worry so much.'

'You will give me wrinkles, and I will kill you after that!' Jin huffed.

'I will eat, like a good boy. See...' he took the next piece by himself.

'And rest.'

'And rest. Whenever I'm tired.'

'I don't trust you at all.'

Hoseok stroked Jin's back calmingly.

'Why are you here?'

'We want to go point by point with the plan. We will convince the teachers.'

'Oh?! Really! Is it a good idea?!'

'It for sure is entertaining...' Minji nodded. 'So if you are sure you can pull that out it can be a nice welcome.'

'It's not that hard of choreography. It is more like a scene from a musical. We would have to practice a few times in the cafeteria, tho...'

'You can do it in the evenings. I will get the permissions...' Namjoon noted something in his notebook.

While Hoseok was eating they went point by point about the idea and what needs to be prepared. Namjoon was making notes and Minji was memorizing the things and going into details in case they would be asked about them.

'Okay, that's all I need for now. I will be going. Jin let me walk you to the class.' he stretched his hand.

Jin looked at Hoseok.

'Don't be late, okay? Yesterday you came just before the lights-out period.'

'Yes, mom.'

'I don't remember giving birth to you!' Jin smacked his head.

'Thanks for the help, Minji! I will text you!' Namjoon waved at her.

When they were gone Hobi looked at Minji in a pouting manner. He was sitting by the wall and looked like a sulking toddler.

'What now?' Minji frowned.

'Since when he has your number?'

Minji snorted.

'Council representatives have each other's numbers. It keeps communication stable.'

'Oh...'

She felt a little giddy seeing him like that.

'Why does it concern you?'

'I feel like you do not like me.' he frowned.

'I do not have anything against you if that is what you imply...' she shrugged. 'Don't you think your behavior is strange?'

Hoseok put his cheek on his hand looking at her.

'Is it?'

Something skipped in Minji's stomach. As if he would ask "is it strange to be interested in one's soulmate? But it wasn't the case entirely, right? He didn't know.

Hoseok sighed and got up.

'Maybe it is... I thought I would meet you somewhere around but I got caught up in the practice lately.'

'And you started to avoid the cafeteria...'

'Not like you are often there.' he shrugged.

Minji was looking at him for some time.

'You shouldn't have said you are an interdependant at that time. It would be more peaceful for you.'

Hoseok's eyes got dark in a second.

'Why wouldn't I say that? That shouldn't matter at all.'

'But it matters, Hoseok. It does for them.'

'And that's why I do not intend to be around people who think like that.' he said seriously. He shook his head. 'Jin and You... you both are the same.' he glanced at the glove on her hand. 'Or all Holders have this stupid thinking?'

'Stupid thinking?'

'Holders are always on the front lines. Either you wear a glove or not it exposes you as an Interdpendant right away. Sealers have it easier. They do not have to be exposed. But it doesn't change who we are. And we don't want to leave you alone as we are not the same. Namjoon and Jin are arguing about it a lot. I know Jin is worried. But we better have the hate focused equally on all of us than just on Holders.'

'There shouldn't be hate in the first place.'

'That's the case. But it is there. And neither Namjoon nor me won't agree to be cowards like that. Hiding this part of us is like being someone else. And if people do not like us just for that - they can go away.'

'I think it is natural to want to protect Sealers from unpleasant encounters that Holders often face.'

'Maybe it is natural, but it is also a bit unfair. And you are extreme in that, right?'

Minji lifted her eyebrow.

'What do you mean?'

'I know people. And people talk. So I know you are protective over Interdependants in your Department. Elders, youngsters. There were incidents when you stepped in.'

'Yeah well. I am not the type to sit still.'

'You prefer when they focus on you?'

'I can handle that.'

'I also can handle it. So I understand. But I won't be still or quiet about it.'

'Okay.' she shrugged. 'Your choice. I should get going soon.'

'Will I see you around?'

She smirked.

'Why do you want to see me?'

'Because I am naturally drawn to other Interdependants. Because we can talk about things that only we understand. And there are not many of us.'

'Do what you want.' she shrugged and looked around. 'You are really a demon when it comes to dance... They were terrified of you.' she smiled. 'It's a bit unexpected.'

'Polishing performance to a T is what I am best at.' he smiled in response.

'It was visible. I will watch the performance when it is time.' She turned to the doors.

'Minji...' he stopped her suddenly.

She really didn't like honorifics but when he was calling her so bluntly it felt a bit different.

'Huh?' she turned to him.

'Can you dance?'

'Not at all.' she shook her head.

'Perfect. Will you help me? It will take just a few minutes.'

'Help you with what?'

He stretched his hand.

'We have an idea to ask some of the delegates to join us during the introduction at the studio. Nothing fancy. Just simple dance moves...'

'And?'

'Give me your hand.' he hurried her up with his fingers. 'I love hip-hop and freestyle but I had to learn all kinds of dance. So we thought salsa would be okay...'

'No way...' she shook her head.

'It's just 3 basic steps.' he tried to convince her. 'Are you scared?'

'But why do you need this...'

'Because I want to be prepared for how someone without dancing skills will react.'

'They will say "no" and they will be terrified.' she said absolutely sure about it.

He grabbed her both hands gently but persistently.

'In that case they just need to be a bit encouraged, right?'

'You are ignoring what I say, don't you?' she squinted her eyes.

He stood in front of her and took both of her hands in his palms.

'Step forward with your left leg. Make a step in place with your right feet. And join your left feet back with the right one.' He demonstrated to her three simple steps. 'Easy right? Now the same thing is reversed. Step back with your right feet. Make a step in place with your left feet and join them back together at seven. I will count.'

'Wait...'

'One...' he made a step and she stopped forward. He showed her the move for two and three. And went from the beginning. Till she knew what steps are on what number. 'Good. Now all at once.'

'You do not listen for your dear life, do you?'

'Come on! And One, two, three, four, five, six, seeven.'

It was really basic. He was at arm length just holding her palm really lightly.

'Look at me, not at my feet now. We repeat it 3 times. Now faster.'

She looked at him and repeated the basic step.

'It's a bit boring...' he said to himself. 'Should we make a turn?'

'No?' she said quickly.

He laughed.

'Okay. But move your hips like this, it will be easier to follow the rhythm.' he suddenly placed his hand on her hips and sweated them a bit while counting and repeating the moves.

She followed it patiently. When he counted to seven 3 times, he realised she was sending daggers on his head.

'I know you are in your teacher's mode now, but get your hands off of me.'

He blinked and as if it burned him lifted his hands up.

'Oh, sorry!' he said and blushed a bit.

'Yeah and maybe don't do that to our delegation...' she squinted her eyes.

'No! Of course not! I was just... I am usually not...'

'I am going.' She turned around and went to the doors.

'Are you mad?'

'Yes.'

'Really?!' he whined.

'See you on the campus, Hoseok...' he said, amused by his tone, and waved, without turning back.

*What the hell was that?* She thought, she shook her head. *Well it was a tiny bit exciting.*

.

.

.

Because of Namjoon and Minji's Student Council work, somehow the five of them (Jin, Namjoon, Minji, Bora and Chanyeol) started to take one table in the cafeteria or in the library. Studying different things, but in a much more comfortable environment. Even if their surroundings for no reason took it as something offensive, whispering about "Interdependants Corner". But it is not like Namjoon didn't bring other Student Council Members if they needed to work on something or they restricted people from coming to their table. Or some of Jin's colleagues join the table to ask about notes or subjects he was good at.

Other students just decide what they want to see by themselves.

After the weekend the Foreign Students were coming, so they would all be extremely busy.

*What is this guy doing?* - Minji thought to herself unexpectedly, changing her train of thoughts away from the books.

He was as busy as all of them. He was practicing the performance now. Sometimes they just saw each other from afar or passed each other, stopped for a few seconds to say "hi" and then ran to their respective tasks.

Maybe it was for the better?

Maybe it was absolutely normal?

*Maybe he would sulk about it again?* - Minji almost giggled to herself.

He seemed so childish sometimes and yet he was so... She didn't know how to describe him properly. Under this first frivolous, cheerful and kind persona there was a layer which was really perceptive and sharp.

She couldn't deny she was thinking about him... Well, he WAS HER SOULMATE in the end. It was obvious she wanted to know what he is doing or how he is or what he is like, even if she didn't want to push it or force their interactions.

Besides... it was better that people didn't really see them around together or he wouldn't get to witness something unpleasant about "why some people called her the Devil.".

And there was also this fact she didn't want to influence his behavior anyhow. She wanted to know the "Hoseok without ulterior motive".

There were a lot of small and big thoughts that made her let things be as they were, but she enjoyed little things Jin or Namjoon mentioned about him.

The thoughts like "what will your soulmate be like?" was natural for interdependants. So, actually Hoseok wasn't someone she would picture in her head for all those years.

And now she was curious "why him?". And she was waiting patiently to know the answer to that.

But there was this strange tingling, just an urge to look around for him, wherever she was. In the corridor, in the sports department building, in the cafeteria... She was just brushing her eyes around, to check if he is somewhere in her eyesight.

After her training she made an extra tour around the campus to pass the cafeteria in the evening, because she felt a hint, Dance Section would practice. Happily, Namjoon and Jin were there as well.

'Oh? You came to see the practice?' Jin asked. 'They just finished.' he pointed with his head to the team.

Hoseok was talking with Chanyeol and Bora who were cleaning the wires of sound equipment. Bora handed him the bottle of water and he bowed a bit in thank you, while he patted Chanyeol's back, saying something, at which the other laughed.

'I guess it went well.' Minji said.

'Yeah. We will see everything on Monday! I am excited.' Jin smiled widely.

Namjoon and Jin walked to talk with other dancers, especially the head of the department. Bora waved to Minji to wait for her, while she was going to hide and secure the equipment in the right storage with Chanyeol.

Minji rolled her eyes and decided to wait in the corridor to not be in the way of them cleaning.

Suddenly she felt a weight on her shoulder and with the corner of her eye she saw Hoseok, putting his chin on her shoulder.

'Are you waiting for your sister?' he asked.

'You know I could just instinctively punch your stomach a second ago?' She let out a heavy sigh. 'It's dangerous to approach me like that, Hoseok...' she warned, calmly.

He glanced at her from the side, not moving.

'Really? I didn't feel endangered...'

'Don't tempt me to prove you wrong. Jin is right. You do not know the concept of personal space...'

'I do. But I am tired and You just feel comfy to be around...'

For some reason it made Minji laugh.

'I am the last person you should feel like that about!'

Hoseok moved and looked at her. She turned to him and realised he was really tall. They were standing really close. And she realised he didn't lie. Considering how he acted around Bora he was or Chanyeol and comparing it to his behavior

towards Jin and Namjoon he was "selectively clingy".

And somehow, she fell into the second category?

Well, she could know the "reason" even if he didn't know it, but because he didn't know, it was even more... sweet to feel.

'Have you watched the practice performance?' he asked.

'No, I was too late.' she admitted.

He shrugged. 'That;s better I guess...'

'Hey! Maybe we will go and grab something to eat on our way?' Jin suggested.

'I'm in!' Chanyeol said, coming back together with Bora.

Minji looked at Hoseok questioningly.

'A 1000 times "yes!" he exclaimed. 'I feel like a prisoner going between campus and dorm! I wasn't anywhere for a month!'

It was the first of many outings of their, not yet completed, group of friends.

.

.

.

On Monday the delegation of 10 students from abroad came to Deagu's University. They were welcomed by the Student Council and Head of all Departments. Then Namjoon and a few other Student Council members walked them around the campus and helped them settle in the dorm.

On Tuesday they attended one of the lectures of a professor who was known for his really interesting and involving students' way of speaking. After that period Minji hurried to the cafeteria. There were a few students already there, a bit surprised by the change in the room. The tables were placed differently to make a space in the front. In the corner there was a cover area by the curtain. There were some musicians there. They really had fun preparing this. She was surprised when they said it would be live music.

Chanyeol, Bora and a few other students from the music and sound engineering department were there. Between the students not involved there dancers were cleverly sat. She knew their faces, so she could recognize them but they were in casual clothes so no one could recognize what was about to happen.

She casually stood near the cafeteria counter, close to the cleaned for dancers space, leaning on it. The ladies who were responsible for dishes were smiling a bit at each other. The cafeteria was getting crowded. Students were murmuring between themselves a bit surprised by the change. But since they were getting their meals and they had the place to sit they weren't much bothered by it.

The normal sounds of lunchbreak were heard around. Few curious glances were thrown when the delegation of foreign students walked in and took their reserved places.

When they came to get their food, Minji noticed how Hoseok and one of his friends, Jin Jongho, sat on the counter near the cash register. They were looking a bit like bad boys, talking casually, observing the crowd. Hoseok nodded to someone.

**(🎶Music tip: Classic by MKTO)**

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4Ba_qTPA4Ds

Jongho, unexpected voice was heard from the speakers:

*Hey! Where's the drums?!'*

The curtain in the corner spread and the drummer initiated the song, with other instruments joining him.

*Woo, oh-oh-oh*

Minji Heard the voice and she realised it was Hoseok's. The dancers had microphones attached to their clothes.

*He was going to sing too?!* She thought, surprised.

*(Let's go!) - Jongho exclaimed.*

He and Hobi made a fist bumped each other and jumped from

Hoseok, swaying to the beat and singing started to walked between the tables with Jongho doing the same on the second line of the tables.

*Ooh, girl, you're shining like a 5th Avenue diamond*

*And they don't make you like they used to, you're never going out of style*

Making dancing steps precisely to the beat he pointed to one of the girls, and then leaned a bit to the other, who was a dancer, she gave him her hand and he leaned to it, made her spin and sat on the other chair next to a next dancer.

*Ooh, pretty baby, this world might have gone crazy*

*The way you saved me, who could blame me when I just wanna make you smile?the counter at the beat.*

The other girl joined him and they made a few dance moves together before she sat elegantly in her place.

The other dancer stood in front of Hoseok, probably playing the main role, because she indeed had some fancy clothes on her and pretend to ignore him, while he sung:

*I wanna thrill you like Michael*

*I wanna kiss you like Prince*

*Let's get it on like Marvin Gaye, like Hathaway*

*Write a song for you like this*

They were performing the choreography which really looked like a scene from a k-drama. The other dancers, together with Jongho, joined Hoseok in the free space in front of the music band. Hoseok made a spin , who made a spin and took his place in the formation of five guys to dance to the chorus and sing together with Jongho.

*You're over my head, I'm out of my mind*

*Thinking I was born in the wrong time*

*One of a kind, living in a world gone plastic*

*Baby, you're so classic (Yeah, yeah, so classic)*

*Baby, you're so classic (Yeah, baby you)*

*Baby, you're so classic*

It looked really chill and funny. Their dramatically comedic moves and faces made it even more enjoyable.

Hoseok slid on his knees to the "main character girl" who was sitting on the chair.

*Four dozen roses, anything for you to notice*

*All the way to serenade you, doing it Sinatra style*

She stood up and ignored him, playing shy. The other dancers picked him up and

precisely to the bit he went after the girl.

*I'ma pick you up in a Cadillac like a gentleman bringing glamour back*

*Keep it real to real in the way I feel, I could walk you down the aisle*

The dancers came into couples in different parts of the cafeteria. Hoseok and the girl dance for a few verses before she leaves him and he goes on his knees as if he was just dumped.

*I wanna thrill you like Michael*

*I wanna kiss you like Prince*

*Let's get it on like Marvin Gaye, like Hathaway*

*Write a song for you like this*

Then he grabbed the girl's hand and spun her constantly to reach the dancing space where the other dancing couples joined him.

*You're over my head, I'm out of my mind*

*Thinking I was born in the wrong time*

*One of a kind, living in a world gone plastic*

*Baby, you're so classic (Yeah, yeah, so classic)*

*Baby, you're so classic (Yeah, baby you)*

*Baby, you're so classic*

In the meantime two other dancers picked Jongho up and stood him on the counter.

Walking through it, he was rapping:

*Baby, you're class and baby, you're sick*

*I never met a girl like you ever till we met*

*A star in the '40s, centerfold in the '50s*

*Got me trippin' out like the '60s, hippies (Oh, woah, woah)*

*Queen of the discotheque*

*A '70s dream and an '80s best*

*Hepburn, Beyoncé, Marilyn, Massive (Ah)*

*Girl, you're timeless, just so classic*

He was pointing to different girls, who were standing up and joining the choreography.

The main "dancefloor" dancers were in the middle of their moves, when the last chorus came.

Minji was surprised and excited. It had so much positive energy she was smiling widely.

*You're over my head, I'm out of my mind*

*Thinking I was born at the wrong time...*

She suddenly felt someone pushed her and her mind went blank, she literally was pushed on the dancefloor in the middle of the performance.

She went furious in no time while falling. How dare they destroy the performance?! She made a quick move with her ankle to turn and saw the face of the culprit, but she didn't hit the ground.

Hoseok just saw her appearing on the field of his vision and made a step out of choreography but still perfectly fitting to catch her. Without stopping either the dance or the song, he bent her backwards as if it was all planned, spinned her, stopped her body, holding her hand at arm length, he sang last verses thanking in heaven Minji's face was as unbothered, classy and calm as if it was staged. With the last notes he lifted her palm to his lips and while bowing and let her go.

He pulled such a thing... So she smiled, inclined her head, gently took her hand away and just turned to return to her place near the counter.

Not even one dancer stopped in the middle of their routine... They finished as if nothing happened. Well, Hoseok saved the day, acting like a professional.

She hid her feelings. She was angry and sad. And mad at herself. She was so into the performance she didn't even know someone sneaked behind her...

The dancers bowed.

The Head of the Dancing Department took the mic from Chanyeol and said:

'We are from the Dancing Department. Together with the Music Department and

sound engineering department we wanted to welcome our fellow students from Tokio University. I hope you enjoyed the performance...'

The clapping disturbed him and the dancers bowed once more.

'We are happy to invite you to our Department in the afternoon to talk about our daily student routine as dancers of this University!' the dancer said and bowed. 'Thank you so much for your attention and we all are grateful to our teachers and Student Council for helping us prepare for this performance.'

He bowed once more and the dancers started to walk away or take place by the table. Minji lifted her eyes at Hoseok. He said a few words with a cheerful smile to Jongho, nodded, patted his back, glanced at her briefly and started to walk towards the exit.

Minji quickly followed him. When they left the cafeteria, she saw Jin in the corridor waiting for Hobi.

'Hoseok...' Minji started. 'I'm sorry it happened...' she said.

'It doesn't matter...' he said with a cold and angry tone she had never heard before. Well of course. Dancing was this one thing he was deadly serious about.

'You say that, but you are furious. You do not have to hide...'

'And you do not have to apologize. You pulled it pretty well.' He said and reached Jin. 'You recorded it?'

'Everything as you told me.' Jin nodded and handed him his phone. 'You do not have to watch it right away...' he giggled. 'It was super cool, Hope!'

But Hoseok was glaring at the phone in focus.

Jin looked at Minji, who was looking at Hoseok with a worried face.

'Let him analyse his every move. He always does it. You, okay?' he asked. 'Don't worry. Namjoon is always tripping. It happens. Hobi won't be mad over something like that...' he said calmingly.

'No. I am mad.' Hoseok disagreed harshly and showed Minji the phone, with a few last seconds of the recording. 'Who is she?' he asked. 'The one who pushed you?'

'What?!' Jin exclaimed. 'Minji, was pushed by someone?!' he leaned to the screen.

Minji looked at the moment of recording and saw the face and silhouette. Her eyes got cold.

'Of course she was pushed.' Hoseok said. 'Have you noticed how Minji walks? Her walk is always perfectly balanced from all the exercises and martial arts. I knew right away something happened.' he looked at Minji. 'Who is she?'

Minji looked him in the eyes.

'It shouldn't concern you.' she said quietly and turned around. 'I am sorry it could ruin the performance...'

'Don't tell me you will leave it like that!' he said angrily. 'It was done on purpose!'

Minji looked at him slowly.

'Of course it was. And I will take care of it. Like I always do.' she said with a dangerous shine in her eyes. 'Don't get involved.'

Jin squinted his eyes, but Hosoek stopped him, before he could follow Minji or say something.

'She is angry. Let her be.' he said.

Jin sighed angrily.

'I do not like this!'

'Same...' Hoseok whispered.

And "not getting involved" wasn't an option.

---

14100 words - part 1

Expect part 2 soon. :D

Hope you enjoy it even if it was pretty calm one.

BlairWitch91❤

# Spin off 1: Dance with the Devil - part 2

After a hectic period of dance practices and preparing the performance Hoseok was again sitting with three of the other dancers in the cafeteria. He was looking around, but Minji was a rare guest during lunchtime in the cafeteria, so he will probably have to hunt her somewhere in her Department.

He didn't want her to get in trouble. Yet he would totally get it if she would decide to get in one... The problem was he didn't even know who that girl from the recording was... Maybe someone knew her.

He wanted to take out his phone when Minji appeared at the entrance. Her confident, flawless, balance walk was, again, something that caught his attention. She was walking like a model on a runway. She would be an incredible dancer...

She was going towards the counter not looking around so she probably wasn't looking for anybody. He bent a bit backwards on his chair and stretched his arm to stop her walk. She looked down at him.

'Hey, Minji! Join us!'

Minji looked at the three of Hoseok's friends. Jongho and the girl who was playing the main female dancer, nodded to her. The third guy said:

'Oh, the yesterday's girl.' he stretched his hand. 'I'm Yu-jun. This is my girlfriend Micha.'

'Yeah, I am terribly sorry for what happened.' Minji looked at the rest and squeezed his hand.

'I told you, it is okay, already.' Hoseok growled and pulled her to sit on the chair next to him.

'Yeah! Things like that happen in a crowd. We always need to be prepared.' Jongho said.

Hoseok looked at her with dark eyes, and opened his mouth, but she just gently stepped on his sneaker to be quiet.

'Hobi, saved the day, but I am impressed you didn't panic. It looked really natural in the end!' Micha said. Normally, people will be in a chaotic state of distraught in this situation. And your body withstood that bent!' she giggled.

'I could pull that out only because it was her.' Hoseok laughed.

Minji frowned.

'What do you mean?'

'I had the idea of this choreography because of you.' Hoseok said to her. 'The classy girl! When I caught you and saw you still having this calm face I decided to take the chance, so I spun you. And thankfully you played along.'

'Ohh! Now that you mentioned she really has a beautiful silhouette..' Micha said and glared at Hoseok. 'If you told me earlier I could observe more how she walks!'

'No, no! You were amazing there!' Minji said, denying with her hands. 'I don't know what he is talking about! I am just glad it didn't spoil your hard work, guys.'

'It's fine, it's fine.' Jongho said.

'And I didn't realise you would pull that out while singing!' she smiled. 'It was so energizing!' She looked at Hobi.

He shrugged.

'We usually do not sing, but sometimes it's fun.' he looked at her. 'Should I bring you something to eat?'

'Nah, it is okay. I just dropped by for a sandwich and I am going back.'

'Okay.' he said and stood up, to go to the counter.

Minji looked after him surprised. He was soo...

She felt more and more as if she wanted to be around him more.

He came back with a sandwich, gave it to Minji and took his coat from the chair.

'Guys, I will walk Minji to her classes, because people are studpid. See you in the studio in the evening!'

Yujun looked at Minji and his eyes widened in realization.

'Oh... you are...' he frowned. 'But you are nice...'

She sent him a sour smile.

'Usually, I am.'

Yujun looked at Hobi and nodded in approval.

'See you later!'

'You can always join us for lunch, Minji.' Micha added, waving to them.

When they walked outside, Minji looked at the sandwich.

'You really do not have to walk me around.'

'I know I don't have to, but I want to.' he shrugged. 'What are you going to do?'

'Don't trouble yourself with that.' she smirked.

'You are planning something.'

'Yes. I do. And you shouldn't get involved.' she said, seriously. 'I will deal with that girl my way.'

'I bet you will. It just pisses me off that it is necessary.'

She laughed.

'You are worried I will send her to hospital?'

'No. I am worried you will end up being "the bad guy" again.' he looked at her seriously.

For a moment they were looking at each other in heavy silence.

'Well, I enjoy it.' she said lightly in the end. 'I have law classes now in Law Department Building.'

They walked there and Minji changed the topic.

'You have nice friends. I guess Dancers have a lot of endorphins and are used to group work. That's why they are so open and chill.'

'I can work well with anybody. But I also cut people off when I do not like their personality. I do not see the point in staying around people who stress me.'

Again silence fell between them.

Minji sighed heavily.

'Stop thinking about it.'

'I can't. You want me to send Jin after you? He will wash your head like a mother with 1000 years of experience!'

'No. Thank you.' she giggled.

'Just...' Hoseok took a deep breath. 'Just... you know where to find us, okay?'

Minji smiled a bit.

'Yeah. I will come around.'

.

.

.

Hobi couldn't leave it alone tho. On the next day he approached Bora on the corridor between classes.

'Do you know what Minji is planning?'

'More or less...' Bora nodded.

'Will she get in trouble?' he asked.

Bora lifted her eyebrow.

'You should learn about Minji pretty fast. You know why she is called Devil?'

He shook his head.

'No, the nickname is stupid per se.'

'Well, it is because she is always coming out clean. No matter what happens and how she decides to clean the situation she is untouchable. Every time someone thought they could anyhow threaten or bully her it got back at them really freaking fast. And she still never did anything that could be used against her. That's how clever she is.'

'Okay, I get it, but it still bothers me.'

Bora smirked.

'Well, then go watch something entertaining and chill. Like aikido training tomorrow's afternoon.' She finished her drink and dropped the bottle into the bin. 'I get that the situation with the performance is getting on your nerves, but why are you so concerned about Minji?'

'Who knows.' Hoseok sighed. 'I guess that's how people become friends... I would be worried about you as well...'

'Maybe you are right...' she laughed and turned around. 'Go watch it tomorrow, Hobi.'

It was a big hint. And he was going to use it.

.

.

.

After the classes Hobi rushed to the gym used by the Aikido section. There were more people around than he expected.

The couch looked around and said:

'It is the last training before Christams and our examination session and we have here few of our guests here from the Tokio delegation. That's why we decided we will use this opportunity to do self-defense practice,' he explained.

He was choosing students from the section to show some common, dangerous situations and how to deal with them, even if you are an inexperienced fighter.

Hobi knew most of those moves. How to get out of the grip or what to do when you are grabbed from behind. Or where to hit with a little bit of strength to release yourself.

For half of the training he didn't know why Bora told him to come here, till the trainer said:

'Now, our two best and most experienced fighters will present you with more complicated situations, as well as use all the moves mentioned earlier.' he said. 'Minji, Ayoung.' he pointed to the girls to come to the mat. 'Traditionally, three 3-minute rounds or to 3 pointes.'

Hoseok widened his eyes. That girl! It was her.

Two girls stood in front of herself and bowed to each other.

Ayoung took the stand with guard, but Minji was just standing with her hands alongside her body and calm expression.

*She is going to destroy her in the first round*, Hoseok thought in a strange mix of excitement and terror.

During the first round he understood how simple his thinking was.

And he saw the Devil in all his glory. She was methodical, calm, calculative and patient. And it all together for someone who knew what was going on, was incredibly cruel.

Minji was not moving much from her stand, but nothing, absolutely nothing could reach her. She was blocking every punch, every kick with precise moves. It really looked like performing self-defense, if not the way she was delivering her attacks. One after another. Her fist reached here and there. On the arm, in the elbow crease, and in the collarbone. Her kicks didn't look as if they did much damage. The calf. 3 times. The same place.

And when she did a frontal kick into Ayoung's groin she did it exactly in a way which would just make the other stumble back and not give Minji a point to finish the round earlier.

'Without point!' he said.

Ayoung didn't even manage to put one of her toes on Minji's half of the mat.

When the training whistled the end of round one, Minji just took her stand on the mat and looked at Ayoung on the other side, who was taking a few fast sips of water.

Maybe it could look a bit boring for someone who didn't know what was going on with Ayoung's body right now... It showed after the first minute of the second round.

It seemed the girl started to be more careful with her charge, she was a bit slower. The hits she received from Minji started to hurt. She couldn't lift her left leg to kick - because Minji kicked her groin and it started to swallow. She could barely stand on her right leg because the muscle of her calf was compacted. She couldn't put strength into her punch because her lymph nodes on her armpit started to swell, from those few precise hits Minji had her in that place. She could barely hold her guard at this point.

This would be the perfect moment to finish her quickly. But Minji didn't. She was just making small, tricky moves as if she was going to attack, which made Ayoung respond to it, attack first and gave Minji the opportunity to defend herself in another simple, yet painful way.

There was nothing flashy about this showdown. It was methodical and effective.

As if Minji was gently whispering to Ayoung to give up the fight.

Even the trainer started to frown. Maybe because it was "two of his best" fighters. And yet the difference in the levels were incomparable.

Second round finished.

'Minji! Point!'

*Oh, that's why she was so careful in the first round*, Hoseok thought terrified and astounded by her mind. She wanted her for 3 rounds, which Ayoung couldn't possibly win. *Second best? In what world?*

Minji looked at the trainer and asked, worried:

'Is she okay?'

*That was so mean!* Hobi giggled in his head. She asked on purpose! He could tell by the way her voice was too compassionate.

Sensei looked towards Ayoung whose legs were shaking. She was training to catch a breath.

'Ayoung? Can you fight?'

'Yes, sensei!' Ayoung said and glared at Minji.

The 30 seconds break finished and Ayoung stood in front of Minji again. She hadn't moved. Hadn't tried to attack, just kept her guard. Trying to corner Minji into attacking first. Of course Minji could, but it wasn't her plan.

She wanted Ayoung to give up the fight by herself, but if she wasn't going to show any of her fighting spirit, Minji wasn't going to spend the next 3 minutes on attacking her in a way which wouldn't bring her long term damage.

So she ended it with one.

As soon as the round started. Minji just made three fast steps, jumping high over the girl. She entangled her leg around her head, and using the impact she completely turned her body, throwing it on the ground. She ended up kneeling above her head. She looked at Ayoung, who tried to catch her breath for a harsh meeting with the mat.

(This is somehow the move. The instagram reel is even better if someone will be able to see it)

https://www.instagram.com/reel/DEvFceJxehm/?utm_source=ig_web_copy_link

'Minji! Point!' She heard.

Before the trainer could join them she whispered to Ayoung:

'If you don't want me to humiliate you over and over again, stop giving me reasons to.' She leaned a bit forward. 'Be grateful I haven't sent you to hospital just before exams.'

Ayoung gulped.

Minji stood up and returned to her position, while the trainer took her place, and helped Ayoung to stand up.

Ayoung limped to her palace and Minji and her bowed.

The trainer made an ending speech to the team and the few guests. The fighters bowed at the end and the training was over.

Hoseok walked out first.

He stood near the doors to the boys changing room and waited.

Minji walked out in the middle, she turned to the exit, but then hesitantly looked back. She sighed seeing Hoseok and made a move with her head to approach.

'You saw it.' she assumed.

'Yeah. Let's talk outside.' he said, seeing other girls leaving the changing room one by one. He took her bag from her shoulder and she didn't protest. She felt nervous for some reason.

When they were outside of the gym, Minji started to be irritated by the silence.

'You won't say anything?'

'I am still speechless.'

'Just spill it!'

'I am scared! And excited! And amazed! And I want to do it too!' he said with a hype in his voice. 'Like! You had her on ropes from the beginning! In her place I wouldn't show my face in school for a week!'

Minji stopped in her place, confused.

'You are not going to lecture me, I shouldn't be so cruel?'

'What part of this was cruel?' he asked, surprised. 'Well, maybe it was, but who cares! You haven't done anything against the rules. What is even more creepy and admirable, when you think about it! Nobody will convince me she didn't deserve that beating!'

'How are you so sure?'

'Because, you are not like that Minji.' he sighed as if it was obvious. 'With those skills you could just beat her up in some corner. And I haven't yet seen you

attacking someone who didn't deserve that. You are too calm for that. So how long are you on knives with that girl?'

Minji felt the calmness exchanging the previous nervousness. He really had a bit of a different perception of people that she usually encountered.

'Since first year. She is a senior. She didn't go to the championship because I did.'

'Oh? So she is a petty type,' he concluded.

Minji shrugged.

'Okay, don't get mad, but I have to ask. Are your wrists, okay? Ankles? Knees? Any injuries?'

'I am perfectly fine.' she giggled.

'If not, I will take you to Namjin! They will fix anything!'

'I am really okay, Hobi.' she shook her head in amusement.

'Hungry? I am always hungry after training!'

'Yeah, I will eat supper, when I reach dorm.'

'Good, good! Geeze! That last move! I still see it in front of my eyes!'

'It's demanding, fancy and usually unnecessary.' she rolled her eyes.

'No wonder you do twists and spins so easily! My gosh, I could make you an incredible dancer!'

'No, thank you!' she laughed.

'You would be amazing!'

'Not my cup of tea.'

'Oh, come on!'

'No.'

'I won't stop asking. But I suddenly have the need to go on a ring! I haven't been in combat since the camp! I realise I miss it!'

'No, you don't. You are just on an adrenaline high.' she laughed.

She laughed again and again, and she realised how easy it was for him to make

her laugh...

.

.

.

After the delegation was over students started their examination session. There wasn't a break in between. They spent most of their time in dormitories and libraries. Even the dancing section had a break in their training.

Usually Jin was studying together with Minji, but one time, Minji was sitting in the library alone, and Hoseok approached her with his assignment. He sat in front of her and started to solve resume tests in silence.

Yujun and Micha came an hour later.

'Can we join this table? Micha asked.

'Sure.' Minji nodded and moved her papers a bit.

They sat around and everybody was involved in their work for some time.

'Someone has a rubber?' Yujun asked.

Minji handed him the item without a word.

'Thanks he said.

Hobi lifted his head and looked at the crowded table. For a moment he looked at Yujun and Minji on the opposite side.

'Yujun, change with me.' he said, unexpectedly. 'I need the change of light. My eyes hurt.'

'Geeze, Hobi...' Yujun giggled. 'You are so spoiled...'

They changed places.

Minji lifted her eyebrow to herself, not lifting her head from the book. But she had to fight with herself to not smile at all, when Hoseok joined her side and his chair was suddenly much closer than Yujun's previously.

How will she be able to focus now and not get into an endless void of thoughts about her soulmate?

Should she tell him?

How would he react?

Hoseok's knee touched hers under the table.

But wasn't it so sweet now? Just to get to know each other a bit more...

.

.

.

Just before Christmas break Minji, when everybody was preparing for 10 free days at their homes, Jin, Namjoon, Bora, Minji and Chanyeol were sitting in cafeteria, when Hobi in santa hat walked in and started to wish everybody Merry Christams, pulling candies from his pockets and throwing it to some people.

'This guy is a human embodiment of Santa Claus.' Chanyeol chuckled.

'Hobi really loves Christmas. He is saving all year just so he can buy a hilarious amount of gifts...' Jin said.

'Last year I got a fountain pen with engraving.' Namjoon said.

'And I got a new stethoscope... And it is expensive.' Jin rolled his eyes.

Hoseok joined their table, gave everybody a candy, exclaiming:

'Merry Christimas!' Then he looked inside his bag and gave everybody a different pack of handmade chocolates from a popular shop.

'Bro... now I want to give something to you too... Don't do that...' Chanyeol said.

'Take me for a coffee after New Year.' Hobi winked at him.

'It's a date.' Chanyeol nodded.

Bora snorted.

Minji was looking at chocolates and then lifted her squinted eyes at Hobi.

'What do you want, Hope?'

'Your phone number.'

Namjoon blushed, Jin widened his eyes.

Minji just stretched her hand, and Hoseok grinning widely put his phone on it.

'That's it?' she asked, giving the phone back.

'What's going on?' Bora giggled, confused, when Minji and Hobi were looking at each other seriously.

'I have a bet to win. And I need you.' he said seriously.

'Deal.' she agreed shortly. 'But the chocolates better be worth it.'

'I picked the best flavours for you.' he winked and stood up. 'I will text you details after the break.' he said. 'I need to go check if the dance studio is left clean. See you later guys! And if not! Have a great Christmas and New Year!'

When he was gone, everybody looked at Minji.

'You haven't even asked him what the bet is about.' Namjoon frowned.

Minji shrugged.

'Oh, please! It's Hoseok. Whatever it is, it will be fun.'

'What if you just agreed to some dancing show?' Jin pointed out.

Minji got pale, and jerked her head up, but Hobi was already gone.

'Oh, no...'

Jin pointed his finger at her.

'This guy is sweet, caring and like a human dachshund. And you know what is known about dachshunds?'

Minji shook her head.

'They can do everything, but they won't listen if they don't feel like it. And that means they are freakin smart. And because they are so cheerful and adorable their owners let them do what they want.'

'And this Animal Plant Lecture means...?' Chanyeol asked.

'Never consider Hoseok as someone stupid. He will use it mercilessly.' Namjoon said.

'Oh, I am perfectly aware he is smart.' Minji said. 'But still... he wouldn't tell me he needs me to win the bet if it would be something I can fuck up.' she smirked.

.

.

.

In the middle of January, when everybody came back to dorms and the semester was going on, Hoseok was standing on the street with Jongho and Yujun, in front of his four seniors from the Dancing Section including the ex- and present Head.

'Whoa! Hobi we agreed to 4-people teams. And you just have 3 people.' Siwoo said.

'It seems we won before we even played!' Bong added.

'Ha! You wish!' Hoseok snorted. 'So, let me introduce you to my secret weapon!' he pointed to someone who was standing behind them.

The four seniors turned around and saw Minji.

'What are we playing today and what am I winning?' Minji asked.

'You haven't told her?' Bong glared at Hoseok.

Hoseok went to Minji and put his hands on her shoulders.

'It doesn't matter what! Your ass is about to get kicked!' he said almost jumping.

'Are you sure?' Siwoo asked Minji cautiously. 'It's laser tag war.'

Minji blinked and then laughed loudly.

'Bring it oooon!' she exclaimed and high fived with Hoseok.

'Fine!' Siwoo shrugged. 'Don't regret later. We have a booking at 5, so we can enter.'

The facility assistant walked them to the place where the vests with wires were hanging. Hoseok put the vest and while zipping it he said to Siwoo:

'Oh, sunbaenim, did I mention? Minji is our university Champion Archer!' he looked triumphantly at his colleague.

Siwoo grunted.

'Bow is not like a gun...'

This was the moment the assistant gave Minji the laser rifle, she frowned and mumbled:

'It is not as heavy as a normal one...'

Bong widened his eyes hearing it

Hoseok smirked and whispered to Siwoo:

'And Minji is not like any other girl.'

'You are getting cocky, Hobi.' Bong grinned. 'We won't give you those coupons easily.'

Minji looked at Jongho.

'I am fighting for coupons?'

'Food coupons! For the whole month! To different places!' Jongho said. really serious about it.

'It seems you really need it...' she giggled.

'It's free food. I am a student! It's obvious!'

She patted his arm.

'Okay, okay.'

Assistant walked them around the place looking like a warehouse with a lot of obstacles. Barrels, ladders, tyres, walls, nets and pillars here and there.

'There are two bases. Each time you get shot you have to return to your base and press the button to be alive again. You have to protect the flag from being stolen. The team with more body count shots are winning. The vests and headbands have sensors. On the chest and on the back. The war takes 30 minutes. Everything is clear?'

They nodded.

'Team Red - left corner base.' he pointed. 'Team Blue - right corner.' he showed the second base. 'The lights will go out in a minute.'

Hoseok, Minji, Jongo and Yujun went to the blue base.

'Minji in charge.' Hoseok said from the spot.

She looked at him surprised, before she shrugged.

'Okay. Yujun - go left, keep near walls. See that tree house there? Take it before they enter it. You will have a nice view from there. Jongho you take right. And

stay close to the base to protect it. Hobi, you are going with me, through the middle. Try to sneak behind those pillars and to their base through the back. I will cover you. Head low.'

The lights went out. The stroboscope lamp and lasers were confusing the participants here and there. The loud music blasted from the speakers. They ran to the field.

Minji and Hobi crouched down behind the pillar.

'Okay, go.' she said. And pointed her rifle to the Siwoo who was sneaking near the wall. She was moving in her crouched down position.

It was fun. Being even a bit unfocused resulted in a fast come back to the base and wait to be resurrected.

Hoseok and Jongho had to do it frequently because they were moving through the place. But Minji and Yujun were taking the opponents twice as often, forcing them to go back to the starting point.

Siwoo finally was able to get close to their base but then he encountered Minji, laying on her belly on the floor, just behind the pillar.

She just smirked and shut the headband on his head.

At the same time Hoseok slid on his knees just in front of Bong, who almost got to their base from the other side and shut him.

'Okay, let's try to storm their base.' Minji said. '2 minutes left. Last action.' she breathed out when they leaned on each other's back for a second.

'Sure. I will take the back.'

They ran through the field, shooting everybody who tried to stop them. Minji was going forward, with Hoseok turned with his back to her, protecting her. She shot the guard, but before she could grab the flag the lights turned on and the gong informed them that the war was over.

30 minutes went by too fast.

'Aaaaa....' Hoseok whined disappointed. 'We were almost there!'

'Nah, we wooon!' Jongho exclaimed. 'The shots count!'

'Team Red - 20 shots. Team Blue - 32 shots.' the speaker announced.

'YES!!!' Yunjun exclaimed.

Hoseok looked at Minji and almost grabbed her to spin her, but instead he smiled seeing her wide grin.

'It was fun.' she admitted.

'Coupons! Here I come!' Jongho said and jumped to Siwoo, stretching his head. 'Gimmie!'

'At least use the first one today to treat all of us!' Bong sulked.

'Okay, okay! We beat you, we can feed you!' Yujun laughed.

'I will pass...' Minji said, taking off the vest, and detaching the rifle from it. 'I need to get up tomorrow.'

Jongho tore one of the coupons.

'Eat something on the way.' he said.

'I will go with Minji.' Hoseok said. He looked at Siwoo. 'Told you she is a secret weapon.'

'Next time I call dips on her in my team.' Siwoo said.

'You wish!' Hoseok snorted and turned Minji to the exit. 'Your graduation is in March. Get lost, sunbaenim!'

Siwoo looked after them and looked at Yujun.

'What's with them?'

Yujun shrugged.

'Some Interdependant's thing it seems.'

They walked from the game house in the cold January air.

'You could go eat with them.' Minji said. 'You doubt I can protect myself on the way?'

'Nope!' he said, lifting his chin. 'But who would protect me then? Walking alone is dangerous!'

She laughed and Hoseok sighed.

'Besides I won't be around much for next month.' he said quietly.

'Trainings?' she asked, nervously. It made her a bit anxious.

'No. I will be barely at University even. My professional dancing group have some performance for idols organized so I will be out.'

'Seems tough.'

'It is, but they pay well. And I get a lot of contacts because of it. One of the choroes is mine. So I want to be there even more.'

'Understandable. How often do you have fun like that?'

'Oh? We went a few times with Jin and Namjoon or Jongho. But Namjoon is busy prepering for his international delegation in the US and Jin is preparing for his first internship in a medical centre. Next time we could take the rest, right?'

'Count me in.' Minji nodded. She squeezed the paper in her hand. 'So? Should we use the coupon now?'

'What coupon did he give you?' he asked, suspiciously.

'Some street food?'

'Then leave it. We are going for something better,' he said. 'Let's try sushi.'

.

.

.

Four weeks passed.

Minji was in her normal routine, but nothing seemed normal. Not catching even a glimpse of Hobi was making her anxious, sad and nervous. Because Namjoon in February went abroad for two weeks she and Jin mainly were sitting in the library in silence.

Sometimes they talked about what was going on with Namjoon and Hoseok, but they weren't even in the mood for long talks. But it was still better to sulk together then separately.

Even if neither Jin nor Minji would admit it.

Jin showed Minji Hoseok's instagram side and she watched all of his performances and choreographies. She could watch it over and over again just before going to sleep.

Dancing was making Hoseok shine.

He was a really handsome man... she couldn't deny it. But watching him on the screen was not even 1% as soothing as having him for a minute around. His cheerful and soothing presence.

Her soulmate.

No, she wouldn't imagine someone like him before. But she was slowly collecting answers to "why" it was him. And she wanted to discover more of it...

She decided she will tell him soon. No matter the consequences she will tell him.

But she didn't know, he would beat her to it...

.

.

.

Hoseok walked out of the pub. His dancing group went there after the performance to celebrate the end of the tour. They came back from Seoul a few hours later. He hasn't even reached the dormitory yet.

He couldn't handle much alcohol so he just drank two beers. He was tired and when he was tipsy he was always getting too many thoughts in his head.

He was slowly walking through the streets. It was getting quieter after midnight. The beginning of March brought cool but fresh air.

He took out his phone. The dorm was closed at this hour. He was sure Jin would scold him for sure. He texted him to not worry and he will be there in the morning.

He leaned on the wall of the building and looked up, playing with his phone.

Too many thoughts...

Too late at night...

He shouldn't...

But...

He pressed his phone to his ear.

After the second signal he heard a voice.

'Hobi?'

Hoseok gulped.

'Hoseok. Are you okay?' he heard some moving noise and Minji's worried voice.

'No...' he whispered.

'What happened?'

'I... miss you... It's so stupid... Why do I miss you? Can you tell me?'

'Hobi...' she whispered. 'What happened?'

'Nothing. I just had a few drinks. And... I went for a walk... But I have these thoughts... They do not have any sense... but I feel like they do...' he was whispering with closed eyes.

'What thoughts?' Minji asked gently.

Hoseok opened his eyes and looked at the night sky.

'I... want to see you...' he choked out. 'I feel like I haven't seen you for years...'

There was silence from the other side.

'I know it sounds...'

'Where are you?' she interrupted him.

'On the street...'

'Sent me your location and do not move from there.' she said quickly.

'What? No...' he protested but she already hung up. 'It's far...' he whispered, pressing the phone to his forehead.

He was never in a state like that. Of course he liked people and was easily familiar with them. But was kind and polite. But he never had this need to look for someone or stand as close as possible. And this was gradually getting stronger.

And last week when he should be focusing on the dancing, which was never an issue from him, there was another thing in his mind that started to be present as often as the dance itself.

There was one conclusion he was afraid to draw...

How many times have passed? He didn't know. She shouldn't come here.

But there she was. A bit out of breath from running. With the air changing into white clouds.

Standing in front of him.

She was really pretty. It was something obvious for him, but it was the first moment he really told himself that he thinks she is beautiful.

'Why are you here, Hobi...' she said gently and shook her head, walking closer.

'You told me to wait.' he whispered back.

'Since when do you listen?'

'Since you are the one who told me to.'

Minji stood in front of him. The tips of their shoes touched.

'You shouldn't have sneaked out of the dorm.' he whispered and looked at her softly. 'You haven't even dressed properly...' he fixed the collar of her jacket. 'It's still cold...'

'You told me you want to see me.'

'I am drunk.'

'No. You are not.' she shook her head.

'I am. For a moment I felt like I would die if I won't see you...' he whispered.

'Then why are you so sad, now?' she asked gently, and brushed the bang from his forehead.

'I am not sad. I am confused. My intuition is telling me something, but my mind is telling me to wait...' he gulped. 'Minji... can you do something for me?'

'What do you need?'

'Can you... take off your glove?'

Minji looked at her right palm and felt her heart was squeezing. Her fingers were fidgeting nervously when she stretched it to Hoseok.

'You can take it off...' she choked out.

With shivering and cold hands Hoseok gently took off the black leather glove from Minji's slim palm.

He looked at the mark and a relief ran through his body like water from a waterfall.

'It's the same...' he whispered.

'I know...' she choked out, nothing being able to say anything anymore. She didn't even know if Hoseok heard her.

'It's the same.' he repeated in shock and hugged her tightly.

For a second she didn't know what to do with her hands, before she squeezed him back and pressed her cheek to his chest.

'Since when?' he asked.

Oh, he heard her just fine. A tight knot returned to her stomach.

'Infirmary. I am sorry.' she whispered. 'I really didn't know what was the right moment to say something like this... I didn't want you to be unhappy about it. And... it was fine as it was...'

Hoseok squeezed her more.

'What if I would do something really dumb?'

'It wouldn't change much... I could live with it. Besides I told you... till you do not play someone else it is perfectly okay.'

'Are you okay with me?'

She giggled.

'I was asking this for the last few months "Will he be okay with me?".'

'I am glad I didn't know first. I would freak out for sure.' he gulped.

'The pull is amazing, huh?'

'The moment you stood in my way it appeared like a tornado. It's like a rash under the skin. The interest is irresistible.'

'So what next?' she asked.

'You ask me?' he giggled.

'You are the sociable one here...'

'Yeah but you know there are two types of interependants. Those who do not date

their whole lifetime because "for what"? And those who risk hurting any other person, waiting for their soulmates. You can tell I am not the second type. So I fell into "interdependants who sucks at dating and have zero experience" bag.

'That's good we are in the same bag at least...' she said amused.

'So we can assume we can do whatever we feel like?' he asked hopefully.

'I guess we had a good 3 month trial.' she agreed.

Hoseok moved a bit and looked at her.

'But for social purposes I can call you a "girlfriend", right?'

'It sounds cringye in my head for now, but I will get used to it.' she smiled.

'We will figure this out, but just... most of the things around you are just comfortable, you know? Exciting, yet comfortable.'

'I understand what you mean.' she nodded. 'Ugh! I thought you would be mad!'

'What?! No, I am super happy! I thought I was in deep shit! I thought I am getting crazy falling in love with a person without knowing if she is my soulmate! It was stressful!'

'I am sooooryyyy!' she whined.

Hoseok looked at her.

'No. It just had to be like that. I know you wouldn't let me get close to you so fast if you didn't know. Am I right?' He lifted his eyebrow.

'Well... yeah...' she admitted.

He nodded.

'Knew it.' he grabbed her hand. 'This is okay, right? I will walk you to the dorms.'

'What if I would say "no".' she asked, lifting their joined hands.

'I have a problem with hearing.' Hoseok said sadly, and put their combined hands inside the pocket of his hoodie.

'Selective hearing problems...' she corrected him.

'You said something?' he blinked innocently.

'I am okay with it...' she smiled and shook her head in amusement.

'Of course you are.' he said confidently. 'If you wouldn't, my wrist would already be broken.'

She laughed and leaned a bit forward to his arm, so they would walk even closer.

Why him?

Well, because she couldn't find even one reason "why not".

.

.

.

Minji smiled gently at the three kids. She loved that memory. It was as fresh as if it happened yesterday.

Haemin, Haneul and Dalhee were looking at her with wide eyes as if they were in the middle of the story and she stopped without a reason.

'Isn't it a cute story?'

'Where is the kiss?' Sky asked, causing Jin to choke on his saliva.

'So you were in love or not?' Haemin asked, confused.

Minji looked at Hoseok.

'We... we're getting there.' Minji said and smiled lightly.

'Sounds fishy...' Dalhee said, while frowning. ' I don't get it! You found each other, right?'

'Meeting your soulmate doesn't mean you are in love right away. It usually just gives you comfort knowing it is the right person and it will happen. So you can enjoy this time. Neither does it mean you get in the relationship.' Namjoon explained gently.

'Huh?! When I meet my soulmate I want to be in a relationship right away!' Dal said stubbornly.

'Oh, we saw something like this...' Hoseok started to laugh.

'Indeed we did...' Jin said. 'And let me tell you, wishes like that can turn into one hell of a punishment.'

'In this case the punishment was called "Baekhyun". Hoseok rolled on the floor,

laughing.

'Grandpa?' Sky looked at Minji with wide eyes.

'Mhm.' she nodded.

'So it is not the end of the story?' Haemin made himself more comfortable. 'Go on.'

'So, it was the end of the semester. Almost a Beginning of our third year. The end of February is the time when Universitaty are visited by new students... It is called "orientation".

.

.

.

The cafeteria was full of people. The new students who applied for Daegu University were coming in and out, exchanging information, and getting the leaflets. The Clubs were on fire trying to recruit new members.

Hoseok and Minji have known for two weeks that they were soulmates. The change in their behavior was subtle.

Jin was the first one Hobi informed as soon as he got back to the doors. His reaction still was making Hoseok pout. Because Jin didn't believe him and called Minji for confirmation.

Bora on the other hand took it calmly and just accepted it as soon as Minji told her. But she was observing her sister and her boyfriend. But they seemed to be really comfortable around each other testing waters.

Namjoon congratulated them wholeheartedly as soon as he got back from the US.

The biggest effect their discovery had on Chanyeol.

Minji was sitting next to Hoseok and was looking at Chanyeol with frowned eyebrows.

'Come again? Why don't you wear your glove?'

'Because... it can take years to accidentally discover my soulmate! Maybe they are already here! What if they won't know who I am and will avoid me for no reason!?'

'So you want to go against destiny and dive right in?' Jin asked.

'I wanna speed things up! Maybe I wasted three years of University already!?'

'We wear a glove for a reason.' Bora said.

'Yeah, to protect the Sealers and ourselves but that just makes things harder! If they don't know my mark, how do they know it is me!'

'The destiny brings you together.' Namjoon said slowly as if he was explaining something to a child.

'Do you know how many people I have met? How can I know it is not one of them?'

'So you decided you will just force, probably a totally unknown person, to acknowledge the fact they will fall in love with you and spend their life with you before they will know your name?' Minji clarified.

'Well... when you make it sound like that...' Chanyeol said hesitantly.

'That's the most selfish and self-absorbed thing to do!' They heard a new voice from behind. A beautiful young guy with shiny blond hair, stood next to their table. He smacked Chanyeol's head with a folded leaflet.

'Wear your glove you idiot! And do not approach me in a million years till you grow up!'

He turned around and angrily walked away.

Namjoon, Jin, Bora, Minji and Hoseok looked at once towards Chanyeol who was sitting with wide eyes totally dumbfounded.

'Did I just...' he started.

'Met your soulmate?' Jin suggested.

'Made your soulmate mad?' Hoseok added.

'Fuck up?' Minji served her line with a straight face.

'Yup. All three.' Bora nodded.

Chanyeol jumped up from the chair and ran through the cafeteria.

.

.

.

With wide grin Minji informed children:

'And that's how we met Baekhyun.'

---

6750 words

Part 3 will be final one. Stay tuned.

I hope you enjoy it!

BlairWitch91 ❤

# Spin off 1: Dance with the Devil - part 3

**MARCH 2045, 38 years earlier**

New semester has started. The bunch got used to the fact that Hobi and Minji were soulmates. It wasn't actually visible for anybody outside. But people, who knew them for years, like Bora knew Minji, and Namjoon who knew Hoseok, could notice subtle changes.

Those were simple things like Minji leaning through the table through his shoulder, putting her hand over it. Or letting him carry her bags without a word. Or holding his hand when they were walking.

Hoseok was clingy, but he was going at her pace, not trying to rush her at all. He was satisfied with walking her to dorms after their training, if their schedule matched, eating with her, learning near her in the library, having long walks and talks during weekdays or spending time with the whole bunch.

Nobody dared to tease him for being able to search her inside the crowd or just staring at her with admiration while she was talking. Well they all wanted to... but teasing him would mean indirectly teasing Minji and that was not a safe thing to do.

Just Jin sometimes dared to say something when she couldn't hear him, but it wasn't as fun cause Hoseok usually just shrugged and admitted his weak heart without blinking.

So to satisfy his mischievous tongue Jin took another aim, because Park Chanyeol was indeed an easy target right now.

Did he find his soulmate right after his semester started?

Yes. He did.

In the same department, being his junior.

Did he approached him?

Yes.

Was it a smart thing to do?

Not at all...

When Chanyeol saw Byun Baekhyun in the corridor his jaw dropped and before

Bora could stop him he went right to him.

'Hi... we met a few...' he started.

The short, sun-light-blond boy glared at him.

'Do you speak Korean?' He cut him off.

Chanyeol blinked.

'As you can see, yes!'

'Oh? So you are just that dumb, not being able to understand a simple sentence "do not approach me"?

Chanyeol gulped.

'We started from the wrong foot, but you are my...'

'No. I am not.' Baekhyun denied. 'I am not "yours" till I want to be. And I do not want to. Bye!'

He turned around, but Chanyeol grabbed his hand, but Bakehyun quickly freed his wrist instead and yelled loudly so the whole corridor will hear:

'HEY!! STOP GROUPING MY ASS! PERVERT!'

Chanyeol turned red on his face.

Every person in the corridor turned to look in their direction.

'I...I-I... d-didn't...' he stammered.

'Hey! Leave him, will you!?' some girl yelled.

And Chanyeol stepped back, quickly.

Baekhyun managed to turn around and walk away.

Bora stood next to Chanyeol.

'Well...' she started.

Chanyeol frowned.

'Why is he exaggerating so much?' he asked. 'I haven't done anything bad to him, have I?'

She patted his arm.

'It seems he holds a grudge towards you. Don't give up.'

'I think I will observe him for some time...'

'Oh, yeah. Great idea. Give him a chance to call you a stalker too.'

For the next few weeks Chanyeol was observing, keeping his distance, but also trying to have a chance to approach his soulmate in some natural way. He learned what drinks he usually bought, what he liked to have for breakfast and what clubs he was interested in.

Chanyeol thought destiny smiled at him at least, when he was walking with Jin and Minji through the corridor and realised Baekhyun was walking in front of him, talking with his colleague.

'I didn't decide yet... I think a dancing club or music club would be nice. I want to look at both...'

'If you want to go to the dance studio I can show you the way. My friend has practice right now...' Chanyeol said out loud.

Baekhyun turned to him.

'It is in the other building so...' Chanyeol managed to make a step towards him with a hopeful smile, when the other one pulled something from his bag.

The electric sound was heard.

Chanyeol stopped abruptly when he saw a paralyzer in Beakhyun's hands.

'I warned you...' Baekhyun said, squinting his eyes. 'And stop talking so fucking informally with me.'

Baekhyun's colleague, Jin and Minji were a bit shocked, but not even half as much as Chanyeol.

Until Minji bursted out laughing.

'Oh gosh!!!' she reached Baekhyun. 'Bro, I love you!'

She hooked her arm around the other's neck and before Baekhyun noticed she disarmed him, turning him back.

'I'm taking this guy.' she said. She turned to Baekhyun. 'I'm Minji by the way. You wanted to go to the dance studio, right? I will introduce you to my boyfriend then.'

Baekhyun frowned.

'What...'

Minji's grip got harder.

'It was amusing, but a bit overboard.' she said quietly. 'So right now I have mixed feelings about whether I should appload you or whoop your ass.'

'It shouldn't be your concern....'

'You are an Interdependent in this University. Whatever you do it doesn't involve only you, but puts a light or shadow on all of us.'

She let him go and walked next to him with grace with her head held high.

'Chanyeol is not a bad guy.' she said.

'Whatever.'

'Being stubborn and being stupid are two different things. Your annoyance is understandable. Your resistance right now is really childish.'

'He was really childish back then. So serves him right.'

'He couldn't possibly know he would encounter you on that day...'

'Yet, he took off his glove with that exact purpose. He disturbed natural order of things and now he has to suffer the consequences.'

'But if he would forget his glove back then you would call it a "destiny". Just because you heard about his action you are treating it as a disturbance. Still, it would be okay if you wouldn't bully him.'

'I wouldn't if he would stay away.'

'Whatever you want it or not soulmates' pulling is a natural thing.'

'And it wouldn't be present if he didn't know who I am.'

'You are thick headed.' Minji rolled her eyes. 'Okay. If it is that important to you then I will make sure he will stay safe and away from you.' her eyes shone coldly. 'From now on YOU are not allowed to come near Chan.'

'Don't meddle.' Baekhyun hissed.

'I am just giving you exactly what you wanted.' she shrugged and opened the doors where music blasted. 'As you are already here... face the hell.'

Baekhyun frowned. He looked through the doors.

The dancers were sweating badly. In front Hoseok was moving precisely, looking like a hawk into the mirror. Minji let it last for the next 3 minutes. When the music ended, Hoseok instructed the dancers and gave a sign to start the music again, she looked at her watch.

'Hope! Lunchtime!' she screamed.

Hoseok lifted his head and instantly looked directly at where she was standing.

'Shoo! Guys! It is your chance to escape!' she clapped her hands. She smirked. 'I will distract him...'

'Thanks, sunbaenim!' some people said, some older ones laughed.

As Minji was often coming around this time to the studio they got familiar with her.

Hoseok was standing and with a bit of an amused, hopeless smile, shook his head.

Breathing heavily he went to the bench and took a bottle of water.

'And how do you intend to distract me?' he asked.

'I entered.' she shrugged.

'I can't even deny...'

'You should. To keep the face...' she stuck out her tongue.

'And why would I do something so pointless like denying my girlfriend the attention she deserves?'

'Oh? You are playing the flirting game?'

'I can't flirt at all. If speaking the truth is flirting I do it unconsciously...'

Baekhyun observed their interaction. They were soooo... not matching. She looked like a classy lady from a good home. A dangerous princess as well with the way she threatened him. And he, with his, covered in sweat, body, in loose pants and sleeveless t-shirt looked like a happy-go-lucky boy next door who loves to play with neighbours children.

And yet they were talking to each other teasingly, comfortably, at first glance - like friends who had known each other for years. But their eyes and body language: The way Hoseok lightly touched her forearm and cares it, and the way

she was looking at him as if she was provoking him - was speaking volume.

Baekhyun grunted.

Hoseok looked at him.

'Oh, hi! You are Chanyeol's so...'

'He is not.' Minji disturbed him. 'He made a mistake. Chanyeol never confirmed his mark. It is apparently similar but not the same.'

Baekhyun looked at her with widened eyes.

Hoseok turned his eyes to her for a moment. They exchanged some silent communication.

'Oh so it is like that!' Hobi nodded with understanding. 'Poor Chan! He was so frustrated at that time... But for sure your yelling made him reflect on his future actions.' Hoseok smiled at the boy. 'I'm Jeon Hoseok.'

'Byun Baekhyun.'

'He is considering joining the dancing club.' Minji explained.

'Come to practice tomorrow then. The beginners group's practice is at 5.' Hoseok found some leaflets on the windowsill and gave it to Baekhyun. 'Here are basic information, the contact to the club's manager and schedule. And if you have any questions you can ask me too.'

'Thanks, sunbaenim.' Bakehyun said. 'I will take my leave then.' he nodded and sent Minji last glare.

When the doors closed after him Hoseok sat on the bench and rested his back on the wall. He was looking at Minji for some time, drinking water.

'Why are you mad?' he asked.

'Am I?' she asked mysteriously.

'You are.'

She smiled lightly. Hobi was really attentive. He could tell a lot of things about her moods from a glance.

'This guy... he behaves unreasonably. He pulled out a paralyzer at Chan... I laughed my ass off at first. It was amazing!' she giggled. 'But it wasn't a joke at all. And it was suddenly not funny anymore. Chanyeol did something uncommon, I

agree. But it was Baekhyun who revealed their bond. If he wanted to avoid it he could just not open his mouth and pass us on that day. I knew your mark first and I haven't told you to get to know you. He could take any action like that. Nobody would know. The ball was on his court. But he is blaming it all on Chanyeol.'

'So you want to give Chan a hand?'

'Do I look like a matchmaker?' She looked at Hoseok with a done face.

'Oh... so you just want to give that guy a lesson...' Hobi understood.

'Should I not?' Minji lifted her eyebrow.

'I don't mind. But I have a condition...' Hoseok shrugged.

'I won't be too hard on him...' she waved with her hand.

'That's not my condition...'

'What is it then?'

'Don't give them more attention than you are giving your boyfriend.'

Minji smirked.

'Are you sulking, Jeon?' she made a slow step towards him.

'Yes. And actually I have a second condition and I will even help you.'

She made another step and leaned towards him.

'Take me on a date.' he demanded and lifted his chin.

'Aren't we going out all the time?'

'Official date.' he underlined. 'Shopping date.'

'You want to dress me up?' she whispered with a small smile.

Their faces were really close. Just enough to have a clear look inside each other's eyes.

'Yes.'

'Mhm...' he purred. His face was calm and composed even when Minji rested her palms on his thights.

'Are going at my pace is getting on your nerves, Hope?' she whispered.

'Not at all. I enjoy looking at how you break your own resistance more than breaking your resistance myself...'

'Do I do that?'

'You are an inch from kissing me. And I know you really want to...' he whispered.

He wasn't wrong. He was just sitting here. All sweaty. So calm and yet so cheeky. Looking at her a bit teasingly. She was in his grasp but his hands were resting on the bench without movement.

'I'm not stopping you, Minji...' he smiled a bit. 'The question is... will you stop yourself...?'

'Tempting... But shaking this calmness of yours is even more...' she said and connected their lips.

*Calmness?* Hoseok thought. *What calmness?* He was absolutely sure his heartbeat could be heard on the upper floors.

Her lips were so soft. And unexpectedly bold yet delicate. Just like she was.

She pulled his upper lip between her lips gently. He responded to her, tilting his head a little bit too much her mouth even more.

They were pulling and caressing, watering each other's lips slowly.

Hoseok put his hand on Minji's palm which was resting on his thigh.

His second hand traveled to her cheek and cupped it, prolonging the soft touch of their lips.

She moved a bit and looked at him with widened eyes.

Their breaths were faster. They were looking at each other with a bit of surprise as if they didn't expect the kiss to have such an effect on them both.

'Okay...' she nodded. 'I will take you on a date, Hope.' she gulped and straightened up.

Hoseok let out a slow breath, closing his eyes. He threw back his head.

'Can I pass out now? Forget it. You don't have to answer... I decided to pass out. Gosh!'

He embraced himself as if he couldn't contain the excitement and shivers.

She covered her face with her hands.

'Stop it! Now it is embarrassing!'

Hoseok's face turned to her instantly.

'ARE YOU BLUSHING?!'

'NO! I'M NOT!'

He jumped on his feet.

'Let me see! Let me see!' he took her hands away just to meet with a harsh glare from her and slight pink on her cheeks.

'We are not doing this again!' she growled.

'Why?!' he grinned. 'You wanted to make me a mess. I am a total mess now! Shouldn't you be like "I won!"?'

She squinted her eyes.

'I'm impressed...' she said reluctantly. 'You know how to get to me. I didn't think I am so easy to read.'

Hoseok shook his head and caressed her palm with his thumb.

'You are not at all easy to read. But I like to think I was made to read you...' he said and pressed her palm to his chest.

Her gaze softened.

'I have to go.'

'I will pick you up after classes,' he nodded.

'Okay.' she smiled a bit. She turned to the doors but looked at the bench. 'You have a spare blouse?'

'Yeah... why?' he frowned.

She walked to the bench and took Hoseok's big blouse.

'I am taking this one.' She put it on, walking to the doors. She looked at his pants and winked. 'You are into matching clothes, right?'

She walked out before he could reply. But when she closed the doors she heard a loud squeal and giggled to herself, shaking her head.

On the next day Minji presented them with the current direction of their action.

She looked towards Chanyeol.

'You won't approach him. You won't even think about it.' Then she looked at the rest. 'And whenever you will be with Chan you act like a safety cordon, okay? Visibly. If you see that guy, you turn and walk the other way.'

'What?' Namjoon frowned. 'Isn't it a bit too much?'

'Oh? Is it? What would you say to a paralyzer on the school corridor?' she asked innocently.

Namjoon choked on his coffee.

'It was a joke...' Chanyeol sighed.

'Yeah, so we will prank him as well.' Minji nodded.

'That was dangerous. I am with you.' Jin said and he fist bumped Minji.

'I want to talk to him not to cut him off...' Chanyeol rolled his eyes.

'You want to talk to him because you feel the pull. And if that's the case he can feel it as well. Let's give him what he demands and see how he likes that.' she said sternly.

'You are more bothered by it then me.'

Minji looked at him seriously.

'Really? You feel like you had sinned so greatly to be treated like that, Chan?'

'If he doesn't want you to approach him. We will make him come to you.' Jin caught Minji's drift.

'You can be friendly with him.' She said to the others. 'But pretend I am holding you all back and restrain the access.'

'Why you?' Hoseok asked, frowning.

'Because I already made a good background for it.' she smirked. 'And I enjoy it...'

'Okay...' he shrugged, unbothered.

'Scary.' Chanyeol mumbled. 'But okay. Do whatever you want. I don't feel like being pushed again and it is hard to not try to talk...'

'Do I have to participate?' Namjoon asked miserably.

'Yes!' they all told him and he sighed deeply.

'See you later!' she took her bag and walked away, saying: 'Hope. Date. Saturday. 2 pm. Central Plaza.'

Hoseok smirked.

'Noted, babe.'

She stopped, turned and glared at him. He withstood her gaze with a bit of challenge in his smile. She lifted her eyebrow, didn't say anything and walked her way.

The rest walked to their respective classes.

Bora stayed for longer.

'What is it?' Hoseok asked.

'How are you doing?'

'Great. Thanks.' he frowned, surprised.

'And with Minji?'

'Are you worried she is giving me a hard time?' he laughed.

'I know she is not the open type like you. So I thought I would just encourage you to be patient.'

'Oh, I know she is a Devil.' he said with a satisfied smile.

'Aaand? What are you going to do with it?' she asked.

He looked in the space where Minji disappeared and whispered softly:

'Dance with her.'

.

.

.

Hoseok and Minji went for their first date, second one, and third one. They were going out each weekend, because Minji felt threatened under her skin, that if she really won't give her boyfriend enough attention, he will start to go around the campus doing really embarrassing things...

Oh, she knew he was able to do it.

He didn't have to say a word about it.

They just reached a silent agreement and mutual understanding over this matter.

It wasn't a big sacrifice considering they didn't have much time for each other. Just lil moments during the day between all their activities.

She could learn from Jin and Namjoon about it. They were masters in showing each other unspoken care in places full of people. She was wondering if they are like that in private too.

Well she had a perfect gossiping bestie next to her if she would only ask. She was sure Hoseok would spill the tea like golden coins...

From her perspective, her and Hoseok's relationship was absolutely normal. Two student's dating each other. But the fact she was herself and the way he treated her was making it so much deeper. He never stepped back from doing little things like taking care of her food, or bag or her clothes if they were too thin. She learned how to notice things like that for him too. And the most important part was about the way he could silently guide her to what he wanted or what SHE wanted, but denied it stubbornly. It was almost like being cornered and she was the type to feel excited about it.

He was getting more and more tempting in her eyes, switching from being this excited little puppy to being this young man who could play with her savage side with lazy, confidence.

Oh, it was almost as if he was pulling her and pushing, and spinning and holding her tight. And he was really good at it.

Sometimes he was making her do something she wanted to do but was against her mindset. And sometimes he was doing something she wouldn't do herself because it was embarrassing. Like calling her nicknames, or giving her unexpected cheek kisses as a welcome.

And then he was looking at her with this amusement in his eyes as if he was saying: I dare you to protest.

And she was sure, he already knew she wouldn't.

Because that's what he wanted and she wanted to make him happy.

So the first month of their third year was getting pretty good. Even in the "Chanyeol protection programme department."

They had a few situations, seeing Baekhyun on the corridor and quickly turning Chanyeol to walk the other way. Or surrounding him as if they were bodyguards if they had to pass the other guy somewhere.

Jin was amazing at it. He was a master of throwing to Baekhyun "Sorry" looks when he was forcibly blocking Chanyeol's walk and then talking with Minji pretending he was a bit annoyed about it, shaking his head and pointing to Baekhyun.

Minji was sternly denying with her eyes, while indeed their whispers were like: "Coming to library later?", "Yeah, see you there.".

Bora and Hoseok were just accompanying them, letting them do whatever they wanted.

Only Namjoon was tired of it, thinking they are overdoing it, but Minji comforting squeezed Chanyeol's hand said to Namjoon:

'Patience. Just a little bit more, guys.'

And she wasn't mistaken...

She was sitting in the study area because the library was too full, when a shadow fell on her.

'What's your problem?!' she heard an annoyed voice.

She smirked internally. She lifted her head and frowned.

'Excuse me? Who are you?'

'You know who I am!'

She thought for a moment.

'No,' she shook her head slowly. 'Not really...'

'I'm your tall friend's soulmate!'

Minji's eyebrows almost stuck together in the middle of her forehead

'I don't think so. You denied it.'

'You can think whatever you want! But don't stick your nose where it doesn't belong!'

Minji smiled.

'First of all - I'm your senior. Mind that.' she said slowly. 'Second of all: what have I ever done to you?'

'It's your doing! It's clearly visible! You do not let him walk freely!'

'Oh, he can. He is a free man.' she shrugged.

'So...' Beakhyun opened his mouth.

'But not when you are around.' she continued with a small smile.

Beakhyun's pretty face was covered in red.

'Don't get me wrong.' she said. 'I don't have anything against you personally. But I do not like the thought of my friend getting hurt, because someone made a scapegoat out of him.'

'You have a pretty imagination out there!' Baekhyun laughed sarcastically. 'I have never even talked with that guy!'

'Because you didn't want to...' she pointed out. 'Are you interested in my point of view?'

'Not really.'

'Okay.' she shrugged and looked at her book.

Baekhyun huffed.

'I heard stories about you...'

'Oh, I am sure you did.' she whispered, uninterested.

Yeah he heard them all. And he could believe all of them. But he also observed that group. And they were always so chill and easygoing with each other. When she was with them she looked so soft and happy. And it seems like all of them were a bit soft for her.

So she had a problem with him now and it was getting complicated. He didn't know why but it was really bothersome that he was denied the chance to get closer to his soulmate. Not like he wanted to in the first place, but being denied that primal right was... infuriating.

'So, what problem do you have with me?'

'I do not have a problem with you. I just think you have a problem with yourself and it backfires at Chanyeol.' she replied calmly.

Baekhyun gulped.

Because he was silent and didn't go away, Minji looked at him calmly.

'I hid from my soulmate who I am for 3 months since I discovered it.' she stated. 'To get to know him. Observe him and see how it will fall into place. And you could do exactly the same. When you overheard us and saw Chanyeol's mark, none of us knew you were even there. You could just walk away and do whatever you wanted at your pace. But you snapped. And then blamed it all on Chanyeol for trying to talk with you normally. To the extreme level to make it worse. I guess there is more behind it and your reaction. You called him "childish". But from my perspective now - you are more. I like Chanyeol. He is always kind, a bit goofy. A good friend. So I don't want someone to walk all over him.'Minji stood up. 'Even if it is his soulmate. Actually... ESPECIALLY his soulmate.'

She inclined her head and passed Baekhyun who was looking into space.

She had to wait for the classes to end, to get everyone in one place. When they were walking out of the university building she said to them:

'Change of course. We are leaving Chanyeol alone from now on.' She informed them and then grabbed Chanyeol's hands. 'But PLEASE! PLEASE! Do not approach him first! You have an upper hand now and everything is going towards the right track! Don't fuck it up!'

Hoseok grunted and pouted.

Minji rolled her eyes.

'You are such a delicate bish...' she sighed and kissed his cheek. 'I remember. I won't give others more attention than you.' she wiped the lip gloss from his cheek. 'Don't pout.'

Bora's jaw fell down almost to the ground.

'Aww, that's a shame. My acting was top notch...' Jin sighed, regretfully.

Namjoon started to massage his temples.

'What the...' he shook his head. 'It sounds like a battlefield plan.'

Minji pointed her finger at him.

'It is! And we are winning.'

'Whatever...' Namjoon started to clean his glasses. 'I just don't think that third parties...'

Hoseok grunted.

'Do I have to remind you? If I wouldn't, you would be a clueless virgin till this day...'

In an instant Jin's hand sprang and he grabbed Hoseok's ear.

'Come with me for a moment...' he growled and with a blushing face he pulled him - almost bent in half - through the campus.

The rest tried to avoid looking at Namjoon, who was steadily cleaning his glasses.

'We were really stressed lately.' he just said, and put his glasses on.

After a minute Chanyeol asked, as if they were talking about weather:

'You good now?'

'Mhm.'

Minji pressed her lips together. Jin - that bish - he told Hobi and not her?

No... - she looked to the side at Namjoon. Hoseok had to hear about it from Joon considering Jin's reaction.

Oh, well... Hoseok and Namjoon have known each other for long... They probably talked about everything. Including sex.

Hoseok was talking about sex. That was a disturbing thought. She would better brush aside.

But, oh gosh, she suddenly had a vision. Of Hoseok above her, with his all messy hair...

And blood rushed to her cheeks.

If their kisses were this hot... What about...

'I'm going!' she said suddenly. 'See you tomorrow!'

And she ran away to analyze her thoughts in silence.

.

.

.

On the next day Jin joined Minji in the library. He unpacked in silence.

He tried to focus on the books, just like her, but he couldn't.

'Won't you ask?' he finally said.

'Nope.' Minji said, knowing exactly what he was referring to.

Jin frowned and looked at her suspiciously.

'Why?'

'Two reasons. First: I don't need more unwanted thoughts over this matter than I already have...'

Jin smirked.

'Second: I am not interested.' she said not lifting her head from above the book.

Jin's smile got wider.

'Oh, but you will be, girl... You will be...'

.

.

.

Chanyeol didn't know what Minji thought would happen, but he didn't try to reach the golden-hair boy. He didn't want to stress him or himself for being rejected over and over again. Guys actually helped him in that, so he didn't protest.

He was sitting in the classroom and properly cleaning their equipment, when he heard the sounds from the corridor went quiet and the doors were closed.

He lifted his head and saw Baekhyun.

He turned his eyes back to the wires.

Baekhyun sat on the chair next to him in silence. They both were silent for a long time.

'Fuuuuck, it is so awkward!' Baekhyun put his arms on the desk and hid his head in them.

Chanyeol just peeked at him with the corner of his eyes.

'My name is Baekhyun. I'm from Seoul. I came here for orientation with a high school friend. This university wasn't even my second choice.' he started to speak fast. 'My dream, my goal was to go to the Military Academy. I wanted to be a Navy Navigator. I knew the selection was tough. So I was anxious since I applied. That trip was supposed to cheer me up! And when I saw that mark on your hand it was as if the realization hit me. As if the world told me "You didn't make it." My dreams got crushed. Maybe that girl is right. I shouldn't have spoken at that time. But I was devastated instantly... And it was easy to blame it on you...'

'You lost me here... How would that work?' Chanyeol frowned.

'You were here. As if destiny said "No Military future for you, because he is here and you have to come here." Baekhyun sulked in his arms.

'It wasn't even your second choice university. Why would you have to come here?'

'Because you were here, obviously!'

'You could still do whatever you wished to do and meet me in years...'

'Well, I couldn't. Because I got information I didn't make it soon after...' Baekhyun sighed, rested his back on the chair and looked at the ceiling.

'You could still go to your second choice university...'

'After my dreams crashed, out of the two other choices I didn't wanna go to either of them. So I chose the one that I knew you were in.'

'Just to call me a pervert and pull out a paralyzer at me?' Chanyeol had a hard time connecting the dots.

Baekhyun glared at him.

'Well I was sad and angry. And it is easy to be angry at someone who is bound to you for eternity. It is like a white flag with a big slogan: "do whatever you want you will end up together either way!".

'Sounds like something a psycho would say...' Chanyeol lifted his eyebrow.

Baekhyun made a sour face. It wasn't far from the truth at this point.

He grunted.

'I make up for it with a pretty face and a nice body...'

Chanyeol was again focused on the wires.

'Can't confirm. I was trying not to stare at you.'

Baekhyun stood up in front of the dest and spread his arms.

'Take a look now.'

'Psycho...' Chanyeol mumbled and hesitantly lifted his eyes. He checked Baekhyun out slowly. 'Okay. I guess you are right.'

'Good.' Baekhyun stretched his hand. 'Let us start over then. Byun Baekhyun.'

Chanyeol stood up and looked at Baekhyun's tiny posture from above. He squeezed his hand.

'Park Chanyeol. You can call me casually.'

'Sure.' Baekhyun nodded. 'You have scary friends Chanyeol...'

Chanyeol shrugged.

'They just helped me to control the unconditional need to find you around.' Suddenly Chanyeol frowned. 'Speaking of the Devil... I have an idea. Come with me...' he said suddenly.

'Huh?! Dude... hold your horses... We just had our first normal talk.'

'That's why: come with me. I will introduce you to someone.'

They quickly cleaned up the rest and with an awkward silence between them, they walked through the corridors.

'So have you chosen a dance or music club?'

'Neither.'

'Because Hobi is scary?'

'More like his soulma...' Baekhyun closed his mouth when he saw the said person sitting in a Student Council Room together with the President of the Student Council himself.

'Hey, guys!' Chanyeol said. 'You have a minute?'

Minji bent a bit to the side, to catch with her eyesight Bakehyun's figure, hidden behind Chanyeol. She smiled and there was just a bit of malice in it.

'Sure.' Namjoon said, taking off his glasses.

'I'm actually here for Minji.' Chanyeol said, looking at her. 'Do you need interns at your place?'

'We are always short handed. But the rule is simple. Only Interdependants, so it is hard to find people.'

Chanyeol looked at Baekhyun.

'You said you wanted to join Military. Will Military Organization of Interdependats would be enough?'

'WHAT?!'

'Minji is an intern there. For years.' Namjoon explained.

Baekhyun looked at her with a pale face, thinking: "oh damn! I'm fucked.".

Minji confirmed with a nod.

Chanyeol looked at Baekhyun.

'So would you like to check if it suits you?'

Baekhyun glanced at Minji.

'I would, and thank you for the thought, but...'

Chanyeol turned to Minji.

'What do you think?'

'Sure. No problem.' she shrugged, taking out the drink from her bag.

'What?!' Baekhyun exclaimed, shocked.

'Is there a problem?' Minji was busy and focused on poking the stroll inside her Capri Sun.

'No, but... you don't like me...'

She lifted her head with an indifferent face, sipping her juice.

'I don't know you enough to dislike you, Baekhyun.' she said, biting on the stroll. She took out her phone. 'I will text my supervisor so he can schedule a meeting with you. Give me your number.'

'But... don't I need to know my power or something?' Baekhyun asked.

'It is not necessary for now.' Minji calmed him down.

'Besides considering how you both had similar "sound" craving things in your choices it is probably something connected to it.' Namjoon's face became thoughtful.

Chanyeol and Baekhyun looked at each other surprised as if they had just realized that.

After some awkward minutes Chanyeol said "Goodbye" to the two.

'Bye! Join us for lunch whenever you want.' Namjoon waved to Baekhyun.

Baekhyun was a bit dumbfounded. He went through half of the quiet corridor until he turned to Chanyeol. He had a strange feeling inside him. It was similar to the feeling of unexpected cold wind hitting you when you are not prepared and then being suddenly wrapped in a wind-proof jacket.

'I...' his thoughts were tangled. 'I... Thank you.' he said, still confused.

Chanyeol shrugged.

'It was just something that came to my mind. I think you should calm down and get to terms with your current situation. And the rest will fall into place. Because it has to be hard to lose your dream...'

Baekhyun put a hand over his heart, still not able to gather proper thoughts.

'Umm... I think my heart just skipped a beat.'

Chanyeol squinted, his eyes reserved.

'You change your mind fast...'

'No... it is... I thought destiny was a malicious force, dragging me away from what I wanted... But I didn't want to see the parts where it was giving me steps to what I probably needed... in a different shape.'

'As I said: take your time. Calm your mind down. I wanted to meet you... Not to make you miserable.' Chanyeol said with a sad, small smile.

'Yeah... I will... come...' Baekhyun smiled.

.

.

.

In the Student Council Room the door closed and after a minute a slow, evil chuckle was heard.

Namjoon glanced sideways at Minji.

'I won...'

'Do you know how lucky you were with all this sheming?'

Minji nudged Joon with her arm.

'Oh, come on! I am clever! Not lucky!'

'It could become an even greater mess and you know it.'

'It was a simple calculator with a 90% success rate. People are not that different, Joonie...' she smirked.

'How can you calculate feelings like this?'

'Not feelings. Behavior.' she said triumphantly. 'Any given human who said "I won't do it" or "I don't want to do it" can be flipped really fast in their resolve when you forbid them to do it. They are instantly like "What?! Why can't I?!", "You think I can't!? I will do it!".'

Namjoon blinked.

'You are a scary person.'

The satisfaction on her face was clearly visible.

'It works the other way around as well... You know when someone is going to do something and then they are "told" to do that thing they were planning to do either way? It often changes in an instant stubborn denial.' she giggled.

She frowned deeply for a second.

'I just realized Hoseok is using this on me...'

Namjoon giggled.

'Oh, I think he is in trouble now...'

'No... I don't think he does it with premeditation.' she said slowly. 'Because how I am, he knows how to press my buttons...'

'Does it bother you?'

'Not at all, actually.'

'Awww... that is a clear soulmate bond in my opinion.'

'What do you mean?' she asked.

'I have this thought... that the core of a soulmate is the fact that they do not protect things in you that YOU value. But the parts that you don't. They take care of those, abandoned by us, needs, the most fragile parts, which existence we deny... They embrace them and they protect them. They know which part we protect ourselves the most and just support us there. But they are guardians of those things we like to hurt ourselves with, because we keep them so deep, so they won't see the light, that we do not even realise how heavy they become with time.'

Minji was looking at Namjoon with a bit shocked eyes.

'That's why I guess... You will protect Hobi from being childish and excited till the end of his days even when everybody will tell him he should grow up, because he is an adult. And that's why you enjoy him playing with you in stretching your boundaries...'

For a moment Minji had a hard time breathing, but then she quietly asked:

'Joon... are you in love?'

'I am.' he said calmly.

'From the beginning?'

'I don't think so... It is hard to pinpoint the moment...'

'So how do you know?'

'When the realization hit me... I just knew what it was.' Namjoon smiled lightly. 'It was like a confirmation to something I was hesitant to admit. Like a big stamp: CONFIRMED, placed over heart.'

Minji smiled.

'What happened then? Don't tell me you just walked through the path in the morning and saw Jin in the sunlight and felt like passing out.'

'No...' Namjoon laughed, shaking his head. 'I guess that would work too, but I am not so attentive...' he frowned. 'It was actually not so long ago. A bit before I introduced myself to you...'

Namjoon for a moment was in thoughts.

'I came from Hong Kong Students Academic Debate. Was here for two weeks, trying to catch up with everything. Then I went for a 2 weeks internship to Japan. And came back right before the Student Council started to make a year's summary. I didn't sleep much at that time. Classes. Homeworks. Projects. All things I was involved in came at once. At first Jin tried to help. Then he tried to convince me to slow down. Then... he just became angry. I was sitting on a Council's meeting. Interdependants do not get sick often... you can imagine what I put myself through if my head was spinning I had a fever and probably a flu... Suddenly Jin stormed the meeting auditorium. He bowed to the teacher's said: *I am sorry to disturb the meeting. I am here for Kim Namjoon. He is not feeling well.* They tried to question him, but he passed them without any more words, stood next to me. I remember staring at him. And I couldn't say anything. He just took my bag, grabbed me under my arm and pulled me up. He looked at the girl who sat beside me and said: *Can you take care of his things? I will pick them up later.* He dragged me out of there. Stopped near professors and said: *He has a high fever. Excuse me, but he can't attend this meeting.* The principal nodded. I guess even if he wouldn't Jin would walk me out regardless... When he stormed that meeting. When I saw him so angry and not giving a fuck, walking though everything and everyone just to get to me... I knew I was in love with him for a long time.'

'You tend to put everything above yourself...' Minji nodded. 'But you are above everything for him so he won't let you do that...'

Namjoon nodded.

'Told you... a soulmate protects what you think you don't have to...'

'Yeah... that's smart...' she said quietly.

'Why are you asking?'

She shrugged and whispered:

'I just wonder... if I am already there...'

.

.

.

Baekhyun joined their pack and fit in easily. He was indeed working with Minji as MOI's intern. They were all studying, doing their internships, club activities and not having much time. But sometimes they went to Arcades or to laser shooting.

For a month Minji was thinking about what Namjoon told her. Not obsessively. Each time she was with Hoseok this feeling was just getting stronger in her, so she

started to think there won't be any sudden confirmation from heaven that will flip her world upside down. She would just acknowledge the fact one day. Probably that's how she was built in the end.

May was approaching with the new aikido and archery competition eliminations and troubles.

Few times she found her things missing or damaged in her locker room after the training.

She was getting irritated about it. But she didn't lose her cool or accuse anybody, even if she got a few minus points from the couch for missing uniform or being late, or not having proper equipment. Instead she asked Bora, Chan and Baek how she can record it quietly.

Of course when she asked them for help she had also explained that to Hoseok. And he wasn't at all pleased about it. He didn't say a word. He let her do what she planned. But he was angry that she asked him to wait and not react anyhow to it.

The matter reached the pinnacle when Minji found her aikido uniform covered in pink nail polish. It was still in her bag, because she went to the bathroom before changing.

She sighed, irritated, took out her phone and logged into the program, Baekhyun installed on it to see the exact person she expected to see together with her too friends.

'Ayoung.' she stood in front of the girl. 'Give me your uniform.' she demanded.

'What? Are you kidding me?'

'No. I am not. Unless you want to have this in your papers...' she showed the phone into Ayoung's face. 'I will count to three. One...'

'It's illegal!' Ayoung huffed.

'Yeah? More illegal than property damaged?' Minji asked with a kind smile. 'Well I guess the Principal will know. Let's ask him...'

'I...'

Minji looked at two other girls.

'You are here too. Wanna see? Not the best shot I guess, but I can still go pretty viral I guess...'

Friend grabbed Ayoung's sleeve.

'I... I can't lose my scholarship...' she whispered, terrified.

'You should have thought about it earlier...' Minji said mercilessly. 'Two. Your uniform.'

Ayoung glared at Minji. Her fist clenched. Minji's eyes dropped on her hand.

'I can let you do it. But I swear I won't block it. The coach will come, I will explain to him the situation, show him the recording and you will also be kicked out of the team for safety rules violation. So think it through... One.'

Ayoung with angry tears took out her fresh uniform from her bag and gave it to Minji.

Minji was looking at her for a moment, before turning back.

'Delete it!' the three girls demanded.

'When you will prove you can behave.' Minji said quietly and went to change.

The situation was nerve-wrecking and frustrating, but at least it was solved quietly. That's what Minji thought the next day. But she underestimated how annoying Ayoung could be.

As on almost every day they were sitting all together during the lunch break. Hoseok wasn't really talkative, so Minji was just quietly holding his hand under the table.

A tall young men approached their table.

'Hey!' he exclaimed and looked at Minji. 'I'm Dojun. Ayoung's boyfriend! She went into hysteria because of you!'

'I advise you to keep it down if you don't want her to fall into bigger trouble...' Minji sent him a cold glare.

'AND WHAT?! YOU WILL BLACKMAIL HER NOW!? IT WAS PRANK!'

The cafeteria got silent.

Minji opened her eyes to tell him to lower his voice, but she felt Hoseok freeing his hand from his grip, while he stood up.

'Whoa! Whoa! Since when are we doing that?! Is it okay to do this now?! To send a boyfriend with complaints?!' he exclaimed.

He stood in front of Dojun.

'Because if "yes" then I have a whole fucking list of complaints of your girlfriends "pranks".'

Minji's lips parted. She softly placed her fingers on them, a bit surprised.

Here it was.

The moment.

*I fucking love this guy*... - she thought.

Hoseok was fuming.

'I am all up to discuss destroying clothes, borrowing items without permission, disturbing performances.'

Dojun eyes widened.

'Or was she just crying to you about the outcome of her doings?' Hoseok said. 'Don't raise your voice at MY GIRL. And get your face out of my sight before I will be tempted to let Minji clean the floor with it. I won't allow her to risk the injury because of a jerk like you.'

Dojun opened his mouth.

'If you don't want to apologize, better shut up.' Hoseok warned.

Dojun turned to Minji and hesitantly bowed.

'I'm sorry Minji-sunbeanim. Can You... delete the recording?' he whispered.

Minji pouted and looked at Hobi with puppy eyes.

'I think you should ask Hobi about it...' she said.

'No, she won't delete it. And maybe this will keep your girlfriend in check.' Hoseok said sternly.

Dojun nodded.

'I understand. Sorry for the trouble.'

Hoseok huffed and heavily sat on the chair.

'You know I already deleted it...' Minji whispered.

'But they do not have to know about it. You can send her an email after she graduates.' he burked. 'You even tried to stop him from exposing her! Don't get cut

up in their bullshit! You don't let them walk all over you but then you try to minimize the damage they take.' he growled.

Minji put her head on his shoulder and closed her eyes.

'Hope... I am okay...' she whispered softly and intertwined their hands under the table.

She inhaled the scent of his perfume.

*I really love you, Hoseok*... she thought and tried to hide her smile.

---

7474 words - part 3

The last part will be shorter na soon. I didn't notice it got so long.

I have half of it ready, thankfully.

BlairWitch91

# Spin off 1: Dance with the Devil - final

**MAY 2045, 38 years earlier**

Few weeks later, just before Minji's birthday, they all decided to chill a bit and have some fun. They went to a club.

They were sitting by the table talking about different things. They mainly wanted to take Jin out because he was really overworking himself this time and he was stressing about everything.

'I want to drop out of the dorms next semester. When I think about all of it, will it just be easier.'

'About what?'

'I'm starting an internship. Namjoon too at school and as the university professor assistant. And all his activities will just shorten our time. Being bound by the night-hour at dorms is also inconvenient. And studying sometimes too. I need more space and freedom.' Jin sighed, and sipped his drink.

'You want to leave me?' Hoseok whined.

'Yeah, I am thinking about you as well! That's why it is hard to find something suitable!' Jin huffed. 'The whole apartment is out of budget. I found one place, but still there is a risk we will end up living with some strange people...' he sulked.

'What place?' Minji asked.

'It is also a student accommodation kinda thing. It is a huge apartment rebuilt to have a kitchen with open living space. There are 5 separately rented rooms there. It is comfortable because each room has its own bathroom. But still! I would have to share the kitchen with people I don't know!' He pulled out the phone and showed them the pictures. 'They have two twin rooms and three single rooms. Imagine cleaning the kitchen after 4 unknown pigs...' he sighed. 'I want peace, not more problems...'

'I told you not to stress over it, Jin...' Namjoon kissed Jin's shoulder. 'We will find something...'

'But isn't this perfect?' Baekhyun frowned. 'How much is it?'

'15% more than the dorm... But I am telling you...'

Minji caught Baekhyun's drift.

'What if we all move in?' she suggested.

Bora started to choke on her drink.

'I'm not sharing a room with you again!' she said.

Minji glared at her.

'Hey! If Namjin will take one twin room we will have to share the other one!'

'No way! Share with Hobi!'

'Do you want dad to kill me?! It will be hard to convince him even now!' she rolled her eyes.

'What is the fight about?' Baekhyun frowned. 'Chan and I can take the second twin room...'

Chanyeol's eyes slowly drifted to him.

'We can?'

'Yes, we can!' Baekhyun huffed.

'We know you are on an unsealing basis, but maybe not on the stage of a relationship?' Namjoon suggested carefully.

Baekhyun, flushed from alcohol cheeks, squinted his eyes at Chanyeol.

'We aren't?'

'Well, we already tried unsealing because you wanted to know our power. So you can be more effective in MOI units... And then you convince me to join. But...'

Baekhyun grabbed Chanyeol's collar and pulled him down. He kissed him. Chanyeol was a bit taken aback.

'Now we are on the stage?' Baekhyun asked with an intense curiosity in his face.

'Baekhyun...' Chanyeol tried to think rationally. 'We are not even in a relationship yet...' he reminded him calmly.

'Can't we be?' Baekhyun blinked.

Namjoon tried to stop his giggles.

'Baekhyun... I think you are drunk...'

'I am not! You don't like me?' he asked, shocked.

'Tough situation there...' Jin mumbled, staring shamelessly at the couple in the corner.

'Beak... I...' Chanyeol had a hard time not saying important things to his drunk soulmate.

'Because if you don't I swear I will take out the paralyzer again...'

'I just don't think... we should decide...'

'I like you, you know?'

'Aww...' Hoseok said and took out his phone to take a picture of Chanyeol's pink face and Bakehyun's red cheeks.

'Okay! Let it be your way! Geeze!!!' Chanyeol breathed out and drank the glass with his drink to the bottom.

Beak smiled widely and cuddled to Chanyeol's side.

'Congrats.' Bora said and turned to Jin. 'That would solve the case... Minji, Hobi and I are in the single rooms.'

'Well...' Jin was still hesitant.

'If the fee is needed we can pay it now. I still have money from winning the tournament last year...' Minji said.

Jin was stirring the drink with his stroll.

'What is it, Jinnie?' Namjoon asked.

'You wanna leave only with Namjoon? You don't wanna have a twin room? You can join twin beds and make one double bed, you know...' Hobi tried to comfort Jin.

'That's not it! How can I be so sure you all are not pigs in the kitchen?!'

They all looked at Jin a bit shocked, before bursting out with laughter.

'Even if they are, I am sure they will, at least, be willing to learn...' Namjoon, comfortingly hugged Jin.

'Okay.' Jin sulked.

Minji gulped down 3 tequila shots in one go.

'Bathroom.' she said and went through the club.

She could see Chanyeol and Baekhyun were getting closer on the couch. Namjin were cuddling. Her sister went to dance.

But just like previously she and Hoseok made Chanyeol impatient, no Chanbeak were making her impatient. They were already after unsealing.

It was Hoseok's decision so she never mentioned it but she was curious.

And how could Baek say it so easily?! She was getting nervous just thinking about "when" to say it!

She fixed her makeup and clothes and went to the clubroom. People were dancing everywhere. She looked at Hoseok, looking at the dancefloor.

Okay, maybe she didn't have the guts to tell him yet, but she could make him happy in other way.

She bent over the table, took the last remaining shot of tequila, put the glass on the table and started to walk towards the dancefloor, saying:

'Hope! Dance with me!'

Hoseok smirked, drink a bit of his coke and said:

'Excuse me, guys! My life is calling.' he quickly got up and went after Minji. He grabbed her hand in the middle of the walk.

'He meant Minji or dance?' Bora asked.

'I guess this time is literally 2 in 1.' Jin smiled.

Hoseok and Minji reached the dance floor. She turned to him, pulling him a bit closer to lean to her, so he could hear her.

'What's the steps? Come! Be my teacher...'

'There are no steps!' Hoseok laughed and softly changed the grip over her hand. 'This song is good...'

**( 🎶Music tip: *Reggaeton Lento (Remix)* - CNCO, Little Mix🎶)**

Minji started to be a bit nervous when the song changed and it became slower. She didn't intend to cuddle between those people!

Hoseok led her hand and hooked her arm over his own shoulder, while his right hand wrapped around her waist and pulled her closer. They were almost glued

from their feet to their chests, but not like Minji thought. It wasn't at all a cuddly song.

The rhythm was pulling and energetic. Exciting.

Hoseok leaned to her ear.

'No steps...' he whispered. 'Just feel yourself...'

They were practically standing in place. But, oh, they WERE moving. It wasn't hard to feel the rhythm. To move her hips in response to Hoseok's, His hand on her lower back was making it impossible to move an inch from each other. Beside this one hot grip he wasn't touching her. But it was enough. Her whole body felt touched.

She could feel his warmth, his scent and those hidden muscles tensing and untensing, moving flawlessly to every beat.

He smiled at her slightly when she hesitantly looked at his face.

His free hand slowly caressed her naked inner forearm while he embraced her wrist over his neck and swiftly turned her around.

'Why?' she asked, when he pressed his body to her back.

His hand embraced her stomach. They were practically in the same pose like before, just...

'I felt it was a bit dangerous to let you look at my face for too long right here and now...' he chuckled lightly.

She could feel his moves as if it were her own. He was guiding her hips with ease. His leg was slightly between hers. She could lean on him in a comfortable but hot way, feeling every move of his chest, behind her.

'Well... you aren't wrong, but this... is a bit...'

She felt his mouth on her ear when he spoke:

'Dangerous? Yeah... Seems I miscalculated...' he admitted. And underestimate this, he thought. Because he was always so comfortable while dancing, he thought it would be absolutely fine. But... he never danced with Minji before and this was a whole new horizon of sensations.

Minji heard him right and clear.

Miscalculated? More like making a mistake while disarming the bomb...

'Yeah. You did. And Hope... I guess you forgot...' she half-turned and grabbed his chin. 'I am pretty flexible.' she whispered and kissed him.

It was a short and intense kiss. Not too long to be noticed by too many people.

The song came to an end. Next one faster and more techno-like came so they stayed but a bit separated to calm down.

'You really wanna kill me...' Hoseok shook his head.

'Nah...' Minji smirked. 'Just sell me your soul...'

'A pact with the Devil...' he laughed. 'Sure. Why not? Where should I sign?'

They had fun for some more time. Chanyeol, Baekhyun and Bora even joined them later.

'I just hope Jin didn't see it...' Minji mumbled.

Hoseok laughed.

'Oh please! You never saw it! But they are doing it all the time! And it is not cute at all! Once I was standing in the doors for 5 minutes before they noticed me! I swear! Jin has lungs capacity like an olympic swimmer!'

'Oh, really!?' Minji smirked. 'And I guess they ditched us...' she said, seeing the empty seats.

'They said they were going first.' Baekhyun explained.

'Should we get going too?' Hoseok asked Minji.

She looked at her sister.

'I will stay a bit more...'

'We will walk her to the dorms.' Baekhyun assured, seeing Minji's thoughtful face.

'Okay, fine. We can take a longer walk to sober up.'

Hoseok helped Minji put on her black leather jacket and fixed her hair.

'Night, guys!' they waved to the rest, while Hoseok grabbed Minji's hand.

.

.

.

17th of May, 2045

On Minji's 20th birthday Hoseok told her to dress in sports clothes, which seriously surprised her because she expected him to use the opportunity for some extravagant outing.

Now she was a bit scared he came up with some "fun" dance learning date.

So she was even more confused when they took the bus outside of the city. Hoseok was carrying a heavy backpack.

Picnic?

'You should have told me what it is! Now I feel like I am not prepared!'

'We have everything we need.' he laughed.

They entered the wide forest and were walking through the narrow forest road.

'Were you here before?' she asked.

'Yeah. Nearby on the school trip.' he said. He looked around. 'It should be around here.'

She was looking for something strange, but there were only trees and hills around.

Hoseok went between trees and finally stopped on the meadow.

'It is a nice place for a picnic.' Minji admitted.

'Oh yeah we will eat later...' he said, a bit nervous. 'But I didn't bring you here for that.'

'Then what is it?'

'You were a bit thoughtful and distracted lately so... I think I know what it was. I wonder why you haven't just asked me, but if it is so meaningful to you I guess it will be a nice birthday gift...'

'What are you talking about?' she frowned.

'Well, considering how fast Baekhyun and Chanyeol did it I thought it is obvious that you want to know what our power is.' he said carefully.

Her lips parted a bit in surprise. She sighed frustrated and hit her forehead.

'I wasn't thinking about it at all, Hobi...' she whined. 'Sorry for making you worry!'

'Then what makes you so deep in thoughts?' he tilted his head.

She made a face. Admitting it was even more embarrassing.

'What is it that you don't want to tell me?' he asked suspiciously and made a step closer.

'It's not that I don't! It is actually... quite the other way around... I just do not know...' she was speaking reluctantly, trying to find either her guts or a good excuse.

Observing her uneasy posture, absolutely not like her, Hoseok suddenly wanted to giggle. He looked down, closing his eyes and trying to stop his smile.

He took a step closer and grabbed her shoulders.

'Okay, babe. Deep breath.' he instructed.

She closed her mouth and glared at him.

He wasn't bothered by it. A bit teasingly and patiently he ordered:

'Repeat after me.'

Minji pouted.

'Iiii...' Hoseok said slowly.

'I.' Minji mumbled.

'Aaam....'

'M.'

'Crazy...'

'You are crazy! Not me!' she huffed.

'Repeat.' Hoseok hurried her sternly.

'Crazy.' she snorted.

'In love...'

Her eyes widened. She gulped.

'In love...' she whispered.

'With you.' he smiled.

She was looking at him for a long minute before she breathed out:

'With you.'

He looked at her softly.

'Wasn't that hard, right?' he said quietly and leaned to kiss her forehead.

He wanted to turn around, but she hugged him in half and squeezed him so hard he groaned.

She hid her face in his chest.

'I want to cuddle you and beat you up right now.' she mumbled with pretended anger. 'You are making me soft! And why is it so easy for you?!' she nagged.

'Well, I guess I got used to it?'

She slowly lifted her head and squinted her eyes.

'When? How? And with whom? "*You got used to it*?"?'

Hoseok blinked in surprise.

'Minji... I leave you stickers on snacks and drinks with "*Don't overwork. Drink it. Ilysm<3 <3 <3 <3 JH.*".

She frowned.

'You do.' she confirmed.

'*Ilysm*. I love you so much.' he explained patiently.

'IT HAS A MEANING?!' she exclaimed, shocked.

Hoseok pressed his lips together. Then cover his mouth with his hand and tear up a bit.

'Sorry.' he mumbled and turned around.

He snorted with laughter. Then started to laugh.

'Yeah! Really funny!' Minji said ironically.

He fell on his knees on the ground, then on his belly. He started to roll from side to side laughing out loud.

'It's not my fault your handwriting is so terrible I thought those are some random patterns!' she poked his butt with her foot.

Minji counted to ten and he was still laughing.

'Where is the respect I deserve, Jeon? Where is this whole classy-girl bullshit huh?! That's how you confess to a classy girl?!'

His hand sprang up and grabbed her wrist. He pulled her on the ground as well and hugged her. He kissed her temple.

'Sure. You are right.' he said. 'I thought you just do not protest and let me do whatever I want.' he smiled.

'Well, I did with those stickers... I just ignored the hearts...'

'A month of my wasted effort...' Hoseok sighed. He leaned and kissed her nose. 'I love you, Minji.'

'Okay. Now I understand clearly.' she nodded.

'So are we gonna lay here and romantically look at the sky or we are checking our powers?' He moved his eyebrows teasingly.

'This is not even a question worth answering...' she looked at him. Then she frowned. 'But really we don't have to.'

'Why not?! I want to. Besides, I want you to learn about it, develop it and use it at work...'he got.

'What?'

'If it will be useful I will join you when you need it...' he said calmly. 'You were telling me about MOI units. I know you want to be in one. So it will be good if I will go through training. That's the gift.'

Her eyes widened.

'You...'

'Don't tell me I don't have to.' he shook his head. 'I know what I want. And I want to do your thing whatever it is. If you need me for it - even better.'

She stood up as well and walked to him closer.

'Hoseok...' she cupped his cheek and brushed it with her thumb. 'Whenever I will do this. Treat it as if I tell you "I love you."'

He nodded. He took her palm away from his face and took off her glove.

'Now. My Lady. Do the job.'

She took a deep breath and nodded. Her hand slid under his t-shirt. She pressed her hand to his mark. It started to glow in a golden color. She looked him in the eyes.

She was wondering what she should say... But a bit of goofiness after the laugh stayed in them and the only idiotic thing that was coming to her mind was:

*Knock, knock.*

Hoseok smiled widely and she heard the answer:

*It's open.*

Unseal - she thought and after a second she felt something partially material around her fingers.

She took out her hand.

She and Hoseok were looking at small golden balls, full of light, flying around her fingers.

Hoseok's skin started to glow even more. Then suddenly he was a bit above the ground.

'Whoa! Whoa!'

'You fly?' she asked.

He focused and suddenly stood hard on the ground.

'N-no... Well... I guess I can... But it is more about...' he looked at the sky and saw a bird. He pointed at it and the bird suddenly fell and was pressed to the ground. A minute later Hoseok made him fly high in the sky again. He looked at Minji. 'Fuck. I will have to go back to physics books... It is gravitation.' He looked at the balls, flying around. 'And light...'

'Light can have different properties...' she said, she touched one of the balls and it became covered with electrical sparks and started to grow. 'Whoa... we have a lot of things to discover...' she whispered.

He nodded and touched her arm. She was covered in a golden bubble and started to float above the ground. Hobi panicked and made her go back to the ground.

'Let's start with the basics.' she smirked. 'I have some ideas...'

'Okay! Let's work on it!'

They high fived each other.

.

.

.

**October 2045**

Half a year has passed with many events between.

First of all after their fifth semester ended they spent the whole month in different MOI buildings all over the country. Not just Minji, Hoseok, Baekhyun and Chanyeol. But all six of them. To everybody's surprise Jin declared he is joining them, because he won't sit still and wait till they come back crying to him to patch their injuries!

Well, it could be true, but it wasn't the whole reason. They knew Namjoon really wanted to be of help and this was some kind of real-deal experience. He was just reluctant to say this out loud not to worry Jin, who already thought he had too much on his plate.

But Jin could tell right away, so he used this last free full month vacation to get the certification of training.

Just in case...

They were informed that their first few missions would be just "supporting jobs" for the more experienced units.

The end of August and beginning of September were hard for Minji on the other hand. Because she went into a battle with her father about her accommodation plans.

Bora left it to her... Cause she had to keep silent through the whole month in Mountain House, under their father's eyes, while Minji was safely on the other side of the country, training with MOI.

So on that day Bora was sitting on Minji's bed in her dorm. A day before they

Everything was packed around. Boys rented a car to move their things.

So one thing left to do.

Minji was standing in the middle of the room looking at her phone.

'Why do you have to do everything in fucked up way!' Bora said, biting her nails. You should have told him before moving out!'

'Then he would have too much time to whine about it!' Minji rolled her eyes.

'What if he won't agree?'

Minji looked at her from above.

'I don't know how you survived the whole month at home not spilling the tea...'

'He didn't ask! Okay! It is easier when he doesn't ask then you don't have to avoid the answer! And you actually paid me for silence, and promised to take care of it, so...'

Yeah, Minji bribed her younger sister with the offer she will pay for 3 months of their living expenses and rent for her so she could save the money she was getting for herself. After winning Olimpics and other tournaments Minji had her own money. Additionally, she was getting a small payment for her internship.

On the other hand Hoseok was earning money from his performances and Namjoon started to earn money in his part time job as professor's assistant and scholarship.

Jin didn't have time for a part time job so he was relying on his parents' support. Chanyeol and Baekhyun were earning working as backstage workers on any concerts they could get.

They all were in a rather good situation right now.

'Okay. I am calling...' Minji informed Bora. 'Just don't mention any details about Hoseok!'

'Jeeze, I know, I know! I don't get why you haven't told parents about him.'

Minji looked at her reluctantly.

'Yeah, I would like to see how this would go if father would know I am gonna live with my boyfriend... He can be pretty reasonable if I will lead this talk smooth, but the moment his protectiveness kicks in, he would be here faster than the wind and I would be closed in the attic till the end of my time!'

Bora couldn't deny it. Minji wasn't a sheltered child but their father had a bit of a complex about her "first born babygirl" whom he adored to the core. In his eyes the best scenario was if Minji would just stay by his side forever as his precious gem, everybody would admire. Bora had more freedom from the very beginning.

'I will tell him at the right moment when I have control over the situation. For example when he fucks up something...' she nodded to herself.

'Okay. Call him.' Bora sighed.

Minji closed her eyes, took a deep breath and dialed her dad's number.

'Hello, firefly! How are you? You forgot your father as soon as you moved out!'

'I wouldn't forget you, even if I wanted to, dad!' Minji laughed.

'You aren't coming back home.' Dragon sulked.

'What are you saying? I was home a month ago...'

'For a weekend!'

'I facetime you everyday and you always nod that it is good to be busy.' she said calmly.

'Because you are doing amazing, firefly! But still can't you not neglect your parents existence!? You are breaking your mother's heart! She is crying on the pillow every night!'

Minji exchanged "being done" gazes with Bora.

'I'm sure she is...' she said ironically. 'I will take care shopping before Christmas!' she offered.

'What about me?!'

'Are you crying too?'

'Don't be ridiculous!' Dragon snorted.

'I am calling to ask you for advice. I think it would be for the best, but I would like to hear your opinion about it...' Minji said calmly.

Bora showed her silent "thumbs up".

'Sure, firefly. What is bothering you?'

'I have a pretty tight schedule right now and it will get even more busy. It is hard

to combine it with my work for MOI, and I am getting more entangled with it. I often have to stay longer. The dorms curfew starts to be inconvenient especially when I have to study overnight. Now when I additionally help with trainings of the units...'

'You help? How?'

'Well, you taught me well, dad. Standing, observing and commanding helps them to be prepared...'

'My blood!'

'Yeah, so I thought it would be good to move out from the dorms.' he dropped the bomb. 'And the offer I found is pretty good, but...'

'Move from the dorms?' Dragon asked sternly.

'Yeah. There were few places with comparable expenses. And one of those places is in a secured, closed area that I checked.'

'Oh, that's nice...'

'The apartment complex is closed only for residents and the neighborhood is one of the best in Daegu.'

'Sounds like a good deal.'

'I think so too. The apartment has a living room, kitchen, and five rooms with separate bathrooms...'

'Five rooms?' the frown was heard in his father's voice.

'Yes. It is an apartment for students so different students can rent each room.'

'Do you check who you would live with?'

'Well, you know... it would be hard to meet someone there, so we calculated with some friends and we could afford it. I would get the single room, but I wish Bora would take the second one. You know... to have a her around...'

'Some friends?' Dragon's voice became cold. 'What friends? SEE!? THAT'S BECAUSE I DON'T KNOW ANY OF YOUR FRIENDS?! WHO ARE THOSE GIRLS?!'

Bora made "ooops!" face.

'Dad, I don't want girls around! You know how it is! The dramas, the screams! Talks about boys! I don't have time for it. I don't want to live with girls!'

'YOUR ROOMATES WILL BE BOYS!?! ARE YOU OUT OF YOUR MIND!?'

'First of all: no. Because me and Bora would have the single rooms, so nobody will be my roommate. Second of all, those guys have their soulmates! Isn't it nice! They are all Interdepandants! They will get the twin rooms.

'Hmmm...' Dragon frowned. 'I don't like this.'

'Seriously, dad, I will barely see all of the others! Jin is starting an internship in the hospital. Namjoon is working at University and he is often going abroad on International debates...'

'Kim Namjoon? The smart boy? I remember him... Yongguk mentioned that he met the wise boy at one of the conferences...'

'Sounds like, Joon!'

Bora made a move with her finger to keep going.

'Chanyeol and Baekhyun are with the same departments as Bora, and also they work with me in MOI.'

Dragon was silent.

'That's why I ask you for advice, dad. Because it sounds too good to be true! We all are responsible adults. I know that if we make a living plan it will be much easier for me and Bora to manage all the errands, studies and work... Jin and Namjoon can heal anyone so it is safe even if someone gets sick. And Jin can cook! DO you get it! I wouldn't have to count on those lunches in the cafeteria!'

*Perfect!* Bora mouthed without a sound.

Dragon was still silent.

'But I still don't know... Jin has an obsession about healthy food! What if he will make this things for breakfast...' Minji pouted dramatically.

'It's good for you, Minji!'

For a moment there was silence. It was as if Dragon tried not to agree and found any excuse.

'What about the last one. Who else will be there?' he sighed.

'Oh, Hobi?' Minji said lightly, but her hand was nervously tapping over her thigh. 'It's Namjoon's high school friend. You would love him! He is the overworking type like you! You know: fit, sport department. Good with kids! He wants to be a

teacher. He is absolutely normal. He keeps watch on the rest of the guys, making sure they eat, take warm clothes. He is nice to talk to... Best support. Me and Bora met him last year.'

'Does he have a soulmate?'

The doors to the dorm opened and Hoseok stood in them. Bora instantly pressed her finger to her lips so he wouldn't speak.

Minji looked him in the eyes and said to the phone.

'Yes. Yes, he has.'

There was a heavy sigh on the other side of the line.

'Well... I know why you are hesitating, but Minji you haven't said anything that would sound as if you do not want it. Is Bora okay with it? Doesn't she want to stay in the dorms?'

'I asked her first. And she is hyped about having her own room... You think I can do it?'

'Well it is another brave step of yours, firefly. If you know it will work better for you then after what I heard, I am not against it...'

'Thanks, dad! That's a relief. I guess I needed confirmation!'

'It will be a good way for both of my daughters to know how real living and daily struggles are...'

'You live in the mountains, dad? How is that a real living? You do groceries once a month!'

'Oh, shut it! I will send money...'

'Sent it to Bora. You know I use what I won. I used your learnings and I can take care of myself now.'

'That's my girl! Okay! But you have to visit soon!'

'As soon as possible! Love you, dad!'

'Yeah, and move out as soon as those guys get on your nerves!'

'Oh please. Sooner I will get on their nerves then they will on mine! Bye, bye!'

She disconnected, hearing Dragon's laughter.

She let out a relieved breath.

'Your dad?' Hoseok smiled with a bit of a compassionate smile. 'You are still not prepared to tell him?'

'It needs to be a complicated and really well thought battleplan.' Minji nodded to herself.

Hoseok shrugged.

'If you say so...' he picked up the first box. 'Come, girls! Jin is already scary, unpacking... better we go help him.'

.

.

.

It was two months ago and Minji was still making a battlefield plan. She really wanted to get it over with. She needed a calm space and a free time to talk with her father. So she decided she would tell him about Hoseok on Christmas. She will spend time with him. Clear weapons with him. She will have a long talk with him. And then she will bring Hobi home on New Year's Eve.

She was calmer when she was thinking about it. And she promised her dad she will spend the whole two weeks home in December. So he was in a happy mood as well.

Living with her soulmate and four other guys was for sure fun. She didn't lie to her father. Mostly they were busy, but they somehow managed to get a comfy routine in their apartment.

They divided responsibilities. Jin was really strict about cleaning and eating. Usually, Chanyeol or Hobi were making breakfast. Jin with Minji the dinners. Sometimes Bora and Baekhyun were exchanging with them. Only Namjoon was forbidden in the kitchen. And Baekhyun was banned from it for some time also after he "tried" to help him learn the basics, because "it is not that hard". What ends up in three cut fingers...

Jin was furious.

Namjoon had to clean his own blood from all the kitchen tops after this.

Each Saturday there was a cleaning time. And nobody was excused.

Well you do not go against the hand that feeds you and they all were suckers for

Jin's food. So they were cleaning without whining.

But beside responsibilities there were also fun or cute moments.

Like the moment Jin was coming in the morning from his internship and falling asleep on the couch with Hobi scolding and kicking everybody around for being too loud to protect his sleep.

Or Minji sneaking to Hoseok's room to steal some of Hobi's t-shirts to sleep.

Or Hoseok coming back after training and laying on the couch, where Minji was laying.

Or Jin banging on Chanbeak's doors to "KEEP IT DOWN!" while he was studying.

On one saturday Minji was woken up, after hearing a panicked and desperate scream:

'WHAT ARE YOU DOING?!'

She run out of her room, just like Hoseok, Bora and Namjoon to see Chanyeol and Baekhyun pulling some cloth between themselves.

'Why are you yelling? I'm cleaning!' Baekhyun said.

'THIS IS MY SHIRT!'

'WHAT? I THOUGHT IT IS A RAG! I CLEANED THE FLOOR WITH IT!'

'YOU DID WHAT?! IT IS MY SHIRT FROM HIGH SCHOOL!! I WON THE LEAGUE OF LEGENDS TOURNAMENT IN IT!'

'STOP YELLING!!' Jin screamed from his bedroom.

'Chan, it is done. Just throw it away...' Namjoon said sleepily.

'What no!' Chanyeol looked as if he was about to cry.

Hoseok patted Chan's back.

'I think it can be washed. I am doing laundry today. I will take care of it.'

'JUST THROW IT AWAY! I WILL BUY YOU A NEW ONE!' Baekhyun huffed.

'I DON'T WANT NEW ONE!' Chanyeol said stubbornly.

Jin took a pot from the kitchen cabinet and filled it with water while they were still screaming. He came to them and threw the water over them.

They stopped yelling and looked at him in shock.

Jin just gave the pot to Namjoon and walked in his bedroom direction:

'Clean here.' he ordered. 'I am going back to sleep.'

The rest looked at Chanyeol and Baekhyun without a word.

Hoseok took the shirt from Chan's hands and took the culprit of the mess away.

Minji looked at the water on the floor.

'He had a 48 hour shift. I think we better quietly clean here if we do not want to starve...'

That's how their life was going around. Sometimes they didn't see each other for a few days, running to their activities. Or just saw each other in the corridor.

.

.

.

*'Our living together was really fun.' Hoseok told the kids. 'And we could really rely on each other.'*

*'And it was about that time when the Red Alert was created.' Minji added. 'It was because...'*

*Jin grunted and glared at her.*

*She grunted.*

*'Well, we had to help each other with something and we came to the conclusion we were a good team.'*

*Dal, Haemin and Haneul nodded in understanding. They were satisfied with the kiss story and the "I love you" story. Of course Jin was keeping watch and moderate the stories to be more children-friendly when Minji and Hobi were getting too much into it. So their little demons were getting less interested and more sleepy. And probably that's why they didn't pick up Jin's sudden tension, Hobi's tightly pressed together lips, Namjoon's eyes going around, avoiding everybody and Minji trying to hold her giggles.*

*It was an absolute secret.*

*A thing that had never happened...*

*Last time it was mentioned to trick Jin into participating in that stupid kissing tournament...*

*Because that's not exactly what happened at that time...*

.

.

.

On the last weekend of October they were in a pretty good mood, waiting for Samhain. They cleaned their schedules to rest a bit in the afternoons. Bora went to celebrate in Mountain House.

On that Friday, Hoseok came back to their apartment as the last one. He hoped they left something of the super, extra dinner they planned, for him.

'I'm home!!' he screamed, taking his shoes off.

He found them all sitting on the floor in the living room around the blanket with snacks, dishes and sweets.

They had already finished dinner and were eating cakes and cookies.

Minji patted the floor next to her and when Hobi sat she gave him a kiss and started to prepare a plate with food for him.

They were laughing and talking.

Hoseok was eating eagerly, listening to them.

Namjoon was laughing so hard, he started to cry.

Jin was stuffing his mouth. Chanyeol was giggling to himself looking at the gummy bear.

And Minji and Baekhyun were leaning on each other, choking on laughter.

Hoseok frowned.

'Guys... are you okay?'

'I feel perfect!' Minji laughed.

'I can't stop eating!' Jin sniffed with his mouth full of noodles. 'I don't want to. I just can't stop!' he almost cried and then he laughed.

Namjoon tried to put the cookie in Hoseok's mouth but he missed and almost stuffed his nostrils with it.

'Try it! It is homemade! I got it from my auntie.'

Hoseok bit on the cookie.

'It is good,' he nodded.

'Yeah! I ate four!' Jin said.

Hoseok looked at each of them one by one. Then at the cookies. He took the box and sniffed it.

'Namjoon... where did you get it again?'

'From my auntie! I sometimes visit her! She is the coolest old lady!'

Hoseok started to giggle to himself.

Minji wanted to take another cookie, but he didn't let her.

'Hey, I just had one!'

'I HOPE SO!' He laughed.

'Whyyyy!? Give me!' she leaned on him. She giggled. 'Your face is so funny now!'

'I think everything is funny now, ain't it?' Hoseok shook his head in disbelief.

'Jeeze, this is disgusting.' Baekhyun said, while eating surimi, which hated. 'Why do I eat it?!'

Jin with his mouth full of food, started to cry-laugh more, hearing it.

'Guys... you are high.' Hoseok informed them.

They started to yell at him at first, then laugh again. Then they went silent and looked at the cookies.

Then Minji started to laugh out loud, kicking Namjoon.

'It is so funny that it is your fault!! You feed us with stuffed cookies!!'

Hoseok sighed, stood up and checked if all the doors and windows were locked. He was laughing under his nose wondering if he should take pictures.

'It should fade soon...' Jin sighed and facepalmed. 'My mind is already clearing

up...'

'Yeah, mine too.' Namjoon said. 'Unseal me... we can make the effect fade faster...'

'Good idea...' Jin plopped on his knees, next to him, making them all laugh again.

He pulled up Namjoon's shirt without hesitation, exposing his chest.

In a moment a bandage appeared. Namjoon's power started to heal them instantly. Jin wrapped himself in his sacred treasure like a mummy.

When his mind got clear, he looked at Namjoon who was deadly pale right now.

'Oh, come on! Don't stress!' Jin patted his knee.

'Yeah! It is good it happened in the house...' Hoseok nodded.

But Namjoon just shook his head and gulped.

'Jin it is a disaster...' he whispered.

'No.. it just...'

'I... I left the second box in Proffesors' Room.'

Jin plopped next to him with wide eyes.

The rest started to laugh, still a bit intoxicated.

'It's okay! They can't know it is from you!' Baekhyun giggled.

'I left a message on the box...' Namjoon whispered with pale lips.

'Uuuu... then they will know...' Chanyeol made an "o" with his mouth.

'I left it before walking out of the school. Nobody was there!! So I left a message!' Namjoon was almost crying. 'It's OVER! I'M DONE WITH LIFE!'

Minji tried to focus and not laugh anymore.

'Anybody saw you?' she mumbled.

'No. I just left it on the table... The janitor was closing the building soon...'

'It is the weekend.' Minji mouthed.

'Omg! What does it matter now, Minji!!' Jin was starting to panic.

'Wait.' she let out a short chuckle with closed eyes. 'Let me focus. We have to get it.'

Hoseok looked at her.

'Definitely.'

'If nobody saw him and nobody ate it we just needed to make it stay this way...' she said. 'But it is so funny! Imagine Professor Jing on high!'

'NOT FUNNY!' Namjoon whined.

Jin grabbed Minji with his bandage quickly.

'Better?' he asked.

She looked at the ceiling.

'Nooo...' she shook her head. 'I'm starting to think again...'

Hoseok grabbed her chin and kissed her.

'Focus, babe.'

She blinked. She looked at Chanbaek then at Namjin.

'Okay! It is a hard situation! A freaking RED ALERT! Wake them up.' she pointed to Chanyeol and Baekhyun with her head and got up.

Hoseok stood next to her. She unsealed him.

'We have an emergency.'

Chanyeol and Baekhyun looked at her with focused eyes and nodded.

'Unseal Baekhyun.' she said. 'We will need your power.'

'Why?' Chnayeol frowned.

'Because we are about to break inside the University and we better not get caught.' she said seriously.

.

.

.

Six of them were standing on the opposite side of the street. They were looking at the main gate to University Grounds.

'Maybe it is not a good idea?' Baekhyun asked.

'No. It has to be done.' Jin said sternly. 'As if nothing ever happened.'

'I'm sorry, guys. It's my fault, but Jin is right. It would be a total disaster if anybody would find out. Even if I go to the ward tomorrow to let me in... Some teacher could be there before me in the morning. I would rather not risk it.'

Hobi patted Namjoon's back.

'You couldn't know...'

'It's your aunt's fault!' Jin huffed. 'I will give her a good hearing! What was she thinking?!'

'It sucks, we don't know where the cameras are and how they work...' Chanyeol sighed.

'We need to avoid them at all costs.' Minji said.

'That's what I am saying. We don't know their range...'

'Well, one thing I know for sure. They do not monitor the sky.' Minji said, looking at the rooftops.

'What about the alarm?' Baekhyun frowned.

'All doors will turn it on.' Namjoon said. 'But according to my University Safety Training - windows won't.'

They all were wearing black outfits. They also took black masks with them, but for now they pretend they are just a group of friends after clubbing, finishing last talks before parting.

Minji was looking at the google maps street view to see the location of the buildings.

'Baek, how is your echolocating map now?'

Well, I can cover and monitor half of the school grounds I guess.' he scratched his head.

'And your mindlink?' she looked at Chan.

'Between me and Baek it doesn't have limits. With other's it is rather short...'

'Okay, so considering what we know, and all our abilities...' She looked around and pointed to the apartment building near the University grounds. 'We will go from there. Then to the roof of the chemistry lab. And then to the main building. I will explain more there.'

They all hid behind the corner and waited for some night car to go from or to the underground garage. It wasn't an expensive building, that's why Minji chose it. It monitored the entrance, not the parking space...

And from the garage they quietly used the staircase to the last floor.

Namjoon, being unsealed and having extreme physical abilities, pulled the ladder to the rooftop and helped them to go up.

They went to the roof barrier and looked at the university grounds.

'I don't like high places...' Hoseok whined.

'You control gravity, Hobi.' Minji reminded him calmly. 'High places don't have power over you.'

He just sighed heavily in response.

'Okay. Namjoon, Jin and Baekhyun you will stay here. Baek, you will monitor the area around the main building, to warn us if the night guard decides to go on patrol. Chan, you, me and Hobi will go from here to there.' she pointed to the rooftop of the chemistry lab.

'Go? How? Do I look like spiderman?' he asked.

Minji moved her hand and the lightballs danced around her fingers. It got bigger. One of them split and embraced Chanyeol, the second part of it embraced Hobi.

'Like this.' Minji said. 'From there we will go on the roof of the Main building. And then me and Hobi will lower ourselves to the window of the Teacher's Room on the second floor.'

'How will you open the window?'

'Hoseok, will. I can't because the Sacred Treasure won't go through the glass, but Hoseok's power can. We will get the cookies, and come back the same way.'

Baek spread a small echolocating map in front of himself.

'The guard is in the watchman's house near the gate.' he informed them. 'Seriously, if we get caught it will be an even bigger mess than if we wouldn't do anything.'

Namjoon gulped. Yeah, now only he was fucked. If something goes wrong, they all will be...

'Maybe.'

'We won't.' Minji and Hoseok assured Baekhyun at once.

Minji patted Jin's shoulders.

'If anything, you are responsible for diversion.'

'Sure. I will even jump from this building pretending someone kidnapped me and pushed me down to divert their attention.' Jin nodded.

Minji smiled.

'That's what I like to hear!!' she praised him.

Chanyeol, Minji and Hoseok stood on the edge of the building.

'You won't drop me, right?' Chan, asked Minji.

'If I will, Hoseok will catch you.'

'That's not reassuring at all!' he whined.

Minji grabbed Hoseok's and Chanyeol's hand.

'Keep communication with Chanyeol all the time.' she said to Baekhyun and the three of them started to float above. 'We are going.'

They ran to the edge and jumped over it.

Jin and Namjoon ran after them to see them landing a bit wobbly on the rooftop of the Chemistry Lab.

Then they jumped again, higher and landed on the rooftop of the main building. They started to run and stopped in the middle building on the west side.

'That was something.' Chanyeol breathed out. 'I think I will puke...' he sat heavily on the rooftop.

Hoseok and Minji looked down. Minji bent through the edge and started to count the windows.

'You good?' she asked Hoseok.

'Yeah.' he was just a bit pale. 'Thankfully it is not like a roller coaster ride...'

'Chanyeol, can you keep the communication if we go 150m down from here?' she asked.

'Most probably.'

'Good. We are going down.'

'Wait.' he said, pressing the earpiece. 'Baekhyun said the watchman went for patrol. He walks around the building now. He will inform us when it will be safe.'

From above they were looking at the guard, walking through the pathway with a flashlight. They waited 15 minutes, before they got a signal from Baekhyun.

'He is now near the Sport Department Building. We have around 20 minutes before he will come back this way.' Chanyeol said.

'It's enough.'

Hoseok and Minji gently and slowly floated down, lightly touching the wall of the building. They stopped near the window, two floors down.

'Are we sure they won't set the alarm?' Hoseok asked.

'That's what Namjoon said.'

Hoseok nodded and looked at the window's handle inside the room. He stretched his hand and moved his fingers, making the gravity around the handle lighter until it faded and the mechanism inside let go, moving it vertically.

Minji pushed the window, they waited a second, but nothing happened. She flew inside the room and looked around.

Not touching anything around, even the floor, she reached the main table and found the culprit of the whole mess. A small box of cookies, cutely wrapped with a short note with Namjoon's signature, placed underneath it.

'Kiss ass...' she shook her head and smirked. She took the cookies and the note and put it inside the backpack.

*Come back. The watchman is turning back* - Chanyeol warned her.

*5 minutes.*

She flew out of the window and closed it.

Hoseok focused on the handle again, this time with a reverse process. Making the gravitation underneath it stronger till it went down and closed the window.

The little vase on the sail moved a bit and fell down, from the effect of his power.

'Fuck.' he mumbled.

'Nobody heard it beside us. Things like that happen. We are coming back.' Minji grabbed his hand and they made themselves lighter to fly up.

Chanyeol sighed with relief, seeing them.

'When the watchmen comes back to his place we can go back.'

In 20 minutes they were all in the apartment building again, together with the rest.

'I have to order the hair dye to cover all the grey hair I got...' Jin mumbled to himself, shaking his head.

'I'm checking the corridor beneath...' Bakehyun said. 'And the situation on the floors... Oh there is a party on the eighth floor...'

'And we need this information, because?' Hoseok asked, while frowning.

'Because we can just go to the eighth floor and pretend we just left that party without sneaking through the garage...' Baekhyun said as if it was obvious.

'Oh, great! Using the elevator like normal people...'

They messed up their clothes a bit and their hair, so they would look lazily and chill in their dark clothes. They hid the cups and masks inside the bag, which Hoseok threw over his arm.

They walked through the corridor on the last floor when someone opened the doors.

'Hey, who are you?' the old lady asked.

'Auntie! We are looking for a cab! Where is the exit? The party was good! Why didn't they invite you?' Jin jumped to her and embraced her with his arm. 'I bet you rock!'

He wobbled a bit.

Namjoon looked at her politely.

'Sorry, madam. He had too much soju. We had to take him come, but he pressed the 8 instead of 0 on the elevator and we ended up here...'

'We are really sorry...' they all bowed.

Hoseok embraced Minji and turned back to the elevator.

Chanyeol came closer to Jin.

'Come. We are taking you home...' together with Namjoon they escorted Jin to the elevator.

'Keep it quiet kids! There are toddlers on this floor!' she said to them.

'Of course! Apologies, auntie!' Baekhyun smiled with 1000 volts cuteness. 'Have a good sleep!'

She shook her head but smiled a bit and closed the doors after herself.

When the elevator's doors closed and they started to go down they all let out a heavy sigh of relief.

'That was a red alert! Jin, you are amazing. You should change your profession!' Baekhyun patted his back.

'This whole night is one big RED ALERT.' Jin grunted.

'We are good,' Minji said thoughtfully. 'We are quiet, invisible and effective. The training paid off. I think we would be a good unit.

'And what? We will take care of emergencies?'

'Precisely. Small, confidential, rescue tasks...' Minji nodded.

They went off the building like a group of friends after a party and took a walk to their apartment.

When they reached their home Namjoon looked at Minji.

'It doesn't actually sound bad... being a MOI rescue unit for Interdependants..'

The rest nodded hesitantly.

Minji smiled a bit.

'I will inform them we are ready... What about the code for us?'

'The code? Yes. The code of our unity. A name.'

'Well, we do take care of Red Alerts like pros...' Chanyeol giggled.

'Yeah. What else could it be? Red Alert is like everything that happened tonight.' Namjoon sighed. And bowed to the rest. 'Thank you guys, you are life savers...'

'You are too, Joon. Literally - you are one. So... keep being close to us in unexpected situations... Especially next to Minji.' Hoseok patted his back.

Jin took the backpack, took out the box of cookies, put them on the floor and smashed them with his foot several times. When nothing was left of them he went to the bathroom and flushed it down the toilet. Then got rid of the packing and burned the note with a lighter, over the sink.

He turned to the rest.

'This night NEVER HAD HAPPENED. And I mean: NEVER.'

They nodded obediently.

'Don't get me wrong. We won't talk about it, think about it or remember it. Or next time when one of you will bleed or get sick I will just let them die.' he squinted his eyes.

'Yes, Seokjin-nim.' The whole Red Alert said unisono.

.

.

.

'They fell asleep...' Jin whispered.

'I will make us tea...' Namjoon offered and walked out.

Minji was sitting on the bed with a small smile. She fixed the duvet over the three little bodies.

Hoseok stood next to her and put his hand on her shoulder.

They were both glad they fell asleep, before they reached this part of their beginnings.

But as they opened this box of memories, they were overfloaing now...

Especially being here now.

After so many years.

.

.

.

**Middle of December 2045**

They declared their will to become an official MOI unit in November, so after a few more training sessions, in the middle of December they all went to MOI's Daegu Headquarter to get their certificates.

Minji's supervisor, Lee Jungjie, presented them with the six smart watches and gave them all the emergency numbers to MOI and ICI.

'Don't expect to be called often.' he informed them all. 'We usually stay on the sidelines.'

'Understood!' Minji nodded.

'It is like being firefighters...' he laughed at his own joke. 'Oh, now you can celebrate I guess! Minji, I have worked with you since you were 17. I am glad, your father convinced me at that time to take you as the intern. Even if you were underaged. Actually as soon as you will get the diploma I want to offer you a job.'

'Really? Sir, you don't have to! But it would be amazing!'

'You have a unit now and you are really good at giving tasks and keeping things under control. I need a deputy like that.'

'Minji! It's amazing!' Hoseok squeezed her. 'Thank you, sir!'

'You are a good team I have to say. Your abilities match a lot and you all are smart. I know ICI is interested in you, Namjoon-ah. I made a quite huge impression on Bang Yongguk. He will observe your career...'

'That's worth celebrating!' Hoseok said.

'Sure. Go and bring us some drinks from the staff room. And fetch a bottle of champagne from my office.' Mr Kim said.

'That's not necessary...' Jin said politely.

'Don't listen to them, Hoseok. In MOI we rarely experience forming units, so the celebration is needed.'

'I got you, sir!' Hoseok nodded and ran off the meeting room.

Mr Kim looked at Minji.

'I almost feel like your uncle,' he laughed. 'So, I thought I would make this a bit

more special. I don't talk with Dragon as much as I would like lately... so I invited him here for today.'

Minji got pale.

'What?'

'Yeah. My secretary will bring him here. As soon as he gets here...'

Minji with wide eyes looked around.

'What have you told him?'

'Oh, just that he should see with her own eyes his daughter's squad...'

Minji felt as if the ground was disappearing from under her feet.

She looked at Hoseok who came back with a few more people. They were holding cakes, drinks, and paper cups. Hoseok was shaking the bottle of champagne.

'I invited whoever I met around!' he said happily.

'I need to talk with my father beforehand.' Minji said quickly. 'It's really important.'

Mr Kim blinked, surprised, seeing her usually calm posture so panicked.

'I will fetch him myself.' she offered, walking towards Hoseok. She had to think fast.

'Hobi...' she called him.

He was in the middle of opening the cork, but he turned to her instantly, worried by the tone of her voice.

But it was too late, the champagne popped, because of Hoseok's motioned and the liquid started to sprey.

'I still remember the way!' someone said loudly and cheerfully.

Minji reacted automatically, she moved one of the lightballs, embraced the liquid which fell to the ground instantly like a heavy rain.

She knew who was standing in the doors. She was afraid to turn.

She looked at Hoseok desperately.

It was her fault. She should have dealt with this case earlier...

She gulped.

Hoseok, soaking wet, made a move towards her, one step, at the same time Dragon said quietly:

'Minji... what have you just done?'

Minji slowly streached her hand to the side and moved her fingers. The lightball came to a small shape and came back to her to be joined with the others, near her body.

'Is this a Sacred Treasure?' Jiyoung asked still with a cold, calm tone.

Minji slowly turned around. Hoseok made a step, but Dragon pointed a finger at him.

'Don't.' he warned. He was looking at Hoseok with a killer intent. 'Is it yours?'

'Yes.' Hoseok said, quietly.

Dragon's eyes traveled to Minji.

Everybody around was silent. To afraid to move or breath.

Mr Kim grunted.

'Jiyoung! Long time no see! Maybe we should...'

'I will borrow your office for a moment...' Dragon disturbed him, drilling holes in Minji's face.

He turned around and walked out.

Minji closed her eyes and took a deep breath.

Hoseok stood behind her. She turned to him and sealed him.

'I have to go...' she said, quietly.

He grabbed her wrist.

'YOU DON'T HAVE TO. DO IT. ALONE.' he said slowly and firmly.

She could understand it was extremly hard for him right now.

'I will handle it...' she promised.

He shook his head.

Minji streached her hand to his cheek and carres it with her thumb.

'Let me...' she asked desperatly.

He looked at her with pleading eyes.

'I need you to stay here...' she whispered.

And because he was her soulmate, and because he was always letting her do things her way... he fought with himself and let go of her wrist.

'I will come back. No matter what...' she said and followed her father.

Walking through the corridor, she tried to calm herself down. The emotions right now were absolutely to her disadvantage.

She felt guilty. Towards Hoseok and towards her father.

Of course she did.

But even more, she was scared. Because neither she was the one who will start the talk nor she had the way to calm her father before, because he was already furious.

And if he couldn't speak with her clamly right now... she knew she won't be able to stay calm either.

But she had to try.

She entered her supervisor's office when her father was looking through the window. The weather was awful.

Rain mixed with snow was shaddered by the raging wind.

'I didn't know I raised... a liar.' Jiyoung said through clenched teeth.

Minji already could feel that his tone was making her mad.

'I didn't lie.' she said defensively.

'You just hid the truth?' he said sarcastically. 'I made a mistake trusting you so blindly then.'

'You were the one who taught me the value of infromation and when to use it to my advantage.' her tone was fighting for calmness.

'And you used it against me?!' he turned around quickly. 'How dare you!?'

'Why are you so mad? I was going to tell you in two weeks!'

'Should I be happy about it!? In two weeks?! Considering how well you can use that Sacred Treasure it was going on for months!'

'Yes, I found my soulmate. That's what you want to hear?! I did!'

'When?!'

No matter what, she was already doomed.

'Last December. And I am really sorry I haven't...'

'A YEAR AGO?!'

'Yes, can you let me speak...'

'FOR A YEAR, YOU WERE HIDING THIS?! WHY?! WHAT HAVE I EVER DONE WRONG TO YOU!?'

'What would you do if I would tell you right away? Before I even got to know him? Would you be happy about it?' she asked quickly. He was looking at her for a moment. 'Are you happy for me now? Tell me. What would you do?'

Jiyoung was opening his mouth for a moment, before finally saying:

'IS IT WRONG FOR A FATHER TO BE PROTECTIVE?! I WOULD JUST... CHECK HIM!'

'You would try to protect me from MY OWN soulmate! That's what I was scared of! That you would everything in your power to "check him". And you would keep this protective cage around me till he would be how YOU would like it and not how I need him to be!'

'So you prefered to keep it a secret?!'

'YOU DON'T EVEN DENY IT?!' she exclaimed.

'YOU WERE LYING FOR A YEAR! And you dragged your sister into it to keep secrets from me and your mother!'

'OH, DON'T TELL ME ABOUT MOM RIGHT NOW! I WOULD TOLD HER A LONG TIME AGO BECAUSE I KNOW SHE WOULD BE AT LEAST HAPPY FOR IT!'

'HOW CAN I BE HAPPY IF IT IS THE REASON YOU ARE HIDING THINGS FROM ME!'

'THE REASON I HIDE IS YOU CONTROLLING MY LIFE! You raised me to be

independent! But you are the only one I have to fight with over this independency!'

'MORE LIKE STUPIDITY! CHILDISH STUPIDITY TO DO WHATEVER YOU LIKE!'

'And normally when I do you are proud of it! But I knew! I just KNEW! You won't in this case! Because it means you won't be the most important person for me anymore and you won't be able to stand it!'

'I'm your father! I raised you! I know you! Don't tell me someone who you met a year ago know you better then me and can support you better then me!'

'YES! HE CAN! HOSEOK IS MY SOULMATE! AND THERE IS NOT EVEN ONE REASON I WOULDN'T WANT HIM!'

'Well, I have plenty! Look what he had done to you! Look how you are behaving since you met him! You are lying! He is keeping you away from home! You don't talk to me and...' his eyes widened when he realised. 'You live with him. YOU MOVED OUT FROM THE DOORMS BECAUSE OF HIM!'

'NO!' she exclaimed. 'I told you why I moved out from the doorms. And you approved it!'

'BECAUSE YOU TRICKED ME!'

'I TOLD WHO WILL BE LIVING THERE!'

'BUT YOU DIDN'T TELL ME HE IS YOUR SOULMATE! MOVING IN WITH HIM?! AT YOUR AGE?!'

'OH MY GOD!! WE HAVE SEPERATE ROOMS! 5 OTHER PEOPLE LIVE WITH US! I DIDN'T EVEN SLEEP IN THE SAME ROOM WITH HIM!'

Jiyoung's face became red.

'YOU AND BORA ARE MOVING OUT FROM THERE TODAY!'

Minji laughed. She was angry, and heartbroken and she was sure her father was too and she couldn't get through to him.

'I am a grown up person, dad. I pay my own expenses And you can't make me move out from there.' she sighed with a tired and sad tone.

'YOU WON'T LIVE WITH THAT PERSON EVEN FOR A DAY MORE!'

'You can't forbid me.' she said sternly. 'And you can't force me to do anything, dad.'

'YOU ARE BRAINWASHED!'

'And you are angry and yelling bullshit right now. I understand why you are mad at me. But...'

'THERE IS NO BUT! I DIDN'T ALLOW IT! I DIDN'T APPROVE THIS GUY! OH! I REMEMBER HIM! ALWAYS DISTRACTED. UNDISCIPLINED! IRRESPONSIBLE! LOUD! A CLOWN!'

'ENOUGH!'Minji screamed. Her face became red. She started to tremble. With a cold, calm tone she said: 'My foot won't enter your house till you will apologize for it. You can offend me. But not him. Ever again. Father.' she said and turned around.

'DON'T SHOW ME YOUR FACE TILL YOU GET YOUR SHIT TOGETHER!'

Minji clenched her fist over the handle.

'We made a deal then. I will send Bora for my things.'

'She is moving out!' he hissed.

'Try to make her and lose the second one...' Minji said ironically. 'Goodbye, Dragon.'

.

.

.

They finished the celebration before it even began. They were all silent. Mr Kim left and MOI'S staff left them there together.

Hoseok was just standing where Minji left him.

Jin and Namjoon tried to make him sit at least but he was silent and focused.

It almost took an hour before he moved.

He started to walk.

'Hobi...?' Jin asked with a worried face.

Hoseok was pressing his hand to his chest.

He grabbed his and Minji's jackets and started to run.

The rest looked at each other. Chanyeol took out his phone.

'I will call Bora...'

'Let's go home... Hobi will bring her.' Baekhyun nodded.

'You go. Me and Jin will order another car and wait for them.' Namjoon said.

Hoseok didn't hear them anymore, he was running through corridors, towards the exit when the winter weather was making a hell.

He got out and looked left and right. He again felt that pang in his chest and ran left.

He almost missed her. She was standing in the alley nearby, leaning on the wall with closed eyes.

Absolutely frozen and wet she was taking slow calm breaths.

'Geeze! Minji! You are freezing!' he exclaimed, panicked and covered her with her jacket.

She wasn't reacting anyhow. She let him dress her.

He looked at the sky. The rain or snow wasn't stopping.

'I have to take you away from here...' he said, looking around, hoping for a cab.

She grabbed his wrist.

'It's my fault...' she whispered.

'It doesn't matter, baby. We have to warm you up...'

She shook her head.

'I knew... how he will react unprepared... And I knew I won't keep my cool if he starts to yell...'

Hoseok looked at her and hugged her tightly.

'It's your dad... When you both will calm down...'

'I said I won't come back home anymore. And he said he didn't want to see me. And if it means I don't want you near me, that means he doesn't want me either...' she whispered.

Hoseok kissed her hair and pulled her closer.

'It's okay.' she mumbled. 'I could tell the outcome the moment I opened that door... I'm just a bit... shocked, I guess...'

(🎶**Music tip: *In the end* - Shane Fillan**🎶)

Hoseok moved a bit and cupped her face.

'Minji...' he said seriously.

She tried to smile.

'Cry.' he ordered.

She lifted her eyebrow.

'You know I won't...' she shook her head.

'I can stay, when you tell me to stay.' he said sternly. 'I can stand and watch you do your things... But I swear to you... that I will make you cry... because you never can cry by yourself...'

She widened her eyes and tried to laugh. Her eyes filled with moisture.

'Hope... I can't cry just because you tell me to...'

Hoseok was just looking her deep in the eyes. With this soft, waiting, understanding gaze.

She felt the first tear unexpectedly falling down her cheek.

He didn't wipe it. He grabbed the back of her head and pressed her face to his chest.

'Just cry...' he whispered. 'I will pick you up after...'

A quiet sobs and sniffles, muffled by the rain...

Getting louder and louder...

Minji's arms embraced Hobi's waist desperately.

And when she was weeping and screaming in the back of her head she heard Namjoon's words:

*...the core of a soulmate is the fact that they do not protect things in you that YOU value.*

*But the parts that you don't...*

.

.

.

**August 2083, Mountain House**

Hoseok crouched down next to Minji.

She looked at him and smiled. She stretched her hand, cupped his cheek and caressed it with her thumb.

'Do you know how often you do that?' he asked quietly, not to wake up the kids.

'I guess as often as you tell me "I love you."' she smirked.

He shook his head.

'Much more often...' he took her hand and kissed her fingers. 'You want something extra to that tea?'

'Definitely not cookies...' she winked.

'Muffins?'

'Oh, you know how to bribe me.'

'Just don't tell the Trio I gave you an extra one...'

'Deal.'

He walked out, sneaked out muffins from their closed cabinet to the kitchen where Jin and Namjoon were talking quietly, making the tea and having some more small memories session.

'I will be on the patio...' he said and took the plate with sweets.

He sat on the small stairs leading to the garden and looked at the moon. He took out his phone, scrolled through the gallery and sent today's pics to Jungkook, Taehyung, Jimin and Yoongi. He texted with them a bit and replied: *see you on Sunday!* When he felt someone sat next to him.

'I was listening to the story...' Jiyoung said quietly.

'It was censored by Jin.' Hoseok chuckled. 'Don't worry!'

Jiyoung shook his head.

'It was a good thing to listen...' He was silent for a moment. 'You know... I am this stubborn old goat who never admitted his mistake... and I guess there was not a bigger mistake I had ever made than the one I made about you...'

'Oh, come on, Dragon-ssi! It was a long time ago!'

'Yesterday or fourty years ago... it doesn't matter. She is still my little girl. And I am glad I wasn't in power to choose the one for her. Because I would think I know what is best for her. And I would choose wrong... because there is no one better than you.'

'Well... I am her soulmate...' Hoseok said simply. 'And husband. And the father of her child. I honestly hope there is no one better!'

'There was a time when you speaking so lightly would make me mad... till I understood this way of speaking is coming out of your confidence. Usually, people make their confidence a weapon and show it. On the other hand... you are so comfortable with yourself, you don't have to. You are a strong man, Hoseok. I'm sorry... I didn't want to see this or even make the opportunity to see this...'

Hoseok looked at the sky.

'At that time... when she told me she was not coming back home. Or that she won't even try to contact you first... I did what I always do... I let her lead and do her things. Because my job is to be on her side. It took me years...' he smiled. '... to understand and learn that being on her side is not necessarily the same as agreeing with her.'

'Oh... that knowledge my boy, comes with age...' Jiyoung nodded and patted Hoseok's back.

'Yes. We were really young. If it would be known, I would have the confidence to realise it was not the best for her and act...'

Jiyoung sighed.

'Well I was old at that time so I apologize for not being the smarter one then 20-year old girl.' he stood up and looked at Hoseok. 'It will be your 37th Wedding Anniversary this year... maybe we should perform Caim?'

'Minji will cringe...' Hoseok smiled.

'But you will love it...'

'For sure.'

'So we will do it.' Jiyoung nodded. 'Goodnight, my boy...'

'Goodnight, dad...' Hoseok smiled.

Few minutes later Jin, Namjoon and Minji popped out on the patio.

'Finished the deep talks?' Minji teased him and sat next to him, handing him the tea.

Jin and Namjoon sat on the other side.

Hoseok looked at her with lifted eyebrow.

'Wipe that smirk, girl... You are going to have Caim with your whole family this year...'

'What?' she frowned.

'You dad said it is a gift for me and I accepted... UwU! My baby with my boys and my grandkids and my husbands seeing how my wifey is vowing to me again! My heart will explode!'

'Tell me you are joking, Hope!' she said threateningly.

He ignored her and turned to Jin.

'I'm so happy!'

Jin laughed and patted Hoseok's head.

'We will make you such a pretty bride, Hobi...' he acted accordingly.

'Thanks, eomma!'

'I still don't remember giving birth to you!' Jin smacked his head.

Namjoon smiled, looking at the quiet night garden.

'Isn't it amazing? At that time we met... we didn't know we would have such an extraordinary life...'

'With extraordinary children...' Minji smiled to herself too.

'I would never guess that the Angels of Destiny will be born to us...' Jin shook his head. 'I didn't even believe they existed in the first place.'

'But when I think about us from our first days... and how we became inseparable the four of us... I think it makes perfect sense...' Hoseok said. 'That Jungkook and Taehyung from their first days were ours...'

'Truly they would be too much for one set of parents...' Jin sighed.

'So they got two sets of extraordinary ones...' Hoseok smiled and clinked his glass with Jin.

Minji looked at Hoseok's smiling profile and sighed heavily.

'Okay, Hope... You can have your Caim this year.'

He looked at her and kissed her nose.

'And because you are cute..' she grabbed his chin.

'I will let you dance with me...again.'

---

11480 words - I don't even wanna comment on it...

First of all...

Cookys kookie Aislin my dear! Sorry it took me so long to fullfill this!

As the winner of First Annual Quiz you chose this one to be written and I finally completed it!

So I hope you enjoyed Your award! Congratulation again!

Her knowledge about the stories I write was extraordinary guys!

Second of all...

I hope you all enjoyed this one. When I had Idea about it I really thought it will be one not so long spin off. I am clown...

Third of all...

One of the things that gave me this idea was the song I call "Hoji Theme" and it is *In the end* by Shane Filan. For me it has their vibes. Look at the lyrics:

Don't be scared
'Cause you and me already been there
Long as I know that you'll be here
I guess that's all that mattersYou've been around
Every time that I've been down
You were there you pulled me out
When I was bruised and batteredYou live and you learn
But now it's my turn

To do what I've got to do
And I'm doing it all for youEven when the rain starts pouring
I won't let it touch your head
Even when the walls are falling
I will hold it back and then I will turn this song around and
I'll never let you down,
even if we have to start again we're gonna get there in the endWo oh, you know oh, we're gonna get there in the end
Wo oh, you know oh ohhIts hard out there
But no one said that life was fair
Even through the bad we shared
I guess that's all that matters
But we're halfway home
We never had to walk alone
Look at all the ways we've grown
Always still together

□□□

And now I am going back to Vampire Hunter and I won't go back from it sideways till it is finished! My Taekook Vampire Babies were abandoned for too long! 🧛🧛🧛

BlairWitch91 ❤□

# Red String of Fate Background Music with Playlist and Description

**!!!!! TRADITIONAL WARNING IN SCARY RED FONT !!!**

**DO NOT READ OR CHECK THE DESCRIPTION OF THIS PLAYLIST OR THE NOTES IN GENRALLY DON'T CHECK THIS CHAPTER AT ALL!!! IF YOU HAVEN'T COMPLETE THE BOOK TILL THE EPILOGUE!**

**LINK TO SPOTIFY:**

**Name: RSF PLAYLIST**

https://open.spotify.com/playlist/0DYtoOHGFw4LK8Ze9DziL4?si=1e2b461f26c7448b

(I know you probably won't be able to open it directly so find it on spotify, or just text me in private I will sent it in message )

**RED STRING OF FATE PLAYLIST**

1 - **INNER CHILD** - BTS - *(Vminkook Sleepover)*

2 - **FRIENDS** - BTS - *(Young years)*

3 - **RUNNIN'** - Adam Lambert - *(Yoongi's Breakdown - Yoongi's Theme 1)*

4 - **SERENDIPITY** - BTS - *(Yoongi's First Song - Yoonmin Theme 1)*

5 - **ON** - BTS - *(Fighting spirit)*

6 - **WAVE** - Ateez - *(Summer drive)*

7 - **2002** - Anne-Marie - *(Singing on the beach)*

8 - **CONVERSATION IN THE DARK** - John Legend - *(Redamancy - Jungkook and Taehyung's first time)*

9 - **INTRO: NEVER MIND** - BTS - *(Yoongi's Second Song)*

10 - **CLARITY** - Kurt Hugo Schneider, Sam Tsui - *(Jungkook and Taehyung's song)*

11 - **SCREAM** - Dreamcatcher - (*Dam mission, Red String in action)*

12-**ORBIT** - Hwasa *(Taekook soft afternoon drive)*

13 - **STAY ALIVE** - Jungkook & SUGA - *(Jungkook's Kidnapping)*

14 - **ONCE AGAIN** - Mad Clown, Kim Na Young - *(Taehyung Missing HIM)*

15 - **CHERRY BLOSSOM LOVE SONG** - CHEN - *(Samhain Night Longing and Memories)*

16 - **BIOS** - Hiroyuki Sawano, Mika Kobayashi - *(Reunion of the Lovers, Full Unsealing)*

17 - **COMING HOME** - NCT U - *(Taehyung bringing Jungkook home)*

18 - **LAST ONE STANDING** - Two Steps From Hell, Thomas Bergersen, Tina Guo, Uyanga Bold - *(Yoongi driving to the gate, talk with Kyung)*

19 - **TOGETHER WE FIGHT** - Devel Sullivan - *(Jimin running to stop Kyung / Red String Appearing/ Gathering together)*

*20* - エルザ降臨 - Yasuharu Takanashi - (*Battle of Interdependants - 1 )*

*21* - **DRAGON FORCE**- Yasuharu Takanashi - (*Battle of Interdependants - 2 )*

*22* - **THE TRUTH UNTOLD** - BTS - *(Yoongi's unspoken confession - Yoongi's Theme 2)*

23 - **THE POWER OF LOVE** - Gabrielle Aplin *(Fated mates reunited - Taekook Theme 2)*

*24* - **REDEEMING LOVE THEME** - Brian Tyler, Breton Vivian *(The Wedding)*

*25* - **WHO WANTS TO LIVE FOREVER** - *Queen (First Time as Husbands)*

*26* - **BATTLE CRY** - Imagine Dragons *(Getting ready for the Battle)*

*27* - **HEART OF COURAGE** - Thomas Bergersen, Two Steps from Hell - *(Final Battle-part 1)*

*28*- **PROTECTORS OF THE EARTH** - Thomas Bergersen, Two Steps from Hell - *(Final Battle-part 2)*

*29* - **CARADHRAS** - Nick Phoenix, Two Steps from Hell - *(Shadows Appear - Angels of Destiny's Final Charge)*

30 - **LEGENDS NEVER DIE (Remix)** - League of Legends, Alan Walker, Against The Current, Mako - *(Red String getting up to save Taekook)*

31 - **A THOUSAND YEARS** - Christina Perri *(Yoongi & Jimin Wedding - Yoonmin*

*Theme 2)*

32 - **UNTIL I FOUND YOU** - Stephen Sanchez, Em Beihold *(Jungkook & Taehyung First Wedding Dance)*

*33* - **WHEN YOU SAY YOU LOVE ME** - Josh Groban - *(Taekook Theme 3)*

34 - **DNA** - BTS *(Ending credits - Taekook Theme 1)*

**Additional tracks** (tracks which I think suits them but didn't have the place for them. I just listen to them a lot while writing xD):

35 - **KIZUNA** - Yasuharu Takanashi - *(The Fall + the Bond of Red String )*

*36* - **ON MY OWN** - Ashes Remain - *(Yoongi's Theme 3)*

*37* - **WAR** - Poets of the Fall - *(Yoonmin Theme 3)*

Spin offs:

*38* - **Classic** - MKTO *(Hobi's Performance)*

39 - **Reggaeton Lento (Remix)-** CNCO, Little Mix *(Club Scene)*

40 **- IN THE END** - Shane Filan - *(Hobi&Minji Theme)*

----------<3----------

Sometimes I choose songs because of the whole song, sometimes because of the vibe and sometimes because of one particular part of the lyrics. So Let me now blabber about some of them.

******

*First:* ***Caradhras***by Two Steps From Hell, if you will play this song, you may think it doesn't suit the moment while you are reading. Depends on how fast you read. But actually when you just listen to the song you have the strange moment of uncertainty, when Red String Holders One By One are falling down. When the

shadows are harassing their souls. When Sealers can't stand their soulmates' pain... When Jungkook is shocked and going down to them. It's good to listen to this song from 02:00 till the end.

But - if you listen to this song while reading - the most important part from this song for the story is The part that actually shows the final charged and I mean the moment when Jungkook's is screaming Taehyung's name and they both going at him and that moment in music starts at 3**:10.**

And then - it's magic. Angels of Destiny Final Charge *bliss*.

******

*Second: Taekook's Themes*

There are actually 3 Taekook Themes.

**DNA** of course. Cause it's THEIR song! It was and it always will be!

**The Power of Love** as the represention of their love. Becasue of this of course:

*I'll protect you from the hooded claw*
*Keep the vampires from your door*
*When the chips are down I'll be around*
***With my undying death defying love for you***

I even underlined it for you in that chapter!!! UNDYING DEATH DEFYING was a hint to make you all calm down! But I am glad you didn't get it :D

**When You Say You Love Me** - It is Taekook's song. The whole lyric is and the softness of Josh's voice is perfect.

**When You Say You Love Me by Josh Groban**

*Like the sound of silence calling,*

*I hear your voice and suddenly I'm falling,*

***Lost in a dream.***

***Like the echoes of our souls are meeting,***

*You say those words, my heart stops beating.*

*I wonder what it means.*

*What could it be that comes over me?*

*At times I can't move.*

*At times I can hardly breathe.*

*When you say you love me*

*The world goes still, so still inside and*

*When you say you love me,*

*For a moment, there's no one else alive.*

*You're the one I've always thought of.*

***I don't know how, but I feel sheltered in your love.***

***You're where I belong.***

*And when you're with me if I close my eyes,*

***There are times I swear I feel like I can fly,***

***For a moment in time,***

*Somewhere between*

*The Heavens and Earth.*

*I'm frozen in time*

*Oh, when you say those words.*

***And this journey that we're on.***

***How far we've come and I***

***Celebrate every moment.***

*And when you say you love me,*

*That's all you have to say.*

*I'll always feel this way.*

******

*Third: Yoonmin's Themes*

So Yoonmin also has 3 Themes.

**Serendipity** of course! Cause it is about them! Can't tell me other way!

**A thousand years** - their wedding song suits them better then Twilight. Their whole story is freaking better romance then Twilight! But I choose it because their were waiting for each other for so long. And of course it's connected to the words opening their soulmates' dimension.

**War** - I didn't include this one. But I love those lyrics and it suits Yoongi's feelings so well.

***WAR -*** *The Lyrics by Poets of the Fall*

*Do you remember standing on a broken field*

*White crippled wings beating the sky*

*The harbingers of war with their nature revealed*

*And our chances flowing by*

*If I can let the memory heal*

***I will remember you with me on that field***

*When I thought that I fought this war alone*

*You were there by my side on the frontline*

*When I thought that I fought without a cause*

*You gave me a reason to try*

*Turn the page I need to see something new*

*For now my innocence is torn*

*We cannot linger on this stunted view*

*Like rabid dogs of war*

*I will let the memory heal*

*I will remember you with me on that field*

***When I thought that I fought this war alone***

***You were there by my side on the frontline***

***And we fought to believe the impossible***

*When I thought that I fought this war alone*

***We were one with our destinies entwined***

*When I thought that I fought without a cause*

***You gave me the reason why***

*With no-one wearing their real face*

*It's a whiteout of emotion*

*And I've only got my brittle bones to break the fall*

*When the love in letters fade*

*It's like moving in slow motion*

*And we're already too late if we arrive at all*

*And then we're caught up in the arms race*

*An involuntary addiction*

*And we're shedding every value our mothers taught*

*So will you please show me your real face*

*Draw the line in the horizon*

***Cos I only need your name to call the reasons why I fought***

******

*4th: Yoongi's Themes*

So Yoongi has 3 themes focusing around the kind of pain he endured. First it is ***Runnin*** by Adam Lambert. The moment he lost his father. He lost a bit of himself. In the lyrics of the song are lot of important things. Of course the first part of the song: whisky, driving, shot after shot - well I describe that scene to suit the song tbh. But the important parts:

*I've been standing here my whole life*

*Everything I've seen twice*

*Now it's time I realized*

*It's spinning back around now*

***On this road I'm crawlin'***

***Save me cause I'm fallin'***

*Now I can't seem to breathe right*

*'Cause I keep runnin'*

The loop he lives in starts here. Every time he thinks it getting better its coming back to getting worse in the end.

*'Round and around I go*

*Addicted to the numb livin' in the cold*

*The higher, the lower, the down, down, down*

***Sick of being tired and sick***

***Of waiting for another kind of fix***

***The damage is damning me down, down, down***

His second theme is of course **The Truth Untold** and it was explained in the story just right. And the third one is the moment everything actually - gets better. When he realised he is not alone and this song was inspiration of the moment when Jimin said: *You were never suppose to find on your own...* So **On my own** has this lyrics:

*There's gotta be another way out*

***I've been stuck in a cage with my doubt***

***I've tried forever getting out on my own***

*But every time I do this my way*

*I get caught in the lies of the enemy*

*I lay my troubles down*

*I'm ready for you now*

*Bring me out*

*Come and find me in the dark now*

*Every day by myself I'm breaking down*

***I don't wanna fight alone anymore***

*Bring me out*

***From the prison of my own pride***

*My God*

*I need a hope I can't deny*

***In the end I'm realizing I was never meant to fight on my own***

*Every little thing that I've known is every thing I need to let go*

*You're so much bigger than the world I've made*

***So I surrender my soul***

*I'm reaching out for your hope*

*I lay my weapons down*

*I'm ready for you now*

Good one right?

******

*5th: BIOS by Hiroyuki Sawano, Mika Kobayashi*

The lyrics is in german-english mix, sung by Hiroyuki Sawano. But it is really important song and moment. And perfect background music for this scene when Taehyung is catching Jungkook after so long and they release their power in full volume. So look at the beggining of the lyrics:

*The ruined city is still beautiful**I have been waiting for your return for a long time**A forget-me-not in the hand*

*It might be just like a bird in the cage**How could I reach to your heart**I need you to be stronger than anyone**I release my soul so you feel my song*

*Raindrops are my tearsWind is my breath and my storyBranches and leaves are my handsBecause my body is wrapped in rootswhen the season of thaw comes,I'll wake up and sing a songthe forget-me-not that you gave meis here*

******

***6th: Coming home by NCT U***

It was a really gentle song for gentle moment.

*My time is frozen*
*To when I turned around from you as you cried*
*I didn't even say*
*A last goodbye*
*But you told me to come back*
*And rest anytime when I get tired*

*When I walked for a while*
*On the snowy street*
*If I turn around, feels like you'll be there*
*Right when the journey is over*
*I will know*
*Then I'll hold you tight like before*
*I'm coming home*

*Darkness greeted me*
*When I was lost and wandering*
*What I encountered at the end of this road*
*Was your light*
*It always shined truth next to me*
*You light of my life uh*

*When I walked for a while*

*On the snowy street*
*I turned around and you were looking at me*
*Even when my time is up*
*I will go to you*
*And we'll go back home where it's warm*
*Yeah Yeah*

*You said that you're happy I came*
*Yeah*

******

***7th: Legends Never Die***

Okay, so this is my ultimate perfect song - scene moment.

So the moment when the whole Red String is picking themselves up.

The moment when Soobin lightening the darkness. Yoongi is jumping to catch Tae. San is going for Jungkook.

Lyrics:

*Legends never die*
***When the world is calling you***
***Can you hear them screaming out your name?*** *-> the whole RS calling Tae and Jungkook*
*Legends never die*
*They become a part of you*
*Every time you bleed for reaching greatness*
*Relentless you survive*

*They never lose hope when everything's cold*
*And the fighting's near*
*It's deep in their bones, they'll run into smoke*
*When the fire is fierce*
*Oh, pick yourself up, 'cause*

*Legends never die*
*When the world is calling you (the world is calling you)*
*Can you hear them screaming out your name?*
*Legends never die*
*They become a part of you (they become a part of you)*
*Every time you bleed for reaching greatness*
*Legends never die*

***They're written down in eternity***
***But you'll never see the price it costs***
***The scars collected all of their lives*** -> my baby Taekook life in a nutshell

***When everything's lost, they pick up their hearts***
*And avenge defeat*
*Before it all starts, they suffer through harm*
*Just to touch a dream*
*Oh, pick yourself up, 'cause*

*Legends never die*
*When the world is calling you (when the world is calling you)*
*Can you hear them screaming out your name?*
*Legends never die*
*They become a part of you (they become a part of you)*
*Every time you bleed for reaching greatness*
*Legends never die*

*When the world is calling out your name*
***Begging you to fight*** -> (The moment Yoongi screams to Taehyung; Jimin calling Jungkook)

*Pick yourself up once more*
*Pick yourself up, 'cause*

*Legends never die*
*When the world is calling you (when the world is calling you)*
*Can you hear them screaming out your name?*
*Legends never die*
*They become a part of you (they become a part of you)*
*Every time you bleed for reaching greatness*
*Legends never die*

Yeah well... his is THE SONG of Legend of Legendary Heroes #bliss

******

***8th: Reedming love theme***

This is the song of CAIM. This is the music that has the perfect amout of hurt, sweetness, sorrow.

This my favourite background music from the whole book.

This is my heart music <3

BlairWitch91 <333

# ***RSF Guide *** - final

**WARNING!**

**!!!! Don't read this quide unless you read all the chapters between 1-40. Spoilers includes the previous chapters. No future spoilers... !!!!**

**The guide contains in order:**

1. Basic info of characters - list

2. List of Holders with known sacred treasures and powers

3. List of Sealers with known powers

4. Organizations and Units - all

5. Next Generation - list

6. Taekook known past lives

7. Sun and Moon Taekook Theory

## Basic info of characters - list

## List of Holders with known sacred treasures and powers

## List of Sealers with known powers

## Organizations and Units - all

**RED STRING**

1. Kim Taehyung & Jeon Jungkook

2. Park Jimin & Min Yoongi

3. Choi Yeonjun & Choi Soobin

4. Kim Yoohyeon & Lee Yubin "Dami"

5. Lee Minho & Han Jisung "Han"

6. Min Gahyeon & Na Ren

7. Choi San & Jung Wooyoung

**RED ALERT**

1. Jeon Minji & Jeon Hoseok

2. Kim Namjoon & Kim Seokjin

3. Park Baekhyun & Park Chanyeol

**INTERNATIONAL COUNCIL OF INTERDEPENDANTS - ICI**

1. Bang Yongguk - Head of ICI

2. Kim Namjoon

3. Kwon Hwasa

4. Kim Jennie

5. Kim Kai

6. Song Jieun

**MILITARY ORGANIZATION OF INTERDEPENDANTS - MOI**

1. Jeon Minji

2. Kwon Jiyong "Dragon"

3. Kwon Siyeon

4. Kwon Bora

5. Bang Ryu "Song"

6. Na Ren

7. Lee Yubin "Dami"

**PINK ALERT**

1. Park Bogum & Park Lalisa

2. Kim Jisoo & Kim Rose

**Eadar-eisimeleach Equality Organization - 3EO**

1. Min Jaehyun

2. Min Handong

3. Min Kyung

4. Min Taeil

5. Min Chorong

**INTERDEPENDANT'S SECURITY AGENCY - ISA / ARMY OF THE REPUBLIC**

1. Min Kyung

2. Min Taeil

3. Min Chorong

4. Na Dokhyun

5. Na Inho

6. Wi Hajun

7. Oh Joryoung

8. Naeun

**INHO'S CULT**

1. Wi Hajun

2. Oh Joryoung

3. Lee Dasol

4. Wi Hyerim

5. Do

6. Aecha

7. Eunseo

8. Geyong

9. Jiah

10. Chinhwa

11. Nabi

**TAEIL'S TEAM**

1. Baek Gyeom

2. Ahn Yein

3. Yu Kang

4. Hwang Bomin

**List of Next Generation**

**Legends of Legendary Heroes - Taekook known past lives**

1. **Jeryn and Teaghan** -> around 1300 year BC (XIV CENTURY BC) -> Island of Erv -> Celts -> hidden folk

Names of Celtic / Gaelic origin:

Taeghan means *Little poet*

Jeryn means *A cry of joy*

2. **Jasen and Theresites** -> around 1180 year BC ->( XII CENTURY BC) -> Antient Greece -> Battle of Troy

Names of Greek origin:

Jasen - its another form of name Jason (one of the heroes in Greek Mythology) - means *to heal*

Theresites - in Greek Mythology was a soldier in the Trojan War

3. **Jiyan and Tarique** -> around 680 BC (VI CENTURY BC) -> the time around the siege of Babylon **->**Babylon -> Mesopotamia -> Middle East

Names of Arabic Origin:

Jiyan - means *Name of the Moon, Reborn*

Tarique - means *Morning Star*

3. **Jabari and Tau** -> around 340 -330 BC (III CENTURY BC) -> the revolt against Persians -> Egypt

Names of Egyptian origin:

Jabari - means *A Man Known For His Bravery*

Tay - means *Lion*

4. **Justus Livius and Terentius Octavius**-> Roman Empire -> The City of Pompei destroyed when a nearby volcano, Mount Vesuvius, erupted, covering it in at least 19 feet (6 metres) of ash and other volcanic debrisPompei -> 79 AD (I CENTURY BC) -> Pompei -> Italy

Names of Roman/Latin origin:

Justus -means *Righteous, fair, justice*

Terentius - means *polished, tender*

Livius and Octavius are common noble family Roman names

5. **Junjie and Tengfei** - 208 AD (III CENTURY BC) -> China -> Battle of Red Cliffs

Names of Chinese Origin:

Junjie - means *handsome and outstanding*

Tengefei - mean *soaring high*

6. **Julian Lascaris and Theophano Ducas** - 717 AD (VIII CENTURY) Siege of Constantinople

Names of Greek and Byzantine Names:

Julian - means *Young at heart* / Lascarismeans *warrior or soldier*

Theophano - means *to appear* / Ducas means *leader*

7. **Taira Junichi and Minamoto Tayio** -> XII century -> (Genpei - kassen) Gempei War (1180–85), final struggle in Japan between the Taira and Minamoto clans that resulted in the Minamoto's establishment of the Kamakura shogunate, a military that dominated Japan from 1192 -> Japan

Names of Japanese origin:

Junichi - means *pure one/first*

Tayio - means *sun*

8. **Jasper and Tancred** -> First War of Scottish Independence, Battle of Bannockburn, 1314 (XIV century)-> Scotland.

Names of English origin:

Jasper - means *treasurer*

Tancred - means *tough/strong*

9. **Jatziri and Tecuani and** -> around 1520, XVI Century -> Spanish-Aztec War, conquista -> Mexico

Names of Aztec origin:

**Jatziri:** okay I had a problem with this one cause apperently Aztec didn't have J in their vocebulary... But Jatziri probably refers to "dewdrops". Dewdrops are tiny white flowers found throughout North America. They slightly resemble the Moonflower, a plant that grows throughout Alta Verapaz in Guatemala and blooms at night.

**Tecuani:** (pronounced teh-kwah-nee) is a Nahuatl word for "jaguar" or "tiger".

10. **Jairaj and Tarak**-> XVII -> pirates fighting against East Indian Company -> India

Names of Indian origin:

Jairaj: meaning "lord of victory".

Tarak: Meaning "protector"

11. **Javier and Thiago -> the pair with children -> South America-> XVIII Century**

Names of Spanish/Latin origin:

Javier - means "bright", or "new home"

Thiago - means "may God protect you"

11. **Jude and Trevor ->** 1863 (XIX century)-> American Civil War -> Battle of Antientam -> USA

Englis Names of different origin:

Jude - (greek origin) - means *"praised"*

Trevor - (welsh origin) - means *"of great settlement"*

12. **Jan and Teodor**-> Warsaw Upraising, 1944 (XX century) -> Poland -> Second World War

Names of different origin with polish pronounciation:

Jan (pron. Yan)- shortcuts Janek (Yanek) - means *on with the mercy from the God*

Teodor - shortcur Teo, same as english Theodore -> means *the gift of God*

**Sun and Moon Taekook Theory**

Sun and Moon Taekook Theory is actually explained quite well by NEVERNOT_KOOKV. A youtuber.

Here is the full video about DNA, which contains this theory in 5:45.

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=H4Nmz-z43XQ

The theory mainly is like that:

Tae looking at Moon in DNA

There is also the almost similar scene with Jungkook looking through the window at the Sun, but I don't remember in which one.

by NEVERNOT_KOOKV in ✦ – ***dna analysis*** ; ***taekook***˴˴- on You Tube

Questions Section:

If you have any question post them in comment I will publish the changes here and tag you. :D

BlairWitch91

(The Characters description will be posted separately)